



RED STORM

Cyungchan Noh

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Red Storm

(레드스톰)

by

Cyungchan Noh

(노경찬)

Synopsis

In this world, strong warriors are needed in order to conquer the hot crimson desert. The Pareia Tribal-Chief's first-born son, named Yulian Provoke, routinely gallops through the stormy deserts alone. Only to find someone of destiny – an otherworldly man that would change his fate forever. This same young child who struggles to find purpose while embodying both ambition and revenge into his very own hands as he awaits that faithful day of confronting a particular person that was, supposedly, the culprit of his blood-mother's death. At first, he was alone; but then after, he forms the RED STORM division – a group of powerful warriors at his command – in hopes of Conquering the Desert, braving towards those who oppose him, and bringing great fortune to his tribe.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by miraclerifle @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Prologue

Yulian Provoke.

A hero who, befitting his title of Desert Conqueror, swept the desert together with the Red Storm and unified the desert after hundreds of years.

Now I wish to start his story.

An outsider.

He was strong and became my teacher.

Book 1

Book 1 – 1.1 Meeting the Old Man

The boy was the healthiest and quickest of all his peers in the tribe. He was more thoughtful than anyone and his actions were heavy.

The boy, son of the Glow (coined from glowing and burning, describes the light of the tribe or King) of Pareia and the mother of Pareia, received a lot of affection from the members of the tribe due to his actions.

Yulian Provoke. He already had the qualities required of the next generation's Glow. And even though he lost his mother at an early age, it was kind of sad to see him have such a mature reliability. The boy was riding on a Pirma, a type of animal used for traveling in the desert.

The boy was better than anybody else in the Pareia tribe when it came to riding a Pirma, he was so talented that even the few Pirma Masters in the tribe could not believe it. In fact, all members of the Pareia tribe were good at riding the Pirmas. Not only the Pareia tribe, all of the desert tribes were good at riding Pirmas.

This is because the Pirmas were the best animals to run through the rough and barren desert, and also because they did not consume much water, the most important resource in the desert. Such was the life of the desert people that regardless of boy or girl, as soon as they were of age and could hold on to the reins, they were placed on top of a Pirma.

But of all those desert people, Yulian's talent could not be matched. In fact, he had such great breathing skills and balance that even if he was riding with a cow horn full of water, he would not spill a single drop.

The Pirma, carrying Yulian, ran quickly on top of the red but slightly yellowish desert sand.

He enjoyed riding the Pirma, especially when there was a lot on his mind. Even if it was a short run like this one, he felt the sensation throughout his body and he could breathe deeply. He could even forget the troublesome things in the speed. Family matters that became even more complicated once his mother passed away, the responsibilities as the Young Glow, he could forget everything while riding a Pirma.

Huh?

Yulian frowned and focused on one spot. He could see something moving in the distance. Staring closely for a while longer, Yulian figured it was a person and started to mutter in amazement.

"The nearest oasis is more than a day's walk on foot, how is a person here without a Pirma?

Yulian thought it might be someone expelled from another tribe and tried to not pay anymore attention.

All the desert tribes never killed, regardless of how severe the sins were. Instead, they just threw them in the desert, far away from an Oasis. They saw this as God's judgement, and if they came back alive, they reduced the sentence and accepted them back. If they died in the desert, then that was it.

The weather in the desert was bipolar. Half of the day was super hot, and the other half was so cold your body felt frozen. If you throw someone without anything into that kind of environment, probably nine hundred ninety nine of a thousand would die. And even that was a very favorable odd.

There were no tribes who helped another tribe's sinners. This was the rule of desert tribes. To be thrown away like this meant they committed a significant felony, so there was no reason to be compassionate. Yulian was planning to just pass by, but turned his head to look once more.

"Huh?"

Yulian made the confused noise as the person's outfit was not an outfit from a desert tribe. It was one he had never seen before, even in the books describing the artifacts of the continent.

"Is it an outsider from the continent?"

If so, that explained how he got this far. From time to time, there were people who crossed this red desert to get from the southern continent to the northern continent. Most of them were aiming to shorten the travel time, but there were also occasional adventure parties. Most of those people failed. To cross the desert, you need the help of the desert tribes. Even a talented Road Finder (someone who finds roads, a travel guide per se) were useless in the desert; anybody wishing to use the desert roads had no other choice but to rely on the desert tribes.

No matter how low the amount of water, every oasis in the desert was under the control of the desert tribes. In addition, the endlessly blowing sand storms, and the most dangerous flowing sands were capable of swallowing up even the most talented individuals, and the desert was so big that even the people who have lived their whole life in the desert did not know where everything was located.

Yulian turned the Pirma around and headed for the man. As he looked closer, he could verify that he was not from the desert.

He was an outsider.

"Old Man."

Yulian got off the Pirma and called out loudly to the outsider. The white-haired outsider was sitting down with his eyes closed, as if he was very tired.

"Old Man."

Yulian continued to call out to the outsider several times, but when there was no answer, he approached and touched the man to see if he had lost consciousness or already passed away.

As Yulian touched the old man's shoulder, the man's eyes opened wide. Even Yulian, who was very brave, was very surprised and immediately removed his hands.

“%#@ \$?”

The outsider spoke in words Yulian had never heard before.

Not only did Yulian know the desert language, he also knew all the languages of the Northern and Southern continent. Ever since he came up with a dream for the future, he made sure to learn all of these languages.

However, the words coming out of the old man were things he had ever heard before.

“Can you speak the language of the continent?”

Yulian said the same thing in both the Northern and Southern dialects but it seemed as if the old man did not understand any of it.

“&^%\$#.”

The old man muttered to himself as if he realized that he could not communicate with Yulian.

Although they could not communicate, Yulian knew exactly what the old man would want most in this location.

He approached the Pirma and grabbed the large leather canteen from the saddle and handed it to the old man, making a drinking motion. The old man removed the lid from the canteen and drank the water.

"^%\$#@."

The old man returned the canteen to Yulian and said something, but Yulian could not understand it.

He could not leave an old man he met for the first time in the desert; Yulian patted the Pirma's saddle and motioned for the old man to get on. The old man shook his head and motioned Yulian to

go first.

Yulian was bewildered but started to slowly move the Pirma. The old man started to follow behind.

'There's no way he plans to follow the Pirma by walking, is there?'

Yulian laughed inside and continued to move slowly. The old man, seeming frustrated, tapped Yulian to get his attention and made a faster motion with his hands.

'I think this old man is a little crazy.'

Thinking like that, Yulian started to move a little faster as the old man indicated, but the old man quickly followed behind.

'This man runs pretty quickly. At this speed, even the famous warriors would be having a hard time...'

Curious, Yulian started to increase the Pirma's speed little by little, but the old man continued to follow behind, walking leisurely without looking tired. Amused and curious, Yulian made the Pirma run at full speed.

“OH MY GOD!”

Book 1-1.2 Master and Disciple

The old man was running next to a Pirma running at full speed. In fact, he even had a relaxed look on his face.

“Are you a wizard?”

Yulian thought that the continent must have magic, similar to the spells of the Desert Tribes, and asked the old man. The old man only smiled back at him.

‘Ah! I forgot he could not understand me. But I heard that there was a spell for translating, if he is a wizard, why is he not using that spell?’

Yulian was curious but as they could not communicate, it would be a wasted effort to continue. Staring at the old man continuing to keep up, Yulian pushed the Pirma forward at full speed.

A short time later, Yulian arrived at his village and invited the old man to stay in his Paoe (term for the homes in the desert, approximately 2 meters tall with cylindrical walls and a round roof. The walls and roof were made with the branches of durable trees growing in the desert, with a white cloth on top, making it easy to disassemble and reassemble on the move).

The desert tribes enjoyed having guests and would treat them with the utmost care. Being a member of the tribe himself, Yulian decided to take care of the old man for the time being and invited him to stay in his Paoe.

That night, he introduced the old man to his family and the tribe’s warriors and urged them to let him stay there for a while. However, he did not say a word about the old man’s magical running abilities. The fact that he followed a Pirma at full speed was something he himself could not believe after seeing it with his own eyes. He also could not be rude and ask a guest to show others his abilities.

Yulian and the old man started to live together in the Paoe.

The old man was a mysterious person. Most of the time, he just sat there with his eyes closed and breathing, but at night, he would go outside the Paoe and showed Yulian a lot of different things.

This was the first time Yulian learned that a person could move that quickly, that high, and that far.

None of the warriors he knew of in the desert could move in that fashion. Oddly, he only showed it to Yulian and nobody else.

During the day all he did was walk around the village observing various things or sit in the Paoe.

Yulian knew that this old man was not an ordinary person. He asked the old man to teach him things like the movement skills.

Although they could not communicate, in the last few days, he was able to develop some level of communication with the man through hand gestures and body movement. Smiling, the old man nodded his head and indicated that he wanted to learn how to read, write, and speak the language.

“We can teach each other.”

Yulian was delighted and started to teach the old man the language of the desert. And although he wanted to learn the old man’s movement skills, all the old man did was open his mouth. He did not show any intentions of teaching Yulian.

“Oh! You can’t teach me unless we can communicate!”

Yulian quickly understood the old man’s intentions and fully devoted himself to teaching the old man the language.

The old man was very smart. No, he was a genius. If you taught him something once, not only did he never forget, when it came to writing, he learned it even faster than speaking.

Exactly one moon cycle after Yulian started to teach the old man, the two of them were able to start having brief conversations. The

only thing left for the old man to learn was figuring out where to use which word.

“Thank You.”

That was the first thing the old man said.

“Senior, you are very wise. You learned very quickly.”

“It’s because you were a good teacher.”

“That was just the desert language. If Senior would like, I can also teach you the languages of the Northern and Southern continents.”

“Right, there’s a lot more for me to learn.”

With the old man’s reply, Yulian slyly asked.

“Senior, I wish to learn the movement skills you demonstrated...”

“I could not teach you because we could not communicate. It’s difficult to teach what I know without being able to explain.”

“I look forward to it.”

The old man responded to Yulian with a smile.

“You have a sturdy foundation that is suitable for learning martial arts. How old are you?”

“I am thirteen years old.”

The old man was delighted at Yulian’s answer.

“Looking at your physique, I thought you would be much older. Thank goodness. When it comes to martial arts, it is better to learn it from a young age. The mental art is less effective the later you start.”

Yulian could not understand some of the terms the old man was using, but seeing the excitement in the old man, he just thought it must be good.

“Hmm...what kind of relationship should we have?”

The old man was seriously worrying about what kind of relationship to have with the boy in front of him. It seems like nothing, but it was a serious concern.

‘In this world, there is a different religion and even the race is different. There will be a lot of difficulties taking him as a disciple...’

The old man did not take any disciples even in his own world. At that time, everything was annoying.

‘But I also don’t want to teach him half-heartedly. After all, this boy has saved my life...’

It’s not like he could be angry at the Goddess who threw him in this world, but he had been lost in the desert for three days.

At first, he was confident. ‘I just need to use the movement of the stars to figure out where people live.’ But soon he learned that wasn’t the case. In a place where he could not get a good sense of direction, he pretty much ended up just going around in circles. Astrology was no help, and there was a limit to using his martial arts to search the whole desert.

On the first day, there were two suns, on the second day there were three, and on the third day, it went back to just one. Even the location of the sun continued to change and the moon was the same at night.

It was impossible to determine a sense of direction.

He thought that ‘the Goddess must have had a reason to send me here so I know I won’t die like this,’ but he was so irritated that he just sat down and spent another three days sitting there. After all that, Yulian was the first person he met in this world.

‘When did I, Chun Myung Hoon care about such a thing? If I like it I like it, if I don’t, I don’t. Since he helped me, I should help fulfill his wish.’

Chun Myung Hoon made the decision to make this young boy his disciple.

“You cannot pass on martial arts to just anyone. You must show me proper etiquette as your master. Will you become my disciple?”

Because Chun Myung Hoon used Chinese for terms he did not know, Yulian was unable to completely understand what he was saying.

“Master... etiquette... disciple... what does that mean?”

“The person who teaches is the master, the one learning is the disciple, and etiquette is the manner in which a disciple serves his master.”

Yulian nodded his head happily to Chun Myung Hoon’s answer.

“I wish to be your disciple.”

“Do you have a religion?”

“No.”

“Okay. From here on, you must kowtow to me nine times, kowtow to the founder, and accept a new religion.”

Quickly, Yulian kowtowed to Chun Myung Hoon, kowtowed towards the East, and first learned the doctrine. Only then could he learn the martial arts and mental arts.

“Hmm...my last name is Chun and my name is Myung Hoon. What is your name?”

“My name is Yulian Provoke.”

“Then should I call you Provoke?”

“Provoke is my last name. You can call me Yulian.”

“Your name is quite odd.”

To Yulian, Chun Myung Hoon was even more peculiar.

So the old man and the young boy became Master and Disciple.

Book 1-1.3 How to breathe, how to not breathe.

“The first thing to learn is how to breathe, and how to not breathe.”

“What?”

Yulian was confused by Chun Myung Hoon’s words and responded.

“You’re making me say things twice. The first thing you will learn is how to breathe and how to not breathe.”

“That’s my question. What kind of?”

“POW!”

As Chun Myung Hoon’s fist struck Yulian’s stomach, Yulian groaned and bent forward in pain as he spoke.

“Ow! Master, why are you hitting me?”

“I will explain the rules of learning from me. First, you will never question what I say. No matter what, your answer should be Yes, Master. Got it?”

“What kind of rule is that?!”

“POW!”

“Even after I explain it to you, you don’t listen. Back then and even now, if someone doesn’t listen to me, I beat them up. That is the second rule. Got it?”

“What...”

Yulian changed his response as soon as he saw Chun Myung Hoon’s fist raise up.

“Yes, Master.”

“Great. That’s the way. My word is law and all you need to do is

listen and learn. It's such a simple method to learn."

"You're correct."

Chun Myung Hoon nodded, as if he was satisfied with Yulian's quick adaptation.

Although Yulian had issues with it, he decided that if this was his Master's way of teaching, he will not complain again.

The desert training was also rough. Whether it was a dad teaching his son or an older warrior teaching a younger warrior, it was the same.

When it came to learning, there was no such thing as your own opinion, and there definitely was no way to not listen to their advice.

That's the type of place the desert was.

The desert is where the thing that you pay attention to today could be what saves your life tomorrow. Because of this, all of the desert tribes pay their respect to the elders in the tribe. There was nothing to throw away amongst the life experiences they had gathered.

Yulian knew this to be a fact; this is why he was able to make the determination to not complain and follow Chun Myung Hoon's instructions.

"When you are breathing, breathe in until you count to five. When you are breathing out, breathe out until you count to ten. You also need to make sure that you go slowly so that you make no noises when you are breathing. Give it a try."

Yulian tried breathing in and out, following Chun Myung Hoon's instructions.

"Something else to pay attention to is that your stomach must move in the opposite direction. When breathing in, suck in your stomach. When breathing out, stick your stomach out."

Yulian followed the instructions and replied:

“It’s not as easy as I thought it would be.”

“Think about it as if you are breathing through your back. That should make it a bit easier.”

“Breathe through your back?”

Yulian had questions about Chun Myung Hoon’s incomprehensible words, but decided to do as he was told. He focused on breathing through his back as he took a breath in, and it was a bit easier, as Chung Myung Hoon indicated.

“Do I have to continue breathing like this?”

Chun Myung Hoon replied to Yulian’s question.

“To be honest, my martial arts is the hardest in the beginning. You must continue this breathing method whenever you are awake. Truthfully, you should also continue it while you are sleeping, but it is still too soon for that. What I am certain about, is that if you are able to master this breathing method, it will be much easier to learn my martial arts. I guess it will be easier in the beginning if we cut down your sleeping time. We need you to get used to it and master it completely so that you can breathe like this even when you are sleeping.”

As Yulian tried to determine how this will help, his breathing returned to normal and he did not properly execute the breathing method. In that moment, Yulian felt intense pain on top of his head.

“POW!”

“Ah! Master, why are you hitting me again?”

“Didn’t you go back to how you used to breathe even though I just taught it to you? I must be strict with you as you are both my first and my last disciple. If you are useless, won’t it make me also look useless as your master?”

“But do you have to hit me like this?”

“POW!”

Yulian felt the pain again.

“I told you talking back was not allowed. For the next month, you will only be practicing this breathing method until it is engrained in your body. During this month, if you keep forgetting like this, it will only delay your path to learning my skills.”

“What can I gain through this method? If you could at least let me know that one thing, I will never talk back again.”

Chun Myung Hoon debated hitting Yulian again for his retort but decided against it. It would not be too late to hit him after showing him.

“Pay attention.”

After talking to Yulian, Chun Myung Hoon headed to the large wooden pillar supporting the center of the Paoe and pushed on the pillar with one finger.

Yulian was in suspense to see what Chun Myung Hoon would do; he could not hide his surprise after staring at Chun Myung Hoon’s finger. As if he was punching a hole through a piece of paper, Chun Myung Hoon’s hand was going through the wooden pillar.

When Chun Myung Hoon removed his hand, there was a small hole, the size of a finger, on the wooden pillar.

“I promise that you will be able to do this if you continue that breathing method for just ten years. Of course, it also depends on whether you listen to my instructions completely or not.”

“Of course I can do it.”

“Oh yeah? Then first, take a punch since you talked back earlier.”

“Master! That...”

“POW!”

Chun Myung Hoon's finger, which was able to pierce even wood, struck at Yulian's forehead. However, like magic, even though the noise was loud and the pain was terrible, you could not see any damage on Yulian. On the outside, he looked fine.

"There is an art to hitting as well. If your skin got cut, how sad would your dad be?"

Chun Myung Hoon laughed as he responded.

Yulian suddenly felt as if despair was gathering around him.

Yulian thought that he had a lot of endurance, but that type of thought disappeared quickly. In a month, you could not find that type of thought even if you washed your face cleanly and searched.

Chun Myung Hoon's flicks hurt so much to be human.

Chun Myung Hoon followed Yulian around; if Yulian's breathing became disturbed even by a little, he relentlessly flicked his finger to make Yulian pay for his mistake.

He even stayed by him and hit him while Yulian was sleeping, so it became normal for Yulian to not sleep well and greet the sun with significantly red eyes and large bags under his eyes.

People also started to worry because Yulian was losing so much weight, but Yulian clenched his teeth and persevered. This was the first thing his master showed him. He started to develop the confidence that there was no way he couldn't master this when he was trying so hard.

Days passed by like this, and just before a month ended, the amount of times Yulian was getting hit started to shrink little by little.

"As expected, there is nothing that cannot be solved by violence."

Chun Myung Hoon was satisfied by his teaching methods and made up his mind to move on to the next stage.

"Yulian."

“Yes, Master.”

“Since you have shown some progress, I will teach you something else.”

“I understand, Master.”

“This time it is how to walk, how to run, how to sit, and how to lay down.”

“I will follow attentively, Master.”

Yulian had adapted to Chun Myung Hoon over the last month. Yes. Yulian quickly learned that Chun Myung Hoon was a dictator.

“This time, it looks like you are not asking why you have to learn such things.”

“I’ve learned that everything you teach me becomes my skin and blood. How could I dare to question you, Master?”

“You’ve improved. Listen well. A person must have good posture and stand up straight. For the time being, this is what we will focus on. Of course, there is also the proper way to sleep. You understand what I mean, right?”

“Ah... of course.”

Yulian felt like everything was becoming dark again. He finally thought he could sleep well but now it was focusing on his posture.

“I think you will adapt quickly. You have to.”

“Hahaha. Of course...”

“Then let’s start. You know I don’t like to repeat myself, right?”

“Hahaha...”

Yulian could not sleep properly for the next three months.

Book 1-1.4 The Mindset to be a warrior

Another month passed by and Chun Myung Hoon called Yulian over to ask:

“Why are you trying to learn Martial Arts?”

Looking at Chun Myung Hoon’s gentle expression and caring eyes, Yulian responded without hesitation.

Yulian had been thinking about this since the day his mother passed away. He didn’t know whether it would be a lifelong goal or if the feeling would fizzle after a period of time, but until now, he had always been thinking about it.

“To become a warrior.”

“What does warrior mean?”

“You must be courageous, strong, and have the loyalty to not betray your people. All the men of the Desert must become warriors. A warrior’s mission is to protect their people, and to earn the right to be respected.”

“If all men are warriors, it’s not that special is it?”

Yulian shook his head at Chun Myung Hoon’s question.

“I am in line to be the next Glow. So I want to be a warrior among warriors, a special warrior. A warrior who does not lose in battle and has earned the respect of everyone. That’s the type of warrior I want to be.”

Even at such a young age, Yulian had accepted the path he must take and worked towards this path.

Chun Myung Hoon was amused.

He had accepted Yulian as his disciple, but he was a bit shocked at Yulian’s passion. There were also many people in China who were passionate and wanted to learn martial arts, but this kid felt different. From his stare and actions, Chun Myung Hoon was able

to sense a poisonous aura.

“I have seen the people here living fiercely, but as the Young Glow, there should not be anything he’s lacking. What led to this kid having such a poisonous aura?”

Chun Myung Hoon started to wonder why his disciple wanted to learn martial arts so badly.

“Is it for just that reason you want to become a warrior?”

“No.”

“Then?”

Yulian subconsciously clenched his fist. His fingers inside the fist started to dig into his palm, but

Yulian seemed to not sense the pain.

“Under the law of the desert, blood revenge is a fair reason to murder.”

Chun Myung Hoon decided not to ask further regarding Yulian’s answer. He just wanted to know the reason.

If you go Ah! They go Uh! He had a pretty good sense of what was going on. (Must be a Korean saying. Found some information about it but not enough to explain. I can’t even think of a good English counterpart)

“Alright, then what do you have to do to be the Glow?”

“You must put others before yourself and put in a lot of effort. There is a proverb that states that a running Pirma will end up being loved. You must put in more effort than others, not playing, and even reducing the amount of time you sleep. It may be difficult now, but by the time I become the Glow, I will feel great pride in everything I would have done.”

Chun Myung Hoon was very satisfied with his young disciple’s answer. There were only a few men with such a clear purpose at Yulian’s age. Seeing Yulian speak without any hesitation, he could

tell that Yulian had such a sense of purpose since a long time ago.

You can tell from the first leaves that sprout. In general, this type of person tends to push forward without hesitation.

“Let’s fix a few things.”

“Which parts are you talking about?”

“Someone who does not know how to treasure themselves cannot become King. If you don’t even know how precious you are, how can you know how precious others are? It’s natural to think of yourself before you think of others. It is probably better to focus on that first.”

After thinking deeply about this statement that he thought he could understand but was still confused about, Yulian responded.

“I will keep this in mind.”

Chun Myung Hoon started to smile and asked again.

“To be the king of those warriors, you must also learn how to lead the warriors, right?”

“Yes!”

Chun Myung Hoon briefly thought about Yulian’s answer and asked.

“Is there a large sword?”

“Huh?”

“A large sword.”

Chun Myung Hoon spread his arms open to describe and Yulian understood what he was talking about.

“Oh, you’re talking about a Two Hand Sword. In the desert, everybody uses a Shamshir.”

“You’re talking about the curved blade.”

“Yes.”

“It’s good for running and slashing, but not fit for mass killing. I will teach you how to use the Shamshir and some sword arts.”

“You know how to use weapons?”

“Anything in my hand is a weapon. It is easiest to use my bare hands though.”

The Shamshir may look easy to use, but it was a difficult weapon to use in battle. Because the blade is bent, it is difficult to bring out its full effect with regular swinging. Of course, if someone mastered the Shamshir, there is no other weapon with as much slashing ability as the Shamshir.

But when his master claimed something as preposterous as anything in my hand becomes a weapon, Yulian definitely had his doubts. Weapon Master was something he had not even heard of before.

Looking at Yulian’s eyes, Chun Myung Hoon smiled, noticing that his disciple was definitely doubting his abilities.

“Hand over the Shamshir on your waist.”

When Yulian handed him the Shamshir on his waist, Chun Myung Hoon quickly glanced at the blade and swung lightly.

Wiiing~

Such a clear sound came out of the Shamshir.

He did not flick it with his finger, nor did he hit it anywhere, all he did was swing it.

As Yulian tried to position himself to focus on his master’s actions, Chun Myung Hoon asked:

“What are you staring at so much?”

“Master, I’m trying to pay attention to how you are using the Shamshir.”

“Didn’t I use it already?”

“What?”

Chun Myung Hoon motioned with his chin to look behind him. Yulian’s jaws dropped once he quickly turned his head around.

“Wh...when?”

What Yulian saw was the large cloth covering the entrance to the Paoe. There was a straight cut on the cloth. Making a cut on a flowing cloth with a Shamshir was not something any warrior could do. But his master managed to do this while being at least ten steps away from it!

Yulian blamed himself for continuing to doubt his master, even after knowing what kind of person his master was. He then ran up to Chun Myung Hoon.

“Master, please teach me how to do it! Right now!”

Listening to Yulian as he grabbed onto his sleeve and started to dangle on his arm, Chun Myung Hoon was a bit nervous but also smug. Yulian’s actions reminded him of a past memory where he was envious of a Master and Disciple relationship. That disciple’s physique was also as big as a mountain and that master was a bit short.

Anyways, staring at the excited Yulian hanging on his sleeve, he lifted him up and replied:

“Work hard. Then it is possible.”

“Yes, Master.”

Yulian answered filled with excitement. He felt like he was actually going to learn something now. Truth be told, he could not determine whether he was learning or not when it came to the breathing method, walking method etc.

Watching Yulian dangling his legs hanging on his arm as he responded, Chun Myung Hoon started to laugh while he started to think:

‘If he has made that kind of determination, I must also meet him with such. Only then can I have any face as his Master.’

Although Chun Myung Hoon had been beating Yulian up while teaching him the basics, he had secretly been considering Yulian’s situation and slowly teaching martial arts. But if his disciple has this type of mindset, he can bring it up to his eye level and teach it properly.

‘If I’m going to teach it anyways, I might as well teach it properly and passionately. Only then can I call myself a man. Yes, I’m sure that’s also the duty of a Master.’

Chun Myung Hoon confirmed to himself as he said:

“First, talk to the blacksmith and have him make a large sword. The bigger the better. The height should be big enough you can move while riding a Pirma.”

“Yes, master. What about the width and weight?”

“A sword is best heavier and sturdier.”

“Yes, Master.”

Yulian responded vigorously, but he could never imagine even in his wildest dreams that the more vigorous he was, the greater than pain would be...

Book 1-1.5 Wielding the Greatsword

The blacksmith was tired. There were two blacksmith in the largest oasis belonging to the Pareia tribe, but the Young Glow kept coming to him for help. It did make sense, since he was the blacksmith in charge of making the shamshirs while the other blacksmith was in charge of repairing and sharpening the blade. It was logical for Yulian to come find him.

What the Young Glow wanted was to forge a large sword. After being continuously harassed for a couple of days, the blacksmith finally decided to push back everything else and start working on the Young Glow's sword.

When he first heard the Young Glow explain what he wanted, the Young Glow's request and the requirements sounded so crazy that he thought he was falling for a child's prank. Not only did he want a blade that was over two meters long, he also wanted it forged completely of cast iron. If the blacksmith put even a little bit of effort, he would be able to make the weapon lighter, scraping out some of the metal inside the blade, handle and the connection spot. However, the Young Glow did not even want that.

'A two-handed sword made of cast iron that is over two meters long...'

The blacksmith was curious just what kind of warrior in the world would be able to carry such a heavy sword into the battlefield. If there was such a warrior, it was someone he definitely wanted to meet at least once. But even if there was such a warrior, they could probably get by using this sword in hand-to-hand combat, but it would probably not be useful in the desert's Pirma battles.

"Just how are you planning to use this sword?"

"When a warrior needs a sword, there is only one reason for it. Are there more?"

When Yulian answered as if he was asking a dumb question, the blacksmith shook his head while replying: “The Young Glow has not even had your coming-of-age ceremony. Furthermore, this type of sword is one that even adult warriors would not be able to handle. In addition, on top of a Pirma, you can’t put any power in your feet, so you won’t even be able to swing this sword.”

Of course Yulian was thinking the same thing, but he had full confidence in his master. If his master says this, it is this, if he says it’s that, it’s that. He knew there must be a reason his master asked him to go get a sword like this.

“If you don’t have enough iron, let me know. I will go bring a couple weapons from my house.”

The blacksmith turned pale hearing this and responded back: “Aigoo, that’s not what I mean! A Pareian blacksmith does not think about the iron when we make the weapons. The warriors bring back the iron and we just forge them.”

“Then I would like you to make it as I asked. I wouldn’t ask if I didn’t need it.”

The blacksmith had no choice but to worry. In order to make a greatsword like this, he could make at least four durable Shamshirs. Iron was a precious material for a tribe. It was as precious as food. As a result, the blacksmith could not help but worry about whether he should use so much iron for something that sounded like a prank.

After debating for a long time, the blacksmith agreed. This was after all the Young Glow everybody had high expectations for.

“Alright. But you must promise to take good care of it.”

“You don’t need to worry about that.”

Yulian went back smiling and satisfied, and the blacksmith stretched his arms before preparing to start forging. Such a weapon made of cast iron was difficult to even hammer. Regardless

of the difficulty, the greatsword was completed to Yulian's satisfaction within a couple of days. Yulian could only slowly drag it out when he came to retrieve it.

Since the whole thing was made of iron, the weight was no joke. Yulian had a lot of concerns as it easily weighed more than fifty kilograms. He was concerned about just how his master was going to teach him.

"First, I guess I need to improve my arm strength. I guess I'll be lifting this sword later?"

Yulian finally arrived at his Paoe while thinking about multiple things. When he showed the sword to Chun Myung Hoon, he said: "It looks sturdy. Stop dragging it and lift it up."

At his master's words, Yulian grabbed the greatsword's handle.

"Haaaaaaa!"

Yulian was barely able to lift it up with his core flexed and his two elbows stuck on his legs. It was surprising. He had lifted exactly fifty kilograms.

But Chun Myung Hoon had a confused look on his face.

"My dear disciple, what are you doing?"

Yulian stared at his master in confusion.

"Huh?"

"Didn't I ask you what you were doing?"

"Master, didn't you tell me to lift the sword."

"Yes I did."

When Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head in response, Yulian answered back with a puzzled look: "That's why I'm lifting it up."

Chun Myung Hoon came up to Yulian and easily lifted the sword in Yulian's hands with one hand.

"A sword is something you should lift with one hand."

“But this is a two-handed sword?”

“If you lift it with one hand, it is a one handed sword. If you lift it with two hands, it becomes a two-handed sword. What kind of distinction is that? In addition, my martial arts requires that you hold the sword with one hand.”

Yulian looked at Chun Myung Hoon in shock before regaining his composure.

“You’re telling me to lift this with one hand?”

“Is there a problem? Didn’t I just say that a sword is supposed to be held with one hand? If you’re going to use both hands, why would you use a sword at all? Use a spear or a pole.”

Yulian just stared blankly at the sword being toyed with in Chun Myung Hoon’s hand. He looked like he wasn’t putting in any effort, as if he was swinging around a wooden stick.

“The weight is sufficient. If you really want to use two hands, I can teach you how to use two swords. Now that I think about it, it doesn’t sound too bad to use two greatswords together.”

Yulian’s eyes started to darken before smiling and responding to Chun Myung Hoon.

Yulian seriously debated what to say before opening his mouth.

“If I used two greatswords, wouldn’t I get tired faster and my arms get longer?”

“It’s you who is using it not me. Do I even need to worry about that type of stuff?”

Yulian briefly lost his train of thought at Chun Myung Hoon’s response. He really could not figure out this master of his.

“You’re not serious, are you?”

“I’ll tell you this in advance. I’m not someone who jokes around. Time is precious.”

Yulian truly wanted to cry inside.

Book 1-1.6 Such a terrible disciple!

It was difficult. However, he started to get used to his Master's method of "If you do it, it's possible." And, staring at himself, he was proof that his master was not wrong.

At first, he was saying that it was impossible. However, his master would quickly show him that it is possible. There was no way he could throw a fit.

The scene of his master effortlessly swinging two greatswords at once... Even now, just thinking about it is scary. Watching his master treating these two greatswords that were even taller than him effortlessly, without ever dropping them on the ground or sweating a single drop, it made it seem like he was playing around with two sticks.

He could not even voice one complaint, and had to follow his master's extreme - and in some sense stupid - training methods.

Saying it was for him to learn, Yulian was beat up over and over.

I'm the Young Glow. I had never even been hit by my father, the current Glow. Truthfully, the Desert Warriors do not hit those who will become warriors. This is because it becomes an insult that cannot be paid back. Increasing a warrior's pride is best done by showing how it's done, not by beating them up.

This was why at first, Yulian rebelled. Anybody else in the same situation would have done the same.

What returned was...an even worse beating.

This is what my master said.

- If you successfully perform what you are taught, I will not hit you.

Let's be honest. Honestly, I worked hard to avoid being hit, rather than to become a warrior. Frankly, Master had a lot of

unreasonable demands.

I don't want to write. I feel like vomiting. It's terrible. I don't want to be reminded of these terrible memories when I read this in the future. I write in this diary to look back on my life and fond memories, not to be reminded of the pain.

In the future, when I become a great Glow, I will let the warriors know.

Crawling from one oasis to another would be a much easier training method. I will make sure to let them know.

As someone who successfully completed this hellish training, I will have the qualifications to tell them that.

Look. Where else would you find a Desert Warrior who can take a greatsword weighing fifty kilograms and swing it freely with ... not two hands but just one hand?

I don't want to admit it, but the Desert's best warrior, our Pareia tribe's enemy, Shuarei tribe's bloodied hand, Venersis, probably can't handle it like this.

I wanted to be comforted and to be praised. I wanted my praiseworthy father, the Glow of Pareia, to do so.

But here's a toast to my current poor situation where I won't be getting what I want. Somehow, my father became an avid follower of my Master. Warriors respect other warriors, and in some aspects, Master is the ultimate warrior. Claiming it's not enough... rather, believing Master's words without a doubt that I am lacking in disposition, all he's been doing is blaming me...

My poor self.

I can only hope that the day I can sufficiently handle both of these greatswords comes...

'Comes soon' is what Yulian was planning to write, but it seems Yulian was so tired he just fell asleep.

“It’s because you haven’t trained enough.”

It was pure coincidence that Chun Myung Hoon saw Yulian’s diary. He was drunk in the splendor of the glowing three moons and decided to ride a Pirma across the desert with Yulian. That’s why he had entered Yulian’s Paoe, but ended up finding his disciple passed out at the desk.

At first, he had planned to simply put a leather blanket over Yulian. It can be called a coincidence that he happened to see the diary while putting the blanket over him.

Chun Myung Hoon’s mood was significantly dampened after reading the diary. How hard had he worked to teach this disciple? He put in so much effort to teach this talentless disciple as much as possible.

Yet, Yulian was unable to meet his expectations at all.

He needed to tell him the scripture at least three times and show him the proper form at least ten times before this slow disciple remembered the tiniest bit. But how hard had he tried, expanding the limits of his patience for his one and only disciple?

Regardless of all of his effort, rather than being thankful for what he’s done, all Yulian has been writing about are complaints?

He’s been writing like he’s a poor disciple who has met a terrible master!

‘If I knew it would be like this, I would have taken Pere as my disciple instead...’

Chun Myung Hoon was regretting his decision. Pere was Yulian’s younger brother, and Chun Myung Hoon thought Pere had a great aptitude to become a martial artist. He was born with a significant aura. Had he taught someone like that, he would have enjoyed being a teacher.

Even so, he had been holding in his temper to teach Yulian, only to be stabbed in the back by his own disciple. In this aspect, he was

envious of his brother in law, Yoo Hwa Myung. His disciple was slow but that boy showed complete dedication to practicing martial arts. He was envious of his brother-in-law's super-wide smile regarding his disciple.

“Sigh~.”

Chun Myung Hoon let out a big sigh before coming out of the Paoe.

There were many thoughts running through his head. There was no message from Miruk, the Goddess who sent him to this world. Even after countless prayers, he had not received a single response.

Staring at the three moons floating in the night sky, Chun Myung Hoon slowly fell asleep.

Chun Myung Hoon was someone who did not understand any of the things normal people considered to be impossible. This was why he thought Yulian was slow, even when Yulian's talent and potential were actually very high.

Chun Myung Hoon was used to being the best. His title as “Invincible,” in a realm filled to the brim with advanced martial artists proved that to be the case.

In addition, he was a member of the church who served Miruk, the goddess of fire. He did not face much adversary getting the title of “Invincible.” When he read something once, he remembered all of it, as if his mind was a library. He could follow anything he had seen once down to the tiniest of details. As time went on, he could even determine his opponent's thoughts.

It was because he was so talented that he received the title of being one of the “World's Five Best Masters” by age 30, and he could have become the “World's Greatest” even before he became 40.

When he came over to his world, he did not get any stupider. Within a few days, he learned how to read and write the language

of the Desert Tribes. All he had to do was learn the basic alphabet, and then memorize a couple books completely.

He had incorrectly considered his genius nature to be the norm, and as he had never taught anybody before, it made him think more and more that Yulian was slow.

If he had taught a person with average talent before, he would have quickly learned that Yulian's talent level was actually pretty high. Sadly, Yulian was his first disciple. He was too lazy to teach others.

He could never imagine in a hundred years that only he would nag his disciple like this for not meeting his expectation.

‘Why was I sent to this world?’

Chun Myung Hoon's thoughts caught its tail.

He suffered tremendously after arriving in this world, but he liked this place. The people of the tribe were innocent and passionate and lived proudly.

That is how he was able to accept their culture in such a short amount of time. He felt their culture fit his personality well and he himself thought he was suited for this lifestyle.

Nonetheless, he was still unable to determine the reason he ended up in this world.

He was not someone who had lived a normal life. The Heavens are fair. Although they gave him a genius brain, they also gave him the devliish blood of the Chun Family. Chun Myung Hoon had to work with all his might to prevent the blood from taking over.

To block the effect of the devil, to defeat the devil in his blood, he had dedicated his life to the goddess Miruk and the church since he was ten years old. Many people had sacrificed to help him persevere. As the final devil was about to open its eyes and he was thankful that his life was about to end, he had ended up in this world by the command of the goddess.

‘Why did I end up in this world?’

It had already been two years since he arrived here, but he still had not determined what his mission was.

He stared back at Yulian’s Paoe and mumbled to himself

“She couldn’t have sent me here to teach that slow punk.”

Just as he said that, Chun Myung Hoon felt chills on his body.

“Right?”

He asked, looking at the sky.

He was no longer sleepy after feeling the chills and it dampened his mood. He had not felt like this in the last few years.

Were we just imagining the deathly aura coming from his feet as he headed to the training grounds?

“POW!”

A rather melodious hitting sound was coming from the training grounds.

“Ow! Master, this time, why are you hitting me?”

“Do you really not know why?”

“If I knew, would I be asking?”

Chun Myung Hoon’s so called “Fist of Love” landed in Yulian’s stomach in broad daylight [before even rats or birds noticed](#).

There is a Korean saying that states what happens in the daytime is seen by the birds, and what happens at night is seen by the rats. So this basically means it was so fast nothing could see it.

“POOOOW!”

A hitting noise, much longer than the one heard previously was resonating from the training ground.

“This one was for not knowing why.”

“Master, this is unfai.....”

“POOOOOOOW!”

“No, nevermind. I understand. This disciple was in the wrong.”

There is no business in punishment. As Yulian quickly adjusted his words, this time, Chun Myung Hoon asked the question.

“About what?”

“Huh?”

“You said you knew what you did wrong and why you were getting hit. So I’m asking you, what did you do wrong?”

“Well, you see...”

“POW. POPOOOOW!”

He threw his fist so fast that what’s supposed to be a POW combined itself to come out as POPOOOOW.

Yulian curled his whole body forward as he urgently yelled out.

“No matter what it is, this disciple was in the wrong! How could I argue with my Master! No matter what it is, this disciple was in the wrong!”

“I guess you finally learned a little bit.”

“Of course. How dare a disciple try to talk back to his Master. I think this disciple’s head was a bit loose.”

“That is why I hit you. Next time, just get hit and think about it later.”

‘Ugh.’

Yulian was grumbling inside but he was unable to express his disdain. Like a main character in a cartoon who could not call his dad, dad or his older brother, older brother, although he was feeling wronged on the inside, he could only smile on the outside.

Chun Myung Hoon smiled, as if he knew exactly on Yulian’s mind and opened his right index finger before speaking.

“Since it looks like you’ve been studying pretty well, today, let’s do some sparring using my index finger.”

“What?”

Book 1-1.7 Why are you smiling?

Yulian was terrified.

He remembered the first time his master mentioned sparring.

- I will only use my left foot. Let's try to spar once.

At that time, Yulian was wondering what kind of sparring can be done like that. Of course, it did not take long for him to realize the truth. Could he have even imagined that?

Chun Myung Hoon used a movement method called "Major Pain" and used only his left foot to fly around and turn Yulian into a flat pancake.

It took him two years to make his master use both of his feet and another two years before he could make his master use one finger

Every time they sparred, Yulian trembled in fear. In contrast to the normal beatings, Chun Myung Hoon never went easy during sparring. Yulian would feel lucky even if he fainted, as long as he didn't have any long-term repercussions.

It felt like his master had attached some type of metal club to his foot and finger. Even if he thought it was a light hit or it barely scratched him, it would end up making him injured to the point he would have to stay in bed for a couple days.

In reality, it was probably only that much because his master hated to see him injured and lying in bed.

"Why...all of a sudden? This disciple does not have the skills, nor is he prepared..."

"Does a warrior only fight when they want to? If they aren't prepared, do they not fight?"

"Of course that's not the case, but..."

"Enough talking. Just bring it. Your master will teach you with deep sincerity."

‘I would be fine if you just half-assed it...’

Yulian was screaming inside while tightly holding onto his greatsword. He could not think about getting hit by his Master. If he did, then he would definitely end up as rice. He knew he had to at least swing his sword while getting hit for his master to hit him at least one hit less. His survival instinct, forged from years of experience, prepared him for what was to come.

“Ahhhhh!”

You couldn’t tell whether Yulian was hyping himself up or screaming in terror as Yulian rushed towards Chun Myung Hoon.

‘He wants to treat me as a bad guy? Let him experience death.’

Even in his dreams, Yulian would have never guessed that Chun Myung Hoon had read his diary.

Under the hot desert sun, a continuous scream filled the desert.

Pareia’s Glow. Baguna Provoke, known as “Baguna the Wise” had been pretty happy lately.

He would be even happier if they did not have such violent battles with their bitter enemies, the Shuarei tribe, but that’s been going on forever so he could push it to the back of his mind.

The reason Baguna was so happy was because of his oldest son. He had been extremely worried about his oldest son. After his first wife, Mairez, the Mother of Pareia and the birth mother of his oldest son died, Yulian had changed significantly.

He did not show any of the youthfulness that normal ten year olds would show, and he was very cautious of everyone, almost to the point where he could be considered creepy.

Rather than hanging out with his peers, he was seen reading and talking to retired warriors about lessons for war and life.

Of course, that type of thing was also necessary knowledge to be the Glow, and could end up being beneficial in the future. But he

did not want to see a ten year old doing that.

By the time the people of the tribe started to gossip about how something didn't seem right with the next generation's Glow, it was hard to call Yulian a child.

He could steer a Pirma as if he was moving his own finger, and on his waist, rather than a practice Shamshir, he had a durable and sharp Shamshir that warriors used.

Baguna was worried. His oldest son, who was supposed to grow up magnificently and become the next Glow could not grow up in such an abnormal way. Even the Glow needed someone to share his pain (talking about a friend), and a lover who they could be honest with.

As time passed, Pareia may be able to have a powerful Glow, but, at the same time, they had to accept that they would have a lonewolf Glow with no people skills.

It was so bad that Baguna had even thought about forcing Yulian to go study abroad.

‘It’s all thanks to this old man. It’s because of him that Yulian has returned to normal.’

Baguna could not hold back his smile as he watched Chun Myung Hoon with Yulian. In his mind, he was thinking:

‘This outsider, this guest, has started to change Yulian. Nobody knew his methods or his reason for accepting to do so. However, Yulian revered him as his master and Baguna had treated him well only because he was a guest.’

As time passed, a smile returned on Yulian’s face. Even his personality changed to that of an optimist.

One day, Baguna asked Yulian the reason.

“Did something good happen?”

“No, father.”

“Then why is there a smile on your face?”

“...”

Yulian could not answer truthfully. How could he say that he was smiling because his Master hit him more when he was frowning? How could he say that to his father?

A brilliant idea came to him while he was debating how to answer his father.

‘Now that I think about it, there is no reason for me to not be smiling. Once I complete my coming-of-age ceremony and become a warrior, wouldn’t I be stronger than all the other warriors? Yulian, Yulian, your mind has been clouded, hasn’t it. You have such a great master but all you’ve done is complain and whine, and try to be lazy.’

Yulian quickly responded to Baguna.

“I know that one day, I will only have happy days where I will always be smiling. So I am starting early, practicing my smiles for that time.”

Book 1-1.8 Path of becoming a Glow

A smile automatically appeared on Baguna's face thinking about that time. He was extremely proud of his son.

“Why are you suddenly smiling while playing Yulta (a board game played by the desert tribes, similar to chess with 20 horses)?”

Chun Myung Hoon was confused as Baguna suddenly started smiling while playing Yulta.

“I am smiling because I am extremely happy that my son is being taught by such a great master.”

Chun Myung Hoon didn't act modest and responded as if it was natural.

“I'm trying my best but I am just a bit disappointed that he is so slow. If he was a little smarter or had a bit more potential, I'm sure we would have already started to see some results. Tsk. Tsk. Tsk.”

Even though he was clicking his tongue and making fun of his son, rather than frowning, Baguna agreed with Chun Myung Hoon.

“I must apologize. I thought he was actually pretty smart, but didn't know he was such a slow kid.”

“Well, it'll work out if I give him a little more attention and put in some more effort. Glow, you have nothing to worry about.”

As Chun Myung Hoon said that while leisurely capturing one of his horses, Baguna responded back, taking the horse Chun Myung Hoon used to capture his piece.

“All I can do is have faith. I'm sure you will do whatever you need to do.”

The two of their hand movements became faster.

“Aigoo!”

Baguna blurted out loud, as if he was surprised at Chun Myung Hoon's move. Before he knew it, Chun Myung Hoon's horse was aiming at his Glow horse (King piece).

"I was the one who taught you the game, but you've won every game from the start. How are you so good at this game?"

As Baguna shook his head while admitting defeat, Chun Myung Hoon laughed as he responded:

"The goal of Yulta is to catch the opponents Glow Horse to end the game. That means all the other horses just have to move with that goal in mind. Do you even need a strategy?"

Listening to Chun Myung Hoon respond as if he was asking a dumb question, Baguna had an awkward smile on his face as he asked further:

"I'm asking how you have to move the pieces."

Chun Myung Hoon could not understand. Compared to Badook that he enjoyed played in China, Yulta was extremely simple.

It was at this point that Yulian entered the Paoe. As if he came up with an idea, Chun Myung Hoon called Yulian over to sit.

"Come sit over here."

Hearing Chun Myung Hoon's instruction, Yulian quickly came and sat down next to Baguna. Chun Myung Hoon started back and forth between Yulian and Baguna, then started to speak.

"You didn't understand my explanation, right? Thinking about it, I thought it would be good for Yulian to hear as well. That's why I had him sit down."

Not knowing what was going on, Yulian looked back and forth at his father and his master. Baguna quickly whispered in Yulian's ear:

"He plays Yulta so well that I asked him what the secret it."

As Yulian nodded his head, Chun Myung Hoon started to move

the pieces back to their starting positions.

“Yulta is just a game. There are no lives at stake, so it’s easy to move your horses. Even if I only had my Glow Horse left, as long as I catch the opponent’s Glow Horse, doesn’t that mean I win?”

The father and son duo both nodded their heads.

“Then what kind of strategy needs to be there? Even if it is at the cost of all of my horses, all I have to do is catch the opponent’s Glow. I don’t want to sacrifice this warrior horse. If I do this, my horse will die. There’s no reason to think like that. What is important is knowing that my movement increases my chances of catching the opponent’s Glow.”

Chun Myung Hoon thought for a bit before continuing.

“Even more, people make mistakes and there can be a difference in level, but in Yulta, even the pawn can eat up the opponent’s best warrior given the right circumstances. Right?”

“Yes, that is true.”

Baguna responded as Chun Myung Hoon continued.

“Don’t put real life strategy into Yulta. In real life, the method I described would be one only done by an evil dictator. In games, it’s fine for the Glow to be the only one left standing. In real life... I don’t think that’ll be good...”

Yulian and Baguna were carefully considering Chun Myung Hoon’s words. They did not expect him to compare Yulta to real life.

Yulian asked:

“Is there a way to protect your horses while still winning?”

Chun Myung Hoon answered, as if he was waiting for that question.

His disciple is someone who will rule over thousands of Pareian tribe members.

He was in a similar situation as the head of hundreds of believers. He wanted to use this opportunity to how scary that responsibility could be.

“In Yulta, it is impossible. However, in real life, it is possible.”

Yulian knelt on his knees and respectfully responded.

“I will keep your lesson in mind.”

Listening to Yulian’s response, Baguna also changed his laid-back posture. As you could tell by his title of “Baguna the Wise,” Baguna was smart and truly cared for his people. If there was something he could learn from this knowledgeable outsider guest, he would have no problem kneeling like Yulian.

“In Yulta, once the Glow dies, everything ends. However, in the real world, even if the Glow dies, it is not the end. Rather, it could even be considered a new beginning. What do you think a Glow is?”

“The light of the tribe.”

“How do you plan to shine your light?”

“I plan to do everything to put my people first.”

“That is wrong.”

Chun Myung Hoon quickly shot down Yulian’s answer and responded.

“Didn’t I tell you before that a Glow who does not cherish himself cannot cherish his people?”

“Then...”

As Yulian was struggling, Chun Myung Hoon looked over to Baguna.

Baguna had also thought things through carefully before answering.

“I would rule myself and rule my people.”

“As expected, a beautiful answer.”

Seeing Chun Myung Hoon smile at his father’s answer, Yulian asked:

“Master, what does a Glow mean to you?”

“For me, a Glow, King, the head of a tribe, they are all the same. In their existence, they are able to maintain the balance. They stand firm and endure without faltering.”

“Does that shine light?”

“You’re looking at it like it is easy. To maintain balance by existing, is a heavy and difficult thing to do.”

Chun Myung Hoon reflected back on his past.

Although he was talking like that, in the past, he was someone who was having difficulties in a battle against himself. Wasn’t that why he gave his life to Miruk?

Maybe he was regretting that decision. There was a sudden passion in his voice.

“In every tribe, if there are good people, there will be bad people. If there are hasty people, there will be calm people. If there are smart people, there will be dumb people.”

Baguna nodded his head as if he understood the moral of Chun Myung Hoon’s lesson. As Yulian tilted his head in confusion, Chun Myung Hoon asked a question.

“Imagine there is a good person and a bad person in front of you. Both of them are great warriors. Which one would you bring with you to battle?”

“Of course the good person.”

Chun Myung Hoon shook his head at Yulian’s quick and definite answer.

“Wrong. You must bring both of them. I will ask another

question. You have a smart person and a dumb person. You have a problem and need to ask someone for help. Who do you ask for help?”

“Of course the smart person.”

“Smack.”

Chun Myung Hoon had flicked a Yulta piece and struck Yulian on the forehead.

“Ow!”

Yulian quickly yelled and rubbed his forehead with his hand.

“You really need to think before answering. Is your master the type of person who would ask such simple questions? Furthermore, how could you make such definite decisions so quickly? How could you maintain balance like that?!”

Yulian could sense a light bulb go off in his head from Chun Myung Hoon’s words.

“Oh!”

After thinking for a long while, Yulian finally figured it out. Chun Myung Hoon was pleased and asked:

“Did you figure it out?”

“Yes, master.”

“I’m glad. I was worried because you are a little slow, but you should at least recognize the weight of your future responsibilities.”

“Master...”

As Yulian tried to complain about being called slow (dumb), Chun Myung Hoon looked at Baguna, smiled, and spoke again to Yulian.

“There are many different paths to being a King. As you mentioned, there are the kings who think about their people first. At the same time, there are the kings who rule themselves and rule

their people. And there is the type I described, the ones who can maintain the balance. In the world, if there is black, there is white, when there is cold, there is hot. Everything in the world has two sides, how can you shine the light without taking care of the darkness?”

Chun Myung Hoon briefly stopped speaking before slowly continuing.

“This is the type of Glow I am thinking about.”

Chun Myung Hoon’s words deeply affected Yulian. He had been bestowed great wisdom.

Yulian bent over while still on his knees and kowtowed to thank his master for the lesson.

‘This is the path I must take. To maintain balance by existing. I will definitely become that type of person.’

Yulian had taken one step towards the path of becoming a Glow.

Translator’s note:

With this chapter, we have finished the first section labeled “The Old Man.”

Next up:

The coming of age ceremony.

I felt the blessing of the gods enter my body.

Book 1-2.1 The Crimson Desert

The coming of age ceremony.

I felt the blessing of the gods enter my body.

The Crimson Desert that divides the large continent in half. The people of the continent were divided to the Eastern and Western continent by this Crimson Desert. They weren't very different, but this desert was large enough to make a decent border.

There are many unique characteristics to this Crimson Desert.

First of all, the name Crimson Desert comes from the fact that the sands are red in color but also because there is blood always being shed here.

There are a total of twelve different tribes in the Crimson Desert.

The land where during the day there is a blistering heat, and at night, the icy coldness could even freeze your soul. Half of the desert is made of quicksand, so it was difficult for people who did not know the way to even move freely. With a single miscalculation, the sand would be where their souls will be buried in a moment's notice.

And of course, water was important. In the desert, there are approximately two hundred oasis that have not dried up for a long time, and will not dry up. There are also approximately two hundred oasis which dry up and then refill itself in a cycle. Finally, there are approximately one hundred oasis which appear and then disappear.

Just hearing those numbers, you might be thinking that there are a lot of oasis. But for a desert this large, that amount of oasis would be considered on the lower end.

The level of strength for each desert tribe is based around how many never-drying oasis they had control over. That is why all of

the desert tribes are always fighting. They are trying to increase the number of Oasis that their tribe controls.

Truthfully, even though the number of oasis are low, there was plenty of water. In fact, there was enough water that even if the population of the desert increased by three hundred percent, there would still be enough.

Sadly, people don't know what satisfaction means and they are animals who live in fear. Since water meant survival, they could only relax when they had more water. The tribes always fought, worried that if they lost their Oasis, they could die or end up as slaves for an enemy tribe. Living in this type of environment was the reason the majority of the men in the desert were growing up to become rough and violent Warriors.

Although all of the desert tribes originated from the same ancestor, this actually led some tribe to become bitter enemies.

The tribes who have the most violent wars and have been fighting the longest are Yulian's

Pareia tribe and the Shuarei tribe.

As the saying goes, the two tribes would get fussy about not being able to eat the other tribe. Because each of the tribes had these types of issues, it became known as the Crimson Desert for the continuous bloodshed.

In addition, regardless of all the other things, the reason the strong nations in the East and the West could not just leave the desert alone was because of a resource that existed in the desert.

This resource was known as the 'Black Water,' or 'Burning Water.'

This was the reason Yulian's pride was hurt significantly.

The interference of the great powers.

Not only the Pareia tribe, even the Rivolde tribe, the largest tribe

who owned seventeen Oasis, could not avoid it.

If all of the desert tribes united together, it could become the scariest country on the continent, but the tribes were currently split in so many ways.

The desert is a scary place, but if you put your mind to it, it was still a place that could be invaded. That was why all of the desert tribes paid tributes to the strong nations; in the East, these were the Inama Kingdom and the Puria Kingdom, and in the West it was the Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom.

The Rojini kingdom does not have a border against the desert, but because they were a strong kingdom located right next to the Silence Empire, it could be said to be a strategic alliance.

Of those, Pareia has been paying tribute to the Silence Empire. On the surface, it looked like they had a favorable trading partnership, but compared to the amount of work that went into harvesting and storing the burning water, they were getting the short end of the stick, receiving pennies in comparison. This made it obvious it was a tribute and not a trade.

When you consider the violent nature of these tribes, the fact that they would sit still for this type of plot was weird, but putting the danger of invasion second, they could not say no because the payment they were receiving for the burning water was iron.

If their tribe was the only one to reject the trade, it was guaranteed to create a difference in the number of weapons they possessed compared to the other tribes.

In war, the warriors were important, but the right weapons for the warriors were just as important.

Weapons are used up each and every battle. If two warriors have the same level of skill, a warrior holding a wooden shield will be pushed around by a warrior with a steel shield. With the current situation in the desert where each tribe is itching to eat up the

other, iron was more important than gold.

This was why the desert tribes ended up in the situation where they were being forced to listen to the outrageous demands of the strong nations of the continent.

Book 1-2.2 The Fatty's Demands

Janet Le Borrea, the highest ranking diplomat in the Silence Empire, has enough fat to be considered chubby. On his face, the blackheads were plenty, as if it was a path of stars in the night sky.

His hair did not match his large face; his hair was parted down the middle and both ends of his hair were beautifully wavy.

On first glance, he looked like an arrogant fatty who did not fit the position of a diplomat. However, his abilities in diplomatic negotiations were skilled and sophisticated. He would never raise his voice, and he would also never throw a fit relying on his position. He was deserving to be called a diplomat of an Empire.

The fact that he showed up in person was a gesture to show that Pareia was important to the empire. Because of this gesture, Pareia could not help but make a lot of concessions.

Yulian did not like Janet, but could not help but be impressed at his plotting abilities. If Janet did not continue to make such extreme demands, he may have even had a little bit of respect for Janet.

This fatso diplomat has been enjoying the negotiations since he arrived a week ago, receiving the full hospitality that Pareia had to offer.

In any case, the empire was holding the hilt of the sword, and even in the worst case scenario, he would just go back empty-handed. Although they were uncivilized barbarians, they had a tradition of honoring their guests; they would always return the envoys and guests safely.

Of course, even with that being the case, a veteran diplomat like himself had no plans whatsoever of creating that type of worst case scenario.

‘As long as we can take away as much as we can. Your lives would

have been better if you became a principality of our empire.'

Janet smirked, thinking about the Pareia tribe elders, whose pride was very high. Many strong kingdoms were coveting the desert, but none of the twelve desert tribes had bowed their head to one of the continent's kingdoms. Their unique level of pride was beyond anybody's imagination. Even though the circumstances of the desert pretty much forced them to send tributes to the kingdoms, it did not change.

"That's not possible. We need too many warriors to dig up and transport the burning water."

When Glow Baguna answered with a resolute voice, Janet gently laughed and responded.

"We're not just asking you to increase the amount. Didn't I say that we will also increase iron, the amount of iron?"

"We are already sending you burning water three times a month without stopping. We have over a thousand of our tribe's warriors working to make that happen. We cannot increase that number anymore."

Seeing that Glow Baguna's response was firm even with his persuasion, Janet let out a small sigh and answered.

"Huuu, I want to slightly teach Pareia's Glow about the current situation of the Western Continent. Would that be okay?"

"Speak. I am very curious about the situation of the Western Continent."

With Glow Baguna's approval, Janet started to open his mouth as if his lips were coated with oil.

"The Western Continent is currently very unstable. This is because the Rojini Kingdom, which has been trying to defeat our Silence Empire, has started their revolt. They've grown a little bit lately and think it is enough to taunt us. What I am trying to say is that with this as the starting point, we may have another

continental war in the near future.”

Listening to Janet’s story, Glow Baguna removed his waist from the backrest and leaned in close to ask.

“Is that the truth?”

“Of course. How would I lie to the Glow of Pareia?”

Glow Baguna took a peek at Yulian hearing Janet’s earnest answer. As Yulian’s coming-of-age ceremony was near, he brought his son to the meeting to gain experience. He also wanted his son to become stimulated by foreign diplomacy. This was because young children tended to grow more if they were stimulated over and over.

When Yulian saw his father looking at him, he lightly shook his head.

Of course, Baguna did not believe the words of the envoy either. What kind of foreign diplomat would share that type of first-level information? But maybe it was because of Janet’s diplomatic skills, but the way he spoke was excellent.

Janet quietly said again.

“I know you probably don’t believe me, but you must think about Pareia and believe my words. Currently, any kingdom which has the chance of showing their strength in the southern continent is preparing for war. You know what goes into war preparation, right? What I am trying to tell you is that they are all collecting iron.”

“But didn’t you say that the Silence Empire will send us more iron in return?”

Janet hit his left palm with his right fist, as if saying, that’s it!

“The fact that we are willing to send more iron shows you just how much the emperor of the Silence empire considers Pareia. Truthfully, the crown prince was planning on attending this

meeting as well, but he has been focused on training with the Guardian Knights in preparation for war. As such, I had to come alone.”

“Even if that is the case, more is not possible.”

“Please don’t decide that way, Glow. If, hypothetically, a war broke out on the Western Continent and we were unable to provide iron to the Western tribes, it will probably weaken your stance with the tribes who have a connection with the Eastern continent. What would happen with the Shuarei tribe if that happened?

“Hmm...”

Glow Baguna let out a short groan at Janet’s words. Janet’s words were not wrong. That was Pareia’s, no that was weakness for all tribes, regardless of east or west.

In Pareia’s case, if they could not get enough iron, they would be pushed back by the Shuarei tribe in the East.

Janet had reminded him of this weakness.

“I will think about it.”

“We are not trying to force a decision. It is just that we need a lot of burning water to prepare for war. That is why we are urgently asking for this. It’s a war that our Silence Empire will end up winning anyways. Later, once everything has been settled, how could our Silence Empire forget about Pareia’s contributions?”

Janet was proficiently saying things to save Pareia’s face using diplomatic plots to make Glow Baguna’s decision easier.

“Hmm..., I said I’ll think about it, did I not?”

Janet smiled in his mind listening to the lackluster response from Glow Baguna, knowing that he had succeeded.”

“I look forward to the will of the wisest Glow.”

“Then rest peacefully.”

Glow Baguna walked out of the Paoe without looking back, as if his mood was ruined.

Yulian followed his father and asked.

“What do you plan to do?”

“Our only option is to send a little more warriors.”

“How many more warriors are you planning on sending?”

“To meet the conditions of their demand, we will need to send at least five hundred more.”

Yulian fervently shook his head at Glow Baguna’s answer and yelled.

“To get another five hundred, the only place we can pull warriors from are in the suburbs. If we really removed five hundred, it will be difficult to protect the hunting ground and the Monster Field.”

“It will be even harder to defend without iron.”

Glow Baguna pushed his temples with both of his hands and responded in a weak voice. His head was hurting.

Looking at his father’s words and actions, Yulian thought this was what you would call you throw an arrow at the prey that’s attached to a Pirma’s tail first (take care of the fire that’s on your heels first).

‘If the desert tribes did not fight with each other like this, how could we stand for such plotting and persecution?’

Yulian believed that the tribes were being robbed by the strong nations of the continent because the desert tribes were fighting with each other.

‘If all of the desert was united under one tribe, we would not be weaker than any of the strong kingdoms. In fact, they would probably have to be giving US tributes. Because the desert warriors are the best.’

Yulian had a new determination in his mind.

‘I must unite the desert. By uniting all of the desert tribes, rather than continuing to live like this, we can make a showing to the continent and work to live a much more abundant life.’

Yulian’s path was determined. It had grown bigger from just following the law of the desert and conquering the Shuarei tribe.

Desert Conquest.

‘I will definitely unite this Crimson Desert, and change the name from the Crimson Desert to the Glowing Desert.’

The Young Glow Yulian firmly closed his fist with determination. And he putting all of his effort to his training to make his determination a reality. Quickly, it changed from training to not get hit from Chun Myung Hoon to training passionately to make his dreams a reality.

Yulian started to consider getting hit by Chun Myung Hoon to be getting one step closer to his dream and Yulian was taking large strides towards his dream.

Book 1-2.3 Heading Off

A ferocious force started to attack the sandy desert floor.

It was caused by two strands of large, sharp and powerful sword winds.

The person responsible for this wind has now grown too much to be called a child, but still seemed like it was too soon to call him a young adult.

Although that is the case, the thought process to accept him as a young adult is based on his firm body trained with strong muscles. It was also because of the powerful aura around him that even ordinary people could feel.

In addition, his training, where he was swinging around two greatswords that are as tall as him and wider than his palm as if he was going to wipe out all the earth, strengthens the desire to call him a young adult.

Yulian, now eighteen years old, was focusing on filling his body with aura, as he prepared to leave for his coming-of-age ceremony.

For the Pareia tribe, the coming-of-age ceremony proved that a person had the ability to help their tribe. Therefore, at their coming-of-age ceremony, they can also receive the proud title of being a Pareia warrior.

Most of the boys facing their coming-of-age ceremony used their shamshir techniques and Pirma riding techniques that they have been training for many years to catch a wild beast or a monster by themselves to show that they could provide strength to the tribe. To do that was a difficult and dangerous road.

Leaving alone, with just a Pirma, weapons and equipment, and emergency rations, to wander the desert and the wilderness on their own to hunt a beast or monster was something that took numerous days for even veteran warriors. Although they had gone

through extensive training, it was not any average feat to complete this task that required such bravery and skill, by themselves.

The majority took more than one month, and there were only a few boys who completed it without getting hurt. Although they didn't know of it at the time, veteran warriors would secretly follow the boys completing the coming-of-age ceremony. Because of this, it sharply reduced the number of boys who ended up dying, but there still were times when they would return home dead, in the arms of the warriors.

Regardless of the danger, there were no boys in Pareia who chose to forego their coming-of-age ceremony. This was because all of them had been growing up and preparing, with the coming-of-age ceremony as their goal. Yulian also wanted to demonstrate his abilities through the coming-of-age ceremony, and this was why he was slightly concerned. Of course he had the confidence. Because it was Yulian, who had absorbed his master's rigorous training, he had even thought in his mind 'a stupid monster like you dares to challenge me?'

The problem was that he was the Young Glow. It wasn't an easy task for a boy facing his coming-of-age ceremony to defeat a beast or a monster on their own, but Yulian wanted to clearly show the people of the tribe his worth.

He wanted to be the type of person who could comfort the people of the tribe just by the fact that they knew he was going to be the next Glow.

In this type of situation, he really wanted to get some advice and encouragement from his father, Glow Baguna, but his father could not see his son's coming-of-age ceremony because he was busy.

A sense of nervousness could be felt in the sword Yulian was swinging.

It was very sad that he would have to proceed with his once in a lifetime coming-of-age ceremony without his father's blessing, but

Yulian consoled himself thinking about his father's honor and responsibilities.

‘Father is the father of everyone in Pareia.’

As he finished his train of thought, his breathing also disconnected, and the two greatswords were fixed into the belt around Yulian's waist.

“Are you done?”

Chun Myung Hoon asked from his side. In his eyes, he did not have any uncertainties or worries about his disciple.

“Yes, Master.”

“Do not throw such a fuss for bringing back a few animals. Although I am not satisfied with your skills, with your abilities, you won't end up getting beat up anywhere so finish quickly.”

Knowing that his master really meant what he was saying, Yulian smiled as he responded.

“What can I do to make it certain I finish faster? Also, what can I do to show great results to my master? Those are the questions I am trying to answer in my mind. Hahaha.”

“Either catch a whole bunch, or go and catch the sandworm that causes such headaches to Pareia.”

The look on the faces of the people around them changed with Chun Myung Hoon's words. The sandworm Chun Myung Hoon is talking about was a S-ranked monster that was large enough to be called the Sand Dragon. In the desert's Monster Field, it was one of the few monsters on the top of the food chain.

It crawls around in the desert and every so often, it comes out of the Monster Desert to attack Pirmas, causing a headache to not only Pareia, but all of the desert. In order to reduce their numbers, all of the desert tribes would individually send over three hundred of their seasoned warriors, two to three times a year, in a

Subjugation Squad. Even then, they would only be able to catch one or two of these monsters. Yet he was telling him to go and catch such a monster on his own. Nonetheless to the Young Glow.

Shaman Tuma Takata, who was going to bless Yulian on Glow Baguna's behalf, hurriedly stepped forward to speak.

"The one on the path to become a warrior. Yulian, all you have to do is show us your skills. Please do not touch the Sand Dragon under any circumstances."

As Chun Myung Hoon had an expression of disbelief on his face listening to Tuma Takata, Tuma Takata blamed Chun Myung Hoon.

"Honored guest, how could you say such a thing to our Young Glow? Our coming-of-age ceremony is meant to show proof of becoming an adult, not a ceremony to show a proof of recklessness."

Many of the people around them nodded their heads in agreement, and made them stare at Chun Myung Hoon with frowns on their faces.

Chun Myung Hoon did not pay much attention to it and instead looked at Yulian to ask.

"Do you not have the confidence?"

Feeling his master's stern gaze, Yulian quickly shook his head and answered.

"Not at all. I was planning on catching that one anyways."

"Yulian!"

"Young Glow!"

Tuma Takata yelled in opposition, and behind him, many of the others called the Young Glow as well.

"There there, do not cause such a ruckus. I, Yulian, am the Young Glow. I will have my skills be recognized to prove that I deserve to

be the Glow by catching a Sand Dragon.”

Listening to Yulian’s determined voice, Tuma Takata felt a dire need to urgently send a person to Glow Baguna.

“Sir Tuma Takata, do not worry too much. You know how I am, don’t you?”

Yulian disregarded the anxiety that Tuma Takata and the people were feeling and started to gather his equipment. He started to load his armor on the Pirma that he had spent over ten years together with, and his bedding and portable Paoe on a different Pirma.

Looking at Yulian’s eyes which showed no fear, the people shook their head and just prayed that the Young Glow will successfully complete his coming-of-age ceremony. All they could do was bless him as he walked by.

Once everything was packed, he went to say goodbye to his family before he left. Glow Baguna had three wives, and three children. Of them, the first wife and Yulian’s mother Mairez, had already left this earth, so his family was a total of six. The new Mother of Pareia, Sena Snia, blessed Yulian, who was kneeling in front of her, by kissing him on his forehead.

“The coming-of-age ceremony for the oldest son of the Provoke family. This mother truly hopes that you will safely return after completing it.”

Following that, the blessing of the third mother started, and all of his younger siblings in the Provoke family came up one by one to give their Hyung or Oppa the blessing to successfully complete his coming-of-age ceremony.

“I cannot see Pere. Did you not contact him?”

Sena frowned as she did not see her son, the second son of the Provoke family, Pere Provoke. As she asked the people around her, the third son Orca responded.

“I let him know that big hyung-nim had his coming-of-age ceremony today, but Pere hyung-nim said he needed to prepare for his own coming-of-age ceremony tomorrow...”

“What kind of nonsense is that!”

Sena shouted in anger.

She knew very well that her son was aiming to be the next Glow. Pere was born one day later than Yulian, and he could not accept the fact that Yulian was the Young Glow because of that one day difference. In addition, Pere was also someone who had power strong enough to be called divine ability, and at the same time he also showed the qualities to become a great warrior. Because of all this, it was not easy for him to give up the position of Glow.

Of course, the position of Glow went to the best of the Glow’s children, but because of the glory of Mairez, the deceased Mother of Pareia, and the fact that Yulian had shown the decorum befitting a Glow since he was young, the majority of the tribe accepted Yulian as the next Glow. It was this reason that it was difficult to shake the position of Young Glow away from Yulian.

“Mother, Pere is not wrong. As a man who is also preparing to become a warrior, of course there cannot be any setback in his preparation.”

Yulian tried to defend Pere, but Sena shook her head and continued to yell in anger.

“In what household do the family not bless the person leaving for their coming-of-age ceremony! Furthermore, we are the family of the Glow who should be setting the example for all of the other families. In addition, you will not be there tomorrow when Pere leaves on his coming-of-age ceremony. Wouldn’t it be nice for both of you two bless each other?! I know you and Pere do not have a good relationship, but you must keep what you must keep.”

Sena ordered Orca.

“Orca, go and find Pere and tell him to come here right now.”

“Yes, mother.”

Once Orca left, Yulian cautiously spoke to Sena.

“Mother, if you scold Pere, his courage and pride may shake right before his coming-of-age ceremony.”

Sena let out a long sigh and lifted her hand to pat Yulian on his shoulder.

“Sigh~. You must forgive him. Even though he acts this way, inside, nobody cares for their family as much as he does. I know that the best.”

“Of course. Mother, Pere will become an important warrior for the Provoke family and the Pareia tribe.”

Sena smiled at Yulian’s words.

“I hope our Orca grows up as understanding as Yulian. Enough to even cover up his younger brother’s mistakes.”

As Orca’s mother and the Glow’s third wife, Librie, interjected, Sena was not happy inside.

Just as she was about to finish the discussion with Yulian peacefully, Librie interjected and said that Pere’s actions were wrong. She did not like Librie’s actions at all.

When Mairez was still alive, this type of successor battle or issues in the house could not even be dreamt about, but since Mairez passed away, a seed of anxiety started to sprout little by little in the Provoke family.

If Sena did not conduct herself honorably as the mother of Pareia and tried to make her son Pere the glow, the Provoke family and Yulian would have had no option than to live a difficult life. But Sena and Mairez treated each other as real siblings, and Sena was deeply thankful to Mairez. Once Mairez died, Sena treated Yulian and Pere the same without the smallest of differences.

The only issue Sena had was with Librie, who would make her angry by irritating her every so often.

Yulian, who had no desire to become involved in the two mother's battle, pretended not to hear and instead started to respond to his younger siblings' blessings.

A bit later, Orca and Pere came inside.

"Mother, did you call?"

Yulian was already taller than his peers, but Pere was at least a head taller and larger than Yulian. He also had a deep voice that was pleasing to the ear, as well as a full moustache, which made it difficult to think he was only eighteen years old.

Pere bowed his head to greet his mother.

"Omo, it looks like Pere can't even see me."

As Librie was starting to start another fight, Sena spoke in a slightly irritated voice.

"You are also Pere's mother. What do you mean who is visible and who isn't? Think before you speak."

As Librie could no longer respond, Sena once again turned to Pere with a stern look and asked.

"Are the preparations for your coming-of-age ceremony going well?"

"Yes, mother."

"Even if you are preparing for your coming-of-age ceremony, were you not planning to bless your Hyung who is leaving on his coming-of-age ceremony? You too, how nice would it be to get your Hyung's blessing before you head out tomorrow?"

"Mother is correct."

As if he did not want to argue with his mother, Pere responded without complaint. Taking turns looking at Sena and Yulian, Pere

spoke stoically to Yulian.

“I will hope that you successfully complete the ceremony and return.”

“Thank you. I hope that you have the protection of the God of Warriors, Mairus, and that the tribe’s guardian, the God of storm, Neo Latin will be with you.”

Pere lightly bowed his head to Yulian and headed back out, and for a moment, the inside of the Paoe felt chilly, but Yulian quickly started to laugh brightly and said his farewells to his family.

“I will not take long. Mothers Sena and Librie. Please be at peace while I am away. As for the rest of you, while Pere and I are gone, you must take good care of our mothers.”

“Return safely.”

Sena and Librie were the last to give a kiss to Yulian’s forehead to say goodbye. All of his younger siblings were individually praying that their Hyung or Oppa would safely complete his coming-of-age ceremony.

Book 1-2.4 Looking for the Sand Dragon

“Shall I start heading out too?”

Chun Myung Hoon muttered to himself as he stood far away, watching Yulian leave the Paoe.

He spoke to his disciple as if it was natural, but he definitely did not want his one and only disciple to be in an accident.

Of course before Chun Myung Hoon told Yulian to go catch the sandworm, he went to confirm the abilities of the monster.

This old man played around with the Sand Dragon, the strongest monster in the desert, as if it was a toy to determine its abilities. He only directed Yulian to kill it after determining that it would be difficult but Yulian had the abilities to kill it.

Nonetheless, he knew that there were many things in the world that did not go the way you want it to, and because that worm has a skill that'll send you directly to the afterlife if you get hit directly, he was secretly following after Yulian.

Since the Pareian tribe secretly sent the family's warriors to look after the children completing the coming-of-age ceremony, he determined that even if it was revealed later, it would not hurt Yulian's pride.

‘Little rascal, it's obvious that you can beat that worm, I shall watch just how you take care of it. You better not make a mistake. If you do, I will increase the severity of the training when you return.’

He was saying this type of thing because he was feeling embarrassed at the amount of love he had for his disciple.

Riding on his Pirma, Yulian headed directly to the Monster's Desert, which was crawling with monsters.

The majority of the children going through the coming-of-age

ceremony would head towards the Monster's Desert and catch monsters wandering by itself around it. Or, they would head towards the wilderness to catch a wild beast. But Yulian, half on his own accord, half because he was told to do so, needed to head to the center of the Monster's Desert to catch the Sand Dragon.

“Did I make the wrong decision?”

Yulian questioned his decision as he was anxious. The Sand Dragon was a monster he had heard about, but had never seen. Even Baguna, who often took Yulian and Pere with him, never took the two of them when he was heading to subjugate the Sand Dragons.

Even when the strongest warriors headed together, this was somewhere they may end up with some casualties.

Although he was not afraid, Yulian could not help but to feel a bit nervous.

“Whatever. Monsters are also living beings. I'm sure they will get split in half by my greatsword.”

Yulian patted the greatsword on his waist and started to stroke the Prima's neck as he started to mutter again.

“I'm really sorry. It's heavy, isn't it?”

Due to the two greatswords, his Pirma looked like it was slumping over a bit. The weight and size of his greatswords were no pushover. Yulian was proud of his ability to freely swing these two greatswords, and that made his anxiety completely disappear.

As the desert was long and wide, it took a couple of days to reach the Monster's Desert. On the journey, he did catch a couple small monsters; because the process of catching them were so easy, Yulian started to become confident.

Yulian had just caught a Giant Scorpion. As he was putting the scorpion's Monster's Soul (the monster's innards, heart, etc, used for magic and as ingredients for medicine, and sold for a lot of

money) that was said to be worth a lot into his pocket, Yulian was becoming even more confident.

The Giant Scorpion was a difficult monster that even veteran warriors would have issues facing, unless there were at least five of them.

After being giddy by himself, Yulian started to think about growing the tribe's warriors as Monster Hunters, thinking they could buy a lot of iron with the souls they collect.

In addition to martial arts, Yulian had been reading a lot of different books as well. Yulian knew that in order to achieve his dream, in addition to a strong force, he also needed a strong economic power.

The desert had the unique commodity known as the burning water, but in comparison to the amount of people needed to meet the demands of the large kingdoms, the profit was too low. Until he could gather a significant amount of power, he had no choice but to avoid confronting these large kingdoms, so he was looking for other methods.

As Yulian continued to ponder while leading his Pirma, he suddenly heard a loud noise in his ear.

Caaaw, caw.

He could not see it with his eyes yet, but seeing as how he could hear it all the way here, he knew he was getting close to the Monster's Desert.

“Great.”

Yulian comforted the Pirma which was getting startled by the Monster's cry and got off the Pirma's back. This was a way to handle the monsters that traveled underneath the sand.

Yulian could feel the blood inside of him start to boil. He was feeling light and excited, and just slightly tense. This was a thrilling pleasure. Everything was mysterious and new.

‘I guess this is the mind of a warrior?’

Feeling the excitement of a warrior as they headed for a war, Yulian slowly headed towards the center of the Monster’s Desert.

Only a strong wind filled with the fishy smell of monsters greeted Yulian’s visit.

Before he knew it, a week had gone by since Yulian entered the Monster’s Desert. A face shot out of the desert sand.

Dry lips. Pointy black hair. Two red eyes. With a quick glance, it almost looked like a humanoid monster. Yulian pushed aside the sand around him and dusted himself to get rid of the sand surround his body.

“Pweh. Pweh.”

He then put his hand in his mouth to swipe and spit. Even the inside of his mouth was filled with sand.

“I almost died from suffocation. It must be difficult for the monsters too. How many times has this happened already?”

Yulian was complaining about the tens of times he had to deal with a sandstorm in the past week and pulled the leather cloth hanging above the sand with all his might.

Snort.

As Yulian lifted the cloth, the Pirma, which was hidden from the sandstorm pushed forward its legs, causing the sand to fly everywhere.

“I barely got rid of all the sand; did you have to do that?”

Yulian once again removed all the sand on him while complaining to his Pirma. Then he sat down and started to control his breathing.

The Monster’s Desert was definitely not an easy place. Dealing with the sandstorm every day was the second issue. The most urgent issue was that Yulian could not sleep well at night. He could

not sleep well in a place where there were a lot of nocturnal monsters, as well as monsters that can travel inside the sand. So nodding his head a few times as if he fell asleep for a bit was the extent of Yulian's sleeping.

If a person cannot sleep, their judgement falters, and their body can feel like it's being lifted and stop moving the way they want it to. Even the actions that you've trained in for a long time can feel unfamiliar to you.

He was using the Heavenly Aura that his Master taught him to freely handle his two greatswords to reduce his level of tiredness, but controlling his Ki and sleep were inherently different, so Yulian could not do anything about this odd feeling in his body.

"You damn sandworm. When I see you, I will destroy you for making me suffer like this."

He could not even find one scale of the Sand Dragon he had been looking for, and ended up hunting just a bunch of small monsters.

In fact, his leather pouch was already full of low level Monster's Souls to the point that he could not add anymore.

But Yulian was still feeling proud of the fact that he could remain alert after being out here for a week. As he dusted himself and started to move...

"Oh!"

Book 1-2.5 The Red Dragon

As soon as Yulian stood up, he felt a slight vibration under his feet.

‘It’s them.’

Yulian confirmed that the vibrations were happening because Sand Dragons were nearby. Among the monsters that live in the sand, there are the Spec (a ball-shaped monster that moves around inside the sand to hunt small animals) and the Gorias (a turtle-like monster living in the sand), but since neither of those could cause such vibrations even when moving in a giant herd, Yulian was able to determine that the vibration was caused by the Sand Dragon.

“Let’s go.”

Now that Yulian knew it was nearby, he started to head at full speed on top of the Pirma. When he traveled for about ten minutes?

“Oh! Unbelievable!”

Yulian was astonished by the sight in front of his eyes.

Even though a part of its body was still in the sand, it still shot up as high as the sky. Even on the small end it was at least ten meters long. Thinking about the remaining body still stuck underneath the sand, he could not even fathom just how long it truly was.

It was the Sand Dragon he had been looking for. He had finally found it.

There were three of these Sand Dragons tangled together like tree roots as they shot up. Yulian gasped in shock staring at the three heads, which looked like large fruits. Momentarily, he even thought about backing away.

Even though he was confident, he thought it would be impossible with three of them together. He had thought about first running

away, and then roaming around this area, taking them down one by one.

Crrrrrrrr. Craaaaaaaaaaaaaak!

As Yulian made his decision and turned the Pirma around to run away, he heard a loud noise that vibrated across the desert, making him turn his head.

“What the!”

A funny sight came into his view. The two dark red Sand Dragons were trying to bite the one red Sand Dragon.

The red Sand Dragon started twisting its body left and right and moved its head to try to avoid the two attacks, but it was difficult since their bodies were tangled together.

However, it looked like the red Sand Dragon was a strong one; even though it was getting hit and bitten everywhere by the two dark red Sand Dragons, it did not receive a critical blow and was able to endure.

But as time passed, it's movements started to become dull, and it was certain that the dark red Sand Dragons will end up winning in the end.

What just went through Yulian's mind?

Yulian turned his Pirma back around and started to head towards the location the three Sand Dragons were fighting. As he started to get closer, the Pirma became frightened of these desert monsters and stopping moving. When that happened, Yulian got off the Pirma and put his two greatswords across his shoulders.

“Haaaaaaaaaaaaa!”

With a loud noise Yulian's body quickly headed towards the location where the three Sand Dragons were fighting.

Craaaaaaaaaaaa!

The three Sand Dragons were too busy brutally fighting with

each other to notice Yulian approaching underneath them.

“Just pretend I am cutting down a tree. A gigantic tree that is three meters wide.”

Yulian mumbled to himself as he looked up to stare above him.

“Since they are tangled together, they should not be able to get free until the body falls over.”

This was what you call [the fisherman's gain](#). Yulian was giddy as he thought about the term his master had taught him.

It's a Korean saying that states that when two parties are fighting, a third party can benefit without putting much work. It's called the fisherman's gain because how it is described is that a bird tries to eat the meat of a clam and sticks its beak inside, but as soon as it sticks it in, the clam tightens itself and won't let go of the bird. While they are fighting, the fisherman is able to catch both of them.

Crack. Crack.

Yulian swung his greatsword as if he was leisurely stretching. He twisted his hips as much as possible, and once the two greatswords were parallel to the ground, Yulian quickly untwisted his hips as he swung his sword.

Slaaaaaaaaash.

Yulian's large greatsword went into the body as if it finally met a worthy opponent.

“Guooooo!”

The moment he heard a piercing noise that felt like it would break his eardrums, the two greatswords showed themselves again, dropping large drops of blood onto the sandy floor as if to show that they completed their mission.

“It's not time for me to slow down.”

Without even a moment to look cool, Yulian swung his hips

again.

‘This time, the red one.’

Yulian made up his mind. Even in cutting them up, there was an order.

He didn’t know if monsters had that type of mentality too, but anybody could see that the two dark red Sand Dragons were allies. In that case, it made sense to cut up one of them first. Next was the red one, since it looked like the strongest of the three.

Once he does that, he should be able to take on the last one with his own abilities without attacking stealthily like this.

That was the image Yulian drew up in his head, and he was about to draw the second image.

Twist.

The Sand Dragons had fast reactions. Even though they were busy fighting with each other, as one fell away, they quickly untangled themselves.

At that moment, Yulian ended up seeing it. The red Sand Dragon, which looked to be the strongest, quickly spread open its wings. The wings were glorious and looked to be at least fifteen meters wide.

“There’s no way...”

Yulian remembered reading about this in one of the continent’s books. There was even an image in that book that matched the red dragon in front of him, and he vividly remembered that image even today.

“A real dragon?”

As Yulian shouted in shock, the Red Dragon used its large claws to rip apart the Sand Dragon.

As if it was finally paying back all of its grudges, it ripped the Sand Dragon apart like it wanted to make it into thin strands of

yarn. Yulian almost fell down on the ground in shock.

The pressure given off by this monster known as the dragon was beyond imagination, and when the Red Dragon landed on the ground and tilted its head to look at Yulian, he even felt like he wanted to die.

“Haaaaaaa!”

Yulian pushed out all his energy to stand up, let out his force and crossed the two greatswords in front of him.

The strength of the force was weak and did not cause any damage to the monster, but at least he was able to get rid of the fear inside of him.

“Puk.”

As a consequence to letting out all of his force, he was starting to bleed dark red blood from his mouth.

At this moment, he felt a gushing wind come from behind him and he felt like his body was lifted up before he fell down on his butt. In front of his eyes, there was a person who looked greater than anybody else.

“Master.”

It was none other than Chun Myung Hoon who stood between Yulian and the Red Dragon.

“For an insect, you have quite the force.”

Chun Myung Hoon deliberately ignored Yulian’s calling and yelled at the dragon. The dragon looked at Chun Myung Hoon as if it was amused.

“Master.”

Yulian jumped up and stood next to his master. Chun Myung Hoon raised his hand to shut him up.

This monster had a force greater than he imagined, and one that

was no weaker than himself at full force. It was not comparable to the thousand year old Leviathan he took care of in China.

Chun Myung Hoon said to Yulian:

“I thought it was a worm but it seems like it’s actually a dangerous insect. With your level of force, it’ll be difficult to even stand here so go stand far away.”

Yulian knew that his master was right, but how could he run away alone and leave his great master here?

Especially when his master came here for him.

“How could I leave my master and run away by myself? I would rather give my life to save...”

Hearing Yulian’s words Chun Myung Hoon turned his head to look at Yulian in disbelief.

“You...you don’t think that I’ll be killed by that insect, do you?”

Book 1-2.6 Master vs Dragon

“Master.... That...”

Yulian was stuttering in embarrassment. He could feel the Red Dragon laughing at him. He could see the smile being painted on its face.

“You idiot. Back away.”

Chun Myung Hoon turned his hand around to grab Yulian by the collar and swung his arm. Yulian’s body went soaring through the sky like a tiny rock and Chun Myung Hoon drew large circles with both of his arms.

- Breath (Breath of the Soul)

And the Red Dragon’s mouth opened.

A powerful flame came bursting out of the dragon’s mouth, and the flame covered Chun Myung Hoon faster than you could even blink.

Chun Myung Hoon quickly raised his Heavenly Breath to the twelfth level and used internal force to guide the flame.

It was an amazing sight. The flame from the dragon was becoming a tornado in front of Chun Myung Hoon, and Chun Myung Hoon continued to swing his two arms while moving backwards to get rid of the flame. Yulian’s jaws fell in disbelief as he was watching from far away, and it was the same for the Red Dragon.

It was not even magic, it was not even a mana field. All it was was a puny human swinging his two arms to put out his breath. At first, he was amused at the vast amount of mana this old man had, and shot out the breath expecting him to block it, but he could not ever imagine him blocking it like this.

It was a short duration of a few seconds, but it seemed like an

eternity. But it finally ended and Chun Myung Hoon yelled out loud.

“Looks like you’re a monster I can’t let live. How dare an insect let out such great natural force. I shall defeat you for the benefit of all the people of this world.”

As Chun Myung Hoon dropped his arms, Yulian’s greatswords ended up in Chun Myung Hoon’s hands before Yulian could even say ‘Ah!’ and Chun Myung Hoon started to move his two feet quickly.

“Grrrrr.”

The Red Dragon let out a yell before flapping its wings and flying high into the sky. At that moment, the greatswords in Chun Myung Hoon’s hands scratched the bottom of the Dragon’s feet.

Clang.

It sounded like something hit the sword. But all he managed to do was scratch the tip of the dragon’s toenail.

“A flying insect...”

Chun Myung Hoon muttered in disbelief. He thought the wings were not usable, so he was shocked to see it fly so high in the sky.

- Human, do not swing your sword. I have no desire to kill you.

The booming voice of the Dragon in the sky came through in the language of the desert, but Chun Myung Hoon only snorted.

“Hmph, you think I can’t catch you because you flew up into the sky?”

Chun Myung Hoon measured the distance between the two of them and started to gather force into the blade before swinging. A strong force, visible to the naked eye, started to form a Crescent shape before shooting off into the sky.

It was not just one or two. Countless crescent shaped force attacks filled the sky, with another crescent being added every

time he swung the sword.

Unfortunately, the dragon did not look like he was concerned about it, avoiding it or using magic to reflect it to make it disappear.

Seeing that his method was not working, Chun Myung Hoon unwillingly stopped his blade. After flying in circles a couple of times, the dragon landed back on the ground.

- Human, I predicted that you will arrive in this world. And I have no desires whatsoever to fight you. I was merely curious about your strength and chose to test you. There is no reason to harbor any negative feelings towards me.

The dragon spoke jovially as it lowered its head but Chun Myung Hoon just snorted as if he did not want to accept it.

“Hmph, an insect becoming curious about humans?”

- Raaaaawr. Do not ignore me. I am a being that has been here since the beginning of time.

“In our world, even dogs and cows have existed from the beginning of time along with humans.”

The dragon did not know what ‘dogs and cows’ were, but he was able to understand enough to know he was making fun of him. But there was nothing he could do. The human in front of him was at the same level as the undying granny on the magic tower. In addition, he was the first person to arrive in this world as the prophecy stated.

As he was not an average person, the dragon spoke respectfully.

- Put away your hostility. I have no desire to fight you, nor do I have the desire to harm the young human behind you. I finally understand the mission I was given.

“Hmph.”

As if he understood that he too could not do anything to this

large insect, Chun Myung Hoon continued to show anger but did not swing his sword anymore.

- Young Human, come over here.

As the dragon called Yulian who was staring mindlessly from far away, Yulian looked to his master.

“Come over here.”

Once he received his master’s approval, Yulian approached the Red Dragon. Seeing Yulian approach, the Red Dragon spoke to Yulian.

- Due to my silly mistake, I became involved with the large monster known as the sandworm. I must thank you for getting me out of that predicament.

Technically, the proper name for it is the Giant Sand Dragon, but the Dragon used Chun Myung Hoon’s term for it, as if it could not believe that such a monster would have the title of dragon. That’s why it used the term sandworm when it thanked Yulian.

“Eh? Ahh... yes...”

- I can’t stop admiring your bravery, young human. As a result, I am giving you my blessing. Tell me your wish. A contract with a dragon follows you forever. As long as there is no change to the laws of the world, I will grant you your wish.

Yulian did not expect this from the Dragon and took turns looking at the Dragon and his master, as if the cat got his tongue.

“It looks like it has quite the ability. I will not get involved.”

Chun Myung Hoon thought that Yulian was considering his standing and let him know.

Yulian finally opened his mouth to say:

“I do not know what kind of existence you are.”

- There are not many humans who know of my existence. All you

have to do is tell me your wish. It was thanks to you that I was able to find out my mission, and I may end up being stuck here for hundreds of years because of you too.

“Please give confirmation and luck to my dream.”

The Dragon thought Yulian’s answer was quite odd and tilted his head a bit to look at Yulian. Right away, Yulian’s dream was transmitted to him. That type of dream was something he could grant right now.

The dragon spoke.

- You’re not asking me to do it for you.

“My dream is something that must be achieved by my hands. My revenge must also be achieved by my own hands. If it is handled by someone else, it is not my dream nor my revenge.”

Chun Myung Hoon was pleased with Yulian’s answer.

“This punk may lack talent, but his determination is firm. He will definitely end up a great being. I’m very proud. But of course. As my, Chun Myung Hoon’s disciple, he needs to show that level of determination.”

- From the beginning of time, the name that I have been given is Ultima Ops Richard. I use my authority, which has been given to me since the beginning of time to command to you, my blessing will protect you on the battlefield.

Yulian felt his head clear with the Dragon’s answer. The fatigue that he had instantly disappeared, and it was as if his chest and dantian were rumbling greatly, as if it was vomiting out force. That type of electricity filled his body.

“Ahhhhh~!”

This type of unbelievable feeling led Yulian to unintentionally shout, and Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head listening to the clear shout.

At this level when he is only eighteen years old, if he continued to polish his skills continuously, before the end of the year, he should be able to control the force with his sword.

At that level, he'll be similar in speed to the talented children in China.

The dragon then turned to Chun Myung Hoon.

- I did not know why I came here, but after meeting you, I have learned my mission. Do you know why you are here?

Chun Myung Hoon thought he might finally learn the reason he ended up here.

“Do you know why?”

- Know, I do. Long discussion, you and I need.

With the dragon's response, Chun Myung Hoon said to Yulian:

“Congratulations on your coming-of-age ceremony. You caught to monster with your courage so return to the tribe proud. I must chat with this insect for a while.”

“Yes, Master.”

As Yulian politely responded, Chun Myung Hoon traded some words with the dragon before flying up and landing on the dragon's neck. The dragon then flapped its wings and flew off into the sky.

Yulian stared until the dragon and his master disappeared into the sky, and once they disappeared completely, he went to get the Monster's Soul from the two Sand Dragons.

The Monster's Soul for the Sand Dragon he slashed remained intact, however, there was nothing left of the Sand Dragon that was ripped to shreds by the dragon.

After putting the Sand Dragon's Monster's Soul in his pocket, Yulian smiled.

His coming-of-age ceremony ended successfully, and his master showed a satisfied smile. In addition, he received some type of blessing from an ancient lifeform known as the dragon, which filled his entire body with energy. There was nothing else he could ask for right now.

Yulian's footsteps as he returned to the tribe felt very light.

This is the end of the “Coming-of-Age Ceremony” Arc.

Book 1-3.1 The Messenger

Red Storm

The warriors' mouths were filled with swear words. You couldn't dream about having complaints while getting stronger, but you couldn't prevent yourself from swearing.

Pareia's Glow, Baguna Provoke, was extremely happy. He had heard the news of his son, the Young Glow's coming-of-age ceremony.

After going off on his own, he returned with the Monster's Soul of a Sand Dragon.

The news about the other dangerous monsters' souls were trivial in comparison.

What kind of monster was the Sand Dragon?

Even in the Monster's Desert there were only a few, and it was the monster among monsters that sat on top of the food pyramid.

It was a monster that required tens of Pareia's best warriors to defeat. The fact that his son was able to take down such a monster on his own was something even he couldn't believe as his father.

However, nobody could question it as he returned with the Monster's Soul. Even the tribal elders who did not like the Provoke family and tried to cause issues every chance they got, were keeping their mouth shut about this.

A monster that dies on its own does not leave a Monster's Soul behind, and there was nobody who would give such a precious Monster's Soul to Yulian. Most importantly, the Sand Dragon is a monster that requires tens of warriors working together to kill. If something like that truly happened, the Far-seeing warriors (meaning scouts) would have caught them in their sights.

In addition, during the duration of Yulian's coming-of-age

ceremony, there were no tribes who were dispatched to the Monster's Desert.

All of the members of the Pareia tribe could not help but praise the Young Glow's courage, and they were extremely excited that Yulian would be the next generation's Glow.

Although none of the warriors were talking about it, the Pareia tribe was starting to get pushed back by their mortal enemies, the Shuarei tribe.

Glow Baguna was a great leader, but he lacked courage; in addition, none of the Great Warriors of Pareia could handle Venersis, The Bloodied Hands of Shuarei, on their own.

There was nobody in all of the tribes who could handle Venersis' shamshir; he was the greatest warrior of the East, as well as the greatest warrior of the desert.

Lately, in addition to the title of Bloodied Hand, he also earned the title of War God.

But it looked like a new War God was to be born in Pareia. They were sure that even Venersis could not be one hundred percent sure that he could take down a Sand Dragon by himself.

The details of Yulian's coming-of-age ceremony spread past Pareia to the other Western tribes, and all of the desert started to speak of Yulian's name.

The young warriors who successfully complete their coming-of-age ceremony are all given new names.

Baguna's title of the 'Benevolent Eye,' and Venersis' 'Bloodied Hand' are the type of names we are talking about.

There was no reason for someone to specially create a name for Yulian. His other name came naturally.

Desert Conqueror. Yulian Provoke.

It was a honourous title given to him for going into the Monster's

Desert alone and catching the Sand Dragon.

Baguna was looking forward to his son being given his other name.

It was yet to happen, but when the Young Glow becomes the Glow and stands as the commander in a war in the far future, it was the name he wanted Yulian to have.

Of course he's talking about the title of War God, similar to the Bloodied Hand Venersis.

'The Eastern War God Venersis, then our Yulian will definitely be the Western War God.'

Glow Baguna started to grind his teeth. He firmly believed that Yulian will definitely slash Venersis and take his life.

Although he was feeling good, thinking about Shuarei and Venersis ruined his mood; Baguna stepped outside of his Paoe.

A large man who was speaking with his guards saw him step out and ran over to him.

"Warrior Stellis Yabok, sent under the command of the Rivolde Glow, 'The One with Foresight' Dejaine Nellisi, greets the Glow of Pareia, the 'Benevolent Eye' Baguna Provoke."

The person kneeling in front of him with the long greeting was Stellis Samwoora, the best warrior for Glow Dejaine Nellisi of the Rivolde tribe.

Baguna displayed his greetings and asked as he lifted the man up.

"Has the Rivolde's Glow been well? I had been planning on visiting him but he sent a person to me first like this. Please inform him that Baguna is very sorry."

"I'm sure that our Glow will not accept such words from Glow Baguna."

After saying this, Stellis took out a scroll made of lambskin out of his chest and respectfully handed it to Baguna.

“This is a message directly from our Glow. While sending this, he also specifically asked for a positive response.”

Baguna accepted the scroll from his hands and immediately opened it and read it.

As Baguna’s gaze made it further and further down the scroll, a bright smile filled his face.

“Looks like Glow Dejaine is giving a lot of face to me, Baguna, to ask for something like this.”

Stellis also smiled brightly, as if he knew what was written on the scroll and asked Baguna.

“May I inform him that you have a positive response?”

“Is there a reason to say no? No, Glow Dejaine has started the formalities, I cannot send you back just like this. Please wait. I will quickly write my response.”

Baguna ran back into the Paoe he just came out of and returned shortly with a rolled up lambskin scroll to hand to Stellis.

“In addition to this response, please inform him that I was greatly pleased with his request.”

“I will make sure to do so. Then, I shall now make my return.”

Baguna responded to Stellis.

“Have you ever seen our Pareia tribe just send back a guest? Please rest a few days before returning.”

“I believe Glow Dejaine will be waiting for me. I ask Glow Baguna for forgiveness.”

“Kekeke. Do you even have to ask for my forgiveness? Internally, I too hope you will quickly deliver my response.”

“Hahaha. Then I shall make my leave.”

“You must at least take our gift. Veruna.”

Baguna called one of his guards.

“Yes, Glow Baguna.”

A somewhat sophisticated looking man answered and stood in front of Baguna. Baguna issued a command.

“Prepare the gifts to send to the Rivolde tribe. In addition, gift a healthy and quick Pirma for Warrior Stellis who brought forth happy news.”

“Thank you very much, Glow Baguna.”

Once Veruna and Stellis disappeared, Baguna quickly made his way to his family Paoe.

He wanted to quickly share this news with his family.

Book 1-3.2 Causing a ruckus

“What did you say?”

Yulian was extremely shocked as he stared at his father.

Baguna looked at his son in such a flustered state and responded.

“Why are you so surprised? You are already an adult. It is obvious that you must get married.”

“But...”

Yulian was fidgeting. He wanted to marry a woman who he liked.

In the desert, the wife did not just sit pretty in the house. The women’s job was taking care of the Pirmas and breeding the tribe’s Pina (Sheeplike animal. Provides milk and fur).

There were women who also did small amounts of hunting.

So there were many cases of naturally meeting someone and dating. The majority of the people in the desert dated first before they got married

Baguna spoke.

“If you had brought a girl home right after your coming-of-age ceremony, this would not be the case. The fact that you have not introduced us to any girl should mean that there currently is not a woman on your mind.”

“That is indeed the case, but I want to marry someone that I like. I don’t want to marry someone who I have not even met...”

Baguna scolded Yulian for his answer.

“You are the Young Glow of the Pareia tribe. It is better if you got married quickly. In addition, your wife to be is the beautiful Grace Nellisi, the daughter of the Rivilde Glow, who has received the same name that your birth mother, who was known across the desert, received. No matter where you look, there is nothing she is

lacking. What are you hesitant about?”

“...”

As Yulian sat there like a mute who had eaten honey, Baguna followed up, as if he was hammering in a nail.

“As this is the case, just know that you will be getting married to her.”

“Father...”

“Uhuh!” (Korean saying similar to Ahem!)

As Baguna opened his eyes and gared at Yulian, Yulian dropped his head and walked out of Baguna’s Paoe.

“Marriage...”

He did not want to pay attention to that yet. He felt like his father was rushing it, even though he wasn’t even twenty years old.

‘At least the Rivolde tribe is a major tribe in the Eastern Desert. They mesh well with our Pareia tribe.’

Yulian had known deep down that such a day would one day arrive. It was rare for the Glow’s children to marry someone within their own tribe.

‘But I still think it is too early...’

As Yulian’s head was filled with issues regarding marriage, he got on a Pirma and left the village with the hopes of getting rid of the thoughts.

It made him want to see his master.

After the day when they met the dragon, Yulian had not seen Chun Myung Hoon.

After catching up to him as he was returning to the village, his master commanded him to train frequently and said he will be gone for a while. It has been a year since his master left, but he had

yet to return.

It wasn't difficult to train on his own since there were many things he did not completely comprehend of the things his master taught him. However, Yulian felt like something was missing, not being without the master who had been watching over him for the past few years.

He was confident in his skills and felt confident that he could make his master satisfied to a degree, but his master never returned.

"I must work hard. Otherwise, he might hit me as soon as he returns."

Yulian woke himself up from daydreaming and started to think about what he had to do from here.

First of all, the issue of his marriage. As his father indicated, since he did not have a girl he liked, it may not be a bad idea to go through with the arranged marriage. If you see someone enough, you can't help but develop some feelings.

In terms of his martial arts, there was a mountain load of homework that his master had left him, so if he continued to train diligently, he should not have a problem.

'Then what else?'

He was now an adult. Since he was worrying about future events anyways, even if there wasn't anything he needed to think carefully about, he wanted to at least think about them.

After thinking for a while, there was a thought that hit him hard.

The bitter enemy Shuarei tribe's pride, the warrior group, Desert Sword.

The Desert Sword is made up of fifty individuals, and the leader of it is the Western War God, Venersis, the Bloodied Hands.

Because of the fifty members of the Desert Sword, there was a

gap in Pareia's line of defense, and a situation that he did not want to think about happened.

‘Alright. I will create a warrior group in Pareia that is able to rival them. If I properly train the warriors who just completed their coming-of-age ceremony, I'm sure we can rival them within the next five years.’

Yulian discovered what he had to do. If they suffer with him, the young warriors will have abilities stronger than anybody else.

He himself had learned from his master... who did not seem human. As a result, was he not able to develop his martial arts within five years to a point where he was not afraid of a Sand Dragon?

Learning from him versus learning from his master would be as different as heaven and earth, but Yulian was confident.

‘Since master isn't here, might as well cause a ruckus in secret.’

Yulian even managed to convince himself that his master had left for him to go through with this plan and decided to listen to his master's ‘command.’

His master, Chun Myung Hoon had avoided teaching anyone other than Yulian.

Even when his father had asked, he would just shake his head no. Yulian was curious as to why he would not train anybody else, but whenever he would ask his master, the answer was always the same.

- My power is not something that you can recklessly use. Even just the fact that I am teaching you makes me worry about whether I am doing the right thing. The only reason I am teaching you is because of fate. When I first saw you, you had saved my life. You must not teach my martial arts to anybody else. That includes those of your bloodline.

Because his master's expression and tone was very stern, Yulian

did not teach his siblings or the tribe's warriors a single thing.

‘If master finds out... I’m sure I’ll just have to get beaten up for three days and three nights straight. Pretty sure he wouldn’t go as far as to kill me...’

Yulian was very, actually extremely fearful of his master’s punishment, but for his tribe, he decided to proceed.

‘Just fifty people... I will only teach fifty people. If I teach them just basic martial arts... even master cannot be that angry?’

As if he was seriously afraid of Chun Myung Hoon’s anger, Yulian sounded like he was cross-examining himself.

Yulian decided to share this idea with his second brother, Pere, who had returned from his coming-of-age ceremony.

A few days ago, Pere returned with three Monster’s Soul of Giant Scorpions, receiving praises that he was a natural warrior born with great abilities.

It was nothing compared to Yulian, but putting Yulian aside, it was rare to see a young warrior get confirmed as an adult with a Giant Scorpion. It was definitely enough to receive praises.

The members of the Pareia tribe did not hide their expectations about the future, stating that the Glow’s family has already received the blessings to have the two brothers grow Pareia to new levels.

Yulian turned his Pirma around and headed back to the village. When he entered Pere’s Paoe, Pere stopped reading the book about Law and stood up from his seat to greet him.

“You’ve come? What is the issue?”

Knowing that Pere did not like to call him Hyung, Yulian did put much thought into it and smiled as he returned the greeting.

“You’re reading about law?”

“Yes, but what is the issue?”

As Pere continued to respond in a stoic manner, Yulian approached Pere with a friendly expression and took a peak at the Law Book.

“You and I are siblings, but your tone is too stiff. If you want, when it is just the two of us, you can call me by my name.”

Pere stared at Yulian for a while before responding.

“You don’t need to do something you don’t like just to appease me. I’d rather you command me as the oldest son of the family. Make sure you talk in a respectful manner and call me Hyung. I get angry every time you pull one of these spontaneous stunts.”

Yulian closed his mouth tightly and looked at Pere before asking.

“Okay, let’s have a chat today. Why do you hate me so much?”

“Are you really asking me because you don’t know?”

“I am asking because I don’t. My deceased mother never looked down on any of the other family members, and I am giving my full respect and love to the current Mother of Pareia, Mother Sena.

As the first-born son of the Provoke family, I know I was not able to give much attention to my younger siblings. However, I never showed disinterest to any of you. What is it that I have done that makes you hate me?”

“Hmph, must I answer?”

As Pere snorted while responding, Yulian felt a bit of anger building up inside as he responded.

“Let’s truly get to the bottom of this today. You must answer. Even if you don’t want to, you must answer.”

Pere clenched his fist while staring at Yulian before lifting up one finger.

“One day. It is merely one day. Because of that one day, you ended up the first-born son of the Provoke Family, and since I was young, I had to listen to every word you said, even though you

were not better than me. Is that all?”

Pere spoke while spitting, as if he was finally letting out everything that he had been brewing inside.

“After First Mother Mairez, who was respected and loved by all, passed away, all of the Pareia tribe members have been showing you sympathy and love in her stead.”

“...”

“Furthermore, the title of Young Glow naturally went to you, and they firmly believe that you will be the next generation’s Glow. Since when did the heavy and difficult position of Glow just get passed on to the first-born son? The position of Glow has always gone to the child who had the abilities to be the Glow, and if none of the children were capable, it was moved on to a different family. How come this does not apply to you?”

As Pere’s rant ended, Yulian did not remove his eyes from him before responding.

“So you feel wronged that although I lack the abilities, I will become the Glow without any competition.”

“I did not say that you did not possess the abilities. You proved that you were an adult this time. However, your proof was so abnormal that it is true there are many who are doubting your proof.”

Yulian yelled at Pere’s words.

“Are you doubting your own brother?!”

“I am not saying I am the one to doubt you. And putting that all aside, shouldn’t I have the opportunity to obtain the Glow position?”

Yulian and Pere stared at each other intensely. Beyond being brothers who share the same blood, this was between two men.

“Fine, as that is your wish, I will no longer care or interfere in

any of your actions.”

“...!”

“I will show you. From here on, pay attention to my abilities and my strength. And on the day the new Glow is decided, if you are still not satisfied with me, I will accept your challenge.”

“Since you are saying so, I will make sure to pay attention. I will also show you that I have the abilities to show such ambitions.”

“Great, I am sorry for disturbing you.”

Yulian quickly turned his steps around and left Pere’s Paoe.

“Punk, since he spoke like that, I couldn’t even talk about it. Although he was always fussy with me, I thought he would understand my dream and help make it a reality...”

Yulian was disappointed, but moreso, he was upset at his brother’s actions and words. His brother did not understand him at all.

“Great. Even if I am beaten to death by Master, I will make it happen. I will create the desert’s best group of warriors.”

Yulian firmly made up his mind and headed to his Paoe to start planning.

Book 1-3.3 Recruitment

Yulian started to look for the young warriors in the tribe. He could gather all of them to start, but thinking about the limited spots, he decided to personally visit all of them and only invite the young warriors with fierce determinations.

The reason he was only looking for young warriors was because it would be easier to recruit later. Within ten years, he wanted to increase the group with the first tier and second tier. Furthermore, as his master indicated, his master's martial arts shows the greatest results the younger you start learning it.

When he met with them individually, he did not reveal the reason for his visit. If they were to find out later that he was recruiting for his newly created warrior group, he was afraid that it would create a large scar for the warriors who did not make it.

So he spent the long time of a month to recruit one hundred young warriors, and he gathered them in one location to share his dream with them.

“Our bitter enemy, the Shuarei's Desert Sword has already become the Desert's best Warrior division. And they are using that confidence of knowing they are the best to continue to get better. Our Pareia warriors are strong, but I think that is the reason we are getting pushed back by the Shuarei tribe. Aside from the pride of being a warrior, knowing that you and the group you are associated with is the best, that type of mentality is what I am talking about. So I came up with an idea.”

Yulian pounded his chest.

“Why can't we do the same thing? Why must we fall behind to the Shuarei? Why must Pareia's warriors get pushed back by the Shuarei warriors? So I made a decision. I will break down the Desert Sword that they gloat about being the strongest. To do that, I am determined to develop the desert's greatest warrior division

right here in Pareia.”

Yulian once again lifted his hand to the sky.

“Using the name of the desert and Pareia’s guardian Neo Latin’s name, I want to create the warrior division “Red Storm.” To make this dream a reality, we need the winds and rain to create a storm and the warriors to become the Crimson Desert’s sands. I need warriors that are both vicious and strong. That is why I invited the strong young warriors of Pareia and am speaking to you now.”

Yulian looked at each of the warriors and said:

“Not my dream, but Pareia’s dream, to make everyone’s dream come true. Aren’t you all dreaming the same dream? The dream of becoming the strongest warrior in the desert.”

The young warriors started to howl at Yulian’s words. All of them were male, and Yulian Provoke was Pareia’s Young Glow, and someone who showed the abilities of a great warrior.

The fact that this type of man was giving such a passionate speech to convince him made him feel like he was special.

“How do you plan to create the division?”

As one warrior asked, Yulian quickly answered, as if he was anticipating the question.

“I’m sure you are all aware about how I became strong. I am a warrior who can hunt a Sand Dragon by myself. I only have that strength because of my master’s teachings. I have made the determination to teach you what I have learned. If you train like hell with me, one day, I believe you too will be able to do that on your own.”

Yulian’s explanation made many conflicted. The majority of the young warriors had veteran warriors they were serving as their master.

If they listened to Yulian, all of them would have to follow

Yulian's teaching.

More importantly, learning from Yulian meant that they would have to give up the shamshir they were so used to and pick up the large greatsword. This fact made more of them hesitate.

"I will not force you. I know most of you have taken a veteran warrior as your master. I do not believe that our veteran warriors are lacking in abilities. Rather, it is a difference of time."

As the young warriors started whispering and showed conflicted faces, Yulian added a final comment.

"I will give you time to think it over. Three days. After three days, those of you who will team up with me, come find me."

He gave the conflicted group three days, and although he was nervous, Yulian decided to wait for them.

He knew it was a lot to tell them to give up the shamshir, but there was nothing he could do, as the greatsword was what he had learned.

But if they had the skills to proficiently wield a shamshir, he thought they would be able to pick up the greatsword pretty quickly. He could only put his expectations there.

'I wonder how many of them will come...'

Yulian wondered watching the warriors disperse.

And just like that, three days passed by.

Early in the morning, Yulian headed out to the center of the large area used as the Warriors' Training Ground and stood there with his eyes closed.

The ends of the two greatswords hanging on his waist stretched far behind him, and the desert wind made his hair flutter.

He heard footsteps approaching but did not open his eyes. He decided to stay like that with his eyes closed until the sun set.

One person, sometimes he heard two people's footsteps, but overall, the area was quiet.

When the heat of the sun finished hitting his head and the cold breeze of the evening hit his body, he opened his eyes.

In front of him, there were tens of warriors who were similarly standing their with their eyes closed.

‘One...two...’

Yulian looked at each of them and subconsciously started to count. An unknown sensation almost made Yulian cry.

Fifty seven people.

He brought together one hundred people to explain, and out of them, he was desperately hoping to recruit at least fifty.

This was because he knew how difficult it would be for them to leave their masters.

But so many of them gathered. They gathered to make Yulians dream a reality. They gathered to make their own dreams a reality.

Book 1-3.4 Red Storm Starts to Train

The fifty seven warriors who took part in Red Storm's training.

These individuals who were dreaming of becoming the greatest warrior were all venomous men. If they weren't, they would not have been able to leave their master who had spent all that time training them to pick up a new weapon, the greatsword.

"This is the first time that I have sore muscles throughout my body."

Red Storm's clown with a bright personality, Triquel, opened his mouth.

"Me too, I'm about to die. I question whether you can even slash your enemies with such a heavy sword."

As Shubeon responded to Triquel, 'The Mouth That Won't Open,' Thrint, opened his mouth.

"If you have complaints, leave. Don't kill other people's morale with you."

"What?!"

As Shubeon got angry, Thrint glared at Shubeon and said: "Did you not see how our leader swings that large greatsword around? If he can do it, so can I. But with you yapping on next to me, I'm more annoyed by you than the training."

"Are you trying to start a fight with me?"

"I'm just telling you to shut your constant yapping."

Shubeon jumped up from lying down at Thrint's words and Triquel held him back as he replied.

"Sit. If you have the energy to fight, sit and relax your muscles. This is only the end of the morning training. Everybody is tired so their minds are at the edge. Why are you being like this?"

“That punk is taunting me.”

Thrint sat up at Shubeon’s words.

“Did I say something wrong? If you question his process, then you can leave by yourself. I’ve already decided to believe and follow his teachings. Since I have made my determination, hearing you say what you said makes up angry.”

“Everybody sit. What will you do if Sir Yulian sees this? Is it time for him to say that it’s only been half a month and we are already on the edge?”

The eldest of the Red Storm at thirty years old, Haisha, tried to stop them. Haisha was very thoughtful; because of this, he was accepted as the leader of the new recruits.

“Sir Yulian does not lie. You haven’t forgotten what Sir Yulian said on the first day of training have you?”

Hearing Haisha’s words, Shubeon and Thrint stared at each other before falling back down to the ground.

The First day of training.

“I learned this training when I was thirteen years old, and since then, I have not missed a single day. If you as Pareia’s warrior cannot do what I did as a thirteen year old and fall down from exhaustion, I will have nothing to say.”

This was the cold statement Yulian told the tired warriors who were ready to vomit from the exhaustion they faced.

All of them stared at Yulian like they could not believe what he was saying. They looked at him with expressions full of complaint or disbelief. Yulian brought forth the two greatswords in his hand.

“Half year. That’s how long it took for me to lift the greatswords like this. Another half year to properly swing and stab with it. To freely swing it around took a total of two years.”

They were all flabbergasted.

“I thought that Pareia’s warriors would take two months to accomplish what took a young thirteen year old boy two years. I guess I was wrong. If you can’t handle it, let me know. I will reduce the amount of training.”

A look of scorn showed on Yulian’s face and the Red Storm warriors’ faces were filled with anger.

“Are you telling the truth?”

Haisha asked and Yulian responded.

“I have never opened my mouth to tell a lie.”

Haisha ignored the screaming pain throughout his body and stood up to hold the sword. Dominos fall down one after another, but the members of Red Storm started to stand up one by one.

That was the sight of the first day of training.

“What did we decide that day? We said if Sir Yulian was thinking two or three months, we will show him that we can do it in just one month. Isn’t that what we all decided?”

Shubeon opened his mouth at Haisha’s words.

“I was in the wrong, Thrint.”

“I’m sorry I showed a negative response to the words you were just throwing around, Shubeon.”

As Thrint also apologized, smiles appeared on the faces of the warriors.

However that was only temporary. Once morning break time ended, Yulian showed up at the training ground. The smiles on the faces of the warriors all disappeared.

Yulian’s training was harsh.

If Chun Myung Hoon beat him up to teach him, Yulian used insults to teach them.

- Your movement is that slow after just that much training?

Slower than a snail.

- If I knew it would be like this, it would have been a smarter idea to teach the young warriors who have not completed their coming-of-age ceremony.

- Just give up and leave right now.

If you showed even a hint of being tired, Yulian threw out his insults.

There were no warriors whose pride would let them just sit still while being insulted like that.

They clenched their teeth and channeled all their energy including the energy they spent to breastfeed to finish Yulian's trainings.

Yulian did not have an easy time either. He felt it every time their venous gazes were directed to him. However, if he did not push them at least this much, they would not be able to catch up to Vernersis and the Desert Sword in a short amount of time.

He also believed that there was no limit humans could not overcome, so he continued to throw insults to rally the warriors.

Red Storm did not disappoint Yulian's expectations. There was not even one deflector; they all focused on the training.

Just like that exactly one month and a half passed by.

"Puhaha."

As Shubeon suddenly laughed, Thrint turned to look at Shubeon. After fighting last time, the two of them had gotten closer.

As Thrint looked at him with an expression of why are you laughing, Shubeon answered.

"Isn't it funny?"

"What?"

"If you think about it, I wonder if all of us were brainwashed.

Just over a month ago, we had so much trouble just lifting these swords.”

As Shubeon opened his mouth while swinging the two greatswords to make “Boong Boong” noises, Thrint answered, giving him a look of shame.

“You can barely make those noises and you are laughing?”

“It’s not funny?”

“Not at all.”

“What a boring friend.”

As Shubeon muttered that while turning his head, Triquel, who was next to him took Thrint’s side.

“If you laugh at the obvious, then you must always live in laughter.”

“Are you saying freely moving this much weight is obvious? I thought I would lose my bones. I’m almost sorry whenever I see the Oasis Shamans. We bothered them so much.”

Triquel responded to Shubeon.

“Who hasn’t done that? Did you know Sir Tuma Takaka scolded Sir Yulian? Sir Yulian was asked to reduce the training, saying we are using up all of the Oasis’ medical herbs.

All of the warriors’ ears turned to this new story. All of them had been bothering the shamans with screaming muscles and bones.

“So then what happened?”

Haisha asked as the representative and Triquel answered.

“It’s natural for warriors to get injured while training. No matter what happens, make sure that there are enough medicinal herbs. He said that while saying that we will be using couple times the amount we have been using until now.”

A short duration of shock.

“That...is probably for us right?”

As Shubeon cautiously asked, the other warriors started to feel like they were walking on eggshells.

They were already using a significant amount of herbs for their muscle aches and to strengthen their bones. But to use more than two times the current amount...they could not determine what kind of training he was planning to make them do.

“I’m sure he’ll start to teach us how to use the greatswords. Since all of us have gotten used to the weapon by now.”

As Haisha opened his mouth after being in shock for a bit, Shubeon looked at his greatsword before speaking.

“How to use it huh? Then sooner or later, we will start sparring with them too right?”

“I suppose so.”

As Triquel responded, Shubeon started to mumble.

“I’m sure it’ll hurt...”

“It’ll probably hurt a lot...”

The warriors started to once again feel like they were walking on eggshells.

Their arduous path was just beginning.

Book 1-4.1 Grace Nellisi

Grace Nellisi

An amazing woman. She was.

Yulian was having a hectic time. In the morning and night, he was focused on his own training. During the day and evening, he was focused on swordsmanship with the Red Storm brigade.

In the middle of all that, he was making sure to pay attention while learning history and strategy, so it was definitely natural for Yulian to be thinking that it would be great if a day increased from twenty-four hours to thirty-six hours.

But since this was something he wanted to do, something he needed to do achieve his dream, and because he was not alone and training together with his fellow warriors who were also filled with passion, Yulian did not feel fatigued.

As he continued his arduous life where it was difficult for him to even get four hours of sleep, Yulian forgot about one very important thing.

It was like any other day as Yulian was focused on training with the young warriors. There were large greatswords flying around everywhere across the training grounds, and the young warriors, who were enjoying the training as if it was real, did not mind that they were receiving minor wounds all over their bodies.

Thankfully, they dulled the blade and covered the blade with mud, or else they would not have survived this dangerous training that could have killed them within a few hours.

Although it was difficult, the majority of the warriors were enjoying it and Yulian did not care.

That level of injury was nothing compared to the torture he had to go through.

Until a few days ago, there were some warriors who would playfully complain, but after seeing Yulian's body, none of them could say a peep.

Yulian's body was a perfectly sculpted body fitting a warrior, and in that aspect, there were no issues.

However, on the surface of that chiseled body, there were too many scars to count.

The members of Red Storm clearly remembered Yulian's answer when they asked how Yulian, who had yet to participate in war, ended up with so many injuries.

Yulian opened up the fingers on his two hands and spoke.

"Everyday, I was hit a minimum of ten times. I was hit for not doing this properly, not doing that properly, hit for talking back, hit for learning too slowly, hit for being stupid, hit for not catching on to things quickly..."

The warriors could not believe Yulian was endlessly beat up. What kind of warrior trains a young warrior that way?

But there was no reason for Yulian to lie. And the numerous scars on his body proved his words to be true.

"That is how I learned. However, I do not want to teach you that way. It is enough for only me to be injured like this. However!"

Gulp.

They clearly heard someone's spit being swallowed.

"If your skills cannot keep up significantly, I think that I may have no other choice. My only request is that you prevent a situation where I must hurt your pride. I request that to you with all my heart."

This meant that Yulian would hit fellow warriors like themselves. They weren't even slaves; getting hit would be grave insult.

The warriors were working even harder to prevent that situation. Yulian was saying all this while showing his own scars, which should have been a source of shame.

Yulian remembered what happened a few days ago and yelled with a smile on his face.

“The person who ends up with the most mud on their clothes today will be in charge of putting mud on all of the warriors’ greatswords.”

Once you put mud on the greatswords, if you are hit by, or slashed by the sword, it was natural for your clothes to be covered in mud. The weak will end up with a lot of mud and the strong just a little. Everyone was using that to gauge their peers’ strengths and worked endlessly to catch up to them.

Yulian’s proclamation was like pouring gas on the training ground filled with fiery passion; and soon, an entertaining phenomenon occurred.

The warriors who had cleaner clothes compared to the other warriors started to focus on defensive swordplay to try to prevent even the smallest amounts of mud on their clothes, while the warriors who already had a ton of mud on their clothes focused on offensive swordplay with all their energy to put mud on the other warriors’ clothes.

Since the person with the most mud was in charge of gathering the mud and putting it on the greatswords tonight, they had to make sure it wasn’t them.

That job was a terrible job. Once the day’s training ended, their bodies were sore everywhere. But to put mud on all the greatswords for the next day’s training meant that their resting period was shortened by that amount.

Naturally, teams were created.

The fiercely attacking team and the endlessly defending team.

The winner was obvious. The tides turned in an instant, but the defending team, which lost the momentum could not help but to continue being pushed back.

The heat in the training ground continued to grow fiercely, even Yulian got involved and brutally moved his sword to help out the side that was being significantly pushed back.

Unless something special happened, it was certain that this would continue until the last sun disappeared.

That is...until a sweet fragrance spread across this place, which was filled with the smell of men's hot sweat. That type of special event.

None of them knew that something like the leather armor was an item that could make someone look so fabulous. However, for this woman who just appeared with a form-fitting leather armor, it suited her very well.

The woman, who had red hair that would catch anybody's attention, slowly started to walk towards the group.

Seeing that sight, the warriors, and of course Yulian as well, slightly opened their mouths in surprise. Those long arms and legs, and the view of a woman's skin, visible between the leather armor, was extremely beautiful.

In addition, different than most women of the desert, her straight hair that was not pinned up but just left down, was blowing in the wind to create an almost fantasy-like entrance.

The beautiful woman. with the red hair blowing in the wind and glowing skin, looked at Yulian and the warriors.

She moved her lips as if to say something, but did not speak.

It was as if she was waiting for Yulian or the warriors to speak to her first.

“Go greet her.”

One of the warriors spoke while pushing Yulian's back. Yulian was standing awkwardly, before heading towards the woman and cautiously asking.

"Miss...who might you be?"

The woman slightly nodded towards Yulian before speaking.

"I am the young daughter of the Rivolde family, Grace Nellisi. I apologize if I ended up disrupting the training of the Pareia warriors. The reason I came here was to see if the warrior named Yulian Provoke happened to be over here."

The warriors all looked at each other because of her commanding tone, before all eyes turned to Yulian.

Hearing his name come out of the mouth of a woman he just met, Yulian nervously spoke.

"I am Yulian, but what might you need from me?"

"You?"

The woman responded while opening her eyes wide while checking Yulian out top to bottom.

"Yes."

"You are truly Pareia's Young Glow, and the one who is said to have gone to the Monster's Desert alone to kill a Sand Dragon? The Desert Conqueror Yulian Provoke?"

As the woman responded back like she could not believe him, Yulian nodded his head and answered.

"I am Yulian Provoke, Glow Baguna's first-born, and indeed the one who proved his adulthood by going to the Monster's Desert. But why is it that the Rivolde tribe's young daughter, Grace, is looking for me?"

"You don't look that strong."

"What?"

As Grace responded with something odd instead of answering his question, Yulian was distraught.

“Since he was said to have caught a Sand Dragon on his own, I thought he would be over two meters tall, with his fingers the size of the desert cactus, and body the size of a Bug Bear (a carnivorous monster which starts to eat you from your head)...”

Yulian started to laugh at Grace’s words. Now that he thought about it, he remembered someone jokingly saying that rumors about him were just as Grace described.

“Did you just come to verify if those rumors were true?”

At Yulian’s question, Grace made a surprised expression and expressed her intent.

“Warrior Yulian Provoke, I, Grace Nellisi, requests a match.”

Book 1-4.2 I came to test my future husband!

“Huh?”

At Grace’s sudden proclamation, Yulian looked at her with a nervous expression. Grace moved back and took out the two Sosoonta (short swords with a curved blade) from her thighs, holding one in each hand before bending her hips and taking an attacking stance.

“What is the meaning of this?”

Yulian was surprised as he asked Grace, and she lifted her shoulder once to answer.

“As I indicated, a match. Throw away the thought of going easy on me because i am a woman. I am letting you know now that I am a warrior of Rivolde, who completed the men’s coming-of-age ceremony with a woman’s body.”

Listening to Grace indicate that she was approved as a warrior, Yulian could not believe it.

‘What tribe would make a woman complete the coming-of-age ceremony? Especially since the Rivolde tribe is the strongest tribe in the West...’

Of course the women of the desert had strong personalities, and since the temperament of the desert tribes were fierce in nature, there were women who took part in hunting as well, but earning the badge of adulthood through the coming-of-age ceremony, as well as participating in the tribal wars were the men’s job.

It was their job to protect the young boys who had yet to become warriors, and the women, not to fight alongside them.

“Reveal your reasoning. Pareia warriors do not fight without reason.”

“If you win, I will let you know the reason.”

Grace answered like that before quickly starting to attack Yulian in her crouched position.

Yulian lightly swung his greatsword in response, but Grace lowered her body even more to make the greatsword swing above her head, and continued to get closer, with a movement that looked like she was crawling.

“What!”

Her movement was so fast that Yulian was shocked before using the greatsword in his left hand to stab into the sand and lift his body up. Just a second later, Grace’s Sosoonta passed by, scratching Yulian’s greatsword.

Yulian felt a slight bit of anger at the fact that he almost had his body slashed, and yelled.

“Reveal the reason for this battle. If you do, I will accept that you are a warrior and fight you seriously.”

“Didn’t I tell you I will let you know if you win?”

As if trying to taunt Yulian, Grace spoke informally, before using the Sosoonta’s speed and sharpness to attack Yulian again.

The attack was too accurate to go easy on her for being a woman, and as the opponent has indicated they have received the badge of adulthood, Yulian decided to not go easy on her.

Yulian reduced his power in half and started to swing his greatsword.

“If you want to give up, feel free to do so at any time.”

“Don’t look down on me.”

Grace was angered at Yulian’s warning, and instead started to go at Yulian even harder.

A battle between a large greatsword and a Sosoonta the size of two hands put together was very abnormal, but Grace seemed to have a considerable amount of skills. Yulian could not help but to

also use the greatsword in his left hand every so often.

After they clashed approximately twenty times?

Grace, who had been nimbly dodging Yulian's greatsword could not avoid the greatsword in Yulian's left hand which arrived almost instantly, and had to use both of the Sosoonta's together to block.

"Clang."

Since it was a training greatsword, the blade was not sharp, but as if it increased the strength, the single greatsword and the two Sosoontas made a sharp clashing noise, and Grace was pushed back from the strength of the greatsword, leading her to slide far back in the same posture, with the two Sosoontas in front of her.

Annoyed that she might attack again, Yulian chased after Grace who was sliding back and swung his greatsword once more in the exact spot the two Sosoonta's overlapped. Grace lost her balance and fell back, as if she slipped.

Yulian felt like he might have been too harsh and quickly ran after her and helped her get back up.

"Are you okay?"

In a very evident change in personality, Grace received Yulian's help without saying anything, and stared at him as if trying to look deep into his soul, before kneeling down and bowing her head.

"Why are you suddenly doing this?"

As Yulian nervously brought her back up, Grace answered.

"Do you not know who I am?"

"I've never seen you within our tribe before... Have we met before?"

Thinking that the other person knew who he was, Yulian tried to think hard about who the woman is, but he could not remember at all.

“Grace Nellisi. You’re telling me you’ve never heard of this name before?”

As Grace asked again, Yulian started to think carefully.

‘Grace Nellisi... Grace Nellisi...Rivolde tribe’s Nellisi family...’

A thought quickly flew by in Yulian’s head.

‘If it is the Nellisi family of the Rivolde tribe, the only one is the family of the Glow.’

Yulian was skeptical as he asked.

“What is your relationship with the Great Glow Dejaine of the Rivolde tribe?”

“He happens to be my father.”

“Ah, then... you must be the beautiful maiden Grace...”

As he was about to finish his sentence, a lightbulb went off in Yulian’s head and he remembered his father, Glow Baguna’s words before he made a terrified expression.

- I will proceed with the marriage between you and the daughter of the Rivolde Glow.

“You... you...”

As Yulian had a shocked expression and could not continue his words, Grace smiled before answering.

“So you have heard. I was afraid that you might not remember. The Rivolde tribe’s Beautiful Maiden, Grace Nellisi, makes her formal introduction to her fiancé, Pareia tribe’s Young Glow, the Desert Conqueror, Yulian Provoke-nim.”

Hearing Grace’s words, the Red Storm Warriors, who were surrounding them screamed in delight. It wasn’t bad to see the woman who will end up the Mother of Pareia in the future.

Yulian’s face was red in embarrassment as he opened his mouth.

“How is it that you are here ... wait, did you come alone?”

Grace nodded her head and replied.

“Yes, I came by myself.”

“For what reason did you come here... does the Great Glow Dejaime Nellisi know of this?”

“Of course he does not. If he did, I’m sure even my father who dotes on me dearly would not have approved.”

Listening to Grace answer as her cheeks became red and she cracked a smile, Yulian felt his heart beating wildly and turned his head away.

“The reason I came to look for Pareia’s Young Glow today was to see the man who will be my husband. I could not get married to a warrior who was weaker than me, could I?”

Hearing Grace continue, Yulian became a mute who ate a lot of honey, and the surrounding warriors let out a holler.

“If...I had lost...”

As Yulian squirmed while speaking, Grace answered with a confident, yet warm voice.

“If you were weaker than me, no matter what, I would have broken off the engagement. However, after seeing that Yulian-nim is very strong, I realize that my thoughts were wrong from the beginning. You truly deserve the title of the Desert Conqueror and I, Grace, am very relieved.”

‘Ha!’

Yulian was flabbergasted at Grace’s answer. Even if she is a woman of the desert, how could she come and test her future husband.

The more flabbergasted Yulian was, the surrounding warriors continued to increase their joyous hollering.

Grace coyishly stood next to Yulian and bowed to the Red Storm warriors.

“I am sorry that I interrupted the training of Pareia’s strong warriors. However, I was so curious that I came like this, I ask that the warriors not scold this rebellious lady too much.”

“Wah!Wah!Wah!”

As the warriors continued to shout in joy, one of the warriors, Quick Two Feet Chenji Warita spoke as he shouted.

“We are just sorry we are showing such shabby selves to the future Mother of Pareia. I, Chenji, along with the rest of the Red Storm warriors, pray dearly that the Beautiful Maiden Miss Grace will quickly marry and arrive at Pareia.”

Grace showed no embarrassment to many men cheering for her and bowed her head again.

“Of course. I too will be waiting and hoping that the day arrives quickly.”

Yulian felt that his face will turn into a tomato if he stayed there any longer and moved away before speaking.

“Since a guest has arrived, we cannot just stay like this. Let’s head into the Paoe. Mother and Father will be happy to know that you have arrived.”

As Yulian headed off disrespectfully without even looking back, seeing his awkward steps, Grace smiled, as if she knew what was going through his mind, and said a final farewell to the warriors before following after him.

“I am looking forward to quickly being a part of Red Storm’s training. Then, I shall meet you all again in the near future.”

It was obvious that the warriors would shout like they were crazy.

Book 1-4.3 The First Night

The fact that the young daughter of Rivolde, the Beautiful Maiden Grace Nellisi, came to visit Pareia by herself spread like wildfire, and everybody was shocked at the fact that she visited the Red Storm and had a spar with Yulian.

And once they heard of Grace's proclamation after the battle, everybody was happy and chatting away about how they will have a valiant wife next to their valiant Young Glow.

Any warrior who had seen her at least once felt their hearts be swayed by her beauty.

In addition, because she was a woman with a cool personality and meticulousness to take care of others, she was given the name of Beautiful Maiden, which is only given to the greatest woman in the desert. All of this made Grace's popularity in the Pareia tribe explosive.

Everybody was twiddling their fingers hoping that the day she will marry the Young Glow will come quickly, and this made the Great Glow Dejaine and 'The Benevolent Eye,' Glow Baguna, nervous.

Both of them started to quickly make the necessary preparations for marriage.

Since both families were the family of the Glow, the wedding gifts were overflowing, and there were many time-consuming tasks, such as sending invitations to the nearby tribes and determining an Oasis to have the ceremony. But thanks to the efforts of the two Glows, the details were determined without a hitch.

Finally the day of the wedding.

The Rivolde Tribe, the greatest tribe in the Western Desert, and the Pareia tribe, a strong tribe in the Eastern Desert, the history of

the two Glows were outstanding

Of the twelve tribes in the desert, there was not a single tribe that did not send a delegation to congratulate them.

Even the Pareia Tribe's bitter enemy, the Shuarei tribe, sent a delegation due to their relationship with the Rivilde tribe.

The Rivilde Glow, Dejaine Nellisi was very satisfied with this fact.

Truth be told, wasn't one of the reasons he arranged for his daughter to be married to fend off the strong enemy they had in the Shuarei tribe? Seeing that the Shuarei tribe sent a delegation was enough for him to know that the mission had been accomplished.

Shuarei and Pareia still continued to have minor battles, however, the Rivilde tribe was now able to breathe a little.

Of course that wasn't the only reason. Those bastards of the Inama Kingdom were eyeing Grace.

Finally, it was because he liked what he heard about Yulian, whose name was being spread throughout the desert.

And just like that, there were tens of thousands of guests other than the members of the Rivilde and Pareia tribes present for Yulian and Grace's wedding. If you think about the fact that the population of the desert does not exceed 5 million, it was a significant number.

Their wedding, which was blessed by many people, concluded peacefully, and per the command of Glows Baguna and Dejaine, the two tribes started a three-day celebration.

Everybody was feasting, drinking, chatting, and happy.

The first night.

The boy who traveled to the Monster's Desert before even becoming an adult, and the girl who, by herself, crossed a large

quicksand and multiple Oasis to test her husband. The husband and wife's boldness disappeared quickly, as if it was a dream.

They were both just taking quick glances at each other and getting their cheeks flushed red in embarrassment.

After peeking at each other for a very long time, the slightly better Grace could not handle the frustration anymore and started to speak first.

"Is this how it goes? Are we supposed to awkwardly stare at each other on the first night?"

Yulian's red face became even brighter. Yulian was now an adult and a man. He did not pay attention to women because he did not have the time, but it was not like he wasn't interested.

And he knew, at least to some degree, about the male-female interactions.

"Hmm.....hmm..."

Yulian could only make some dry coughs while thinking hard about what to say.

"Stop only coughing and say something."

"Cough..."

"..."

Yulian started to feel a little hasty at Grace's words and decided 'here goes nothing' as he held her two hands. Grace was a bit shocked and her face turned red, and she lightly tilted her head down as if she was embarrassed.

"I will tell you my dream."

"What?"

Grace, who was extremely nervous, was surprised and stared at Yulian.

"Like I was saying... hmm...hmm... my dream... I will tell my

wi.....wife, that's what I was saying..."

"Phew~"

At Yulian's words, Grace let out a deep sigh in her mind. It looked like the girls had it better when it came to sex education in the desert.

Truthfully speaking, the desert warriors who flaunt their masculinity in front of women probably act the same way at home. The father-son relationship showed affection through actions, but the mother-daughter relationship was similar to that of friendship; communicating and speaking with each other frequently. That may explain this situation.

But was that really the reason?

The majority of all things of the household were decided by the women. Of course, the men never noticed that it was the women who were really making the decisions. All they would see is that the women were serving their husbands and sons as if they were the heaven.

"I guess this is the first conversation I am having with the desert's greatest warrior and my husband."

Grace pretended to be interested and closed in, sitting right next to Yulian.

- Men like women who are willing to listen to their stories. But don't listen to anything they say after drinking. Probably ninety percent of those statements are false.

Grace remembered her mother's teachings and opened her eyes really wide, as if telling Yulian to go ahead and tell her. She had a look of anticipation as she looked at Yulian.

Seeing Grace act that way, Yulian felt a sense of relaxation and started to speak.

"So...how do I start ... my dream was to be a warrior."

Grace lightly placed her hand on Yulian's chest, leaned her head slightly against Yulian's shoulder and spoke.

"I am now your wife. You can speak casually."

Yulian smiled widely. It looked like, similar to the other men of the desert, Yulian would end up a whipped man claiming to be a loving husband.

"Oh...okay."

"Hehe, your face is charming when you are slightly nervous like this. I heard that any girl would be happy just stealing a glance at you, now that I see it for myself, I guess they were telling the truth."

"Hmmhmm...that's just exa...exaggeration."

Although he was saying that, he was smiling so widely that it felt like his mouth would rip.

"Since you are already a warrior, I guess you achieved your dream."

At Grace's words, quickly shook his head no and replied.

"No, what I am talking about is something bigger. What I mean is becoming a Supreme Warrior of the desert."

"Supreme Warrior?"

Yulian nodded his head yes.

This was his dream that he had only told his master. Now, it was turn to share it with his wife, with whom he will spend all of his life together."

"I want to look past Pareia and become a Supreme Warrior of the desert. Of course I will also successfully complete the responsibilities as Pareia's Glow, but looking further, I want to unite the people of the desert. If I were to look even further..."

Yulian was about to talk about what would be after that, but

since he too had only thought about it and not created a course of action, he stopped there.

“Are you talking about unifying the desert?”

Grace was shocked as she asked.

“Yes, if I am able to do so, I want to change the name of the blood flowing desert, the Crimson Desert. Like the old stories about how the desert used to be one tribe, I want a peaceful desert where people are all helping each other.”

“Mm.”

Grace let out a small sigh. Her father and she both didn't get it wrong. To become the wife of a warrior with such grand dreams and ambitions made Grace extremely happy.

Yulian asked her.

“Why? Does my dream seem too idealistic?”

Grace fervently shook her head no and answered.

“No, I believe you are truly capable of achieving it. My sigh comes from worrying about whether I can help make your grand dreams come true.”

“The first person to affirm my dreams is my wife. My master is a man of few words who speaks through his actions, so you are the first.”

Even Grace knew of the secretive rumor that a foreigner who came to Pareia birthed the Desert Conqueror.

“Now that you mention it, I haven't been able to greet your master. When will you introduce me to him? Was he at our wedding ceremony? There was nobody who stood out.”

“Unfortunately, master is currently not here.”

“Where is he then?”

“I am not so sure myself. A year ago, he disappeared like the

wind. He left demanding that I train diligently, so I know he will be back.”

Grace nodded her head.

“I see, it is disappointing though, I wanted to meet your master.”

As they were talking about his master, Yulian suddenly wanted to see his master.

When he came back, he would inspect his training and test his martial arts, but still, he really wanted to see him.

‘Ah! I would probably get beat up first, I would have to tell him about the Red Storm...’

In an instant, the longing disappeared and fear filled his heart. One of the things you never get used to was his master’s assault.

“Don’t have any fantasies about my master.”

“What?”

“I may end up being beat up to death as soon as he returns.”

As Grace started to get extremely close and he started to relax, Yulian shared all of his complaints about his master.

“There is nothing he fears in the world, and if he says something, he always sticks to it. I may truly end up being beat up and killed...”

“What are you talking about?”

“He does not understand a warrior’s pride even the slightest bit. It might be because he truly is a warrior above all warriors...you don’t know just how much assaults I had to survive to get to this point...and his personality... he is so picky. If there is something he does not like, no matter what it is, you must fix it. If he says he is right, then no matter what it is, you must say he is right. If you don’t, you get beat up again...”

Yulian felt chills thinking about the past.

“There’s no way...”

As Grace responded in disbelief, Yulian felt it was his mission for her to know the truth and spoke with a honest look and tone.

“It is the truth. Please believe me.”

“Ah! Yes..., of course I trust you.”

As Yulian spoke so earnestly, Grace was surprised and answered that way, and only then did Yulian nod his head as if he was finally okay.

“My master is someone you definitely cannot let your guard down around. You must remember my words, so that you will not regret it later.”

“Puh.”

As Yulian started to get anxious, Grace let out a small laugh.

“I will of course heed your warning. But must we continue to stay like this?”

Yulian’s face once again became red and he put his hand on Grace’s shoulder as she was leaning against him.

And so the night continued...

Book 1-4.4 The Iron Princess

Grace got along with everybody. Of course, she got along with the current Mother of Pareia Seina, but it did not take long for her to have a mother-daughter type relationship with the difficult Librie as well.

Even the stoic Pere, as if he was overcome by her persistence, would focus on avoiding Grace whenever he saw her.

This was because he did not want to call her “sister-in-law.” That was how magnificent Grace’s level of affinity was with other people.

It took her exactly two months to understand the dynamics of the family, and Grace’s next task was focusing on the relationships with the powerful families of Pareia.

The powerful families of Pareia were similar to what the continent would consider to be their nobles.

The Provoke family maintained and protected the largest Oasis in Pareia; the remaining ten oasises were protected by the other noble families.

Due to this, even as the family of the Glow, the relationship with these other families were very important.

Across multiple generations, the Provoke family was able to maintain the position of Glow because they had the unwavering support of these noble families.

However, if any generation’s Glow of the Provoke family did not perform to their standards, the position of Glow would be transferred to a different family. As such, they needed to treat them well.

As Grace was officially the wife of the Young Glow, she accompanied Seina on her tour across the Oasis.

The Glow was responsible for the outer tasks such as protecting the tribe and increasing their territory, while the internal affairs were taken care of by the Mother of Pareia and each of the noble families' wives.

During this visit, Seina will hear about the issues each individual oasis is facing, and after thinking through everything she heard, she would discuss with Glow Baguna before proposing a course of action.

In order to learn that, as well as become familiar with each noble family's faces, Grace pestered Seina until Seina agreed to let her come along.

Even at each of the oasis, Grace's popularity was astounding.

Not only was she as beautiful as the former Mother of Pareia, Mairez, she had many other similarities to Mairez, such as listening to the concerns of others and empathizing with them. If there was to be a difference, Mairez was quiet and calm while strong, while Grace was active and full of energy.

Seeing Grace find their itchy spot and scratch it for them, many of the nobles welcomed her with open arms.

Grace Nellisi truly earned her position on her own, showing that she was able to adjust to Pareia perfectly, and she was living a life that was proudly showing her abilities to be the future Mother of Pareia.

"I believe most of the issues have been resolved. I guess I will have some time for myself now."

"If you keep working that way, you may get hurt. There is no reason for you to decrease your sleep time as well. Lighten your load a little."

As Yulian brushed Grace's red hair while sharing his concerns, Grace leaned into Yulian's chest and let out a bright smile.

"I am not tired. I am extremely happy, and there is significant

reward to this work.”

Yulian found Grace to be so loveable and hugged her tightly.

“Then at least for my sake, please take care of yourself. For our next generation as well.”

Yulian, who used to be so shy seemed to have matured a bit with that proclamation.

As if she suddenly thought of something, Grace left Yulian’s embrace before speaking.

“Now that I think about it, are you not planning to have any concubines?”

“What the... what are you talking about?”

Yulian responded in shock and Grace made an expression of confusion.

“Why are you so surprised?”

“It has not even been a year since I was married to you. Furthermore, I have no interest in that.”

“I’m the one who should be asking what YOU are talking about. As a man, of course you must have concubines. Especially since you are the Young Glow.”

Yulian didn’t know how to respond to Grace.

“That is a problem for the future, not now. Even my father waited five years after marrying my mother before marrying mother Seina. From the sounds of it, if I had been born earlier, he may not have married Mother Seina.”

“That is your father’s problem, and since he now has three sons, that is no longer a concern.”

The male to female ratio in the desert was extremely skewed. This was why each tribe was proposing that warriors take many wives.

Due to intense wars, the male-female ratio was at an extreme rate of 1 to 5, and since a tribe's strength was determined by how many men were in the tribe, it was true that having many wives and many children directly impacted the strength of the tribe.

"In terms of the excellent bloodline of the Glow, the more children you have, the more stable it becomes."

Grace was an amazing woman. Not anyone would be able to tell their husbands to have more children, even if it was with other women.

"Let's talk about that later. Later. Not yet. You can understand that much, right?"

Grace decided that it may be better to take one step back and answered.

"Yes, we will discuss this later. Oh, I have a favor to ask of you."

"What is it?"

In order to change the conversation, Yulian quickly asked.

"Please allow me to participate in Red Storm's training."

"No."

"I've already told the warriors that once I became your wife, I will participate with them. Are you going to make me a liar?"

"No means no. Even if it is you, Red Storm's training is too difficult for a woman."

"I've already seen it and made my resolution."

"No. I will never allow it. Please listen to me this time."

Grace frowned and asked.

"Are you going to make your wife a woman who tells lies? Me, the future Mother of Pareia?"

Yulian was anxious. He could vaguely recall Grace saying something similar. However, to train together... the intensity of

Red Storms' training was getting stronger and stronger. At their current level, even veteran warriors may not be able to keep up. But to include his precious wife in the training? It was not something Yulian can allow.

“You know that’s not it. As you mentioned, you are now an important person of Pareia. What if you get hurt? What if you end up in danger? And what if I am not able to focus and train properly because you are there?”

“I told you I’ve made up my mind. I know the importance of my body more than anybody else. I will be careful. I will make sure I don’t cause you any burdens.”

Yulian continued to dissuade her, but Grace, who was easygoing about everything else, was extremely stubborn about this.

“Please do not see me as just a woman. At least in times like this, I wish you will treat me as a warrior. Won’t you be more relaxed when you leave the oasis knowing that I am strong?”

“No.”

“You can help me. You have that much ability.”

Yulian ended up losing to Grace. Her puppy dog eyes and words were something any man would find difficult.

“Sigh, fine...however, if you ever want to quit, just quit. Even if the Red Storm warriors are happy about your curiosity, they will be nervous if you participate in the training. You will admit that it will disrupt their training if they see you having a hard time?”

Grace nodded her head widely and started to hang onto Yulian’s arm.

“Only for a while. Minimally, I want to create a friendly relationship with the warriors under your command. Truthfully speaking, the day you become the Glow, i will also not be able to do as I please because of the position of Mother of Pareia.”

Listening to her, Yulian decided to pass on the martial arts and properly teach her the mental arts as well. No matter how angry his master may be, there was no way he could not like Grace. As such, Yulian thought that his master would forgive him.

‘Regarding this part, I need to inform Grace ahead of time. That way, even when my master returns, my neck will stay attached to my head.’

That was the thought going through Yulian’s head.

Grace did not go against her word. Starting the next day, she started to train together with the Red Storm warriors. Although Yulian was extremely nervous, Grace participated in the difficult training with a calm look on her face.

However, the greatswords were of course too much for her, so she participated with her original weapon, the Sosoonta. Even so, the training was still extremely difficult.

However, whether it was in the training ground or at home, Grace never said it was too hard.

Of course her physique and strength was weak compared to the Red Storm warriors, but she had agility and perseverance, and was a woman who shared the same passion as the warriors.

Even if she took longer to learn compared to other warriors, Grace dedicated herself to the training, even staying up all night if she had to do so to finish the daily training amount.

This was why Grace Nellisi started to receive the nickname “Iron Princess” and the “Real Conqueror of the Desert.”

Book 1-5.1 Let Us Fight You

The Monster's Desert

The second time. He was alone back then, but now, powerful warriors were by his side.

“Yulian-nim, everyone is present and accounted for.”

Haisha informed Yulian of Red Storm's gathering.

Technically speaking, Haisha was never given any formal authority, but for the past year, Haisha had taken on the role of leading the Red Storm. He knew every member's situation and personality, working diligently as the second-in-command informing Yulian about anything he needed to know.

Yulian nodded his head at Haisha and moved to the location where the troops had gathered.

“Everybody, attention.”

Even without Haisha saying so, when Yulian appeared, the warriors stopped what they were doing and looked to Yulian.

Yulian was satisfied as he looked at each of his warriors as they exuded power.

These were the warriors who kept up with his endless training schedule for the past year.

“I gathered you all here today because I believe it is time to start getting some real experience. The training until now was just to increase your affinity with a new weapon.”

The warriors were all nervous inside. They did not know what kind of training method he would use to torment them next.

As if he caught on to their anxiety, Yulian laughed inside as he continued.

“Even I know that the training has been difficult until now. For

that, I am very thankful. The fact that we did not have even one deserter proves that the warriors we have gathered here are strong. However, we have a reason to become even stronger.”

The reason Yulian created the Red Storm brigade and trained them was to fight against the Shuarei’s Desert Sword. However, as the warriors started to get comfortable with the training and the weapon, he felt that he needed to explain it to them in greater detail while researching their teamwork with him as well.

“The Red Storm brigade will always serve as the vanguard in Pareia’s wars. Using the advantages of our weapon, we will slash through a multitude of enemies to create a path for the other warriors to quickly disrupt the enemies formations. That will be our mission. In order to make that happen, I know we will need to have strong physiques and excellent martial arts abilities.”

The Red Storm warriors quieted their breathing to pay attention to Yulian’s words. Their commander was finally talking about war.

“As you know, we are a small brigade with less than sixty people. In order to force our way through thousands of enemies and their formations with this number, you need more than the average amount of courage. However, I believe that whether it is strength, persistence, or confidence, we are not lacking when compared to any other warrior. Am I wrong?”

“You are right!”

“The relationship with each other has to be on equal footing, but Red Storm’s abilities have to be above excellent. Even when we are amongst other warriors who are also putting their lives on the line, we must make sure to show results. Danger will always follow us, but as the greatest warriors, we will push forward until we take the head of the opponent’s commanding officer. That is the Red Storm I am dreaming of creating. Are you confident in making this happen?”

“Of course!”

The Red Storm erupted in response.

Triquel started to laugh as he spoke.

“After suffering through all that training, to lose to someone... I can’t even imagine dying because of a lack of training. And maybe one day, even with Yulian-nim... hehehe...”

Haisha gave Triquel a look of caution, but Triquel looked at Yulian and continued to laugh.

Yulian also started to laugh as he responded.

“Are you saying that you wish to fight me once?”

“Well, more like we want to show off our strength at least once. It doesn’t matter if the opponent is Yulian-nim or not, but if it is Yulian-nim, I feel like we would put in even more effort.”

“Do you all have the same thoughts?”

Yulian saw the fire in their eyes as he looked around. How long had they been insulted? The amount of insults they ate the past year in Red Storm was tens of times more than how much they had eaten before entering Red Storm.

They had developed some confidence; all of the warriors thought there was no way they would end up embarrassed.

“Triquel, watch your words. We developed our strength for the sake of protecting our tribe, not to show off our strength.”

Haisha scolded him on the side but Yulian shook his head.

“No. Whether it is me or any of the Red Storm warriors, we are young and brimming with energy. I also had the intention of sparring with you, but I never said anything because I was worried you will be too shocked and lose your confidence based on the result.”

“OOOOOOOOOoooooooo~!”

The warriors couldn’t believe what Yulian just said.

They started to smile as they continued to rag at Yulian. Looking at Yulian, it felt like their year long training filled with eating insults was finally over.

“Then, me first.”

The first warrior to stand in front of Yulian was surprisingly Haisha.

The person who could not believe the warriors were being disrespectful to Yulian was the first to step up as soon as Yulian finished speaking.

“You?”

Yulian was also surprised, but Haisha nodded his head.

“If you will allow me.”

“Haisha-hyungnim, no cuts, no butts, no coconuts!”

“Haisha-hyungnim, let’s not cut in line.”

Some of the warriors started to protest but it looked like Haisha had no intentions of stepping aside.

“If we are being honest, I can confirm that Big bro Haisha has the most complaints against Yulian-nim.”

Shubeon started to gossip and Triquel started to laugh.

“I guess it is understandable. He suffered from us and he suffered from Yulian-nim. Fine. I am able to step aside and let him be first.”

“Ah, if we are all going to do it, I wanted to be first. That way, even if I ended up losing, I would at least have an excuse.”

Hearing Shubeon talk again, even some of the warriors who were ragging on Haisha for cutting started to laugh and stepped back.

Yulian felt like he had become some type of toy and laughed inside.

If he had it his way, he would fight at least five of them at once, but starting off that way would be ignoring the efforts of the

warriors who had overcome the difficult training. So he just stood there with a smile on his face.

“Then it is confirmed? Haisha, you are first?”

“Yes, Yulian-nim.”

Yulian could feel Haisha’s burning passion as Haisha responded while holding tightly to the two greatswords. Yulian also took out his two greatswords.

“As your teacher, I will allow you the first shot. Attack with all your might.”

The warriors started to yell at Yulian’s words. Among warriors, unless it was a special occasion, they did not use titles. Warrior X, Warrior Y, these were the only terms used. That meant that regardless of age, you are accepting the other person as an adult and as a warrior.

However, after surviving that difficult training together, nobody else could break their solidarity. That’s why rather than being fellow warriors, they felt like a family. This was why they were able to use such familiar titles such as Hyungnim and Ah-woo.

“Haisha hyungnim~! Fighting~!”

“Show us the results of our trip to hell!”

“Hyungnim, we can’t always lose to him. We have to use our own strength to take down the vicious teacher!”

All of the warriors’ cheering was one-sided and focused on Haisha.

“Vicious teacher? Are you talking about me?”

Haisha nodded yes at Yulian’s question.

‘I wonder how he would respond if he knew that his nickname is a scorpion with a poisonous tongue and not a poisonous tail.’

Haisha did not ask to find out.

Deciding that was the smart decision, Haisha rested the greatsword on his right side against his shoulder, while lowering the greatsword in his left hand in front of him to take his starting stance.

“You take too long to get ready. Do you think an opponent would wait that long for you to prepare?”

Yulian just stood there with his two greatswords facing downward, but the moment he started to speak, Haisha let out a long yell as he started to run towards Yulian.

“Ya~~~~~ahhh!”

The greatsword in Haisha’s right hand was strongly swung towards Yulian while the greatsword on the left was swung towards the lower part of the body to prepare for any potential counterattack.

Hearing that Yulian was allowing him the first shot, he attacked with all his strength. He did not expect Yulian to get hurt even in his dreams, so he was able to attack with all of his strength without holding back.

“I can tell you’ve been practicing a lot. However.”

Yulian quickly shouted before taking one step back. He used the greatsword in his right hand to parry Haisha’s right greatsword, and then lowered the sword to block the greatsword attacking down below.

Then, in an instant, he shot his foot forward.

Shocked, Haisha tried to bring his swords back and swing again, but as Yulian suddenly entered past the greatsword’s range, he did not know what to do.

‘Throw the sword away and use my fists?’

As Haisha started to think about what to do next, he felt an intense pain in his chest as Yulian disappeared and was replaced

with the bright desert sky.

Crash.

Haisha's slender body made a loud noise as it fell onto the desert sand.

Book 1-5.2 Fighting the Red Storm Warriors

Haisha could only blink his eyes as he laid there in the shape of a cross. He could not fathom what happened in that instant.

Yulian had instantly moved in towards Haisha and used a strong shoulder tackle to send Haisha flying.

Of course they estimated that Yulian would be stronger than they were, but nobody would have ever guessed that he would be able to overpower Haisha, who was one of the more skilled warriors in Red Storm, with one simple movement.

Yulian spoke as he helped Haisha off the sand.

“The greatsword is a weapon that is extremely strong and has a long reach, however, did I not tell you all to make sure the enemy does not come past the sword’s effective range? And that brief hesitation, I’m guessing you were debating whether to let the swords go?”

Haisha nodded his head yes as he grabbed onto Yulian’s hand to get off the ground. His head was still aching from the shock of falling down into the sand.

“Of course you should have thrown your swords away and attempted a fist fight. Isn’t my weapon a greatsword as well?”

‘There is nobody who can react instantly like that.’ Haisha wanted to say that to Yulian, but as Yulian continued to share what he did wrong, he was unable to do so.

One of the sayings that helped the Red Storm warriors overcome the initial training from hell was ‘If Yulian can do it, so can i.’

“Next.”

As Yulian shouted past Haisha who was deep in thought, the warriors started to look around at each other. They were all concerned about how Haisha was blown away with a single hit.

“Are you all scared? What happened to the confidence you had before? Today, I will show you why I created and taught the Red Storm. I will fiercely show you all. I’ve already been training for seven years; shouldn’t I be at least a little bit different?”

They knew Yulian was goading them, but still, they all got fired up by the insults.

“Me first.”

“Then, me first.”

A couple different warriors came out to the front.

“I will give you the first blow. Come at me.”

At Yulian’s words, the warriors attacked with all their strengths. The result...

Pow.

Flying warriors.

Pow.

Falling warriors.

Ten warriors in a row were attacked not with a sword but fists, shoulder, and head. Yulian’s face was filled with a smile.

The warriors continued to attack with all their might, but the results were the same.

Some of the warriors thought about the others who were countered when attacking with all of their strength and swung their swords focusing on defense. In those situations, Yulian suppressed them by swinging his sword with overwhelming strength.

‘I’m so shocked I can’t even speak.’

Haisha could not believe Yulian’s aggression and magnificence to defeat all the warriors except one within an hour.

“Is this the last?”

Yulian leisurely laughed as he looked at the last remaining warrior, Thrint.

Thrint slowly moved forward while holding tightly onto his greatsword and staring at Yulian.

‘If I use any normal method, I know I am currently no match for Yulian-nim. That was the case for Haisha, and even the case for those chatterboxes Triquel and Shubeon, who are some of the strongest among us. They all were blown away by a single blow. If I attack him thinking of this as training, I will end up just the same.’

“As with the others, I will give you the first blow. If you are hesitant, you will be hit by the sword.”

Yulian said that while looking at the warriors who were still writhing in pain from being hit by the sword. Thrint brought forth all of his fighting spirit to attack.

‘This is a battlefield. We are in an embarrassing situation where the entire Red Storm was decimated by a single person. If I am to die, I will take at least an arm, if not, at least a finger, with me.’

Thrint started to suppress his own thoughts. If your mind is suppressed, your body will follow.

Thrint had trained harder than anybody else because he had a high level of self-esteem and was extremely prideful. Through that, what Thrint had learned was that the mind controls the body.

And the control of his mind, had never given him any disappointment.

“Huuuu~ Huuu~”

Thrint started to take deep breaths as he started to transform.

“Hmm?”

The first person to recognize Thrint’s transformation was

Yulian, who started to sensitively respond.

‘Is it murderous aura?’

The moment Yulian was surprised, Thrint lifted his two greatswords and started to stab them towards Yulian.

“What!”

Rather than Thrint’s speed, Yulian was shocked at Thrint’s murderous aura. Yulian swung his body to make the greatswords miss, and turned around to attack Thrint’s shoulder with his elbow.

“Ugh.”

Although Thrint let out a painful yell at the strong impact in his shoulder, he did not let go of his sword and turned his body to swing again at Yulian.

Yulian had expected Thrint to fall down with this one attack. As Thrint attacked again rather than falling, Yulian was not ready and had to use his greatsword to parry the attack.

“Oh!”

As if he was getting strength from the other warriors’ cheers, Thrint started to swing his greatsword quickly and continued to attack Yulian.

He was attacking with the mentality of “If I can’t kill you, I will end up dying.”

To not hurt Thrint, Yulian used his sword to parry each and every one of Thrint’s attacks while using his feet and the face of the sword to take him down. Surprisingly, Thrint continued to attack Yulian, as if saying that type of light attacks will never take me down.

As Thrint’s murderous aura continued to grow, Yulian started to feel like he couldn’t continue like this.

Among the strong Red Storm warriors, Thrint was someone who

had caught his eye early on.

He was not focused on accuracy with the sword like Haisha, nor was he fast like Triquel.

That doesn't mean he was nimble like Shubeon either, but he had the mental persistence, that could overcome everything else.

Thrint was the warrior who was extremely dedicated to training, just as he had been when he first started to train with Chun Myung Hoon.

He knew through Haisha that Thrint did not speak much and was extremely cold, but surprisingly, that led to his fellow warriors developing a trust with him.

‘What type of method should I use? This is not strength he gained from the training. Does he have an extremely strong mind?’

But that was not it. This was overcoming the limits of one's own body. This would end up being a minus to him in the future. It was as if a baby who had just learned to walk was pretending to run.

“Stop!”

Yulian yelled loudly, but Thrint continued to attack Yulian as if he had not heard him speak.

His eyes were bloodshot and all the muscles in his body were shaking, but he still continued to move like the beginning.

He had lost his rationality and was swinging his sword at Yulian like a Crazy Warrior.

Yulian knew he could not let this continue and strongly parried an attack to get Thrint's arms to open. In that moment, he rushed in and grabbed Thrint's collar.

“Come back to your senses Thrint.”

As Thrint tried to struggle out of Yulian's grasp, Yulian lifted Thrint's large body up into the air.

“Guh...guuuuuuuuh.”

Thrint could not breathe. As he was in pain, he dropped his swords and grabbed onto Yulian’s wrists with both of his hands, but there was no movement on Yulian’s side.

“To make yourself move by tricking yourself does not help at all when it comes to improving your strength. Save that type of mentality for real battles. If you don’t, you will really end up a Crazy Warrior!”

Yulian yelled as he threw Thrint’s body.

Shubeon quickly ran towards Thrint in shock and started to slap him.

“Thrint, Thrint, wake up.”

Thrint’s pupils, which had rolled up, returned to normal.

“Are you okay?”

At Shubeon’s question, Thrint quickly got up and started to look around.

“Thrint, do you not remember what happened?”

As Yulian approached him and asked, Thrint nodded his head yes.

“You managed to trick yourself well in a short amount of time. But next time, do not use that method ever again. Repeating ‘I can do this. I can do this.’ definitely helps, but it does not help you at all to lose your mind to the point you don’t even remember what happened.”

Yulian spoke as if he recognized what type of method Thrint had used. He had also adventured down that path.

“Yulian-nim, I’m sorry.”

As Thrint lowered his head and apologized, Yulian patted his shoulder and spoke towards everybody.

“My master used to often use a phrase called ‘Guayoubulgup’ that I could not understand. He said it meant that being excessive was worse than being insufficient. Your body becomes stronger the more you train, and so does your mental strength. However, if you pass a certain point, it will end up being destroyed. He was telling me to not train past my own limitations.”

All of the warriors looked towards Yulian.

“My master knew what my limitations were, but I am currently not at a level where I am able to see other people’s limitations. You must figure that out on your own. They say that your mind controls the body, but if you go past your limitation, it ends up where your body controls your mind. Just like Thrint like now. What I have learned and am teaching you now, all of this is extremely dangerous. We are not only training our body but our mind as well. Compared to other warriors, the danger is at least twice as much.”

“...”

“I’ve already been training like this for seven years. It’s natural for all of you, who have only been training for a year, to not be at my level. Of course, with your current strengths, your average veteran warriors in our tribe would not be able to defeat you. The reason I took you on as your opponent was to warn you to not be egotistic that you are stronger than the other warriors.”

As all of Red Storm was suppressed in just one hour, there were no warriors who objected to this statement. Rather, they were all excited and hopeful that if they continued to work hard, they would one day be at Yulian’s level.

“Always be on your guard. As I mentioned, our training is twice as dangerous as others. Among them, there is a phenomenon known as spontaneous combustion. In our words, you can think of it as becoming a cripple. No matter the situation you must never stop controlling your mind. You must be careful for the rest of

your life. Do not forget this.”

“Yes, we understand.”

At the warriors’ response, Yulian nodded his head in approval and continued to speak.

“Great. I’m sure you are all pissed off after losing like this. Let’s have some fun today. Do whatever you have to do to attack me. You can all attack together. However, since it may be dangerous, we will be fighting with only our bodies.”

Hearing Yulian’s words ignited the warriors’ fighting spirits, as they were thinking this was the time to get their revenge.

That night, Pareia’s shamans could not sleep as they treated all of the injured warriors who showed up together. Yulian was also among them, with a bit of damage as well.

Book 1-5.3 The Four Horsemen and their Squads

The Monster's Desert was a dangerous area that required most tribes to send at least three hundred veteran warriors together for survival.

This was where an endless amount of monsters were generated from, and the reason anyone would face danger to come to the Monster's Desert, was of course to control the amount of monsters in the desert, but the important part was to have many warriors experience real danger while working on developing teamwork with other warriors.

These fifty or so warriors, who do not look a day over twenty, were heading into this dangerous Monster's Desert. If they were warriors who just became twenty, that meant that they weren't even veteran warriors.

Even though the tribe's greatest warriors and the chiefs of the Oasis were trying to persuade them otherwise, Yulian and Red Storm were still heading to the Monster's Desert.

Red Storm's next training location.

After seeing that the Red Storm warriors had developed a certain level of skill, Yulian decided on this location for them to experience real battles. Collecting Monster's Souls was just an extra benefit during the process.

"We will finally be able to hold our heads up in front of the master blacksmiths who keep complaining that too much money is being spent on our weapons."

Everybody started to laugh at Triquel's words.

Even though they were with Yulian, who had survived in this place on his own, and they were confident in their abilities, the fact that this was the Monster's Desert still made them all nervous.

Yulian looked around before speaking.

“We will set up our paoes here. Since we will be here for two months, you will need to dig deep and make sure that it is sturdy. It’s true that the monsters here are dangerous, but the sandstorms are even scarier than the monsters.”

Hearing Yulian’s words, everybody got off their pirmas and started to set up their paoes.

Yulian reflected back to his suffering here during his coming-of-age ceremony as he instructed the warriors to dig deep into the ground, to the point where almost half the paoe was inside the sand.

Setting up the paoes and putting their containers of water and dried rations inside the paoes took a while. Before they knew it, a few hours had gone by.

“Fall in formation once you are ready.”

After Haisha shouted out loud, the majority of the warriors started to fall into formation. The few stragglers quickly completed their preparations and joined them shortly.

Once everybody was gathered, Yulian informed them of the dangers surrounding them.

“Starting from now, it is truly the real thing. Throw away your laid-back attitudes and make sure to focus. We will be spending sixteen hours a day fighting monsters and eight hours to sleep and eat. If you consider that four of those hours will be spent on guard duty, the duration of our sleep will only be four hours a day. I know that an extreme amount of fatigue will come over us. I also know that it will be dangerous. However, we did not come out here to play. We came here to gain real battle experience; we came to sharpen our abilities.”

Yulian’s voice started to get louder.

“In the battlefield, the enemy will still attack us when we are

tired; they will not care if our fatigue makes us slower. Take this time to experience that before it happens in the battlefield. Our enemy will not just be the monsters here; it will also be the dangerous natural disasters that occur here as well.”

Yulian stretched out his hand to feel the wind as he continued.

“I’m sure you all know this already, but if you see that a sandstorm is brewing, hide underground. Even then, you will need to make sure to keep your eyes and ears open, as there are monsters even underground.”

Looking at the warriors with fire in their eyes, Yulian was a bit concerned.

It was going to be a painful training session.

“The last thing I have to say is for you to value your own body. Not just for yourself but for Pareia, and for me, make sure to take care of your body. If you sense that danger is near, work together with your peers around you. I will not forgive any injuries or deaths. Understand?”

“Yes, we understand.”

The Red Storm warriors responded in unison. They all had at least that much resolution.

“Great. I will divide you into squads. Haisha, Triquel, Shubeon, and Thrint.”

Yulian called the names of the warriors he had considered. Each of them had their own unique talents and amongst the group, they had been labeled the Red Storm’s Four Horsemen. They also had the abilities to live up to that name.”

“Yes.”

Yulian spoke to the four warriors who answered his call and started to come forward.

“Each of you will have a squad of twelve members. The

remaining eight will be with me. As you are forming your squads, rather than your friends, consider each person's individuality and abilities as you will need to work well together. I'm sure you understand what I mean. Begin."

As soon as Yulian gave the command, the Four Horsemen started to form their squads, considering each person's personality and abilities. It took a bit of time, but the four squads were created and the remaining eight warriors came towards Yulian.

"Great. From here on, we are in competition with each other. The winner will be the squad who can collect the most Monster's Souls. Of course we will also consider the quality. A regular scorpion's Monster's Soul cannot be treated the same as a Giant Scorpion's Monster's Soul. On the last day of training, we will determine the first place and the last place squads and great rewards and harsh punishments will be given. I will say it again. This is a battlefield. When the war is over, we need to reward achievements properly. Since that is the case, I'm sure how we treat some of you will change."

The warriors' fighting spirits burned even hotter with Yulian's words. As they were all prideful warriors who believed they would not lose to anybody else, it couldn't be helped. Before they were teammates, they were now competitors.

"At noon and at midnight. Twice a day, you MUST return to this paoe. Each squad will send two members at a time to protect the paoe. Including me, the five squad leaders will take turns overseeing the protection of the paoe. The remaining amount of time is left up to each individual squad. When to sleep, when to eat, that type of stuff. Any questions?"

Shubeon lifted his hand high into the air.

"Do you think each squad is capable of taking down a Sand Dragon? Asking for a friend..."

Yulian pondered for a bit before shaking his head no.

“No. If you meet a Sand Dragon, run away. I believe that your abilities are enough to avoid critical danger. However, as I mentioned before, I will not accept any injuries or death. Wouldn't it be such a waste to go through all that training just to die here?”

“Then isn't it too advantageous for your squad? Since you can take a Sand Dragon down on your own and all...”

Yulian smiled. He finally understood what Shubeon was worried about.

‘I'm sure the other warriors are thinking about this as well but Shubeon just asked as the representative.’

The warrior Shubeon had massive strength, and his personality was one where he hated being on the losing end. His name of Three Toras (small animals that live underground and prepare many entrances and exits to their home in case of a predator's attack) proved that to be the case.

“Don't worry. I will only put forward enough power to make up for the four members we are missing. Of course, on the day I am watching the Paoe, our squad will face more loss than any other squad, so I will compensate as needed.”

“Even Yulian-nim can surprisingly be so calculating.”

Triquel started to speak after laughing at what Yulian said.

“It's obvious. I will also follow the same rules that you are all following. Still, there is no doubt in my mind that my squad will not be last place. I will say this now, the winning squad will receive a big reward while the squad in last place... well, I'll leave that up to your imaginations.”

“They say you need to put the two next to each other to see which is longer and shorter. Who knows? We may be able to see Yulian who needs to give a punishment to himself.”

The other warriors all started to laugh at Triquel's response.

“That’s right. You need to put the two together to tell which is longer and shorter. I am getting a bit embarrassed thinking about giving myself a reward.”

As Yulian retorted without backing away, the warriors’ laughter became even louder.

“Any other questions?”

Red Storm’s Four Horsemen looked at each other before shaking their heads no and responding in unison.

“No other questions.”

“Then we will start now. I will not say something like I wish you luck. Show me your skills. Dismiss yourselves by squad.”

“Yes.”

The warriors quickly sped off in their individual squads to get an advantage over the other squads.

Book 1-5.4 Punishment

One month into Monster Subjugation.

“Personnel report. Total squad members, twelve. Current members, twelve. No injuries.”

It was one of the two times they all gathered together and all of the Red Storm warriors were in formation outside the paoe. Each squad leader was submitting their personnel report to Yulian.

Since it was a dangerous place and each squad was in fierce competition with each other, it was important to get these reports.

“Personnel report. Total squad members, twelve. Current members, twelve. Two injured.”

Thrint frowned as he made his report.

“Two injured?”

Not only Yulian, but the other three squad leaders were surprised as they looked towards Thrint. If it was any other squad, maybe. But the squad led by the cold block of ice of a squad leader was where there were injuries? This was definitely surprising.

It's probably the case most of the time, but the speciality of any team would change depending on the leader, and Red Storm was no exception.

The personalities of the squads were changing based on the squad leader's personality.

All of Haisha's squad became calm and paid attention to detail like Haisha and had been collecting a continuous stream of Monster's Souls throughout the month.

In the case of Triquel's squad, as if they were impacted by Triquel's severe mood swings that had its major ups and downs, the warriors of the squad caught monsters whenever they felt like it. So some days they had more than other squads while other days

they came back with miserable amounts.

Shubeon's squad was paying attention to other squads and collecting Monster's Souls separately without bringing them back so nobody knew where they stood in comparison, but Shubeon's squad was definitely one of the top contenders.

He was the type to move and hunt efficiently.

And in the case of Thrint's squad where they had two injured today, they hunted frequently like Haisha's squad, but the atmosphere was different.

They were focused on the order but also easily fascinated by many things. On the days they were stimulated, they collected Monster's Souls at extreme speeds.

They were the squad who were showing the mentality of an ideal squad. Of course that meant that they were treasuring their own bodies since that was Yulian's order. But it was from this squad that there were injured warriors.

As everybody stared at him, Thrint ripped the clothing off from his leg. Underneath the clothing was his thigh which had a giant black bruise.

"What happened?"

"We were not trying to go against your order. However, all of us determined that we would be able to catch it safely, and all of the warriors agreed."

"You ran into a Sand Dragon."

Haisha spoke from the side as if he could tell what happened.

Thrint lowered his head at the fact that he went against Yulian's order.

"So did you catch it?"

Yulian asked in a cold tone.

“Yes, we caught it. Other than the fact that Kiana and I received some minor injuries, it was perfect.”

“Perfect would have been avoiding the Sand Dragon. Did I not say that injuries are not permitted?! What is the point of this training if even one person loses their lives for a mere Sand Dragon?!”

At Yulian’s continued scolding, Thrint raised his head.

“We came here to develop our senses for battle. I believed that we need to face a certain degree of danger to develop it.”

“That is your thought, my thought is that I came here so that nobody would die in war. But to die like a dog here, don’t you think it would be unfair?!”

“We would have been able to catch it perfectly without any injuries if we had not made a small mistake in the middle.”

“Thrint!”

As Yulian’s expression became angrier, Haisha shouted out loud.

“No matter what, there is no excuse for going against an order. I thought you of all people would know this best. What the hell are you doing?!”

Thrint lowered his head again at Haisha’s shouting. He knew Haisha was right.

No matter the reason, something that should never happen in a brigade was going against the command of a superior officer.

“This is your new order. For the sin of going against the order, you will be in charge of watching the paoe until the end of training. Since all of the warriors in your squad went against the order of me, the Commanding Officer, for three days, they will be protecting the paoe instead of hunting monsters.”

As Yulian’s cold voice rang out, the warriors of Thrint’s squad all lowered their heads.

“Yulian-nim, it was my decision. Since I was the squad leader, they all just followed along with what I said. Please reconsider.”

Thrint yelled out to Yulian, thinking that his squad members will end up in last place from the training because of his decision.

“Denied. In this situation where everybody knew what my order was, that excuse is not enough to forgive them. I want all of you to consider whether your life is only worth one Sand Dragon and reflect.”

Nobody could speak on their behalf. It was a closed and shut case where Thrint’s warriors were in the wrong.

“The other squads are free to do what they would like. Since you all saw what happened here today, I will not speak on it anymore. Each of you think about it and act appropriately.”

As none of the warriors responded, Yulian opened his mouth again.

“Do you understand?”

“Yes.”

As Yulian turned around and went into the paoe, each squad’s warriors looked at Thrint and his squad members before walking away.

“I....I’m sorry.”

Once only Thrint and his squad members were left, Thrint finally spoke.

It was all because of his own competitiveness. They would have been able to avoid it, and even though some of the warriors tried to convince him out of it, he distributed tasks to each member and attacked it.

“Thrint, it is not just your fault. We were all greedy. That’s why we followed you. If your plan did not make any sense, we would have been against it. We should be the ones who are sorry as you

were the only one who received a significant punishment.”

As one of the warriors started to console Thrint, another one started to speak.

“This three day punishment, and for your sake as well, we will work hard to make sure that we do not end up with the worst score.”

“Don’t make that type of face. It is not like you. I can’t come to like your stoic expression, but when you have a frown like that, it’s starting to make me afraid.”

As one warrior tried to lighten the mood, the warriors all started to laugh loudly to push past their sorrows.

“That’s true, Thrint definitely has a face you can’t seem to come to like.”

“When I first saw him, I wondered why there was a monster among us. What do they call that monster that roams around in the caves out in the wilderness? Right! Trolls! I thought he was a troll!”

As one person after another started to make some funny jokes, it looked like the frown on Thrint’s face started to lessen a bit as well.

Suddenly, all of the warriors who were laughing shut their mouths. Yulian had come back out of the paoe.

“Did everybody else leave?”

The warriors responded to Yulian’s question.

“Yes, the other squads have all left, and Yulian-nim, the warriors of your squad should be waiting for you to leave.”

After nodding his head, Yulian looked at Thrint and the warriors who were standing with their heads pointing down before speaking.

“I hope that you do not think that the punishment is too severe.

Thankfully, this time it ended up with just a few light injuries, but I get goosebumps just thinking about the what-ifs and if one of you ended up dying. Aren't we all headed towards the same direction with the same dream? Don't even think about dying a dog's death before even seeing a little bit of our dreams come true. Today, all of you set the example, so please understand where I am coming from."

None of the warriors could lift their heads after hearing about just how much Yulian cared about them.

"Phew, protecting the paoe is also one of the missions. Pretend that you are protecting an Oasis and do your best."

Yulian let out a short sigh as if he did not feel good about pushing them into a corner and started to head towards the warriors waiting for him.

Once Yulian disappeared, Thrint spoke to his warriors.

"I will say it one last time. I'm sorry. However, I hate being last. I hope you all push forward as best as you can."

The warriors all knew just how strong Thrint's pride was and knew it took a lot of courage for Thrint to say what he just said. As such, they all smiled widely and consoled each other.

Book 1-5.5 The Golden Turtle (I)

If you think it has been long, then it has been long, and if you think it has been short, it has been short. Either way, Red Storm has spent two months in the Monster's Desert.

They filled five travel-use backpacks full of Monster's Souls, which can help you understand just how many monsters the Red Storm warriors have defeated during that time.

An endless haze had spread across the desert sand, and the sun's intense heat was pouring down with no regards, as if it wanted to push away all of the haze, but despite the haze and the heat, all of the warriors had grins on their faces and were full of confidence as they headed off to their final monster subjugation.

The end of this round of subjugation was to be the end of their training.

Thrint's squad of warriors, who ended up in last place during the training, were definitely worried about what kind of punishment they will receive from Yulian after they returned. However, they were still happy that they all survived.

The squad that received first place for the training was Shubeon's squad. They just barely managed to edge out Haisha's squad who was in second place.

"Yulian-nim, what rewards will you be giving to the warriors who received first place during this training?"

Yulian responded to Shubeon's question.

"What reward do you wish for me to give?"

Shubeon looked around at the other warriors before cautiously speaking.

"I hope the reward and punishment could offset each other."

"What do you mean?"

“The punishment for Thrint’s mistake, I hope that you will forgive it as our reward.”

Yulian glared at Shubeon who was telling him to recall his order, but knowing that the reason they were coming at him like this was only for their comrades, his expression became peaceful once again.

“Is this your wish?”

“I am speaking on behalf of my entire squad who wishes for this to be the case.”

As Yulian turned to look at Thrint, Thrint could not look Yulian in the eye and turned his head away.

‘Looks like he has already been convinced. Is it because he is not the only one who would be getting punished?’

That was what Yulian was thinking, as the prideful Thrint would never accept this type of help. If it was not because of his squad members, there was no way Thrint would be so quiet.

“Fine, I will approve of it.”

Once Yulian gave his approval, all of the warriors started to smile. They could not scream in joy as they made Yulian take back his word, but they were all very happy.

Yulian and Red Storm continued to catch many monsters as they slowly headed towards the center of the Monster’s Desert.

“I know there is no point for me to say this, but don’t let your guard down just because there are many of us.”

“Yes, sir.”

“Then let’s sweep through like a storm.”

“Waaaaaaah!”

The warriors started to holler as they started to run towards the visible monsters. Yulian did not join the hunt just in case

something abnormal happened, and continued to survey the area and the status of the warriors.

“Huh? What kind of monster is that? Is it an animal?”

Haisha was looking at a golden light at the bottom of the ground, a fist-sized lifeform that was crawling through the sand as if it was swimming. Haisha ran towards the monster.

As he got close, this turtle-like lifeform was shining so brightly as if it wouldn't be wrong to call it a block of moving gold.

Haisha realized that he had never heard about a monster or lifeform which looked like the one he was seeing.

‘If I catch this, I’m sure the shamans and tribespeople will enjoy the marvelous sight.’

Haisha placed his greatsword on his side and removed his Sosoonta from his chest. It looked like he could catch it with his bare hands, but he wanted to be prepared just in case it could transform.

Haisha slowly headed towards the golden turtle. The golden turtle was casually moving like it was swimming in the sand but suddenly put his head into the sand and started to dig, as if it felt the murderous aura coming from Haisha.

“Oh no you don't!”

As the golden turtle started to head into the sand, Haisha darted quickly to catch the turtle.

Thankfully, it looked like the golden turtle was just an animal. It started to flail its legs around to escape.

“This thing, does it only have strength in its legs?”

Haisha was muttering to himself as he could not feel any power coming from the hard golden shell in his hand.

“Haisha!”

He noticed Yulian shouting loudly and heading towards him.

Haisha did not understand why Yulian was in a panic and tilted his head in confusion while looking at Yulian.

Haisha was not the only one to be surprised at Yulian's shout. The warriors were surprised at Yulian's shouting, then looked at Haisha again before going pale in the face and heading towards Haisha while calling his name.

"What's going on? Huh, why does everybody look so big?"

Haisha was baffled while watching everybody running towards him. Everybody seemed at least twice as tall as he was. Then maybe, was this an animal that causes illusions?"

"Catch!"

Yulian shouted while throwing a thick rope to Haisha.

"Why are you suddenly throwing...!"

Haisha looked down as if he finally understood. He could not see below his waist.

"Quicksand!"

The golden turtle in his hand was not looking like it was swimming, it was actually swimming in the sand.

The quicksand Haisha was in did not look any different than the other desert sand.

You could watch out for quicksand when it was continuously flowing, but since this did not look any different, even a cautious and attentive warrior like Haisha ended up falling inside this quicksand.

At first he was slowly falling in, but once his hips fell inside, it was as if the center of gravity fell towards the bottom and the speed of his descent became much faster.

"Haisha! Catch!"

Haisha regained his focus listening to Yulian and the other warriors and let go of the golden turtle. By the time he caught the rope, the sand was already up to his chest.

“Pull!”

Once Haisha grabbed onto the rope, Yulian shouted loudly and used all of his strength to pull on the rope.

Following him, the other warriors all started to pull on the rope as well, but it was not enough to pull out Haisha, who was covered up to his neck in sand.

In addition, since he could not put any strength into his shoulders, Haisha did not have any strength to pull on the rope either. Haisha continued to fall further into the sand.

“Haisha!”

While everybody was shouting Haisha’s name and pulling with all of their strength, Haisha had fallen completely into the quicksand.

In the short amount of time he had, Yulian quickly thought about how the sand where Haisha had fallen was not flowing, and decided it must be a hole.

‘If that’s the case, there has to be a bottom. If there is a bottom, there has to be a way to get him out.’

Of course it’s probably more honest to say Yulian did not have time to think all of that threw and just started to head towards it on instinct, but whatever. Yulian started to run while fastening the rope on his hips and yelled.

“Hold on tightly. I will go get him!”

“Yulian-nim, don’t do it!”

Many of the warriors gasped and tried to stop him, but Yulian was already in the quicksand and his feet started to sink.

The warriors were shocked and tried to pull him out with the

rope, but Yulian had already used a martial arts called “Chun-gun-choo,” which makes your lower body heavier, and was quickly sinking into the sand.

The Red Storm warriors had a look of devastation on their faces while holding on tightly to the two ropes on the ground, and could only wait for Yulian to come back safely as he proclaimed.

Yulian noticed that it quickly became dark around him and sand started to fall into his nose and ears. Yulian blocked his nose and ears and used the aura he had been training for so long to protect his eyes.

As Yulian expected, the sand was not flowing, and his body just continued to fall further into the sand.

While Yulian was falling, he noticed the tip of a rope in front of him. Recognizing that it was the rope Haisha had held onto, Yulian reached out to grab onto the rope and pushed himself to fall even faster into the sand.

“Koong!”

Book 1-5.6 The Golden Turtle (2)

Suddenly, he noticed that there was nothing underneath his feet, and the sand that had been tickling his skin had suddenly disappeared. Then he felt a strong impact underneath his feet.

“Ow.”

It was so sudden that Yulian could not prepare for it. He had let out a groan after it felt like his foot might have been broken.

“What is this?”

Even in the midst of the pain, Yulian realized that he was lying on the ground. As he was trying to get his bearing, he heard Haisha’s voice.

“Yulian-nim?”

As there was no source of light, even desert warriors like Yulian and Haisha, who had extremely good eyesights like a hawk in the sky, could not see each other. Haisha had relied on his hearing and thought it was Yulian.

“Haisha, is that you?”

“Yes, Yulian-nim. But why...”

“What do you mean why? I came to save you.”

Haisha started to tear up at Yulian’s words. Yes, they were alive, but truthfully speaking, this was somewhere that should have killed him. Even so, Yulian was willing to face all the danger to follow after him. How touching was that?

Furthermore, he followed after him before Haisha could even determine what was down here. That meant that he jumped in without any hesitation to save him. That was what made it even more touching.

“Yulian-nim, why did you do that? You are our Young Glow, Pareia’s hope and Pareia’s great warrior. To face danger to save a

pawn like me...”

Haisha spoke like that hiding his true feelings and Yulian responded.

“My hope is the Red Storm. Without a warrior to cover my back, even the strongest and most talented warrior cannot use their full strength.”

“Even so, this was too dangerous of a decision.”

Yulian brushed the sand off his face before continuing on.

“Let’s talk about that later, shall we? First, we need to determine if we are alive, and if so, figure out where exactly we are. That’s probably the most important thing right now.”

“Of course we are alive. Otherwise, would we be able to converse like this? But the heavens have truly helped us. To think that there would be an empty space like this underneath the quicksand. Isn’t the quicksand above our head? Then why is the sand not falling in this direction?”

As Haisha looked up and stared at the completely dark ceiling where he could not see anything, on reflex, Yulian also looked up to see.

“I can’t tell since I can’t see anything. Haisha, do you have any flintstones on you?”

“I have flintstones but nothing to burn? Ah!”

As Haisha suddenly screamed, Yulian worried that something might have happened and quickly asked.

“Haisha, what’s wrong?”

“No, it just felt like something was moving in my chest.”

Haisha quickly put his hand inside his clothes and took out the cause of the wiggling. In that instant, there was light in the darkness.

“What is that?”

Yulian asked as the light from the golden item in Haisha’s hand came into his eyes.

“This, well, it’s my first time seeing it as well. I ended up falling in here trying to catch this little guy.”

“Is it a monster?”

Yulian looked carefully at it and realized that it was alive and not just an item.

Haisha shook his head and answered.

“It doesn’t have any attack, and it looks like it ended up in my chest while struggling in the quicksand. I have a hard time believing that something so gentle could be a monster...”

“An animal that lets out a golden light... that’s very marvelous. It’s also the thing we need the most right now. It looks like a turtle.”

“A turtle?”

“I remember seeing in a book. It’s an animal that lives somewhere called the ocean, where there is only water.”

“Since it is glowing in a golden light, I guess we can call it a Golden Turtle.”

The two people who now had a source of light moved the golden turtle left and right to look around them.

First, they looked at the ceiling which they were so curious about. Afterwards, they determined that there was some sort of transparent barrier that was blocking the sand from falling down.

Their surrounding was three meters tall and four meters wide. It was like a long tunnel that was open on both sides.

“I’m worried about how we will get out of here. I’m sure they’re extremely worried about us up there. We need to at least let them

know that we are alive.”

“Generally, if there is a way for all things to enter, there’s bound to be a way out. I’m sure we’ll find it if we look around.”

“Haisha, you’re calmer than I expected you to be.”

“There is nothing that’ll get better by being anxious.”

‘This personality must be why so many look up to Haisha.’ Yulian thought to himself as he started to feel the walls around him.

“You are right. Hmm, it doesn’t look like the walls are made by sand coming together. I didn’t expect the bottom of the desert to be this type of consistency.”

Haisha also touched the cold surface and even tapped it as if he was amazed. He also tried scratching it with his Sosoonta.

After looking around for a long time and seeing nothing else that stood out, Haisha asked Yulian.

“There are two paths here. Should we each take a different path?”

“We only have one source of light and we don’t know what monsters may live down here, so let’s go together.”

“Alrighty then. Which way shall we go first?”

Yulian looked at both paths before pointing to the one behind him.

“This side first. I hope it is not like a maze in there.”

Yulian thought about the magician’s dungeons he saw in some books. It talked about how magicians research monsters, and they make a dungeon that monsters would like to use so that they can grow some monsters to use as test subjects and study them.

In addition, the wider and taller the dungeons were, more monsters and higher level monsters could live in there, so it also

talked about how you could tell a magician's abilities based on that as well.

‘To make a dungeon here in the desert, especially in the Monster's Field, the magician must be really strong. Even magicians are humans, so I hope that they are alive.’

In the case that this was really a dungeon made by an advanced level magician, and the magician had already passed away, then this would really be a dangerous place. So Yulian hoped that this would be a naturally made cave, and if that was not the case and this truly was a dungeon, then he hoped that the magician was still alive and controlling the monsters.

As nothing happened while the two of them walked for a long while, Yulian and Haisha relaxed a bit and started to chat as they walked.

“There's a light!”

Haisha pointed towards it while shouting. Far ahead in front of them, they could see a speck of light.

“If there is a light then it means there must be a person. Let's go take a look.”

Yulian could tell that the light was not from a natural source of light like the sun and urged Haisha to quickly run towards it.

Right at that moment...

“Stop.”

The pronunciation was a bit odd, but it was definitely the language of the Eastern Continent.

“Who might you be? My name is Yulian, a warrior of Pareia.”

Yulian shouted towards the direction of the sound, but the response was the same.

“Stop. Go back.”

“We’ve lost our way. We want to go out, but...”

Yulian shouted like that but the owner of the voice did not seem like they would come out of the darkness and reveal themselves and only continued to repeat the same sentence.

“Return. Go back. If you want to come, come back later.”

“We do not have anywhere to go. If you can show us how we can get out, we will do as you wish.”

As Yulian opened his mouth to speak again, he saw something shining in the darkness.

“Ah!”

Book 1-5.7 The Strange Young Man

Yulian was surprised and rolled his body backwards. It was so fast that he could not even think about getting his greatsword out.

The owner of the voice finally revealed themselves inside the light of the golden turtle. With long black hair tied in a ponytail, the young man had skin so pale, Yulian debated whether he had not seen any sunlight or it was because the light shined too brightly in the darkness.

The young man pushed forth the blade that felt like it would cut your body if you stared at it before saying again.

“This is your last warning. Do not come. If you want to come, come later.”

This made Yulian angry. Yes, they were intruders, but they had not done anything that was disrespectful, but this guy was still swinging his sword at them!

Haisha was also angry seeing Yulian roll backwards like he was falling down and took out his sword to hit the young man's sword.

Slash.

The two swords clearly hit, but the sound was not what he expected.

Clank.

The front part of Haisha's greatsword was cleanly sliced off and fell to the ground. Haisha was usually cautious and laid-back, and he knew that he would not be able to handle this guy's level of strength, but to receive the insult of his sword being cut angered him so much he did not think things through. Furthermore, putting aside his personality, you could not call yourself a desert warrior if you just accepted an insult like that and did nothing about it.

“You son of a!”

Haisha placed the cut greatsword in front of his body and swung his other intact greatsword. Watching this happen, the young man’s face was filled with a murderous aura.

“If you don’t listen, you are a bad guy. So you are a bad guy. Since I even warned you, I followed all the rules I was supposed to follow.”

Even without knowing what it was that he kept, the young man spoke in a weird accent that did not match the murderous aura around him and started to attack Haisha with his sword.

Seeing Haisha’s life in danger after clashing their weapons just once, Yulian did not have any time to try to settle things before quickly pushing Haisha aside and blocking the young man’s sword.

After learning martial arts from his master and slashing the Sand Dragon, lately, he was able to bring forth all the energy inside of his body. Yulian thought that other than his master, he would not lose to anybody, but the young man’s sword was fiercer and stronger than his own.

In just a couple of seconds, Yulian could feel that his life was in danger, and Haisha tried to help him from the side, but he was not much help.

If they continued like this, it was certain that it would not take long for Yulian to be cut by this guy’s sword. That much was certain. However, the young man did not push Yulian any further and just maintained that level of attack. But seeing as how the murderous aura was still present, it looked like the young man may have felt a strange sensation from Yulian.

Yulian and Haisha, who had to use all of their efforts to defend against the young man, could feel their sweat drenching their clothes.

‘This is not an enemy I can defeat. He’s at the level of “Palhal”

that master once showed me. Where did such a warrior come from.....am I going to die like this today?’

Yulian could not help but think of all sorts of different things as the young man’s sword continued to threaten his life.

“Luff!”

Even though the opponent had not been using all of their strength, Yulian had to overcome the border of life and death tens of times. Just as Yulian was about to run out of energy, he could see the silhouette of a person in the far away light who yelled loudly before running towards them.

The young man who was in the light immediately stopped his sword but continued to stare at Yulian and Haisha, and the two of them had no thoughts whatsoever of attacking him.

There was just too much of a difference in strength.

“Luff.”

The second person, who had brown hair and was wearing a flowing green robe, was a young man who seemed to be about the same age as the first person. He started to speak while holding onto the first man’s arm.

“Wait a bit.”

The young man with brown hair pulled the fierce dude towards him and asked Yulian a question.

“How did a person end up here? I’m sure I put a forcefield around the entrance. How did you end up in this place?”

The brown haired man asked, as if he could not fathom how they got there. This was a dungeon not many people knew about, and the only entrance was protected by a forcefield he had put up together with the old hag from the Magic Tower. That was the reason their enemies, the people of Chaos, could never enter.

That was the reason he was extremely shocked that people,

wearing outfits he had never seen before, had appeared in front of them.

Yulian felt like he could talk to this person and respectfully greeted him before speaking.

“My name is Yulian Provoke, a warrior of Pareia. Please accept our apologies for entering into an Advanced Magician’s dungeon without approval. However, we had entered into an accident of falling inside of the desert’s quicksand, and ended up in here. We had no choice or say in the matter.”

Yulian was able to confirm that the person in front of him was the Advanced Magician. If he wasn’t, he could not explain all the things around them.

Even that wild warrior stopped his sword at one word from the green robed man.

“Pareia? Magician? Desert’s quicksand? Fall inside? Into here?”

“.....”

Watching Yulian and Haisha looking at each other unable to answer the multitude of questions he asked, the young man thought to himself for a second before his eyes lit up like he realized what happened.

“Ah! Now that I think about it, the Crimson Desert must be on top of this. Then you must be.... People who live in the desert, right?”

“Yes, you are correct.”

“I know what quicksand is. You faced a dangerous situation. My name is Mai, and I am researching something similar to a magician. You must have been shocked because of this friend of mine.”

The man named Mai seemed to have a refreshing personality and showed a friendly smile before bowing his head and apologizing to

Yulian and Haisha.

“No, there is no need to apologize. Although we had no choice about being here, we are still intruders who showed up without an invitation.”

Listening to Yulian respond while also bowing, Mai put a hand on the man named Luff before speaking again.

“I am in the middle of something extremely important right now, so this friend is protecting me. Your skills are magnificent. There are only a handful of people even in the continent who can block Luff’s sword.”

‘If there are only a handful of people even in the continent who can defend against him, just how strong is he?’

Yulian could not fathom Luff’s strength, and could only nod as Mai continued on.

“Then, where did you come in through? The entrance is completely sealed, and since you said you arrived through quicksand, the location of it....”

As Yulian and Haisha pointed behind them and took the lead, Mai followed after them and the man named Luff stuck close, right next to Mai. The moment Luff stared at Yulian and Haisha, the two of them felt goosebumps all over their body and stopped their walking.

“Luff! They are not bad people.”

Mai must have felt Luff’s stare as well, as he quickly scolded Luff before speaking to Yulian.

“I’m sorry. This friend’s mental state is currently not normal because of something that happened. In addition, I told him that anybody who shows up is a bad person...please see it in your hearts to understand.”

As Mai respectfully apologized again, Yulian and Haisha looked at

Luff. There were no openings or wasted movements.

‘How much longer must I train to show that level of expertise?’

His training was definitely not complete; Yulian had not even mastered half of what his master had taught him. Yulian felt that when he reached that age, he would be able to fight on par with Luff, which made him able to accept the loss without embarrassment.

“Your martial arts, who taught it to you? That is not mana that they speak of in the continent. It’s a mental force known as Ki.”

As Luff asked Yulian, the one who was surprised was not Yulian, but rather Mai, who was standing next to Luff.

“Luff, are you able to remember?”

This was his friend who could not speak at higher than a five year old child’s level for a very long time.

The fact that he was asking this question made Mai feel like Luff was able to recall some of his training methods that Mai had never seen before.

Luff looked at Mai and shook his head no before continuing.

“I don’t know. That person is weird. He swings his sword the same way my master taught me. That is why I did not kill him quickly.”

This must have been the reason Luff was filled with murderous aura but did not kill Yulian and Haisha earlier.

Book 1-5.8 The Current World

“No, that’s not it. According to my master, there is no end to learning. The moment you think it is done, something new to learn shows up.”

Luff squatted down next to Yulian and spoke while drawing a weird diagram on the ground.

“Ah! So that’s how it is. I’ve faced many bottlenecks because my master has gone on a trip, but listening to Luff-nim, there’s something I’ve figured out.”

Yulian also started to draw some squiggly lines while responding, and Luff started to smile while looking at the picture.

“Is there anything else you want to ask? I’ve been here for way too long. Even when I ask Mai to go out, he says no. But if I go out on my own, Mai will be in danger. That’s why I cannot go out on my own. So having you here makes it more fun.”

Because Chun Myung Hoon had not returned for two years, the progress speed of Yulian’s training has almost completely stalled, making him frustrated.

For Luff, he had been in the cave already for five years, and was extremely bored.

In the beginning, Mai wanted Yulian to stay just a few days for Luff. He thought that Yulian speaking with Luff might help Luff to regain his memory.

Yulian could not reject Mai’s request as Mai knew how to get out of there.

How things have changed. Now it was rather Yulian who wanted to stay here longer.

The things Yulian could not ask because Chun Myung Hoon was not around, Luff was able to easily answer.

Yulian got excited as the bottlenecks he had been facing were asked and answered one by one, and sparring with Luff, he started to realize his own strengths and weaknesses.

Luff found it to be entertaining and worked hard to answer as many questions Yulian had as he could, and that led to the two of them becoming very friendly with each other.

From the beginning, Mai could not understand what they were talking about, and even though Haisha knew some of the basics after being taught by Yulian, the level of discussion was so high that he did not have any enlightenment.

Thinking that too many days were going by, Yulian asked Mai to let Haisha return first to make sure the tribe can stop worrying about them.

Mai created a magic circle to send Haisha back, and once Haisha was gone, Yulian could finally stop worrying about the tribe and focus on sparring with Luff to train himself.

About one month since arriving at this location. Yulian felt the need to leave. Although he wanted to continue to stay with Luff to spar and learn more, if he stayed too long, even if he was safe, his family would be worried, and even Red Storm's training and situation would be disturbed.

When Yulian shared his thoughts with Mai, Mai nodded his head as if to say he understood.

"I'm sorry, I kept you imprisoned here for too long for my own greed."

During this past month, Yulian had also gotten close with Mai, and since Mai was close to ten years older than Yulian, he had no problem speaking casually to Yulian.

"Not at all. I stayed because I wanted to. But Luff-nim still....?"

"He's gotten much better. Haven't you noticed that he talks a lot more now? Although that does make me a little more tired."

Yulian could see Mai's face that was slightly smiling was full of fatigue. He had asked Mai what he was doing countless times over the past month, but each time, Mai just smiled and avoided the question.

"You look very tired."

Listening to Yulian's concern for his well-being, Mai waived his hand no and answered.

"It's something I do everyday. It's also something that needs to get done."

"Just what is it that you are doing in there?"

Mai was about to avoid answering the question again before something popped up in his head. If there is such a pathway in the desert, someone else might show up here making things complicated.

"I have a favor to ask of you."

"Please ask."

"The quicksand that you fell through. Is there no way to completely close off that entrance?"

"Truthfully speaking, the chance of someone falling through there is pretty low. There are many monsters in the Monster's Desert, and this is somewhere with quite a few large monsters as well. As such, you may find one person who walks through here a month. In addition, since this is a quicksand that does not flow on the outside, it'll just look like the rest of the sand when you look at it. So if we tried to hide the entrance, it'll just make it more eye-catching. So you probably don't have to worry about anybody else coming in here."

"If it is meant to happen, no matter how impossible it seems, it is going to happen. The people that I am facing against are those type of people. That will end up a key weakness of this place. Sigh~."

Yulian was curious about who Mai was worried about facing, even with all of his magnificent abilities. He also could not understand what Mai was doing that put him on the edge like this.

Mai let out a long sigh before looking at Yulian and speaking.

“I said something I shouldn’t have.”

“If it is something I can help with, I want to help you.”

“Hmm....., since you say you are a desert warrior, I may end up being helped by you.”

Mai made up his mind to share at least part of the story with Yulian.

After being with him for a month, he felt that Yulian was both cheerful and serious at the same time.

When considering the fact that he even considers who he is talking to and is respectful in his tone, and the fact that he is the successor for a desert tribe, he might end up a brilliant ally if he shared at least some of the details.

Mai sat down on the ground and started to draw a picture. Yulian sat in front of him and watched him draw.

Mai’s hand was drawing some sort of a map. He drew a large lake and some mountain ranges, then drew the names of the ocean and some large islands, and then started to draw the borders.

Mai’s memory must be great as he was able to accurately place the names of many places on the map he drew on the ground.

‘Huh.....’

Watching Mai who looked like he was moving without thinking, Yulian looked at Mai in amazement.

Mai looked at the picture one more time and smiled at Yulian who was looking at him with amazement.

He was pretty laid-back, as if there were more than just one or

two people who looked at him like that.

“This is the map of the entire world. Well, unless there has been some major tectonic shifts in the last five years. Where we are should be about here.”

The place Mai was pointing to the was dead center point of the location labeled as the Red Desert.

Yulian was oddly a bit disappointed that the map did not contain the names of the desert tribes.

However, since the desert tribes have been at war with each other for the past hundreds of years, Yulian had a bitter smile on his face as it was probably impossible to even correctly label where all the tribes were.

“The situation is extremely complicated, but there’s no reason for you to know everything, so I will explain it pretty briefly. The current world is already heading towards the end. What I’m trying to say is, under the laws of nature, it is time to end this world and create a new world.”

“What?”

“Don’t ask any question. If you know, it’ll just give you a major headache. If fate has it be, then you’ll end up hearing it even if it gives you a headache, but that time is not now. Just listen.”

“I understand.”

At Yulian’s response, Mai started to speak again.

“At the furthest northern corner, there is a continent we do not know about. We call this the Ancient Continent. That place is full of monsters like this desert. That is the continent of the past generation. On that continent, there is a place known as the Magic Tower which is about one hundred stories high. It’s made of magic. The people there try to follow the laws of nature. If you follow the sequence of the world, then God will not forsake us.”

As Yulian nodded his head, Mai pointed his finger next to a large island below.

“This island is known as Chaos...”

Book 1-5.9 Prepare for Trouble

“This island is called Chaos. It is where the patriarch of Chaos lives. They are enemies of the Magic Tower. They believe that the human world is built by the powers of humans and that all you need is human potential to make everything happen. They aren’t necessarily atheists, but they believe that order and god, all of this was created by humans. They aren’t completely wrong.”

“I understand the gist of it. Then Mai-nim, you must be on one of those two sides?”

At Yulian’s question, Mai didn’t know whether or not to share it with Yulian and had a worried expression on his face.

“Truth be told, I don’t like either of them. However, I am here on my own will. The work that I am doing is to seal something here so that it cannot use its power. I guess it’s a bit complicated of an explanation. If you think about it slowly, you’ll understand what I mean.”

Yulian thought about it for a while before nodding his head.

“Alright, that explains what I am doing here, and as for what you can do to help, prepare yourself for the chaos. The desert might end up the most dangerous place in the world.”

“What do you mean?”

“I am unable to seal it on my own anymore. I am doing what I can to suspend it as long as I can, but you can’t prevent the natural order of things from happening with just human strength.”

Mai started to draw some lines from the center of the desert.

“Prepare for the chaos of the world. That might be a war or monsters spreading across the continent. I don’t know what kind of mayhem will occur. If it ends up that the number of monsters go up significantly, the center point is this desert. That’s because this evil being is sealed right here.”

Yulian's eyes opened wide.

“There will be more monsters than there are now?”

“Monsters continue to regenerate endlessly. The time for humans to rule the world has ended. Rather than saying that, it's more proper to say that they'll be purified as a new type of people and be reborn. Either way, if you are a desert warrior, prepare for this chaos. I believe that people can change their fate. If even one more person prepare for the chaos, that will be what helps me out.”

Yulian could not come to his senses after Mai's unbelievable words. It was as if Mai was playing a prank on him or telling him an old folktale.

“Do not take my words as a joke; I hope you prepare properly.”

As if he could tell what Yulian was thinking, Mai said that to dig the stake deep into Yulian's heart. Yulian nodded his head and replied.

“My mind is everywhere after suddenly hearing such unbelievable story. However, there are no cons to preparing. You said the monsters will spread from the desert?”

“Since the hole is here. From a long time ago, there were people who sacrificed themselves to seal this thing, and now, I am the one sealing it. I believe that the monsters would still mainly remain around this area.”

After listening to Mai, Yulian now understood why the monsters stayed in the Monster's Desert without leaving it. The man in front of him was responsible for keeping it that way.”

“How much time does the desert have to prepare?”

Mai tilted his head before answering.

“I'm not sure of the exact amount of time. All I can tell is that the seal is starting to get too strong for me to handle. Don't put on

such a serious face since the world is not ending right away, but just start to prepare.”

“Hmm...I feel like I learned such a large and important truth about the world.”

“If you end up finding everything out like I have, it feels like it’ll break your head. It’s better to resolve all things simply. Prepare your defenses well since you don’t know when war will break out or monsters will leave the desert. See, how simple is that? Right?”

Yulian nodded his head at Mai’s words. Either way, if he achieves his dream, there won’t be much of a problem.

“I understand.”

“Looking at you makes me feel happy. Looking at Finn makes me happy; you’re the same.”

“Who is Finn?”

“The crown prince of the Rojini Kingdom.”

“What?”

Yulian opened his mouth in shock.

“You know him?”

“It’s one of the Eastern continent’s strongest nations.”

“It’s not even that surprising. What’s more surprising is the fact that in this tiny area, there you, the prince of the desert kingdom, and me, who still has some level of respect in the world, along with a swordsman who can instantly slash low level monsters.”

“Still.....”

“You ended up a person who knows after listening to my story. We call ourselves the special people. If you learn a little bit more about what is going on, your solidarity with the special people will increase. That’s because we have to work together to survive.

Since you are part of the desert royalty, I will give you a small gift. If you need a line to connect you to the continent, sell my name. Whether it is the Eastern or Western continent, if you say my name, there will be some kings who flinch. Of course, you must never tell them that I am here.”

Watching Mai draw the entire map of the world from his head and listening to him talk about how his name alone would surprise the powers of the continent, Yulian could not help but debate if this was all just lies.

To be lies, Mai’s tone of voice was too casual and he was speaking as it was certain. But to call it the truth, isn’t this too farfetched of a situation?

Looking at Yulian’s expression, Mai laughed before speaking.

“Don’t have that type of eyes; later, just say it to any of the continent’s powerful royal families. All you have to tell them is that Mai Dreeno and Luff Micklop sends their regards.”

“I understand.”

Mai nodded his head at Yulian’s answer and spoke again.

“I think I’ve been talking for too long after saying I’ll keep it short.”

“It’s something that’s important for me to hear.”

“It’ll be best if I don’t have to come find you, but if the seal ends up breaking, I will come to visit you in the desert. If Luff knew you were leaving, he would hold onto you to make you stay, so leave while he is sleeping.”

“But I have to at least say goodbye.....”

Yulian wanted to see Luff, who had been giving him so much pointers, one last time, but Mai stopped him from doing so.

“Saying your goodbyes will make it harder for you to leave. Nobody can handle Luff’s strength, and since he knows the

amount of time I need to cast a magic circle and how I do it, he will definite obstruct it.”

“I guess I have no choice. If you have not come to visit before I have achieved my dream and prepared all the defenses, I will come once again.”

“Do what you have to do. Then I will start the casting.”

Yulian nodded his head and Mai started to draw the magic circle and throw some magic powder to prepare for Yulian’s teleportation.

“Huh? What are you doing?”

Luff saw the light pillars shooting up around Yulian from far away, and started to head over, recognizing that the fun playmate he had was leaving.

“Don’t go!”

“See you next time, Luff-nim!”

“Don’t go! Don’t go!”

Luff looked like he had created a deep bond with Yulian and continued to cry out to Yulian to not leave. This made Yulian upset. If he was going to leave, he wanted to leave together.

“Look, look. I told you he wouldn’t let you go if he knew. I’ll visit you with Luff to play later, so work hard.”

Yulian could not take his eyes off of Luff, but nodded his head at Mai.

“Teleport.”

Mai’s casting ended and once he said the chant, Yulian instantly noticed that the scenery in front of him changed.

Hot sun. A world of yellow sand. It was the desert.

Book 1-6.1 Discussions with the Empire (I)

Conspiracy

Please get rid of him.

For many years, the desert was peaceful. Even Pareia and Shuarei, who would fight each other so often that if they didn't fight for a month it would be considered a miracle, were oddly not fighting with each other. Anybody who knew the desert well would be thinking that this was very peculiar. It was not something they had seen in fifty years.

Thanks to the sudden peace, the desert tribes could focus on external more than internal, so to be specific, they could focus on the Eastern and Western continents. That was a very important job.

The people they would pay tribute to would change based on who was the strongest force on the continent. Even if they are all terrible people, it was still better to work with someone they knew even a little bit. If the power ended up changing, the relationship they would have built up until then would all fall apart. As a result, many were hoping for the status quo to remain.

The situation in the Eastern Continent was pretty severe. War was ready to break out between the Rojini Kingdom and the Silence Empire, which would be considered the strongest force even with the Eastern and Western continents combined.

If the two large powers were to go into war, that essentially meant that a continental war would result from it. The two powers ruled over many areas, and because the two powers shared a complicated alliance with each other, the cause of the war was never determined. However, it was most likely the case that the Silence Empire first started the war, as they were afraid of a takeover by the Rojini kingdom, that was gaining strength day

after day.

“Oombambaba, oombambaba.”

A humming noise on beat with the rhythm.

The desert warriors created a large circle with a bonfire in the middle and danced around it, stomping their feet and waiving their arms.

The warriors' dance that was full of laughter and passion.

People were laughing and chatting. Even while living a difficult life, people knew how to enjoy these types of celebrations.

At the moment three moons were up high in the sky, there were some people plotting with each other in secret. However, the desert night was dark.

“How much longer must we wait?”

A person wearing many layers of thick veil from underneath their eyes asked. Listening to the voice, it seemed like a woman and not a man.

The large man responded.

“The Glow is healthy, so why are you so rushed? Just wait. The matters of the kingdom are complicated right now so we can't apply any pressure.”

“The first-born's influence is starting to get much stronger. If it continues like this, we won't be able to do anything at all.”

The man waived his hand downward, as if telling the woman, who was speaking in an impatient manner, to calm down.

“Just wait. I am trying my best as well.”

“Don't forget. The first-born has dreams about unifying the desert. If he becomes the Glow, even you can't claim that you'll be in a better situation than you are in now.”

“Isn't that why I am helping push you forward, madam?”

“Please hurry and put some pressure on him. Take care of him even one day faster if you can.”

“Don’t worry about it. I’ll do my best to make madam’s wish come true before the year is over.”

The woman wearing the veil stood up from her seat and did not forget to say one last thing before she left.

“I will be waiting. Don’t forget. He is continuing to get stronger every day.”

As the woman walked out of her paoe, the man let out a scoff before leisurely pouring and drinking alcohol while muttering.

“It’s because there is conflict within the desert, as well as internally within the tribes that even with this much national power, they end up as our meal. So sad.”

The laugh of the man who was considering the desert to be the mouse while the kingdoms were the cat started to get deeper and deeper...

‘Damn it. That bastard who is full of crap.’

Yulian was pouring all sorts of swear words at the fatty in front of him.

For his father, Glow Baguna’s forty-ninth birthday, the Silence Empire, as a gesture of celebration, sent the damned fatty, Janet Le Borrea, to visit them.

Although they should be thankful that he came to visit, rather than being a gesture of celebration, he was more like a bandit who came to forcefully rob the tribe.

Not only was he asking for an increase in the amount of black water, now, he was even asking them to provide warriors to fight on their behalf. Yulian was so angry he wanted to rip open the fatty’s stomach to see how much oil would flow out of it.

“In return, we will provide you with twice the amount of iron. I look forward to Glow Baguna-nim’s wise decision.”

Glow Baguna must have been extremely agitated at Janet’s words as well, as he started to shout.

“Our warriors are not cheap mercenaries for the continent! The warriors fight for the tribe and to protect their pride, not for that type of materialistic gain.”

Janet continued to smile as he tried to convince Baguna.

“This is for the sake of the powerful Pareia tribe as well.”

“How is our warriors shedding blood for your Empire to our benefit!”

As Yulian could not hold back and shouted at Janet, Janet bowed towards Yulian before answering.

“Dear Young Glow who will become the desert conqueror as him name indicates, please think about it deeply before becoming angry. This is a war that our great Silence Empire will win in the end. At the end of the war, our great Silence Empire will remember it like this. The strong Pareia tribe of the desert shed their blood for our Empire.”

‘Even then you will continue to do whatever you please.’

Yulian was thinking like that internally before coldly asking.

“And?”

It’ll not be just a trading relationship but one where blood was shed for the other. Do you think our Silence Empire will just sit back and watch the future battles between Pareia and Shuarei? Of course not. At that time, our powerful cavalry and magicians would support Pareia.”

Janet’s words could seem very tempting if you think about it, however, Glow Baguna shook his head in Yulian’s place.

“There are no tribes who pull in the powers of the continent for

the wars of the desert. The wars of the desert are for the people of the desert. And if we are being honest with each other, we have no warriors we can lend for your need. If we had warriors to spare, we would definitely help our friends the Silence Empire, however, we are currently in a situation where we cannot move any of our warriors.”

“Glow Baguna, this is an opportunity. Other than Pareia, the rest of the areas under our Empire’s control are itching to provide the most assistance to our empire. The reason this type of opportunity has presented itself is because of the strength and valiancy of the Pareia warriors. Please consider this carefully. Wouldn’t it all come back later?”

There was a bone hidden in Janet’s friendly words.

‘Will return later? These bastards are now plainly threatening us.’

Baguna clenched his fists tightly underneath the table.

If Pareia’s most eastern Oasis was not so close to the border of the Silence Empire, he would be able to strongly push back, however, that was not the case.

The desert is a difficult place to attack, however, the Eastern Oasis was so close to the border that it would not be impossible to raid it.

“I will think about it.”

At Baguna’s answer, Janet smiled inside. There was just one more issue to bring up.

“Now I have something to ask regarding the Young Glow.....”

As his name came out of Janet’s mouth, Yulian and Baguna paid careful attention to see what else Janet had to say.

“Isn’t the Young Glow the person who will eventually follow the footsteps of Glow Baguna? Then while Glow Baguna is still

healthy, why not send the Young Glow to our Silence Empire to study abroad surrounded by advanced technology and literature?”

Baguna’s insides were starting to boil. They were calling it studying abroad, but wasn’t this their way of saying they will hold Yulian hostage?

“Do you think that makes sense?”

“I can guarantee that the Young Glow will see many new things and learn a lot. I am saying this thinking about Pareia’s future. Please don’t take it the wrong way.”

“There are still many things that he has not seen and learned in the desert. Furthermore, Yulian is, as you said, the Young Glow. That holds a special meaning to us in Pareia.”

“Glow Baguna, please think about.....”

As Janet was trying to use elaborate and complicated words to convince Baguna, the young man who had been sitting next to him with an expression full of complaint spoke as if he was shouting.

“Damn, you have a lot to say! You barbarians dare to disregard the good will of our Silence Empire!”

Listening to the young man’s words, Janet’s smiling expression, which had become perfect after years of experience, cracked.

Janet’s face even turned pale as he looked back and forth at Baguna and Yulian while feeling like he was walking on eggshells.

“Your highness, prince, your words....., the valiancy of Pareia crosses the desert to reach all the way to our Silence Empire. Such excessive words.....”

“Quiet, Janet. I only heard about Pareia after being forced to come here at my brother’s command. Furthermore, we came here to order, not to request like this.”

Janet felt his world crumbling as he started to curse the Crown Prince, Shaone Fury Silence III, who ordered the immature second

prince to go with him.

Book 1-6.2 Discussions with the Empire (II)

Looking at it in terms of diplomacy, sending the second prince to a dangerous area like this was showing that their powerful empire cares a lot about the tribe. It was a way of showing that they were being respectful, and in addition, if the tribe didn't listen to their demands, it was putting pressure onto the tribe that they were not giving face to the empire's prince. It was a great diplomatic tactic, however, the immature prince ended up being poison instead.

'This damn idiot of a prince! Because of you, we just lost thousands of the fiercest warriors available! In addition, the potential danger..... what are you going to do if they end up shaking hands to work together with the Rojini Kingdom.....'

Janet was internally swearing at Shareulo Fury Silence, who was sitting arrogantly next to him.

Shareulo Fury Silence was the type of prince who was useless, other than having the blood of the King in his veins.

If you don't have the abilities, you need to know how to shut up, however, he didn't even have that much common sense. Even within the empire, he was causing a headache to the royal family for doing whatever he wants and stealing other people's wealth to use as he pleased.

However, among the royal family, the older brother, the crown prince, Shaone Fury Silence III, felt sorry for his immature younger brother, that he forced Shareulo to do all sorts of things, trying to make a man out of him. But Shareulo couldn't even understand just how hard his brother was trying to help him, and would only complain and haphazardly do whatever he was ordered to do.

Crown Prince Shaone knew that Pareia would be extremely repulsed by their request, but would end up having to send over the desert warriors. That's why he sent his brother here with a

veteran like Janet, so that they can solidify his brother's status for the future.

Even if you are a prince, if you had no merits, you end up falling down and becoming a useless person. In order to build up his brother's merit, he sent him on a mission that was guaranteed to succeed.

Understanding the crown prince's reason for sending the second prince with him, Janet spoke with the prince before this meeting and reminded him over and over to not to scratch the pride of the desert warriors. Even then, this damned idiot of a prince ended up causing a big issue.

Janet looked at the Glow and his son with a worried look on his face. Glow Baguna's face had become completely red, and his son abruptly stood up and started to shout.

"You may be the prince of an empire, but right now, if we were to use your language, you are in front of a king! Don't you think your words are too insulting?!"

Glow Baguna must have been extremely angry as well, as he did not stop Yulian and just continued to watch. There was a limit to being patient. A desert warrior's pride is as high as the sky; you don't even need to talk about the pride of the Glow who rules over them.

"Are you saying you will attack me! You must want to lose your neck for treason."

Shareulo did not back down and also stood up from his seat and shouted at the top of his lungs. Yulian clenched his fists tightly before speaking.

"This is not your empire but Pareia of the desert. Who do you think you are speaking in front of when talking about treason!"

Who would dare to talk back to him in the empire? Shareulo was not afraid of anyone who was not his father or brother.

Clang.

Shareulo drew his sword from his waist and the sword directly started to stab towards Yulian.

Baguna was completely surprised, and Janet was stupefied. He knew this prince was a moron, but he would have never dreamt that he was this bad! If he was even 1/1000th similar to his brother the crown prince, he would never do something like this.

“Yulian!”

“Prince!”

Even in the midst of Baguna and Janet both shouting, Shareulo’s sword continued to stab towards Yulian.

The moment he thought Yulian’s waist was bending backwards, a large mass of iron flashed in front of his eyes and effortlessly smacked Shareulo’s sword away.

Yulian could not hold it in anymore and lifted up his greatsword to send Shareulo’s sword flying.

Shareulo’s sword, which had been struck by the greatsword, flew high up in the paoe before flying outside.

‘When they said the current Pareia’s princes were extremely talented, they weren’t kidding.’

Being a diplomat, Janet grew up as a civil servant and knew no martial arts. However, he was someone who had met many weapon merchants, warriors, and knights of many foreign nations.

He had seen many knights during his life, but there were not many who could instantly and effortlessly move a large sword like Yulian did. Just looking at it, you could tell that the greatsword was heavy enough to be difficult for one person to even just lift up.

Watching his weapon being flung away from his hand, Shareulo turned red in embarrassment as he started to shout.

“How dare you swing your sword towards me! You must be

begging to die! With one word from me, I can make sure a barbarian tribe like this disappears overnight!”

“What the fuck do you think you’re saying!”

Yulian was extremely angry to the point his face turned red. At the moment he was about to move his greatsword, Janet felt that if he let this continue any further, something serious would happen and quickly spoke.

“Prince Shareulo, I will not allow you to continue speaking like this. Don’t forget that I have been given the full authority of this voyage. This was a command given directly to me by the wise crown prince Shaone Fury Silence III, working in the will of the great emperor Shaone Fury Silence II.”

Shareulo glared at Janet who was scolding him using his father and brother’s full names, before silently walking out of the paoe. Even Shareulo could not go against the will of his father and brother.

As Shareulo walked out like that, Janet used his handkerchief to wipe the sweat off his forehead before bowing ninety degrees in front of Baguna and speaking respectfully.

“I ask for Glow Baguna’s understanding. The prince must have been extremely tired from the journey and full of irritation.”

“You’re telling me your royal family insults anybody and swings their sword at anybody when they are irritated?!”

Listening to Baguna’s voice full of anger, Janet knew that he would not be able to take anything back from this visit. Rather, they needed to give a lot of things to calm them down.

To lose Pareia right now meant they will not have a source of the black water they desperately needed for the war. Furthermore, no matter how you looked at it, this was their fault. Even using all the flowery language he had learned being a diplomat for a long time could not cover that truth up.

“I, Janet, apologize on his behalf for insulting the honorable name of Pareia. I will definitely pay you back for causing damage to its name.”

Yulian yelled at Janet’s response.

“Do you really think you can pay to make up for damaging a warrior’s pride?!”

“I’m truly sorry. I can only hope for understanding and forgiveness from Glow Baguna, the Benevolent Eye.”

Glow Baguna shook his head at Janet’s actions. He was definitely a flawless diplomat. As an envoy of the Empire, they could stick their nose up in the air and do as they pleased, however, this diplomat did not show that type of personality. He was a veteran who made it sound like he was compromising with you while still taking everything he wanted to take. He would rather have a diplomat like the moronic prince from earlier, as they would be easier to deal with.

Since Baguna did not plan to start a war with the Silence Empire, he decided that he will pretend to lose and give a bit before sending them back quietly. For at least a year, they would not be able to make any types of demands.

Baguna gestured with his hand to stop Yulian from saying something again.

“I suppose the prince may have said something like that as he has not had the opportunity to get to know us. It could also be because he is a healthy young man.”

“I, Janet, bow my head in thanks at Glow Baguna, the Benevolent Eye’s act of goodwill.”

“Today is my birthday. Although something bad has happened on a happy day, since you have come a long way, celebrate my birthday, and enjoy before you leave.”

“Since you mention it, we brought a present for Glow Baguna.

We are providing both wagons of iron that we brought today as Glow Baguna-nim's birthday present. I hope you accept it with a happy heart."

Janet clearly knew what Baguna was thinking on the inside, but he put on a smiling expression and played along. That was how diplomacy worked. He'll end up returning empty handed after giving up all the iron they brought with them to trade, but to end it at this level was great news.

Yulian was very upset listening to his father and Janet.

"I'm sure father is even more upset. To receive this type of insult but need to hold back and restrain himself....."

He was also saddened by the fact that one day, it would be on him to take that kind of insult and hold back with a smile.

At that point, Baguna called Yulian.

"Yulian."

"Yes, father."

Baguna looked at Yulian for a long time before moving his lips. It looked like he wanted to say something but was holding back, before he said his son's name again.

"Yulian."

"Yes."

"Don't forget."

"I will not forget."

Father and son. The two men's eyes were burning red.

Book 1-6.3 Incident with the Prince (I)

Pareia's Glow Baguna Provoke's birthday celebration made everyone in the Pareia tribe very happy.

Truthfully speaking, the Glow's birthday celebration wasn't really about innocently celebrating the Glow's birth; it was a means to bring the tribe's people together. If that was not the case, there was no way Baguna would want to celebrate his birthday so extravagantly.

However, because Baguna was a wise Glow, everyone in Pareia were truly celebrating his birthday, laughing and chatting away all night long.

In one of their hands was a large glass of alcohol, and in the other, a large piece of meat. Even the women were not being shy and participating.

Other than the women who were preparing and delivering the food, everybody else was acting the same way as the men were and enjoying the celebration.

However, an incident occurred.

In the middle of a large area was where the largest bonfire was located, with many smaller bonfires burning around it. It was the location people were gathered and happily dancing the Fenaca (a traditional Pareian dance where you make a large circle and a small circle and dance around).

Shareulo was not happy because of the arrogant punk and Janet's declaration. Janet had come to him later asking for his forgiveness and used his eloquent speech to convince Shareulo to take part in the celebration.

The desert alcohol was tasty, and their dance was also very pleasing to the eye. Since Shareulo liked drinking alcohol and playing around, Janet wanted to help Shareulo feel better.

At Janet's goading, Shareulo was drinking and watching the people dance, making him actually feel a little excited.

As he was in the middle of emptying his glass, his eyes suddenly turned round.

A woman wearing a yellow blouse and matching skirt was spinning around dancing. Every time she spun around, her long red hair was creating a circle, forming a unique harmony with her yellow clothes. She was so beautiful you couldn't help but open your eyes wide.

Maybe if Janet was next to him, he would have stopped him. However, Janet was not there, as he was far away trying to handle Baguna who was watching the celebration in peace.

Shareulo started to walk towards the beautiful woman. He then forcefully grabbed the beautiful woman's hand.

Having her hand grabbed by someone in the middle of her dance, Grace was surprised and stared at the responsible person.

‘What the.....’

Once she realized who the perpetrator was, Grace slightly frowned. It was someone she knew.

“I think you've had too much to drink, your highness.”

Grace spoke to Shareulo with a bright expression and calm voice, as if she was trying to console him. Shareulo responded in a slightly slurred speech.

“I did drink a bit. But who might you be?”

“Please let go of this hand before we continue chatting.”

As Grace slightly turned her wrist to move her hand out of Shareulo's grip, Shareulo quickly grabbed her wrist again.

“I would never imagine that there would be a woman who would resist my touch. Do you even know who I am? I am a prince of the Great Silence Empire.”

Shareulo's lecherous personality was starting to come out. And of all people, against Grace Nellisi, the future Mother of Pareia.

"If I was single, I would have been happy to play with you, however, I am already a married woman."

Grace was holding back her anger quite a bit as she said this. She thought that this moronic prince would step back based on her words. However, there was a reason he was called the moronic prince even in the kingdom.

He was completely drunk and spoke with a red face.

"The women here care about virtue? How funny."

"You are extremely drunk. Please go in and rest."

As Grace tried to remove herself from his grip once more, Shareulo put more power into the hand holding Grace.

Grace tried to forcefully remove her hand, but Shareulo had a surprisingly strong grip, and she could not free herself without using a lot of force. Of course, if it was anybody else, she would not have had any trouble. However, she needed to take into consideration Shareulo's identity.

"Your highness, please let go of my hand. All of the daughters of the desert are precious, however, I am the wife of Yulian Provoke, the Young Glow of Pareia."

After hearing that this gorgeous woman was the wife of the arrogant punk who embarrassed him earlier, he held onto her wrist even tighter.

"So what? If you come to me, all the riches that you desire will follow you. Stop pretending to be an innocent sheep."

Grace could not hold back anymore and was about to use her free left hand when Shareulo suddenly pulled her hand and forcefully embraced her."

"Ah!"

Grace let out a scream in shock, and the many tribe members around them stopped their dance to see what was going on.

For a brief moment, people were questioning what was going on, but a few warriors from Chalna Penaka's camp who realized what was going on came running towards them. Red Storm's Triquel was among the warriors.

Surrounded by the murmurs of the crowd, the angry warriors started to head towards Shareulo and Grace. Other warriors who realized the situation later started to head there as well.

Seeing that something weird was going on, Shareulo's knights also started to rush towards Shareulo.

In this inevitably surprising situation, Grace thought about continuing like this and seeing blood, but quickly shouted.

“Stop!”

At the same time, Grace ducked and spun around while pushing Shareulo's arm with her right hand. Shareulo felt his body falling forward and needed to let go of Grace in order to prevent himself from falling on his face.

As Shareulo was flailing both of his arms around and stepping forward to prevent himself from falling, the desert people were laughing at him as they watched. ‘As expected of our future mother of Pareia!’ This was the thought going through many of their heads.

In the end, Shareulo looked like an idiot as he faceplanted into the sand. Quickly getting himself up, his face turned red with extreme embarrassment. He could not think clearly anymore after being embarrassed twice in one day.

“Immediately restrain that bitch and make her kneel in front of me!”

As Shareulo yelled towards all the knights who were standing around him, the knights looked at Shareulo with a blank

expression.

They were the knights of the Silence Empire. Furthermore, they were the Royal Knights (the title only the best knights of the Silence Empire could receive), and cared a lot about their honor.

From the beginning, they were embarrassed that they had to serve such a prince, but to order the knights who were supposed to protect women to restrain a woman and make her kneel? Was he truly a prince of the Silence Empire?

“Can you not hear my order?! I said, immediately restrain that bitch and make her kneel!”

As Shareulo yelled again, the Royal Knight in charge of the mission spoke up.

“Your highness, I believe you have been drinking too much. I wonder if it would be better to discuss this tomorrow morning?”

“Are you trying to make me look like a fool?”

As Shareulo continued to yell, the Royal Knight looked at his subordinate knights around him. Everybody had a perplexed look on their faces.

“Are you going to disobey the prince’s order?”

Watching Shareulo who was yelling again, the surrounding knights all let out a sigh internally. The first order of the knights was unquestioned loyalty to the royal family. Especially as Royal Knights, this was extremely important.

Although they did not want to do it, they slowly turned their bodies and looked at Grace. Their expressions all looked apologetic. They had to use force against such a beautiful lady.

As the Royal Knights headed towards her, Red Storm warriors immediately stood in front of Grace. Although they did not have any weapons on them as it was a time of celebration, they were planning on blocking the knights even with their bare hands.

“Please step aside, valiant desert warriors of Red Storm.”

Hearing Grace’s cold voice, the warriors defending her turned their heads to look at her. As Grace nodded her head, the Red Storm warriors looked at each other before awkwardly moving aside. However, they were ready to step back in immediately if need be.

The Royal Knights looked at Grace with confusion as the warriors stepped away. They could hear Grace enunciate each word clearly in the continent’s language in their ears.

“I guess men of the Silence Empire have no problems assaulting women who are married?”

The knights’ faces turned bright red. The Royal Knight who tried to persuade Shareulo stepped forward and respectfully spoke to Grace.

“We ask for the lady’s forgiveness. We are knights who must obey the command of the royal family. However, if you stay still, we will put our honor on the line and make sure that you are safe.”

“Our daughters of the desert trust strong men and warriors. However, we detest men who are strong but have no pride. Do you even know the honor that you are talking about?”

At this point, the knight could care less about what Grace had to say.

‘She’s right, but the fact that we are trying to do this already shows that we have no honor.’

The Royal Knight was thinking that way as he looked to his subordinates and sent a signal.

‘When we return, I will retire.’

That’s what the Royal Knight was thinking.

As they were continuing to be forceful, Grace could not hold it in anymore. Even if they were a strong Empire, with her identity as

the Mother of Pareia, she could never kneel in front of them.

Within seconds, both of Grace's hands were holding onto her Sosoontas. The Red Storm warriors, as well as other warriors of the tribe also stood in front of Grace. They did not have any weapons, but they had made up their mind to fight with them, and the few women and children who were quick-witted ran to the paoes to quickly get the warriors' weapons.

As the Royal Knights took out their swords, Grace's Sosoontas created a cross in front of her body. Even though they were in an unfavorable situation, they would not use any cheap tricks like throwing sand in the knights' eyes to blind them. The warriors clenched their fists as they started to run forward.

“What's going on?”

A cold breeze carried a booming voice between the warriors and the knights.

Book 1-6.4 Incident with the Prince (II)

The person swinging his two greatswords and using just the pressure from it to push back both the knights and the warriors was Yulian, who now stood in between the two groups.

Seeing Grace holding her Sosoontas in her hands, Yulian asked.

“Madam, what is going on?”

Since they were in front of other people, Yulian addressed Grace in a respectful way as he asked.

Grace knew that if she honestly told him what happened, a serious incident would occur. After all, she knew her husband's strength better than anyone.

His strength was one that made it hard to believe he was human; really, in the desert, the only warrior who could still take on Yulian 1 on 1 was probably just the Shuarei's Bloodied Hands, Venersis.

Although some of the empire's knights looked like they were stronger than the Red Storm warriors, they were no match for her husband.

Grace put away her Sosoontas and grabbed onto Yulian's arm as if nothing happened.

“It was nothing. The Empire's knights were just comparing strengths with our warriors.”

Yulian looked towards the Empire's knights in disbelief after listening to Grace. It was then that Yulian saw him.

Yulian saw the arrogant and moronic prince of the empire standing drunk behind the knights.

An image was drawn inside Yulian's mind.

‘There's no way.....’

What Yulian was imagining was confirmed when Shareulo started to shout again.

“What the hell are you doing? I told you to restrain that bitch and bring her to me. Oh, and restrain the punk that just showed up as well.”

A fire was lit in Yulian’s eyes.

“What did he do to you?”

Seeing this angry expression on Yulian for the first time, Grace could only shake her head no.

“Madam.”

As Yulian’s voice started to get louder, Grace cautiously answered.

“The prince was drunk and approached this lady.....and wrist.....”

Grace could not say anything else.

“Why won’t you tell me the rest?”

“It was nothing much.”

“I’m asking you to tell me that trivial thing.”

“I will answer you inside the paoe.”

“I want you to tell me now.”

As Grace would not say anything further, Yulian looked around him with fiery eyes. It was then that he made eye contact with a young child. Yulian walked to the child and lifted him up as he raised the child to his eye level.

The boy, who looked to be less than nine years old, did not avoid Yulian; instead, he seemed to be excited as he peered into Yulian’s eyes.

“What is your name?”

“My name is Tanana Clinique, son of the veteran warrior, Titina Clinique, the Angry Pirma.”

The boy did not fear Yulian’s eyes and answered vigorously. Yulian was a hero and a role model for the boy; even if Yulian was angry, he had no reason to be afraid of him. He was also at a young age where he could not understand why what happened was a big issue.

“Tanana, son of Titina Clinique, I will ask you a question.”

“Yes.”

“Do you know my wife, the Beautiful Maiden Grace Nellisi?”

The boy answered vigorously.

“Of course. I know the former Mother of Pareia, the current Mother, as well as the future Mother.”

“You’re brilliant.”

“Thank you very much.”

The boy was smiling brightly after being praised by Yulian, and the surrounding people started to feel nervous.

“I will ask you one more question. What just happened to the future Mother of Pareia?”

The boy was proud that he saw everything that happened and answered vigorously.

“That drunk foreigner was holding onto Grace-nim’s hand, and when Grace-nim tried to push his hand away, he hugged her. So Grace-nim moved her body and her hand.....”

The boy tried to explain by twisting his hands, but maybe he could not remember clearly, as he just waved his hand around a bit as he continued to explain.

“Once she did that, the foreigner fell face first into the sand. We were laughing at that when suddenly those people wearing armor

came closer, and it was then that the Young Glow and Desert Conqueror, the great warrior Yulian-nim showed up here.”

“Oh! So that’s what happened.”

A cold smile showed up on Yulian’s face.

“You explained it very well, Tanana. When you grow up to be a proud warrior of Pareia, I will be very happy.”

“Thank you very much.”

The boy had a bright expression from being praised by his hero and walked towards his family. Yulian turned around and spoke to Grace.

“And so he says.”

“We can’t get angry at a guest who made a mistake in his drunk state.”

Although Grace could feel her husband’s anger in her body, she spoke carefully to try to calm him down. However, Shareulo’s mouth continued to get in the way.

“You so called Royal Knights are going to disobey a prince’s command? Bring them here right now!”

“Hmph.”

A cold smile was back on Yulian’s face as he turned around. His presence made a couple of the Royal Knights hesitate. Although it looked like the normal knights could not recognize it, the Royal Knights could feel it. The aura coming off the body of this youngster known as the Prince of the Desert was not normal.

‘What the heck is the diplomat doing?’

Sesuna, the Royal Knight in charge of the envoy was cursing Janet, who was not visible even though such an incident had occurred. This was the first time he was looking for a diplomat because he wanted to avoid a fight.

In front of him was a dangerous opponent, behind him was someone he couldn't disobey. Internally, he was feeling embarrassed and wanted to get away from this place. It was obvious that the knights' movements would be filled with hesitation.

However, Yulian walked towards the knights as if he had no intentions of avoiding them and started to speak in the language of the continent.

“Are you all knights of the continent?”

As a couple of the knights nodded their heads, Yulian scoffed at them as he spoke.

“In the books that I have read, it stated that the continent's knights have a Knight's Code they have to follow. In the Knight's Code, I read that knights must protect the elderly, the children, and the ladies. Are you really knights?”

It was a question asking ‘How can you call yourself knights if you won't protect ladies?’ At the very insulting question, the knights' faces continued to turn red in shame. Even without him saying that, they had already turned red from what Grace had asked earlier.

Shame and embarrassment. Resentment towards the Commander who ordered them on this mission. Resentment towards the current situation.

“If you don't catch them now, you will face the consequences when we return to the Empire.”

Resentment towards that damn bastard of a prince. In the end, the knights took out their weapons and started to get in formation.

Watching the knights starting to form their formations, Haisha and a couple Red Storm warriors tried to go next to Yulian, however, Yulian stopped them.

“Warriors, do not step forward. It is a husband's duty to pay back

the shame brought to his wife.”

Yulian shouted towards the warriors around them as he held out the two greatswords and walked into the middle of the formation on his own.

Sesuna was thinking that it was great that Yulian entered their formation on his own. Since he came in on his own, they would be able to catch him while giving him some face as the prince of the desert. If the person in charge, Janet, could show up while they were stalling for time, it would be even better.

“D Formation.”

Listening to Sesuna give directions to form the defense-oriented formation, all the knights understood his intentions and cheered internally. They even hoped that the youngster known as the desert prince would be extremely talented and could keep them occupied. That would be the only way they would be able to say anything to the moronic prince.

Yulian’s greatsword started to move. It brought forth a gust of sand, and hit the knights with a dangerous aura. There was a loud clanking noise as the knights who traded blows with Yulian wobbled backwards. He had a really high level of strength.

Their thought process was short; knowing that they could not stop the incoming greatswords while shaking, they curled up their body. The knights on the sides moved their feet to block the greatsword, however, they were pushed back with just one hit.

Seeing Yulian like this, Sesuna understood that he was a warrior with extreme skills and instructed them to change to the W formation. Although there were only a few changes from the D formation, this was a formation focused on helping the people around them when facing a strong opponent.

Seeing this, Yulian did not hinder the knights’ movements, as if saying do as you please. He planned on taking down everything

they threw at him.

Once the knights finished changing their formation, Yulian pushed forward strongly once more. Even though they were in the W formation, they continued to get pushed back.

Although they were getting pushed back, Sesuna still did not directly attack Yulian, thinking that if he was to even accidentally shed some blood, Yulian might become completely ruthless. Based on the knights' movements, Yulian could understand what they were doing and started to find his sense of reason in the midst of his anger. After that, he only used his physical strength to push back the knights and make them succumb.

“You don't need to catch him alive. Just take off his neck.”

As he realized his knights were getting pushed back time and time again, Shareulo's order changed, and Yulian realized that he was pointing his sword at the wrong person.

He widely swung his greatsword once more and pushed the knights back one more time before looking at the knight with the most skill and spoke.

“I won't kill him so don't get in my way. If you try to protect him, I may really end up killing him.”

Book 1-6.5 Incident with the Prince (III)

The knights were flabbergasted by Yulian's words. Thirty knights were being warned by one desert warrior. However, with Yulian's next move, they confirmed that he had the abilities to back up his warning.

They saw a faint haze starting to rise from Yulian's greatsword. They were able to see it even when the moon and the bonfires were the only sources of light lighting up the night.

"This is not possible....."

Sesuna, as well as many of the knights were all muttering that quietly. From the beginning, it seemed impossible for him to be able to swing those large greatswords. Those swords were difficult to swing even with both hands, but using one in each hand? How was that possible? Plus, the extremely destructive power he showed.....

If that wasn't enough, now he was pouring mana into the greatsword. This was something only a master was able to do.

'I know of one two-handed sword master, however, a knight no, a master who uses two of themI've never heard of such a thing.'

Sesuna was calmly assessing the situation. Currently there were five Royal Knights here in the desert. If they were to have a battle for their lives, even if it was against a master, they should be able to defend. After all, the Royal Knights of the Silence Empire were only one level, or maximum two levels under the masters' levels in comparison.

Plus, they also had over twenty veteran knights. If they were to fight, they probably would not lose. However, the ones who will end up spilling blood will be the knights, and they would not be able to protect the prince either. There was nothing you could do if

a master set their target on a specific person and only headed towards them.

“I’ve warned you.”

With those short words, Yulian started to run towards Shareulo.

“Block him!”

No matter how moronic this prince was, and even if the enemy was a master, the Royal Knights, and really, all knights, had to protect the royal family and could not retreat. Once Sesuna’s orders came out, all the knights blocked Yulian’s path.

In return, just as he had warned them, Yulian ruthlessly attacked the knights.

Clank! Slash Clank!

As steel hit steel, the loud noises of their weapons clashing echoed in the desert. The moans soon followed after that.

With one swing, the knights on both the left and the right were pushed away and Yulian continued to move forward. They could not block him. After that, two more knights were pushed away and finally, when the Royal Knights were blocking Yulian, Yulian’s greatsword started to change.

The knights’ swords were being cut into two and their full chainmail made of durable iron was being crushed or ripped apart. It was a sight you would not believe unless you saw it for yourself.

Seeing that, Shareulo started to yell again.

“What! What the heck are you doing?! Block that punk right now! Call the soldiers! Kill that punk this instant!”

Yulian smirked and showed some sympathy that these magnificent knights had to serve such a prince, but the knights were too busy focusing on Yulian’s swords that nobody heard what he said. It may have been better that they did not hear him. Those type of words would only make them lose their strength.

It took less than ten minutes for all the knights to be flung backwards. None of them had any severe injuries that would impact their lives. Yulian's anger had moved onto Shareulo, and he knew they had to follow orders.

Even though all of his knights were knocked down, Shareulo continued to arrogantly yell towards Yulian.

“How dare you lay your hands on the knights of the Silence Empire even after knowing who I am! Once I return, I will make sure to torture you to death, however, if you admit your wrongdoing and beg me for forgiveness, I will pretend that none of this happened.”

“Ha!”

Yulian could not believe what Shareulo was saying. If he's able to shout like this even in this type of situation, what would have happened if he was not strong enough and had been caught by the knights?

“Do you think you will be able to return to your Empire?”

Shareulo's face turned pale and traces of fear started to develop on his face at Yulian's words.

“You... you would dare to do something to me?”

“Why wouldn't I? You insulted my country, you insulted our warriors, and now, you even dared to try to assault my wife. Why should I not kill you?”

Shareulo's entire body started to shake at the thick murderous aura.

“You can try to attack me too. Pareia's warriors do not kill a person who does not have a weapon.”

Yulian picked up one of the swords that a knight had dropped and handed it to Shareulo. Shareulo was not able to receive the sword and started to speak in a shaking voice.

“If you kill me ... don’t you know what would happen if you kill me? Fi...fine..... I’ll... pretend that none of this happened. We will return now. I promise I will not seek revenge.....”

‘This truly is one of Silence Empire’s princes?’

Seeing that Shareulo’s shameless behavior made his anger appear to be too much, Yulian debated stopping right there. However, he knew that he could not stop here as the people of Pareia were watching. If he was to just back away now, it’ll plant a seed in their hearts that no matter how strong you were, you had to walk on eggshells around the strong forces of the continent.

Furthermore, to back away when it was the wife of the Young Glow who was assaulted, that would cause a large wound on the pride of the Pareian people.

Yulian lifted his hand as he headed directly towards Shareulo and started to slap him.

“This one is punishment for looking down on our Pareia.”

Shareulo’s left cheek became swollen in an instant.

“Ack!”

Shareulo did not consider his reputation and shouted like he was about to die. As he started to rub his left cheek with both hands, Yulian’s large hand slapped Shareulo’s right cheek.

“That one is punishment for looking down on our warriors.”

Shareulo was now down rolling on the ground while rubbing both of his cheeks and screaming at the top of his lungs. Watching this, the people of Pareia felt good while thinking that he was getting what he deserved.

As Yulian looked over at Grace and started to head towards Shareulo, Grace quickly came up to Yulian and held his arm.

“You do not need to punish him on my behalf. I am content he has received this much punishment.”

At Grace's request, Yulian looked around to read the expression of the tribe members. After seeing their satisfied faces, he thought that this was enough. Plus, seeing Shareulo suffering on the ground rubbing his whole body, he thought that there would be no point to continue.

"Please stop the fight."

At this point, there was someone shouting while running towards them. It was the diplomat from the Silence Empire, Janet. Janet was surprised after seeing the knights and prince on the ground and started to shout at Yulian.

"Young Glow, what is the meaning of this?"

Yulian coldly responded.

"How about you explain to me what the meaning of this is? Your prince was insulting Pareia earlier and now tried to assault my wife. Well?"

At Yulian's answer, Janet's body swung as if the back of his head was hit by a hammer. In the end, that moron could not hold in his lecherous ways and caused an incident. Shareulo's lust was famous even back in the Empire.

After seeing the woman standing next to Yulian, he could imagine Shareulo's actions without having seen it for himself. However, he could not just let it be when the prince was in such a condition.

"No matter what may have happened, to insult the Empire's prince like this, don't you know this will gravely impact the relationship between the great Silence Empire and the Pareia tribe?"

"Then are you telling me that I have to just sit by and watch my wife get raped? How should I watch it? Should I be laughing as I watch it for the friendship between the Empire and our tribe? If you come as an envoy of a nation, then you should not have acted

this way! Don't you agree?"

At Yulian's reprimand, Janet had nothing to say.

'What shall I do about this?'

Janet once again cursed the crown prince who ordered him to travel with that moron, and could only worry about how to resolve this situation.

As the other members of the envoy carried prince Shareulo and the knights into their residence, Grace quietly pulled Yulian's arm.

Once Yulian followed Grace into the paoe, Grace put herself in Yulian's embrace and spoke as she stroked his chest.

"I know you are angry, but this incident will have some severe consequences. There should have been other ways to resolve it....."

"I held back not once, not twice, but three times. What else could i have done?"

"You have to hold back because you are the Glow. If not three times, then four times, five times, even one hundred times if you can do so."

"Are you scolding me right now?"

As Yulian was starting to get angry at Grace's words, Grace hugged Yulian tightly and started to rub his back as she answered.

"Of course not. I was extremely happy at your actions. How could I scold you when my husband cares so much about me. That's preposterous."

"Then why are you keep saying things like that?"

"Don't you think I felt that it was unfair? I had to hold back when that was happening to me. However, if it is for you to become a great Glow, I can hold back even thousands of times. Can you not understand my heart?"

As tears started to form in Grace's eyes, Yulian let out a sigh as he started to hold her tightly as well.

“Sigh~. How could I not know how you are feeling? However, this situation was just too much. How dare he put his hands on you.”

Grace lightly smiled on the inside, however, tears were still hanging on her eyes.

“Still, I hope that you can restrain yourself in the future. Since you showed your might this time, the knights of the Silence Empire who now know of your strength will definitely not leave you alone. It's not even about hurting their pride, it is because they now know you are a dangerous presence. That is why I have told you all this.”

“I understand. I will be careful from here on.”

“You promise?”

“I promise.”

At Yulian's answer, Grace got on her tippy-toes and kissed Yulian's cheek.

“I'm relieved.”

Yulian could never win against Grace.

Book 1-6.6 We Must Get Rid of Him

Janet started to think with his large body bent over. According to Sesuna, the Royal Knight, Yulian was a master. In addition, Sesuna claimed that Yulian's level of strength could not be compared to any average sword master.

What kind of existence were masters?

Even in the Silence Empire where there were numerous knights, they had less than ten masters. Even in the Rojini Kingdom which rivaled the strength of the Empire, they also had less than ten masters.

‘This is going to be a problem.’

Janet could feel the headache starting to form.

“You must be really happy about this. Thanks to you, Yulian's popularity has soared up to the heavens.”

Two women wearing thick veils entered Janet's paoe and started to antagonize him.

At that moment, a single plan of action entered Janet's mind.

There was hostility on both sides.

He didn't know about the oldest son, but clearly, this woman's side was hostile with them.

A force-using master. That was an existence that should not exist in one of the Empire's provinces.

When a war begins between kingdoms, magic, sword, spears, the number of masters in all disciplines play a critical role in the war strategy. The Silence Empire, which had an army of 500,000 soldiers only had eight masters.

There are the rare strategists who claim that a single individual cannot do much in large-scale battles, however, they were rookie strategists who have never experienced war, no, who have never

experienced a war that included masters.

Their strength to push through in a straight line; masters were existences who had so much power than it required three to four commander level knights to barely manage to block them.

‘We must get rid of him. We must DEFINITELY get rid of him.’

Janet’s mind started to spin quickly. His plan was perfected in a very short amount of time. In situations like this when they had allies in the enemy camp, a shrewd diplomat like Janet could come up with tens of different methods.

“Madam, you have come.”

Once the thoughts in his mind were settled, Janet greeted Glow Baguna’s third wife, Librie, with a calm expression.

He was full of greed. Although this woman wasn’t crafty or smart, he was confident that this woman would get rid of Yulian.

“What’s so good that you can have such a calm expression? I asked you to get rid of Yulian, but all you managed to do was make them praise him even more.”

Even with Librie continuing to antagonize him, Janet did not lose his calm demeanor. Rather, he started to smile while preparing to roll Librie in the palm of his hands.

“Do not worry about it. I have a plan to handle this.”

“What plan? You think you have a plan to lower Yulian’s fame?”

“Hoho, Madam, please stop. Today, I will let you know the method to get rid of Yulian.”

Librie felt her ears opening up and quickly sat down and spoke in a small voice.

“How? There is a way?”

“Of course. This Janet is someone nobody can ignore, even back in the empire. Originally, I had planned to slowly progress,

however, after seeing him today, I can no longer let him be.”

Librie followed along.

“What did I say before! Didn’t I tell you from the beginning about how scary that child Yulian is? There are no warriors in the desert who do not know of his name. And two years ago, he gathered the young warriors and created some brigade called the Red Storm, and quickly, he turned all of them to be stronger than most veteran warriors.”

“Something like that happened?”

As Janet asked with a surprised expression, Librie got excited and started to continue.

“There is nobody in Pareia who does not know about it. He said it was a brigade to take down the Shuarei’s Desert Sword, and those Red Storm warriors are so loyal to him that if he told them to ‘Die!’ they would even pretend to be dead. Do you think that’s all? The majority of Pareia is hopeful that once Yulian becomes the Glow, he will be able to defeat our nemesis, the Shuarei tribe, and unify the desert.”

“To unify the desert... he has some lofty dreams.”

“The problem is that everyone believes that he could achieve such unbelievable dream.”

Janet was amazed that Librie could speak like that, even if she was full of greed trying to make her son become the Glow.

He was also curious about how she planned to get rid of the second son, Pere, even if Yulian was removed from the equation.

‘Well, it’s not like this is the first time I’ve seen someone like this. I just have to focus on completing my end of the bargain properly. Hehehe.’

Janet was laughing inside as he spoke.

“I am worried about the future of Pareia. If someone so rash

becomes the Glow, the foundation of the tribe will start to shake.”

“That’s exactly my point! Yulian, that child has such absurd thoughts! To unify the desert...it’s not normal for someone who has not even turned twenty to think he could do something that nobody has managed to do for hundreds of years.”

“That is why Librie-nim’s son Orca must become the Glow and have Librie-nim serve as the regent. That is the way to lead Pareia to prosperity.”

“I appreciate your words. Anyways, how do you plan on getting rid of Yulian?”

“Librie-nim’s tribe members have all gathered, right?”

“The majority of them are here. Other than the minimum required to protect a young Oasis, they are all here.”

“Around how many are there?”

“Around five hundred or so.”

Janet started to smile at Librie’s answer.

“That should be plenty.”

Janet came close to Librie and started to whisper his plan in her ear.

A smile started to form on Librie’s face.

Book 1-7.1 Discussion with the Chiefs (I)

Betrayal.

Thoughts that he didn't want to bring up again.....

The things he worked hard to forget.....

The third night of Glow Baguna's birthday celebration.

Inside the paoe were Glow Baguna and his three sons, as well as the tribal chiefs in charge of eleven oasis.

Since each oasis is maintained by three to four chiefs, the total number of people in the paoe was around forty people.

Truthfully speaking, there were not many chances for all the chiefs to gather together like this throughout the year, so every time they had the opportunity to do so, they gathered together to discuss their individual oasis, as well as determine a plan for all of Pareia.

Of course the discussion of the day was about how Yulian had manhandled the Empire's prince.

The first to speak was the 'Careful Cobra' Sanatu, who lives in the oasis of deep bottoms.

"I'll admit that I felt refreshed at the Young Glow's action, however, this Sanatu is worried about how to handle the aftermath of the incident. Could the Young Glow not restrain yourself?"

Before Yulian could answer, the 'Impulsive Buffalo' Maigne of the Brilliant Tree Oasis tribe started to shout.

"Sanatu-nim, then were we supposed to watch our daughters be assaulted?! Furthermore, she is set to become the next Mother of Pareia. It would have been understandable even if all of the warriors ran in to fight against them. How could you blame the Young Glow for that?"

Their two sides were very fitting of their names. The other chiefs took Sanatu's side or Maigue's side based on their individual feelings.

Taking a look, there were more chiefs who agreed with Maigue and thought Yulian did the right thing.

The temperament of most desert people were militant. They also had very strong senses of pride. Many chiefs were even saying that if they were in Yulian's shoes, they would have done the same thing. Truthfully speaking, even the chiefs who were blaming Yulian's actions were only doing so thinking about the future of Pareia; they were not necessarily thinking that Yulian was wrong for what he did. As such, there wasn't a large argument.

The chiefs were separated into two teams as they shared a heated discussion, and after trying to figure out how they can still make Pareia thrive, they looked towards Baguna.

They wanted him to clean up this mess.

Baguna looked towards Yulian who was sitting next to him.

"Since you caused this issue, how do you think we should resolve it?"

Yulian stood up from his seat and looked around at the chiefs in the paoe before starting to speak.

"I am truly sorry for causing such concerns for the wise elders. This incident, I accept that I may have been rash, however, if something like this were to happen again, I will act the same way. Even if it is not my own wife, no matter which maiden of Pareia it may be, I will still act the same way."

Yulian spoke with a strong voice as he maintained direct eye contact with the chiefs.

"I was taught that the first mission of the desert warriors is to protect their tribe and the women and children. This mission that the warriors of the older generation maintained by spilling their

blood has made Pareia into what it is today, and all I did was listen to those teachings. No matter if the opponent is a strong Empire, even if there is something that will shake the entire foundation of Pareia, if a situation occurs where we do not work to keep this most important mission, Pareia will lose the meaning of its name and the blood of the past warriors would have been for nothing.”

“.....”

“Our Pareia is the strongest among the five desert tribes in the Eastern Desert, and our warriors are strong. What are we so afraid of that we must discuss like this regarding following through with a warrior’s mission?”

Silence filled the paoe at Yulian’s long speech. Yulian had reignited the core that they had forgotten about.

The mission of a desert warrior. A mission that any warrior must keep.

What Yulian had said ignited the feelings of even the few extremely old chiefs, however, at the same time, some of them were lamenting the fact that Yulian lacked political skills.

After a bit of silence, the oldest of the chiefs who had gathered, the one who was right behind Glow Baguna in terms of respect and level of trust, the ‘Tight-lipped Teacher’ Yarumaha of the Deep Deep Oasis started to speak.

“My dear Young Glow.”

“Yes, ‘Tight-lipped Teacher’ Yarumaha-nim.”

“Everything changes based on where you put the value of existence. If the Young Glow has put the warrior’s mission first, this old man will put the existence of Pareia first. If Pareia was to disappear, there is no point to a warrior’s mission. Have you thought about a warrior who does not have a tribe or people to protect?”

“Yarumaha-nim.....”

As Mague called out to Yarumaha, Yarumaha just raised his hand up to make him quiet down before asking Yulian for an answer.

“What does the Young Glow think about this question?”

Yulian looked into Yarumaha’s eyes as he answered.

“Our warriors just need to continue getting stronger. Strong enough so that we do not need to deal with this type of insult. Although what Yarumaha-nim is saying is also correct, the main issue is that our Pareia is weaker than that Silence Empire. All of the desert warriors must clench their teeth and get stronger. This is a situation that can be handled if we are strong enough that this many people do not need to gather for such a situation.”

Yarumaha shook his head.

“What this old man is trying to say is that a lot of effort and time is needed to get that strong. How do you know if something like this will happen again when you become the Glow in the future?”

Yulian clenched his fist as he answered.

“What Yarumaha-nim is saying is correct. However, I am confident. We will get stronger and make it so that the Silence Empire cannot do anything about our Pareia.”

“I want to ask you how you plan to do so.”

“If all of the desert tribes work together, we would be stronger than any power in the continent. I truly cannot understand why the desert tribes, which are all part of one nation, must fight to take over each other, and bleed to kill each other. I will unify the desert.”

“Oh!”

“This.....!”

There were sounds of admiration and support all around the paoe.

“It is something that nobody has managed to do for hundreds of years. We may all be part of one nation, however, we have been separated for so long that even some traditions are different. What the Young Glow wants to do is impossi.....”

Yulian cut Yarumaha off.

“Please don’t say that it is impossible. I have already set a goal for myself and will push forward to it like a desert warrior. Rather, isn’t it more realistic than my saying that I will fight with the Silence Empire now to see who is stronger? Once I unify the desert, the Silence Empire will need to walk on eggshells around us, not the way it is now.”

At Yulian’s shocking words, many of the chiefs looked at each other.

Should we try to stop him?

Or should we aggressively support him?

Yulian’s words were difficult to achieve when you thought about it rationally, however, they could feel their hearts lighting up with passion and wanted to believe his words. There was an unexplainable sense of belief that Yulian would really be able to make it happen.

This was the same even for Sanatu, who had originally blamed Yulian’s rash behavior in the beginning.

Glow Baguna looked at his son with a satisfied expression.

Rather than Yulian’s title as Desert Conqueror and his strong abilities, Baguna was more satisfied about how Yulian could share his dream with others and draw people to him. That unexplainable passion, and charisma. That’s what Baguna was most satisfied about when it came to his son.

You could raise a strong warrior, however, a Glow who can draw people towards him, that was not something you could teach. It was something you were born with. In this aspect, Baguna was

satisfied.

“Our Young Glow is drawing this old man in with his weird passion. Then I will ask one last question. If the Silence Empire wants to get revenge about this situation and leads their soldiers into the desert, what will you do?”

Book 1-7.2 The Plot (I)

“Honestly, that is a problem I have been thinking about for a long time. Currently, many of the desert tribes are paying tribute to the large powers of the continents. The question is, whether those large powers could realistically invade the desert.”

“Young Glow, even if there was only a ten percent chance that they could invade, we would need to prepare for their invasion. That is why I am asking, what would you do, if they do go with that less than ten percent chance and choose to invade.”

Yulian responded without any hesitation.

“I am confident that they will not invade Pareia right now, and I am also confident that I will be able to prepare our Pareia for defense before they invade. However, even if they were to invade today, I am confident that we will be able to hold them off for many years. And within that time, they will choose to retreat on their own.”

He answered thinking about the current situation of the continent. The Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom, their preparation was almost over.

Soon, the two powers will start to unsheath their swords against each other. Yulian was keeping that in mind.

If the Silence Empire decided to invade Pareia, Pareia could first provide tribute to the Rojini Kingdom and make a deal with them to start the war.

If the Silence Empire truly invaded Pareia, they would need to send at least 50,000 soldiers, and that was an opportunity the Rojini Kingdom would not miss.

“If the Silence Empire sent less than 30,000 soldiers to invade Pareia, that would be foolish of them. If something like that happened, we would not be defending; we would attack them and

destroy all of their soldiers. Those soldiers do not know how to fight in the desert, with the scorching sun and the unstable sand.”

As Yulian drew up multiple situations in his head and confidently shared them with the chiefs, the chiefs were all contemplating Yulian’s words.

“Okay, okay, that is enough. We do not need to worry about something that has not happened yet. We are not at a point where we can spare time to worry about things that have not happened yet.”

Baguna knew the exact moment to interrupt and stopped the conversation.

“Since the Shuarei tribe has been quiet for a while, let’s use this chance to figure out how we can bring together the warriors stationed in the different oasis and create a training curriculum.”

The people in the paoe started to once again have heated discussions, and chatted away loudly at times and quickly at times, coming up with a plan. It was late in the night when they all returned to their own paoes.

The only ones left in the paoe were Baguna, Yulian, Pere, and Orca.

They were the men of the Provoke family.

Baguna looked towards his three sons as he spoke.

“In the future, make sure all of you take part in these meetings. Yulian must have the ability as a Glow and Pere and Orca, you must support him from the back. This father of yours did not have many siblings, and my one older brother and one younger brother both completed their mission as a warrior and returned to Neo Latin-nim’s side during a war. That was why I had a lot of suffering once I became the Glow. Even without saying this, you don’t know what it is like to not have any siblings who are able to understand the reasons for your actions. I trust that you all

understand the meaning of your father's words."

"Yes."

All three sons answered in unison.

Seeing Pere not show any disdain to his father's words and answering as needed, Yulian started to ponder.

'Is it because I said I would accept his challenge on the day of the Glow selection?'

At that moment, Orca spoke up as if he came up with an idea.

"Father, brothers, since we have all gathered together like this, why don't we share a drink together? Even though it was your birthday, father, your sons were unable to lift up a single glass of alcohol to you. Mother mentioned that the foreigners brought some good alcohol and sent some to my paoe.

Baguna smiled at Orca's words and Yulian shouted happily that his younger brother was already at an age he can drink.

"Orca, do you have to even ask? Go get it."

Orca happily smiled before getting up and heading out of the paoe to get the alcohol.

Looking at Orca, Baguna started to speak.

"Both of you must take good care of the third. His body has been weak from birth, and he has been watching his two extremely talented brothers since he was young that rather than relying on his own abilities, he seems to want to rely on the two of you. That is not because Orca is weak, nor is it his fault. The saying goes that the father must help the first son, but for younger siblings, it is the job of the older brothers to help. The two of you have been so focused on your individual goals; have either of you paid any attention to Orca at all?"

Both Yulian and Pere lowered their heads at Baguna's words.

"Yulian was because he was the oldest son, Pere, for you, it was

because you care too much about competing with Yulian, but sigh...there is nothing I wish for more than for the two of you to not be so focused on competing with each other.”

Baguna knew of the brothers’ relationship all this time, but pretended to not know.

What could he do? Whose side could he take when they were both his sons?

However, Yulian was the eldest son, and his abilities were not lacking to be the Glow. That’s why he had selected Yulian to be the Glow of the next generation.

If Yulian had shown any faults, he may have selected his second son, Pere, the perfectionist, to be the next Glow.

Both Yulian and Pere lowered their heads further at Baguna’s words.

“Even though he shows no aptitude to be a warrior, he was showing interest in incantations. He seems to be going to the chief Shaman, Tuma Takaka, quite often lately. According to Tuma Takaka, Orca shows a lot of aptitude towards incantations. As such, I plan to send Orca to Tuma Takaka to learn. However, as you have seen with Tuma Takaka, those who learn incantations seem to go a bit crazy, so the two of you will have to make sure to lead Orca forward in the future.”

“We will keep that in mind, father.”

As he watched his two sons respond in unison with a satisfied expression, he started to share a lot of family stories and stepped back from the position of Glow and said things to his sons as a father. As they were chatting, Orca returned with a clay vase.

“What kind of stories were you sharing without me?”

Watching his father and two older brothers chatting away, Orca asked with a smile on his face.

“He asked us to watch over you. Okay, I’ve heard that you’ve been interested in incantations lately, is it fun?”

Orca scratched his cheek in embarrassment at Yulian’s question.

“I have no talent to become a warrior like hyung-nims. I need to find a talent that is fitting for me on my own. That is the only way for me to stand side by side with my two hyung-nims in the future. I am not learning it for fun.”

As the fifteen year old Orca answered with a surprisingly reliable answer, the three of them smiled and found him to be commendable.

“Really, you were thinking internally that ‘this youngster is saying all sorts of things’ weren’t you? However, I must also start to prepare to become an adult. Hyung-nims, the two of you were interacting with warriors at my age, but you two have a habit of looking at me as just a little child.”

Orca spoke as if he did not like how his brothers treated him as a young child, and Pere put a smile on his stoic face and answered.

“If I have done that, this hyung apologizes to you. I forgot what kind of thoughts I had when I was your age. You are also my brother.”

“I also forgot that you are a son of the desert. This hyung also apologizes to you.”

Even though he was just sharing his complaints, seeing his two brothers respond like this, Orca was completely surprised.

“There is no reason for you to apologize. There is nothing I hope for more than for the two of you to consider me a son of the desert from here on. This alcohol is very fragrant. I don’t think it is an alcohol of the desert.”

After smelling the fragrance rising up from the clay vase, Orca started to fill his father and brothers’ cups. Baguna took the vase from Orca and put a glass in front of Orca as he started to speak.

“A desert son who is fifteen has earned the right to drink. It is time for you to accept a glass from your father.”

“Ah! Thank you, father.”

Being accepted as a man by the father he respected, Orca was extremely happy as he received the alcohol with two hands.

“Alright then, since all of the men of the Provoke family have gathered together, we will drink the first glass for the glory of Pareia, the second for our Provoke family, and the third for only good things to happen in the future.”

As Baguna spoke like that and took a drink, the three brothers all took a drink as well.

However, Pere just pretended to drink, and poured the alcohol into his sleeve.

The reason Pere, who could finish four jugs of alcohol if he started to drink, did this, was because he had been praying to their guardian Neo Latin-nim for the past few months and promised to abstain from alcohol for the next year.

“Next, I will pour.”

Yulian stood up and filled his father and younger brothers' glasses, and with another 'gunbae' they drank again. Lastly, Pere repeated the motion and the third cup was finished.

Afterwards, the three brothers shared many stories they could not share before and shared their brotherly love.

Soon after, Orca was wobbling as he spoke.

“This is weird. I have secretly drank before without father or hyung-nims knowing, however, I have never been so dizzy before.....”

As Orca fell over before he could even finish, Baguna, Yulian and Pere all laughed while looking at Orca.

“As Orca mentioned, the taste of this alcohol is quite peculiar. I

have never drank alcohol like this in the desert... seeing my head spin like this already, it is very strong.....”

Slam.

Watching Yulian, who had a pretty high tolerance, fall over not long after, Baguna and Pere were about to laugh. However, Baguna’s expression changed as he realized that something was wrong.

He was someone who could drink ten jugs of alcohol without problem, and he had even tried to strongest alcohol in the continent. But even he was feeling weird and his mind was starting to get fuzzy.

And feeling this sense of danger starting to creep up, Baguna woke up his intuition that he had not used in a long time.

“Pere... hurry, go get Tuma Takaka and the warriors.....”

Pere finally realized that something was wrong and quickly got up and headed out of the paoe. However, his feet stopped the moment he headed outside.

There were many desert warriors with murderous gazes standing in front of him with weapons.

And surprisingly, in the midst of the desert warriors were the soldiers and knights of the Silence Empire.

As Pere hesitated, a woman stepped forward from the crowd.

“Mother Librie, what is going on?”

Pere shouted towards that woman. The woman who had stepped forward from the crowd was the Glow’s third wife, their mother and Orca’s biological mother, Librie.

“Looks like you didn’t faint? That’s too bad. If you had fainted, I wouldn’t have to kill you like your mother Seina. Just blame it all on your bad luck.”

Listening to Librie’s word that struck like lightning, Pere became

lost. What was this woman saying?

“You...what...what are you saying?”

As Pere got anxious and started to stutter, Librie had an evil smile on her face.

Book 1-7.3 The Plot (II)

“Must I repeat myself? Your mother, Seina, is no longer a person of this world. You will also die in this spot. What are you all doing? Capture him! He poisoned Glow Baguna-nim!”

Now what was this about?

Who poisoned who?

How?

Then Pere realized why he did not faint.

‘Then really, in that alcohol?’

Pere did not have the time to think anymore. Sharp swords and shamshirs were coming closer to his eyes.

“You’ve been planning a rebellion!”

As Pere took out his shamshirs and defended against the warriors’ attacks and shouted, Librie answered.

“Since you are going to die soon anyways, what can I not tell you? It is not a rebellion but a decision for the future of Pareia. Whether it is a crazy Young Glow who says he will attack the Empire or Baguna who will allow such a person to become the next Glow, I am doing this to prevent the destruction of Pareia.”

“You...crazy.....”

Librie no longer cared for Pere and shouted.

“It’s just one person. Why are you so slow! Hurry and kill him and feed Orca the antidote!”

Pere realized that he could not stay here like this.

He needed to hurry and let the warriors know. Since all the chiefs brought the warriors of the Oasis, as long as he let them know, they would be able to assemble quickly.

Pere avoided the swords of the knights and the warriors as he

rolled back into the paoe.

Baguna had yet to lose his consciousness. Baguna had heard everything going on outside, and shouted as soon as Pere entered.

“Hurry! Your brother, take your brother and run!”

“Father!”

“Thinking about the future of Pareia, your brother is more important than me. I’m sure you can feel that as well!”

Pere shook his head at Baguna’s shouting.

“Father and hyung-nim. I will take both of you and escape from here.”

Pere shouted like that as he quickly ran over to Yulian and put him on his shoulders.

He then headed back to get Baguna, but Baguna forcefully slapped Pere’s cheek and shouted.

“You’re always cold-hearted, but why are you so anxious right now that you can’t even use your brain? I know you are strong, but do you really think you could escape with both of us right now?”

The warriors and Librie who had already come into the paoe responded in his place.

“Even if was not two and just one, no, even if he was by himself, I doubt he could escape.”

“Librie!”

Baguna tried to shout but his voice was not very loud. He was spending a lot of energy just remaining awake in his present condition.

“Why would you?”

As Baguna asked while staring at Librie, Librie avoided his gaze as she spoke.

You and your son are too reckless. And when have you given me

any warm gazes or touches? Since Mairez died, you've never hugged me even once."

"Just that...for just that reason you did this?"

"It wasn't for just that. Our Orca will be like his mother, being unable to shine under the shadow of his two brothers. Even if I die, I could not watch and let that happen."

Maybe Librie could no longer speak with Baguna; she turned towards her father, her uncle and her cousins as she spoke.

"What are you doing? It's for your grandson and nephew. Plus, shouldn't our family handle the honorable position of Glow at least once?"

The warriors could not easily step forward. Librie had convinced them of this from a long time ago, and they did end up falling for her temptation, but it was extremely difficult to use their shamshir against Baguna, whom they had pledged their allegiance to for a long time.

"They'll all die soon even if you leave them alone, so just kill that punk named Pere. Can't any of you use your heads?"

As Librie continued to shout, the warriors who felt less remorse headed toward Pere.

"Pere! What are you doing?! Do you plan on just letting them kill you?!"

As Baguna started to yell at Pere this time, Pere cried a single tear from each of his eyes as he shouted back.

"Father, I'm sorry. But this revenge..this revenge....."

Pere started to make a path through the warriors with his shamshir with Yulian still on his shoulder.

Pere was so strong that people would even say he was born with a divine power, and because there was a venomous nature to his personality, he had suffered through hell and back during his

training to catch up to Yulian.

Pere was prepared to lose his life, but as he was swinging his shamshir with the goal of vengeance in his heart, the knights and warriors could not easily block him.

A battle for their lives. As the saying goes, a battle for their lives had started.

They had only made it about thirty paces outside of the paoe, but both Pere and Yulian's bodies had a lot of injuries.

'To die like this.....I can't die like this.'

Pere continued to mutter to himself without stopping. How long did he work to make his dream a reality? To die a dog's death like this; he did not put in so much effort to die like this.

"Isn't that right, hyung-nim!"

Pere shouted while putting power into his whole body.

He didn't care if the strength was not his own and came from his anger or desperation, or even if the power was given to him by the devil. He could not die here.

Pere swung his shamshir like a storm and fended off the warriors and the knights as he moved forward one step at a time. However, he was about to reach his limit.

Were the heavens helping him? A savior arrived at that moment.

"Pere-nim?"

Grace, who was riding a pirma, called out to Pere with a shocked expression.

After seeing all the other chiefs return but Yulian not being present, rather than waiting for him, she had decided to meet up with him and planned to ride their pirmas through the night as a hike. That is why she had her pirma as well as Yulian's pirma with her.

It was a nonsensical coincidence, and the help of the heavens.

“Sister-in-law! It’s a rebellion!”

Seeing an escape route in front of him, Pere’s feet became full of energy as he shouted towards Grace and ran forward.

An average woman may have become anxious, but Grace was not an average woman.

She was the woman who crossed multiple oases and quicksands on her own and came to a different tribe to test her husband.

Grace saw the soldiers of the Silence Empire and the desert warriors running right after Pere and immediately realized what was happening. She squeezed her legs together to make the pirma run. At some point, she had even gotten out her sosoontas and they were in both of her hands.

As the warriors hesitated at the Pirma’s gallop, Grace had already arrived next to Pere and started to yell.

“Hurry and get on!”

The moment Pere was putting Yulian on the pirma, some of the warriors who had regained their thoughts started to run towards them to stop them.

In response, Grace jumped off of the pirma without much movement and landed on the ground.

“You are throwing dirt in the name of Pareia.”

The level of shame in these warriors were already as high as it could go; they started to swing their shamshirs at Grace without any response.

In a normal situation, they would never even dream about waving their shamshir against a woman.

“Hah!”

Was that the reason?

Grace, who felt that there were many gaps in their shamshirs, let out a shout and quickly used her sosoontas to take down two warriors.

After being surprised at Grace's unexpected reaction, they finally used their full strength to overpower Grace.

However, by that time, Pere had already put Yulian on the pirma and he was on it as well.

"Sister-in-law, hurry!"

Once Pere shouted, Grace rolled her body backwards and quickly got on top of the pirma.

Her quickness was something even the Red Storm warriors were amazed at.

The two pirmas started to run.

"Catch them! To not be able to catch one warrior and a girl, can you still call yourself warriors?"

As Librie who came after them shouted, the warriors urgently grabbed their pirmas and started to pursue them.

Librie knew that if she gave them time, everything would be ruined.

She needed to meet with the chiefs first.

Librie also got on a pirma and started to head towards the tribe.

'If my uncle and cousins have any brains, they will make sure they can't go back into the tribe. I need to finish it in that time.'

Librie kicked the side of the pirma to make it go faster.

If she could make it to the tribe first, she would be the winner of this game.

The command of the Pareia warriors went to the Glow, then the Mother of Pareia, followed by the Young Glow, and when none of the three were present, it would fall to her.

It was only temporary, but in this situation, that was enough.

In order to have that command, she had murdered the current Mother of Pareia, Seina, before putting this into action.

Librie's two feet continued to kick the side of the pirma.

Book 1-7.4 The Plot (III)

Grace and Pere became urgent. It was because of Pere and Yulian; the weight of these two men made the speed of their pirma much slower than the pirmas of the warriors chasing after them. Thankfully, it was Yulian's pirma; no other pirmas could run like this while carrying two large men like them.

The warriors chasing after them smartly cornered them in one direction to prevent them from heading into the tribe.

Grace and Pere were regretting not bracing themselves for danger and running towards the tribe from the beginning as the two were sweating while guiding the pirmas to avoid the shamshirs flying towards them from behind.

‘Is there nothing we can do?’

The word despair started to float inside Grace's mind. As she started to think about it, Grace, who had been following behind Yulian and Pere as if she was defending them, was injured multiple times by the warriors' shamshirs.

Seeing her like that, Pere started to shout.

“I will do whatever I can to handle them, sister-in-law, you must return to the tribe and explain the situation to them. If we can do that... ah!”

As another shamshir started to fly towards them, Pere stopped talking and used all of his energy to protect the pirma and his body.

After listening to Pere's words, Grace realized that they would both just end up dying if they continued like this, and nodded her head as she spoke.

“Then...point the pirma towards Rivilde. I will soon follow with reinforcements.....”

Pere nodded his head and turned the pirma towards the south and started to run again.

“Please take care of your hyung-nim.”

“You be safe as well sister-in-law.”

Pere had never called Grace sister-in-law before today.

It was obvious, since he didn't even call his brother hyung, but right now, the term sister-in-law came out time after time.

Seeing them split up, the warriors also split into two groups to chase down both Grace and Pere.

Another long game of cat and mouse started.

“Do not lose to some stupid poison. Are you going to die when I, Pere, am truly admiring you for the first time in my life?”

Pere continued to shout while riding. He was encouraging himself to keep going.

The dreams that Yulian talked about in their father's paoe, as well as his boldness and passion.

It was the moment that Yulian, who seemed very far away, started to get closer in his mind as his brother. It was the first time that even someone like him, who has a lot of pride, felt the feeling of defeat.

The level of their dreams were worlds apart.

His dream as the Glow of Pareia would have been to protect the tribe and make it stronger. It was a simple dream. But his brother was different.

Watching his brother, who seemed to have thought about everything, respond to all of their questions, made Pere realize that his brother had been planning his dream for a long time.

It lit a fire in his heart.

He even mistakenly thought that they could achieve it if he

worked together with his brother. No, he was sure that they could achieve it.

“If you are going to die like this, what happens to me, and all the sweat and blood I’ve shed to defeat you?! You must beat it! This Pere will protect hyung-nim until you do! I promise!”

Warm tears started to pour out of Pere’s eyes. It was both tears of regret that he realized his brother’s thoughts only just now, as well as tears of sorrow for the unfairness of the current situation.

Pere started to recover his physical strength that he had lost from fatigue. After all, this was Pere who was said to have been born with divine powers.

If Yulian had not learned martial arts from Chun Myung Hoon, Pareia’s greatest warrior would have been Pere.

As for the person to fight against the Western War God Venersis, that would also have been Pere and not Yulian. Pere was born with extreme strength, to the point that Baguna would even share the information with Chun Myung Hoon.

Otherwise, would Chun Myung Hoon have been surprised at Pere’s strength to the point he debated about taking Pere as his disciple for a long time?

It looked like Pere’s divine power was working hard to save his life, as well as his brother’s life, as they fell in this road between life and death.

He had enough strength to his use shamshir to strike down against the chasing warriors’ shamshirs and break them in half.

Once they felt the extremely murderous aura coming out of Pere’s body, the warriors after them felt a sense of fear, and more importantly, their pirmas were surprised and started to run wild.

Pere used this moment to successfully create some distance with the warriors chasing after them.

After letting out a sigh of relief, Pere took a look at Yulian's condition. Yulian's face had turned dark blue.

In the desert, there were many types of poison.

The desert was a place where the multitude of plants and monsters, and even insects and the sand could be poisonous.

However, as killing someone with poison was scorned, it did not happen often.

Although the shamans may use poison for their incantations or for healing, there were no instances of warriors using poison.

The only time warriors could be seen using poison was when they covered their weapon with poison before they headed out to take care of some monsters.

With their pride, all of them wanted to protect their tribe with their abilities, without relying on something like poison that they did not put in any effort to use.

It was normal for a strong warrior to defeat a weak warrior, however, the tribe could not accept a weak warrior using poison to defeat a stronger warrior.

This was why Pere did not have much knowledge regarding poison.

He didn't know what type of poison Yulian was suffering from, or even how to treat him. He knew nothing. How could he? He had never used nor suffered from poison before.

If someone was bitten by a poisonous snake or a scorpion, you cut around the area and suck out the blood. That much he knew, but since his brother had drank the poison, does he have to slice his brother's neck?

"Hyung-nim, what do I have to do? How should I handle this situation? Hyung-nim, do something! Since this Pere has protected you, you must also defeat this poison!"

Pere grabbed onto Yulian's leg and started to shout in frustration.

“Uhh.....”

Did Pere's words reach him? Yulian let out a moan before putting on a frown that looked like it could crush his skull.

Yulian was using all of his force. To protect its owner who had lost consciousness, Yulian's body was working on its own to utilize the 'naegashimbup,' the internal force that was ingrained in Yulian's body, to barely manage to prevent the poison from reaching Yulian's heart.

If it was Chun Myung Hoon, even if someone had fed him poison while he was sleeping, he could laugh in his sleep and his internal energy would force it back out of his mouth or out the tips of his fingers or toes, but Yulian's limit was preventing the poison from reaching his heart.

It wasn't like Yulian was showing to Pere that he was touched by Pere's shouts and sincerity; it was more of a subconscious response to let him know that he was alive.

“Hyung-nim!”

Pere was extremely delighted at Yulian's moaning and started to shake him. This was a very dangerous thing to do. It was even more dangerous than meditating on a running pirma.

Brrrrrrrrrr.

Yulian's body instantly started to shiver.

Book 1-7.5 The Plot (IV)

It was as if he was saying that Pere should not touch him. Although Pere was confused, he felt like he shouldn't touch him and removed his hands.

“Are you awake? Is your condition really bad?”

Many questions of concern were coming out of Pere's mouth. This was surprising, because it was difficult for Yulian to hear anything from Pere normally. Unfortunately, Yulian could not respond.

Pere made up his mind and nodded his head as he spoke.

“It's fine. As long as you are alive, that's all that matters. Just hold on a little bit longer. The Rivolde Oasis is not much further!”

That's what Pere was telling Yulian, but he knew that the road to Rivolde was still long.

No matter how quickly they rode, it would take at least three days to reach Rivolde, the closest Oasis to Pareia.

He was worried that Yulian could not last that long, and he was also worried because they would need to cross the Shuarei's territory to get there. Normally, they would use the northern route, but they were not in the condition to do so right now. They needed to take the fastest route possible.

Pere started to first push the pirma forward. He might as well travel as he was trying to figure things out. He believed that Grace would soon arrive with reinforcements and the shamans, but he was also worried about that.

If the evil Librie arrived first and started to take control.....

Even Pere knew that if Yuiian is not there, the command would fall to Librie. Plus, Librie would not have stupidly started this rebellion without thinking things through.....

Pere was filled with worries as he continued forward.

The sun started to rise, but Pere's mind was still the same terrible nightmare.

How far must he have traveled?

The sun was high above his head.

'It's tiring.'

Since Grace had prepped the pirma only for a night riding session, there were no water on the pirma. Pere was using his strong mental skills to survive the murderous sun's heat and continue forward.

Truthfully speaking, crossing the desert without a turban (a hat made by wrapping a cloth around your head), and without any water, was suicide. However, Pere did not despair.

He knew that his guardian god will help him.

He had faith and believed that Neo Latin will not abandon him, especially after he had been giving a prayer of abstaining from alcohol. Pere had full confidence in his will to live.

At that moment, he saw a cloud of sand in the distance.

"Huh?"

If it was Grace, it should be coming from the back, not from the front.

Pere grabbed the hilt of his shamshir tightly.

'Damn.'

Pere swore inside once he figured out who the main characters inside the sand clouds were.

Before he could see any of the people inside, he saw the large blue flag and the shamshir that was drawn on it.

It was the Desert Sword, the brigade of Shuarei's 'Bloodied Hands,' Venersis. As he was rushing forward lost in thought, he

must have already ended up in the Shuarei's territory.

Even if he would have tried to run away, the pirma was tired.

It was not surprising.

It had run so far carrying two people.

'If I don't have a way to escape, I must meet them and leave everything to the will of the heavens. I'm sure we will not die.'

Although they met their bitter enemies, Pere felt himself being surprisingly calm and rested. He had a weird confirmation that even if something even more severe than this were to happen, he would not die.

The Desert Sword soon surrounded Pere and Yulian. They looked to be around fifty people.

It was as if they were waiting for someone.

Pere still did not lose his calm expression, and started to spin the shamshir in his hand.

But suddenly, he felt an overwhelming pressure; that wind of pressure quickly attacked Pere.

Pere's eyes opened widely as he turned his head towards the direction of the wind.

Who would dare to show this type of pressure to him?

If he was go to one on one with their lives on the line, he was confident that he would not even lose to his brother.

Pere could see a middle aged man around his size slowly approaching him on a large pirma.

Pere turned his body towards this man, who was still trying to oppress him while giving off an air of piercing through everything. Then, as if to say he could do just as much, he opened up his chest and lowered his shamshir in front of him as he glared at the man.

The man seemed to be both surprised and flattered by Pere, and

asked.

“Who are you?”

There was a sense of danger coming from each and every one of his words.

It felt similar to his father's voice when he was angry.

However, he had no plans on tricking himself.

Pere overcame the danger he sensed and shouted loudly.

“I am the second son of Pareia's ‘Benevolent Eye’ Baguna Provoke, the ‘Great Strength’ Pere Provoke. Who is the warrior addressing me?”

The man nodded his head.

It was a name that he kept hearing these days.

The two sons of Pareia were extremely talented. The eldest son caught a sand dragon on his own and the second son was known as an extremely strong individual who could defeat anybody he faced.

If it was a warrior with that much fame, it seemed fine to tell him his name.

The man answered in a quiet yet powerful voice.

“I am Venersis, the ‘Bloodied Hands,’ of the Shuarei's strength, the Desert Sword.”

TO BE CONTINUED

Book 2

Book 2-1.1 Venersis

Escape

I needed to save him. I also needed to save myself.

Pere's body was shaking to the point that he almost fell off the pirma. This man was the Western War God and Pareia's worst enemy. Putting the Shuarei tribe second, if anyone could catch just this one man, Pareia could resolve all the grudges it has had for a long time.

Pere's wanted to swing his shamshir and try battling him right now. He wanted to catch Venersis and resolve his grudges. However, he needed to protect Yulian and make it to Rivolde.

Venersis noticed that the murderous aura coming from Pere's body suddenly disappeared and looked at Pere as if he was surprised.

“Ah!”

Venersis had only been looking at Pere because of his strength that he didn't notice Yulian leaning on the pirma until now.

“He's been hit by poison.”

Venersis looked at Yulian's face as he asked.

“Who is he?”

Pere hesitated at Venesis' question.

‘A true warrior will not kill someone who is not holding a weapon. If I pretend he is someone else, there is a higher chance of survival.

Pere debated for a bit but ended up shaking his head. His brother will need to become Pareia's glow in the future. He could not use a lie to save his life.

“This is Pareia's young glow, the ‘Desert Conqueror,’ Yulian

Provoke, my older brother.”

“An enemy we must catch.”

Pere put some strength into his hand at Venersis’ response.

“However, a warrior does not use a crisis for their benefit.”

Pere was confused at what Venersis just said. What did he mean?

Venersis turned his head and called one of the warriors over. Once he said something to the warrior, the warrior nodded his head and went up to each and every one of the Desert Sword members and said something in their ear. Each time he moved on to a new warrior, they would also nod their head. As he continued on, one warrior nodded his head before handing over a bag to the messenger. The messenger then handed the bag to Venersis.

Venersis opened the bag and took a sniff before coming towards Pere.

Even without noticing, Pere’s body shook for a split second.

Pere felt with his whole body just why Venersis was Venersis.

Venersis stretched out his arm and held the bag in front of Pere.

“This is our tribe’s shanana (emergency antidote that desert warriors carry with them. Although each tribe has their own unique take on it, overall, they all share the fact that they can help fight off poison). You should know how to use it, right?”

Pere stared at Venersis for a bit before reaching out and taking the bag.

“Next time, I hope to meet you on the battlefield, young warrior brothers.”

As Venersis turned around and started to walk away, Pere hesitated before starting to speak.

“Warrior Venersis.”

As Venersis turned his head, Pere mumbled for a bit before

speaking.

“I will definitely repay this favor. However, I will not forget my grudge.”

Venersis started to smile as he looked at Pere and then turned to look at Yulian.

‘Her son. He’s grown quite a bit.’

Venersis was thinking about Mairez. She was the woman he wanted to make his own no matter the cost.

Book 2-1.2 Flashback (I)

Red Desert. Even today, this place called the Red Desert was being dyed red. Blood was being shed and many people were falling over, and an even greater number of people were holding on to their shamshirs, swinging them to take down more opponents than the other side.

The people of the desert were very barbaric. Especially when it was related to an oasis, which was the lifeline of the desert, their barbaric nature came out in full effect. The thing that was drenching the desert red today was the Shuarei tribe, who owned eleven oasis, invading the Pareia tribe, who also owned eleven oasis.

Thanks to the fact that the two tribes had signed a truce yesterday, Pareia had their guard down.

A battle between someone who has prepared and someone who has not, actually ends up being more ruthless, and leads to a lot more blood being spilled.

“Catch the Glow!”

The Shuarei tribe’s warrior among warriors, the ‘Bloodied Hands’ Venersis, was shouting as he was giving commands to the Shuarei warriors.

This was the Pareia tribe’s largest oasis.

The Shuarei tribe had prepared and brought a larger amount of warriors to instantly invade, but the Pareia tribe warriors were doing a good job defending against them. It was such a sudden sneak attack that they were fighting in chaos, but they were fighting back valiantly, living up to their status as warriors protecting Pareia’s largest oasis.

However, the ‘Bloodied Hands’ Venersis was leading the group, and his brigade of warriors known as the Desert Sword was too

strong for the Pareia warriors to handle. They could not defend as the Desert Sword plowed through in a straight line.

That single line of attack was piercing through Pareia.

“Defend! Protect the Mother of Pareia!

The warriors of Pareia did not care about the fact that they were getting injured and tried to defend the charge of the Shuarei tribe, but in the end, they just ended up losing their lives.

Before long, Venersis found the largest paoe of the Pareia tribe and led a large number of warriors as he charged in.

However, they did not find the ‘Benevolent Eye’ Baguna Provoke, the Glow of Pareia like they wanted. Instead, all they found was his first wife, the ‘Beautiful Maiden’ who became the Mother of Pareia, Mairez.

Mairez boldly faced the enemy, Venersis. She had a shamshir in one hand.

Venersis shouted without holding his shamshir.

“Mairez, how could a warrior among warriors like me attack a woman like you? Please come peacefully and surrender yourself!”

Mairez shook her head at Venersis’ shout and pointed her shamshir at him and shouted back.

“We came to a truce just yesterday, yet a single day later, here you are breaking the promise and invading our oasis. I cannot become a prisoner to someone who is not a warrior.”

A desert warrior never attacked women or children.

Unless they could kill every member of a tribe, it was the better option for each other.

It was the unspoken promise of all of the desert tribes. Lifting weapons and shedding blood while fighting was only for the warriors.

However, they did take prisoners. But even the people who were taken as prisoners did not find it shameful. You couldn't do anything about being caught by warriors. That is why all of them peacefully agreed to be taken as prisoners, and until their family and tribe paid off the ransom to take them back, they obeyed as their prisoner, and their slave. Since they all believed that the desert tribes were all part of the same family, it wasn't like any of the tribes treated their prisoners like they were less than human.

However, Mairez did not agree to Venersis' request to be taken as their prisoner. The situation was different.

Venersis did not act like a warrior. Since they broke the truce from yesterday and invaded today, there was nothing wrong with what Mairez said or what Mairez was thinking.

Although Mairez was already past her mid-thirties, she was still beautiful and prideful. At one point, she was the most beautiful woman in the entire desert, and among the women, she was the one who was the best at riding the pirma. When this woman who many warriors were eyeing for themselves was married to the 'Benevolent Eye' Baguna, Venersis was among the many warriors who were disappointed.

To be scolded by that woman made Venersis feel embarrassed inside.

He had accepted this because it was the order of the Glow, but this kind of scheme did not fit him and he did not find it to be good either.

Just as Mairez mentioned, even he didn't feel like you needed to respect warriors who could not keep their promise, so he just stood there for a bit, without being able to do anything.

"If you are also a proud warrior, take your subordinates and leave! If you don't, that proud name of yours, that name of 'Bloodied Hands' will disappear."

Listening Mairez boldly yell at him, Venersis let out a sigh in his mind before starting to speak.

“Following the orders of the Glow is also a warrior’s mission. Mairez, today, you must become a prisoner of our tribe.”

“It must be raining sand!” (The most improbable thing in the desert).

I, Mairez, do not want the shame of becoming a prisoner to a warrior who has lost his pride.”

Mairez spoke as if it would be considered blasphemy and started to swing her shamshir at Venersis.

Mairez was known to be a warrior among woman, but how could she even touch the clothes of Venersis, who was known as a great warrior throughout the desert?

Venersis kept his shamshir on his hip as he moved his body around to catch her with his bare hands.

‘Even without to resorting to something like this, I could easily take over Pareia’s large oasis. Then Mairez would have also agreed to be our prisoner.....oh Glow, Glow, you are dirtying my name, the name of Venersis, too too much.’

Venersis was lamenting inside as he tried to catch her hand that had the shamshir. After trying a couple of times, he was able to grab onto her right wrist that was holding onto the shamshir, and it was the moment he tried to forcefully hold her and make her unable to move.

“You think I will end up your prisoner!”

Mairez shouted loudly as she took out a short dagger on her hip and stabbed her own chest.

“Ah!”

Book 2-1.3 Flashback (II)

Venersis, who was holding her right hand with his left hand, and her shoulder with his right hand, shouted out in extreme surprise, but before he knew it, the dagger had cut through her skin.

“No!”

Venersis shouted as he urgently grabbed her left hand and pulled the dagger out, but a fountain of blood started to pour out of her chest. Even Venersis’ quick action could not prevent the dagger from stabbing her heart.

“My tribe ... and my son ... will follow the rules of the desert and make sure to get rid of you.”

Mairez looked at Venersis with eyes full of grudge, and Venersis felt like every place her eyes landed on hurt more than when he was slashed by a shamshir.

As Mairez’s body started to grow cold in his arms, Venersis just blankly stood in place.

Now, he could no longer get rid of the stigma that Venersis, the ‘Bloodied Hands’ murdered the Mother of Pareia. He could not make any kind of excuse. His name and his pride had both received a large scar.

“Hmm.....”

Venersis looked down at Mairez with a blank expression before letting out a loud moan. He then carefully laid her down in the paoe and walked out.

A long time later, the large box that was in the corner of the paoe started to move around.

Thunk.

The lid of the box made a noise as it flipped open, and a young boy came jumping out of it.

His eyes that were open extremely wide looked to be very shocked.

Although he had opened the box just slightly to make sure nobody was around before opening the lid, the shock in the heart of the child had not subsided.

The next moment, the child's eyes grew so wide they looked like they might rip. The black pupils in his eyes grew large before suddenly shrinking.

“Mother.”

The boy who looked to be around ten years old had seen Mairez's body. The boy urgently called to her as he ran towards her.

Yulian Provoke.

The first son of the Glow of the Pareia tribe, Mairez's one and only son Yulian, could no longer speak after seeing the bloody chest of his mother and just knelt down next to her.

‘Mother.....’

Tears started to fall from Yulian's eyes. He put a hand over his mouth to muffle his cry and hugged his mother's body.

- You are foremost a prince, the Glow who will lead our tribe forward in the future, and a warrior who will lead the tribe. However, since you are not an adult yet, you do not have the mission nor authority to protect the tribe just yet. So go in here. If you end up as prisoner, it will not be good for Pareia.

Knowing that Venersis's attack had started outside, Mairez tried to hide her son, but Yulian was stubbornly not listening. He was a male and a son, so he felt that he should protect his mother, who was a woman.

What Mairez had said to convince her son after feeling proud seeing the small practice shamshir in her son's hand, ended up being the last words Yulian ever heard coming out of his mother's mouth.

“Mother.....”

With his hands and face completely covered in blood, Yulian laid on his mother's chest and cried quietly. He needed to keep his mother's wish.

Although he was very young at 10 years old, he knew exactly what he had to do. If he cried loudly right now, he would simply end up a prisoner. The cost to get him back would be quite heavy as well.

“Mother, I will not be sad. I will only cry this one time. Mother, I ... this son of yours will make sure to return this grudge...I will follow the law of the desert and return it in the exact same way ... so I will not be sad.”

A boy's promise.

The child of Baguna, the Glow of Pareia, and Mairez, the Mother of Pareia.

While Yulian Provoke was making this promise, outside, the dry desert sand and the dust of the wilderness had absorbed a lot of human blood. It then combined with the wind that you often see in the desert wilderness.

A red wind befitting the name Red Desert started to blow.

Book 2-1.4 Taking Control of the Tribe (I)

Venersis remembered the incident from back then.

How could he, who was called the greatest warrior of the desert, not notice the presence in that paoe?

Venersis knew that there was someone who was hiding in the large box. He then sent the warriors out and secretly paid attention to the situation in the paoe. But after watching everything, he just decided to return.

‘If it was not her son ... would I just let them go again today like I did back then?’

Venersis was thinking. He would not kill them because of his pride as a warrior, but he might have taken them as prisoners.

Venersis grabbed two pouches of water from his pirma and threw them to Pere as he spoke.

“If I’m going to help, I should help properly. Oh, and tell that young warrior that Venersis will be waiting for him.”

Venersis turned away from Pere who was watching him with a surprised expression and directed his pirma forward. The warriors of the Desert Sword followed after him.

After watching their backs for a bit, Pere started to do what he needed to do.

He first pulled Yulian off the pirma and laid him down on the sand. He then poured the shanana on his palm, mixed it with water and dripped it onto Yulian’s dry lips.

Maybe it was his survival instincts; although Yulian was still unconscious, he drank the water Pere dripped in without letting it spill.

After feeding Yulian plenty of water, Pere took a couple gulps of water for himself. If you drink too much water while being under

the sun, you were guaranteed to become dehydrated. You won't die if you just drink enough to wet your throat.

“This is enough for me to survive.”

Holding onto the water pouch, Pere was relieved that he was able to get enough water he needed for survival and once again started to head for the Rivilde Oasis.

Grace was late. This was because Librie had arrived at the tribe one step ahead of her.

“Catch that heinous bitch!”

Librie shouted as soon as she saw Grace, but the chiefs and warriors who were gathered together in shock hesitated.

There was nobody here who did not know about Grace, the young glow's wife and the future mother of Pareia.

How could they not know the person who was always full of energy and working to make the oasis better?

“Mother ... no Librie, you, for what benefit did you hatch such a plot to hurt father and his sons? And what did you just say? Did you just say I was heinous?”

Grace was angry and started to shout and the chiefs and warriors looked back and forth between the two women before becoming anxious about the chaos that was going on in their heads.

“The Glow, Young glow, and Pere-nim have all been hit by poison! And that woman's tribe is currently chasing after the two brothers. Chief-nims, please hurry and seize that woman and save the young glow and his younger brother who are in trouble.”

The chiefs were fidgeting after hearing what Grace said.

“What are you doing! We need to hurry up and catch that heinous bitch and catch those worse than animals sons of his. Seina ... Seina ... when I went to her paoe, Seina was already dead.

I knew something big must have happened so I told my father and cousins to use greeting the glow as an excuse to visit him, and that immoral act was going on! Yulian, that immoral child and Pere knew they were caught red-handed after seeing my father and cousins and hurriedly ran away!”

As Librie shouted, the chiefs continued to fidget.

Yarumaha stepped forward and spoke.

“All chiefs and warriors, immediately escort the two of them and go to the Glow’s paoe. We must first determine if they are telling the truth.”

Listening to Yarumaha’s orders, his warriors captured Grace and Librie.

“What are you all doing! Don’t capture me, capture that bitch!”

As Librie continued to shout at the top of her lungs, the warriors looked towards Yarumaha and he started to speak to Librie.

“Please endure it for a little. Since the two of you have different stories, shouldn’t we first go meet with the Glow?”

“Didn’t I just tell you that the Glow was poisoned to death by them?”

Yarumaha shook his head as he answered.

“We must verify it. We need to see if the Glow really passed away. My mind is very chaotic as well right now, so Librie-nim, please don’t say anything and just endure. We must uncover the truth.”

At Yarumaha’s stern words, Librie shut her mouth, and Grace also silently followed after him.

Librie’s tribe warriors were already taking care of loose ends inside Glow Baguna’s paoe.

There were shamans next to Orca, and the chief shaman Tuma Takaka was next to Baguna.

“Tuma Takaka, what happened?”

Yarumaha and the chiefs urgently headed towards him and asked.

Tuma Takaka looked at Yarumaha and the chiefs running towards him with a devastated expression and started to speak.

“Glow Baguna-nim has left the desert.”

The people staggered for a bit before falling to the ground.

Perhaps, they thought probably not, Librie and Grace must have made a mistake when they said that. That’s what they were all thinking as they headed here. After Glow Baguna’s death was confirmed, they had received a great shock. He was the Glow who had earned all of their respect.

“Who dared to do such a thing!”

Yarumaha and the other chiefs let out their rage and everyone’s attention turned directly to Librie and Grace.

Librie spoke as if she was shouting.

“According to the law of the tribe, when the Glow, the Mother of Pareia, and the Young Glow are all missing, the command of the warriors and the final decisions goes to whom?”

The chiefs looked at each other for a second.

“The highest ranking person in the Glow’s family.”

Once Yarumaha answered, Librie nodded her head and started to speak.

“Then since the Glow, the Mother of Pareia, and Yulian, that immoral child has ran away, then all decisions are mine, correct?”

All of them were sitting there like mutes who had eaten honey and could not answer. Neither Librie nor Grace were people who they could not treat improperly.

“I asked if I was in charge of making the decision for the tribe.”

When Librie asked again, Yarumaha and the other chiefs nodded their heads.

‘I did it.’

Librie was cheering loudly in her mind.

Book 2-1.5 Taking Control of the Tribe (II)

“Immediately capture Grace and create a team to chase after those two criminals. We must catch them.”

Nobody could move after Librie finished speaking. Grace was so shocked she could not say anything and just stared at Librie.

“Did you not hear my order to catch that bitch right away?!”

Seeing that none of the warriors were moving even after she shouted in a sharp voice, Librie sent a signal to her family tribe’s warriors. Finally, they started to come forward.

“Wait, this does not make any sense.”

The warrior who was getting in the way of the warriors trying to capture Grace was Red Storm’s Haisha.

“Who are you to dare to block their path!”

Librie looked at Haisha and shouted, but Haisha did not pay attention to her and spoke towards the chiefs.

“I know that the rules of the desert indicate that after the Glow, the mother, and the Young Glow, the eldest in the Glow’s family temporarily acts in the Glow’s place. However, is the Young Glow Yulian-nim dead? How could we capture his first wife, Grace-nim, when Yulian-nim is still alive? The person in charge of Pareia right now is Yulian-nim.”

The moment Haisha emphasized the word temporary, the chiefs started to whisper.

“If that bastard didn’t do such an immoral thing, would he have ran away? If something happened, he should have taken control of the situation, why run instead?”

As Haisha stood there in silence since he didn’t know the reason, Grace started to shout.

“Librie, when you tried to kill father, my darling, and Pere-nim

with poison and failed, you tried to get your tribe to kill them! Pere-nim could not hold them off on his own so he ran away. Is that what you call running away!”

At that moment, everyone started to whisper again nervously. Librie knew that if she was pushed back right now, it would be the end.

“Hmph, the majority of Pareia’s oasis chiefs are all here within the tribe. Where are you saying they ran to?”

“Since your tribe prevented us from coming here, how could he come this way?”

“What a devious excuse. There is nobody in the world who does not know that the two of them are extremely good at martial arts. How could a mere couple hundred of my tribe’s warriors block their way?”

“Yulian-nim was poisoned by you and Pere-nim couldn’t use all of his strength since he needed to protect him. How could they forge a path?”

As the two women’s banter continued, the people were in chaos, but in the end, they had to follow Librie’s orders based on the rules of the desert.

The rules of the tribe were there to be used in emergency situations, and they could not go against it.

Amongst the chiefs’ silence, Librie’s tribe’s warriors moved forward to capture Grace again.

Clang.

The sound of swords clashing.

“You dare to go against my orders?”

Listening to Librie’s words, Haisha, who had stood in front of Grace to protect her, started to speak.

“I am a warrior who has pledged his loyalty to Yulian-nim. Until

I hear the truth straight from his mouth, nobody will be able to touch a single hair on our mother. If you try to take her, do not blame my sword for attacking you.”

“Catch him too and make him kneel!”

At Librie’s shout a few more warriors stepped forward to catch Grace and Haisha.

Clang.

Another sound of swords clashing and a deep voice that followed.

“Anybody who touches our mother shall die.”

The warrior who plowed through the crowd to stand in front of Grace and next to Haisha was Thrint.

Sshhhhh.

With Thrint leading the way, the sound of swords being drawn could be heard in many different places. At the same time, there were warriors moving to the front of Grace.

The Red Storm warriors.

As soon as the Red Storm warriors saw Grace coming into the tribe looking anxious, they knew the situation was not normal. Listening to her and Librie chat, they knew that it would not be a comfortable night.

Haisha ordered the members to get their weapons and bring their pirmas over, and on their way here, they had readied their pirmas not too far away.

They were trying to save Grace from this danger with their surprising decision making skills and cohesiveness.

Librie’s warriors stopped moving.

The number of warriors started to increase one by one. After a moment, all fifty seven members of Red Storm were standing in front of Grace.

“Death to anyone who dares to touch our mother.”

It wasn't a loud shout. It was low and deep.

As they spoke in unison, their words showed their determination to protect Grace even at the cost of their own lives.

“Haisha...Thrint...Shubeon...all of you.....”

The frustration that things were going wrong, the anxiety that if she doesn't hurry, it would be dangerous, and the sorrow from the fact that nobody would believe her, all of this made her very upset, but it was watching the Red Storm warriors who trusted in and followed after Yulian that made her become teary-eyed.

“Mother, do not worry. Our Lord is Yulian-nim, not that woman in front of us. And until we hear the truth from Yulian-nim's mouth, we will not believe anything. Where is Yulian-nim?”

As all of them stood with Grace behind their back to protect her, Haisha alone turned his body around to console Grace and asked.

“He is currently escaping towards the Western Desert. It'll be dangerous if we do not go right now.”

Librie knew that the situation was not going well and shouted towards the warriors.

“All warriors are to catch all of those rebels! Make sure you don't miss a single one!”

“Everyone, escort Grace-nim and escape!”

Haisha shouted loudly and with Grace in the center, they started to slowly retreat to the back where the pirmas were.

The warriors slowly went towards them but did not thoughtlessly attack them. First, the order to catch Grace did not sit well with them, and second, they knew what kind of power came from the greatswords the Red Storm warriors possessed.

With just around fifty people, they were able to cause a ruckus in the Monster's Desert and collect a ton of Monster's Souls. In

addition, that was three years ago. Everybody knew how quickly they progressed.

“I’m also going!”

At that moment, the tribe’s chief shaman, Tuma Takaka, shouted and started to run towards them. The Red Storm warriors hesitated. The Red Storm warriors who relied on the help of the shamans every day considered Tuma Takaka as a very friendly old man.

However, that was it. The Red Storm warriors who knew of his abilities hesitated for a second and looked towards Grace and Haisha, as if asking what to do. If Tuma Takaka used his spells, they might not be able to escape.

“Elder.”

Grace made a look of admiration as she called out to Tuma Takaka. He was extremely close with the Provoke family that they considered him a part of their family and Baguna’s three children all called him uncle.

As Grace called out gently to Tuma Takaka, the Red Storm warriors felt a little less nervous.

Tuma Takaka!

Librie shouted and Yarumaha also got nervous and looked towards him. Tuma Takaka started to speak.

“No matter how much I think about it, this feels too weird. I have been loyal to the Provoke family for three generations, and there is not an ounce of reason for the Young Glow to do something like this. Where can you find a father and son so close to each other? How could that enthusiastic Young Glow do such a thing? I can’t believe it. Anybody who knows him even a little bit should not be able to believe it.”

In this chaotic situation, watching his conversation buddy Tuma Takaka shifting to Grace’s side, Yarumaha hurriedly spoke.

“Tuma Takaka-nim, but still, right now, the rules of the tribe say we must listen to Librie-nim.”

Tuma Takaka nodded his head and answered.

“You’re right. So Yarumaha-nim, please assist Librie-nim and get this under control. As for me, I need to confirm it with my own eyes. No matter how many times I think about it, I believe all of this is happening under some type of misunderstanding.”

“Tuma Takaka-nim.....”

As Yarumaha could not figure out what to say, Librie thought that if things continued like this, more people would be uncertain and shouted.

“What are you all doing?! Are you going to disobey my order! Hurry up and capture all of those rebels!”

As Librie was shouting at the top of her lungs, Thrint instantly left the group and headed towards her.

Thrint was called the covert shadow, and many of his peers in Red Storm did not know the origin of his name. His specialty was that he spoke a little and was extremely cold.

However, his current movement proved that the name was fitting.

His agility that let him instantly rush forward and the flexibility to dash in between the warriors. From the moment he left the group to the point he had the greatsword at Librie’s neck, it really happened within a couple blinks.

“If you talk and run your mouth one more time, I guarantee I will kill you.”

Thrint’s unique low voice rang close to Librie’s ear.

“Do not block our path.”

Thrint’s sword was returned in a moment and his body had returned to the group. During that time, Librie, along with

everybody around her were so surprised that they could not say anything.

All of them couldn't tell what happened, and it was just a very chaotic situation.

Using that mental scare, the Red Storm escaped from Pareia with Grace. None of them tried hard to properly block their way.

Honestly speaking, they were all swept up in the delusion that they didn't even think about actually trying to get in their way.

Book 2-1.6 Next Steps

When Grace and Pere met up again, it was exactly half a day after he had met Venersis, in other words, the moment the three moons came up again.

Behind Grace were the fifty or so Red Storm warriors who had dirt all over their bodies, as if they had run nonstop, and an old man who he was very familiar with, was with them as well.

It was the chief shaman of the tribe, Tuma Takaka.

Pere welcomed them happily. He felt like things would work out now.

“How did it go, sister-in-law?”

As Pere urgently asked, Grace bit her lips and shook her head.

“Librie had already taken command of the warriors. When I arrived in the tribe, the different chiefs were all surrounding Librie.”

Pere closed his eyes tightly at Grace’s response. He thought positively, and thought that Librie’s plot was revealed when he saw Grace and the warriors. However, he was discouraged by her words.

“And?”

As Pere spoke with his eyes still closed, Grace shivered as if she didn’t even want to think about it, and spoke.

“As soon as Librie saw me, she shouted at the crowd to capture me. She said I was the traitor’s wife.”

“What?”

“Librie told them that my husband and Pere-nim killed father with poison...as well as Pere-nim’s mother Sena-nim as well.....”

Pere’s eyes opened wide. His body faltered as if the heavens were

crashing. It was his own will to fall to the ground.

Pere asked as if he couldn't believe it.

“Father.....and mother.....?”

Grace avoided Pere's gaze and lightly nodded her head. Pere, who was having a hard time even talking, let out a cry.

“Ah! Ahhhh! That bitchI curse my lips that called her mother at one point. I will kill that bitch by ripping her to pieces.”

Pere pounded his feet and flailed his arms as if he could not hold in his anger. Grace just quietly waited until he calmed down before seeing Yulian and running towards him. She started to caress his face gently.

“Yulian ... what should we do about this? Ah, ah, what should we do?”

Grace was a wise and calm woman, but the things that happened in the last two days, the shock from it, was hard to handle.

She lamented the fact that she didn't run to the tribe in the beginning. To lose the lead to that evil woman and become a rebel like this felt frustrating and unfair.

She even wanted to curse the heavens for causing something like this to happen when her husband was heading towards his dream one step at a time.

At that moment, Pere finally stopped his flailing and after looking at Grace and Yulian, he approached Tuma Takaka and spoke.

“Tuma Takaka-nim, seeing you like this truly makes me happy to see you.”

Tuma Takaka was the chief shaman in Pareia, and his powerful strength was the best in the desert. The reason Pareia was able to get eleven oases and defend against the approaches of the other tribe and even the Shuarei's Venersis, was because of the strength

of this old shaman and his assistance to the three generations of the Provoke family.

“What... just what happened? Do you know how surprised I was after hearing Librie’s words? Afterwords, I saw Grace-nim hurrying over and sharing her side of the story and I needed to confirm things with my own eyes.”

Tuma Takaka wanted to hear the truth from a Provoke. He had been connected with the family since the days of Baguna’s father, and when Baguna as well as his three sons were born, they all received his protection from opponent’s spells. For something like that to happen to these people.....

“That bitch, that ruthless bitch attempted to poison father and us brothers. I happened to be doing a fasting prayer to Neo Latin-nim so they failed.....but father and hyung-nim.....Tuma Takaka -nim, how could I pay them back for this?”

Pere spilled his guts as if he was talking to an elder in his own family. Baguna regularly relied on Tuma Takaka as the Glow, but Yulian and his brothers saw him as a highly regarded elder in the family.

Tuma Takaka felt another shock go through his body.

“Ah.....how could something like thishow could something like this happen to Pareia?”

“Please take a look at hyung-nim’s poison first. I used the Shuarei’s shanana, but he has been poisoned for a while.”

Hearing Pere’s words, Tuma Takaka wondered for a bit as to where he got the Shuarei’s shanana from, but he hurried over to Yulian since that wasn’t very important right now.

Grace was feeding Yulian Pareia’s shanana but handed him to Tuma Takaka as he approached.

“The effects of the poison.....”

The blue flower that was blooming on Yulian's face was starting to get darker. It meant that the effect of the poison was getting worse. Tumama Takaka thought about the poisons that caused this type of symptom, but even he, who had handled poison for a long time could not figure out which poison it was.

“No matter how I look at it, it is definitely not a poison of the desert. If it was, I would know what it is.”

Everyone grew more anxious hearing Tuma Takaka talk. They had full confidence that Yulian would live because they had him with them, but hearing that it was a poison even he didn't know about, everyone's faces quickly changed.

“It is definitely that bastard!”

As Grace shouted, all of them looked towards her.

“If it isn't a poison of the desert, is there anyone other than that fat pig from the Silence Empire? Librie isn't bold enough to do something like this on her own. I'm sure that Silence bastard was in the shadows.”

Everyone became angry after hearing Grace's words. Especially the Red Storm warriors, they felt a burning desire to turn the pirma around and go murder all of them.

Unlike the chiefs and other warriors who couldn't make up their minds after hearing Librie talk, the Red Storm warriors were extremely loyal to Yulian that they knew something like that would never happen and went against Librie's orders to follow after Grace. They also knew and understood Yulian's passion more than anyone else.

“Everybody, calm down. I will do what I can. Right now, it is best to get far away from here. The chiefs and the lead warriors of the large oasis might be hesitating and taking their time, but the command of the ruler is law. I'm sure they will soon follow after us.”

As someone with a lot of experience, Tuma Takaka was good at figuring out what the priority was. He asked Pere and Grace.

“Where do you think we should go?”

Pere looked to Grace. There was only one place they could go right now.

“The Rivolde Oasis is not far from here. I’m sure my father will help us. Librie wouldn’t dare to track us down to Rivolde, so let’s all go there and discuss.”

There was no way anyone else would have any other opinions.

The group started to head towards the Rivolde oasis.

Book 2-1.7 The Master Returns (I)

Chun Myung Hoon was not happy.

In fact, he was VERY unhappy. He had returned after a five year long trip around the continent, and rather than feeling the special passion of the desert people, he saw that a chaotic atmosphere was surrounding the oasis.

The number of boundary warriors who seemed like they let loose a bit.

But the biggest reason was the fact that Librie, who knew who he was, shouted for the warriors to catch him as soon as he showed up, and as a result, warriors who he was at least somewhat familiar with, were coming at him with their shamshirs. How could he be happy?

He couldn't kill them, nor could he hurt them. They were all warriors of Pareia, and will later be with his disciple.

Chun Myung Hoon was throwing a fit internally as he moved his body left and right to dodge the attacks and waited for a person who would recognize him to show up.

How long had he been dodging for? The person he was waiting for did not show up, and instead, the number of warriors coming at him started to grow. Chun Myung Hoon became extremely angry and shouted very loudly.

“Yulian!”

Although the voice was so loud that anybody in that large oasis would be able to hear it, there was nobody whose eardrums ruptured or anything like that. It was thanks to Chun Myung Hoon's ability to control his power.

“Yulian, that punk. His master has shown up and he doesn't even show his face.”

Chun Myung Hoon's voice started to bring forth more warriors.

It was because of Librie's shouting as well as the name they were hearing.

'Something is weird.'

Chun Myung Hoon was certain that something was off. His disciple was not the type to not come out even when he was shouting like this, and even if he wasn't here, it would be normal for Baguna, his family members, or even Tuma Takaka, who used to play Yulta with him, to show up.

Plus, the warriors swinging the shamshir at him didn't seem like they wanted to do it. He couldn't see their usual valiant natures at all.

'Something must have happened.'

Chun Myung Hoon was extremely smart and had great intuition; he could easily tell that something must have happened in Pareia.

He looked around trying to find a familiar face. Although five years had gone by, Chun Myung Hoon's memory was completely fresh, as if he had just seen them yesterday.

'I see one.'

The person he noticed was Veruna, someone who he often saw close to Baguna.

As his body started to fly, he instantly moved past the surrounding warriors and grabbed Veruna. He then flew at a speed that was hard to believe was humanly possible and moved far away from the rest of the people.

"What did you say?"

Chun Myung Hoon, who had grabbed Veruna, spoke as if he could not believe what he heard. He even sounded like he was in complete disbelief.

Veruna started to speak again.

“It’s something that is difficult for me to believe as well. For our Young Glow to plot out a rebellion like that and murder the Glow. This is just

“So where did Yulian go?”

“That day, Grace-nim.....”

“Grace?”

At Chun Myung Hoon’s reply, Veruna realized that Chun Myung Hoon was really out of the loop and started to explain.

“Ah! Senior may not know of it. Yulian-nim was married four years ago. You don’t know how much Yulian-nim suffered trying to look for you back then.”

“Well, I guess he was at the age to get married. So what happened to his wife, Grace?”

Veruna started to continue his explanation.

“So Grace-nim came and told us that our current interim Glow, Librie-nim, had murdered Baguna-nim, and that Yulian-nim and Pere-nim were being attacked by her tribe members. She asked us to move immediately to help them.”

“But?”

“The problem was that Librie-nim had arrived first and told us that Yulian-nim and Pere-nim had rebelled and used poison to murder Glow Baguna and the Mother of Pareia, Seina-nim. She ordered us to go and catch the two of them.”

Chun Myung Hoon was confused and asked.

“Does she have the authority to give such an order?”

“When the Glow, Mother of Pareia, and the Young Glow are not present, the command of the warriors falls to Librie-nim as the most senior member of the Glow’s family. But since the two of their stories were different, the chiefs and warriors all fell into chaos. The different chiefs of the Oasis, as well as the diplomat

from the Silence Empire were all here for the Glow's birthday, so chaos occurred in such a full oasis."

"Hoh, it doesn't fall to his younger son but to a woman....."

Veruna replied at Chu Myung Hoon's comment.

"At that time, all three of Baguna-nim's sons were not present. Even the third son, Orca-nim had fallen to the poison and was close to death."

"This....."

Chun Myung Hoon flicked his tongue as he spoke.

"When did this all happen?"

"About a week ago."

"So sad. Only if I had been here."

Chun Myung Hoon regretted the fact that he was about 10 days late because of someone's situation, and Veruna started to speak again.

"It's already an arrow that has flown by. Shall I continue with the story?"

"Ah! I cut you off. Go ahead."

"Anyways, so people split into two factions, one supporting Yulian-nim and the other cursing him, but because of the rule of the desert, they all had to follow Librie-nim's orders as she held the command of the tribe. The Red Storm warriors who didn't agree, as well as the Chief Shaman Tuma Takaka-nim, protected Grace-nim and left the tribe. Librie-nim was shouting her lungs out for us to catch them, but when nobody could be sure about what happened, how could we lay our hands on the Glow's family?"

"It must have been chaotic. So then where would Yulian be right now?"

Veruna thought for a second before responding.

“I would think that they headed towards the Rivolde tribe, where Grace-nim’s father lives. That is probably the only place they could turn to right now.”

“Can you draw me a map?”

“Will you head over there?”

“Of course. There is no reason for me to stay here. I will get more details from my disciple before making up my mind. If Glow Baguna is dead, that is like killing my friend, so I need to pay my respects to the dead.”

“Then please take me with you.”

“Hmm?”

Many people are lamenting the fact that they could not go with Grace-nim. In fact, there are quite a lot of people just waiting for Yulian-nim to return and tell us the truth with his own mouth.

“You all should have not listened to anybody and just captured all of them to figure out the truth.”

At Chun Myung Hoon’s response, Veruna nodded his head as he responded.

“We had to listen to Librie-nim because of the rule. However, watching Librie-nim ask all sorts of questions to the fat diplomat from the Silence Empire, the people had to hold back their anger. Everybody is doubting Librie-nim’s words. For those two brothers to really... even if you were to say they were possessed by the devil to do such a thing, would they have been so careless? Everybody knows of their strength, and there are so many warriors who follow them as well.”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head.

‘He is a bit useless but you have to at least admire his personality. He at least shows small signs of being good.’

Chun Myung Hoon remembered the first time he met Yulian, as well as Yulian's response when they met with the Dragon. He laughed happily once before speaking.

“Alright. Come with me. I'm sure Yulian will like it if someone who knows the situation from the inside shows up as well.”

Chun Myung Hoon made up his mind to catch up to Yulian.

Book 2-1.8 The Master Returns (II)

By the time they reached the most western oasis of the Rivolde tribe, the warriors who had already been informed were waiting for them. They were there to protect Grace, the Glow's daughter, from any potential followers.

When Dejaine Nellisi arrived at the oasis, Yulian was still wandering between life and death. Even with Tuma Takaka's magnificent healing skills, Yulian didn't look like he was going to get better.

The Red Storm warriors, as well as his family members, were all fearing that this was the end, and their faces were getting darker.

"If my darling ... if my husband Yulian dies, I will take his name. Yes, I will make sure to take his name and pay back this grudge of blood ten times worse."

Grace's eyes were filled with a murderous aura before it went back to the sad look of despair as she watched Yulian laying down next to her. She was just spilling her thoughts to her father, Dejaine Nellisi.

Grace had not moved a single step away from Yulian the last three days. She had a hard time eating anything; all she had been eating were small sips of juice squeezed from fruits.

Her lovely and shiny hair was dry and full of knots, and she was getting so thin that you could clearly tell that she was getting weaker and weaker as time went by.

Dejaine couldn't stand it anymore and was going to try to force his daughter out of there, but listening to Grace look at him while saying something like that, all he could do was stand there and listen to what his daughter had to say.

"I will hang her upside down in a tall pillar underneath the desert sun, make large holes in her shoulder and put a ton of bug bears

that enjoy eating human flesh underneath her. I will make sure to feed her everyday and lower the height of the pillar by 1 centimeter each day. I will not kill her. Until she dies from running out of blood, I will not let her die.”

Grace’s words were so fierce that she could probably kill someone with just her words, and she was pouring out terrible curses for Librie to suffer.

The thing that worried Dejaine the most was that even from a young age, this daughter of his always managed to do the things she said she would do. Nobody else knew just how much he wished Grace was born as a man because of his admiration of her tenacity and persistence.

“You’ve grown too weak. It’ll be great if Yulian wakes up, but even if he cannot wake back up, it doesn’t make sense for you to get this weak. Only healthy people can manage to get things done.”

Grace turned her head towards him as Dejaine continued speaking.

“Revenge? Of course you need to get it. If my daughter says she needs to get revenge, we must get revenge. However, if you don’t eat anything and don’t get any sleep, will you even have the strength to get your revenge? You must take care of yourself first.”

“Father, you are right. I need to be healthy to get my revenge. However, I will prepare for that once I know for sure whether my love is dead or alive. Right now, I feel worried if I don’t see his face for even a split second...just too too worried.....”

Seeing Grace’s sorrow, Dejaine approached his daughter and quietly hugged her while patting her back.

Right at that moment, there was a lot of noise outside and Dejaine shouted out to them.

“What is going on out there to cause such a commotion?”

One of the warriors ran in from outside to answer.

“There is an old man claiming to be Yulian’s master, as well as a member of the Pareia tribe named Veruna.”

“Veruna?”

Grace remembered that he was Glow Baguna’s personal warrior and ran out with Dejaine.

“Grace-nim!”

When Grace stepped out of the paoe, Veruna noticed her first and shouted towards her. Grace nodded her head and asked.

“Veruna-nim, how did you come here.....?”

Veruna looked back and forth between Chun Myung Hoon and Grace while answering.

“It is thanks to this person. This is Yulian-nim’s wife, Grace Nellisi-nim... Grace-nim, this is Yulian-nim’s master.”

Grace, who had heard many stories about Yulian’s master, weakly ran towards them and bowed her head in front of Chun Myung Hoon as she started to speak.

“Senior, I, Grace Nellisi, pay my respects to you. I’ve heard many things about you from my husband.”

Chun Myung Hoon took a long look at Grace.

“I guess my disciple at least has some luck with women. Taking a look at her aura, she has the aura of a phoenix. There’s probably no issues in the bedroom.”

Chun Myung Hoon had a satisfied expression on his face as he started to speak.

“Since you are my disciple’s wife, I will speak casually.”

“Senior, of course.”

“You look very weak right now. I heard that you have suffered quite a bit. However, you do not need to worry anymore.”

Although Grace did not know the reason why, hearing Chun

Myung Hoon speak made her feel calm. Was it because of all the stories she had heard from Yulian? She felt like everything would get better since he was here.

- If I'm being honest with you, my master is not human. When he first arrived, he didn't understand any of the languages of the continent, and his method of doing things were very different than what we consider to be normal. However, each and every one of his words hold weight and none of it is useless. His abilities are out of this world. I told you about it right? He was able to put out a dragon's breath of fire with a single wave of his hand.

Yulian often spoke to Grace about Chun Myung Hoon. Most of the time it was about his master's ruthlessness, but Grace knew more than anyone else that hidden in those words were a sense of deep admiration and trust.

“Senior, this Grace is feeling calm just by meeting with you.”

Chun Myung Hoon was satisfied at Grace's actions and words and smiled again.

“So, where is Yulian?”

“In the barracks... he is currently floating back and forth between life and death because of poison. Because it is not a poison of the desert, everybody is just helplessly watching.....Senior, is there anything you can do?”

Chun Myung Hoon had a look of surprise as he spoke.

“Let us go take a look.”

When Chun Myung Hoon entered the barracks, Yulian was indeed laying down as if he was dead. Seeing his disciple like this after not seeing him for five years, Chun Myung Hoon was very unhappy and started to frown.

“How long has it been?”

“About ten days. We have worked hard during that time to find an antidote, but nothing seems to be working. Senior.....”

As Grace answered restlessly by his side, Chun Myung Hoon lifted up his sleeves and sat Yulian down. He then put his hands on Yulian's back and chest before his frown became even bigger.

The poison had into his main acupuncture points, and was starting to seep into his heart.

Book 2-1.9 The Master Returns (III)

If he had arrived just one day later, even he probably wouldn't have been able to do anything about it.

“Go fill a large pot with clear, cold water. The size of the pot should be one that is big enough to completely cover Yulian. First, I will need five of those pots.”

At Chun Myung Hoon's order, Grace urgently ordered people to prepare the pots. She also called someone else to go get Pere, the Red Storm warriors, and Tuma Takaka.

Chun Myung Hoon put his hands on Yulian's yeongdaehyul (the spirit tower of a person, located in the center of the back, also known as the ling tai acupuncture point) and let the poison spread throughout the body to heal him. It was a weird way to heal him.

“Senior.....”

Seeing that Yulian's face turned lighter but that in return, Yulian's whole body started to turn blue once Chun Myung Hoon started to touch him, Grace was worried and cautiously called out to Chun Myung Hoon even though she was thinking to herself, ‘I shouldn't talk, I shouldn't talk.’

“Do not worry. I plan on removing the poison using his whole body, so I spread the poison that was gathered in one location out.”

A bit later, hearing that the pots were ready, Chun Myung Hoon lifted Yulian up and headed outside the palace.

Chun Myung Hoon took a look at the water and frowned a bit. The water was not as clear as he thought it would be.

“Boil the water and then let it cool. You said Tuma Takaka is here too, right?”

“Yes, senior.”

The moment Grace answered, they could hear Tuma Takaka's

voice coming from far away.

“Chun Myung Hoon, you have finally returned. This is truly the help of the heavens, the help of the heavens.”

“Tuma Takaka, it has been a while. A plot like this even with you there, this Chun Myung Hoon was very surprised.”

Tuma Takaka was the person Chun Myung Hoon was the closest to while he was in the desert. He was the only old man who could at least somewhat keep up with him in Yulta, they both admired each other's knowledge, and since they were similar in age, they were able to casually speak with each other.

“I couldn't do anything about it since all of it happened without warning.”

Tuma Takaka shrugged his shoulders before noticing Yulian in Chun Myung Hoon's arms.

“Yulian-nim... can you cure him? It is beyond my powers so you are the only one I can rely on.”

“I can't let my disciple die in front of my eyes. But this water is not clear enough. I told my disciple's wife to boil the water and cool it down, but I hope you can quickly cool the boiling water with that spell of yours.”

Listening to what Chun Myung Hoon needed, Tuma Takaka looked inside the pot before asking.

“So it just needs to be cold and clear?”

“That is correct. In order to remove this poison that is full of yang energy, the water needs to be cold and clear. The colder the better.”

Tuma Takaka nodded his head and answered.

“I will get it ready for you soon. Just wait.”

Tuma Takaka moved his body left and right as he walked around a pot. Words that sounded like gibberish were coming out of his

mouth following a rhythm, and every so often, his wooden staff would strike the ground.

Daaaaang~ Dang~

As Tuma Takaka hit the pot with his staff, a metallic sound came out of the wooden pot.

“It is ready. Take a look.”

Chun Myung Hoon took a look into the pot after hearing Tuma Takaka’s words, and indeed, the water that was a bit dirty was now so clear that the eyes of the people staring at it would get cleaned as well.

After putting his finger in to verify the extremely cold temperature of the water as well, Chun Myung Hoon looked at Tuma Takaka while speaking.

“One day, those spells of yours, I will definitely learn it.”

“I’ve been setting the foundation for my spells for over fifty years. If you have the skills to take it, go ahead.”

Chun Myung Hoon smiled at Tuma Takaka’s retort and thought to himself while looking at the water in the pot.

‘No matter how many times I see it, it is an amazing talent. If you use some type of ice magic, you could make it cold, but how do you explain this clear water?’

Remembering about Yulian in his arms, he removed all of Yulian’s clothes and put him into the pot feet first, all the way until he was completely submerged.

“If you do that, how can he breathe.....”

As Grace was shocked seeing Yulian’s whole body go into the pot and tried to step forward, Tuma Takaka grabbed her shoulder and shook his head.

“Just stand back and watch. There is definitely a reason for that man to be doing this.”

At Tuma Takaka's persuasion, Grace just stood in place with a nervous expression.

After submerging Yulian into the water, Chun Myung Hoon hugged the pot with his arms and started to bring forth his ki.

In an instant, the water in the pot started to spin, and as it started to speed up, Yulian started to spin with the water as well.

‘How is this possible.’

What happened next made everybody's jaws drop.

The speed of the spinning water became so fast that the water started to shoot up into the sky in the shape of the pot. Even while doing that, not a single drop of water fell out.

“The color of the water.... The color of the water.....”

The people started to talk. The clear water that was shooting up to the sky was starting to turn black.

“Tuma Takaka, please prepare the next pot.”

As Chun Myung Hoon spoke while just turning his head to keep his arms around the pot, Tuma Takaka urgently nodded and headed to the next pot. He then used the same method to turn the water clear and freezing cold.

“It is ready!”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head and tapped on the pot. Yulian's body started to float up and accurately fell towards the next pot.

It was amazing. Without moving a single finger, he was able to move Yulian, whose large size was well-known throughout the desert, to the location of his choosing.

Even Dejaime Nellisi forgot about his appearance as Glow and dropped his jaws while watching this scene play out.

What they saw in the first pot repeated in all five pots. The only

difference would be that although the water in the first pot turned completely black, as he changed pots, the color got lighter and lighter.

The five pots were filled with new water and the same process was repeated. After the eighth pot, the water did not change color anymore.

Chun Myung Hoon must have been at least a little bit tired, as his face was a bit red.

“That should do it. Lay him back down. He should wake up in a little bit.”

Hearing Chun Myung Hoon’s words, Pere and Grace hurried over to Yulian and wrapped a cloth around him, and carried him back into the paoe to lay him down.

To be submerged in that cold water with the body of a patient, his body was like ice. Grace worked hard to massage Yulian’s body for about thirty minutes.

After thirty minutes, Yulian’s eyelids started to shake before he opened his eyes.

“Ah...my dear, you’ve woken up.”

Book 2-1.10 The Master Returns (IV)

Grace was finally relieved after seeing Yulian open his eyes and fell into his brace.

That he would wake up... she firmly believed that he would wake up, but it was true that there was a tiny bit of doubt that was running through her mind the entire time.

“It’s because you are too weak. How much must you have been slacking off while I was gone that a single glass of poisonous water would make you like this?”

Yulian heard the blunt and familiar voice in his ear.

“Master.....”

Yulian suddenly sat up that Grace, who was in his embrace started to fall.

“Ah! Grace, sorry.”

Yulian quickly grabbed Grace to prevent her from falling and turned his head.

“You’ve finally coming to your senses? The poison is all gone, so if you pretend you are still sick, I will kill you myself.”

“Master, when did you return? Oh, but where is this.....?”

Yulian looked around him. He was not in his paoe or his father’s paoe.

At Yulian’s response, Chun Myung Hoon scoffed in disbelief.

“I save you from almost dying, but you’re an idiot who didn’t even know he could have died. Yes, if I wasn’t here, you’re the type of punk to ask King Yama ‘what? I died?’ aren’t you?”

“What are you talking about?”

Yulian was confused at Chun Myung Hoon’s words and looked at his master with a confused expression before turning to Grace.

“Do you not remember anything?”

“Remember? I was in my father’s paoe drinking alcohol with father and my brothers. Orca said he had some good alcohol so I drank it...and while I was drinking it

He remembered until drinking Orca’s alcohol. However, he did not remember anything after that.

Grace continued the restory on his behalf.

“You fainted. There was poison in the alcohol. You and father fainted because of the poison, and Librie’s tribe’s warriors immediately charged into the paoe.

Grace explained everything that happened to Yulian.

“How... how could something like this.....”

While listening to Grace’s explanation, Yulian was so angry he could not finish his words and just sat there with his fists clenched tightly on top of his thighs. Something he could not believe had happened.

“Father? What happened to father?”

Yulian realized the situation and urgently asked about his father Baguna’s condition. Grace responded with a sad expression.

“I heard that your father still had a little bit of consciousness after drinking the alcohol. After father realized the rebellion that was happening, he ordered Pere-nim to take you and escape. There were too many warriors from Librie’s group that Pere-nim could not escape with both father and you.....”

“So, what happened? What happened after that?”

“While Pere-nim and the Red Storm warriors were escaping with you to Rivolde where my father was, Librie sent people to each of the oasis. She said that you ... that you murdered father and ran away and to kill you as soon as they found you.....”

Thump! Crack!

Yulian was extremely angry and hit the couch; and the sound of the couch breaking could be heard.

“AAAAAAAAAH!”

Soon, Yulian’s sorrow-filled voice rang throughout the paoe.

“Father!”

Everyone looked towards Yulian with sad expressions, and even Chun Myung Hoon turned his face away. Even he knew just how close the father and son were.

Yulian shouted like that for a while before suddenly stopping.

“Librie, I, that... that... bitch

Yulian’s eyes were extremely red and a murderous aura poured out of Yulian’s body.

“Don’t just tell me, show me with your actions.”

As Chun Myung Hoon’s words reached Yulian’s ears, Yulian looked around him before standing up and bowing to the people around him.

“It looks like all of you have suffered quite a bit because of me. There is something I need to think about. Please let me be alone for a bit.”

At Yulian’s request, everybody went outside the paoe. They couldn’t feel the shock that Yulian was feeling, but they could imagine just how much shock he was in.

Yulian came out of the paoe around the time the first moon started to come up.

“Are you okay?”

Chun Myung Hoon was waiting outside the paoe and asked once he saw Yulian.

“It is all thanks to you, master. Where did the rest of the people go?”

“I sent them all away. It looked like there was something you needed to tell me.”

“You saw them?”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head at Yulian’s question.

“I’m sorry master. I went against your word. I was prepared to be beaten to death by you when I passed on the martial arts to my wife and the Red Storm warriors. It was something that I really needed to do...I’m sorry, master.”

Watching his disciple bowing in front of him, Chun Myung Hoon continued to worry. Chun Myung Hoon had seen the Red Storm warriors training and noticed signs of his martial arts.

His strength was not something that could thoughtlessly be shared in this world. He confirmed that thought while traveling through the western continent with the dragon for five years.

In this world, those who could even just barely manage to use some sword force were known as masters and received a lot of respect. Of course, there weren’t that many people who could let out their sword force in China, but it wasn’t as rare as it was here. In a large or famous sect back in China, there were at least ten or so masters at that level. However, to pass on such martial arts in this world would end up causing chaos.

Chun Myung Hoon continued to worry before finally asking.

“How many of them are there in total?”

“There are fifty-seven of them.”

“How much do they know?”

“I taught them the basic methods and foundational stances. I did not dare to teach the rest before getting your permission.....”

Chun Myung Hoon cut Yulian off.

“That is it. I cannot accept anything more than that. It may be called the basic methods, but if they train long enough, they will

figure things out on their own. That is the core of my arts. You are trying to make Pareia into a monster land in the continent aren't you?"

As Chun Myung Hoon indicated, although it was known as the basic methods, the thing that made the Gun Gon Shrine Law unique was the strength that came from setting the foundation and gaining experience.

If it was someone with Yulian's level of potential, with about twenty years of harsh training, they would all become masters for sure.

"Thank you for giving me permission."

Getting Chun Myung Hoon's approval made Yulian extremely happy and he kneeled in front of Chun Myung Hoon and kowtowed.

"Yulian, I will give you a stern warning. I will approve of you having a kid in the future and passing down the martial arts to him, however, it must end with the current group of warriors. You may only pass it down to your blood. Nobody else."

"Thank you master."

"There is no reason to be so happy. If I find that you've went against my word one more time, I will chop off your head myself."

Yulian did not stop smiling even at Chun Myung Hoon's harsh words.

By the time the next generation of Red Storm was created, the current Red Storm warriors' abilities should be about his current level.

If that's the case, even if it was not the GGSL, they can pass down the other training methods they have learned, and that alone will make them stronger than any of the other tribes.

Plus, didn't his master say he could pass it down to his own

children?

Yulian kowtowed again and thanked him.

“Thank you very much, master.”

“Okay, so, what are you planning to do from here on? Glow Baguna was my friend as well. If you are okay with it, I want to get the revenge for you. Then the situation would calm down quickly; wouldn’t that be great?”

Chun Myung Hoon was saying that he would get rid of all of those involved in the plot and restore things as they were, but surprisingly, Yulian shook his head.

“I’m sure everyone will want me to take care of it with my own hands. In the end, this is an internal issue for the Provoke family, and it will only mean something if I take care of it myself.”

“You make it sound like I’m an outsider.”

As Chun Myung Hoon spoke like he was upset, Yulian quickly shook his head.

“Your disciple treats his master as the heavens, how could you say such sad words?”

Yulian, who seemed to have regained his energy with Chun Myung Hoon giving him permission to train the red Storm warriors, spoke with a vigorous voice. This made Chun Myung Hoon feel better.

“It is fine. As long as you feel that way, that is what we will do. Then I will not take any part.”

“Master, just the fact that you are next to me makes me feel like I have hundreds of warriors with me.”

Chun Myung Hoon, who seemed to like what his disciple had to say, started to laugh while waving his hand once and returned to his paoe.

Yulian waited until his master disappeared before looking at the

moon in the sky.

‘I will make sure to get my revenge.’

Yulian clenched his fists so tightly that his fingernails were digging into his palms.

End of Chapter 1.

Book 2-2.1 The State of Pareia

A Bloodless Civil War

Compared to the things that happened, it was resolved too easily.

Should he pity their stupidity?

Or, should he blame the woman who made everything a mess?

“What do you mean?”

Librie shouted at Nurapa, the leader of the chiefs of the Oasis of Many Palm Trees.

“I am saying that we cannot serve Orca-nim as Glow.”

“That’s what I’m asking. What do you mean by that? Glow Baguna has passed away and his first and second sons are responsible for it. Shouldn’t that make it obvious that our Orca will succeed the position of Glow?”

Nurapa looked around at the other chiefs before speaking.

“In the history of Pareia, we have never served a boy who has not even completed his coming-of-age ceremony as the Glow.”

“Orca will be an adult next year so why is that such a big issue? You lot, are you trying to make it so Yulian or Pere can be the glow?”

“If those two really did murder the Glow, how could they be Pareia’s Glow?”

Librie glared at Nurapa at his response.

“That means that all of you still don’t believe my side of the story.”

“That is not it. We are trying to let you know that it is time for Pareia’s Glow to move to a different family. We must decide on a new Glow at the gathering of the Chiefs.”

“Blasphemy. You’re against our Orca becoming the Glow because you are trying to take the position for yourself.”

Nurapa looked around, as if to ask for help.

Yarumaha of the Deep Deep Oasis started to speak, as if he understood Nurama’s intentions.

“That is not what Nurapa is trying to say. If there is nobody in the Provoke family to take on the position of the Glow, it is only fitting for the chiefs to gather to determine a new Glow. As Nurapa mentioned, there has never been a case where a boy who has not had their coming-of-age ceremony has taken the position of Glow. Librie-nim, as you mentioned, we can wait until Orca-nim completes his coming-of-age ceremony next year, however, what kind of traits does Orca-nim show that says he will make an outstanding Glow?”

Librie started to get nervous seeing that Yarumaha, the most revered chief, agreed with Nurapa’s suggestion.

This wasn’t it. She needed Orca to take the position of Glow and start building up his power base so that they could fend off Yulian and Pere’s attempt at retribution.

Because of her nervousness and anxiousness, Librie ended up saying something that ended up making the Desert warriors angry.

“Our Orca has earned the trust of the Silence Empire. If that boy becomes the Glow, we can receive the protection of the Silence Empire. When that happens, we won’t need to worry about something like the Shuarei anymore, so our Orca must become the Glow.”

All of the chiefs instantly frowned after hearing what Librie had to say, and even Janet, who had been quietly sitting in the back started to frown as well.

‘This useless woman can’t even eat the feast that I’ve prepared for her. Did sje think they would be jumping up in joy if she

mentions us? I really can't understand this woman.'

That's what Janet thought about Librie's speech, and he also started to think that it would be hard to set a puppet Glow here in Pareia. However, it shouldn't be a big issue.

He managed to get rid of Yulian and Pere, who would have been a thorn in their side, and with all of Pareia shaking like this, he could regain the things that he thought he was going to lose. None of the chiefs will be able to go against their requests.

'All we have to do is sit back and watch before returning with the things we want. If we are lucky, we will also be able to set up a puppet Glow as well.'

Internally, Janet had a devious smile, and he decided to just quietly watch how the situation goes.

Sanatu, who had the worst temper of all of the chiefs that have gathered, started to shout at Librie.

"Since when have we decided on Pareia's Glow with Silence's permission! Since when did our warriors of Pareia feared going to war with the Shuarei?"

Looking past at whether their temper was good or bad, Librie had left a large scar on their pride. That was why all of the chiefs were glaring at Librie.

The shocked Librie urgently looked towards her father Duripue and Janet for help, but Janet just shook his head while Duripue was regretting the actions he took while being manipulated by this terrible daughter of his.

However, he could not just sit back and watch.

Duripue got up from his seat and started to calm the angry chiefs down.

"I'm sure that is not what she meant. The news about Glow Baguna's passing has surely spread throughout the desert. I'm sure

there will be a tribe drooling at taking our Pareia's lands, and the Shuarei will also not sit still."

The mumbling in the paoe quieted down after hearing Duripue's words. That was the thing they had to pay the most attention to right now.

"Let's first return to our individual oasis and prepare our defenses. We will leave the work of the Glow to Librie-nim for now. Not because she is my daughter, but because Librie-nim has the command according to the rule of the Desert. Nobody has any complaints right? Once everything has settled down, the chiefs can gather together to decide on a new Glow."

Because what Duripue has said was true, the other chiefs agreed and started to exit the paoe chatting with the people they were close with.

Once everybody left, Duripue started to speak to Librie.

"You made a mistake."

"What did I do?"

At Librie's retort, Duripue sighed internally before shaking his head.

It was certain that she made a grave mistake. However, it was already spilled water. Duripue just had to convince his daughter.

"What did you plan on doing by touching their pride? You need their support in order for Orca to become the Glow."

"Father, even you heard what they were saying."

Duripue let out a sigh before starting to speak.

"Sigh~ It may be temporary, but currently, you are Pareia's Glow. Speak your mind but go with their plan for the time being. You need to stall for time. Orca just needs one year to finish his coming-of-age ceremony. You can start trying to convince them at that point. We need to highlight Orca's abilities and earn him some

merits he currently does not have, so that there won't be any issues of him becoming the Glow. We need to make sure there won't be any issues even if Yulian or Pere try to cause any issues in the future. Do you understand what I am saying?"

After listening, Librie felt that what Duripue had said was right and nodded her head.

On the other hand, as they were heading out of the paoe, Sanatu started to speak to Yarumaha in a grumpy voice.

"Honestly, I cannot believe Librie-nim's words. Yarumaha-nim, you were there at that time too. You were there when Yulian-nim convinced us with his extremely passionate speech. But for him to murder Glow Baguna and cause a rebellion on that same day? Logically, no, even if you consider Yulian-nim to be abnormal, does that make any sense?"

Yarumaha just silently shook his head.

"Stop just shaking your head and say something."

"What would an old man like me have to offer?"

"Don't say things like that. I'm sure you know just how much everybody is focusing on your words now that Glow Baguna has left this world. I believe there is a high chance that you will become the Glow if the chiefs get to decide on the new Glow."

Yarumaha shook his head again at Sanatu's words and started to speak.

"You cannot select me. I am too old to be the Glow and none of my children have the aptitude to be the Glow."

"Then are you just going to sit back and watch?"

"I have many thoughts going on as well. However, if we start getting on each other's bad sides because of the Glow selection, we will be eaten up by the Shuarei and that devious Silence. That is why I am holding back."

At Yarumaha's words, Sanatu, as well as the other nearby chiefs all admired his wisdom.

He definitely saw things differently than they did.

"Then what do you plan to do?"

"First, we must prepare our defenses. There is no way the Shuarei will let go of this opportunity. The Wikaly tribe to the north has been aiming for us as well. Tell the warriors to not let down their guards. The Young Glow brothers are not dead yet."

Everyone looked at each other after his meaningful words. They couldn't tell the reason this wise old man said the last thing that he did. Yarumaha looked around at the chiefs looking at him with blank expressions before speaking again.

"Why are you just standing around? Prepare to return to your individual oasis as soon as possible. Don't forget what I just said as well."

After that, he headed towards his paoe. As he was leaving, the remaining chiefs stared at Yarumaha's back before hurriedly heading back to prepare to head back to their individual oasis.

Book 2-2.2 Yulian's Course of Action (I)

As soon as the morning came, Yulian headed to the Glow's paoe to meet with the Rivolde's Great Glow, Dejaine Nellisi. Once he arrived, he found Dejaine who had just woken up.

"You came very early."

"I'm sorry to disturb your sleep so early in the morning, Glow Dejaine-nim."

"No worries, I always wake up at this time. Anyways, are you feeling okay?"

"I feel like I can immediately run around and hunt down a thousand wild animals and monsters."

At Yulian's confident answer, Dejaine smiled before asking.

"That's good to hear. Let's get to the point. I'm sure you came to look for me so early in the morning since you had something you wanted from me."

Yulian nodded his head and got straight to the point.

"I hope you can lend me two hundred of Rivolde's valiant warriors."

Dejaine, who was curious as to what kind of plan Yulian would have come up with, was surprised at this request.

"That's it?"

Yulian nodded his head.

"Yes, that is it."

As Yulian confirmed his request, Dejaine was shocked again.

Honestly speaking, Dejaine thought Yulian would request a minimum of 5,000 warriors. Of that, the amount of warriors he could lend Yulian was around 3,000. That was the most he could spare in order to protect the oasis that the Rivolde controlled.

However to just need two hundred.....

“You mean to tell me you can overpower them with only two hundred warriors?”

“I have the Red Storm warriors as well as Pareia’s Chief Shaman, Tuma Takaka-nim.”

“Even so, the total number is less than 300. I know your Red Storm has many veteran warriors, and the warriors I would lend you will all be strong warriors who could rival their strength, but Pareia has so many valiant warriors. What can you do with that small amount.....?”

Yulian shook his head as he responded.

“There is no reason to go against all of them. What I need the most right now is time. I’m thankful that I was able to recover quickly and plan things out. I’m sure it was my father blessing me from the heavens.”

“Tell me. What do you plan to do?”

Yulian looked at Dejaine. Dejaine was his deceased father’s sworn brother, and his wife’s father. In addition, it was because he had such a great influence that he was known as the Great Glow.

Yulian was sure Dejaine was tempted by Librie. There is no way that the devious Janet didn’t think about the aftermath of the rebellion. The stupid Librie would have just followed whatever he told her to do.

Yulian asked.

“There is something I need to first ask you as the Great Glow of Rivolde, as well as my father-in-law.”

“Ask.”

“What did Librie request?”

Dejaine hesitated at Yulian’s question. For a moment, he thought that someone released the details of that meeting. However, there

was no way his son-in-law, who woke up yesterday and realized what happened before setting up his course of action, would know about it.

‘I’m sure it is just his intuition. His extremely sharp intuition.’

Dejaine thought like that as he started to laugh.

“Are you doubting me?”

“If I doubted you, I would have disappeared and you would not know where I have gone. I choose to trust the Great Glow and my father-in-law. However, I feel like I need to know. That is why I am asking.”

Dejaine was satisfied at Yulian’s answer and responded.

“I’m sure if that was the case, you wouldn’t ask like this either. Fine, I will tell you. About a day after you arrived here, Librie sent someone over. She promised that she would hand over two of Pareia’s 11 oasis in return for us catching you and returning you to Pareia as soon as you got here, or not giving you any help and pretending like we didn’t see anything.”

“This! What a heinous woman.”

He had anticipated it, but hearing Dejaine say it out loud made him extremely angry, leading him to shout.

“I thought that it would be better for me to pretend like I didn’t know what was going on and accepted the request.”

At Dejaine’s word, Yulian looked towards Dejaine with a shocked expression.

“Why are you looking at me like that? You need to make your opponent feel at ease in order to easily stab them in the back.”

“.....”

This was why you could not ignore the old warriors. He was a very scary person, fitting the many years he has sat in the position of Glow.

“You are amazing. And very scary, Glow Dejaine-nim.”

Dejaine smiled at Yulian’s words and responded.

“With just this much, I kept my loyalty to your father Baguna, as well as the love I have for you as my son-in-law. I am saying this because it was brought up, but I’m sure you know better than I do that there needs to be a compensation for this help.”

Dejaine’s words were expected and Yulian accepted it. And believed.

Dejaine Nellisi. His father-in-law was someone he could spill everything to.

“Of course. Once we handle the rebels and defend against the Shuarei’s attack, my gratitude for your help in this endeavor, I will return it a thousand, no ten thousand fold.”

Dejaine was very happy. The only thing that continues to develop as you get older is your ability to read people.

His son-in-law was a really great warrior. He will become a hero. Dejaine believed that this promise will definitely be worth quite a bit in the future.

“Can I ask you about your plan?”

Yulian started to share everything he thought about throughout the night.

“Time is of the essence. Before Janet and Librie can cause any more issues, I need to go around to each of Pareia’s oasis.”

“For what reason?”

“I need to visit them individually to get their sworn loyalty. I trust in the wise chiefs of Pareia. I know that they will recognize that this plot was Librie and Janet’s doing.”

Dejaine challenged him.

“And if they did not?”

“I’m sure you’re aware. The position of Glow is one that only those who have been recognized as deserving can hold. Unless your abilities are recognized, no, more importantly, they will not accept Orca, who has not even completed his coming-of-age ceremony to be the Glow. I’m sure they will think that it will be smarter to pick a new Glow from a different family. By now, the chiefs should be meeting to discuss this issue.”

Dejaine could not find any fault with Yulian’s logic. The position of Glow in a tribe was not something that a little kid who has not completed his coming-of-age ceremony could hold.

If it was his son-in-law’s other brother Pere who had plotted like this, it would have been quite difficult.

“I guess you should be thankful that it wasn’t your immediate younger brother.”

Yulian smiled at Dejaine’s words as he responded.

“Although I lost my father because of this incident, I have gained my younger brother. If Pere was the one who caused this, I’m sure I would not have had any way to fight back.”

Yulian had the same thought as Dejaine.

“If it was Pere... if Pere had done this, everything would have been over.”

Book 2-2.3 Yulian's Course of Action (II)

Yulian got out of his thoughts and continued on.

“I also need some strong pirmas.”

“Of course. I will prepare everything for you. However, not everything in the world goes the way you want it to go. In the case that an oasis has already promised their loyalty to Orca, wouldn't it be pretty dangerous? So I will give you 1,000 warriors. With over 1,000 warriors, you should be able to escape from such predicaments.”

As Dejaine was worrying about potential dangers like a wise old person, Yulian shook his head and responded.

“If we're being honest, I have an ally who is greater than any army in the world. If he goes with me, I know there is no way I will fall into any danger.”

“Who is this ally? He? You are talking about one person?”

“Yes, it is a single person. However, he is someone that all of the Red Storm warriors and I could attack together and he still wouldn't bat an eye. Rather, he would be able to overpower us with a single finger. He is a very strong individual.”

“Are you perhaps talking about the old man who cured your poison yesterday?”

“He is my master. He is quite violent but he cherishes me, so you don't have to worry.”

Dejaine was full of curiosity at Yulian's words and decided to ask.

“You're saying that old man's abilities are really that great, huh? When I saw him yesterday, I could tell that he probably had some amazing skills, but enough to easily take down you and all of Red Storm attacking together?”

“Hahaha. My father was in awe as well.”

“Fine. Since you put it that way, I will no longer worry. So, when do you plan on departing?”

“Glow Dejaine-nim, while you are preparing the warriors and pirmas, I will finish getting the Red Storm warriors ready.”

“I understand. I will get them ready right away.”

“Thank you very much.”

Dejaine pointed at Yulian with his finger before saying one last thing.

“Do not forget the promise.”

“Hahaha.”

Yulian laughed loudly before nodding his head and leaving Dejaine's paoe.

There actually wasn't much to get ready.

All he had to do was say something that will get them fired up.

‘Librie. The woman whom I once called my mother. I will show you that the punishment for rebelling is quite severe.’

Yulian thought like that as he started to walk quickly. He planned on leaving as soon as Glow Dejaine finished getting everything ready.

Yulian was able to see Pere, who was watching the Red Storm warriors practice.

“Pere!”

As Yulian called out to him in a loud voice, Pere turned his head and looked towards Yulian.

Seeing Pere who looked like he wanted to say something but couldn't say anything, Yulian spoke first.

“Thank you. I tried to look for you yesterday to tell you, but I was not able to do so. Pere, thank you very much.”

As Yulian thanked him and grabbed Pere's hand, Pere had a nervous look on his face as he moved his hands away before speaking.

"Do not be like this. It is embarrassing."

"I never imagined that it would be you who saved my life."

At Yulian's words, Pere spoke as if he was angry.

"What did you think of me...did you see me as someone who would betray my brother?"

"No, but didn't you have your own ambitions? If you had left everybody behind and ran away to inform the tribe, everybody would have died and you would have become the Glow. At first, I was surprised that you didn't do that."

"I am also a desert warrior and a man of the Provoke family. I do not use such underhanded tactics. Plus, hyung, I.....I wanted to beat you fairly and become Glow, I wouldn't do it like this."

"That is why I am both sorry and thankful to you. I'm sorry for being so stupid that I didn't know your feelings, and thankful that you helped me realize it."

Pere looked away at Yulian's words and started kicking the sand under his feet as he started to talk again.

"Hyung-nim, the thing you said then ... about unifying the desert and making sure nobody can look down on us, hearing that, I realized that your ambition is at a different level than mine. All I had been thinking about was how to show that I was better than you to become the Glow....."

"I'm very thankful that you understand my dream."

"Hyung-nim, you are Pareia's Glow from here on. So please don't speak to me that way. Once you officially become the Glow, I will even start speaking formally to you. Also, this Pere, swears my loyalty to you from now on, so do not worry about that."

At Pere's words, Yulian was extremely touched and pulled Pere in for a hug.

"Knowing that us brothers will combine our will to reach for the same dream, this hyung of yours is extremely excited.

Pere tried to push Yulian away as he answered.

"Even I am still not used to this new me. Please stop being like this. It's uncomfortable."

Seeing Pere speak as if he was shy, Yulian smiled looking at his younger brother.

This was the brother who had never called him hyung before; it was normal for it to be awkward.

"Did you figure out your plan?"

Pere hid his awkwardness and asked. Yulian revealed his thoughts to Pere. Pere nodded his head and agreed with Yulian's decision but asked some questions.

"Hyung, I believe you are right. However, won't it be dangerous? If even one thing goes wrong, we cannot return alive. If it is an order, I will follow you, but I cannot agree to such a dangerous plan."

Pere seemed to have the same concerns as Dejaine Nellisi. Yulian's plan was quite reckless.

To travel through all of Pareia's oasis with less than three hundred warriors trying to convince the chiefs. With the internal affairs in a mess like right now, Pareia's situation will be known by other tribes. The Shuarei, as well as the increasing number of tribes drooling over Pareia's oasis, will have put the security at each oasis on high alert.

Yulian convinced Pere.

"I need to believe in what father has continued to do all these years. I also need to believe in the things you and I have done until

now. If we try to take things back by force, there will be too much damage on both sides and Pareia will become the weakest tribe in the desert. If that happens, our dream will become at least ten years further away.”

“However.....”

“I believe that Pareia’s chiefs are not such pushovers. They have eyes and ears. Once they realize everything that has happened is Librie and Silence’s Janet’s doing, it will be easy to convince them.”

As Yulian spoke convincingly, Pere had no choice but to agree.

“If you say so, I will follow you. What is it you want me to do?”

“All you have to do is show them that you are with me. We just have to instill the belief in them that us brothers will work together to help Pareia rise up like a storm.”

“I guess, since we are not going to fight them. Hyung-nim, I understand your intentions. Then I will prepare as well. Anyways, those warriors are quite amazing.”

“What do you think? Aren’t they just full of energy? They are extremely important warriors who will help us achieve the dreams for Pareia.”

“Hyung-nim, I am envious of you. If I knew things would be like this, I would have made some warriors to be with me as well.”

“What is the problem? You and I are no longer separated. I will make you one of the leaders of Red Storm. Get along with them. We are now all one.”

Pere became emotional once more at his brother’s words.

Book 2-2.4 Visiting the Oasis (I)

One of the warriors of the Cold Oasis closed his eyes a bit before pointing towards a direction.

The warrior's duty was to walk around the oasis getting rid of any monsters or wild animals, as well as being on the lookout for any potential invasions. It was a very important job.

It didn't take long for one of his fellow warriors to look in that direction, and for the rest of the warriors to look in that direction as well.

"It is a dust cloud."

"And quite a big one. In order for that much dust to be raised, it has to be hundreds of warriors."

"They are coming very quickly."

As soon as multiple warriors shared what they were thinking, the decision was made. They didn't hear any news that a group of the tribe's warriors went out, and they also didn't hear any news about any group of warriors coming to them from any of Pareia's other oasis. This meant that the individuals responsible for that dust cloud were invaders.

Instantly, there was a single warrior who turned his pirma around and headed towards the oasis.

He was not running away. His job was to quickly head back to the tribe and inform them if there were any invasions.

As for the remaining warriors, they let out a long whistle, alerting their fellow warriors in the area before heading towards the direction of the dust cloud.

They needed to verify the information.

If they confirmed that it was invaders, they needed to make sure the enemy focused on them.

The longer they could stall them meant more time for the warriors at the oasis to better prepare for battle.

As they were heading towards the dust cloud, internally, the warriors were more relaxed than usual. It was because the lead warriors of the oasis had increased the number of warriors on watch to at least double the usual amount.

With that many warriors on watch, they were guaranteed to notice the enemy at least one hour before they reached the oasis. Thanks to that, they didn't need to feel too much of a burden with their duty.

Four warriors of the nearby Cool Oasis had already reached a distance not too far from the dust cloud. The young warrior in the front of the dust cloud lifted up his hand to stop the warriors following after him. He had an expression that made it seem like he knew they would be coming.

“We are Pareia's warriors responsible for patrolling these oasis. The Cold Oasis you are approaching is part of our Pareia's territory. Are you enemies? Friends? If you are friends, why did you not inform us that you will be bringing this many warriors over?”

One of the patrolling warriors shouted loudly towards the young warrior.

The young warrior responded with a smile on his face.

“I am happy to meet the valiant warriors of the Cold Oasis. I am the Desert Conqueror and your Young Glow, Yulian Provoke. I am here to meet with Chief Yarumaha-nim of the Cold Oasis. We are determined to wait until we can meet with him.”

The warriors were surprised at Yulian's words. Even they knew why the revered Young Glow had left Pareia, and they also knew why the number of warriors on patrol had increased as well.

It was no wonder that they were shocked, seeing Yulian appear in

front of them.

“There is nobody among us who can verify whether you are Yulian or not. However, if you stay here and wait as you stated, we will inform Yarumaha-nim.”

“We will wait.”

As Yulian sent a short reply, the four warriors started to whisper with each other again, before one warrior headed back to the oasis.

‘I’m sure they will watch me. As expected of Yarumaha-nim’s warriors. They are not afraid of death.’

Yulian admired them internally as he slowly looked around waiting for Yarumaha to arrive.

“Won’t they come with warriors?”

Maybe he was worried about Yulian looking so calm, but Pere asked from behind him.

“I’m sure they will. My name has yet to be cleared.”

“Then is it okay for you to wait here so casually? If Yarumaha-nim does not believe us, there is a good chance that we will be captured. Don’t forget that the Angry Brandistock (a weapon that is as long as a spear and has both an axe and a spear at the end) Vibli, one of Pareia’s proud third generation warriors, is under Yarumaha-nim’s command.”

“I know. But if we do not show even this much trust, we cannot ask them to trust us. If we explain with a honest heart and share the truth with him, I’m sure the wise Yarumaha-nim will recognize the real truth.”

“Please think about the what if.”

“If Yarumaha-nim also thinks about the what if and thinks that I really was responsible for that terrible deed, what would he do?”

At Yulian’s words, Pere thought that someday, his brother’s personality will lead him to great danger.

His brother was passionate and he had the experience and skill to match his grand dream, but he was too idealistic.

‘I guess if he was not like that, he would never have thought about something like unifying the desert.’

Pere thought like that before looking towards Grace, and Grace nodded her head as well.

The two of them knew Yulian’s problem that even Yulian did not know about.

The two of them realized at the same time that they needed to balance Yulian’s tendency with their objection.

“Pere-nim’s words are correct too. Everything is great, but it is also good to at least have one backup plan.”

Seeing Grace follow after Pere and object, Yulian looked around to find someone who would agree with him.

Tuma Takaka and Chun Myung Hoon held enough importance to be on Yulian’s side and say that the two of them were wrong, but neither of them had any thoughts about taking Yulian’s side.

Tuma Takaka had always been cautious by nature, and in Chun Myung Hoon’s case, there was nothing in the world he worried about. However, since he thought well about Grace’s energy and thoughtfulness, he didn’t want to say she was wrong and take his disciple’s side.

“If everybody feels that way, Tuma Takaka-nim, please prepare an escape route in the back.”

Tuma Takaka responded as he took a hundred warriors and moved to the back.

About one hour later, Yarumaha arrived with the warriors from his oasis.

Right next to Yarumaha was the Greatest warrior of the Cold Oasis, Vibli.

“Yarumaha-nim.”

Yulian tried to step forward out of happiness, but Pere grabbed his clothes without the other side noticing, making him unable to move.

“Yulian-nim.”

Yarumaha also looked towards with Yulian with a complicated heart. He knew that Yulian would definitely show up again, but Yarumaha never expected it would be this fast.

Yulian took a quick peek at Pere, but seeing that Pere did not let go of his clothes, he stood in place as he spoke to Yarumaha.

“I’m sure it is pretty chaotic right now.”

“You know it is. In this old man’s sixty years of life, it has never been this chaotic. I have not been able to think properly these last fifteen days.”

“I will explain everything. Everything that happened that day. I leave the rest for the wise Yarumaha-nim to determine the truth.”

As Yulian moved his hand back to remove Pere’s hand and stepped forward, Vibli, who had been next to Yarumaha, moved his pirma to block Yulian’s path.

“Yulian-nim, please stop for a moment.”

Although Yulian had never met Vibli who could not leave the Cold Oasis because he was fending off the Shuarei, there was no way he wouldn’t be able to recognize Pareia’s greatest warrior. The long brandistock next to Vibli, as well as his presence, proved that he was one of the greatest warriors.

“To meet Vibli-nim, one of Pareia’s Greatest Warriors, like this, it is an honor.”

“It is actually my honor to meet Yulian-nim, the Desert Conqueror. The hope of Pareia rests on your two greatswords. However, I’m sure you are aware of the charges against yourself

right now. Until your innocence has been proven, this Vibli cannot allow Yulian-nim to approach Yarumaha-nim. Please understand.”

Yulian had a bitter smile at Vibli’s words. However, he believed in his own thoughts.

If Yarumaha-nim really thought he was responsible for the events of that day, he wouldn’t have tried to have a conversation like this in the first place.

“Yarumaha-nim, shall we talk here?”

“No. Vibli, please move aside.”

Yarumaha ordered the Greatest Warrior blocking his way to move, but Vibli shook his head as he spoke.

“I can tell that it will not be easy for me to take him on in a 1 on 1 battle. However, this Vibli has the duty to protect Yarumaha-nim and this Cold Oasis.”

At Vibli’s determine words, both Yarumaha and Yulian had bitter smiles on their faces. Yarumaha sent Yulian a gaze that seemed to say he was sorry, and Yulian just laughed again.

“This is frustrating.”

Chun Myung Hoon, who had been standing to the side, started to speak.

Book 2-2.5 Visiting the Oasis (II)

He traveled across the continent for five years to figure out the reason he came to this world, and seeing that the desert he returned to had changed quite a bit, Chun Myung Hoon was quite frustrated.

The thing that he saw the most throughout the continent was similar to those corrupt officials back in China. He saw those so called royalty of the continent abusing their people. It was worlds apart from how the Glows and the chiefs of the deserts treated their people with love.

However, the desert that he returned to was smudged full of betrayal and distrust. For him who happily came back because he liked the passion of the people and the culture of respect that the people had, it was the worst..

The moment it looked like Chun Myung Hoon's body was about to move, Yulian and Yarumaha were suddenly in the center of where the two camps of soldiers were standing.

“Master!”

“Hmm.....”

Yulian and Yarumaha both shouted in shock, and as both sets of warriors who had been standing idiotically tried to start moving, Chun Myung Hoon started to shout.

“Other than the representatives, everybody else scram! If you move, you will die!”

Chun Myung Hoon had wanted to just quickly take care of this whole situation by catching and killing the responsible individuals.

However, his disciple had rejected that offer, and he remained calm because he believed his disciple made the right decision.

However, they had to wait around for an hour, and even after

meeting with Yarumaha, it didn't look like it was going to go anywhere for a while because of other people's perceptions. For Chun Myung Hoon who normally had a hard time controlling his anger, this type of frustration was just too much.

Yulian stayed calm since Chun Myung Hoon was his master and he knew about his master's almost omnipotent strength, but Yarumaha's warriors could not do that.

Vibli started to shout angrily.

"How dare you look down on us like this! If you can kill us, try it!"

Vibli knew that he was not a match for Chun Myung Hoon since he couldn't even see Chun Myung Hoon move, but his pride as a warrior made him forget about that.

As Vibli's pirma tried to take one step forward, Chun Myung Hoon lifted his feet once more.

Yulian who happened to be watching his master's movement shouted out.

"Master! He is just a warrior focused on his duty!"

How fast must Chun Myung Hoon's movement have been? Chun Myung Hoon stopped midway, but in response, Vibli's pirma did not manage to take a single step forward.

Chun Myung Hoon looked down at Vibli from the top of the pirma's head and started to speak.

"This is your final warning. I will let you off this once because I happen to like desert warriors."

Yulian also shouted.

"Great Warrior Vibli-nim! I swear by my name that I came here to prove my innocence! I also came to get an oath of loyalty from the Cold Oasis as the rightful Glow! Even if I do not manage to prove my innocence, I do not have a grain of sand of desire to harm

Yarumaha-nim, so please do not move!”

Yulian was thankful that his master stopped.

If he did not do anything and just watched, Vibli would have been beaten up by his master until the dust stopped flying, and Vibli would not have been able to live with that shame.

His master liked the heart of the desert and the warriors, but he did not like their pride. He just had to look back at the amount of times he was beaten up.

‘I swear he must have been a dictator.’

Yulian remembered the thought he had every time he was beaten up, and started to speak to Yarumaha.

“He is my master. I’m sure you’ve heard of him from my father?”

Yarumaha nodded his head as if he understood and motioned to Vibli to stay still. He remembered the things he heard from Glow Baguna.

“He is as amazing as I’ve heard.”

“He does whatever he wants, but when it comes to right and wrong, he is the most righteous out of anybody I know, so please understand.”

From there, the rest was a breeze.

Yulian clearly explained his innocence and righteousness to Yarumaha.

Yarumaha cautiously listened until the end of Yulian’s words before starting to speak.

“To be honest with you, all of the chiefs, including myself, have had our doubts. The words you shared with us that day was still fresh on our minds, but for something like this to happen on that same day? Of course we were doubtful. However, you cannot overcome times of trouble without a proper command structure. At that time, Pareia’s greatest command definitely belonged to

Librie-nim, and we had to follow her orders.”

“I definitely understand and agree with your decision. I’m sure you had to do what you did.”

“There is currently a lot of complaints among the chiefs. Librie-nim has been too cozy with Silence’s Janet, and she keeps trying to stay on their good side. Of course we have to try to stay on good terms with them, but she is overdoing it to the point that the warriors are not happy. In addition to that, she keeps trying to go against the convention and push Orca-nim to be the Glow. That is making us doubt her even more.”

Yulian asked a question.

“Many chiefs should have been gathered there at the time. What did you decide to do?”

“All of the chiefs, including myself, agreed that we must first prepare our defenses against potential attacks. Once things settled down, we agreed to gather back to select a new Glow. However, I guess we will not need to do that since you are back now, Yulian-nim. This old man believes Yulian-nim. I believe in the determination and wisdom you have shown since you were a young boy. However, the real question is how we can prove your innocence.”

As his father’s death was brought back up, Yulian clenched his fists tightly as he responded.

“They claim that us brothers poisoned our father to death, however, I was also hit by that poison. I’m thankful that Pere was doing a fasting prayer because that is what saved us. The fact that I was hit by poison is something Pareia’s long time shaman Tuma Takaka-nim can prove, however, I’m sure many people will not believe Tuma Takaka-nim. That type of method will not be useful in proving my innocence.”

“That is the problem.”

Yulian hesitated for a long time before finally starting to speak again.

“To my father ... it is extremely rude to my father... but we will investigate my father’s corpse. The poison that we took was not from the desert. Since everybody should know that myself, Pere, and even the warriors among us have never left the desert, please have the shamans of the individual oasis inspect the poison we retrieve from his corpse. Since Tuma Takaka-nim has confirmed that it is not from the desert, if a desert poison comes out of my father’s body, I will accept this wrongful accusation. However, if it not a desert poison, you will need to think about where it came from.”

“Silence!”

There was no ifs or buts. Yarumaha instantly thought of Janet after hearing Yulian’s explanation and shouted.

Seeing Yulian nod his head, Yarumaha also nodded and continued to speak.

“No wonder Librie-nim was oddly close to Janet. I was indeed curious about that. She is after all a daughter of the desert and should know the situation better than anybody else. But it was really weird seeing her still being cautious and wanting to please their every desires.

Yulian waited enough for Yarumaha to accept the truth, and once Yarumaha’s gaze returned back to him, he politely and confidently started to speak.

“Glow Baguna’s rightful heir, the Young Glow Yulian Provoke, plans to take back the command and law that has been given to me. I am prepared to carry the heavy burden of being the Glow of Pareia. Yarumaha-nim, will you trust me and follow me?”

Yarumaha knelt on the spot and kowtowed as he kissed the tip of Yulian’s foot.

“The Chief of the Cold Oasis, the Tight-Lipped Individual Yarumaha Senei hereby swears my loyalty to the Glow of Pareia by the name of our Guardian, Neo Latin-nim.”

Book 2-2.6 Visiting the Oasis (III)

Yulian quickly lifted Yarumaha back up and hugged him.

“Yarumaha-nim, thank you very much. I hoped you would understand if I came at you with the truth, but for you to believe me like this without any proof, all I can do is thank you.”

Yarumaha finished hugging Yulian and started to speak.

“Yulian-nim is now Pareia’s Glow. Please speak informally and rather than requesting, please give this Yarumaha a command. The Senei family will pledge their loyalty to the Glow’s command for the glory of Pareia and the glory of our family.”

Yulian’s heart was feeling very full. He had overcome one of the hardest obstacles in his way.

Yarumaha’s actions were going to impact the decision of all of the other chiefs he had to persuade as well.

“Thank you. However, I will speak in the way that is most comfortable for me. The wise Yarumaha-nim is an elder who is deserving of the Glow’s respect.”

Yarumaha was someone who had even received Glow Baguna’s respect.

“Thank you. I will work hard to be the Yarumaha who is deserving of your respect. Is your plan to continue visiting each oasis and convincing the chiefs?”

“Yes. Once I prove my innocence to each oasis, I will officially become the Glow while receiving everyone’s blessings.”

Yarumaha received Yulian’s word.

“This old man will accompany you. Although I may not be much, I believe that I will be of assistance to the Glow.”

“The Shuarei will start their attack soon. Shouldn’t Yarumaha-nim stay here to prepare?”

Yarumaha shook his head before looking behind him.

“The warrior Vibli who is known as the Angry Brandistock is here. It’ll be difficult for him to defeat the War God Venesis, but he is extremely experienced at defending. There shouldn’t be any problems until Glow Yulian-nim manages to get a pledge of loyalty from all of Pareia’s oasis.”

“It looks like we will need to move quickly. I am worried about both the Shuarei and the Wikaly.”

“Then we must move immediately. But it does not look like you have many warriors. Just in case something goes wrong, I will gather some of the warriors from my oasis to go with us.”

Yulian put on a bitter smile.

Although everybody knew what was on his mind, they seemed to be against his actions.

“I just put my trust in Pareia’s wise chief-nims.”

“Even so, you cannot be like this. You must maintain your face as the Glow. Please don’t ignore this advice that is coming from my loyal heart. I will get them ready quickly.”

Yulian had no choice but to nod his head.

A bit later, both camps of warriors who came to understand what happened cheered in joy.

Everyone had been hoping and praying that there would be no need for them to fight.

The warriors of the Cold Oasis cheered a second time for the well-known warrior of Pareia, the Young Glow Yulian, officially becoming the Glow.

Yulian’s first step towards becoming Pareia’s Glow was safely and successfully completed.

‘We are almost there. Librie, wait for me. I will spit on that abominable face of yours and stab my sword through your heart.’

Yulian looked toward the sand horizon in front of his eyes as he proclaimed in his heart.

“What did you say? Someone who does whatever he wants?”

Yulian became anxious at his master's face that he couldn't distinguish between either a murderous aura or playfulness.

“Please also consider what I said after that, master.”

“I do not remember what you said after that. How dare you talk bad about your master in front of someone else. I've been holding back this whole time for the tiniest amount of longing I had for you while I was traveling, but now you are trying to climb over my head.”

“That is not it.”

Pupupupuuuhuhuhuhuhuk!

Yulian started to shout in pain as Chun Myung Hoon's fists that were faster than the eye can see, punched him all over his body.

“Ack! Master! Please consider my age and my position. This is making you look bad as much as me!”

“You do not need to worry. I already made it so that not a single peep will make it out of this paoe.”

Chun Myung Hoon's laughter, which seemed to be saying that he had already prepared everything, made Yulian give up.

Puk! Puk! Clack!

“Clack...clack? You dare to block?”

On Chun Myung Hoon's third punch, Yulian desperately, and extremely luckily, managed to block one punch. But once he did, Chun Myung Hoon's glare became much worse.

“This is proof that I have been training very hard. Please do not glare at me like that. Also, a flower grown in a greenhouse will not

live longer than a cactus that has survived the extreme sunlight of the desert.”

Knowing very well what Yulian was trying to say, Chun Myung Hoon couldn't come up with a good enough answer to squish Yulian. Since he didn't have any response, his fist responded for him.

Pow! Pow! Pow!

“Now you are trying to teach your master. You are definitely lacking a beating. That's definitely it.”

His fast and sharp punches landed all over Yulian's body as Chun Myung Hoon shouted. Yulian placed his hand on his great sword and shouted back.

“Please accept it now! If it was not me, who could handle your anger? And please stop hitting me. I am no longer a child. I am a proud adult male who might soon be the father to a child.”

“Ho! Now you are trying to fight back. Fine, let's take care of this today.”

Chun Myung Hoon lifted his index finger at his disciple's opposition.

That night, the paoe was rowdy but not a single peep came out of it.

The next morning, Yulian claimed that he did not have any appetite and skipped breakfast.

People found it to be weird, but since he looked fine on the outside, they really thought that he just didn't have any appetite.

Chun Myung Hoon had considered his disciple's reputation and only hit places that were not visible, and only enough that he could still move.

This extremely wise master then slowly disappeared.

End of chapter two.

Book 2-3.1 The Shuarei's Plan

Glow Yulian Provoke.

It was finally starting.

“We must not miss this opportunity.”

At Venersis's words, the Shuarei's Glow, the Desert Mole, Hangry Elbotta, just shook his head.

“Using someone else's crisis as an opportunity to attack will cause a critical damage to my, Hangry's fame. I understand where you are coming from, Greatest Warrior Venersis, however, it will be enough if we slowly start our attack.”

Venersis was extremely upset inside.

‘How could someone who knows what honor is ignore my honor and make such an order in the past? You were the one who went against the truce the very next day and ordered an attack. Someone like you dares to talk to me about fame and honor?’

Venersis looked at Hangry almost to the point he was glaring at him, but Hangry continued on like he didn't care.

“Our Greatest Warrior's flaw is that he is too passionate. Shouldn't you step back a bit to give the other Greatest Warriors and your subordinate warriors opportunities as well?”

‘Is that what this is all about?’

Venersis lamented Hangry's words in his mind. In the end, Hangry didn't want to let Venersis go in the fear that Venersis would have too many achievements.

He had been that way from the beginning, but lately, the other Greatest Warriors as well as the Glow have been trying to limit him too much. Furthermore, Hangry even thought that Venersis was aiming for the Glow position.

The last Glow was not like this. In fact, the last Glow helped stop the other Greatest Warriors' envies with his own body. He knew the most about what Venersis wanted, and trusted Venersis more than anybody else.

In return, Venersis also gave the Glow his complete loyalty, and did everything in his power to increase the 9 oasis they controlled to 11.

But once Hangry became Glow, he worked with the other Greatest Warriors to limit Venersis, and tried to get in Venersis's way at any chance he got.

This was the reason that the Shuarei, which had the War God of the West as well as the greatest warrior brigade known as the Desert Sword, still only had eleven oasis.

The internal affairs were as rotten as they could be.

"If you, the tribe's best warrior, think that is the best course of action, I will think about it. But only if you are planning on giving the warriors of the next generation a chance to build battle experience."

Which warrior in Shuarei could handle the two brothers whose fame has spread across the desert?

In order to go up against his Desert Sword, he created a new warrior brigade known as the Red Storm. The fact that their skills were similar to that of the Desert Sword was something one of the soldiers reported back after seeing it for themselves.

The majority of the lead warriors in Shuarei with battle experiences were part of Venersis's brigade. It made sense, since for the last 20 years, 80 percent of the Shuarei's wars were handled by Venersis.

With Pareia's current chaos, there was an absolute chance of victory. However, if it was not himself but a different Greatest Warrior who only sought to achieve some merits for himself, their

chances were only 50 percent.

“That will not work. Out of Pareia’s Greatest Warriors, only I can handle the Angry Brandistock, The Sharp Teeth, and the Large Spear. In addition, there has been news lately about Glow Baguna’s son, Yulian, the young warrior who has enough strength to be called the Desert Conqueror. Please allow me to go. If we miss this opportunity, we don’t know how long we will need to continue to maintain this status quo.”

“Greatest Warrior Venersis, aren’t you looking down on our Shuarei warriors a bit too much?”

“I am not looking down on them. I am just speaking the truth. Our current Greatest Warriors have not experienced a real battle for a long time. On the other hand, hasn’t Pareia’s warriors faced a large amount of battles until now?”

“Isn’t that why I am saying we will help them build the experiences starting now? Since Pareia is in chaos as you mentioned, what better setting to get some experience? Plus, you should have taken warriors from other Oasis with you when you were involved in many wars in the past to prevent something like this from happening.”

After hearing what Hangry had to say, Venersis was starting to get angry.

‘If you had not denied my requests for reinforcements time after time, half of Pareia’s oasis would already be ours and our warriors would have gained a lot of experience.’

Venersis wanted to shout like that.

If it wasn’t Glow Hangry and the other Greatest Warriors restricting him, he would have been able to even defeat the unified brigades of Pareia’s Greatest Warriors.

However, even Venersis could not defeat three Greatest Warriors while lacking reinforcements and warriors. How could he manage

to defeat the enemy who had over three times the amount of warriors?

The reason he managed to even take two oases away was because of the previous Glow's full support.

Venersis tried to hold back his anger as he spoke.

"Glow, the ultimate opportunity for our Shuarei to pounce on has arrived. Pareia's tight defenses are a mess because of the chaos, and thanks to that, the cooperation levels between oases are in shambles. If we attack right now, within a month, I can offer you two of their oases."

'Please don't consider me as an enemy, but as an ally.' That's how he wanted to end it, but Venersis continued on as if he was trying to console Hangry.

"Please allow the warriors of my oasis and a reinforcement of 10,000 warriors to head out. I will definitely dedicate the glory of the victory to the Shuarei and Glow Hangry-nim."

Seeing Venersis not stepping back and even bowing a bit as he asked, Hangry's heart moved a little.

At that moment, one of the other Greatest Warriors who was with them, The Piercing Bow of the Bushy Oasis, Recharei Breeze shouted toward Venersis.

"Bloodied Hand Venersis, aren't you seeking too much glory? For what reason do you seek so much glory? If the Glow commands you, you should just follow his command. For what reason must you be the one to step forward?"

Venersis also let out his anger and shouted back at Recharei.

"Recharei, a warrior uses all of their strength for the good of their tribe, not for themselves. Are you trying to insult me with those words?"

"You started the insult. If it is not you, we cannot take on Pareia?"

Aren't you the one insulting all of Shuarei's Greatest Warriors?"

"Am I wrong? Did you already forget that you lost to Pareia's Large Spear? Who was it that saved you when that happened?"

Recharei's face turned red at Venersis's response. It was Venersis who had come to his rescue at that time.

"Hmph."

Recharei did not respond to Venersis's question before looking toward Hangry and starting to speak.

"If you give this Recharei the warriors of our Bushy Oasis and an additional 10,000 warriors, this Recharei Breeze will guarantee that I will deliver Pareia's oasis to the Glow."

"I object. Recharei is a Greatest Warrior who has never led a group of over 10,000 warriors. And please do not forget that to guarantee a victory, I need to take part, Glow."

"Our Glow will decide whether I go or not, it is not your decision. Why are you flapping your mouth when the Glow has not said anything?"

Recharei looked at Venersis with an expression and nuance that implied that Venersis made a grave mistake as he scolded Venersis and looked toward Hangry.

"Venersis's crime has started to pierce the heavens. Now he does not even wait for the Glow's decision and decides for himself what is allowed and not allowed. I want to say that the Glow should punish him for his crimes."

Because many of the Greatest Warriors and the chiefs of the oasis who were there did not like the fact that Venersis had so much accomplishments, they started to agree and say that Recharei was right.

Hangry became upset after listening and realizing that they might be right, and because he himself did not think positively

about Venersis, he took Recharei's side as he started to speak.

"Greatest Warrior Venersis, think before you speak. This expedition will be handed to Recharei. Each Greatest Warrior should prepare their warriors and send them to Recharei."

"Glow!"

Venersis shouted loudly but Hangry did not falter a bit as he continued.

"Greatest Warrior Venersis should return to your oasis and take a short break. Even if the other chiefs and Greatest Warriors had not said anything, you've been active for quite a bit. Shouldn't you take a break every so often?"

Stomp.

As Venersis continued to get angry, he subconsciously started to stomp his foot.

Stomp. Stomp. Stomp.

He was going back and forth between anger and frustration.

"What are you doing? Do you dare to throw a tantrum at the Glow's order?"

As Recharei shouted at him, Venersis glared at Recharei before abruptly standing up and exiting the paoe.

Behind him, many were saying he was arrogant, that his haughtiness could reach the heavens, and that he was looking down on the Glow.

Venersis looked up at the desert's blue sky.

'What are the heavens planning to do with our Shuarei.....'

Venersis was full of lament and had an ominous feeling as he headed toward his paoe.

Book 2-3.2 Heading Back (I)

With Yarumaha with them, Yulian's progression had no more rough patches.

10 out of Pareia's 11 oasis had accepted Yulian as the Glow and pledged their loyalty.

What was left were only two oasis. The largest oasis, which was the location of the Provoke Family, and the oasis that Librie's family was in charged of.

Janet, who suspected that things were not well, asked Librie's family to return to the Empire with them, but Librie's father and head of household, Duripue, declined the offer.

It was questionable whether the warriors would follow them, and as someone who had lived in the desert his entire life, he didn't plan on living out the rest of his life in the empire. It would be enough if he could live the rest of his life without having to walk on eggshells around them.

Librie wanted to go to Silence with Janet, but Orca did not move an inch from his paoe and was refusing to eat any food. With Orca like that, there wasn't much she could do.

Since the reason Janet was asking them to go to the empire was to use Orca in the future to eat up Pareia, with Orca not wanting to go, he did not push them to go with him and quickly left with his group of people.

Librie and Janet's terrible deed had caused a lot of harm to Pareia, but it was crumbling down just as quickly as it happened.

Yulian glared toward the large oasis with both longing and fury before speaking in a stoic voice.

"I think it is time we put an end to this short but terrible nightmare."

The death of his father whom he had respected very much. The betrayal of his family.

But what he managed to gain was his younger brother, and faith in himself.

Yulian's eyes started to shake with complicated emotions. But he quickly started to fold up his emotions.

What needed to get done needed to get done.

"Is there no news yet?"

As Yulian asked Yarumaha, Yarumaha obediently answered.

"Since we have sent them an ultimatum, they will soon decide whether they want to fight or give up. But are you really planning on letting them live if they surrender? The sins they committed by murdering the Glow is extremely heavy."

"Honestly speaking, this was a family matter. My father might even be relieved at the outcome. If there was a civil war, many of Pareia's people will be killed. I'm sure my father would not want a bloody revenge for his death."

"I agree with Glow Yulian-nim's statement, however, you must set the example. Especially because you have just become the Glow."

Pere agreed with Yarumaha and chimed in.

"It wasn't just Librie. All of her family took part in it. You cannot let the warriors of their oasis live either."

Yulian looked at Pere and Yarumaha, as well as the warriors surrounding him as he started to speak.

"Librie's family is one thing, but what sins have the warriors of the oasis committed? The most important thing for a warrior is to listen to the command of the chief. And do you think Librie's family told the warriors the truth to convince them? To them, I was the person who poisoned their Glow, and the immoral child

who killed his father. How could we blame them and punish them for that?”

“.....”

“For those who put down their weapons and surrender, you must not swing your shamshir at them. That is my first order. My innocence should already be known by both of the oasis. I do not believe they will attack me knowing the truth.”

“If their chief orders them to do so, they may attack.”

“I am the Glow. I am the person who should be giving them their order. I am confident that the smart warriors will know who really has the authority.”

At Yulian’s firm statement, nobody else could say anything.

“People are coming out of the oasis.”

The scouting warrior ran over to report, and Yulian turned his gaze over to the arriving dust cloud.

“Have you made up your mind? I hope you made the wise decision. That is, unless you want to leave a dark mark in Pareia’s history.”

Yulian muttered like that before running toward the arriving dust cloud. His followers and 10,000 warriors followed behind him. It was a situation that might end up being Yulian’s first battle.

‘But I do not want it to be against my own people.’

Yulian’s honest feelings were that he did not want his glorious and memorable first battle to be recorded against his own tribe.

The 6,000 warriors who came out of the oasis, as well as Yulian and his 10,000 warriors met in the middle of the desert.

Victory and defeat in battle was determined by the warriors’ momentum.

Since the warriors were similar in skill level, victory and defeat was determined by the commander and the morale. It was actually not rare to see warriors defeat the enemy, even if the enemy was multiple times the size of the friendly warriors.

The 10,000 warriors following Yulian outnumbered the other side, and since Yulian, who had received the blessing of pretty much the entire group of chiefs to become the Glow, was their commander, the morale was higher than ever.

On the other hand, the warriors coming out of the oasis looked like they did not want to battle.

It seemed like they came out because they had to follow.

Just from that, you could already tell that Victory was in Yulian's hands.

Yulian stepped forward on his own.

“Are you going to raise your shamshirs at me, Yulian Provoke, the successor of the deceased Glow Baguna, and the one who has the rightful claim to be Pareia's Glow?”

Yulian's voice, which had a trace of ki mixed in, could be heard clearly in the ears of the close to 20,000 warriors who were standing there.

The warriors started to whisper to each other about Yulian's abilities, and Duripue, Librie's father, walked forward to the middle and stood in front of Yulian.

“It has been a while, Duripue Anishun-nim.”

Yulian spoke coldly as he glared at Duripue with eyes full of hatred.

At one point, he was one of the chiefs that he had respected. But now, he was the enemy who had committed a bitter betrayal.

Duripue could not make eye contact with Yulian. All he could do was look up at the sky and sighed in regret.

“Ali...ve... it’s great that you are alive. Truly great.”

The old warrior’s shaky voice dug into Yulian’s heart.

“I must have been possessed by the devil. At such stupid temptation ... yes, that must have been it. But thankfully, you are still alive like this and the worst situation has not happened. I just want to thank my guardian for this.”

“What is the meaning of this?”

Yulian’s heart was hurting, but knowing that this old warrior in front of him was one of the people who killed his father and tried to kill him and his brother, he pushed his emotions down as he asked.

As Duripue suddenly got off his pirma and kneeled and kowtowed in front of Yulian’s pirma, all of the warriors looking at him started to whisper to each other again.

“With my death... by killing me with the blade of Yulian Provoke, the Glow of Pareia, please forgive the rest of them. I would be extremely grateful if you gave me an opportunity to redeem myself, but I cannot make such a shameless request. Please let me die by the Glow’s hands. Please consider the fact that at one point, I had dedicated my body for Pareia and kill me yourself.”

Although Duripue’s shouts could not be heard by all of the warriors like Yulian’s shout earlier, the warriors could guess what he was saying to Yulian.

“It was all in vain. I sharpened my blade for revenge over and over to get here, but seeing you like this, it was all in vain.”

Book 2-3.3 Heading Back (II)

Yulian spoke while looking down toward Duripue. Duripue did not dare to lift his head up as he continued.

“The warriors... and my sons and nephews, please know that they were not responsible. As the head of the family, I ... as the chief of the warriors, I ... ordered them to do it. I deceived all of them and ordered them to do it. I hope the Glow’s grace that is as wide as the wide desert can kill me as the originally responsible party and forgive them.”

Yulian’s heart was shaking as he looked up to the sky. It was what he had wished for, but on one hand, the hatred and sorrow he had been suppressing deep in his heart was squirming.

“Why couldn’t you realize that earlier? Why did you fall for such temptation? My father has passed away and the family has a wound that cannot be washed away. You’ve left a stain on Pareia’s history. Why couldn’t you anticipate something like this earlier? Just WHY!”

Pere, who could tell that his brother’s emotions were shaking intensely, led his pirma forward next to Yulian.

“Glow.”

Yulian looked toward Pere who was calling his name and spoke.

“Younger brother, after all that, he’s asking for forgiveness. It is what I wanted, but what am I to do with all this hatred that I have been suppressing? Who can I take it out on? This grudge of losing my mother and father, who can I take it out on? And this pain in my heart, what am I to do with it?”

“Please hold yourself together. As the Glow, you are no longer just an individual. Are you going to become weak in front of the warriors? Are you going to be indecisive? Steady your heart and lay down a command. Whether you kill them all or forgive them, it

is up to you as the Glow.”

“You seem to always be calm. You also lost your father and mother.....”

“If the warriors of Pareia could not steady their heart after losing their family members, Pareia would have disappeared a long time ago. How many warriors do you think lose their parents or family? Why are you suddenly acting useless like this! Are you planning on insulting all of us who have pledged our loyalty to you because of your passion?!”

Pere shouted as if he was possessed.

On the outside he looked strong and collected, but this person had always been like this.

He was an idealist and was so full of emotion that his passion just flowed out of him.

That was what made him so charming and why it was so easy for him to make people drawn to him.

But that could also end up being his weakness. If he trusts and likes people too much, it was definitely possible.

His mission was to help this Glow, his brother, maintain the balance and help him make the difficult and cold-hearted decisions.

“Please remain cold-hearted and give an order. Pareia’s warriors will follow the will of the Glow.”

Yulian closed his eyes and his eyelids started to shake.

‘I am the Glow. I am the Glow who needs to take care of Pareia.’

He continued to repeat that to himself nonstop in his head.

Although he was unable to learn the mindset of a Glow from his father, the previous Glow, that one thing was imprinted in his mind.

His brother's words were correct.

He was the Glow who needed to determine a course of action and issue a command. Showing weakness was not helpful to the Glow.

Yulian opened his eyes widely. He then ordered Duripue.

"Tell the warriors and your family the truth. Then I will allow you to commit suicide in front of me."

"Thank you very much Glow Yulian-nim."

Duripue sounded like his life had just been saved and shouted toward Yulian in a happy voice before quickly getting up and riding the pirma back to his camp.

Seeing Duripue's camp suddenly becoming loud, Yulian closed his eyes again.

"Glow, the punishment is too light. Issuing a punishment like this for a rebellion will end up setting a precedent for the future."

As Pere stated this to Yulian, Yulian kept his eyes closed as he shook his head.

"The warriors will now curse Duripue and his family. They will ignore them. For an old warrior like Duripue, there is no worse punishment. There is no point in killing such a person."

"But....."

"We need to keep as many people alive as possible in order to defend against our enemies. You have to remember that out of Pareia's 500,000 people, only 100,000 are men. Do not forget that out of those 100,000, only a mere 70,000 are warriors.

Pere continued to object.

What Yulian said was correct, however, it was also true that the punishment was too light. It also didn't make sense to allow someone who had lost their honor to commit suicide.

"Hyung-nim, we should minimally kill everybody in his family to

set an example.....”

“You said it yourself that I am the one to issue the command.”

At Yulian’s emotionless voice, Pere closed his open mouth.

“You also said that you will follow my command. Do as you said.”

Seeing that Yulian had clearly made up his mind, Pere decided not to stop him anymore. He had decided that as long as they managed to give Librie a horrible death, that alone will be enough of an example for others.

A bit later, Duripue returned to where Yulian was standing. Although only about 20 minutes or so had passed, he seemed to have more white hair and wrinkles on his face, to the point that Yulian had to think hard about if he was seeing clearly.

“Glow Yulian-nim, thank you very much. Thank you again for your grace in giving this unworthy person an opportunity to not lose my final honor.”

Duripue kowtowed to Yulian before grabbing his shamshir and brought it to his neck.

‘Stop.’

That is what Yulian wanted to say. Although he wasn’t his biological mother’s father, regardless of what happened, he was still one of his grandfather.

He was someone who, at one point, cherished him more than his biological grandson Orca.

“Why did things have to be this way.....”

Yulian wanted to turn his head away, but he suppressed that feeling as he continued to watch Duripue. That was the respect he needed to show for Duripue’s last breath.

“Long live Pareia! Long live our Glow!”

Duripue shouted loudly before moving his hand.

Spurt.

Blood started to spurt out like a fountain once the sharp blade of the shamshir slashed his neck. As it reflected the hot sun of the desert, it created a seven colored rainbow as it flowed.

Yulian watched until the end of the old warrior's life, then turned his pirma around, returned to his camp, before speaking to Grace.

"He was a warrior of Pareia and the chief of an oasis. Although he ended up on the wrong path, he was able to eventually realize his mistake and took the fault so that the rest of the tribe would not have to shed each other's blood. For that, please make it so that he can have a fitting funeral."

"Yes Glow. I understand."

Listening to the now official Mother of Pareia, Grace's answer, Yulian looked back toward Yarumaha before continuing on.

"Yarumaha-nim, please go meet with Duripue's family and inform them that they must vacate the oasis chief position and return their family name of Anishun. From now on, they will only use their first name. Should they be reborn as a warrior and manage to achieve great merits in the future to wash away their family sin, they will be able to take back their honored family name with their own hands."

Yarumaha thought that Yulian's punishment was too light, but he saw Yulian clashing with Pere earlier, and felt that it wouldn't do any good to try to convince him any longer. So he just nodded his head and responded.

"I will do as you commanded."

"Each lead warrior divide up the warriors amongst yourselves, and until a new Greatest Warrior is determined in these two oasis, treat those warriors like a part of your family."

Since the Greatest Warriors of each oasis had to stay back to

defend against the enemies, a newly selected group of ten Greatest Warriors responded in unison.

“Yes Glow!”

Tuma Takaka-nim, please return to the village and console the people. I’m sure they must be feeling anxious right now because a lot of shocking things have happened lately.

“Glow, I understand.”

“Red Storm warriors, to be safe and prepare for any surprises, strengthen the security around the oasis.”

“[Crystal](#).”

Yulian looked around to think about what else he needed to tell them to do, and deciding that he had issued all the necessary commands, he said one last thing.

“Everybody, please do as I’ve instructed. Pere, you come with me.”

Yulian had decided to meet the instigator of all of this, the source of their hatred, Librie, with only Pere by his side.

The raws had a phrase that is equivalent to saying “Crystal” when the superior in the military says “Is that Clear?”

Book 2-3.4 Librie (I)

Librie was extremely nervous.

She was regretting the fact that she did not follow Janet to the empire. Librie had never expected Yulian to get here so quickly.

‘Father should be doing well right? I know he can win. I heard they have a large army, but they said the warriors of the largest oasis are the strongest of Pareia’s warriors. Father also has many veteran warriors. I’m sure he will win.’

Librie was asking and answer her own questions like that as she nervously waited.

She suddenly heard footsteps outside of the paoe and the cloth hanging over the entrance of the paoe was starting to be lifted.

“Father, how did it go? Yulian... did you defeat Yulian?”

The moment Librie turned her head to the entrance and shouted, a stoic voice responded as the cloth was lifted.

“Librie.”

Librie turned pale at this familiar voice.

Yulian and Pere slowly entered the paoe.

“Librie.....”

As Pere’s voice, which was full of forcefully suppressed anger, followed Yulian’s voice, Librie’s legs turned to mush as she just plopped down on the ground.

Fear had filled her mind.

Soon, fear had taken over her sanity and ignited the survival instincts that rested deep inside of her.

Librie quickly kneeled and crawled over to Yulian. Yulian just looked toward Librie who was slowly approaching him with emotionless eyes.

Grab.

The place where the traces of her crawling ended was under Yulian's feet. What she had grabbed was the clothes around Yulian's ankle.

"Will you kill me? You wouldn't? Right? You wouldn't kill me, someone who was a mother to you in the past, would you?"

Overwhelmed by the fear that she will die, Librie didn't care how she looked. All she did was hold on to Yulian's ankle and beg for her life.

"I know I was wrong. But you won't kill me, will you?"

"....."

Seeing that Yulian did not have a response, this time, she grabbed onto Pere's pants as well.

"Pere, right? You know that at one point, I really did take care of both of you. You both know that."

There was a time like that.

As she mentioned, there was a time when everyone was happy. Mairez, Yulian's birth mother, Baguna's first wife, and the Mother of Pareia. When Mairez was alive, they were so happy something like this could never even be thought about.

"Why did you kill her? Was there a reason for you to even kill my mother?"

As Pere coldly spoke to Librie, Librie's face turned completely white.

"That... that... I had no other choice. Right, I had no other choice. Seina only cherished Yulian. She cared more about Yulian than you, her own flesh and blood. There was no way she would go along with my plan. I needed her gone so that I"

Yulian cut Librie off as he started to speak.

“You killed our father the Glow, and you killed Seina, the Mother of Pareia as well. But you wish to live? You really must have a thick skin. Not only am I full of anger, now I’m also sad.”

“Does that mean that you must kill me? Hmm? Is that what you are trying to say?”

“Thinking about the love we used to share, thinking about the fact that as you mentioned, we once called you mother, I will give you the opportunity to commit suicide. Please stop making yourself look bad and pay for your sins on your own.”

Pere started to shout at Yulian’s words.

“You cannot do that. You absolutely cannot do that. I understand letting Duripue do it because he was a warrior and made the right decision as the head of the family, but not this woman. Absolutely not.”

“Pere!”

“My mother ... my mother will weep in the afterlife. Father died because he had the position of Glow, but for what reason did my mother have to die? She must be so full of resentment that she won’t even head to the guardian. My mother was a pure woman, but to be poisoned to death without knowing what happened, she won’t be able to peacefully head to the guardian because of this resentment.”

“Hmm~”

Yulilan let out a long sigh listening to Pere’s anger-filled shout.

“We must rip her into pieces until she dies to set an example. This woman needs to feel the pain of breaking apart a family and the resulting pain in our heart. That is the best course of action.”

Although these were not her biological sons whom she gave birth to, hearing her eldest son saying kill herself, and her middle son saying she needs to be ripped into pieces, Librie understood that no matter what happened, she was going to die today. Once she

figured that out, she just started to shout in anger.

“It’s not like I wanted to do something like this. Your so called father, my so called husband. If he had not acted that way, I would have accepted everything as my fate and just lived in peace. But do you know how your father acted after Mairez was killed?”

Librie’s eyes were full of anger.

“He obviously didn’t look for me, but he didn’t even look for Seina. Pretending to be a man full of purity, he just longed for Mairez each and every day. If he was going to be that way anyways, why didn’t he just die with her? Of course I knew that he was obsessed with Mairez from a long time before that.”

Librie started to shake in anger.

“Do you know how Seina and I ended up marrying your father? It was at Mairez’s request. After being married for three years and not becoming pregnant, she told him to take in more wives. Once your father rejected her request, she cried and cried until she convinced him. He then married Seina, and after only having two sons, it was then that I entered this family.”

“.....”

“Do you think I married your father because I wanted to? Because my father was the chief of an oasis, I was forced into this family for the sake of solidarity between oasis. However, if he even cared for me just a tiny bit, I wouldn’t have done something like this. Right, I wouldn’t have done something stupid like this.”

Librie could not stop her tears from flowing. She hated herself and hated her dead husband. Even she couldn’t tell where things started to go wrong.

“Do you think your father said a single nice thing to Seina or me since Mairez passed away? Seina had always been an understanding person, and since she liked Mairez as well, she could suppress her feelings and live like that, but I couldn’t do it.

Actually, I probably could have suppressed those feelings. If it was only me being insulted, I could have endured it. But what about my Orca?”

Librie started to shout again as she pointed to Yulian and Pere with her finger.

“Yulian, as the eldest son, you will become the Glow. Pere, you were born with a naturally gifted physique so your future looks bright as a fearsome warrior. But what will become of my Orca?”

“.....”

“Orca was born with the Provoke blood just like the two of you, but he has been weak since he was born. He doesn’t have a firm resolve either. He is a kid who quietly lived under the shadows of his two outstanding brothers. While your father was paying attention to the two of you, he didn’t even seem to realize that Orca existed.”

“Librie, that’s where you are”

Yulian tried to say something but Librie was jumping up and down as she continued to shout.

“Could the two of you understand the feelings of a mother watching her son be treated that way? It wasn’t enough that she was insulted, but watching her own flesh and blood be insulted like that as well, what kind of mother could just watch and let that happen?”

Librie’s continuous tirade rang throughout the paoe. After screaming for so long, her voice was now hoarse and she had expended a lot of energy. Even so, Librie still did not give up on shouting.

“That is why I had to come up with a way to forcefully lift Orca up to see the sun. That is why I did this. You both might be thinking that this was unfair, but us mother and son are the ones who really have been treated unfairly!”

Yulian and Pere just blankly looked at each other. They could not even think about what to say. In the end, there was a lack of communication.

His father's indifference, the two of their lack of interest, and Librie's lack of understanding had caused this travesty.

Yulian finally started to speak after a long time.

"Do you know? Right before father was poisoned, do you know what the three of us were discussing?"

"Why should I care? I'm a dead bitch anyways."

At Librie's cold retort, Yulian let out a long sigh before continuing on.

"Sigh~. Right before Orca came in with the poisoned alcohol, we were talking about Orca. In fact, father scolded the two of us saying that Orca was continuing to get weaker because we did not take good care of him. He told the two of us to become Orca's guardians. Did you know about this?"

"I cannot believe you. How can I believe anything you say at this point?"

She didn't want to believe it. All that would remain if she lost this anger was resentment.

"I guess there is no point to say something like this now."

Yulian was conflicted. Even Pere could not say anything. The fault lied with everyone in the family, not just her.

"However...however... no matter what, I will never understand someone like you who tried to hurt their family."

"Whatever! You already decided to kill me, so what is the point in saying anything else? Kill me! Whether you rip me apart or hang me to death, do whatever you want. Even after death, my soul will curse you forever. I will make sure to curse you so that I can watch the two of you die a miserable death even while I am in hell."

Librie started to shout again.

“Mother!”

Book 2-3.5 Librie (II)

At that moment, a voice calling for her could be heard.

“Orca!”

The three people in the paoe all looked toward the entrance and shouted in unison.

The seventeen year old Orca was so thin that saying Orca Provoke was extremely weak was quite fitting.

He was never really healthy, but he had never been this skinny before. It was the result of struggling on his own without eating anything for the last few days.

“Hyung-nims.....”

Orca looked at Yulian and Pere before starting to speak, and then moved his gaze back to Librie as he walked toward her.

“Mother. No matter what the reason was, this incident you were at fault. But rather than asking for forgiveness, you want to curse them..... Does it make you feel better if you pour out curses to my hyung-nims? Why do you keep hurting yourself like this?”

“Orca!”

Librie tightly hugged Orca and started to cry as she continued to call out his name.

“It was for you. I didn’t want you to feel the same type of feeling I had been feeling.”

Orca hugged his mother and started to pat her back as he responded.

“I was quite happy. I had a mother who loves me like this, and two reliable hyung-nims. What would I have had to be anxious about? Mother, why did you try to take everything on by yourself? I was happy enough before all of this.”

Orca's eyes started to tear up as well.

“Should we die together? Since the reason was me, let us both die cleanly. Don't put your grudge on anybody and let's just die right here.”

“Orca!”

Yulian and Pere were extremely shocked as they called out their younger brother's name.

Orca turned his head while still hugging Librie to look at his two brothers.

“Hyung-nims, please let her keep her life. Please have mercy on this poor mother and at least her life ... please let her keep her life. This Orca will work extremely hard to bring great merits to the tribe to slowly cleanse away her sin, so please let her keep her life.”

“Orca, you.....”

Yulian was about to say something, but after seeing Orca's expression, he stopped talking.

It was an expression he had never seen on his brother before. It was hard to believe that such expression was on the face of that pure and gentle brother of his.

“She is still my mother. No matter how big her sin is, she gave birth to me and doted on me. I can't let her die in front of my eyes. If you must kill her, please kill me with her.”

“Orca! We won't forgive you if you do anything unnecessary!”

Pere noticed the shining sosoonta in Orca's left wrist and urgently shouted.

“Will you let her live?”

“Put that away right now!”

Yulian also noticed the sosoonta and shouted toward Orca. Orca just took the sosoonta out and held it in his hand as he asked again.

“Will you let her live?”

“Put that down first and we can talk!”

“Hyung-nim, even if I die, I cannot watch my mother be killed. Please promise me. I need a promise from the Glow’s mouth.”

Yulian used his left arm to stop Pere from moving forward and reached out his right hand toward Orca.

“I will do my best. So please hand over that sosoonta.”

“That is not enough. Even if hyung-nim says you’ll let her live, Pere hyung-nim and the others will not forgive her. Please promise me that you will help defend her. Pere hyung-nim as well.”

Pere was extremely frustrated.

He never expected their youngest brother to use such a method. He couldn’t do anything about it. It’s not like he could kill his only younger brother.

“Damn it, Orca. You are stabbing this hyung in the back. Fine! If you put down that sosoonta, I will promise not to care about this incident at all. I will not protect her from the others, but I will promise not to kill her myself. So put it down.”

Orca moved his eyes over to Yulian.

“Now I just need eldest hyung-nim’s promise. Please promise me.”

“Orca... you

Yulian’s body started to shake.

But he couldn’t lose his living brother for the sake of a dead person’s revenge.

“Fine. I will promise you. However, be prepared to handle the severe punishment for threatening me.”

Once Yulian also gave his approval, Orca started to smile as he spoke.

“Hyung-nim, even if you say you will beat me to death, I will accept it with a smile. Thank you very much. Hyung-nims.”

The moment Orca put the sosoonta down, something nobody could have expected happened. That was why nobody could stop it. Nobody could stop the sosoonta Orca put down from ending up in Librie’s hands.

Librie grabbed the sosoonta with her right hand and pushed Orca away with her left.

“Mother!”

As Orca lifted himself up and tried to approach Librie, Librie quickly put the tip of the sosoonta at her neck.

“Mother, why are you doing this!”

Orca was shouting at her, and Yulian and Pere just stood there watching her, not knowing what this woman was going to do next.

“Orca, as long as this mother of yours is alive, you will not be able to head out into the sun. What this mother of yours hopes for, is that you will confidently stand in front of the others and earn the respect and love of the tribe. I don’t want you to become someone that nobody really knows or cares about.”

“Mother!”

Orca shouted back at her, but Librie was now looking at Yulian and Pere.

“At least you two brothers are willing to take good care of your youngest brother. You are different than your heartless father. To hold back when I know you all you want to do right now is to kill me. Fine, I will accept at least a part of what you just said. However, as long as I am alive, Orca will only be hated by the rest of the tribe. It’ll only be better if I am dead.”

“We have already made a promise with Orca. Put down that sosoonta.”

Librie shook her head at Yulian's words.

"No. I cannot do that. Being called the wife who killed her husband is enough. I will not also be called the mother who hindered her child's future. If you continue to take care of your brother like you just did, I will die without cursing you even a tiny bit. Rather, I will die while praying for your future days."

Librie looked back at Orca.

"Mother, why are you doing this? Everything has been resolved, so why are you doing something to stab another nail in your son's heart? Please PUT IT DOWN NOW!"

"My son. My wonderful son. Your mother will protect you even after death."

Librie's hand moved.

"NO!"

Orca screamed as he rushed toward her, but Librie's neck was already spurting out a fountain of blood.

"AAAAH! Mother, why... just why would you do this."

"O...rca...kuk...kuk....."

With wind going into her vocal chords, there was no way she could talk normally.

But Librie used all of her strength to say one last thing.

"I ... lo...ve you....."

"Mother!"

Orca cried as he continued to shout. Yulian and Pere were just as shocked. They had never expected that woman to take her life like this.

'Wasn't she grovelling just a moment ago for us to not kill her? What must have been going through her mind?"

Seeing this mother and son like this, Yulian recalled the moment

his mother had passed away. Only then did he start to slowly understand Librie's thoughts.

‘In the end, she too was a mother

Yulian and Pere both thought about their deceased mothers and started to becoming emotional thinking about the love their mothers showered them with while they were alive.

The three brothers spent a long time in the paoe filled with grief and sorrow.

The chaos that shook Pareia disappeared quickly.

The quick movements of the chiefs who had already pledged their loyalty to Yulian helped, as well as Grace leading the charge to restore the tribe's vigor.

But most importantly, Yulian was already prepared to be the Glow.

Year 253 of the Continental Calendar.

The Desert Conqueror, Yulian Provoke, was officially proclaimed as the Glow of Pareia.

End of Chapter 3.

Book 2-4.1 Before the War (I)

First Campaign

The War God of the Eastern Desert had been foretold since a long time ago, but the birth of the War God of the Eastern Desert happened in an instant.

The Shuarei and Pareia are about to fight.”

“I already know about it.”

The Shining Shamshir Abham, one of the Wikaly tribe’s Greatest Warriors, slowly nodded his head as he responded.

“We must not miss this opportunity. Although Pareia has elected a new Glow, their usually strong organization is probably faltering. Since the Shuarei have proceeded at this time, the Wikaly tribe must attack as well. They are likely to put more of their forces toward the Shuarei than us. This is our chance.”

“I am also aware of that.”

Abham nodded his head again at Runa Brink’s words.

“Then why are we still sitting here like this? An opportunity like this is not easy to come by.”

“Runa.”

“Yes, Abham-nim.”

“You should have followed a better warrior than me.”

Runa was confused at Abham’s words and asked.

“What do you mean by that?”

Abham responded in a sorrowful voice.

“It’s like a beggar clutching tightly to gold. Can’t use it as they want and end up dying without using it at all.”

“Abham-nim!”

“It’s the story of my life. Even while having a young man like you by my side, I am still like this.”

“Has the Shining Shamshir already rusted? Why are you suddenly saying such weak words?”

Abham let out a long sigh as he answered.

“I told the Glow a long time ago. I told him that we should attack Pareia at the same time as the Shuarei.”

“And?”

“I was cleanly rejected. Glow Gomai-nim has too much fear. No, he’s just too complacent with the present. All he said to me was about how no good can come from messing with Pareia, the strongest in the East.”

Runa responded with disappointment.

“You need to convince him. For how long must our Wikaly walk on eggshells around Pareia? If we manage to take away just two oases from them, as time goes on, we will no longer need to be afraid of Pareia.”

“I may be one of the Greatest Warriors, but my foundation is weak. Even during the meeting of the chiefs, my influence is weak. That is why I am saying you could have done bigger things if you served someone else.”

“How can you say something like that? This Runa Brink is someone who has pledge to spend my whole life with the Shining Shamshir after falling for your greatness.”

Abham shook his head.

“You picked wrong. You should have selected a chief with a little more influence. I don’t have the power to push for your request.”

“Abham-nim!”

“It’s still not too late. Go look for a different Greatest Warrior. Someone who can let you show your skills as much as you want.”

Runa looked toward Abham and his weak response with sad eyes. He was someone who had spent his whole life as a warrior. He knew how to stay loyal to his mission and how to properly handle his prestige. He was a man among men. But could the passing of time really make him become like this?”

Day after day, that bright shine started to disappear. The person who used to confidently shout that he would make Wikaly into the greatest tribe, that person who was so full of vigor, was starting to change little by little.

But he was someone who had made up his mind to serve this man since the day he completed his coming-of-age ceremony. Wasn't he the person who recognized his skills more than anybody else? Abham had treasured him even more than his parents had done.

Men of the desert had to be strong above all else. But he was such a weakling, so weak that people worried whether he could even complete his coming-of-age ceremony. It was to the point where many of the tribe members even ignored him. It was only this man who believed in his dreams and his abilities.

“Abham-nim, please don't give up. Aren't we slowly building that foundation? One day, this will become the strongest oasis of the Wikaly tribe.”

“Even that is thanks to you. But we do not own much, and our oasis is the smallest of the tribe. There are limitations to what we can achieve. I want to put my hope in my future generations, but they all have rocks for brains. All they know how to do is to envy others.”

Runa put on a bitter smile. As Abham mentioned, it would have been great if his sons were even half the man Abham was. But Abham's sons already did not have a good relationship with Abham.

Part of it was because Abham doted on him too much and didn't pay attention to his children, but even down to the basics, whether

it was character or abilities, they were nothing in comparison to Abham.

“I believe that is my job. It is because I have not shown my skills yet. Once they know about your sincerity and my skills just a bit, we can take care of this issue quickly.”

Abham shook his head at Runa’s words.

“If they knew who was responsible for making our oasis as plentiful as it is now, they will not be able to act the way they are acting right now. Once my sons follow in my footsteps, you will just end up not having any power in the oasis. You need to go find a different chief or Greatest Warrior to serve before that happens.”

“Where would I go if I left your side, Abham-nim? I’m someone who is useless other than for my somewhat decent brain.”

“Chief Avignon of the Rising Moon Oasis seems to have a keen eye for people. He is trying to take you. Although I don’t like the things he does, he is still has the most influence after the Glow. Go to him.”

Runa let out a laugh as he spoke.

“Ha! You want me to go to that old man? As soon as I get there, I will not be able to deal with my temper and kill myself. The complaints from his vice chiefs and warriors are known in our oasis as well.”

“But he is also the person who can put you to the best use. I already brought it up to him casually last time, so he’s probably salivating about it by now.”

Runa’s eyes were full of seriousness as he responded to Abham.

“Abham-nim. There is nothing I’ve managed to accomplish with you yet. Aren’t you curious? Don’t you want to know how far I can go? Please go with me. A warrior dedicates their life to the person who recognizes their abilities. You were the person who recognized my worth yet I have not done anything for you.”

“Hearing you say something like that, I am embarrassed at how weak I have become.”

“It is still not too late. Even if it is just our oasis, we must prepare for battle. Since our oasis is the closest to Pareia, we need to prepare in advance and wait for the right moment.”

“The right moment ... yes. We must wait. For me, and for you. Go, start getting them ready.”

“You will definitely be able to see the glory of victory.”

Runa’s eyes started to shine.

Book 2-4.2 Before the War (II)

Pareia was busy.

Once they heard of the Shuarei's invasion, Yulian had summoned the Greatest Warriors of each oasis, as well as their group of warriors.

Honestly speaking, the Shuarei's invasion had been anticipated, so they were able to finish gathering the troops and completing war preparations without much issues.

“We cannot divide the army into two. Venersis is, without a doubt, a warrior among warriors. We do not know how many warriors he will bring with him, but we have around 20,000 warriors here right now. We need to first figure out their military strength first.”

One of the Greatest Warriors, the Large Spear Egane Paise, shared his thoughts. After hearing what Egane had to say, Yulian asked a question.

“Isn't there also the possibility that the enemy will strike from the Deep Deep Oasis side?”

Egane pointed to the front of the Deep Deep Oasis on the map before answering.

“This area here has the borders to the Rivolde, Shuarei, and our Pareia. They will not thoughtlessly attack there. They do not want to irritate the Rivolde for no reason. The fact that the Rivolde Glow-nim is pressing on this side is already a tremendous help to us.”

“The Shuarei will not expect that we overcame our chaos this quickly and managed to make full preparations. Let's use this opportunity to try to take back the oasis we lost around 10 years ago as well.”

All of the people in the paoe looked toward Yulian with

concerned gazes. The war they lost that oasis was when Mairez had died.

“You said that until now, they could not even dream about pushing forward because of our Pareia’s three valiant Greatest Warriors going up against him, right? This war will be different. I will block Venersis and his Desert Sword, so the other Greatest Warriors can start to think about how to take down the other forces and advance forward.”

At Yulian’s continued words, their gazes turned from concern to anticipation. It was because what Yulian had said was not wrong. They were confident that if it was their Glow, he would be able to defend against Venersis.

“If Glow can do that, us Greatest Warriors and our troops will break their formation and take back the lost oasis without a problem. If the Shuarei did not have Venersis, they would just be a tribe with large bodies.”

As Egane spoke with joy, Yulian nodded his head and looked toward his subordinates.

“I trust that you can do that. And because I have not experienced a war of this magnitude yet, please do not see me as the Glow but as a subordinate warrior and teach me your ways. The ways of war, the methods of attacking and defending in the desert and the wilderness, the actions of a commander ... I still have a lot to learn.”

“We will guide you with our utmost sincerity, Glow.”

All of the warriors in the paoe bowed their heads and shouted. Yulian also raised his voice and answered.

“This war is the first step towards our Pareia’s victory. Looking past Pareia, we must win for the future of the entire desert. We need to win until there will never be a day the desert tribes have to fight each other again. Let’s all work hard for that day.”

The moment all of the warriors' eyes shined, the patrolling warrior came into the paoe.

“Reporting. Shuarei warriors have appeared around the border. Based on the reports of our spies, the commander of the Shuarei tribe is not Venersis, but the Piercing Bow Recharei.”

Egane was extremely excited at the patrol's report and asked.

“Is that true? It really is not Venersis but Recharei?”

“Yes. Both the first and second report indicated it was Recharei. We also got news that the total number of warriors is around 20,000.”

Egane shouted at the patrol's report.

“The heavens and the Shuarei's Glow are helping us.”

Egane was excited and many of the Greatest Warriors looked full of life.

“Why is it not Venersis and some other Greatest Warrior? Could something have happened to Venersis?”

Never having been in a war, Yulian did not understand the Greatest Warriors' excitement and asked, thinking something must have happened to Venersis.

“It might be a problem. But what we are certain of is that the Glow and the other Greatest Warriors are preventing him from coming out.”

“Preventing? You are saying they are hindering their own tribe's Greatest Warrior?”

“That is why I mentioned that the Shuarei's Glow is helping us. It is suspicion. He is worried that Venersis might be staging a rebellion. The members of the Shuarei tribes see Venersis as a War God and the tribe's guardian, so it makes sense that he is concerned.”

Yulian tilted his head in confusion.

“I cannot understand it. How can he not believe his own warrior.”

At Yulian’s words, Egane, as well as the other Greatest Warriors started to smile. Their Glow truly lacked that type of political sense. But it might be because he was that way that his charisma to pull people to him had reached the zenith.

“Seeing other tribes like that, it makes us happy. We serve a Glow who trusts in us to show our strength as much as we want in battle.”

“You are praising me for something obvious. Either way, if Venersis is not involved, our chances for success should increase quite a bit.”

Even Pareia’s third generation Greatest Warrior, the usually silent ‘Sharp Teeth’, Trebol, couldn’t hide his excitement as he spoke.

“We must bring over the Angry Brandistock as well. Because it was Venersis, he had to stay back to defend the Deep Deep Oasis, but now we don’t need to do that. Until he shows up, Egane and I can be the focal point as we divide our brigades into two and push forward as much as we can. Before the Shuarei realize the danger and call on Venersis to show up, we need to advance as much as possible. This time, I believe that we can truly take back the oasis that we have lost.”

At Trebol’s words, the other Greatest Warriors each shared their thoughts as well. Thinking that this war was already won, even some preposterous strategies were brought forward.

But watching the warriors like this, it actually made Yulian understand the fear they had of Venersis. Listening to them, he also thought that he was still far from becoming a great commander for the tribe.

‘This is the beginning. All I have to do is learn the things I do not

know, and strengthen the aspects I am weak at. This is the beginning of the unification of the desert.'

Yulian reaffirmed his goal once more in his mind.

"Red Storm."

"Yes, Glow."

At Yulian's loud voice, the Red Storm warriors chanted back.

"It is our first expedition. It is time to show the world the might of the Red Storm warriors."

"Ooowoooooooooooo~!"

"I hope for us to create a legend of being undefeated. We have prepared enough to make that happen. Can you imagine it? Can you imagine us being struck by an enemy sword?"

"Ooowoooooooooooo~!"

The shouts of the warriors.

"We will decorate the first page of Pareia's history. We will engrave the name of Red Storm, the immortal brigade in the heart of our enemies. And most importantly, we will take one step forward toward our dream."

"Ooowoooooooooooo~!"

"Death is not permitted. Your lives are not your own but Pareia's life and my life. You must not die and leave behind disgrace. Slash and slash again and live. That is the reason we trained this whole time. Are you ready? Who are we?"

"RED STORM!"

"Just like our name, let's blow through like a red storm."

"Oowaaaaaaaaaaaa~!"

The warriors raised their two greatswords to the sky as their morale continued to increase.

“Let’s go.”

The Red Storm took their place behind Yulian.

Book 2-4.3 First Campaign

At a location approximately one day's distance from the Large Oasis, the large armies of Pareia and Shuarei were moving closer to each other.

There are no infantry in desert war. Everybody rides a pirma.

In the continent, they call the soldiers who ride horses the cavalry, and they are considered a very important part of the army. But in the desert, man or woman, young or old, everybody has their own pirma. Because there were enough pimas that people with many pimas could even have up to ten pimas, learning to ride a pirma was basic knowledge and everybody used them for war.

You could almost call this gathering of approximately 40,000 pirma riding warriors in this wide desert a parade. Other than the last few years, these two tribes had always been at war, but a large scale battle like this had not occurred since the war about 10 years ago.

Since Yulian's official title was that of the Commanding Officer, he was looking out to them from the center of the formation. However, the majority of the orders were issued by the Greatest Warriors. Yulian listened carefully to their orders and asked questions regarding their commands to learn and remember the ways of the commander.

"Glow, I'm sure the Glow has thought a lot about it, but you do understand that thinking about it and experiencing it first hand are extremely different?"

Yulian nodded his head at Egane's words.

"War is something that is more different than what I just said. Especially in a situation like this where over 10,000 warriors are facing off against each other, it will become a complete mess

similar to the Fiery Hell that Neo Latin-nim has described. I'm sure you have imagined and can understand blood flying, but watching flesh being flung away and internal organs flying around, that's something you can't understand until you see it for yourself. It's even possible for your enemy's brain or eyeball to end up in your mouth as you fight without having a moment to think."

"You are trying to scare me quite a bit."

As Yulian put on a faint smile and answered, Egane shook his head and continued on.

"That is not what I am trying to do. I am just telling you to solidify your heart. No matter the warrior, after their first battle, they grow restless. It is the job of the veteran warriors to help calm them down. Even though around 1,000 of our warriors are heading into their first battle as well, the Glow calmly being here will give them a great boost."

Egane looked toward Yulian as if he was concerned.

War had a magic power that tends to make people go crazy. This is not a question of strong or weak, talented or not. Even if you firmly set your resolves, war can make you go crazy.

Egane had mentioned all of this because he was fearful that Yulian would end up chaotic during the battle.

"Do not worry. I have firmly calmed my heart. You must be worried that if I show fear, the other warriors will show fear as well."

"I am not too worried, but it is the old man in me coming out."

"It is a war we cannot avoid. In that case, we might as well do it properly and do it well. If war is where blood splatters and flesh is flung, then I need to make sure that I am the one slashing the enemy's flesh and spurting their blood."

Egane nodded internally at Yulian's words and let out a sigh of relief. Having that type of mentality was actually better. If your

heart becomes weak, or your mind gets clouded and you start to enjoy slashing people rather than fearing it, it will become a problem.

“I must have worried for nothing. But you are shaking a bit, right?”

“Hahaha~! To be honest, I am. I am not afraid, but I am indeed shaking a bit.”

“That is normal and good. Being too calm or too frazzled when the enemy attacks are both bad. The right amount of concern with the right amount of confidence is the best.”

“I will take heed of your words.”

While Yulian and Egane were talking, the 20,000 warriors on both side stopped 500m in front of each other, as if they had made a deal to do so. They then started to fix up their formation.

“In regards to our formation, as we mentioned before, 15,000 warriors will get in the Triangle formation. You know about this formation I presume?”

“It is used for a safe progression, and has fast movement speed and overwhelming ability to adapt to changes.”

“Yes, that is correct. Although it cannot pierce through as quickly as the Arrow formation, our goal is the enemy’s retreat. That is why we will start with the Triangle formation in the beginning, and then change to the T formation which can pressure the enemy back. The remaining 5,000 warriors will go left with Trebol, and will attack the enemy from behind in four lines. Just like his name, his ability to breakthrough is well-known.

Yulian asked about the Shuarei’s formation.

“It looks like the Shuarei are in the Rectangle formation. It seems like they are planning on breaking through our ranks as well.”

“It is the best formation to use. It makes it easy to change

formation while in the middle of battle, and is the formation Greatest Warriors who enjoy changing things up enjoy the most. But I question whether Recharei has the abilities to properly use that formation.”

“What formation does Venersis enjoy using?”

Egane stroked his short beard with two finger before starting to draw a picture in the air.

“He likes to divide his troops as he moves. If he has 10,000 warriors, he will divide them into 3 groups of approximately 3,000, if 5,000, 3 groups of 1,500 and the remaining warriors will roam around. Although it is a dangerous formation where one of the divided groups may end up perishing, they have been trained well to the point where they will quickly change based on a single movement of his hand. If you look at its foundation, it is the basic Rectangle formation with three of them horizontally next to each other and the remaining troops moving around slowly.”

“It’s amazing.”

“I’m embarrassed to say this, but I can confidently say that there are no Greatest Warriors throughout the desert that can take on him on their own. Even if you are careful, he can instantly change from the 3 rectangles to a free-form formation before suddenly changing formation and surrounding you.”

“It must have been hard on you.”

“When our Pareia was defending against Venersis, three Greatest Warriors took their individual armies to fight against each of Venersis’s smaller formations on our own. Of course our numbers had to be greater than theirs as well. It was difficult to just defend against them.”

Even though he was the one saying it, Egane seemed to be embarrassed as he started to scratch his beard again.

“Even though he is our bitter enemy, he is a warrior deserving of

respect.”

At Yulian’s words, Egane nodded his head in agreement.

“He is amazing. Honestly speaking, if he was the Greatest Warrior leading their army, I would never use a method like this of pushing forward. It is because it is Recharei that we can divide our troops into two and use a pincer attack.”

Yulian thought about it for a bit before asking.

“Won’t the enemy Greatest Warrior realize our plan? Even if Greatest Warrior Egane is confident, as a tribe’s Greatest Warrior, shouldn’t he notice at least that much?”

“We will push forward so quickly that he will not have time to realize what we are doing, as well as give him a bait that’ll take away his attention.”

“What?”

Egane laughed as he pointed at Yulian.

“Don’t we have the Glow with us? All the Glow has to do is get a feel for the battle with the Red Storm warriors from near the battlefield. How the formation changes, when and how to push forward, experience it with your own eyes from close up.”

“Are you telling me not to fight?”

Egane nodded his head.

“Today is not the day to show the Glow’s might. It is a day to see what war is like. Please do not get involved and just watch. If you consider me, the Large Spear Egane, as your mentor in war, please follow my request.”

Seeing Egane saying it so seriously, Yulian could only nod his head yes. There must be a reason for him to be saying this.

“While you are moving around, please move while wearing the traditional outfit of the Glow.”

“What?”

“I trust that you have the clothes with you.”

“Of course I brought it with me but

In a war where the Glow is in the frontline, they always carried the traditional outfit of the Glow with them. It was a custom that a war the Glow was involved in meant that they were planning on taking over the enemy’s oasis, and if they successfully took over the oasis, the Glow would be courteous and put on the outfit as he went around comforting the residents of the oasis.

He recalled laughing about how Grace had meticulously thought about this custom and stuffed the Glow’s traditional outfit onto the pirma.

Book 2-4.4 Yulian Steps In (I)

“Please put it on now. And then move around all you want. Honestly speaking, even without fighting, Glow has already participated in the battle.”

“By that you mean?”

“I just thought about it now as well. But it is enough if you consider the Glow and your subordinate warriors’ strengths. You will be able to see a battle firsthand, and that alone will be enough to get you involved in the battle. Isn’t that what we would call catching monsters and earning money?”

Although Yulian was laughing on the inside, he still maintained a calm expression as he answered.

“Even so, I can’t believe you would try to use me as bait.”

Egane responded without the slightest of change in his expression.

“If you don’t like it, then please stay beside me and watch how the formations change. That is not bad either.”

“Haha! I was just joking. So all I have to do is move around like that?”

Yulian quickly took the clothes out of his bag and asked while putting it over himself.

“Yes. That is all you have to do. However, please make sure that you are not surrounded by the enemy. I’m sure you’ll realize it after experiencing a few times, but war is the one place you can never let your guard down. Although they may be lacking in strength and abilities compared to you, they have hundreds, no thousands of shamshirs. It will not take long to surround you and capture you, or kill you. You need to remember what the result will be if the Glow is captured. You must definitely remember the consequence of such a thing happening.”

“Of course. No matter what my strength may be, I know that I am no different than a young warrior on the battlefield. I will not move carelessly.”

Egane decided that they should now start moving and nodded his head as he responded.

“I am relieved to hear you say that. It looks like the formation is almost ready. Please start moving ten minutes after the first clash. From here no, I cannot take care of the Glow.”

“You must focus on the battle. I’m sure this probably sounds really weird, but I will make sure to learn well.”

Egane slightly smiled at Yulian’s response and moved his pirma forward to command the troops.

Warriors carrying Pareia’s red flag stepped in front of the troops, and warriors carrying Shuarei’s yellow flag moved forward not too long after. They were the flag warriors signaling the beginning of the battle.

“You Shuarei who do not know the definition of honor. Even this time, you show your dirty personalities. But our Pareia’s Glow, the Desert Conqueror, Yulian Provoke-nim is someone who has the magnanimity to embrace your wrongdoings. It is not too late to do the right thing and give up. If you do, we will help make those honorless blades shine with honor.”

As one of Pareia’s flag warriors shouted, one of the Shuarei’s flag warriors responded back.

“Listen carefully you weaklings of Pareia. By the order of the Shuarei’s Great Glow, the Desert Mole Hangry Elbotta, the Piercing Bow Recharei Breeze-nim and 20,000 warriors are here to protect all of you. Instead of shedding unnecessary blood, isn’t it better to give up and partake in our Shuarei’s glory?”

“Is there any animal as sly and greedy as the desert mole? The Shuarei think a mole is great? With such an honorless name, it is

preposterous to call it glorious. The Piercing Bow has already been defeated by our Greatest Warrior, the Large Spear, a long time ago. Do not proceed with a battle you are destined to lose and give up now.”

It was like Pareia’s flag warriors had anticipated what the enemy would say and easily twisted their words. The one to be provoked by their words was Shuarei’s Greatest Warrior, Recharei.

Recharei urged his pirma forward and lifted up a bow the size of his body and started to shoot his arrows. His arrows surprisingly started to hit Pareia’s flags one by one.

Ding. Ding. Ding.

“Waaaaaaaaaaaaah~!”

As he pierced the flags one by one, the red flags started to fall to the sand before the flag warriors could do anything. As the flags hit the sand, the Shuarei camp let out a loud cheer.

Seeing that happen, Egane twisted the spear in his hand as he pressed forward.

Recharei lifted his bow back up and fired an arrow toward Egane, but Egane used his large spear to block the arrow.

Jii~iiiiing~

It shook the spear so much that it was difficult to believe that it did not pierce through, and Egane felt pain in his wrist. It was definitely bow skills fitting the Shuarei’s Greatest Warrior. However, he had already experienced Recharei’s skills during the last war.

Back then, Recharei’s arrow almost blew away Egane’s arm. In the end, he was able to approach Recharei and make him retreat within ten attacks, but he was not an enemy you could peacefully approach.

That was why he recalled the past events and prepared his

defense as he quickly pushed forward to Recharei.

As Egane approached him, Recharei let out his last arrow and turned the pirma around. Recharei recalled the past events as well. He knew he was no match for Egane in close combat.

“OOwaaaa~aaaa~!”

This time, it was Pareia’s camp that cheered on as a different Greatest Warrior, the Scorpion Tail Mabis, recognized his peer’s weakness and headed out to meet him.

The moment Egane’s large spear aimed for Recharei’s back, Mabis’s spear was stabbing toward Egane’s heart.

As his name indicated, Mabis’s shamshir quickly and powerfully moved in a straight line, forcing Egane to retrieve the spear trying to pierce through Recharei’s back and parry Mabis’s shamshir.

Claaaaaaaang~!

First the sound of the weapons slashing through the air, the sharp noise of the spear and shamshir quickly clashing twice soon followed. Egane and Mabis both had fire in their eyes as they put in all of their effort to defeat their opponent.

Following that, Recharei, who had turned his pirma back around, worked together with Mabis to pressure Egane, forcing Egane’s spear to shake violently.

Greatest Warriors usually command between 5,000 to 10,000 warriors, and the Shuarei sent three Greatest Warriors to war with them, but Pareia only had Egane and Trebol, two Greatest warriors with them this time.

No matter how quickly they managed to squash the rebellion, Pareia’s internal affairs were still slightly chaotic compared to before, with the Greatest Warriors of each oasis tied down at their individual oasis. Since they assumed that Venersis would be the commanding officer for this war, the Angry Brandistock was defending the Deep Deep Oasis.

Each tribe's Greatest Warrior, as the name indicates, means they are the best amongst the warriors. The only warriors who can take on the Greatest Warriors are warriors of the same rank, meaning only the Greatest Warriors of the other tribes. But with Trebol leading 5,000 warriors to the back for the pincer attack, he could not come to save Egane.

Parei's valiant lead warriors were about to lead their pirmas to support Egane, when, before they could make a move, there was a single pirma that shot forward like an arrow.

“Glow!”

The lead warriors realized the owner of the pirma as they shouted.

With a greatsword in each hand, Yulian rushing forward with his legs fixed on the side of the pirma looked like a piece of art.

At Yulian rushing forward, the shouts of Pareia's warriors really reached the zenith.

None of them even considered that Yulian could lose. Their Glow was a man, no a warrior, who could even catch a Sand Dragon on his own. He was the Desert Conqueror.

With the shouts of Pareia's warriors behind him, Yulian quickly interjected in the battle where Egane was struggling.

Boooooooooooooong~!

Yulian's large greatsword made a loud noise as it cut through the air.

Tang!

Yulian managed to fling Recharei's shamshir into the air with a single swing. Seeing Yulian's overwhelming strength, the Pareia warriors cheered loudly once more, while the Shuarei warriors' jaws just dropped.

Although Chun Myung Hoon had taught him how to use two

greatswords to fight against multiple opponents at once, that overwhelming strength was amazing against a single opponent as well.

Boooooooooong~!

Yulian's greatsword attacked Recharei one more time, and Recharei became frantic as he used his iron bow to parry Yulian's greatsword.

As the situation completely turned in an instant with Recharei and Mabis's lives in danger, the remaining Greatest Warrior rushed out from the Shuarei camp.

This Greatest Warrior of Shuarei called the Splendid Light Porangso swung a shamshir as bright as his name, and barely managed to rescue Recharei.

But that's all he managed to do. As Yulian leisurely handled Recharei with his left hand and Porangso with his right, the two men were full of disbelief.

Even if people say that Recharei is weak in close combat, that was only in comparison to the other Greatest Warriors. So this was Recharei, who had at least the same level of close combat skills as a veteran warrior, and one other Greatest Warrior being dominated by one warrior.

The story about how Venersis effortlessly fought against Pareia's three Greatest Warriors was known throughout the desert, but Venersis was known as the undisputed Greatest Warrior of the desert.

But wasn't this a baby warrior who was barely twenty years old?

It wasn't like they were looking down on him because he was a young warrior, but this was just too much.

All they could do was put all of their efforts in defending against Yulian's sword and finding a way to escape from this clash. With this fact that they could not do anything else filling their minds,

the two Greatest Warriors could not help but lose their fighting spirits.

Book 2-4.5 Yulian Steps In (II)

Far off in the distance, Chun Myung Hoon was observing his disciple's performance.

But seeing that he had a frown on his face, he didn't seem to be too happy with it.

'After all of my wonderful training, he can only swing a sword like that? Having been taught by me for ten years, he should be able to take care of this type of situation easily.'

Chun Myung Hoon continued to grumble, as if he was disappointed at Yulian's abilities. Although he should really be taking out five of those ten years since he was away traveling the continent, Chun Myung Hoon didn't give a damn about something like that.

Since ten years have passed, it has been ten years.

Although everybody else was in awe of Yulian's abilities, only Chun Myung Hoon was finding it to be inadequate.

'He's become weak because I stepped away for a moment. He really must have been fooling around and not training properly. I let him off easily since there were a couple things that may have been hurting him, but once this ends, I will push him harder. He was always lazy like this that I need to keep my attention on him. Ay~! I wonder if my junior felt like this as he trained his disciple.'

Did Chun Myung Hoon's thoughts get transferred to Yulian?

While he was full of excitement and having fun while swinging his sword, he felt a murderous aura that felt like someone had poured cold water over his head.

The amazing connection between the master and disciple.....

Yulian realized that he was getting too excited and calmed his mind as he started to swing his two swords more elaborately. The

results appeared almost instantly.

“Ugh.”

With a short groan, Recharei started to fall off his pirma. About three meters away from where he fell was a now ownerless single arm, bleeding into the sand.

“Oowaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa~!”

Another thunderous noise echoed from the Pareia camp.

Their Glow was able to take the arm of one of the enemy's Greatest Warriors while fighting against two enemy Greatest Warriors at once.

“Glow! Glow! Glow!”

Pareia's warriors started to chant in unison. This confirmed their belief that their Glow will become the Eastern War God.

Hearing the shout of the Pareia warriors, the Greatest Warriors of the Shuarei tribe finally realized that this monster-like young warrior was Pareia's Glow.

It was so chaotic and happened so quickly that nobody managed to pay attention to this young warrior's outfit.

The picture of the Red Sun on his chest.

It was the picture that only the Glow of Pareia was allowed to wear.

Mabis and Porangso both disregarded the risk and turned their pirmas around at the same time.

Nothing good would come out of holding on any longer. Yulian and Egane, who believed that they should not slash a warrior who has shown his back, just let them go before capturing the fallen [Recharei](#).

“Valiant warriors of Pareia, the Shuarei have already fallen thanks to Neo Latin-nim's protection and our Glow's might. Now

it is time for our valiant warriors to show their might.”

Egane shouted with a loud voice before quickly speaking to Yulian.

“Glow, please give the command for everyone to charge.”

Yulian quickly nodded his head and lifted his two greatswords high up in the air as he shouted.

“Everyone, CHARGE! Show them the might of Pareia!”

Listening to Yulian’s voice that seemed to echo throughout the desert, the warriors of Pareia were full of confidence as they started to charge forward, rumbling the desert sand underneath them.

Seeing one of their Greatest Warriors being captured and the other two turning their backs and retreating, it was natural for the morale of the Shuarei warriors to fall to the ground.

Furthermore, since Pareia was charging forward while they were without a Greatest Warrior to command them to charge as well, they could not respond with a proper attack.

In a group battle like this, especially one where it was not between infantry but where everyone was on a pirma, the side that managed to rush out first with momentum always had the advantage. That was why one of the basic knowledge was to never charge head-on against an enemy that was rushing down from a higher altitude.

With the Pareia warriors, who rushed first and had the momentum, clashing against the Shuarei warriors who did not have time to gather speed, the Shuarei’s formation quickly started to crumble.

In the midst of that, Yulian and Red Storm’s charging abilities were what you would call overwhelming. They were able to cause giant holes in the Shuarei’s formation wherever they went, and the other warriors quickly followed after them to continue the

assault.

Porangso and Mabis believed in the fact that they had at least a couple thousand more troops and did their best to restore the formations, but it was not enough to defend against the momentum Pareia had already gained.

“Change formation!”

Without missing the opportunity, Egane shouted to the flag warriors. With the lead flag’s signal, hundreds of red flags moved forward, backward, here and there, until Pareia’s formation almost instantly started to change into a straight line.

On top of that, Trebol and his 5,000 warriors appeared from the back, starting to attack the Shuarei from the other direction.

Being divided in half from the front and being pressured diagonally from the back, the 20,000 Shuarei warriors’ formation quickly broke off into groups of a couple thousand, before all of them ended up surrounded.

“Retreat! Everybody retreat!”

Porangso and Mabis continued to shout as they ordered a retreat, but there was no path to retreat. As the warriors wandered left and right trying to find a way out, they even ended up crashing into their fellow warriors and falling over.

Once Egane signaled his troops as well as Trebol with a flag, a single path of escape appeared for each surrounded group.

All of the Shuarei warriors started to run for their lives.

‘Why are they letting them go? Isn’t this a good opportunity to kill them all? Was it a mistake? But both of them did it at the same time.’

Yulian could not understand why Egane and Trebol would let them go when they had them surrounded and could have killed them all.

“Glow.”

While he was thinking, Trebol called out and started to approach him, covered in blood from head to toe.

“Greatest Warrior Trebol.”

Yulian relaxed and smile as he greeted Trebol. They had won this battle.

Trebol stopped his pirma next to Yulian and spoke with elation.

“What happened? I rushed here as fast as I could, but their formations were breaking apart even before I could really get involved. Glow and Egane must have showed quite the performance.”

“Hahaha, Egane-nim’s performance was amazing. All I did was fight and shout. Whether it was the time to attack or the movement of the formation, Greatest Warrior Egane controlled all of that. Even now, the two of you commanded the troops to let them go.”

“Just the fact of having their Glow with them gives the warriors strength. You do not need to be too modest. Desert warriors need to be able to arrogantly receive some compliments as well. Plus, the Glow will become a much greater commander than us in the coming days.”

“Hahaha, I will keep that in mind.”

Yulian let out a big laugh at Trebol’s words and nodded his head. He then asked the question that was continuously running through his mind.

“Greatest Warrior Trebol, why is it that we opened a path for them to retreat? Wasn’t this a great opportunity?”

“It definitely was a great opportunity. In fact, it was an opportunity for us to reduce the number of Shuarei warriors that are retreating to a tenth of the current amount.”

“Then why?”

Trebol finally realized that their Glow was still young. He was also very naive about war.

“They say that even a mouse will bite a cat if it is pushed to a corner. With their morale down to the ground we were able to push them around as easily as we did, but if they feel that they have no way to live, they will fiercely attack and try to take as many of us down with them.”

“Hmm.”

“Then the number of injuries to our Pareia warriors will increase as well. In war, it is said that even if you manage to kill 100 enemy warriors, if 100 of your own warriors die as a result, you are a stupid commander. Even if you lost 100 warriors in the process of killing 1,000 enemy warriors, I believe a wise commander should seek a path of protecting his forces. The warriors can go crazy and kill without thinking, but the commander must never be that way.”

Trebol put on a tiny smile. There were moments when he wished that he was not one of the Greatest Warriors and could just be one of the warriors.

“We fall into temptation many times as well. But we need to know when to hold back. That is the only way we can prepare for the next skirmish as well. I’m sure you are aware that Pareia’s warriors are courageous, but we do not have many of them.”

Yulian nodded his head at Trebol’s explanation and kept this advice close to his heart.

“Then let us keep moving. At the end of a battle, we need to just slightly lower the warriors’ excitement and fix up our formation before collecting the spoils of war and capturing any enemy who is still alive and taking them as our prisoner.”

“Then let us proceed.”

Trebol moved first and Yulian followed next to him, remember Trebol's every move and command to the troops.

That day, Pareia earned a victory against the Shuarei in battle.

This was one of their greatest successes ever.

Of the 20,000 Shuarei warriors, only about half of that amount managed to successfully retreat.

They also captured a large amount of approximately 5,000 warriors as prisoners, and collected the weapons, pirmas, food, and the other equipment that were left on the battlefield.

The morale of Pareia's warriors pierced through the heavens, and the two Greatest Warriors sent the good news back to their individual oasis with a messenger.

Once the battlefield was swept, the two Greatest Warriors discussed with Yulian once more, before allowing the warriors to have alcohol for just one night. They provided them with food, alcohol, and some free time, which excited the warriors even more to the point that it seemed difficult to lower their morale in the next few days.

That was how Yulian's historic first campaign ended up as a complete success as the night started to approach.

End of Chapter 4.

This is different than with Recharei because that was more of a hit and run. This is more of a full on retreat.

Book 2-5.1 After the First Battle

The Meeting of the Two War Gods

The mere fact that the two of them were here together instantly made the battlefield much smaller.

The news about how the Shuarei ended up with an unprecedented defeat against Pareia quickly spread across the desert.

After hearing about how Pareia's new Glow went up against two of Shuarei's Greatest Warriors at the same time and still managed to take one of their arms, nobody had a problem giving him the title of the War God of the Eastern Desert.

It was rare for the desert to be riled up this much. In fact, it had only happened once in the last thirty years.

That was the first time the War God of the Western Desert, the Bloodied Hands Venersis, went to war.

It was the same way then.

Shuarei's young warrior Venersis had no issues going up against three of Pareia's Greatest Warriors, and thanks to that, the Shuarei's morale was burning hot as they quickly broke through Pareia's formations.

Pareia received critical damage because of it, and lost an oasis to the Shuarei in the process. To be more specific, you could say that they lost the oasis to Venersis.

That was the campaign that gave Venersis the title of the War God of the Western Desert.

After that, nobody dared to challenge Venersis to a battle of the Greatest Warriors by themselves.

That would have been akin to committing suicide, and even if they stepped forward out of their pride, if they ended up dying, it

wasn't just a personal issue, it also affected the warriors because they would have lost their commander and would most likely end up losing that battle.

Venersis proved it when he handled three Greatest Warriors, and this time, Yulian proved it by going against two on his own and capturing one in the process.

The two War God forewarned that a new wind that will change the landscape of the desert will start to blow.

Although the night was deep, Pareia's camp was still swept up in the joy of victory and chatting away. Since they were all warriors who knew how to take care of their bodies it shouldn't be an issue, but the lead warriors were moving throughout the camp telling the warriors to start getting some rest.

Although the warriors were eating and drinking and getting drunk off the feeling of victory, there were just three people who were inside a paoe strategizing for the next day's course of action.

"We need to to charge ahead once more. The Shuarei lost quite a bit of warriors in this battle, so it is the chance to take the Bushy Oasis, the same Bushy Oasis we lost in the past."

"That is true. In addition, as the victors we got a day to rest, while the enemy should have been too busy running away to rest properly. The pressure and stress of being chased is not comparable to any other type of fatigue. We need to use the momentum from this victory before the enemy can get their head back together to push on and take back the lost oasis before pushing forward and taking back the other lost oasis as well."

[Egane and Mabis](#) supported each other's statements as they explained that they needed to proceed forward as quickly as they could.

Although it was pretty much decided, the commanding officer of this war was Glow Yulian.

But Yulian respected the suggestion of the two warriors, and decided that they will proceed forward as soon as the sun came up.

After chatting a little more about strategy and roles for the next day, the three people were finally able to eat a late dinner.

Yulian started to speak while ripping apart a large chunk of meat with his two hands.

“I saw and felt quite a lot of things today.”

Trebol took a gulp of alcohol before opening his mouth with a satisfied expression.

“It’s hard to find such a refreshing battle like today.”

“If I am being honest with you, as Trebol just mentioned, an overwhelming success like this is something you will not find many times in your entire life. Today, our Glow’s performance was just too amazing. We were able to win so easily because the opponent’s Greatest Warriors were cornered by you. However, if there is something I can warn the Glow about, it would be that you should not think ‘war is like this!’ because today’s battle was too one-sided.”

As Egane spoke like a strict teacher with fear that Yulian might get too arrogant and think too lightly about war, Yulian nodded his head in agreement as he responded.

“I understand. However, I can’t seem to do anything about this boiling blood inside of me.”

“That is normal for a young warrior. Even I will not tell you to cool that down. I will just leave this warning. Always remember where you are on the battlefield, as well as your position of Glow.”

Listening to Egane’s words, Trebol playfully stuck his finger in his cup to wet it before flinging his finger toward Egane.

“Egane, aren’t you being too strict? We need to teach him what he needs to learn while letting him enjoy the things he should

enjoy. Wouldn't that be the best way for the Glow to quickly get used to war?"

Egane must have been used to Trebol's horseplaying as he didn't even lift his head up and casually put a piece of meat in his mouth as he avoided the drop of alcohol flung his way.

"You are always so optimistic. I believe that you first need to know the pain of defeat. That is the only way for you to give it your all in order to make sure you do not lose again."

"No, you must first know what victory tastes like. Wouldn't you try even harder the next time to taste that joy once again?"

Yulian was entertained by the two Greatest Warriors' contradictory opinions as he focused on eating the food in front of him.

"Hmm, hmm."

As he heard someone clearing their throat outside, Yulian quickly stood up out of reflex.

He then had a look of urgency on his face as he quickly ran toward the entrance of the paoe.

The moment Egane and Trebol lifted their heads and turned to look toward the entrance, they heard a 'Takong' noise, which they could not figure out.

"Ugh."

Followed by that short groan.

The moment the two shocked Greatest Warriors quickly got up, Yulian and the old man called his master walked in. The two Greatest Warriors bowed their head toward the old man subconsciously.

"I hope I am not intruding on the meal of the two warriors who are tired from the battle today."

Even though the old man was casually talking to the two of them,

the two Greatest Warriors did not feel any type of reluctance.

“We have heard a lot about you. We heard that senior was the one to bestow the two greatswords art to our Glow.”

As Trebol nervously greeted the man, Egane stood up straight before bowing again and introducing himself.

“I am called Egane. I have heard much about you, senior.”

Chun Myung Hoon followed Yulian’s lead and leisurely sat down before motioning for them to sit.

“Please continue with your meal. I just hope my terrible disciple didn’t cause you any problems today. This punk does have some tact, so if you teach him well, he’ll be somewhat useful.”

The two Greatest Warriors didn’t know what to do with Chun Myung Hoon’s statement.

They were not used to anyone looking down on their Glow and calling him a punk.

Even if the previous Glow, Baguna, was alive, he would not use that type of title for the Young Glow.

“Master. I am now a proud chief of a tribe, if you talk like that my reputation.....”

Takong!

The two Greatest Warriors figured out the cause of the earlier noise.

It was the noise of Chun Myung Hoon grabbing Yulian’s head and flicking it with his finger.

“Ugh. Master. You really won’t save me any face?”

“Face my ass. You dare to talk about your face in front of me? Who taught you that clumsy swordsmanship that you used today? Are you sure you didn’t secretly get another teacher while I was away? I don’t recall teaching you such stupid looking

swordsmanship.”

“Didn’t your disciple still win in the end?”

“You call that winning? You were struggling until somehow your enemy had no luck and fell off his pirma. Plus, if I did not glare at you at that moment, do you think you would have had the same result?”

Yulian finally realized the reason he felt the murderous aura that felt like cold water was being poured on his head and shouted.

“Now that you mention it, that sharp murderous aura that went through my body was from you master. Were you trying to kill your disciple? Do you know how shocked this disciple was because of that sudden murderous aura?”

Boooooong~

As soon as he finished talking, Yulian lowered his head for an unknown reason. Chun Myung Hoon’s fist grazed by Yulian’s head a moment later.

“Ho~. Seeing as how you keep trying to talk back to me these days, it must mean that you don’t need someone like me anymore. Is that it? You must be out of your mind.”

“Please think about when you get old. Really old. If it is not this disciple of yours, who will take care of you when you are old? You are not planning on spending your last moments curled up in a paoe are you?”

Chun Myung Hoon snorted as he responded.

“Snort. You just keep saying things that’ll get you beat up. You think I, Chun Myung Hoon, will tell you to take care of me in the future? Do not worry. Many of the countries in the continent will politely receive me. There are so many countries inviting me to do nothing and just sit there that I cannot even count. If I recall correctly, some of them even offered thousands of beauties, and a giant load of gold, silver, and other treasures.”

“Why are you saying such useless things? What would you do with thousands of beauties at your age? Do you not remember how you told me to look at gold? Why would such a person care about a giant load of treasures?”

As Yulian did not stop and continued to talk back, Chun Myung Hoon released his ki.

BOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM!

Author seems to have mixed it up. Should really be Trebol. Mabis was the Shuarei Greatest Warrior

Book 2-5.2 Venersis Moves (I)

Yulian dodged with fear, only to find a giant ditch exactly where he had been standing.

“Have you become senile as well? Are you trying to kill me with that?”

“Oh? I paid so much attention to help you become a decent human for the past ten years to the point that I even have grey hair on my head, but now that you have some skills you challenge your master?”

“It’s normal to get grey hair as you age, and although I have never said it, how many people do you think can persevere even with your assault? If it wasn’t me, they wouldn’t have made it as far as I have.”

“Die, you little punk!”

As Chun Myung Hoon stretched out his hand, the ground caved in and furniture started to fly around. Soon, the paoe was filled with dust and the debris from the broken furniture.

The two Greatest Warriors who were speechless at the conversation and actions of the master-disciple duo looked at each other before quickly getting in between them.

“Senior, please calm down. Aren’t all disciples a little bit like this? He is still the Glow by name, he is only talking back because you are scolding him in front of his subordinates. The wise senior should hold back.”

As the smart Trebol quickly grabbed Chun Myung Hoon’s arm and tried to calm him down, Chun Myung Hoon cleared his throat before he spoke.

“Yes, I must hold back. I keep telling myself that but it is just too difficult. I showed you all something embarrassing.”

“Not at all. My horizons have been widened at senior’s heaven defying abilities. My desire to learn senior’s abilities are as plentiful as the sand in the desert.”

Yulian spoke at that point.

“Oh master, Grace was looking for you. She said she managed to cook following the method of that place you call China.”

Chun Myung Hoon’s ears perked up.

Chun Myung Hoon didn’t care too much about food, but the majority of the food here was bland and pretty much nothing was fried.

When Chun Myung Hoon first arrived, he couldn’t pay attention to something like that because there were no women around Yulian, but Grace was a good girl and asked him all sorts of questions before finding out that he didn’t like the food of the desert. She then asked even more questions to figure out what he liked and was currently trying to recreate it.

“Such a good girl. Very good girl. I wish you were even half as good as your wife.”

Chun Myung Hoon could already feel himself starting to salivate. It was funny if you thought about it, but Chun Myung Hoon was also a human with memories about his hometown.

What could he do to not miss it?

“Since that young one has worked so hard on my behalf, I must hurry over.”

“I will escort you there. But is that Chinese food really that good?”

“Are you joking? Once you try it, you will only want to eat that. At first the food here was bearable, but after eating some seasoned food on the continent, I have not been able to adjust back yet.”

“Please. Let us head over. Now that you mention it, I believe she

also has some alcohol called wine that was a present from the continent.”

“Are you talking about the fruity alcohol? It’s not very refreshing, but it is still pretty decent.”

“Please lead the way. I’m sure Grace is waiting for us.”

Chun Myung Hoon and Yulian stood right next to each other, as if they never fought, and walked out of the paoe. Once they left, Trebol started to talk to Egane.

“Did you see that?”

Nod. Nod.

“It’s amazing.”

Nod. Nod.

“He is an old man we must never anger.”

“We must protect ourselves.”

The two warriors had quickly figured out the type of person Chun Myung Hoon was.

The news of the Shuarei’s total defeat shocked all of the tribes in the desert, but the ones to receive the greatest shock was of course the recipients, the Shuarei.

A messenger hurried back to ask for reinforcements and to inform them of the urgent situation.

Hangry, the Shuarei’s Glow, hurriedly called over warriors from the individual oasis, and had no choice but to call Venersis back as well.

While the Shuarei were busy with that, Pareia managed to take back the Bushy Oasis, and continued on to the Oasis of Many Puddles. When the Shuarei heard about Pareia’s advances, they couldn’t help but become anxious.

The total number of warriors the Shuarei had were

approximately 70,000.

With their original numbers similar to Pareia's, hearing that a mere 5,000 survived this last battle out of the 20,000 they sent, were making the Shuarei go crazy.

Since they didn't manage to deal much damage to Pareia, they needed at least 10,000 warriors in reinforcement to take them on. With the minimum warriors necessary to protect each oasis being around 3,500, it would not be wrong to say that these 10,000 reinforcement warriors were all the Shuarei had to offer.

If this reinforcement army ended up losing as well, they needed to be prepared to at least lose 3 or 4 oasis.

But nobody was thinking that the worst case scenario like that would happen.

The War God of the Western Desert, the 'Bloodied Hand' Venersis, had arrived at Shuarei's largest oasis.

Venersis asked for the situation as soon as he arrived, and started to determine the level of the gathered warriors. He then commanded this and that regarding their supplies, and then started a strategy meeting with the lead warriors and the Greatest Warrior who would go to war with him.

When every minute counted, seeing Venersis look like he was taking his time, Hangry and the other Greatest Warriors urged him to hurry up and lead the army, but each time, Venersis just gave them a 'You all caused this to happen' type of gaze and did not give a damn about what they wanted. This made them extremely angry, but they could not go against Venersis's will at this point.

What can they do when they needed to rely on him?

Venersis was able to prepare everything the way he wanted. And then he finally started to move.

Many warriors came to watch him leave. Glow Hangry was among the group as well.

“We hope you can bring victory to Shuarei.”

Venersis sighed internally at Hangry’s words. The reason he was so pushy about him leading the army and not Recharei was because he was worried it would end up like this.

He was frustrated and annoyed, but this was still his Glow.

Venersis bowed to Hangry before getting on the pirma.

“Sweep away Pareia’s weak warriors.”

Listening to one of the Greatest Warriors who had been disagreeing with everything he said at the last meeting, Venersis looked at him before saying:

“Why don’t you try sweeping them?”

The warrior’s face became extremely red, and Venersis snorted as he started to move.

The Desert Sword followed after him.

“Have the reinforcements arrived?”

Porangso asked the patrol warrior who arrived as he continued to pace inside the paoe.

“They were preparing to leave as I started to head over, so if they proceed quickly, they should arrive within a day.”

“One day ... one day. The oasis might fall even tonight. We have managed to hold on thanks to the ditches and the fence, but we do not know when it will fall. Ride back the way you came and inform Venersis. Please tell him to move the troops faster, so that he can arrive by evening and protect the oasis.”

“As you command.”

Once the patrol warrior left, Porangso pushed down on his aching head with both hands.

When they lost 10,000 warriors, he thought they would no longer be able to aim for Pareia’s weak spot.

Furthermore, with many warriors and even Greatest Warrior Recharei ending up captive, he couldn't even imagine how much ransom they would need to pay to get them back.

It would probably be a substantial amount. They might even need to offer up an entire oasis for them.

Porangso and Mabis tried their best to lead the warriors the next day against Pareia's advances, but with Pareia's morale as high as it could be and the Shuarei's as low as possible, there was a significant difference between the abilities of the two armies.

Plus, with that nightmare, Pareia's young new Glow, running amok with his fifty or so warriors, there was nobody in Shuarei who could stop their progression.

The warriors' morale fell so low that it was crawling in the sand, and the final straw was when the strong warriors were saying that they could not take anymore. Mabis and Porangso had no choice but to retreat to the Bushy Forest Oasis.

But Pareia followed after them and started to fight. They defended the oasis with all of their might, but in the end, after 3 days, they lost the oasis and had to retreat to another oasis. Pareia was not satisfied with one oasis and continued to chase after them and continued attacking.

Porangso was in despair.

Mabis died when they lost the Bushy Oasis, and there were only 5,000 warriors left.

'If we lose this oasis as well, Shuarei will absolutely lose at least a minimum of 3 oasis from this war. We must maintain this oasis in order to use this oasis as tribute to bring back the warriors as well as the women and children.'

Porangso made up his mind to do whatever he needed to do to light up the fire in the warriors to protect the oasis at least until tonight.

Book 2-5.3 Venersis Moves (II)

“The enemy’s defenses are stronger than I expected. Did they say his name was Porangso?”

Egane answered Yulian’s question.

“He is a Greatest Warrior with the name the Splendid Light because of his elaborate and quick shamshir skills. He seems to have decent leadership and has a lot of respect from his warriors, so he is holding on better than we expected.”

Trebol laughed as he answered.

“Still, they will not be able to last past tonight. But it is about time for their reinforcement to arrive.”

Egane spoke as if he had thought about that as well.

“Tonight, no, tomorrow night at the latest, the reinforcements should arrive. We need to take the oasis and defend it. No matter how much the Shuarei’s Glow does not like Venersis, with the situation like this, he will most certainly send Venersis out.”

“We’ve been having fun winning so far but that should slow down now. Just thinking about that ghost makes me already start to get a headache.”

As Trebol put his hand on his head to pretend that his head was hurting, Egane just brushed him aside as he spoke to Yulian.

“We should leave Trebol in charge of the attack on the oasis. I will take 10,000 warriors and handle their reinforcements while Trebol takes the oasis during that time.”

“Can you do it on your own?”

“You can do it on your own?”

As Yulian and Trebol asked Egane in surprise, Egane looked at both Trebol and Yulian before smiling.

“I will not be alone. With the Glow helping me, even if we do not manage to win, we should be able to hold them off.”

“Me?”

“Yes. Just like how nobody in Shuarei can stop the Glow and Red Storm, there was nobody in Pareia who can stop Venersis and the Desert Sword. But isn't the situation different now?”

Egane was certain about his strategy.

Victory will happen tonight.

If Yulian and Red Storm can hold off Venersis and the Desert Sword, he should be able to hold off the Shuarei's reinforcements for at least one night as long as they move first and find a favorable terrain.

If you look at it one way, it was using Yulian's life as bait, but Egane had faced Venersis's might before. He knew that Yulian's skills were at least on par with Venersis, and although he was lacking in experience, the young Yulian should be stronger when it came to strength. Plus, going against Venersis will be a great learning experience for Yulian, so even thinking about the long run, it wasn't a bad decision.

Furthermore, the reason Egane was certain that Yulian will not end up in significant danger was because ... that monster like old man was watching from nearby.

Egane did not have a single concern about his plan.

Listening to Egane's explanation, Yulian and Trebol soon agreed.

Egane talked about his plans for after that as well.

“Once you take the oasis, prepare to defend against the enemy forces and send a signal. If the Glow and I retreat as soon as we see your signal, the Shuarei will definitely chase us.”

“I'm sure they will.”

Egane nodded at Trebol's response.

“If they quickly chase behind us, their formation will not be sturdy, so if we hit them at that time with a prepared formation, even Venersis should have some problems guiding his warriors. While you are fighting them off, the Glow and I will fix up our formation in the oasis before hitting them from the left and right. Then wouldn’t that be a complete victory for us?”

“The problem is time.”

“Yes. How quickly do you think you can take the oasis? How long can the Glow and I hold off Venersis? Finally, can you successfully fight against Venersis as he chases us back? If all three of these go the way we want it to go, it is going to be our absolute victory. If we can hit them on three sides, even if they had ten warriors of Venersis’s strength, we can win.”

Yulian nodded his head until he came across a question and asked.

“What if he doesn’t chase us and fixes up his formation before attacking?”

“Then wouldn’t that be good as well? If we retreat and meet up with Trebol’s troops, our numbers will be much greater than the enemy’s. Honestly speaking, because we have been going against Venersis for so long, the Greatest Warriors of Pareia are confident in our ability to defend.”

“What if he passes through this oasis and hits the Bushy Oasis we took?”

At Yulian’s question, Egane and Trebol looked at each other, before deciding that they really needed to teach Yulian more about the ways of war.

Yulian’s question was similar to the type of questions regular warriors would ask.

“Then all we will have to do is cut off his escape route and supply line. No matter how strong you are, without supplies, the army

will not survive.”

Trebol added on to Egane’s answer.

“Plus, while we cut off the back, if the Large Oasis sends more warriors and we attack from the front and back, Venersis will have no option but to fall to us.”

Yulian made a noise as if to say he finally understood.

“Ah! My thoughts were short. I learned that in war, you cannot focus only on the fighting, but I must have forgotten about it for a moment.”

“Reading about it in books and actually experiencing it for yourself are very different. In order to be good at war, you need to experience it with your own body and slowly increase your knowledge. There is no reason for Glow to be impatient. Once this war is over, we will slowly teach you everything one by one through mock battles.”

“I ask for your guidance.”

“Of course. Now that we have finished our strategy meeting, we will now go discuss the minor details with our lead warriors. We hope that the Glow will cover everything you need to cover with the Red Storm regarding how to fight against Venersis and his Desert Sword.”

“I understand.”

The three of them all got up to handle their individual tasks and Yuilan went out to meet with Pere, who had been waiting outside.

The Greatest level Strategy Meeting, as indicated, required the greatest level of secrecy and only allowed the Greatest Warriors to take part. That meant even Pere, who was the Glow’s younger brother and a famous warrior in the tribe, could not take part. That was why he was waiting outside.

“What did you decide to do?”

As Pere urgently asked, Yulian responded.

“They said that the enemy’s reinforcements are headed this way.”

“I guess they were really thinking things were urgent. So are we retreating? Or are we fighting against them?”

“We can’t retreat from here because of the enemy’s reinforcements. We need to at least take back the oasis we lost. As we discussed before, Greatest Warrior Trebol will attack the oasis while Greatest Warrior Egane and I will block the reinforcements.”

“Is Venersis coming as part of the reinforcements?”

Yulian slightly nodded his head as he answered.

“I presume so. I can finally see the face of my enemy.”

“Hyung-nim.....”

Seeing Pere suddenly fidgeting, Yulian thought it was odd and asked.

“Why are you like this? You’re not feeling pressured by his fame are you?”

“That’s not it... to be honest with you, we met him not too long ago.”

“What are you talking about?”

As Yulian asked in shock, Pere honestly explained what happened when they were running away toward Rivolde and received Venersis’s help.

“Ah! That type of thing ... did that really happen? Why did you not tell me?”

“I had no opportunity to do so.”

“.....”

Yulian was speechless and fell deep into thought.

‘To be saved by my enemy.’

Yulian was hurt greatly.

More than anything else, he was thinking about Venersis’s warrior-like mentality to not capture them because they were in trouble.

“I feel like I can’t face him with a clear conscience. It makes me feel weird. My enemy and my savior. Does this make sense to you?”

Seeing Yulian shake, Pere answered.

“That was then, and now, we must focus on the task at hand. If our lives were saved by him, then one day, we can save his life as well. I feel like I said something I should not have said.”

“No. I’m glad that you told me. You are right. We just need to return exactly the way we received. Right now, we need to focus on the war. You are right.”

Yulian firmed his shaking heart and mumbled to himself.

“Grace and grudge. We just need to return everything the same way it was done to us. Although we do not know when it will be.”

Yulian quickly thought about what he had to do and started to head toward where Pere and Red Storm were gathered.

Book 2-5.4 Venersis Moves (III)

“Someone is coming.”

Before the subordinate warrior had said anything, Venersis had already been paying attention to that direction for ten minutes.

“Hmm.....”

He was always like this on the battlefield.

This intuition that he could not understand. And the thrill that went through his whole body.

That was how he could see further than anybody on the battlefield, and when he felt a sense of nervousness and ordered his troops to prepare for an ambush even though everything seemed fine, the enemy always showed up.

The reason Venersis was never ambushed or surrounded by the enemies was because of this intuition.

But was it just that?

He had the necessary leadership and commanding abilities to use that intuition on the battlefield, as well as the boldness to charge against even a thousand enemies if he knew he needed to get past them. He also had the skills to support his crazy boldness, as well as the fifty-ish members of the Desert Sword covering his back.

In another words, this was Venersis, the War God of the Western Desert, the man who had every skill necessary in war.

It looked like a yellow dust cloud was being created as the messenger warrior hurriedly reported to Venersis.

“I give my greetings to Greatest Warrior Venersis. I have come with a situation report from my Greatest Warrior, Porangso-nim.”

“Speak.”

“The strength of the Pareia tribe is too much that it will be

difficult to last past the night, so Porangso-nim asked you to arrive even a bit faster if possible. He will do whatever he can to hold on until midnight, so he would like it if you could arrive before then and can work together from the inside and out.”

Venersis started to frown after hearing the messenger warrior’s message and responded.

“You are telling me they have already attacked so far? Just how did Porangso lead that the enemy pushed forward at normal walking pace without any resistance?”

The messenger warrior was shaking as he answered.

“It is because the Pareia’s Glow has led tens of warriors and run amok that Porangso-nim alone could not fend off all of the other Greatest Warriors.”

Even at the messenger warrior’s excuse, Venersis did not stop frowning.

Even if that was the case, this speed of progression was too much.

‘Porangso is one of the Greatest Warriors with a lot of charisma and decent commanding abilities; I can’t understand how he was pushed back so much. Are you telling me that her son that I let go last time is that strong?’

Venersis stopped moving for a moment to think.

‘It is half a day’s distance. Even if we push forward as fast as we can, we will still arrive late in the night. Plus, if we rush like that, the warriors and pirmas will be extremely fatigued.’

No matter how much he thought about it, Venersis thought it would not be possible to make it there by midnight and started to speak.

“Take this message to Porangso. No matter how much the enemy provokes him, only focus on defense, using the old moon’s formation - have him refer to the new moon as well - and to hold

on even if all of them are killed. If he can somehow last until dawn, I will save him.”

The messenger warrior wanted to say they could not last that long as much as he wanted to ask for water, but his mission was quickly delivering the messages between Greatest Warriors. He quickly started to return using the same path he took to get here.

“We will increase our movement speed a bit.”

Venersis commanded the troops as he started to slightly increase the speed of his pirma first.

Around the time two moons were up in the sky, Pareia started their attack on the oasis. As planned, Yulian and Egane led 10,000 warriors to the part of the desert they expected the Shuarei to come from.

Once all three moons were up, Pareia’s warriors had set up on top of a large sand dune, waiting for the Shuarei’s reinforcements to arrive.

Although their morale was extremely high, the fact that the enemy was Venersis, and the burden that they had to do a Night Battle against such a person, made them all quiet and nervous.

“The warriors are nervous.”

Yulian had gone around to boost the warriors’ confidence and patrol the area, and reported to Egane what he saw.

“It is normal. Even the warriors know that nobody has fought head to head against Venersis in around 10 years.”

“Is it the same for you, Greatest Warrior Egane?”

At Yulian’s question, Egane lifted his sleeve and showed it to Yulian before answering.

“Look. I even have goosebumps from the thrilling nervousness. However, I am not afraid. It is because I am full of anticipation.”

“This is different than the normally calm Greatest Warrior

Egane. For you to be this nervous before the battle even starts.”

“It is experience. It is always the same experience, but this nervousness never goes away. I will finally put this damn nervousness to rest with the Glow today.”

Yulian realized from Egane’s words that nervousness was a burden close enough to fear.

“We must make them have the same experience. We will make them feel exactly how we are feeling whenever they see our Pareia.”

“I feel a bit better hearing the Glow’s words.”

“Venersis is also a human. He may have the strength that everyone in the desert knows about, but I am confident that I will not lose to anybody that is not my master. As my master mentioned, I did not learn a weak martial art.”

As Yulian smiled and spoke as if trying to release the knot in Egane’s heart a bit, Egane also smiled back.

“I believe you. I never heard anything about how Venersis took down a Sand Dragon on his own.”

While the two of them shared a couple words and then called the lead warriors and Red Storm over to tell them a couple of things, they heard a loud cheer from the side of the oasis.

“He must have taken the oasis. Trebol, this friend finished faster than I expected.”

“It is a good sign.”

“Of course. Thanks to that, the warriors here can feel less pressur.....”

It was the moment Egane was speaking.

A crazily blowing murderous aura and pressure crashed into them from the front.

‘Venersis!’

Yulian and Egane looked at each other at the same time and urgently returned the lead warriors to their spots.

“I guess this is the beginning.”

Yulian nodded his head and kicked the pirma to go do his part.

“Giddyup!”

The Red Storm warriors followed behind Yulian.

“Glow, be careful!”

Egane shouted from behind him, and Yulian lifted one greatsword high in the air instead of responding.

Leaving Pareia’s army behind them, Yulian and the Red Storm warriors stepped forward, and Venersis and his Desert Sword came out from the Shuarei’s side.

The wind was blowing. Not a natural wind but a wind caused by the strength of their force as well as the passion of the warriors.

That wind crashed around the area where Yulian and Venersis were standing.

Then, the two people hallucinated that the battlefield became extremely small, with just the two of them standing alone in this vast desert.

It was the first time Yulian and Venersis both felt this sensation.

There was no need for words.

These two warriors, who both had the title of War God, pushed their pirma forward toward each other at the exact same time.

Clang.

Book 2-5.5 First Battle Against Venersis (I)

The sound of steel hitting steel was so loud it could have been mistaken as the sound of thunder. But whether it be steel or thunder, that sound rang throughout the desert.

Was Venersis a bit faster?

Yulian was taking turns with his two greatswords to parry Venersis's shamshir.

A battle of strength versus strength.

The pros and cons of having two weapons didn't matter at all in this moment.

They were using pure strength to push each other back.

“Oowaaaaaaa~”

As Venersis made a noise like a monster and pushed against Yulian, Yulian made a noise as if to say he will not lose.

“Yaaaaaaaaaaaaap~!”

The two warriors' shouts oddly resonated with each other, and the two voices wrapped around each other before disappearing into the air.

Time moved slowly, but to the people watching, each second felt like a whole year. The aura of the two War Gods were making them feel that way.

In that type of situation, the Red Storm did not move, and neither did the Desert Sword.

None of them moved even a single finger as they looked toward their respective leader.

It was not something like faith.

The fact that their hearts were shouting at them to go rush in and help their leader proved that it was not faith.

The moment that it looked like someone's body would break into two, the two of them moved back at the same time.

Then, they glared at each other.

“Oowaaaaaaaaa~!”

“Yaaaaaaaaaaaaaap~!”

Kakaboom!

Almost as if they couldn't believe each other's strength or that it really was unbelievable, the two warriors shouted again as they rushed in toward each other and another round of thunderous noises could be heard.

The same situation as before occurred again. Maybe it was that the weight of the greatsword was slowing it down. But the shamshir was at a stalemate with it, and it didn't seem to have any advantages either.

‘How could this puny child who is not even in his mid-twenties block my blade?’

‘I, as the person who claims to one day conquer the desert, how could I be pushed back like this in a 1 on 1 battle? Are you telling me that all of my training until now has been for nothing?’

The two warriors really could not believe it.

Screeeeeeech.

The sound of steel sliding against each other could be heard as the two caused damage to each other's weapon before moving away again.

There was no such thing as carelessness, nor was there an opportunity to be careless.

Looking into each other's eyes, they were just waiting for their opponent to show an opening.

Thanks to that, both the Red Storm and Desert Sword could wake

up from the effect of the two warriors' auras and pointed their weapons at each other. But none of them could carelessly move.

They were all feeling like a single wrong movement could lead to their entire side being decimated.

“Haha... hahahaha. Ahahahahaha.”

Venersis suddenly started to laugh like a maniac. Everybody was surprised at Venersis's unexpected action.

“I am surprised, Pareia's young Glow. It is very surprising. You are the first person to ever block my shamshir.”

“I am almost more surprised, Venersis. But thank you for having that much ability. I have spent the last ten years training with the goal of revenge. I'm glad that you have made all of my efforts worth it, Bloodied Hands, the Hands that dirtied your own honor, Venersis.”

Yulian responded coldly.

Yulian completely forgot about the fact that Venersis had saved him; the only thing on his mind was his mother, who died in front of his eyes. No, he thought hard to remember it.

Venersis hesitated for a second at Yulian's words. It was the most regretful thing in his entire life.

Breaking a truce just one day after making it, and even though it wasn't his decision, the fact that Mairez died was something he wanted to erase from his mind. It was almost like a curse.

Venersis shook his head as if he didn't want to think about it and looked around him.

Even though the entire battlefield could not be seen with his eyes, with a quick glance, Venersis was able to tell Pareia's formation as well as the number of warriors present. It was all clear in his mind. It was too scary of an ability to call it talent.

“You've prepared quite well. Has the Oasis already fallen?”

“Not only did the oasis fall, we will defeat you and the reinforcements before pushing forward to the next oasis.”

“Ambition is great to have. However.”

Venersis lifted his shamshir high into the air.

“The question is whether you have the commanding abilities to back that ambition.”

“You’ll have to just find out for yourself.”

Yulian did not want to lose and lifted his greatsword horizontally.

“All units, charge!”

The moment Venersis’s shout rang loudly, the Shuarei warriors moved, and Egane ordered Pareia’s warriors to advance at the same time.

“Oowaaaaaaa~”

The Shuarei warriors shouted loudly as they charged toward Pareia’s formation, and the Pareia warriors waited for a moment before the enemy arrived at a certain distance and pushed forward down the sand dune almost as if they were falling.

“If you want to beat me, try it. It seems like a waste for me to be tied down by you.”

“Ah!”

Venersis moved past Yulian in an instant and rushed towards Pareia’s formation. Yulian made a noise of shock before hesitating as to whether he should chase after Venersis or he should do the same and charge toward the Shuarei’s warriors.

-The Glow’s mission is to hold Venersis down.

He remembered Egane’s words.

“Let’s go!”

Yulian commanded the Red Storm before chasing after Venersis

and the Desert Sword.

A Red Storm started to crash over the desert again.

Both sides were full of momentum and morale. Although these Shuarei warriors showed up as reinforcements, their commander was the Undefeated Venersis, while Pareia had never lost on their way here. Plus, they could see for themselves that Venersis, this symbol of fear, could be held back by their Glow.

With both sides swinging their shamshirs with all of their strengths like they were not going to let the other side live, many fountains of blood poured out throughout the battlefield.

It was a terrible battle. Both sides were pushed and pushed back without giving an inch.

Venersis managed to change the formation even while fighting against Yulian, and he parried the greatsword before moving toward whichever direction he felt like was being pushed back.

Although he was fighting fiercely against Yulian, his movement was so natural it almost felt like magic, and it looked like Pareia's warriors made a large path for him wherever he arrived.

Yulian became extremely angered at the fact that Venersis could take him on without focusing all of his attention, and put even more strength in his greatsword to attack Venersis, but Venersis was unmoveable.

“Ahhhhhhhh~!”

Yulian let out a shout out of frustration and really put all of his strength into it, as he fiercely swung his greatsword and started to kill Shuarei's warriors.

If he didn't have the abilities to tie Venersis down, might as well slash apart the Shuarei's warriors like Venersis was doing to Pareia, and sow a seed of fear in the Shuarei just like Pareia feared Venersis.

Venersis finally showed a response to Yulian and started to swing his shamshir toward Yulian.

“I should have done this from the start.”

Yulian swung his greatsword and shouted, as if he had been waiting for this.

The battle between the two warriors that was so fierce that it could even shake the heavens started again, and this time, the Red Storm and Desert Sword warriors charged toward each other as well.

Although Yulian had managed to stop Venersis from moving, he couldn't make him stop giving commands. With Shuarei's warriors continuing to change formation, Pareia's warriors starting to slow down became visible.

The situation of the battle started to be drawn in Yulian's mind as well. It was the exact same feeling Venersis was having.

‘It is dangerous.’

It was an unfamiliar feeling, but Yulian could feel the danger throughout his body. Pareia's warriors were being split apart slowly by the Shuarei's movement.

Although they were not surrounded just yet, if they continued to be split apart like this, it will only take a moment to be surrounded.

“Retreat.....”

Yulian hesitated for a second before shouting loudly.

“Retreat! All units retreat!”

Book 2-5.6 First Battle Against Venersis (II)

Egane was confused after hearing Yulian's voice from far away. He was hectically moving the warriors around and it was difficult to respond to the Shuarei's movement, but he could still hold on.

Furthermore, there was no signal from the oasis indicating that they were ready.

‘Glow. What are you doing.’

Egane was wondering what was going through Yulian's mind that he was acting different than what they had planned.

He had been paying attention to Yulian and Venersis's battle while moving the formations, but it didn't seem like Yulian was being pushed back too much.

There were many things on Egane's mind, but the overall commander of this war was the Glow Yulian. Although it might be just in name, everybody knew it was the case. He couldn't go against an order.

“All units retreat! Retreat back to the oasis!”

Egane also shouted loudly as he prepared to retreat.

Retreating while in the midst of fiercely fighting like this was extremely dangerous; you needed to move slowly to retreat safely.

At their leaders' order to retreat, Pareia's warriors hesitated for a moment in confusion, and the Shuarei warriors started to increase their momentum from thinking that they had won.

Everybody was surprised at Yulian's command to retreat, but the person who was the most surprised was none other than Venersis.

If he moved a few more times, he would have been able to surround Pareia, but because of Yulian's command to retreat, they were gathering back together.

“You saw it?”

“Is there a reason I wouldn’t be able to see something you are able to see?”

At Yulian’s answer, Venersis was thrilled that this young Glow could see the same thing that he saw.

If he was able to see the same thing, this young warrior had the qualifications to be his opponent.

Although it was questionable whether Yulian could catch up to his almost twenty years of war experience, he was still at the level to be on the same battlefield as him.

“I accept that. But at least for this battle, I will take the victory. All units, charge once more.”

At Venersis’s command, the Shuarei forces didn’t face their enemies head on again. They just avoided or pushed back the shamshirs coming toward them as they started to push forward once more.

Although Pareia’s formation came back together to retreat, it was not a formation that could respond to the attack. They slowly started to retreat while suffering at the hands of the Shuarei.

As the injuries to Pareia started to increase from the Shuarei’s movement, a large fire could be seen coming at the oasis.

“He’s ready!”

“All units, run toward the oasis! Do not think about anything else and just retreat!”

Yulian and Egane both continued to shout; Pareia’s warriors did not even look back as they started to run toward the oasis.

If the Shuarei chased them toward the oasis, even with Venersis in command, they were going to be defeated.

“Ah!”

“Aaaak!”

“Kwaaaak!”

As the chase started, the shouts of the Pareia warriors in the back started to come up from many locations. But Pareia’s warriors didn’t pay attention and focused on their order to run forward.

“All units, stop!”

As Venersis shouted loudly and raised his hand, the Shuarei warriors instantly stopped moving. It was indeed a very amazing leadership ability.

“You are not going to chase them down?”

Heldrew, one of the Desert Sword members who had been supporting Venersis for a long time, asked Venersis. Venersis shook his head.

“It is a trap. This is enough. Pareia will not be able to come past here and we will just take back the lost oasis later on.”

Even Heldrew who knew that whatever Venersis said was what they needed to do, couldn’t help but salivate at the sight of Pareia’s warriors running away.

They would be able to take down over 500 of them before they reached the oasis.

But that was just an estimate. As someone who followed Venersis’s command to the letter, he started to move for all units to head back.

Venersis stood there without moving and just stared deeply at the oasis. ‘What would be waiting for us in there?’ Even he had that type of question, but since his intuition was informing him of danger, all he could do was stare.

“The little warrior from back then. And the young warrior who was hit by poison. You now appear in front of me as a powerful young Glow. Fine. I will enjoy your challenge to my heart’s content.”

Venersis mumbled to himself without taking his eyes off of the oasis.

“Why did you order a retreat?”

Seeing that the Shuarei were not coming anymore and heading back as they fixed up their formation, Egane asked Yulian “If we had retreated before the oasis was ready and the Shuarei attacked, it would have caused a giant hole in our strategy. Why did you do so?”

“Venersis, it is the same reason that he did not chase us all the way. I would assume it is.”

“Huh?”

“I saw it. I saw the Shuarei warriors moving according to Venersis’s command and our Pareia warriors slowly started to be surrounded.”

Egane and Trebol looked at each other at Yulian’s answer. Even while fighting against Venersis, he was able to see the movement of the enemy? As well as Pareia’s formation?

Even veteran warriors would have a hard time seeing the entire battlefield like that.

“Wouldn’t Venersis have stopped chasing us down because of that intuition? Looking at it from his point of view, he had no reason to stop. Unless he could see through our strategy.”

Yulian thought again for a bit before speaking.

“I may have made an error. I could have made Pareia fall in danger. However, if I did not do that, I felt like we would have been ripped to shreds and surrounded by the enemy. It was a really terrible feeling that I never want to feel ever again.”

The two Greatest Warriors thought long and hard about what Yulian had just said. They knew the meaning behind Yulian’s words. It was because they had experienced a similar thing before.

That superhuman feeling that you feel when the situation turns extremely terrible. That seemed to be similar to what Yulian had felt.

“I don’t know what to tell you just yet. Honestly, war is somewhere that luck also plays a factor, so if you are uncertain about something, it is better to trust your instinct.”

Egane did not blame Yulian nor did he praise Yulian, as he continued to speak.

“I was feeling chaotic as well. Venersis was commanding them so quickly that it was becoming harder and harder to respond, and I was feeling that something was going wrong. However, we were not being pushed back too much and we just needed to retreat once we had Trebol’s signal, so I ignored that feeling. But hearing that the Glow felt that ominous feeling even more than I did, the Glow may have made the right decision. Even I am confused now.”

Seeing that the atmosphere was getting heavy, Trebol stepped forward and started to speak.

“In the end, we managed to take two oasis and Venersis has retreated. It doesn’t change the fact that this was Pareia’s overwhelming victory. The guardian must be blessing our Glow’s first campaign. There is no reason to suspect anything. We have won, and we have become the heroes who retrieved the oasis that we lose ten years ago.”

“If you complicate your thinking, things will become complicated. You are right. We have won.”

Egane accepted the fact as well, and it was only then that Yulian could finally smile.

But because the sensation he had on the battlefield was still fresh on his mind, it was true that a part of him was still feeling very frustrated...

Book 2-5.7 End of the First Campaign

The warriors outside the paoe were all expressing their joy from the victory.

They brought out a lot of food and alcohol, and as a result of this war, they were certain that their families will receive a lot of rewards. Plus, the fact that they were a part of this commemorable war, and the experience they gained from it, will remain with them forever.

It was a way to console the warriors who had been rushing the Shuarei without getting any proper rest other than the celebration after the first battle, so the strict lead warriors closed their eyes to a good amount of rowdiness, and happily celebrated as well.

The three people finished by figuring out how to defend their two new oasis and returned to their residences.

Yulian continued to think about that sensation he felt even as he walked into his paoe.

‘If this sensation is really the same as reality, the mythical undefeated streak of his can be explained if he has always had this sensation. Isn’t this what you would call the greatest sensation for war?’

He would need to wait until the next war to see if he would feel this again, but for some reason, Yulian felt that it will not disappear.

Since it was an unbelievable sensation anyways, there was nothing to say his confirmation would not be right.

“What are you thinking about so hard?”

“Ah! Master.”

Chun Myung Hoon was waiting for Yulian in the paoe.

“Why did you wait for me? You should be resting. If you needed

me, you could have called me over.”

“I didn’t do anything, so why would I be tired? Plus, as you mentioned, you have become responsible for a whole tribe, so it won’t look good if I keep ordering you around.”

“You are not yourself right now Master. You’re even thinking about this lowly disciple of yours.”

As Yulian relaxed and joked with his master, Chun Myung Hoon oddly did not change his expression and just asked.

“What were you thinking about?”

“That... you see

Yulian explained the odd sensation he felt on the battlefield to Chun Myung Hoon as well as the concerns and questions he had about it. Chun Myung Hoon responded as if he was expecting Yulian to say that.

“It is as I expected. What did you say his name was? The warrior who fought on par with you.”

“His name is Venersis.”

“His title?”

“The Bloodied Hands. He used to be called the War God of the Desert until I became a bit famous and it changed to the War God of the Western Desert.”

As Yulian politely answered, Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head as he responded.

“He plays beautifully. He was born with the Mandate of Heaven. He was also born under the Heavenly Slaughter Star.”

“Master, what does that mean?”

Chun Myung Hoon did not respond and just recalled the way Venersis moved against Yulian.

The Heavenly Slaughter Star.

That cursed star. There wouldn't be anybody who knows more about a cursed fate than himself. Wasn't his Chun family the family that was born with that damned star's fate?

The rage of his blood was barely able to be contained through the lives of many of the church elders and his own will, but that warrior named Venersis oddly received the Mandate of Heaven, so he seemed to have some superhuman abilities to control it.

‘Very odd. Very odd indeed.’

“Master, please explain it thoroughly to me.”

At Yulian's request, Chun Myung Hoon simply answered like this.

“Do not take him on by yourself again. At least until you have achieved the seven finger level of my martial arts.”

“What?”

Yulian was extremely shocked.

After his master returned from his long trip, he asked him to show him just how hard he had been training before coming out on this campaign. When he had asked just how much he had learned, his master had raised 3 fingers as an answer.

To have that master tell him not to take on Venersis until he had the strength of seven fingers. That was unbelievable.

“Master, I am not just saying this, but today, I was on par with him. Although he looked a bit relaxed, so was I. Didn't you see it too?”

At Yulian's retort, Chun Myung Hoon sternly shook his head.

“That is because he did not feel even an ounce of danger. If he felt threatened at all, you would have been killed.”

Although he could not believe it, he had to believe it. His master had a keener eye when it came to things like this.

“Most importantly, when you are fighting against him, I cannot help you. Even if your life is in danger.”

Chun Myung Hoon’s next words were most definitely a shock to Yulian. It wasn’t like he was planning on relying on his master, but it would be a lie to say there wasn’t a sense of security in the corner of his mind.

“You must have met me because you also have the Mandate of Heaven, and because he was born with the Mandate of Heaven, he would have reached his current strength. Because of that, I can only be a spectator. It is because I am not a person from this world.”

Hearing shocking things in a row, Yulian’s head was extremely confused. Not a person of this world? Then does that mean he flew in from outer space? Was his master not a human but a monster or perhaps even a ghost?

All sorts of thoughts flew through Yulian’s mind.

“This disciple thought he knew a decent amount about his master, but you just keep saying things I cannot understand.”

As Yulian calmed his mind and asked, Chun Myung Hoon started to speak with an understanding gaze.

“Didn’t you ever have any doubts about whether your master was not from this world? You never questioned how I spoke a foreign language you had never heard of in this giant place or knew martial arts that you had never seen before?”

“It was weird for sure. But that was it. Aren’t you my master who has taught me a lot of things? If it wasn’t for master, the me of today will not exist as well.”

“I thought that it did not make sense either. But it is the truth. The reason I arrived at this place is because of the Law of Causality that humans cannot even fathom. It is the law of the world. It is not important to you right now, so we will stop talking about this

here. Just don't forget your master's words. Do not face him on your own."

"I understand, master."

Yulian was feeling discontent, but knew he needed to listen.

"Alright. Now that Pareia is a bit more settled, you must further your martial arts. Only then can I leave in peace."

"You are planning on going somewhere again?"

"I have not completely figured out the reason I arrived here. I am only traveling to figure that out. But my home in this world is still this desert, so I will not be gone forever. Why? Are you sad?"

"Of course."

Chun Myung Hoon smiled at Yulian's answer. It wasn't bad to hear.

"Work a little harder. Since you are now the Glow, you will not have as much time, but how can the tribe get stronger if you are weak?"

"I must work hard."

Yulian also smiled as he answered.

It was a night when the moon was shining exceptionally brightly.

End of chapter.

Book 2-6.1 The Provoke Family (I)

Unity and Pet Animal

Our hearts were broken.

But thanks to that pain, we became even closer.

In addition, Shopping's charm made it impossible to stop laughing.

Pareia was extremely busy for a while.

They had gained two oases, and had to deal with tons of prisoners. Plus, they needed to distribute the now former Shuarei citizens to their other oasis, and send only Pareia's people to the new oasis. All of this was quite a lot to handle.

The Shuarei offered an extra oasis as the ransom to return all prisoners, but after discussing with the chiefs, Yulian rejected that offer.

It was because the citizens of the two oases were Pareia's citizens at one point, and an oasis without people does not help much for the nation's power.

Normally, the prisoners taken during war between tribes were returned for a fair amount of ransom, but in a situation like this, the scale was so large that Pareia rejected it.

The new warriors and women and children will take time to adjust, but since everybody knew that all of the desert were one tribe in the past, they will assimilate quickly.

Most importantly, because the current Shuarei's Glow was extremely useless, many of the people of the tribe had been grumbling at the distribution of wealth. So there were many people who thought that being absorbed into Pareia like this was actually a good thing.

After discussing with the Greatest Warriors, Yulian divided the

warriors in half to defend against the Shuarei and the Wikaly in the North.

There will be some grumbling from the warriors who will be separated from their families, but they were going to be changed in a yearly cycle, and if they were separated from their families, they were promised that their family will be given special treatment to settle the grumbling.

Yulian dealt with these types of businesses without rest during the day, and at night, he continued to train with Chun Myung Hoon. He was tired, but shedding a lot of sweat with his master actually made him feel refreshed, so he continued to fiercely charge at his master.

Three months passed by like that and Pareia was now in a state of revival.

“Yulian.”

After eating a dish called Dongpo Meat made of pina (sheep-like animal) and drinking wine with his master, Yulian was happily relaxing on the bed when Grace laid down next to him and called his name.

“Hmm?”

As Yulian became excited at Grace’s movement and responded, Grace started to caress Yulian’s chest with her hand.

‘Now that I think about it, I’ve been so busy I haven’t even embraced Grace in a while.’

Yulian suddenly felt sorry and tried to hug Grace when she started to speak.

“Honey, what do you think about taking in another wife?”

At Grace’s sudden question, Yulian was extremely shocked and shot right up from the bed.

“What are you saying out of the blue?”

Grace stood up after Yulian and answered.

“It has already been five years since we got married, but there is no news of an heir. If father was alive and you were still the Young Glow it might be okay, but since you are now the Glow, you need to think about an heir. Honestly, I am starting to get more and more scared.”

“I am still young and so are you. What is there to be scared about?”

“Since you are young, you need to hurry and get more wives. By your age, there are many warriors who already have three wives and six children.”

Yulian’s face changed color as he answered.

“Everybody has their own stories. Plus, you need to first have a son. I want to see our child first. If they take after you, whether it is a son or daughter, they will become a great individual. Once that happens, we won’t even need to worry about a successor.”

Grace shook her head.

“I am also full of desire for a child. Honestly speaking, with father and mother passing away like that, the only people left in the direct line of the Provoke family are you, young master Pere, and young master Orca. With both young masters not marrying yet, the household is quiet. Where should I stick my love to? I came from a family with nine siblings so it was always loud but here it is just extremely quiet

As Grace bitterly answered, Yulian embraced Grace tightly as he responded.

“Do not worry much nor be afraid. The birth of a person is determined by the heavens. Plus, lately you’ve been busy dealing with all sorts of complaints coming from the different oasis that you have become weak. Do not do anything for a while and get a good rest.”

“Those things are normal to do as the Mother of Pareia. I do not want to push away my responsibilities.”

“You are doing your duties admirably. Who could say anything else about it? If Mother Seina was alive, there would be someone to think about an heir, but is there anybody in this household saying anything to you? Even Pere cannot say no if it is something coming from you, so why are you so afraid?”

At Yulian’s consoling, Grace started to tear up and tightly hugged Yulian as she spoke.

“I myself am scared. What if I end up not having a child at all? Plus, I heard about how your mother Mairez-nim needed to force father to marry other women. I feel like I will need to do the same.....”

“That was an issue between Mother and Father; we can do things our own way. There is no reason to follow what they did.”

Seeing Grace crying like that, Yulian really came to understand that his wife was a woman as well.

Seeing her not miss a beat and never pushing anything back, Grace had the nickname of Iron Women amongst the chiefs. He had never expected that she would cry because of this reason.

“Do not cry. Let’s both think about this for a while before making a decision. But you know, I think this is the first time I’ve ever seen you cry.”

At Yulian continuing to console her, Grace stopped crying and started to caress Yulian’s back as she continued.

“But eventually, you will need to take in a couple more wives. The desert is a place where there are a lot of women and only a few men. I will look around a bit more before I speak to you about it again. Also, please tell the two young masters to quickly get married. I keep talking to them about it, but they just continue to say they haven’t thought about it yet.”

“I understand. So you can relax a bit now.”

It seemed like this had been weighing on Grace’s mind for a while. After letting it all out, Grace quickly fell asleep in Yulian’s arms.

‘Now that I think about it, I have neglected the household because of everything I’ve had to do.’

Yulian thought to himself as he caressed Grace’s cheek while she slept in his arms. Pere was moving around with him so it made sense, but he had not been paying any attention to Orca.

‘He is the one who is the most hurt from the recent events, but I haven’t paid any attention to him. That is my fault.’

Yulian decided to visit him since he was thinking about it, and slowly got up to make sure Grace did not wake up.

‘Should I go with Pere?’

Since Pere was with him all the time, Pere probably did not have any time to go see Orca either. Thinking that way, Yulian started to move toward Pere’s paoe.

“Pere, are you there?”

Yulian called toward Pere’s paoe, but there was no response from inside.

‘Where did he go?’

Yulian tilted his head in confusion and decided he will go to Orca on his own. As he was about to move, he felt some people heading that way and ended up hiding behind the paoe.

‘Huh? Why did I hide?’

Yulian thought it was weird how he instantly decided to hide and thought about moving again. But he heard an unfamiliar voice and decided to stay hiding.

“This is the place, right?”

“I confirmed it in the morning. This is it.”

After the two men chatted with each other, he heard a third man.

“Why did they put their paoe so far away in the middle of nothing? The Glow-nim and Orca-nim all have their paoes in the middle of nowhere.”

“Regular warriors like us would never understand their reason. We just need to do what we came to do.”

Listening to the voices and the footsteps, Yulian could tell there were at least five people. Based on the fact that they were addressing them with respect, there didn't seem to be any malice behind their actions.

“But will it be okay with the five of us? Pere-nim is known for his strength. Wouldn't we end up being defeated?”

“That is why five of us showed up. Shut up and start digging the trap. The moment he falls in the trap, don't forget to shoot the Sleep Pin (a weapon used by the desert warriors, it is a weapon that is a blow dart where you put in a needle that'll make your enemy fall asleep once they are hit. The name is different depending on the poison). He will probably need at least two hits to fall asleep.”

‘Are they planning on kidnapping Pere? For what reason? The way they are talking doesn't seem like there is any malice.....’

Yulian thought like that before deciding he could not let them continue. In the end, they were planning on kidnapping his younger brother. The moment he started to lift his body up to confront them, he heard the men talking again.

“Will we need two hits? The lady mentioned she was going to get him extremely intoxicated.”

“If he end up just falling over there, isn't what we are doing all for nothing?”

“It is all for just in case. But since he just recently ended his

fasting prayer, it is possible that he will get intoxicated easily.”

Yulian, who was amused at their words, decided to just keep watching for a while. The men never even thought that Yulian could be hiding behind the paoe and continued to talk.

“Anyways, our lady is very cute. Of course Pere-nim is like the number one husband material, but how could she have thought about taking the initiative like this?”

“It is all because she is like Trebol-nim. Isn’t Trebol-nim’s style the same way to push first and see what happens? Since Pere-nim has not married yet, if she manages to succeed, it is the chance to become Pere-nim’s first wife. Do you think the lady would miss this chance?”

‘Oho.’

Yulian finally realized who they were and what their goal was.

A while ago, he went with Pere to meet Trebol’s family, where Pere ended up sweating quite a bit.

Trebols’ daughter Prada, who had just turned nineteen, looked at Pere with a sparkle in her eye and would not leave him alone.

Trebol had no thoughts about stopping his daughter and rather encouraged her. With her father in her corner, how could Prada, as someone who inherited her father’s personality, let go of that opportunity?

She pretty much stuck to Pere, continuously asking questions like ‘Is there a girl you like? What kind of girl do you like? What do you think about me?’ Yulian recalled how in the end, Pere turned really red and used training as an excuse to slip away first.

He just found it to be really funny at the time, but witnessing the current situation, she wasn’t someone to take lightly.

Seeing as how she was able to recruit the family’s warriors to do this, Trebol must be involved in this plot as well.

He really thought they were a funny father-daughter duo and continued to laugh internally as he just waited.

Book 2-6.2 The Provoke Family (II)

It hasn't even been a couple hours since Grace was urging him to get Pere and Orca married, so something like this was really what you would call raining when you wanted a bath.

After talking for a while and making a large but not too deep trap, the men hid their bodies all over the place.

Since they needed to shoot the Sleep Pin once he fell into the trap, they could not go far.

Yulian and Trebol's five warriors waited like that for Pere to show up, and after they had been feeling bored for a long time, they could hear someone heading over. It was the person they had been waiting for. Pere.

“Ugh.....”

He must have really drank a lot since he was swaying as he was walking and letting out long groans.

Everybody calmed their breathing and waited, and Pere slowly approached the front of the paoe. The moment he slipped in the trap, the five men ran toward him with the blow dart in their mouths.

“Uraratcha!”

Pere let out a loud grunt as he spun his body around and reached his arm forward to touch the ground.

Tumble.

Pere turned his body as he fell to avoid the trap and stood up on the spot.

Pew. Pew. Pew. Pew. Pew.

The five Sleep Pins that the men shot all flew toward Pere, but Pere, who had already avoided the trap, moved his body so that they all missed. All of them turned extremely pale.

“Who are you!”

Pere felt himself becoming completely sober and took out his shamshir. The five warriors were nervous and didn't know what to do.

It was at that moment.

Boom!

Someone appeared behind Pere and struck him on the head.

“Ugh!”

Pere made a groan before falling forward and losing his consciousness.

“Who are you?”

The five warriors gasped as they headed toward Pere and surrounded him as if they were going to protect him. All of them were looking toward the person who struck Pere from behind.

“What are you doing? Hurry up and take him.”

“G...low.”

The person responsible for hitting Pere and making him faint was none other than Yulian.

The men were even more surprised and looked toward Yulian, as Yulian started to smile and continued to speak.

“Didn't I ask you what you were doing? Hurry up and take him.”

One of the men started to shake and spoke in a shaky voice.

“Glow... you see... the truth is ... we are not trying to harm Pere-nim ... well.....”

“I already know so hurry up and take him. Tell Greatest Warrior Trebol and his daughter that they must succeed. Oh, and we must keep the details of today a complete secret. Pere will throw a fit if he finds out.”

At Yulian's words, the men looked at each other before they all showed expressions of joy.

The moment things were about to go wrong, didn't he help them successfully complete their mission?

"Thank you."

"Hide Pere's shamshir beforehand. He might start to swing as soon as he wakes up."

"We understand, Glow."

The men were giddy as they grabbed Pere and took him away. Yulian just laughed one more time.

'I guess this takes care of one issue. Now what to do about Orca?'

Yulian started to head toward Orca's paoe deep in thought. His younger brother must have a lot on his mind lately.

"Orca, are you here?"

As Yulian called out from outside Orca's paoe, he felt movement inside the paoe before Orca came out.

"Hyung-nim, what brings you here?"

There was no change to Orca's appearance. His body looked weak and his face was very skinny.

Yulian had a compassionate gaze as he put his hand on Orca's shoulder.

"Does a hyung need a reason to visit his younger brother? It makes me very sad."

"Of course not. Please come on in."

Yulian entered the paoe and looked around. Just like Orca's personality, it was very clean with all sorts of tools and books related to becoming a shaman neatly organized.

"Have you decided to properly learn incantations?"

At Yulian's question, Orca offered Yulian a seat as he answered.

"I do not have the strength that the hyung-nims have, so shouldn't I do at least something like this to prove the worth of my existence?"

Yulian became extremely angry at Orca's response.

"What kind of thing are you saying as a man? If you have something to say, say it properly? Did I treat you terribly?"

"Of course not. Who is the one that let this Orca live? I heard many of the chiefs recommended my banishment from the tribe."

"Orca, you"

Yulian hesitated as he did not know what to say. It was true that the chiefs recommended that he banish Orca. Orca did not know about it, and although he knew nothing of the plot, in the end, it was the alcohol that he brought that killed Glow Baguna. Because of that, it was natural for him to be banished.

Although it can be said that the sins were washed away by the death of Librie, the responsible party, and Duripue, the head of the family, all of Orca's maternal family took part in the rebellion. Because a rebellion was the greatest of sin you could commit as it shook the entire tribe, the chiefs thought they should use this incident to set an example.

Yulian told them it was absolutely not possible, and Pere glared at the chiefs recommending Orca's banishment to end the discussion. Nonetheless, there were still a lot of people looking at Orca with not so nice gazes.

Orca did not make eye contact with Yulian as he spoke.

"I heard you forgave all of my family members as well. You told them to serve as warriors and cleanse away this sin with their own merits. I know many chiefs are treating them like sinners."

"Orca, that"

“Honestly, their thoughts are not wrong, and if I was in Hyung-nim’s shoes, I might have gone past banishment and ordered my death.

Slap!

At Orca’s words, Yulian could not hold back anymore and lifted his hand to strike Orca’s cheek very hard. Orca’s lips started to bleed as a result.

“Are you alone? Who dares to mess with you? Your two hyungs are alive and well like this. And did you think your hyungs are terrible people who were afraid of their younger brother and needed to banish him?”

As Yulian huffed and shouted at Orca, Orca lowered his head.

“If you resent me, tell me you resent me. However, you must accept that I tried to keep my promise with you. Librie ... she ... even I could not prevent her from taking such actions. You know all of that, so why are you tormenting your hyung like this? Are your insides all twisted?”

“I have always been twisted like this so hyung-nims can stop caring about me. Someone like me will never dare to challenge either of you anyways. So do not show me any interest.”

Slaaaap!

Yulian really couldn’t hold back and smacked Orca’s cheek again and got up from his seat and started to beat Orca up. Internally, he knew he should not be doing this, but he could not hold back without hitting him.

“What is the problem? Did I tell you to pretend that you were dead? Was Pere mean to you? Stop showing you any interest? Who else do you have? Other than Pere and me, who else is your blood? A man should not be so twisted that you make your hyung so miserable. How much more must I hit you for you to snap out of it?”

Yulian word vomited his discontent as he continued to hit Orca, and Orca just let Yulian hit him without any resistance.

“Hahahaha.”

Orca suddenly started to laugh.

“Fine. You are really considering your hyung to be a fool. Fine, I will hit you some more. I will hit you until you snap out of it.”

Yulian’s punching started to become stronger, yet Orca still just continued to get hit.

He didn’t even lift his arm to pretend to cover his body. He was just like a doll, letting Yulian hit him.

Orca’s nose started to bleed and both of his cheeks were swollen. He also had bruises all over his body.

He was beat up so bad, but this was the first time Orca really felt alive in a long time. Since his mother passed away, with people looking at him with sharp and disgusted glares, Orca really felt like he had died.

But right now, as his brother was beating him up, Orca could feel that he was really still alive.

His brother was always direct. He never hid his emotions.

That must be the reason.

Maybe he was waiting for his brother to beat him up like this because he himself thought he was twisted and dead.

Orca started to tear up before he started to cry.

“Ugh...sob sob sob.”

“Why are you crying? Is it because it hurts? Is it because I hit you like this? Just why are you crying? I want to cry too. I want to cry because it makes me think I have been terrible to make you like this.”

“Hyung ... Hyung ... oo oo oo

Orca called out to Yulian while tears continued to drop from his eyes.

Yulian lost all of his strength.

As the oldest son, as the head of the family, he didn't know what to do with this youngest brother of his.

How lovable did this brother of his used to be?

Just how much did he like him in the past?

Orca used to follow him everywhere while calling him hyung. But he would have never expected that his brother was feeling this hurt.

“What am I to do? How should I treat you? You tell me. What should this hyung do?”

“Hyung-nim ... Yulian hyung-nim.....”

Orca just continued to cry.

“You little punk, answer me.”

Yulian embraced Orca. Tears started to fall from Yulian's eyes as well and he was crying interally.

“I am your hyung. One of only two who share your blood. You have no reason whatsoever to treat me like this. Share all of your complaints and sorrows with me. This hyung will take it all. In return, never say anything that'll tear my heart again. If you do, I will not easily forgive you at that time.”

“Sorry ... I'm really sorry, hyung-nim.....”

Yulian put more strength in his arms that were hugging his youngest brother and started to pat his back.

Book 2-6.3 The Provoke Family (III)

Booooooooooong~

The noise of a large greatsword cut through the morning air.

“Hoooooooo~!”

Yulian took a deep breath in before putting back his two greatswords.

It made him feel like his mind was becoming clear. The many events of yesterday instantly flooded his mind.

‘Everything went well. Since I tightened the loosened string, our family should return to the happiness we used to have.’

Grace’s internal burdens. Pere’s issue. The emotional dealings with Orca.

There shouldn’t be any other issues. He will get his brothers married quickly, and once they all have children, this extremely quiet household will be full of life again.

‘Anyways, I wonder if Trebol and Prada successfully completed the plan. Pere is going to throw a fit once he knows he’s been taken advantage of.

But if it was successfully completed, it was already spilt water, spoken words.

“Hyung-nim!”

“Ack!”

At that moment, Pere was huffing and puffing while walking over to Yulian with his shamshir. Yulian was shocked, but put on a calm expression as he waved toward Pere.

“Pere, you are here. Did you come here to do some morning training as well?”

Pere’s two eyes were burning as he started to speak.

“Hyung-nim, be honest with me. You were the one who hit me from behind and knocked me unconscious yesterday, weren’t you?”

“What are you talking about? Who made who faint?”

Yulian was feeling guilty, but he worked hard to keep a calm expression.

“How many warriors in the vicinity can knock me out with a single hit?”

“I really have no idea what you are talking about. Did something happen?”

“Stop lying to me.”

As Pere kept insisting, Yulian wondered just how Pere knew. But he lifted his gaze to the sky as he started to speak.

“The sky is very clear today. Did you have a terrible nightmare last night or something? Why are you nagging at your brother like this for no reason from so early in the morning?”

Shaaaaaaaang~

“Hmph, what are you doing?”

Yulian urgently avoided the shamshir flying his way as he shouted.

“Please be honest with me. It was you who knocked me unconscious and sent me to Greatest Warrior Trebol’s paoe, wasn’t it!”

“Why would I knock you unconscious for no reason and send you to someone else’s paoe? Did you go to Greatest Warrior Trebol’s paoe to play?”

As Yulian played dumb until the end, Pere started to roll his feet.

“Hyung-nim, you really didn’t knock me unconscious and send me there?”

“Are you perhaps coming from his residence right now? Why would you leave your perfectly fine paoe and spend the night at his? You, perhaps?”

There was only so much that could be a coincidence. Pere was certain that the person who knocked him unconscious was his brother.

Even if he was intoxicated, there were not many people in this oasis that could knock him out with a single hit.

“Did you have a reason to sleep in Greatest Warrior Trebol’s paoe? You haven’t fallen for his daughter, have you? Oh, why are you turning red? Is that really it?”

At Yulian’s words, Pere’s face started to turn even redder. Pere was about to go crazy. Why was it that when he woke up, he was completely naked and laying on someone else’s bed? And why was it that next to him was a woman he had seen only once in his life? He couldn’t understand any of it.

He quickly put on his clothes and ran out like he was running away, and as he thought hard on his way here, he felt like he fell for someone’s plan. But with the responsible parties claiming innocence, how could he not be going crazy?

“Hmm, it must be the truth. I did hear the rumor that you like Greatest Warrior Trebol’s daughter; why didn’t you tell me sooner? It would have been better to formally request to date her and marry her. Why were you so rushed?”

At Yulian’s words, Pere really went crazy. Now his brother was trying to completely throw the blame on him.

“Hyung-nim!”

Pere shouted loudly as he started to swing his shamshir.

Watching the swordplay of the two brothers, many of the warriors just thought that the brothers really went hard at their morning training.

“Congratulations, Pere-nim. Now that Pere-nim is getting married, our household should start to get loud.”

At Grace’s words, Pere just let out a long sigh and lowered his head. It was not that he had no plans to get married, but he at least wanted to marry a woman he liked. It was true that he was looking for a woman who was as good as his sister-in-law.

‘But for it to be that troublemaker. She does not match well with me at all.’

“Sigh~!”

Not caring at all about Pere who was sighing again, Grace just continued to talk.

“It is not a lie to say it has been quite a lot to handle for me as the only woman in the family. But as the hostess of the family, I will make sure your wedding is very marvelous. Since Pere-nim’s name is known throughout the desert, there should be a lot of guests. There are many things to get ready.”

Grace continued to chatter away about how to change up the paoe and what to change with the household chores, etc etc, as if she was really excited.

“Thank you for the meal.”

“Omo, are you not hungry? Or does the food taste weird? Why did you only eat that much?”

“I do not have much of an appetite. Then I shall make my leave first.”

As Pere got up and left, Grace had a look of confusion as she looked toward Yulian, and then turned her gaze to Orca.

“Now we only have young master Orca-nim left. Next year, young master Orca-nim will be an adult as well. You should start preparing for it.”

Seeing Grace’s interest turn to him, Orca started to flinch as he

looked toward Grace. His sister-in-law had this magic about her that made you feel like you couldn't go against her word.

'If the second sister-in-law is like first sister-in-law, my future days will be difficult.....'

Orca continued to peek at Grace, and using the moment she put some food in her mouth, he quickly ran outside.

"Thank you for the meal."

"Ah! Orca-nim!"

Grace had more to say, but seeing Orca run away like that, she looked toward her husband.

"Hahahaha."

Yulian laughed loudly before speaking.

"Do not take it to heart. They just left because they were embarrassed. Kekeke."

"Why is it embarrassing when it is normal for a man to be married? What will I do when our young masters are so shy like this? In the future, they will have four to five wives each. I'm very worried."

"Fou...five?"

Seeing Yulian being extremely surprised at Grace's words, Grace gave him a 'why are you so surprised' expression as she continued.

"To be a man you need at least that many. Our tribe is especially bad when it comes to the ratio between warriors and women."

Yulian peeked toward Grace as he asked.

"Honey ... that's not the case... for me, is it?"

"Of course it is. You are the Glow, so we will need it for diplomatic reasons as well. Do not worry about my jealousy. It is not that I don't have the desire or greed to keep you to myself, but this Grace is not such a small-minded woman like that."

‘O, Neo Latin.....’

Yulian sought out the guardian in his mind as he spoke.

“I know you are worried, but didn’t we decide to take that slowly yesterday?”

That is why I am only telling you. If you find a girl you like somewhere, feel free to bring her home. I do need to make sure she has a decent personality and acts properly. Although I won’t be able to do anything about it if you get her pregnant before the wedding.”

“Honey, just what kind of person do you see me ... sigh~!”

Yulian let out a deep sigh and decided to stop there. The weakness of the men in this house was that the more they talked, the more they fell into Grace’s rhythm.

Yulian didn’t know what was making Grace so happy that she was humming as she started to clean the breakfast spread.

Grace was the conqueror of the Provoke family.

Book 2-6.4 Pet Animal

Chun Myung Hoon was outside the tribe from the early morning.

It was because there was something he needed to test out in person.

‘Will it really be possible? That thing can even crawl inside the sand. Whatever. Animals just need to be trained.’

Chun Myung Hoon thought about his dream as he ran forward until he reached the area with the quicksand.

One of the biggest factors that divided the desert into East and West was this quicksand.

In this vast desert, it was not possible to carelessly cross the quicksand that flowed like river water.

With one wrong step, you could be swept completely in. It was so strong that if you fall in, you needed at least three pirms pulling at the same time to barely make it out. Because of that, other than the weakly flowing areas or the couple paths where it did not flow, you could not cross it. That was why this quicksand was used as the border to divide the desert into East and West.

The reason Chun Myung Hoon came to the quicksand was because of a dream he had last night.

Chun Myung Hoon’s dream.

It was a dream where he was riding a Sand Dragon across the desert.

After thinking about it for a long time, he seriously debated about whether it could actually be accomplished, and decided to come out here early in the morning to test it out.

‘They said there are a lot of them in the Monster’s Field and this large quicksand area.’

Chun Myung Hoon thought about the information he gathered

from the old folks in the tribe and made his body light as he took one step into the quicksand. He had made up his mind to be the bait.

The majority of Sand Dragons rest inside the quicksand and wait for something to fall into the quicksand. When monsters, animals, or a clueless young warrior or travelers and merchants from the continent fall into the quicksand, they appear like ghosts and eat them up.

Pow. Pooooow.

Chun Myung Hoon was walking on top of the quicksand while letting out his force around him. He was trying to use noise and vibrations to make a Sand Dragon quickly appear.

After pounding away like that for a while and not having a Sand Dragon appear, Chun Myung Hoon changed locations and repeated his actions.

“Why is it not showing up? Is it because it is still the strongest monster in the desert?”

After not seeing a Sand Dragon after moving around for an hour, he was both bored and annoyed as he put even more strength into his hand and made his force make even more noises.

After around one hour of doing that, Chun Myung Hoon’s eyes started to sparkle after feeling an odd vibration under his feet.

‘It’s here.’

Although he was on top of the flowing sand, Chun Myung Hoon’s sensitivity was not comparable to a normal human, so he could tell what it was based on just the vibration and prepare for it.

It happened in an instant.

The moment he felt like something was coming up from underneath his feet, Chun Myung Hoon’s body was pushed about 15 meters into the air. Under his feet was the red inside of a Sand

Dragon's mouth following after him.

"I caught you, you little punk."

Chun Myung Hoon shouted loudly as he kicked the Sand Dragon's nose with his foot and raised his body even further.

Kwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaang~!

The Sand Dragon roared as it tried to put Chun Myung Hoon in its mouth, but there was only so much that the Sand Dragon could do since it could not fly.

It shot up until approximately 30 meters before reaching its limit and lowering its head as it started to fall back down.

Chun Myung Hoon used his Heavenly Demon Art to make his body really heavy, and then stepped on the falling Sand Dragon's head.

Kwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaang~!

Maybe it felt the impact on its head, but the Sand Dragon roared again, and after looking for somewhere to grab, Chun Myung Hoon tightly held onto the Sand Dragon's eyelids and took a deep breath.

Uwooooooooooo~!

Papapapapat.

The Sand Dragon roared in pain and started to go into the quicksand.

The Sand Dragon was moving as fast as it could in the quicksand to throw this human off of its head.

'Hmm... so the inside of the quicksand looks like this. I guess since the density in here is low, it makes the sand flow? Is there perhaps a giant slope on the bottom that makes it flow?'

The Sand Dragon swam quickly inside the quicksand to throw Chun Myung Hoon off, but Chun Myung Hoon was covering his whole body with force and wasn't affected at all.

It was just giving Chun Myung Hoon an interesting view.

Seeing nothing new come up after riding it for a while, Chun Myung Hoon decided that he had seen enough and pulled hard on the Sand Dragon's eyelids.

"Let's go up."

Uooooooooooooooooong~!

The Sand Dragon, wanting to get rid of the pain in its eyes, turned its head in the direction Chun Myung Hoon was pulling to, and ended up heading back out of the quicksand.

"You are listening well. If you listen well like this, I will not kill you."

Chun Myung Hoon tapped the Sand Dragon's head telling it that it was doing well, but as the recipient, the Sand Dragon was about to go crazy. It finally realized that this monster-like human was not normal.

All it could do was move its body in the direction that Chun Myung Hoon pulled toward.

After riding on the Sand Dragon like he was flying for a while, Chun Myung Hoon came up with a crazy idea.

'I'm sure she'll like it if I gift this thing to that good girl Grace. Then she might put in even more effort to develop the things I want to eat. Not only that, I have not given anything to such a good girl.'

Although Grace had learned martial arts from Yulian and was more skilled than the average warrior, you never know what could happen. The greater Yulian got, the more that his family will be in danger of assassination. If that happens, wouldn't Grace be the easiest target for such an assassin?

But if she rides this punk or this punk is around her, it would increase Grace's safety.

“Everything is good, except for this punk’s violent nature.’

The problem was that only his disciple and he could take care of this Sand Dragon on their own in the tribe. But Chun Myung Hoon decided to take care of that with a simple solution.

First, Chu Myung Hoon lifted his arm high in the air and strongly punched the Sand Dragon on the forehead.

Pooooooooooooow.

Kwaaaak.

There was an extremely loud noise as the Sand Dragon flailed around in pain.

Chun Myung Hoon lightly lifted his body and landed on the ground before approaching the fallen Sand Dragon and starting to speak.

“From what I hear, a monster of your level has a decent amount of intelligence. No, it only makes sense that you do. Otherwise, I will just skin you and gift that to her. Since your body is pretty tough, it should make some great clothes. Kekeke.”

At Chun Myung Hoon’s laughter, the Sand Dragon started to shake in fear. It tried to use the fact that Chun Myung Hoon was a bit away from him and tried to run.

At that moment.

Pow. Popopow. Pooooooooow!

Loud punching noises continuously filled the air as the Sand Dragon twisted its whole body in pain.

“If you try to run away one more time, I will definitely rip your skin right off. Get your ass here now!”

Whiiiiiiiine~!

Maybe it understood Chun Myung Hoon’s words or it was its survival instinct, but the Sand Dragon made a whining noise as it

crawled on the ground and headed toward Chun Myung Hoon.

“I have someone to gift you to. I will train you for a bit before that, so the way for you to live is to follow my orders properly.”

Roar.

“I will teach you a couple different commands, so pay attention.”

Roar.

Chun Myung Hoon pointed to the front and shouted.

“Go!”

Roar?

The moment the Sand Dragon stood there in confusion after not understanding Chun Myung Hoon’s intent, there was another round of punching noises.

Kwaaaaaaaaaaaaak~!

The Sand Dragon shouted in pain, and Chun Myung Hoon grabbed the Sand Dragon’s eyelid as he pulled it forward.

“It means go forward.”

The Sand Dragon ran with all its might in the direction Chun Myung Hoon was pulling it.

“Good. Good job. This is the meaning of ‘Go.’ Do you understand?”

Roar.

The Sand Dragon peeked behind as it was running forward. If he was a decent distance away from this human, it was going to run with all of its strength.

Kwaaaaaaaaaak.

The moment the Sand Dragon turned its head, it was so surprised that it almost tripped over its own body. This damned human was running right next to him!

“Good. Now stop!”

Roar?

Pow. Pow. Pooooooooow.

Paaaaaaaaak. Puaaaaaaaaaak.

Chun Myung Hoon had slammed the Sand Dragon’s neck. As it came to a stop, Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head as he spoke.

“This is the meaning of stop. Try to listen the first time. Stop making me use my hands.”

That day, the Sand Dragon was hit to the point it wanted to just die. But maybe there was a positive effect, since it could now understand many commands, such as, ‘go,’ ‘come,’ ‘run,’ ‘stop,’ ‘to the left,’ ‘to the right,’ ‘a bit faster,’ and ‘slower.’

In addition, it even learned some really odd commands toward other monsters, such as ‘eat it!’ ‘Rip it to shreds!’ Turn it over on its back and sweep it away!’

“Mm, this should be enough to keep Grace away from danger.’

Chun Myung Hoon felt that he was really talented in teaching, and happily got on top of the Sand Dragon’s head and shouted.

“Let’s go!”

Roar?

Pooooooooooooow.

The Sand Dragon, which didn’t know the difference between ‘go’ and ‘let’s go’ had no choice but to be hit again.

Book 2-6.5 Shopping

Pareia's patrol warrior Ninano was proud of his duty.

This was a heavy yet important duty where thanks to him, Pareia would be able to prepare to meet their enemy.

Just like any other day, Ninano was feeling the heat of the sun as he slowly looked around his area of responsibility.

"Ninano, what is that cloud of dust?"

Ninano's fellow patrol warrior, Nilniria, pointed to one direction and started to speak. Ninano started to frown as he headed out toward the cloud of dust.

"That doesn't seem like a person, does it?"

"It looks like a worm?"

"What kind of worm would drag that much dust? Especially since it is by itself."

"It does seem quite big, doesn't it?"

"At that size, wouldn't it be larger than seven paoes?"

The two patrol warriors were chatting with each other before looking at each other."

".....!"

"Run!"

The two patrol warriors, urgently turned their pirma around and started to rush toward the tribe. They really rushed almost to the point their hair pulled out and each took out their [Imapulpina](#) (sheep-like animal with a large horn on its forehead) flutes and blew into it.

Booooooong. Booooooong.

The sound of the two patrol warriors' flutes were delivered to the nearby patrol warriors, and the warriors who received the message

also blew their flutes.

“Monster attack! Monster attack! Alert!”

Based on the sound of the flute, they were able to tell whether it was an invasion from another tribe, a monster attack, or even a visit from a VIP. But the current noise meant that it was a monster attack.

Since the wild animals and monsters around the tribe were hunted by the warriors, it was really rare for monsters to attack the tribe. Plus, the typical monsters were handled by the patrol warriors, so the fact that they had to send an alert with the flute meant that a large group of monsters were attacking, so the warriors within the tribe quickly grabbed their weapons and mounted their pimas as they headed out.

Yulian also grabbed his equipment after hearing the flute and stood in front of the gathered warriors. It was then that Ninano and Nilniria, the two warriors who first discovered the monster attack, rushed toward them and started to speak.

“A single Sand Dragon is headed directly toward the tribe.”

“Sand Dragon?”

Sand Dragons were monsters of the highest level, and one that required tens of veteran warriors to handle. Because of this, the warriors started to whisper to each other. However, their Glow was the hero who took down such a monster on his own.

The warriors’ eyes all turned toward Yulian.

“If that monster makes it into the tribe, there will be a lot of damage. We will head toward it to take care of it. Since many warriors seem to want to see the strength of I, Yulian Provoke, I will show it to you.”

“Oowaaaaaaaaa!”

At the Glow’s proclamation, the warriors started to shout. It was

honestly impossible for them to believe. How could a human take down such a large monster on their own?

Yulian led the way with thousands of warriors following behind him, and the women and children who heard the news followed after them. It was something everybody wanted to watch. Seeing it change from a monster attack to more of a festival type of feel, Yulian started to smile.

‘It will be good to unite the tribe at a time like this. It’ll also make them respect me more.’

Yulian thought like that and debated which fancy sword art to use to take the monster down. It was because he was certain that the tribe members would be more enthusiastic based on how fancy the sword art was.

As the people came outside the tribe and waited for a bit, the single Sand Dragon caused a gust of sand as it ran toward them like a gale.

Yulian ran out before it got too close, and just in case, Pere and Trebol followed after him.

It was when the Sand Dragon and Yulian were about 20 meters away from each other. The moment Yulian took out his two greatswords, the Sand Dragon started to speak.

“Is there a war somewhere? Why are you all gathered like this?”

“Ang?”

Yulian, who had never heard that Sand Dragons could speak the human language, was slightly surprised as he looked up.

“Master?”

“Yes, it is me. Why is everybody gathered like this?”

“Well, what exactly are you doing, master?”

“Stop. Lower.”

At Chun Myung Hoon's command, the Sand Dragon lowered its head. Seeing the ugly Sand Dragon's face coming toward him, Yulian almost subconsciously swung his greatsword.

"You weren't surprised? What is going on, master?"

"What do you mean what is going on? I caught him to give him to Grace as a present."

"What?"

"Aren't you the worried too? What if someone with bad intentions tries to attack her while you are away at the battlefield? If Grace takes good care of this punk as a pet, nobody will be able to touch her. But where is Grace?"

Yulian had a look of disbelief as he answered.

"Master, are you trying to kill someone? How many people in the desert can handle this thing on their own?"

"Do not worry. I trained it and I have a plan."

"What kind of plan?"

"I will teach that to Grace."

Chun Myung Hoon left behind the flabbergasted Yulian behind as he confidently rode the Sand Dragon toward where the people were gathered.

Seeing people who recognize his true nature, the Sand Dragon was trying to look cool and raised his head to look large and slowly moved his body in a Z shape.....

"Crawl!"

...No, he crawled all the way there.

Since his master was on top of it, Yulian took the just as surprised Pere and Trebol and rushed to the rest of the tribe members first to tell them not to be scared.

"Grace."

As Chun Myung Hoon called out to her from the top of the Sand Dragon's head, Grace flinched as she stepped forward.

"Yes, senior."

"Come on up."

"What?"

"Do not have any worries and just come up. I caught him to give him to you. It is a one of a kind present."

Grace was disgusted by the Sand Dragon's appearance and was a bit afraid, but trusted Chun Myung Hoon as she held Chun Myung Hoon's hand and stepped on the Sand Dragon's head.

Grrr.

The Sand Dragon made a noise as if he was annoyed that another human stepped on his head, but the consequences of such arrogant action happened immediately.

"Who do you think you are acting up against! Die! Die!"

Even though Chun Myung Hoon did not put much strength into the kick, the Sand Dragon felt like his head was about to crack open and tried to flail.

"Oh? Now you want to flail as well? Try moving even a little bit. I will pull each of your bones out of your body."

Whiiiiiiiine.

The Sand Dragon could only use all of his strength to handle the pain without moving.

"How is it?"

"It is amazing, but ... senior, what did you plan on doing with this monster when you caught it?"

"Ride this punk instead of a pirma. The speed is similar and it eats a lot, but if you ride him around, nothing dangerous will happen. Plus, the desert looks very different from higher up in the

air. Do you like it?”

Seeing Chun Myung Hoon ask with a look of anticipation, Grace seemed to be unable to say no, as she kept sending signals to Yulian. She was asking him to stop his master.

Chun Myung Hoon, who recognized Grace’s intentions, started to speak again.

“Are you perhaps afraid that he might cause trouble?”

“I am indeed a bit afraid, senior.”

“Do you think I would have brought him here without thinking about that? There is always a way to deal with things. Yulian.”

Chun Myung Hoon called out to Yulian who was down below before he continued.

“Hand me your greatswords.”

Yulian was curious what else his master was going to do, but he threw his two greatswords to his master as ordered.

Chun Myung Hoon caught the two greatswords and handed it to Grace before putting his hand on her yeongdaehyul (acupuncture point on the back) and speaking.

“I will push some ki into you, so use the face of the blade to strike him as hard as you can.”

“Strike him as hard as I can?”

As Grace asked after feeling an unknown strength flowing through her the moment Chun Myung Hoon put his hand on her back, Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head.

Any ordinary woman would have been scared, but Grace was different. Her husband was directly below them, and in front of her was her husband’s master, who was even scarier than her husband.

She put the greatswords that she would normally not be able to

lift in her hands as she lifted both of her arms high into the air.

Did the Sand Dragon feel the murderous aura as well? Because he started to curl his body, Grace's greatswords smashed across the Sand Dragon's nose.

Kwaaaaaa. Kwaaaaaaang.

The Sand Dragon let out a cry as Chun Myung Hoon stepped on his head to make it not move.

"You punk, remember this well. This is your owner from now on. As you just felt, she is as strong as I am. You probably won't know this, but that person down there is your owner's husband, and he beat up your king on his own. Serve them well."

Roar.

As the Sand Dragon made as noise as if to say he understood, Chun Myung Hoon was satisfied and started to teach Grace the different commands he taught the Sand Dragon. He then took a hard, gold-like gem that was glowing red and gave it to Grace.

"I received it from my friend. He said that he put what he called his Soul's Breath into it, and that it should protect you from monsters. Put it on a necklace and wear it on you at all times."

When Grace touched it, she felt a warm aura radiating from it, and since it was glowing like a jewel glowing in the sun, even if it did not protect against monsters, she knew it was precious.

"Thank you senior."

Seeing Grace's face brighten, Chun Myung Hoon regretted the fact that he did not bring the armor covered in jewels as a gift for her.

'Next time I go to his house, I will make sure to bring it with me and hand it to Grace.'

Chun Myung Hoon thought about that red lizard that had jewels piled up as high as a mountain and made up his mind.

“Next time, I will bring you some better things. Alright, now you try giving him a command.”

“Where am I supposed to hold on to?”

“I’m not sure. First, make him move slowly, and later, you make a saddle and reins to put around him. Then you should be able to start raising the speed.”

“I should do that. Is it ... go?”

“If you put slowly with it, he will move slowly.”

Grace nodded her head and shouted while her heart was beating quickly from anticipation.

“Go slowly.”

Roar.

The Sand Dragon thought it was the end for him. The fact that he must obey without any questions overwhelmed his mind. Also, a feeling that he did not feel from the male human was coming from the female human. When he lifted his eyes and saw the red light in her hand, he almost peed himself.

As the Sand Dragon listened to Grace’s command and slowly started to move, the people cheered at this unbelievable sight.

Their respect toward Chun Myung Hoon who had tamed that monster automatically went off the chart.

That was how the Provoke family started to raise Pareia’s first pet animal.

Other than the fact that he looked really ugly, he was quite a useful pet.

He was safer than a pirma, and at first, they thought it would cost a lot to feed him since they had to feed him ten pinas at once, but after he was trained, he crawled out on his own to eat wild animals or monsters for his meal before coming back. It was killing two birds with one stone.

He must be decently smart since he could understand what people were saying, so this Sand Dragon quickly started to be loved by the Provoke family.

Since it was hard to keep calling him Sand Dragon, they even gave him the name Shopping, the Sand Monster.

He still sometimes growled at the tribe members, but since he was trained to never hurt humans, there will not be any issues.

Since Chun Myung Hoon was the one to train him, they had no worries.

As time goes by, Shopping's violent nature will completely disappear, but he already started to take his place as Pareia's Guardian Animal.

Thanks to that, Chun Myung Hoon ended up in the situation where Grace asked him to capture a couple more of them.

“We need a total of five including one for you, senior. Other than Shopping, we need just four more. How cool will we look if our family and senior all moved around riding Sand Dragons?”

“Huhuhuhu.”

Chun Myung Hoon bursted out laughing.

End of Chapter

I kept it phonetic from Korean, but the name Imapulpina literally means forehead-horn pina.

Book 2-7.1 A Mirage

The ship that moved on top of the sand.

The fact that it used the wind and the flow of the quicksand to move its giant body was really an amazing spectacle. It was something they needed to make theirs.

Dinner time.

“I saw an amusing mirage.”

Chun Myung Hoon put a piece of bread in his mouth before describing what he saw when he went to the quicksand river.

“A mirage?”

It was something that happened from time to time in the desert, but not something you could see often.

It was so rare that it was believed that you will be lucky on a day you saw a mirage.

It was also the reason the reconnaissance warriors making a map of the desert were necessary.

The mirages of the desert were so realistic that even when you know it is not real, you could still end up being tricked.

“Yes, it was of a ship sailing across the desert.”

Yulian laughed at Chun Myung Hoon’s answer.

“Master, you saw quite an interesting mirage. Isn’t a ship the thing you said moves across the place called the ocean where there is as much water as sand in the desert?”

“That is why I said it was an amusing mirage.”

“It was not a mirage.”

Grace interjected into Chun Myung Hoon and Yulian’s conversation.

“I heard that there are people that rule over the quicksand. I heard that they moved around in a plate shaped object that is amazing and does not fall into the quicksand.”

Chun Myung Hoon, who had a lot of curiosity, asked after hearing Grace’s answer.

“Child, explain it a bit more to me. You are telling me there is a ship in the desert?”

“I cannot answer that since I do not know what a ship is. But I have seen a picture of the object.”

Grace dipped her finger in her cup and started to draw a picture on the table.

Grace was talented with her hands so she managed to quickly draw the picture and Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head as he started to speak.

“It is indeed a ship. You are telling me this roams on top of the quicksand?”

“That is what I heard. There are many people who do not know about it. Because the quicksand river is not somewhere people can easily approach, only a few patrol warriors in the northern tribes observed it and reported back.”

“For what reason must they be roaming that area? They would need to go to shore to eat and live.”

Grace answered Yulian’s question.

“Honestly, they are similar to a group of bandits. They do capture monsters and collect Monster’s Souls to sell, but they also rob foreign merchants who carelessly enter. Since the quicksand river is so long, where can they not reach?”

“If they are a group of bandits, I would think the nearby tribes would not sit idly and let them do as they please.”

As Yulian spoke with confusion, Grace shook her head.

“I heard that the people of the desert avoid them at all cost. Plus, not that many people go toward the quicksand river anyways.”

“But in order to hunt those monsters, there must be quite a bit of crew members.”

“I do not know for sure.”

As Grace answered that she did not know that, Yulian started to think.

“A large ship that can move across the quicksand river. How many people can it transport?”

A light turned on in Yulian’s head. The quicksand river that cut across the desert was not somewhere that people could casually approach. The quicksand river was a place where a single misstep could lead you to instantly fall in.

‘If I could move freely across that quicksand river?’

They will be the army with the most mobility in the entire desert, and the fact that they would be able to use a route that nobody else could use would bring a lot of advantages to their war strategies. Since they would not need to defend the side facing the quicksand river while the enemy would need to do so, it would also work to divide the enemy troops.

“I need to go verify the authenticity of this ship.”

“You are going to the quicksand river?”

Grace answered in surprise at Yulian’s words.

“I need to go. I need to verify whether this is real. If it is real, I must make it ours.”

“How will you go to the quicksand river to verify it?”

At Grace’s question, Yulian looked toward Chun Myung Hoon.

Chun Myung Hoon responded bluntly to Yulian’s gaze.

“Why are you looking at me? Can’t you ride Shopping to go

there?”

“Right!”

Yulian clapped his hand and shouted as if he finally figured it out.

“Master is indeed a very amazing person in my life. You know exactly how to open this disciple’s eyes extremely wide.”

Chun Myung Hoon frowned a bit at his disciple’s sudden praise, but it didn’t feel bad.

“What do you plan on doing?”

“I need to verify it. If it is really a ship that can move across the quicksand, I need to meet with them and make them cooperate with us. I’m sure they need to go to shore to live, so it would be even better if they make their base in Pareia.”

Chun Myung Hoon thought for a bit before speaking.

“It isn’t a bad idea. When I saw the flow and volume of the quicksand, I thought that if it was used properly, it could even move faster than a pirma. That is, if there really is a ship on top of the sand.”

“If we can manage to acquire such mobility, our Pareia will dominate the center of the desert. The problem is the number of warriors. That is a thought for a later time.”

“You are thinking about war.”

“In order to not be eaten up by the forces of the continent, I must unify the desert. Although many people will die, it is something I must complete.”

Chun Myung Hoon smiled internally at Yulian’s words.

Even when he first met Yulian, he liked Yuilan’s steady sense of purpose, and if he is going to be his disciple, he needed to aim to be the best.

Although he could not find the reason he came to this place while traveling across the continent, it was enough for him to figure out the unknown power that controls this world. It made him think that he came to this world to give strength to this disciple who was born with the Mandate of Heaven.

Enough strength to go against the unknown power of this world.

“Alright. A man needs to have at least that big of a dream. I will watch over you.”

“Since it has come up, I plan on leaving right away. I know it will take a while and Pareia does not have much time. Before the Shuarei recover their strength, I want to take over the Wikaly in the north.”

Vitality was flowing throughout Yulian’s body.

The Sand Dragon Shopping was extremely happy to return to the quicksand river, his hometown.

He could not go into the sand because he was afraid of being beaten up by his owner, but he just kept his head out of the river and put the rest of his body inside the sand, and flailed around enjoying the feeling of the sand.

Since they planned on doing reconnaissance for over a month, Chun Myung Hoon and Yulian didn’t care much about Shopping’s movement and let him move as he pleased.

“It is quite mysterious. I wonder how this quicksand looks like on the inside.”

“When I went in and took a look, the sand was acting like the water in a river. It was flowing. Although I don’t know what makes it flow.”

“Mysterious.”

“Anyways, I don’t know how long we need to wander around for to see the ship. If I knew it wasn’t a mirage, I would have gone on

board last time.”

“Since master saw it last time, it must mean it travels in this direction. We should be able to see it if we wait.”

Chun Myung Hoon looked around in a relaxed manner.

The endless desert sand. The small pebbles of sand endlessly flowing in the quicksand. Nature really was marvelous.

“ I will teach you the body protection method later. Now that I think about it, it’ll be complicated if you fall off of Shopping.”

“Ah! Now that you mention it, master, how was it that you moved around the quicksand river to catch this punk?”

At Yulian’s question, Chun Myung Hoon suddenly jumped off of Shopping’s head.

“Ah! Master.”

“It is a technique called the Water Glider. It doesn’t last too long on the water, but since this quicksand is made of sand, making my body light from the technique lets me move freely.”

“Does it take long to learn that technique?”

As Yulian watched his master with amazement, Chun Myung Hoon lifted up one finger as he answered.

“Seeing your progression, you’ll need to develop your inner force for about ten years to even mimic it.”

“Ten years?”

“There is always more to learn even if you study until you die. If you’ve managed to train properly for the last ten years, what is the problem with another ten? By that time, you should be able to reach the seventh level of my teachings.”

Yulian realized his master was speaking with Veneris on his mind and started to frown as he nodded his head.

“I will need to work hard even if it is just so that I don’t get beat

up by you. But master, were there a lot of people like you where you came from?”

Chun Myung Hoon started to smile as he answered.

“There is nobody like me. There were a few people who were similar to me though.”

“Then what about people at my level?”

“Why? Are you getting curious now that you have developed your martial arts to a certain level? Since you are young, it is not bad to have such a mindset, but the place where there are thousands of people at your level is called Gangho.”

Honestly speaking, someone at Yulian’s level could be in the upper echelon of those under thirty, but just in case Yulian might become arrogant, Chun Myung Hoon exaggerated a bit.

“This Gangho is a place where extremely amazing people live.”

As Yulian answered in admiration, Chun Myung Hoon smiled again before continuing.

“Your master’s martial arts is not weak and I had no rival under the heaven. I hope you become the same way here.”

“Listening to you speak that way, I am curious about your name.”

“Me? You might be the Desert Conqueror, but I have the title of ‘Most Powerful Under Heaven’ meaning that I have no equal. Shouldn’t you go past the desert and put Continent in front of your name instead?”

“As expected of my master, your level of thinking is on a higher level. Hahaha.”

“You are still just a baby chick. When I traveled across the continent, there were some people with somewhat decent skills. The majority were similar to you, but there were some who were shockingly talented.”

Yulian’s two eyes sparkled as he asked.

“Since we have a lot of time, please tell me some stories about the continent. Although one day, I will step over there with my own two feet.”

Book 2-7.2 Captain Thriger (I)

“Tell you about the continent? I didn’t get to see many places. But there were a few things that left a big impression.”

“If it left a big impression on you master, it must be an amazing place.”

Yulian was even more curious at Chun Myung Hoon’s answer and asked. Chun Myung Hoon debated about what to tell his disciple, before finally starting to speak.

“Hmm...the most memorable place was a tower with 100 floors, called the Magic Tower.

“100 floors?”

“Yes. The country I used to live in was well developed in construction to build a castle that was close to 10,000 li in height, but nothing as tall as 100 stories.”

“That is amazing. How could humans make such a thing.”

“This place seems to have an amazing skill called magic. Similar to Tuma Takaka’s incantations, just a few words and hand movements, as well as using powders called reagents, made things possible that were beyond my imagination. I heard that the tower was made with magic as well.”

“Magic... I have experienced Tuma Takaka-nims incantations a few times; if this magic is similar to that, I guess it is something we cannot ignore.”

“There was a group called the apostasy where I used to live, and they had necromancy and talisman arts that called forth ghosts.”

“Swords and magic ... which is stronger?”

Chun Myung Hoon shook his head as he answered.

“That is a stupid question. No matter what subject it is, if a person dedicates their time to study and train, the person

themselves becomes stronger. There was an old woman who was the chief of the Magic Tower, and her knowledge of magic was so solid that I could not stop my admiration. Also, in an island where night never comes, there was a middle-aged man who was called the Patriarch, and he made me full of admiration as well.”

“I can’t believe it. For master to admire them, I cannot imagine just how strong they must be.”

“People call me the Greatest Under Heaven, but there are bound to be many eccentric people in the world. They may be authors, people cleaning up poop in a stable, and maybe even a scholar who just enjoys the world by quietly reading. Since all of them live in the world based on their own will, there is no such thing as absolute in the world. That is why you need to study for all of your life.”

Hearing his master’s thoughtful words for the first time in a while, Yulian realized he still had a long way to go and asked about other places. Chun Myung Hoon started to tell Yulian about the amazing stories from the many places he visited.

The day was growing dark as they continued to chat like that. Once it became night time, they felt like they could not do anything else that day and left the quicksand river to pitch the mobile paoe and laid down.

They were going to rest tonight and look for it again tomorrow.

“Let us slowly move up the quicksand river starting tomorrow. The fact that Pareia has never seen such a ship should mean that they do not come this way often. If we slowly make our way up, we should run into them at some point.

Yulian nodded his head at his master’s words and laid his head down.

Morning came again and the master-disciple duo rode on top of Shopping as they slowly made their way up the quicksand river.

After talking for three days, they didn't have anything left to really talk about. Since he was bored, Chun Myung Hoon had Shopping crawl while helping fix any errors in Yulian' martial arts, as well as starting to teach him some new skills.

Another week passed by like that.

Same as what they had been doing for the past week, Yulian and Chun Myung Hoon finished their light sparring and started to eat the mobile meals they brought with them.

"Anyways, is it okay for you to leave the tribe for this long?"

Although Chun Myung Hoon didn't care about the tribe's matters, he knew that no matter what group it was, it was never a good thing for the leader to leave for a long time. That was why he was worried and decided to ask. Yulian shrugged his shoulders like there were no problems and answered.

"Pere is there and Grace is there as well. Honestly, while I was focused on the training with the warriors as well as my own training, Grace look care of all the issues in the tribe. Pere also has a keen eye for government, so if Pere is there helping her, there should be no problem. Plus, right now, there is nothing big that might happen, and we are focused on stabilizing the tribe.

"What about the Shuarei?"

"Since they lost 20,000 warriors and 3 Greatest Warriors in this war, for a few years, they should be focused on defending their own oases. In addition, Yarumaha, the chief of the Cold Oasis, and the Angry Brandistock Vibli were told to endlessly irritate the Northern territory, so their attention should be focused there right now. The Rivalde are in the Northwest as well."

"Even so, if the head of an organization disappears, it becomes a bag of bones. Let's finish this quickly and head back. I also might die from eating this tasteless thing."

At Chun Myung Hoon's grumbling, Yulian started to smile.

There was just one thing his master complained about. Food.

“Of course. I have a strong feeling that we will really discover it today.”

Yulian’s strong intuition took four more days to be correct.

That thing cut through the glare of the bright sun bouncing off the sand as it appeared in front of Chun Myung Hoon and Yulian.

“Oh! It exists!”

Chun Myung Hoon was also shocked at this ship that could move across the desert and shouted with admiration.

What appeared in front of them had a length of approximately 30 meters, width of 10 meters, and height of approximately 20 meters. It has three large triangular masts, as well as two smaller rectangular masts.

Seeing as how it had an upper deck on top of the deck, the inside of the ship was probably designed the same way. Just looking at it, you could tell it was a large and cool looking ship.

The fast flowing quicksand and the strong winds that blew across the quicksand river increased the ship’s speed to unbelievable levels.

There was nothing they could ride in the desert that could bring forth that much speed.

“Shopping! Follow after it!”

Yulian shouted loudly and Shopping understood his master’s command as he started to chase after the ship.

But feeling like Shopping was hesitating, Yulian started to speak.

“I think he is scared of that ship. His eyes are completely frozen.”

“Since he used to live here in the quicksand river, he might know about that ship. The fact that he is scared should mean that it is pretty strong.”

Chun Myung Hoon stared at the ship while debating whether to just run over and climb on board.

At that time, there was some commotion on the ship, as if they noticed Shopping. One of the masts folded.

“They seem to have found us.”

“I’m sure they have just seen this punk. Normal people cannot see us from that distance.”

“They are doing a quick turn.”

“It is an amazing speed. For something that size to turn that quickly, if thi was the ocean, they would not be able to do that.”

Since Yulian had never seen this place called the ocean, he just nodded his head and asked.

“Do you think they are trying to capture Shopping?”

“The fact that he is scared should mean that the ship has caught many Sand Dragons until now. What should we do?”

“What do you mean?”

“Since we are curious about the ship’s abilities, are we going to face them once before you climb on board? Or Are you going to shout and let them know we are here before climbing on?”

Yulian wanted to see the abilities of this ship he had seen for the first time. That was because his focus was on how much this ship that can move across the quicksand could help him reach his goal.

“Let’s lightly observe their abilities first.”

“Since Shopping is extremely scared, protect him well. It will be troublesome if he suddenly decides to dive into the quicksand before you know it.”

“Yes.”

Yulian answered before patting Shopping’s head.

Shopping felt like he was going to die. He knew quite a bit about

that ship. It was the ship that brought death upon tens of his kind.

There were still some of his kind that didn't know, but the ones who did would curl up inside the quicksand as soon as they saw that ship. That was how afraid they were of that ship.

But his masters didn't know about that and were trying to kill him. He was following orders because he was afraid of the beating that would come from the masters who were extremely close to him, but if his life was in danger, he was ready to run away into the quicksand at any moment.

The ship quickly started to approach them. Shopping moved left and right to try to move to the back of the ship, but the masts on the ship moved in a multitude of directions to always maintain a direct look at Shopping.

“Load!”

There was a loud shout from the ship and they heard some rattling on the ship's deck.

“Cross Bow?”

Yulian remembered the things he saw in books as he shouted.

“It is huge. I have seen that weapon before. Isn't it too big to be called a Cross Bow? I believe it is the weapon called the Volley Star (a weapon shaped like a cross bow with an extremely large arrow).”

“What would happen to Shopping if he was hit by it?”

“One hit kill. I'm curious to see how they will pull up the dead monster.”

Shopping felt a chill go down his spine and Yulian put on a bitter smile as he started to speak.

“Grace cares so much about this punk lately, if he dies, I'm sure we will have to face her wrath.”

“Who said we will kill him? I just said I was curious.”

Chun Myung Hoon casually answered before looking toward the Volley Star and asking.

“Are you going to keep watching?”

Yulian took out his greatsword and answered.

“I want to see its strength.”

“You take care of it.”

Chun Myung Hoon sat down behind Yulian and started to admire the ship. It wasn't that he had never seen a ship before, but the method they used to make a ship here was very different than back in China.

In addition, where would Chun Myung Hoon have seen a ship that could leave the water?

Chun Myung Hoon was starting to get greedy and wanted to have at least one of those for himself.

The people on the ship never even considered the fact that there may be people on top of the Sand Dragon's head, and even the crew members who saw something move just assumed it was the Sand Dragon moving around. They prepared to catch Shopping.

“We will see some money for the first time in a while.”

The First Mate of the Desert Runner, Technol, shouted toward the captain in joy.

Thriger McDullah, the Captain of the Desert Runner, the man called the Looney Matroos (Man of the Ocean) by his crew, shouted in joy as well.

“The Sand Dragon's Monster's Soul is good money. Bow Man, is the Volley Star not ready yet?”

“We are preparing it, Captain!”

“Hurry it up if you want to drink enough rum to twist your nose tonight.”

“Just two left!”

Once the Bow Men shouted loudly, Thriger took a close look at the target. Based on its size, it was already an old monster. The Monster’s Soul should be big, and thinking that they got a big one for the first time in a while, Thriger excitedly moved the key here and there before turning the ship a bit to make sure the Bow Men could accurately shoot the Volley Star.

“The Volley Star is ready to go.”

Book 2-7.3 Captain Thriger (II)

As the Bow Men reported after setting up all seven Volley Stars, Thriger nodded his head and shouted.

“Shoot the ready ones first! Aim properly if you don’t want to struggle to pull it up. And there might be other monsters around, so grab your spears and assist the Bow Men.”

“Aye aye, captain!”

The thirty-ish crew members on the deck each held a spear as they stood in a line on the side of the deck.

“Third Volley Star, fire.”

“Seventh Volley Star, fire.”

At Thriger’s command, the two Bow Men who had finished aiming their Volley Stars shot the human sized arrows. The arrows had a thick rope tied to the end of it as it flew toward Shopping.

“It is coming toward us.”

Yulian stated as he looked toward the large arrow heading toward them, before swinging his greatsword to fling the arrows away.

“Hmm...I was curious how they were going to get it out of the quicksand, but they just tied a rope to the end of the arrow.”

Chun Myung Hoon mumbled while watching the arrow fall into the quicksand, and Yulian nodded his head as he flung another large arrow away.

“The strength of the arrow is no joke.”

“Since it is a weapon used to break down castle gates, it needs to be strong. It is probably going to take a long time to recharge all of these, so what do they do if they can’t catch it using the first round of arrows?”

Chun Myung Hoon's curiosity was answered by the ship's movement.

"You stupid idiots! Is this your first time firing the arrow? How do you miss all seven arrows? I guess we won't be drinking tonight. Hurry up and open up our sails before he chases after us!"

Thriger continued to shout as he prepare to retreat. His experience and training made it easy to catch the likes of a Sand Dragon these days, but that was only when they had their weapons.

They had never had a situation where all seven Volley Stars had failed like this, so they had never needed to prepare extra arrows.

On top of that, since their ship was the only one on the quicksand river, they didn't need to prepare for battle against other ships either.

"Hurry up and retrieve the arrows. You know how much each of those costs, right? Let's first retreat and reload before coming back to get him."

The crew members started to pull on the rope to retrieve the arrows. It was connected to a reel, but it was not easy to retrieve an arrow that had fallen into the quicksand. At least five or six of them were on each rope and started to turn the reel.

"They are retrieving the arrows."

Yulian spoke after seeing the arrows being pulled by the rope toward the boat, and Chun Myung Hoon flicked his sleeve once before starting to speak.

"If that ship disappears, we do not know when we will see it again. I should head over there. What will you do?"

"I cannot step on the quicksand, and Shopping cannot catch up to the ship's speed....."

Yulian gazed at the rope pulling the arrows before coming up

with an idea.

“Master, couldn’t I run across that rope and go on board?”

Chun Myung Hoon took a look and thought it was possible, but since it was the end if Yulian made a mistake, he shared his concerns.

“With your level of technique, it should be possible, but if you make a mistake, I cannot save you.”

“Just throw me toward it.”

“Should I just carry you there?”

“I need to make them into my subordinates, how would I have any face if you did that? I am confident that I will not make a mistake so please just throw me.”

Seeing Yulian confidently answer, Chun Myung Hoon decided he could protect him from the back and grabbed Yulian’s collar.

“Grab your balance properly.”

Chun Myung Hoon warned Yulian before throwing Yulian with a lot of force.

Since Yulian had not been slacking off in training his force techniques, he was able to flip twice in the air before softly landing on one of the ropes that was being pulled back to the ship.

With the thickness of the rope being no joke, Yulian felt like there wasn’t a need to worry about losing his balance.

Seeing Yulian land safely, Chun Myung Hoon also jumped off of Shopping’s head and started to run behind Yulian.

“Captain Thriger.”

“What do you want? You idiots couldn’t even hit that fatass properly. When we return, everybody do some more target practice.”

When one of the Bow Men pulling the ropes called out to him,

Thriger responded with anger.

“It is not that ... there is someone headed our way.”

“Who the hell would be coming toward us? The Sand Dragon? That is why we are running away as fast as we can.”

“That... it looks like a human.....”

At the Bow Man’s words, Thriger thought the Bow Men must have eaten something wrong today.

“You couldn’t hit that thing and now you are seeing things as well? I guess that is why you missed. Stop talking nonsense and hurry up and retrieve the arrows.”

“Captain, I think it is a person as well.....”

“It looks the same to me as well.”

As the other crew members on the bow started to speak, Thriger let go of the key and ran down from the second floor of the deck to shout at the crew.

“Did you all do some drugs? Why are you all talking nonsense?”

One of the crew members pointed down with his hand and Thriger shook his head as he headed toward it.

“How could a person be chasing a ship on the quicksand river.....”

Thriger’s eyes became round. He then rubbed his eyes.

He was sure that he had made a mistake, but even after rubbing his eyes, it was indeed a person.

“What? Is that really a person?”

What Thriger saw was a young man running up the rope, and an old man running on top of the quicksand.

“They are not human. What are you doing? Cut the rope. Bowmen, ready your Cross Bows and try firing at him. Oh lord, are you sending ghosts into the quicksand river now?”

The deck became busy at Thriger's words. They scratched away at the extremely thick rope with their daggers, and the Bow Men quickly started to ready their Cross Bows.

"They are trying to cut the rope."

As Chung Myung Hoon casually stated it to Yulian, Yulian smiled as he answered.

"I am already at the end. Let us go up now master."

Once he finished speaking, Yulian lifted his body and arrived on top of the ship, with Chun Myung Hoon looking like he was flying as he boarded behind Yulian.

Once Yulian and Chun Myung Hoon made it onto the deck, the crew members were scared and surrounded the two of them.

In the midst of the chaos, there were even some crew members who quickly brought over the Divine Mark of the church.

"Please drop your weapons. I did not come up here with ill intentions."

Seeing Yulian show both of his palms, the crew looked toward Thriger.

"Are you really human?"

"Do we not look like humans?"

"Sir, have you ever seen a human being that can run on top of the quicksand and jump over 20 meters onto a ship?"

Yulian started to smile as he answered.

"Didn't you see it today? Didn't I say I did not come with ill intentions and ask that you drop your weapons?"

Thriger peeked toward Chun Myung Hoon. At least the young man rode on top of the rope, but he was uncomfortable about that old man who ran on top of the quicksand.

"What are you looking at?"

At Thriger's very noticeable gaze, Chun Myung Hoon stared right back at him as he asked. Thriger looked up and down Chun Myung Hoon's body as he answered.

"Old man, I am afraid of you."

"No need to feel special. Everybody is afraid of me. I only came up here to satisfy my curiosity, so don't mind me."

Chun Myung Hoon leisurely looked around and moved to different parts of the ship, but nobody could stop him.

"No need to be surprised. My master is someone who cannot handle being curious. Shall the two of us talk?"

At Yulian's words, Thriger had the crew members lower their weapons. His wealth of experience told him to not turn these people into enemies. Although he looked like he was crazy, Thriger was actually a very smart man.

That was the reason many crew members decided to follow him as well.

"I promise I came bearing no ill intentions. I came here to benefit everyone. Also, can you stop the ship for a bit? Our Shopping is about to die chasing after the ship."

"Shopping?"

As Thriger asked about the name, Yulian pointed to the back.

"That Sand Dragon following after us is our pet. Did you not see it? We were riding on top of his head."

We thought it was just him moving around ... then our Volley Stars?"

"My wife cherishes him quite a bit, so I couldn't let him get hurt."

They definitely were not people to make into enemies.

Book 2-7.4 The Desert Runner (I)

“You are extremely talented. How did you come up with the idea to domesticate a Sand Dragon?”

Seeing the tone of Thriger’s speech suddenly change, Yulian laughed once more. If it is someone who can think and process that quickly, their conversation should go well.

“It was actually my master who tamed it. Just think about it that way. If you think about my master in human standards, it’ll just give you headaches. Hahahahaha.”

“Then I shall follow your advice. Anyways, let me introduce myself. My name is Thriger McDullah, the captain of the Desert Runner.”

As Thriger extended his hand and introduced himself first, Yulian grabbed his hand and responded back.

“The Desert Runner must be this ship’s name.”

“It is. But may I ask the name of the guest who suddenly showed up and surprised us?”

“Ah, my apologies. I am Yulian Provoke, the Glow of Pareia.”

“Desert Conqueror?”

At Yulian’s introduction, Thriger mentioned a name he was used to hearing. It was the name that was the most discussed in the desert these days.

“I do have such a name as well. Hahaha.”

“It is an honor. Hahaha.”

The two men faced each other as they laughed loudly.

“When you say Pareia, I know of it as a strong tribe in the west, and the young Glow, Desert Conqueror, Yuilan Provoke’s name is the name I heard the most these days.”

“You are giving me too much credit. It is just that those around me are all amazing people. Meeting Captain Thriger of the Desert Runner, which is said to dominate the quicksand river, like this today, makes me feel like my horizon has widened quite a bit.”

The careful reconnaissance.

At this famous young warrior's tone, Thriger was able to determine that just as he said, there were no ill intentions.

In Yulian's mind, he was admiring Thriger's ability to handle going with the flow, and felt that today's conversation would go well.

“Shall we get to the point?”

As Thriger cautiously asked, Yulian nodded his head and started to speak.

“I hope to share a long conversation with the captain-nim.....”

Thriger quickly understood Yulian's intentions and shouted to the crew members.

“Alright, everybody, attention on me.”

As the crew members all focused on Thriger, he shouted in a large voice.

“Today, Pareia's Glow, Yulian-nim, who is known as the War God of the Western Desert, has visited our ship.”

At Thriger's shout, the crew members' mumblings stopped. Even they knew that lately, Yulian's fame was ringing throughout the desert. However, seeing such a person use amazing abilities to suddenly board their ship, they were feeling a bit uncomfortable.

None of the crew on the Desert Runner were ordinary people. After all, the crew members of the Desert Runner were people who were not born in the desert, but still lived in the desert.

All of them were people who ran away to the desert from their individual countries because of different reasons. Some had family

members with them, and some didn't, but they were all loyal to this lifestyle.

However, the fact that a famous figure called the Desert Conqueror appeared in front of them made it certain that there will be large changes to their lives. It was even possible that he was pressured by one of the kingdoms to arrest them.

Seeing fear in the majority of the crew members' eyes, Thriger knew what they were thinking and shouted again.

"Everyone, do not cause any issues and focus on your jobs. As you know, the desert warriors, especially the Glow, who is the chief of a tribe, do not lie. Since Yulian-nim has stated that he has no ill intentions, do not worry about useless things. Just as you all trusted me until now, trust me again. Oh, and that Sand Dragon that is following us isapparently a pet, so make sure you do not shoot a Volley Star toward it again."

On a ship, the word of the captain is law. Although all of the crew members treated Thriger casually, they were so loyal that if he had told them to jump into the quicksand, they would do so without any hesitation.

As everybody returned to their spots, Thriger pointed to the door leading to the captain's quarters as he started to speak.

"Shall we go talk inside?"

"Wherever is best for you, captain."

"But what about that old man you called master?"

"Do not worry about him. He will only look around until he satisfies his curiosity."

At Yulian's response, Thriger ushered Yulian into the captain's quarters.

Thriger offered Yulian a seat, and once Yulian sat down, he sat down as well before starting to speak.

“How is it that someone who cannot leave their seat made their way all the way out here?”

His actions and tone from when they were on the deck completely disappeared, and Thriger started to speak courteously to Yulian. At this change, Yulian thought it was odd.

“A captain needs authority, but cannot have the crew thinking he is too difficult. Plus, since all of us have strong camaraderie with one another, it is easier to be casual with one another.”

Thriger smiled and explained, as if he knew what Yulian was thinking. Yulian spoke as if he accepted Thriger’s reasoning.

“I have a lot to learn.”

“Haha. The Desert Runner only has 100 crew members. It is possible because we are such a small group.”

Yulian smiled as he answered.

“Honestly, it has not been long since I learned about this ship can travel across the quicksand river so easily. Once I heard the story of the Desert Runner, I came here to complete a picture in my head.”

“Can you tell me about that picture? Glow Yulian-nim.”

“Sure. The Desert Runner crew members have family, and will need to rest on the ground. Where is your base?”

Yulian’s question was something that was difficult for Thriger to answer. If you think about the situation of the crew members, it made sense why.

“You are asking a difficult question. I trust you when you say you have no ill intentions, but the world tends to make things complicated for people even without ill intentions.”

Thriger courteously avoided the answer, but Yulian continued on.

“That base, I want to make that base for you in Pareia. I want you

to have somewhere that is safer than anywhere else, and a place you can be comfortable in and treat as your own country.”

Flinch.

Thriger’s expression suddenly stiffened. His head started to circulate trying to determine the true intent behind Yulian’s words.

“If we can have a base in a strong tribe like Pareia, we would be safe from external issues. But I do not believe the Glow will let us do it for free.”

“Do not overthink it. I want to create a warrior brigade that moves across the quicksand river. Something like this Desert Runner that moves extremely quickly, and has the strength and durability to laugh at the likes of Sand Dragons. In order to do that, I need help from someone with experience.”

Thriger silently looked toward Yulian without responding, and Yulian did not avoid the gaze and looked right back.

“Is that the Glow-nim’s picture?”

Once Thriger opened his mouth a bit later, Yulian nodded his head.

“I will not stop at the Pareia’s Glow. I believe that the captain knows about how the desert is pressured by the forces of the continent.”

“Developed culture. Safe food supply. Abundant resources. The explosive population. Those are the things the strong powers of the continents have in common. In comparison, the population of the desert is low because of the poor environment. I hear that Rivolde, the largest desert tribe, only has the population of a small country on the continent. But the desert warriors are strong. Even our average warriors are the level of the continent’s knights. Since our entire life is pretty much a war, we had no choice but to become strong.”

“But the number of warriors is low. The desert is one tribe but divided into many, so it is even less. That is why the powers of the continent try to meddle.”

“That is a bit surprising that the desert tribes allow such indignity.”

Yulian answered as if it wasn't much.

“It is because I am the Glow. The warriors should not hold back, but the Glow needs to hold back.”

Yulian's casual answer hit Thriger hard. Thriger felt that this young leader of a tribe had wisdom and communication skills reserved for those much greater in age. He even suspected that this was actually a much older Glow.

“I suppose so. If you are the leader of a group, you need to do so.”

“But I am also a man of the desert. A warrior. I cannot let this type of indignity continue for a long time. That was why I made up my mind. I will make it so that nobody will be able to look down on the desert. I will unify the desert so that the powers of the continent need to walk on eggshells around the desert.

Thriger felt like Yulian's body was glowing. He could feel a fire coming from Yulian's words. He knew it wasn't real, but his senses did not listen. That was why his heart was fluttering.

“I would like to see a more detailed picture.”

Thriger calmed his fluttering heart and started to speak.

“Please describe the Glow's picture for me.”

Yulian started to share the things that were on his mind.

His plans to use the quicksand river as a supply route, as well as to transport warriors.

Using the benefits of having an area that other tribes cannot reach to set the foundation for unifying the desert.

Yulian's passion started to overwhelm the captain's quarters. Thriger could not help but be a prisoner to Yulian's passion while he was explaining.

That was Yulian's charm and his greatest strength.

This was the scariest power of a leader.

"The ship's construction as well as the training of the warriors. My hope is that captain Thriger will take all of that on. As for the necessary materials to build the ships, we will get you as much as you need."

Once Yulian's impassioned speech ended, Thriger sat there blankly before answering without thinking.

"To give us a base means you plan on holding our families captive."

"It is normal to protect the families of Pareia's warriors...is the more accurate expression. The moment captain Thriger and the crew members make up their minds, you will all become Pareia's warriors. I do not know where your base is, but I am confident Pareia will be much safer and comfortable than anywhere else."

"If we refuse....."

As Thriger slowly asked, Yulian stared right at Thriger before answering.

"You will remain as an extremely fearful existence to Pareia."

Thriger knew the meaning of those words. He didn't realize that the value of their existence would be so high. They just quietly accepted the runaways from the continent as crew members, and wanted to live in peace.

But after hearing Yulian's speech, he realized that the one to take control of this quicksand river would pretty much take control of the center of the desert.

Although he wouldn't know if this young Glow didn't say

anything, the fact that Yulian shared all of his plans with Thriger meant that they would not be a comfortable existence for Pareia, and that they would become Pareia's enemy the moment they refused.

If it was this Glow and that old man outside, it was certain that they could destroy the crew easily.

"I am the captain, but it is not something I can decide on my own. Will you give me some time to discuss it with the crew and our families? Please give us one month. We will decide within a month and head toward the part of the quicksand river closest to Pareia. Whether that is to accept or decline."

At Thriger's words, Yulian did not stop staring at him. After staring for a bit, he turned his gaze away and responded.

"I will trust captain Thriger's wise decision."

Yulian and Thriger shared another handshake.

The Desert Runner was quickly moving across the quicksand river.

Book 2-7.5 The Desert Runner (II)

The promised date with Thriger.

Yulian took Pere, Grace, and all of the Red Storm warriors, as they nervously waited at the end of the quicksand river.

“Will they come?”

“We can only hope that they will. And believe.”

While Yulian and Grace were chatting with each other, Pere was looking at the quicksand river in front of him.

“The older warriors warned us over and over to never come here, so I have never been here. Is this flowing sand really that scary?”

“Apparently it has a stronger suction force than the normal quicksand. That is probably why generations after generations have warned us to be careful around this quicksand river.”

Yulian quickly reminded Pere to be careful as he was worried Pere might take a step out of curiosity, Pere took another look at the quicksand river before starting to speak.

“Hyung-nim, as you mentioned, if we control this area, our Pareia will control the center of the desert. It would bring us one step, no, many steps closer to our dream. Since you said you had a good conversation with the leader of that ship, I guess we can only hope.”

“He will come. That is what I believe. If we connected as I believe we did, I am certain that he will show up.”

“Since Hyung-nim feels that way, I’m sure he will come. There is nobody who can stop themselves from being attracted to you. Hyung-nim’s body sometimes glows.”

“You are speaking nonsense. I am not a firefly; how would I glow?”

At that time, Grace slowly embraced Yulian’s arm as she

interjected.

“Pere-nim is speaking the truth. Every so often when you are giving an impassioned speech, it feels like your body is glowing. I’m sure Pere-nim and I are not the only ones who feel this way.”

One of the leaders of the Red Storm warriors, Kranado, also started to speak.

“What the two of them are saying is the truth. When we all first gathered together, I am certain that the Glow’s body was glowing. It was that light that attracted us to you. In fact, it was that light that helped us make the difficult decision to leave our instructors and gather together like this.”

With Kranado speaking confidently as if he was certain, Yulian could not help but awkwardly smile.”

“All of you, really ... you make me sound cool.”

“That is why hyung-nim is the Glow. How can you fill the position of Glow without having the abilities to draw people to you? Remember our father. Although he was not the greatest warrior or even the best politician, he was able to make people feel calm and earn everyone’s respect with just a few words. Hyung-nim, in that aspect, you are just like father.”

“You are also father’s son. Plus, it is just that nobody can forget father and pretending that I am him to fill that void. That is why you are all claiming that my body glows. But as long as we are all headed toward the same dream, that is good enough.”

As Yulian wrapped it up, everybody smiled and once again started to wait for the promised visitors.

The sun quickly came and went and before they knew it, the first moon started to come up.

“Will they not come?”

“Rather than not coming, I want to believe that something

happened that is preventing them from coming.”

Although Yulian responded that way to Pere question, it was true that Yulian was also very nervous.

‘I honestly believed that they would come ... I had that type of certainty.’

Yulian thought that way as he looked toward the end of the quicksand river.

“Let us head back and return tomorrow. It is possible that they got the date wrong.”

Yulian hoped that Grace was right and started to nod his head. But at that exact moment, Pere suddenly shouted.

“Something is headed this way!”

“What?”

Yulian shouted as he turned his head back to the quicksand river.

Although he could not be sure because it was dark, there were only two potential options. If it is something moving across the quicksand river, it was either a monster or the Desert Runner.

What Yulian managed to see was the moonlight shining off of the white sails as the Desert Runner made its way toward the group.

With the night wind blowing strongly across the desert, the sails were flapping wildly and bouncing the moonlight around.

The Desert Runner that instantly closed in on Yulian and the group came to a stop and rope ladders started to come down on all sides.

“Captain Thriger!”

Yulian shouted loudly toward the first person coming down the rope ladder and started to run toward him.

Once Thriger landed on the ground, rather than greeting the Glow who was running toward him, he kneeled on one knee.

“Captain Thriger?”

“We have come to make our home here as the Glow mentioned, which means that we are now the Glow’s people. Since that is the case, we must show our respect.”

“I have made it so that the greatest warriors and chiefs of our tribe cannot kneel in front of me. I did not become the Glow to lead on my own. We will all work together to lead Pareia forward. I am planning on treating captain like our greatest warriors, so please do not go overboard like this to show your respect.”

“I will say this before everyone disembarks, but the decision of our Desert Runner was made after a lot of serious contemplation. Everybody has gathered here to live like people. Please do not ever throw us away.”

Yulian reached his hand out to Thriger and tightly grabbed Thriger’s hand.

“I do not know why people from outside the desert flowed all the way here, but be part of our Pareia from here on. I will help you dream until I am satisfied. Be a proud member of our tribe. I will help you achieve dreams that other people can’t even think about.”

“Thank you, Glow.”

The second month of year 254 on the continental calendar.

Yulian was able to take control of the quicksand river. Yulian was able to take control of the center of the desert.

Configuration of Red Storm

I will shortly answer some of the questions tha readers have had about Red Storm.

- Greatest Warrior?

Each oasis has a single Greatest Warrior. Although there can be quite the difference in strength between each Greatest Warrior, as the system is set that way, each oasis has one Greatest Warrior.

The strength of these warriors are not comparable to that of a young warrior who just became an adult, veteran warriors, or even the lead warriors.

This is what the continent calls the master level, but the level of the desert warriors who fight for survival every day is much stronger than that of the continent. To compare, the veteran warriors of the desert are as strong as the knights of the continent. So it is no wonder that the ratio of master level warriors are much greater in the desert.

- Black water? Burning water?

I presume you already anticipated this, but it is talking about oil. The specialties of the desert are oil and Monster's souls. Other than these two items, there really isn't much else in the desert. Although they have the pirmas that are stronger than horses, the pirmas are specialized for the desert that the continent does not really need to import them.

In war, oil is used a lot for sieges and fire arrows.

- The existence of Chun Myung Hoon?

This is the question that I received the most, but because I am dreaming of a chronicle of novels, many of the characters in my different works may cross over. Please pay close attention to the supporting cast. ^^;

- Comparison between Venersis and Yulian's strength?

I want to say it is still in favor of Venersis for now. His role is that of a War God born under the mandate of heaven, and a War God is not an existence that falls so easily.

- Prisoner?

The entire desert is one tribe and everybody knows what happens when you lose a war. Until their tribe pays the ransom for their

bodies, everybody knows of their situation.

Because of this knowledge that they are all one tribe, the majority of the prisoners end up being absorbed into the tribe that made them prisoner. They might have some longing for their old tribe, but it is not enough to bother them.

- The direction of Volume 3?

I personally believe that this novel is about war + territory development + growth. Finding the balance has been the hardest part. Once I determine which direction is the most entertaining, I will put more weight in that direction. Novels are supposed to be fun. ^^;;

- The publication cycle you are eyeing?

Other than because of natural disasters or decision of the publication company or the market, at the earliest one volume a month, and at the latest two volumes in three months is my promise to you.

That is it for now.

If you have other things you are curious about, please send me an e-mail or leave a message on the publisher's website or the series' notice board. I will diligently respond.

Now we are running toward volume 3. I hope that you continue to read along and have fun.

End of Volume 2

Book 3

Book 3-1.1 Funding the Ships (I)

The Preparing Pareia

I will take responsibility.

But the Glow must give me everything as well.

Yulian took in the crew members and families of the Desert Runner. With these foreigners who were wandering across the quicksand river now a part of the tribe, Yulian, as well as the chiefs and Greatest Warriors of Pareia, had to be busy.

Yulian and Thriger discussed many methods about how to properly utilize the quicksand river, and a lot of preparation was required to make that happen.

First, in order to better utilize the quicksand river, they needed more ships. They determined that they needed quite a bit of funds to make enough ships to transport at least 10,000 warriors, as well as talented warriors who could maneuver the ship and launch landing operations in special situations.

In order to create those warriors, they assigned 5,000 warriors under Thriger's command.

There were many opposing voices about naming a foreigner as a Greatest Warrior, but Yulian claimed that not trusting someone who has already become a part of the family shakes Pareia's foundation and cut the debate short.

It does not need to be mentioned that Thriger, as well as the Desert Runner crew members, became even more loyal to Yulian after hearing about what happened.

Pareia had many long meetings of the Greatest, but none of them felt tired.

Everybody had the same dream as Yulian and was working hard to make that glorious day come even a bit faster.

Today was no exception. There was another meeting of the Greatest.

Once it started, around four hours went by extremely quickly, so everybody had to take care of any physical needs before entering. These meetings exhausted both your body and mind.

“The most urgent issue right now is that we are lacking in funds.”

Veruna, who had been in charge of Pareia’s internal affairs since the days of the former Glow Baguna, grew pale at the discussion going on in the meeting before he started to speak.

They needed to train warriors, but the ships needed to be made as well. In order to transport at least 10,000 warriors at once, they needed a minimum of 12 ships, and the cost to make those ships was not cheap.

“Please do not forget that the tribe currently only has black water and Monster’s Souls to trade. Furthermore, the majority of those are used to trade for iron. Although we gained a lot of materials from the last war, the number of our warriors also increased by that amount.”

Veruna grew pale as he was pretty much shouting ‘construction impossible’!

“Are you telling me Pareia is that poor? What about the Glow’s fortune passed down from past generations?”

Veruna expressed his disapproval at Yulian’s question.

“Of course there is a decent amount of funds. However, the majority of it is used to pay subsidies to foreign emissaries, as well as funds to prepare for war.”

Yulian sighed at Veruna’s answer and started to speak.

“It is very disappointing that we cannot do something we need to do because of a lack of funds.”

Pere asked a question.

“Veruna, is there really nowhere for us to get some gold? What if we collect some more black water or Monster’s Souls?”

“I’m sure our situation would get better. However, with each ship requiring 48 kilograms (one kg of gold is approximately 200,000,000 won [USD \$183,831.98]) of gold, we would not be able to build twelve of them even if we died and came back to life. The most expensive Monster’s Soul of a Sand Dragon is not even worth 500g of gold. Even if the Glow was to go out and hunt only Sand Dragons, how long will it take to collect that much gold?”

“Why are these stupid ships so expensive?”

As Trebol bluntly asked, Thriger responded.

“It is not a normal ship. In order to float above the low density quicksand, you must inscribe special magic runes to the bottom of the ship. There are not many magicians in general, but there are even less magicians who can use levitation magic. Because of that, it is extremely expensive to hire them.”

“Even so, isn’t this too expensive?”

At Trebol’s words, Thriger looked at him before answering.

“Please hear me out to the end. The funds to pay the magicians would not require that much gold, however, it is in the method to inscribe the runes where we need to pour out the majority of our money. The method to do that

“Wouldn’t it still cost less even if we inscribed them all with gold?”

With Trebol continuing to interrupt him, Thriger looked over to him before continuing.

“Please speak only once I am finished. The reason magicians pay a lot of money for Monster’s Souls is to use the Monster’s Souls to make a special magic reagent (reactant). The reagent changes based

on the type of Monster's Soul, and because the runes underneath the ship have to be inscribed by those reagents, it is that expensive. It is made from the highest quality reagents."

"Sigh~ now that I think about it, Captain Thriger was very rich."

"Everybody took out every penny to make our ship."

As Yulian let out a deep sigh and started to speak, Thriger bitterly responded.

After a bit of silence, Yarumaha started to speak.

"Veruna-nim, then with our current abilities, how many ships can we make right now? Shouldn't we at least know that before figuring out a method to deal with the rest?"

Veruna thought for a second before answering Yarumaha's question.

"If we do not overstretch our funds too much, four ships. If we squeeze out everything, seven ships. But if we make seven ships, we will not be able to use any gold where Pareia needs it. In addition, the emissaries of each tribe will need to stop all activities."

The chiefs all let out a sigh and looked toward each other at Veruna's answer.

The desert tribes were a community, and all the wealth was shared. Other than the pirmas, everything was communal property, and since the Glow maintained all funds, there really wasn't any personal wealth to use in times like this.

While everyone was looking around, Yulian started to speak.

"Then let us do this. Let the warriors kill monsters to train. Of course we will need to keep enough warriors to protect the oases, but the remaining warriors will all hunt monsters. Since the Monster's Field is overflowing with monsters, it should be better than just training."

“In return, many warriors may be injured. They may also die.”

Yulian nodded his head at Egane’s words and responded.

“I know that the danger will escalate. However, we do not have time. Do not think that our bitter enemies, the Shuarei, will just sit still like this forever. While they are bowing their heads, we need to take over the Wikaly tribe who keeps eyeing our northern territories.

“It will take quite a bit of time to defeat the Wikaly. If they defend with all of their might, it will take a couple of years to take all of their oases. What happens if the Shuarei return to form during those years? Honestly speaking, haven’t we been leaving the Wikaly alone because of our contention with the Shuarei?”

The politics of the desert was complicated. Each tribe had hostile relationships, as well as friendly relationships. The reason the Shuarei and Pareia could not devote everything to fight each other was because the Shuarei had the Rivolde tribe and Pareia had the Wikaly tribe eyeing their territories.

At one of the chief’s question, Yulian looked to the left and right before answering vigorously.

“That is why we need to hurry. If we can properly use the quicksand river, we will be able to take all six of the Wikaly oases. This is the best time. If we can conquer the Wikaly tribe, our war capabilities will be multiple times that of the Shuarei. Then we can finally break this annoying balance of power and take a step toward our dream.”

Yulian stopped speaking for a moment before looking around again. Although he had never been taught how to do this, he knew exactly when to stop talking and where to look.

Seeing firm resolutions in everyone’s eyes, Yulian started to speak again.

“First, let us make as many as possible. We can always replenish

the funds later. I ask that all of the chiefs send out your warriors. Other than saving enough for defense, every warrior will be hunting monsters.”

“Glow.”

Thriger started to speak at that point.

“There is a merchant I know. He purchases Monster’s Souls and provides food and supplies for us.”

“Yes, please speak.”

Yulian nodded as he answered and Thriger continued to speak.

“He was asking if he could use the Desert Path. If he can transport his goods through the desert, he can drastically lower his due dates and increase his distribution margins.”

Yulian and some of the chiefs had a look in their eyes. They realized what Thriger was trying to say.

“Every so often, we have used the quicksand river to give him a ride between the North and the South. Our ship is much faster than a supply cart after all. However, since there is a limit, we were not able to transport that many items for him, but he was extremely satisfied with even that much.”

“Hold on. Captain Thriger, are you implying that we should open a desert path for the merchant?”

“Yes. That is correct. Glow, that merchant is thorough with his promises. When we were building the Desert Runner, the materials, magicians and contracts were all completed through this merchant.”

Yulian started to smile.

“Why did you only bring this up now? That merchant, when would I be able to meet with him?”

Quickly do the things that come to mind, and definitely do the things you need to do.’

The smile on Yulian's face did not disappear.

Book 3-1.2 Funding the Ships (II)

Edwin Papent.

The third son of Viscount Papent. Having two older brothers above him, this young man threw away any thoughts of succeeding the Viscount title a long time ago.

He discovered his skills in business at an early age and joined the Serubil Merchant Guild, one of the sturdiest merchant guilds in the Inama Kingdom.

It didn't look good for the son of a noble to work in a merchant guild, and Viscount Papent even tried to stop his youngest son's actions, but Edwin was not used to the life of a noble. Rather than becoming a leech to the family in the future, he firmly decided that he would find his own path and explained this to his brothers and the Viscount with sincerity. Sadly, all it did was make them shake their heads.

The owner of the Serubil Merchant Guild, Von Serubil, cherished this odd son of a noble very much.

Edwin had a natural talent for business that others did not have. Any businesses he invested in absolutely succeeded, and he kept any promises he made. Thanks to that, the credibility of the Serubil Merchant Guild went up as well.

Since he really was what you would call a golden egg laying young merchant, there was no reason not to like him. That was why Serubil had given him quite a bit of authority in the guild.

However, even Serubil had one issue with Edwin. It was the fact that Edwin had no restrictions when it came to forming friendships.

This habit, in some aspects, was really good, but it was to the point that Edwin was making friends with criminals wanted by the kingdom. That made things complicated.

If something happens and he gets wrongfully accused -- although it is true -- of hiding fugitives, not only the Serubil Merchant Guild, but even the reputation and connections Edwin has made would all crumble in an instant.

Serubil said something to Edwin, as it looked like he was heading out to meet with that criminal brigade again.

“Isn’t it time to stop?”

Edwin perked his ear and responded back.

“Stop what?”

“That food supply.”

At Serubil’s answer, Edwin looked toward him with an extremely amazed expression.

“Why are you looking at me like that?”

“Do you not want to make money?”

“Who said I don’t want to make money?”

“Then why is it that you are complaining when I am trading rare and extremely expensive high quality Monster’s Souls for cheap as dirt food and clothing? Do you know how much money I make every time I make a trip down?”

You could clearly tell they were merchants as they were talking business even while raising their tones.

“But isn’t it dangerous? If the nobles that put bounties on their heads find out, they will not sit still.”

“Hmm, should I tell everyone that their punk of a son raped the precious younger sister of another family and made the older brother beat him to death? Should I tell the world the truth about why the bounty was placed? Or how about the scrooge who has a storage full of money that kidnapped someone’s daughter because they were short a few coins when paying their taxes forcing the girl’s family to burn his house to the ground and run away with his

daughter? Should I let the world know about that as well?”

At Edwin’s words, Serubil tapped his head once before answering.

“We can’t do anything about those kinds of things.”

“My father and brothers are not like that.”

“That is why your family is respected. It was also the reason I took you in like this. Plus, it is not just our kingdom that is like this. Other than the Rojini Kingdom in the East, the majority of kingdoms live like this. Sigh, the nobles are the problem.”

“What is the reason we cannot become like the Rojini Kingdom? Look at them. Haven’t they become stronger once the royal family put out a law mandating that the tax rate cannot be greater than twenty percent? The nobles there can apparently rake in money while just sitting on their asses. Since the civilians pay low amounts in taxes, it has led to them working as hard as they can to make more money. But our Inama Kingdom digs out over fifty percent of the people’s money in taxes, so how can they ever take a break? If we continue like this, there will be big trouble.”

Serubil was extremely shocked as he held onto Edwin’s shoulders and started to speak.

“Shh. Be quiet. What will you do if someone hears you?”

“Leader, you should work hard to make a lot of money. We can run away from this dirty kingdom together. As soon as I hit my target goal, I will convince my entire family to leave to a different kingdom.”

“Your father, Viscount Papent. Like hell he would go with you.”

“Father is not like how he used to be. His upright character is making a lot of the other nobles hate him. Those damn bastards get scared by a single Viscount.”

Serubil shook his head at Edwin’s temper and started to speak.

“Take good care. Always be careful. If what you are doing is discovered, there will be big issues for your family as well.”

“Do not worry so much. This isn’t the first time I’ve done this. Just make sure you sweet talk the magicians so that we can get a good price for the Monster’s Souls.”

“I understand.”

Once Serubil left, Edwin took another look at the supply items he had and verified whether he had missed anything. Once he verified everything was good, he ordered the cart to head out.

The passage to the Red Desert was extremely dangerous. Since there were not many cities on the northern end of the desert, there were not many roads and the terrain was dangerous as well. Just pulling the supply cart through was troublesome.

But since it was a trip Edwin made two times a year, Edwin’s crew had to push forward without falling off pace. They could not miss the scheduled meeting time.

At the border of the Inama Kingdom, or in other words, at the entrance to the Red Desert, there was always a shabby looking border patrol officer.

“Have you been well, Officer Samaru?”

Edwin waved his hand toward Nate Samaru, the leader of the 13th Southern Border Defense Force, as he greeted the man.

“It is you. I expected you would show up around now. It’s nice to see you again.”

‘I’m sure you are not happy to see me but actually happy to see the bribes I give you.’

That was what Edwin was thinking inside, but he had a bright smile on the outside, one of the special abilities of all good merchants.

“I am also extremely happy to see Officer Samaru always

welcoming me like this. Has everything been going okay lately?”

“You know how it is. Although we are called border patrol, there are no barbarians who would dare to invade from the desert, and there are no kingdoms that would cross the dangerous desert to invade us through here. So I have nothing to do. And sadly my pay is terrible since my job is like this as well. Huhuhu.”

‘He’s being real forward about asking me for it.’

Edwin frowned internally while taking out a leather pouch from his chest.

“I’m sorry that I cannot do much for you even though you welcome me like this every time. Please use this to treat your subordinates to a round of beer.”

“It is hard to always be in your debt like this. It is not like we are doing much.”

Nate Samaru quickly grabbed the pouch from Edwin’s hand as he said that. Edwin was smiling bitterly inside.

‘Well, at least it is easy to deal with you since you don’t beat around the bush. I guess you are better than the other border patrols.’

He was someone that Edwin will continue to deal with, and since Samaru was good about accepting difficult requests from time to time, Edwin just hoped that Samaru would never leave this post.

“As I said, it is just enough to treat them to a round of beer.”

At Edwin’s words, Samaru took a peek into the pouch and had a satisfied smile on his face.

“Thank you as usual. Is it the same items again?”

“Yes. It is always the same. It is not like I can cross the desert with expensive goods. Hahahaha.”

“Then I will trust you and not inspect it.”

“You have nothing to worry about, Officer Samaru.”

Samaru waved his hand toward the patrol members blocking the path of the merchants.

“Hey, let them through. Why are you blocking their path like that when we all know each other?”

The patrol members had also seen everything and smiled as they cleared the path. Edwin said goodbye to Samaru one more time as he started to move.

“Officer Samaru, I shall see you when I return.”

“Alright. Be careful out there.”

Edwin’s crew passed the border area like that and entered the desert.

The crew had to be more alert after entering the desert. This place was different than the continent. This was a place where many monsters and wild animals resided, so they were forced to always be on alert.

“Someone is coming this way.”

The lead mercenary protecting the cart shouted loudly and Edwin had an extremely nervous expression on his face.

They had never run into anybody on their trip out to the desert before.

“Is it a person of the desert? They said that not many desert folks come this way because of the many quicksands in the area.”

Edwin mumbled to himself as he asked.

“How many people does it seem to be?”

“Around 50 people.”

“The desert tribes do not accept bands of thieves. I’m sure they are not thieves and are one of the desert tribes, so please tell your people not to carelessly take out their weapons.”

At Edwin's words, the lead mercenary moved his hand from the hilt of his sword and answered.

"Yes, I will caution them."

Edwin stopped his crew and waited for the people to approach them.

Since they were not far from their destination, if needed, they could always ditch their stuff and ride the horses to run away to that location.

"Edwin."

"Captain Thriger?"

He heard a familiar voice from the front of the approaching group, and Edwin had a happy expression as he ran forward.

"Edwin. You are exactly on time as always. I didn't know how it would be, so I had been waiting since yesterday."

As Thriger welcomed Edwin and he held his hand, Edwin thought it was odd and decided to ask.

"But what is going on? This is the first time you came to greet me like this."

"Things ended up that way. There is someone I'd like to introduce you to as well."

"Introduce?"

Thriger nodded his head as he continued.

"I can guarantee that it will be great news for you. Although the decision to invest will be up to you."

Feeling that the smell of money was coming out of Thriger's words, Edwin started to smile.

"If Captain-nim talks so highly of a person, I'm sure they must be amazing. After all, you were once an Admiral that dominated the oceans."

Thriger loudly laughed at Edwin's words and started to respond.

"Hahaha. It is all in the past. We do not need to go to our base. We docked the ship not too far away, so let us head there."

"Did you move your base?"

"Rather than moving, we have found a permanent location. I have found someone to serve."

"Someone that captain-nim is serving?"

Edwin was extremely shocked as he asked. What kind of individual was Thriger? Thriger used to be an Admiral for the Inama Kingdom, one of the strong kingdoms of the Eastern Continent.

Thriger was so upright that many nobles plotted against him and forced him to run away to the desert, and had even once told Edwin while he was drunk that he would never serve anyone ever again. For someone like that to make the decision to serve someone, it was absolutely certain that it was an amazing person.

"It ended up that way. I can tell you more as we head back. The Glow has been waiting a long time to meet you."

"When you say Glow..."

Edwin was even more shocked as he had a decent knowledge of the titles in the desert.

"Let us go. I will tell you as we head over."

Edwin motioned the crew to move as he started to wonder about the person he was about to meet.

Book 3-1.3 Funding the Ships (III)

“It is a pleasure to meet you. Welcome to Pareia. I have heard a lot about you from Captain Thriger.”

“It is my honor to meet you, War God of the Western Desert, Desert Conqueror, and Pareia’s Glow, Yulian Provoke-nim.”

Edwin said Yulian’s long name as Thriger taught him and bowed in front of Yulian. Yulian smiled as he offered Edwin a seat. Once they sat down, Yulian started to speak.

“I heard that you are an amazing merchant.”

“I am still just a baby chick so I am in charge of a smaller group within our guild.”

“I know that merchants will not come to the desert unless they are bold. I also trust Captain Thriger’s eyes and words.”

At Yulian’s words, Edwin put on a modest smile as he started to speak.

“Captain Thriger explained a bit of the situation to me on our way over. He told me that the Glow could open up a path to cross the desert.”

“As long as our guest can invest in our Pareia. I do not know much about business, however, I heard that a colossus of the business world is guaranteed to invest in things that will benefit them.”

“I am not at that type of level yet

Seeing Yulian being so frank, Edwin lightly took one step back.

A businessman never rushes. That is the only way to get even a slightly better gain.

“Captain Thriger.”

At that moment, Grace, who had been watching Edwin from next

to Yulian, called out to Captain Thriger who was sitting next to Edwin.

“Yes, Grace-nim.”

“This is different than what you mentioned. Didn’t Captain Thriger-nim say with certainty that the person coming had a significant amount of influence?”

“Yes I did.”

Once Thriger answered, Grace turned her gaze to Edwin and continued to speak.

“But since he is saying he does not have that much influence, wasn’t this a failure? I’m sure Captain-nim also knows that we do not have much time.”

“Of course I am aware.”

“Then shouldn’t you have brought someone who had the power to make the final decision with certainty? We have met with him because of your recommendation, but I also know of many merchants who can make this deal with us.....”

Grace’s words were saying do not waste our time and bring us a different merchant, and that even if it was not Edwin, it would not be difficult to find another colossus. In other words, it was a warning to Edwin to not be shrewd

“Grace!”

As Yulian called out to Grace as if to scold her, Grace motioned to Yulian that she will be cautious as she answered.

“I am sorry I stepped out of line, Glow. But it does not necessarily have to be a merchant from the Western Continent. There is a colossus I know of in the Eastern Continent, so I was just bringing it up for you to meet with them first.”

Of course there was no chance that Grace would know of a colossus in the business world, but the gaze she gave again to

Edwin was definitely giving off an ‘it doesn’t have to be you’ type of vibe.

“Edwin, why are you being like this? Didn’t you tell me that you wanted a trade route that goes through the desert? You told me you would be willing to do anything, willing to pay anything to make that happen!”

As Thriger spoke toward Edwin with disappointment, Edwin also looked toward Grace as he started to think to himself.

‘Who is this? She is so beautiful. If she was a king’s woman in the continent, she would not have the face to speak up in a situation like this.’

Even if it was a wife of a noble, they would say this type of conversation made them confused and not interfere.

But there was something Edwin did not know. The women of the desert prefer strength more than saving face.

As Grace looked back at Edwin and lightly nodded her head and smiled, Edwin started to think again.

‘I guess it is natural for women to be better at bargaining. I cannot take her lightly, but there are no sales without bargaining! I need to slowly roll it my way.’

He was a pro. He could not lose to a woman, especially to a woman who was not even a merchant.

“Of course I am able to make suggestions to our guild, however, I was explaining that the deal needs to be fine-tuned before I am able to suggest it. I hope the Glow and the madame could see it in your hearst to understand merchants are usually this snobbish.”

“Hahaha. Didn’t I say that I trust Captain Thriger’s eyes? Also, seeing as how you are an esteemed guest of our Pareia, please do not lower yourself too much.”

Yulian, who could not tell the current atmosphere between

Edwin and Grace started to show a bright smile and worried that Edwin might have been offended.

‘He is a quite innocent King. I guess that is why an individual like Thriger would choose to follow him.’

Edwin bowed his head to Yulian as he started to speak.

“I am a low merchant while the Glow is the leader of the great Pareia. It is normal for me to be this way. In fact, treating me so highly actually is more of a burden. Please speak casually with me.”

Edwin spoke so naturally, as if there was butter on his tongue, and looked toward Thriger before continuing to speak.

“If Captain Thriger had told me earlier, I could have made sure to get permission to make the final decision. I am a bit disappointed about that aspect. However, if we can tune the deal a decent amount, you will not have to worry about that aspect.”

“Then we will not worry. We are the ones to welcome a guest today, after all.”

Edwin felt Yulian’s innocence and friendliness as he answered.

“Then I will start the discussion. What exactly is it you are looking for from our guild?”

Yulian responded in a serious tone.

“Speaking broadly, we need money, gold. If we want to go further into detail, we need the same things you got to build the Desert Runner.”

“I heard you were looking to construct ships. Did you say you needed twelve of them?”

“Yes. But based on what I have heard, it seems the cost is quite large.”

Edwin had already calculated everything when he heard about it on the ship, but he pretended like he was thinking things through

for the first time as he moved his finger around on the table.

“As the Glow mentioned, it will cost quite a bit. In addition, to bring over that much material, we will need to pay a higher cost, as well provide as a bigger bribe for when we pass through the border. It really is an enormous amount.”

“And that is why we have brought our guest here today.”

“Hmm~!”

While Edwin was pretending to contemplate, Grace suddenly started to cough.

“Coughcough.”

At Grace’s warning cough, Edwin started to look toward Grace.

“Madame, are you ill?”

“I’m sorry to be like this in the middle of our conversation.”

“Grace, if you are feeling sick, go rest in the paoe.”

As Yulian worriedly answered, Grace instantly erased her smile and started to speak.

“I feel like there is some foreign matter suddenly in my throat... Glow, can you take me over to our paoe for a bit?”

Yulian was confused as to why Grace, who was just fine, pointed at him to take her there, but since he cherished her very much, he smiled toward Edwin and supported Grace out.

“Foreign matter... is it another warning? But madame, I am a merchant. Shouldn’t you be willing to let me have some level of gain?’

Edwin, who understood the meaning behind Grace’s cough smiled while looking at her as she walked out leaning on Yulian, and Grace turned her head to look at Edwin and lightly smiled again. She did not seem to be sick at all

As Grace was heading to their paoe supported by Yulian, she

noticed Chun Myung Hoon and felt lucky. It was the perfect opportunity to get rid of Yulian for a bit.

“Oh, what is going on?”

Chun Myung Hoon, who saw Grace being supported over by Yulian, asked in surprise.

“Grace suddenly mentioned she was not feeling well, so I was taking her to the pae. Master, are you on your way somewhere?”

“Coughcough. Senior, I remember you mentioning you had something to say to my husband earlier. Did you come here to talk to him about it?”

“Wha? Just what.....”

The moment Chun Myung Hoon was about to say something, Grace used her eyes and lips to point to Yulian, and unlike Yulian, Chun Myung Hoon was not clueless.

“Ah, I did. Yulian, come with me for a bit.”

“Where? We have a guest right now.”

“I just need a bit of your time.”

Yulian did not know the reason, but since he could not go against his master’s wishes, he nodded his head and started to speak to Grace.

“Can you go on your own?”

“Ah, I’m feeling better. The foreign matter in my throat must have gone down. I will let the guest know. Senior, you only need about five minutes, right?”

Chun Myung Hoon was laughing inside.

‘She wants me to stall him for about five minutes.’

Chun Myung Hoon thought that way as he nodded his head. Grace winked at him before speaking to Yulian.

“I will tell the guest to wait around five minutes, so hurry up and

go.”

“Alright, please apologize on my behalf.”

“I will. Go and quickly come back.”

Once Chun Myung Hoon and Yulian disappeared, Grace quickly ran back to the paoe Edwin was in.

“The Glow?”

Seeing Grace return alone, Thriger asked in surprise.

“He will be back in five minutes. You said your name was Edwin, correct?”

“Yes, madame.”

Grace started to speak with a stern voice and a fiery glare.

Book 3-1.4 Funding the Ships (IV)

“Unlike my husband who is the Glow of Pareia, I am not as innocent or as open-minded. I will not stand for him bowing down to someone. If you keep rolling that smart head of yours, even I don’t know how I will respond. Since it is natural for a merchant to look for a profit, I will not say much. Moderately, as that word indicates, take your profits moderately.”

Grace stopped for a moment before slowly continuing to speak.

“My husband is the Glow, not a merchant. I’m sure you understand what I mean?”

Edwin could not speak due to nervousness, and Thriger finally understood why the members of the tribe called this extremely beautiful woman the Iron Woman.

“Madame, that

“I have clearly warned you. I am not open-minded, so I do not have much patience.”

‘Amazing. Just amazing. Definitely deserving to be the woman of a king. I will definitely get a wife like that in the future as well.’

Edwin could not remove his eyes from Grace and just blankly stared as he thought to himself.

“I have not heard an answer.”

At Grace’s words, Edwin instantly nodded his head as he started to reply.

“I will keep your words in mind. Moderately. I will not forget that.”

Grace finally eased her expression and leisurely protected the seat.

A moment later, Yulian came back and asked for Edwin’s understanding.

“I’m sorry. Something urgent suddenly came up.”

“Ah! That is okay. The madame was telling me a very beneficial story.”

Yulian looked toward Grace at Edwin’s response, but Grace just smiled back at him.

“I did some calculations while the Glow was away, and I believe I will be able to handle this request.”

Seeing Edwin bring it up first, Yulian responded with relief.

“That is a relief. I was quite worried because of the extremely high amount.”

“We would need around 12,000,000 Arin (currency of the Inama Kingdom) per ship, so around 50 kilograms of gold. I believe Captain Thriger told you 48 kilograms, and if it was just one ship, I would be able to get it for a similar cost. However, the Glow is requesting a large amount in a short amount of time, so we would need to pay extra, and hire some more magicians. We will also need to give some extra to each city’s security and border patrol. If we want to quickly proceed that is.”

“It will cost that much?”

“Yes. These types of deals are always best to take slowly in order to not face a loss, but you are bound to pay more when you are in a hurry. Please wait exactly 3 months to deliver the material necessary for all twelve ships. If you give me half a year, I can lower the cost of each ship to 11,000,000 Arin. The decision is up to the Glow.”

Yulian was surprised at the high cost, but right now, and the next few years, were extremely important. He needed to quickly build the ships and train the warriors.

“Let’s go with the quickest method.”

Edwin tapped the right side of his head out of habit and

answered.

“I understand. This Edwin has clearly memorized the Glow’s request. Then, I believe it is now time to see what the Glow can offer me in return.”

“Please tell me what you are looking for. If it is something our Pareia is capable of doing, I will do it all.”

“The thing that perked my ear the most was this. Can you promise me a trade route through the desert and protection while we are going across?”

“If it is from the Inama Kingdom where your guild is located to the Eastern Continent’s Silence Empire, our warriors of Pareia will escort your carts. Honestly speaking, if you follow the quicksand river and make it to Pareia, the path to Silence is all Pareia’s territory, so you wouldn’t even need an escort.”

“I am still in shock as you are so casually talking about a desert trade route that many merchants have failed to acquire for a long time.”

Thriger responded to Edwin’s statement.

“The Glow of Pareia does not lie. If the Glow says it is safe, it will be safe.”

‘This man would have been serving the Glow at max six months. How is it that he trusts his Glow so much already?’

Edwin thought it was surprising, then had another thought.

‘If this route is successful, our Serubil Merchant Guild will be in the lead. If we succeed, there will be many other guilds trying to do the same.’

Edwin’s brain was spinning quickly. He was the man who had the nickname of the Young Ghost of the Business World. The calculations regarding profit and loss were already completed the instant Yulian started to speak.

“Glow I will first bring all of the materials over as fast as possible per the Glow’s order. We will also assist in getting other materials from the continent. However, for ten years, please give us a monopoly over this trade route.”

“Of course. If you will trust us without any guarantee like this, we must be willing to pay an equivalent price.

At Yulian’s words, Edwin decided to get one more confirmation.

“I will be honest with you. Once this route is established, the gains for the guild will be overwhelming. No other guilds will be able to transport as quickly as we can, and since we will be able to quickly move large amounts of material that needs to be moved quickly, our guild will monopolize a portion of the market. I will give you a portion of that profit. You mentioned that the glow does not lie, correct?”

“I do not believe I have said a lie to date. I plan on doing the same from here on.”

Edwin pushed for more at Yulian’s answer.

“Please promise me with your lips. For ten years, no matter what guild it may be, other than our Serubil Merchant Guild, they will not be able to transport through the desert. If there is, the Glow will need to prevent them from utilizing the route.”

“I will promise you under the name of our Guardian. Is that promise enough?”

“There is nothing else other than that promise that you can give me right now.”

As Edwin lightly smiled and replied, Yulian smiled back and answered.

“Yes. Although there is nothing we can give or show you right now, you will see it soon. You will see that your decision today was the correct one and that you will never regret it.”

Clap!

Edwin loudly clapped his hand and answered.

“If I think that I am reeling in a very large fish today, will it be offensive to the Glow?”

“Since I feel the same way, not at all.”

The two looked at each other before laughing again.

Seeing as how his most urgent issue was settled so easily, and because Edwin had offered to provide other materials as well, Yulian felt a bit better. Edwin was happy in his own accord for being able to run an extremely profitable operation for the next ten years.

The reason Edwin did not hide his internal thoughts and revealed it was partially because of Yulian’s charm that Yulian himself did not know about, but also because of the way the people surrounding Yulian treated Yulian.

The person who has more items and has more time always has the upperhand in deals like this, but Edwin’s philosophy was delivering his end of the bargain quickly and bringing out the most profit.

“Since the big issue has been settled, then may I speak about the smaller details?”

“Of course.”

Once Yulian answered, Edwin gave an impassioned speech about what they will provide for Pareia, as well as what they will receive from Pareia down to the smallest detail.

From this point, Veruna, rather than Yulian, went up against Edwin. Veruna had veins popping out on his neck as they went back and forth.

Since the big issue was a compromise, a battle to gain more profit from the smaller items had started.

Honestly speaking, Edwin and Veruna enjoyed this very much, but the others just blankly stared at the two of them discussing and were extremely bored.

The moon was already starting to rise in the desert.

As Edwin promised, 3 months later, a large amount of materials were delivered to Pareia. There were so many materials that the Desert Runner had to complete multiple trips from the north end of the quicksand river to Pareia.

Five months after that, Edwin arrived at Pareia with a large team that totaled two hundred merchants and one hundred and fifty supply carts.

Fifth month of year 255 in the continental calendar.

Pareia had a total of thirteen ships to maneuver across the quicksand river, and managed to train five thousand warriors as the quicksand brigade.

And Edwin, the merchant of the Inama Kingdom, went into the history books as the first merchant to successfully take a large scale team across the desert, and started to move up in the ranks of merchants.

End of Chapter 1.

Book 3-2.1 Pareia's Move

The Moving Pareia

Pareia made the Wikaly instantly become surrounded by shock.

Population 550,000. Out of that, the warriors numbered 80,000.

Fourteen oases.

Twenty Greatest Warrior level warriors. Of them, the Glow himself was unrivaled.

The second strongest in the Western Desert. The third strongest in the entire desert.

That was the objective view of the current Pareia.

But Pareia believed that they were the strongest. There were no other tribes that had a Glow that nobody could stop, as well as twenty Greatest Warrior level warriors.

Red Storm.

Eleven of the Red Storm warriors were at the Greatest Warrior level. And that number should only start to grow from here.

Yulian, although he may not be a match for Venersis, his brigade of warriors, the Red Storm, could easily overwhelm the Desert Sword.

From a while ago, Red Storm could not train with Yulian. It was because Chun Myung Hoon frowned after seeing the Red Storm's training schedule.

"I will have no face if punks who learned my martial arts are so weak. I will guide you to an acceptable level."

Yulian was extremely excited at Chun Myung Hoon's words and Red Storm was full of anticipation.

The sound of the Red Storm warriors getting beat up as well as their screams rang through the desert on their first day of training,

but Yulian just smiled, as he had already expected that to happen.

The Red Storm warriors had no choice but to finally figure out how their Glow ended up becoming so strong. Did he really learn martial arts through this extreme amount of attacks?

“You are all weak compared to me.”

At the single sentence that Yulian threw their way, Red Storm could neither laugh nor cry. It was just one thing, the realistic feeling that they were becoming stronger, that made all of them not say a single complaint as they persevered through Chun Myung Hoon’s training.

In Chun Myung Hoon’s point of view, a fun and fresh toy fell in his lap while he was bored and had nothing to do.

These days, since Yulian was starting to become more like a Glow and automatically resonated a sense of respect from the people, it was difficult to lay a hand on him.

The fact that he was the leader of a tribe came first before being his disciple.

But now he had fifty six pseudo-disciples to play around with. Chun Myung Hoon was excited.

Although he could not teach them his full martial arts, he was able to show them the proper way to train, as well as give them individual attention to improve.

If they continue like this, the Red Storm warriors will be able to reach Yulian’s current level in about ten years. Chun Myung Hoon didn’t even think about that as he was so excited.

In his mind, since the desert would only have a total population of 5,000,000 even once it is unified, it should not affect the balance of power in the continent too much.

Once Yulian had the entire quicksand river in his hands, he started to discuss how to attack the Wikaly.

“I am not interested in war strategy, but I do know of a famous saying. If I know myself well, I will not lose. If I know myself and my enemy, it will be an overwhelming victory.”

Chun Myung Hoon slipped in a phrase to Yulian who was worrying about how to attack the Wikaly, and Yulian followed his master's words.

The number and quality of the Wikaly warriors, the Glow and Greatest Warriors, as well as the chiefs' relationships with each other, and the strength of each individual oasis. He did not hold back any funds to get information about the Wikaly.

Pareia was starting to finish all of their preparations to attack the Wikaly tribe.

They left 30,000 warriors in the Southern Oasis just in case the Shuarei might attack, and reduced the number of warriors at each of the central oases and gathered them all in the Northern Oasis.

A total of 20,000 warriors.

There was a total of 10,000 warriors prepared on the quicksand river side as well, so the total forces heading to the Wikaly this time was 30,000 warriors.

Once they were gathered, all war preparations were completed.

Since Edwin sent a lot of supplies at the right time, there should really be no problems.

They thought the Wikaly will not see it coming, even in their dreams. For 30,000 warriors to attack them, that is.

That was because it was impossible to deliver supplies for 30,000 warriors without enough materials and warriors dedicated to transporting the items.

This actually might have been the important reason that the desert tribes could never be unified.

They were never able to focus their full attention on one enemy

with a large enough force.

But because Pareia had already taken control of the quicksand river, they would have no problems at all with a supply line.

It was because they had changed to a new system where the supply team can immediately turn into the attack team.

Twelfth month of year 255 in the continental calendar.

Yulian finally declared war against the Wikaly and led 30,000 warriors to start the attack.

While Pareia was gathering intel on Wikaly, the Wikaly was doing the same to Pareia. That was why they were able to find out about the war about a month in advance, and use that time to decently prepare.

Once Pareia finally declared war, the Wikaly was in a state of emergency. They had expected Pareia to gather the troops to attack the Shuarei.

The two tribes had been bitter enemies for over 100 years. So the fact that they were the opponents was extremely shocking.

The Wikaly hurriedly moved 30,000 of their total 45,000 warriors to the Southern Oasis to prepare to fend Pareia off.

Thinking about Pareia's abilities, no matter how many warriors they could gather, they were confident it would not be over 25,000, and they felt like they would be able to fend them off with more warriors.

The Glow of the Wikaly tribe, Gomai Mao, also sent a messenger to the Shuarei, asking them to create some tension in the south.

The most southern oasis of the Wikaly, the Oasis of the Rising Moon, was extremely tense right now.

“How did it go? Abham-nim [1].”

Runa Brink urgently asked Abham, and once Abham shook his head, he started to shout.

“Just what is he thinking? That Glow of ours?”

“Shh. Your voice is too loud. We are not the only ones here.”

Abham pressed his lips with a finger and warned Runa. Runa started to speak as if he was frustrated.

“If we had attacked them last time, it would have been difficult for Pareia to have an overwhelming victory over the Shuarei like they did, and our Wikaly would have a better strategy and the upperhand right now. No, they probably wouldn’t even dream about attacking us right now.”

“Why are you talking about the past? Plus, we already expected Pareia to attack us and have made a lot of preparations. Now it is time to show the things we prepared.”

“There are a lot of problems there as well. Abham-nim, since you have been preparing for so long, you should have been named the Commander. But why are they not leaving the defense of this oasis to the resident Greatest Warrior and to another person? Especially to Ebinong, who only uses his head for his own benefit?”

Abham bitterly smiled as he answered.

“Ebinong is greedy, however, he is still the chief of an oasis as well as someone who managed to reach the level of Greatest Warrior. He has the leadership abilities as well as experience, and is good at finding talent, so he should be able to defend well.”

“That is a story that only works in our Wikaly. The enemy is the Pareia’s Glow, who is called a War God. It is not someone he can handle.”

“Still, it is not like I can do any better.....”

“Abham-nim, why are you saying such weak words again? You promised you would not say such things anymore.”

As Runa Brink shouted, Abham moved his hand from top to bottom as he answered.

“That is enough. It is my bad. Although we have prepared for a long time, I guess I curled up in fear without realizing it.”

“Please steady your mind. Without my help, Ebinong will never be able to defeat Pareia. Once Ebinong is defeated, Abham-nim needs to push forward. From that point, we can show them all the things we prepared one by one.”

Abham had a shocked expression as he answered.

“Runa, are you not planning on assisting Ebinong?”

“You are the one I serve, not Ebinong.”

“This is an issue that can affect the entire tribe. We cannot let out personal feelings affect our decisions. Tell Ebinong about everything we have prepared. It is best to use them to defeat Pareia.”

“Abham-nim, do you not have any desires? All of our preparations until now were for Abham-nim. But you plan on just handing it over to him on a platter? If he wins the war that way, do you think he would yield any of the glory to Abham-nim?”

Runa Brink shouted in frustration, but Abham did not budge.

“The tribe comes first before my own benefit. Listen to me.”

Runa Brink stared at Abham as if he was trying to look through him. He really was a difficult lord. But this side of Abham was one of the reasons that Runa could not leave him.

‘No matter what, I want to be with this man. I want to give the desert to this man.’

Abham did not avoid Runa Brink’s gaze, and in the end, Runa was the first to lower his gaze.

“I will listen to Abham-nim’s orders. But since we do not know what may happen, Abham-nim, please keep yourself healthy.”

“Do not worry. I am also a Greatest Warrior. I will not die easily.”

“I did not say it for you to not die easily. Rather, you cannot be injured in the upcoming battles. You know that I have yet to show you my abilities, right?”

“You have overwhelming talent. You just really met the wrong person.”

Abham felt that way at Runa Brink’s words and nodded his head. This subordinate of his that was extremely talented.

“Then I shall go meet up with Ebinong. Since Pareia is at the tip of our nose, he should be at least a bit nervous.”

Runa Brink said goodbye to Abham and quickly ran over to Ebinong’s paoe.

Book 3-2.2 The Wikaly's Plan

“The first oasis we need to take is the Oasis of the Rising Moon where the Greatest Warrior named Abham Shuttra is located. Abham does have some reputation as a Greatest Warrior, but I heard that because the oasis he is associated with is small, he does not have much influence.”

Another Greatest Warrior, Chlodeh, followed up on Egane's words.

“However, they received reinforcements from the central oases, and the Commanding Greatest Warrior is Ebinong Albarooque. He is a greedy man, but still decently smart and strong.”

Yulian started to talk after listening to the two of them speak.

“It is kind of odd that they wouldn't put the Greatest Warrior in charge of the oasis as the commander.”

“Ebinong is probably the representative Greatest Warrior of the Wikaly tribe. As Chlodeh mentioned, he has decent strategy, so that is probably why they made him the commander.”

Yulian nodded his head and asked many of the Greatest Warriors.

“We need to work in tandem with the division that is going up the quicksand river. In order to do that, we need to pull down as many Wikaly warriors to this oasis as we can. How do you think we should move?”

“We absolutely cannot do a frontal charge. If they focus only on defending, we will suffer a lot of damage by charging into whatever they have prepared.”

“If the level of warriors was the same, our method to victory is to draw them out of their oasis. Since we have significantly more warriors at the Greatest Warrior level, a field battle will be to our advantage.”

Egane answered, followed by the Broken Shamshir Windaoz.

“Even so, the enemy numbers over 30,000. If you consider the fact that we only have 20,000 warriors with us, wouldn’t it be better to divide them up and eat them up little by little rather than facing them head on?”

Egane answered.

“In order to do that, we will need to divide up our forces as well, which might actually end up putting us in danger. However, we have not had the first battle yet, and since the enemy expects to have more warriors than we do, it would be great if we can capture the entire division that comes out to do a reconnaissance battle.”

While they were discussing different suggestions, the Angry Brandistock Vibli spoke to Yulian.

“Please leave 3,000 warriors to me and 3,000 warriors to Trebol. If you do that, we will annoy them from both sides of the oasis. We will make it so that the enemy will have no choice but to divide themselves. The two of us work well together after having faced Venersis together for a long time, so the enemy will have no choice but to pay attention to us.

Trebol stepped forward and started to speak as well.

“It is a good idea. Our goal right now is not to wipe them out, but to make more enemy warriors come down from the rear oases. I think it is a good idea.”

“If they choose to attack us instead, since our number of remaining warriors will only be about half of their number, it might actually put us in danger if the middle is breached.”

The Greatest Warrior Neitu, The One Who Slashes Three at Once, was worried about the problem that might arise from dividing up the tribe’s warriors.

“Think about the reason we could not reverse the situation even though we had more warriors than Venersis. We needed three of

our Greatest Warriors to stop Venersis and start the battle. Right now, the Glow is with us. I believe that the Glow-nim and Red Storm is enough to defend the middle. Furthermore, should they choose to attack the center with full force, Greatest Warrior Trebol and Greatest Warrior Vibli can strike them from both sides, which will make the battle much easier.”

“I agree. Although we came to attack, we should create a defensive formation and wait for them. We can then use any gaps we find to our advantage to counterattack. It can make the enemy fall into chaos, and if they choose to attack, we will be able to solidly defend. So wouldn’t this be catching two birds with one stone?”

With two other Greatest Warriors taking Vibli and Trebol’s side, Neitu lowered his head as if he yielded to the others.

Yulian thought for a while before starting to speak.

“Our real war will start once the division going up the quicksand river strikes through the middle of the Wikaly tribe. Keeping that in mind, I think the two Greatest Warriors are correct. Greatest Warrior Vibli!”

“Yes, Glow.”

“Greatest Warrior Trebol!”

“I am waiting for your command, Glow.”

The two Greatest Warriors came up to Yulian and bowed as they answered.

“Please each take 3,000 warriors and press from both sides of the oasis. Please keep in mind that the most important thing is protecting our warriors. I’m sure you will each make the right judgment calls, but if you sense even a bit of danger, retreat. This is an order. Even if you can take down 5,000 with your 3,000, you must not fight.”

“I understand, Glow.”

“I will do as you commanded, Glow.”

Once the two Greatest Warriors responded vigorously and retreated, Yulian started to speak to the other Greatest Warriors.

“I’m sure you are all aware that the reason we brought so many Greatest Warriors to this war was to make our progress smoother. In terms of the battle, we should not be pushed back by anyone thanks to the Red Storm, but there is nothing the Red Storm can do in terms of maneuvering the warriors. In this aspect is where we really need the abilities of our Greatest Warriors, and I will be paying attention to each and every one of you. Do not forget that our main goal is to drag down even one extra warrior to this oasis and away from their central oases. I leave it to you to keep our warrior safe and do what you need to do to keep their morales up high while they wait anxiously for good news from the center.”

“We will make sure to keep it in mind.”

The Greatest Warriors shouted and Yulian instructed all of them to be on their way before leaning his body on the chair.

Nervousness filled his body. This was the first campaign that he started on his own free will. If this takeover of the Wikaly fails, he might have to flail around once more in that boring balance of power that has existed for over a hundred years.

This was a war he definitely needed to win. He needed to conquer the Wikaly!

Since things have progressed smoothly until now, all he could do was hope that it continued to be that way.

“We have been preparing for a long time for Pareia’s invasion.”

At Runa Brink’s words, Ebinong, the Commanding Greatest Warrior just looked at him with disinterest before asking.

“How so?”

“We have dug many traps around the oasis. It should be able to

defend against Pareia that will try to shake the flanks with a small amount of warriors. The most important thing in this defensive battle is that we must not move our main forces forward.”

“Runa Brink, that is something for me to determine.”

“It is a tactic that Abham-nim has approved of as well. Greatest Warrior Ebinong-nim. We must use a tactic to defend our oasis. We need the main forces to defend while using small-scale specialty groups to shake Pareia.”

“Runa Brink, you seem to misunderstand something. I am the commander for this war, not Abham. So you should be explaining tactics and strategies that I approve of, not what you explained to Abham. Plus, you are not yet at a level you can speak to me like this.”

Although Ebinong answered calmly, the hidden meaning was that Runa Brink was not qualified to talk to him.”

Although Ebinong really wanted to bring this character Runa Brink under his command, Runa would need to throw away his loyalty to Abham to serve him. In order to make people only loyal to himself, he needed to kill their pride.

“Commanding Greatest Warrior Ebinong-nim, this is a tactic for our Wikaly. I hope that you can listen to the tactics that I have prepared.”

As Runa Brink continued to urge him, Ebinong casually responded back.

“Isn’t that why I am listening to you right now? However, I have come prepared with a plan as well.”

“I’m sure you cannot tell me about it?”

Ebinong shrugged his shoulders as he answered.

“Isn’t that obvious? You are not a Greatest Warrior. For security reasons, the movement of our warriors is something only the

Greatest Warrior level warriors are allowed to know. But since you have come like this, I will listen to your plan and keep it in mind. So, how do you plan on defending against Pareia?”

“We must not face them head on. Lately, the Pareia’s morale has been on the rise. I believe that Commanding Greatest Warrior-nim is fully aware about not facing a brigade charged up on morale. Our basic strategy should be tightly defending the oasis with our troops while sending around 5,000 warriors to each wing and using the prepared traps as a wall to block Pareia.”

“And then?”

“Then we wait for the right moment. The oasis has many fences prepared to defend against the charges of pirmas, and we have more warriors than the enemy. If Pareia cannot wait and attack against our prepared defenses, we should be able to keep them out. Furthermore, if they come down and charge to the middle, the warriors on the wings can attack their side. If we focus only on defending, we cannot lose. They should also have issues maintaining supplies for such a large number of warriors while we have no such problems. Pareia will have no choice but to retreat as their supplies start to dwindle, and our Wikaly warriors can strike as they are retreating. We should then be able to achieve great success.”

Ebinong scratched his chin as he spoke.

“Isn’t that too simple? That level of thought is something anybody with even a tiny bit of knowledge about war would have.”

“I’m sure you are aware of how hard it is to put such simple plan into motion. The warriors are going to get fidgety if a battle does to happen and they are just sitting still. But it is the same for the enemies. This simple plan is the method to bring us an overwhelming victory. It was to make sure we can put this simple plan into perfect motion that we have dug many traps, prepared the fences, and saved up enough food to feed many warriors.”

“We are 30,000 while they are just 20,000. If we just defend while we have the numbers advantage, the morale of our Wikaly warriors is more likely to fall. For 30,000 warriors to defend against 20,000, how cowardly would that seem? Plus, Pareia’s warriors might mock us and it would raise their morale instead.”

“That is why it is difficult to put this simple plan into action. Pareia’s total number of warriors in the tribe number over 80,000, while our Wikaly only has a little over half of that at 45,000. This war is not going to be the last time that Pareia tries to invade us.”

Runa Brink’s voice started to rise little by little.

“Plus, we still have the Baradona tribe, the strongest tribe in the Eastern desert to our North. If we suffer a lot of casualties from this war, we might get eaten by Baradona instead. We must think about how we can protect our warriors the most.”

“Baradona cannot move because of the Rivolde. The relationships between tribes is what has kept us in this balance of power for over a hundred years. If Baradona strikes us, do you think the Rivolde will let them do as they please? Especially when the Rivolde do not need to worry about the Shuarei to their south because of the Shuarei’s defeat to Pareia?”

“That was why Abham-nim brought up creating alliances with either Baradona or a different tribe at the last meeting of Greatest Warriors. Our Wikaly is in a central location, so which tribe would reject it if we were the ones to offer up an alliance? Even if we manage to win this war, we must continue to push for creating alliances.”

Ebinong’s face turned red. It was the Glow and himself that rejected Abham’s suggestion at the last meeting.

Book 3-2.3 First Battle against the Wikaly

“Are you saying that our Wikaly needs to be the first to bow our heads? Even without doing that, our Wikaly has not fallen to any sort of pressure for a long time.”

“Who said we should bow our heads? All I am saying is our tribe should make an alliance with another tribe.”

“Isn’t that exactly bowing our heads? If another tribe initiates an alliance request to us, the Glow has every mind to agree to it.”

“Ah! You know that our Wikaly is the one who is urgently in need right now!”

“Watch your mouth!”

Ebinong shouted loudly.

“Who the hell is urgent? You seem to think that we have lost this war even before we have started to fight, so how can you claim you will win this battle!”

Runa Brink started to shout back in a stronger voice.

“That is not what I mean. Our Wikaly is in a delicate location. So we need to prepare first.....”

“Shut your mouth. I have no desire to talk any further with a defeatist like you. Leave.”

Runa Brink called out loudly to Ebinong at his words.

“Commanding Greatest Warrior Ebinong!”

“Didn’t I tell you to leave? I am fully capable of taking down Pareia on my own.”

At Ebinong’s repeated request to leave, Runa Brink just stared at him without speaking.

Ebinong did not even look at him, and Runa Brink said one last thing.

“I truly request that you do not move our main forces. If we just maintain our position, Pareia is bound to retreat on their own. It is a simple question if you think about how the Pareia have resisted against the Shuarei’s Venersis.”

“.....”

Ebinong did not say anything else, and Runa Brink let out a long sigh before leaving Ebinong’s paoe.

Runa Brink climbed up the watchtower and looked toward the direction Pareia would be coming from.

Tomorrow, or the day after that.

They were about that far away according to the patrol warrior.

Ebinong really should not move the warriors without thinking. That really was the best course of action.

But there was something even Runa Brink did not know, and that was the fact that 10,000 warriors were headed toward the center of Wikaly through the quicksand river.

As long as they don’t know that, the truth was that the Wikaly will be eaten up by this red storm headed their way.

Pareia’s troops were quickly moving toward the Wikaly oasis.

But they were forced to stop once they arrived at about half a day’s distance from it.

“They are out here defending.”

Once Egane spoke after taking a look at the Wikaly warriors in front of them, Yulian nodded his head and asked.

“There seems to be around 20,000. Do you think we can take them on with our 14,000?”

Because Vibli and Trebol each took 3,000 warriors to loop around to the flanks, there were only 14,000 warriors in the center.

Yulian was worried about the 6,000 extra warriors.

Egane did not even have to think before he responded.

“Don’t we have the Glow and Red Storm? There is no reason we cannot take them on. Please remember why we had to defend against the Shuarei with greater numbers. There was only one reason. It was because we could not handle Venersis and the Desert Sword. It’s actually better that the Wikaly came out like this to greet us.”

“You are thinking too highly of me.”

As Yulian answered with a somewhat serious expression, Egane smiled a bit before answering.

“You won’t know unless you have them as your enemy. You won’t know just how much impact the existence of a single person that cannot be stopped can have if you have not gone up against them yourself.”

“Is that so?”

“Yes. Since they have not experienced it yet, they have come out like this to greet us. Let’s take them apart in an instant, Glow.”

Yulian had studied a lot and learned a lot through training, but he was still nowhere near Egane when it came to strategies.

Once Yulian nodded his head, Egane gave the command to move the warriors.

“Glow, let us use the method that Venersis enjoyed using.”

“How so?”

Once Yulian asked, Egane was excited at giving back the same thing that they always suffered from and answered.

“Once the battle begins, please take the Red Storm and five hundred warriors and leave the formation. The moment we clash with the Wikaly, just pierce through the Wikaly’s formation and run around causing havoc.”

“That is all I need to do?”

As Yulian asked in confusion, Egane smiled as he answered.

“Glow still does not know what kind of existence you are. You do not know why a War God is called a War God. You did not awaken in our first battle against the Shuarei, but you awakened when you went against Venersis. My heart is pounding just thinking about seeing the effects of that awakening here today. Use the feeling you had when you went up against Venersis to control the Wikaly’s formation. Then this battle will end up an overwhelming victory for Pareia.”

Yulian nodded his head. It was because he remembered that weird intuition he had that time against Venersis.

‘Will I be able to sense the same thing this time?’

Yulian stepped forward as he started to think.

‘If I could use that intuition whenever I wanted.....’

He felt like he would never lose a battle or war if he could do that.

Pareia’s formation was set up in the T formation. It was one of the most aggressive formations, and it signaled Pareia’s desire to clash once and pierce through. It also proved that they trusted in the training they put the warriors through.

With Yulian in the lead, four Greatest Warriors followed behind him, and on the Wikaly’s side, Ebinong moved forward, with four Greatest Warriors behind him.

Once the two camp’s Greatest Warriors faced each other, Yulian pushed forward wearing the red clothes that symbolized the Glow of Pareia.

“Oowaaaaaa~!”

Yulian started to speak with Pareia’s loud shouts behind him.

“I, the Glow of Pareia, the Desert Conqueror Yulian Provoke says to you. The Wikaly’s Glow disregarded my will to unite without

making the warriors shed their blood for no reason. For how long must our desert walk on eggshells around the strong forces of the continent? It is still not too late. Join me. Join me and join Pareia as we enter the new stage of the desert.”

At Yulian’s loud shout, Ebinong pushed forward, and this time, it was the Wikaly camp that shouted loudly.

“Waaaaaaaaaaaaa~!”

Ebinong shouted loudly along with the shouts behind him.

“The name of the idiot in front of me is the Glow of Pareia. You are the one who is shedding the blood of your warriors for no reason. Today, under the orders of Gomai Mao, our great Glow of Wikaly, I, the Overwhelmingly Intelligent, Ebinong Albaroque, will set your mind straight.”

“Hmph.”

Yulian snorted as he answered.

“This sword of mine will tell us who made the wrong decision. Is there any warrior brave enough among the Wikaly’s Greatest Warriors to fight me?”

“Hahaha.”

Ebinong laughed as if he was saying that was funny and answered.

“You really think too highly of yourself. Pride is not one of a warrior’s virtues. Our Wikaly’s warriors will teach that to you today.”

“A warrior is not all talk. Show it to me with your actions.”

Ebinong glared at Yulian as he started to think.

‘Whether it is the War God of the West or War God of the East, they are rated too highly. Honestly, it was only the Shuarei and Pareia fighting against each other. No other tribes have faced the so called strength of these War Gods. I’m sure these are names they

made up because they did not like to lose, so we do not need to pay much attention to it.'

Thinking that way, Ebinong took a look around at the Greatest Warriors who came with him. All of them were excellent warriors of the Wikaly tribe.

If Ebinong had ever seen Yulian in a battle, he would not have done something as stupid as having a battle of Greatest Warriors against Yulian.

That is, if he had seen how Yulian managed to take an arm of one of the Shuarei's Greatest Warriors even when he was going up against two of them by himself.

But Ebinong had not seen that and only considered Yulian to be a decently strong young warrior.

Of course he had heard rumors about Yulian, but those are, as they are called, just rumors.

The distance that he has walked with his two feet are probably more than that puny kid has traveled on top of a pirma, and he probably swung his sword more times than Yulian as well. It wasn't carelessness or overconfidence at all, but it was not right for a warrior to be afraid even before battling someone once.

At that moment, one of Wikaly's Greatest Warriors, Shya, caught Ebinong's eyes and pushed forward. He was thinking the same thing as Ebinong.

"Yaaaaaaaaaaaaap~!"

With a loud grunt, Shya raised the speed of his pirma as he rode forward with the intent to slash Yulian into two with a single move, and Yulian just smiled as he slowly lifted up his greatsword.

It reminded him of his first battle with the Shuarei. He remembered how they had achieved an overwhelming victory by his keeping three Greatest Warriors too occupied to lead the warriors!

Remembering the memory of the battle, Yulian could have instantly killed Shya but decided not to do so.

If Shya looks to be in danger, he was sure the other Greatest Warriors would come out to help him. In order to make that happen, he suppressed his strength and started to fight against Shya.

The two of their weapons clashed many times in a short amount of time. Egane had a curious smile seeing what Yulian was doing. He had managed to read Yulian's thought process.

"Do not step forward even if the Glow seems to be in danger. The Glow has a plan of his own."

Egane informed the other Greatest Warriors of Pareia. It would make things more complicated if some of them decided to try to help.

As Yulian expected, once Shya looked to be in danger, another one of the Wikaly's Greatest Warriors rushed forward.

But seeing how Yulian was not being pushed back while fighting against two of them and instead started to overwhelm both of them, Ebinong had to change his mind.

'The rumors about this punk were true. For him to not be pushed back even while fighting against two of our Greatest Warriors. But boy, you are trusting your strength too much. There's no way you can manage to do the same while fighting three of them.'

Ebinong motioned to one of the two remaining Greatest Warriors who then rushed forward. Now the only Greatest Warriors left for the Wikaly were Ebinong and Abham.

Abham was amazed at Yulian who could handle three Greatest Warriors without any issues.

'Amazing. What an amazing warrior. They call him the [War God of the East](#) ... that rumor was not a lie.'

He also remembered Runa's warning.

The author goes back and forth referring to him as the War God of the East or West. In the beginning of Book 3, Edwin calls him the War God of the West. Now Abham calls him the War God of the East.

Book 3-2.4 End of the First Battle

-You must NEVER do a battle of Greatest Warriors with him. There is a reason that the Shuarei, who used to overwhelm Pareia, were defeated in an instant. Furthermore, they say that even when Venersis went as reinforcement, he returned without any gains. It is a better idea to consider the rumors to be true and plan accordingly. But Ebinong and the other Greatest Warriors just believe that we will win because of the fact that we have more warriors. They do not take him seriously. If I am right, Pareia will attack the moment their Glow has our Greatest Warriors tied up. You must not be careless.

Abram thought about Runa's warning as he looked around at Pareia's Greatest Warriors.

They didn't seem to be worried at all even though their Glow was taking on three Greatest Warriors at once. In fact, wasn't one of them starting to smile?

'Dangerous. This is dangerous.'

Abham thought to himself as he started to speak to Ebinong.

"Commanding Greatest Warrior Ebinong, shouldn't you return to the formation and prepare for battle?"

Ebinong looked at Abham in a way that made it seem like he was asking what Abham was thinking.

"Once our Greatest Warriors slash that puny Glow's neck, Pareia's morale will fall. What are you worried about?"

"That is what is weird. There is not an ounce of fear or worry in the eyes of their leaders. If we are all caught up by that young Glow and Pareia starts to charge, who will lead the warriors?"

Listening to Abham, Ebinong finally looked around at Egane and the rest of Pareia's Greatest Warriors. As Abham mentioned, there were no signs of worry in their eyes. He also saw two of them

returning to the formation.

Ebinong was also a veteran who had faced pretty much everything. He finally started to get a bit worried about what was going on.

“You return to the formation first. I will gather them and return with them.”

“I understand.”

Once Abham turned his pirma and returned to the formation, Ebinong rode toward where Yulian and the Greatest Warriors were fighting and started to shout.

“Since there is no winner, let us fight using our strategies, Pareia’s Glow.”

Once Ebinong joined in, Egane, as well as one other Greatest Warrior finally stepped forward as well.

Once the situation turned that way, Yulian decided he did not have to go easy on them anymore and started to swing the greatsword with all of his strength.

Boooooooooooooong.

As the two greatswords approached them while slashing the wind, Shya as well the other Greatest Warriors of Wikaly were extremely shocked. They were clearly pushing this young Glow back, but the tables had turned in an instant.

As Yulian started to swing his greatsword while full of murderous aura, the Greatest Warriors of Wikaly could feel dry sweat on their backs every time they blocked his sword.

‘We might not be able to get away.’

Ebinong thought that way as he started to shout.

“Shya, Pratec, Tepoi, return to the formation.”

Even without Ebinong shouting at them, the three of them had

wanted to do that, but they could not do so, as the moment they turned their body, one of the other Greatest Warriors might be taken out by Yulian.

As Egane and Amboma, two of Pareia's Greatest Warriors rushed toward Ebinong at that time, Ebinong could not turn around either.

“All units, charge!”

At that moment, there was a shout in the Wikaly formation as they started to move forward.

It was Abham's smart thinking.

With things ending up this way, if they give the command to charge first, they don't need to give any other commands for a bit of time, so he had ordered them forward.

Pareia ordered all units to charge just a moment later, and the two formations crashed against each other like waves.

“Yaaaaaaa!”

“Ahhhhh~!”

While that was going on, Yulian's greatsword pushed aside a shamshir and slashed the body of Pratec, one of Wikaly's Greatest Warriors, and Pratec shouted as he fell down from his pirma.

They couldn't do much about Yulian when it was three against one, and now that only two of them were left, Shya and Tepoi turned their pirmas around knowing it could be dangerous. Unfortunately, the Red Storm warriors had already surrounded them.

Ebinong was not in a good situation either. His life was in danger because of the shamshirs of Egane and Amboma.

“Protect the Greatest Warriors!”

With a loud shout, Abham and the personal warriors of each Greatest Warrior tried to help, but it was not enough to take on

Red Storm.

It was only because both formations were fighting in close proximity that they could use the chaos to barely manage to defend.

“Step back.”

Abham shouted as he forcefully swung his shamshir, and the three Greatest Warriors of Wikaly put all of their efforts into finding a way out of the situation.

Egane and Amboma looked at each other before the two of them stepped back first.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

There was a loud beat of a drum from the Pareia's formation as the warriors started to move.

The warriors in the front started to defend in a circle, and the warriors who were in the back started to block the Wikaly warriors from the front and back.

The Wikaly Greatest Warriors should have changed their formation to counter this, but none of them were able to do so.

The battle was turning like the first battle with the Shuarei.

The only saving grace for the Wikaly was that their numbers were almost twice that of Pareia, and because they had already charged forward under Abham's command, things were not easily going Pareia's way.

“Ugh.”

Ebinong made a single grunt as he was struck by Yulian's sword and fell off his pirma, and the Red Storm started to shake their shamshirs with even more strength.

But since there were twice as many enemies, it was difficult to continue to block the enemies as they pushed forward.

The barricade made by the Red Storm warriors started to open up a little bit, and the lead warriors of the Wikaly troops used all of their strength to push forward and defend the Greatest Warriors.

“Hurry.”

Surrounded by Abham and his personal group of warriors, Shya and Tepoi managed to get away from the chaos.

“We need to lead the warriors!”

Abham shouted as he ordered his warriors to defend as he stepped backward, and Shya and Tepoi had already moved to the back to see just what was going on.

“I have slashed the neck of the enemy’s Greatest Warrior.”

Yulian lifted up Ebinong’s armor high in the air with his greatsword as he shouted loudly.

Even amongst the loud shouts of the warriors, Yulian’s voice was heard by everyone.

“Waaaaaaaaa~!”

Pareia’s morale was super charged as they shouted and started to push forward with even more strength, while the Wikaly’s morale was lowered by the fact that their Commanding Greatest Warrior had been killed. They instantly started to be pushed back.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

There was the beat of a drum from the Wikaly formation and the lead flags started to move.

The Wikaly Greatest Warriors were finally able to get a grasp of what was going on and started to issue their commands.

As expected, because the Wikaly had an overwhelming number of warriors in comparison, it was hard to inflict a lot of damage like Pareia’s Greatest Warriors wanted to do.

The Wikaly warriors started to move quickly, trying to get away

from Pareia's encirclement.

It was natural that if the Wikaly were able to fix their formation and the battle continued, they would have the advantage because of their numbers.

The moment Yulian thought he needed to do something, the situation in the battlefield started to change again. Vibli and Trebol, the two Greatest Warriors who had taken a roundabout way to the left and right, were starting to strike from the sides.

They showed up exactly when they were needed. The encirclement that was about to break started to become tighter once more with the help of Trebol and Vibli's 6,000 warriors.

25,000 Wikaly warriors against 20,000 Pareia warriors.

Normally, this 5,000 difference would play a critical factor in desert warfare, but Pareia's morale as well as their overwhelming number of Greatest Warriors helped to make up for that difference.

If they could have taken care of the other two Greatest Warriors as well earlier, they would really have been able to overwhelm them.

As the battle continued, the performance of Red Storm and Yulian was spectacular. It was just like looking at a wild beast that jumped into the middle of a herd of pina. Nobody could stop them, and a path was created everywhere they went.

Pareia's warriors flooded those paths while Yulian and Red Storm jumped left and right to create more new paths.

Pareia's Greatest Warriors were shouting with joy internally as they moved their warriors to the paths created by Yulian.

This was it.

This was the reason that they could not defeat the Shuarei in the past even when they had more warriors.

As Yulian was chaotically moving around, he could feel that sensation returning to him.

That weird feeling! He could start to see the entire battlefield. Where Pareia's warriors were being pushed back, where they were currently doing well.

Even though Yulian was still a tiny chick when it came to strategies, many different paths were starting to be created in Yulian's head.

Even he didn't know what kind of paths they were. All he knew was that he needed to move according to those paths. Yulian started to move in accordance with what was in his head without even realizing he was doing so.

Egane was making sure to pay attention to Yulian even though he was busy issuing commands.

He was waiting for Yulian to move in the way that he had labeled 'awakening.'

"It's here."

Seeing Yulian start to move in a different way, Egane started to shout. He ordered the warriors to follow behind Yulian.

The Wikaly's Greatest Warriors were frustrated. They could not issue commands in the beginning, and the enemy struck from the sides before they could even fix the formation, but thinking about their numbers, it was not a dangerous situation at all.

But they were starting to get pushed back more and more. And the reason for that? All because of a single person.

He was using the strength of a War God that they had only heard rumors about. They were finally witnessing it with their own eyes.

"Pareia's movement is weird."

At Shya's words, Abham nodded his head and responded.

"They are starting to split themselves apart. If that continues,

they can get eaten up because of the number difference.”

“Maybe the heavens are helping us.”

“Their movement is too weird for us to believe that to be the case.”

Tepoi answered.

“Let’s just push forward like this. We had a lot of loss in the beginning, but our numbers are still greater than theirs.”

“Since they are splitting themselves apart like that, they are pretty much serving this victory to us on a silver platter.”

“Something is suspicious. It is too odd. Why don’t we order the warriors to retreat?”

Trebol did not agree with Abham’s suggestion.

“We are not lacking in numbers, and we are not lacking in momentum either. It is clear that the ones to retreat first will end up with a lot of damage, so why should we retreat?”

“With the way things are going, we can do it. Didn’t we manage to split their forces?”

Shya debated about the two Greatest Warriors’ opposing viewpoints. One of the weaknesses of a formation lacking a Commanding Greatest Warrior was that they were slow to come to a decision.

While Shya was debating, the battlefield suddenly changed in a weird way.

“How is this possible?! How did we end up being surrounded?”

As Abham looked to the battlefield and shouted, Tepoi turned pale and Shya decided to go with Abham’s suggestion.

“It is still not too late to order the retreat.”

All three Greatest Warriors agreed and started to sound the drum to retreat.

“They caught on quickly.”

As the Wikaly warriors heard the drum and started to slowly retreat, Pareia’s Greatest Warriors shouted in disappointment.

They were leaders who had experienced Yulian’s weird movements. Even still, they could not figure out why Yulian was moving that way. But they knew the end result it would bring.

They knew that if they just followed Yulian, the Wikaly warriors will end up being surrounded.

The Wikaly’s Greatest Warriors were feeling the same way Pareia’s Greatest Warriors felt the first time they fought against Venersis. They were baffled.

“Should we push forward like this?”

Egane asked the other Greatest Warriors, and they started to debate it.

“Let’s clear the battlefield first. The remaining warriors at their oasis have probably prepared a defense, and since the enemy Greatest Warriors are more wary now, let’s just stop here for now.”

Amboma agreed with Vibli’s suggestion.

“Our mission is not to take the oasis but to distract them until the division that went up the quicksand river can take over the center of the Wikaly territory. As Greatest Warrior Vibli mentioned, it is probably better to stop here for today. Today’s battle can be considered an overwhelming victory.

The other Greatest Warriors all agreed, and once the drum sounded for the warriors to stop, Pareia’s warriors stopped moving forward and lifted up their arms as they started to shout.

They had managed to win their first battle against the Wikaly.

End of Chapter 2.

Book 3-3.1 After the Battle

The Wikaly's Counterattack

It was an unexpected counterattack. It wasn't like they were careless or anything.

They just cleanly lost.

It took them until the moon came up to clear the battlefield.

Vibli prepared to defend against an ambush with 5,000 warriors, but everybody knew that the Wikaly would not be able to do anything else today. They gathered the ownerless pirmas as well as the wounded and the bodies of their dead allies, while taking all of the wounded Wikaly warriors and the random stragglers as prisoners. One day, they will all be warriors of Pareia. As per the customs of the desert, none of the prisoners caused any issues.

Pareia's warriors were finally able to have a late dinner and relax after all three moons rose up high into the sky. On the other hand, the Greatest Warriors did not have any time to even eat dinner or take a break as they immediately headed to a meeting.

"I will report on today's results."

Yulian was tired, but he pressed down on his temples to wake himself up as he received Egane's report.

"Discussing the situation with our warriors first, we have 3,000 dead and 4,000 wounded. Of them, 1,500 are no longer able to battle. We have also gathered 3,000 pirmas and all weapons left on the battlefield. We have confirmed that there are 5,000 dead enemy soldiers, as well as 5,000 that we have taken prisoner. I believe that 3,000 of the prisoners cannot fight right now."

"We suffered a greater damage than I expected."

At Yulian's words, Egane put on a face that seemed to be saying Yulian was wrong.

“We had 5,000 less warriors, and in the beginning, we had close to 10,000 less warriors. When you consider that, this can be considered an overwhelming victory. I am a bit disappointed though. If the enemy waited a little longer to retreat, we could have done even better.”

“The fact that I could not quickly get rid of the Wikaly’s Greatest Warriors is coming back to haunt us. No, even if it was late, if I had not allowed those two to get away, we would not have suffered as much damage.”

Trebol shouted at Yulian’s guilt-filled voice.

“The only reason we were able to face them head on like this was because of the Glow and Red Storm. Without you, we would never have fought against an enemy who had 10,000 more warriors than we did. The Glow’s performance today has the morale of our warriors boiling hot while instilling a sense of fear in the Wikaly’s warriors. Because of that, we should not see this many dead warriors in future battles.”

“It is still disappointing.”

As Yulian indicated, if he had managed to keep those Greatest Warriors occupied, they would have suffered only about half of the damage they received while causing more damage to the Wikaly warriors. Since that was the truth, the Greatest Warriors had no way to console Yulian’s feelings of guilt.

Egane started to speak.

Since we have greatly destroyed the spirit of the enemy, the Wikaly will not dare to fight us head on again. Now all we have to do is wait for news from the warriors that headed up toward the center of Wikaly.”

“Either way, I guess we have to move the wounded back to Pareia.”

Egane shook his head no at Yulian’s suggestion.

“We cannot do that yet. We only have about 15,000 available to fight, but the enemy still has around 20,000 warriors. This difference of 5,000 can end up becoming a big issue. Even if we add the 10,000 that went up the quicksand river, our number is 25,000. If they focus on defending the oasis and have a Greatest Warrior talented in defending, we will not be able to defeat them even with an extra 5,000 warriors.

“It might make things more difficult in the short run, but we must send the wounded back to Pareia to be treated. Our immediate goal is to defeat the Wikaly, but after that, we are aiming for the entire desert. We need to take even one more warrior with us if possible. Find about 1,000 who are not as good at fighting to take the wounded back to Pareia.

As Yulian sternly answered, Egane obliged. They had managed to break the Wikaly’s morale down, and once they manage to surround the oasis, the enemy will have no means of getting any supplies so it shouldn’t be difficult to defeat them.

“I understand. I will immediately issue the order.”

“Everyone did a great job today. This war will start to become boring starting tomorrow, so please make sure to pay close attention to your warriors’ morales. Greatest Warriors Vibli and Trebol, please take 2,500 warriors each and do the same thing you were doing on the flanks.

“We understand Glow.”

“Everybody must be tired. Go ahead and get some rest.”

Once his subordinate Greatest Warriors left the paoe, Yulian started to think with his eyes closed.

‘I must have killed over a hundred people just today. It is not like I feel guilty about it, but it does hurt to have to kill people. It is ironic that we must shed blood to prevent future bloodshed. It feels so terrible that we must kill our fellow desert brothers to

make it happen.'

War is in essence a game of murder. Who can kill who first? How can you kill more? That is the definition of war.

Yulian was hurting inside at the fact that it was his dream and command that made 8,000 warriors lose their lives today. That cold truth was making Yulian's resolve start to shake.

"What are you thinking so deeply about?"

As Chun Myung Hoon opened the door to the paoe and entered, Yulian quickly stood up from his seat.

"Master, you appeared right when I was hoping to see you."

At Yulian's extremely dead voice, Chun Myung Hoon gazed at Yulian before asking.

"Is it painful?"

"Master, you can read minds now too."

"You seemed to handle it well without a problem when you were fighting against the Shuarei. Well, I guess you really didn't have time to have such thoughts in that battle."

Chun Myung Hoon casually responded to Yulian as he continued to speak.

"Did you expect that role to be easy? A king is someone who will always have blood on his hands. Since you are the king of 500,000 people, you will get even more blood on your hands."

"Honestly, I am a bit scared as well."

"That is normal. But how can you be the king if you care about what everybody thinks? Even in my life, there was a time when many people lost their lives because of me. But I trusted myself. I also trusted the people I needed to lead. If you have set a goal, you just need to chase after it."

Chun Myung Hoon's simple words calmed Yulian down quite a

bit.

‘Right. I am fighting to create a day when the people of the desert do not need to shed each other’s blood anymore. If I can unify the desert, there will no longer need to be any war between fellow tribe members.’

“I told you about the king before right? Become someone whose existence alone can bring peace to your people. If you fall off balance, all the people following you will fall off balance as well.”

“I guess I was reflecting beyond my level.”

“It is normal for humans. If you enjoy killing, you are just a crazy perverted bastard.”

“Yes, I will keep that in mind.”

Chun Myung Hoon came and patted Yulian’s shoulder as he started to speak.

“Everybody born under the Mandate of Heaven will not have an easy life. They will also face troubles in their life. But the heavens only throw that to the people who can handle it and defeat it. Do not lose to it.”

Yulian clenched his two fists and nodded his head.

Book 3-3.2 The Wikaly Make a Move (I)

Wikaly's Greatest Warrior Abham could not do anything right now because of shock and disbelief.

A complete defeat.

Even with 10,000 extra warriors, they could not overwhelm their enemies. This fact had caused a lot of damage to their self-esteem and honor. Thankfully, he had ignored Ebinong's authority and ordered the warriors to charge. If he didn't... they might have suffered an even greater defeat.

The fact that two Greatest Warriors and 10,000 warriors were lost were making his eyes roll over, and he was just sitting there almost completely out of it.

Runa was watching him with a worried expression.

Runa had a bad feeling from the moment Ebinong ignored his advice and led the main group of warriors to face Pareia, and his bad feeling ended up being spot on.

Runa had thought about how Pareia, who had been pushed back by the Shuarei, had managed an overwhelming victory over them and caused critical damage. It was only after hearing about Yulian after the war that he finally figured it out.

He realized that the Shuarei were defeated in the same way Venersis defeated Pareia in the past. He was also afraid that Yulian would use the same tactic against the Wikaly. That was why he was advising Ebinong to withstand the shame and only focus on defending.

Runa Brink was actually thankful that they only received this much damage. It was after he had heard about the whole battle from Abham.

'If Abham-nim did not order the warriors to charge, the Wikaly would not have been able to do anything before retreating. Then

even a defensive battle might have been difficult. All I can do is tell him to be satisfied at the fact that there is still a chance for our Wikaly.'

Runa made that decision before starting to speak toward Abham.

"Abham-nim."

"....."

As Abham continued to sit there with a blank expression as if he did not hear him, Runa called out in a slightly louder voice.

"Abham-nim."

"Huh? Ah! What is it?"

"I know what shock is, but this is not the time to be this way."

"Ah. Yes. You are right. This is not the time. What should we do? Should we give up on this oasis and retreat to the back?"

"Abham-nim!"

Runa shouted loudly at Abham who could not think straight.

"What warrior does not know about defeat? Even that Venersis had to lower his tail and retreat from Pareia this time. All we did was verify the strength of that Pareia for ourselves today."

"....."

"Since Commanding Greatest Warrior Ebinong has died, we need a new Commanding Greatest Warrior. Abham-nim, you should take control. Right now, there is nobody other than Abham-nim who can take that position, so the Glow and the other Greatest Warriors should not be able to say anything about it."

"Me?"

"Please snap out of it. Did you forget about everything we have prepared up until now?! We can hold our oasis even if we had just 10,000 warriors."

At Runa's shout, Abham finally snapped a bit out of it and started

to vigorously nod his head.

“Everybody is in a state of shock. Abham-nim needs to get up in order for the warriors to recover their strengths as well.”

Abham completely focused himself at Runa’s continued words.

“Right. We have prepared. Our oasis will not fall.”

“You are correct. Our oasis will not fall. And in order to make sure it doesn’t, Abham-nim needs to take the position of Commanding Greatest Warrior and prepare for the enemy’s attack.”

“I will bring it up first thing tomorrow and get it approved. We will need to send someone to the large oasis as well.”

“Since Pareia did not chase after us, we still have a bit of time. We need to reorganize the warriors and fix the formation.”

“I will do that first thing tomorrow morning as well. Right now, the warriors need to rest.”

Runa nodded his head once before continuing.

“As long as Abham-nim is the Commanding Greatest Warrior, this is as far as Pareia will go. Although it could have been dangerous, it is no longer going to be dangerous at all.”

“I will just trust in you.”

“You should not trust me but in Abham-nim yourself. Although I was the one to come up with it, you are the one to put it into effect. Without Abham-nim’s trust, I would just be a theorist who is all talk.”

Abham’s face finally relaxed a bit as he started to speak.

“I am glad you are here.”

“Hahaha. I am the lucky one to have met you, Abham-nim.”

The two of them looked toward each other as they started to laugh.

Once morning came around, Abham had a meeting with the remaining two Greatest Warriors, and sent a messenger to report on the current situation as well as request permission for Abham to become the Commanding Greatest Warrior.

The two Greatest Warriors thought about how Abham was the Greatest Warrior responsible for this oasis and agreed on his becoming the Commanding Greatest Warrior, so Abham started to shuffle the warriors in the way he wanted, no to be clear, the way Runa told him to do.

The first thing he did was give 5,000 warriors each to Shya and Tepoi, to have them strengthen the defense around the oasis.

“Greatest Warriors Shya and Tepoi, our oasis has been preparing for an invasion from Pareia for a long time and have created many traps around the oasis. I will give you a map that marks where the traps are, so please use this to appropriately fend off the enemy warriors.”

Abham gave a map to each of the two Greatest Warriors .

“Since it is a field of sand it is not that large of a trap, but it is these small traps that will break the legs of pirmas, and significantly hinder the enemy’s mobility. Since the two of you are both better strategists than I am, I’m sure you know how to proceed in those situations.”

Shya took the map and looked at it with confusion.

“If you had prepared all of this in advance, why didn’t you tell Greatest Warrior Ebinong? If we strengthen the sides and focus on defending the center, we should be able to defend even if the enemy’s Glow runs wild.”

Abham put on a bitter smile as he answered.

“Greatest Warrior Ebinong did not feel the same way. He was worried that if we looked to be afraid from the beginning when we had an advantage of 10,000 troops, it would lower the morale of

the warriors. Honestly speaking, if the enemy's Glow was not that strong, there is no way we would have suffered such a terrible defeat with our numbers. We just didn't have enough information about our enemy."

Tepoi also nodded his head as he started to speak.

"I did not like Greatest Warrior Ebinong, but I do not want to say that he made the wrong decision for the last battle. As Greatest Warrior Abham just mentioned, we just did not know enough about our enemy. Do not worry about the surrounding areas. Even if the enemy sends small groups to the sides, they will not be more than 3,000 warriors. We will each have 5,000, as well as all of these traps and obstacles. If we still can't defend against them, well, that would make us really stupid. Do not worry about an ambush from the side. All Greatest Warrior Abham will need to do is focus on defending the center of the oasis."

"If the enemy's Glow does not move with the main formation and decides to attack the side, please do not engage in battle against him. Even if they have fallen for a trap."

"Isn't that being too afraid?"

As Shya asked regarding Abham's last statement, Abham shook his head.

"Listening to one of my staff warriors, he said it would be wise to consider him as being equal to Venersis. They say that Venersis is very talented at detecting danger. Haven't you all heard the stories about how it is impossible to ambush Venersis? There will be too much damage to catch him, so avoiding him is our best course of action. We just have to use the same method Pareia used against Venersis."

Since the two Greatest Warriors had personally felt the young Glow's strength, they did not disagree with Abham's assessment.

"We will do as you said."

“Then I leave it in your hands.”

Once Shya and Tepoi left to each lead their warriors to patrol the flanks, Runa came into the paoe.

“You did well, Abham-nim.”

“They are listening to my orders without issue.”

As Abham answered while looking in the direction the two Greatest Warriors left in, Runa had a slightly comfortable smile as he responded.

“They know better than anybody else what would happen if the chain of command is shaken in a dangerous situation like this. Thankfully.”

“So, I did as you said. Now what shall we do?”

“We need to wait and see how Pareia responds. I had expected them to chase after us, so the fact that they did not makes me question whether they are aiming for something else.”

“Aiming for something else?”

As Abham made a confused expression and asked, Runa slowly started to answer.

“We need to first take a look at Pareia’s movement. Will they attack like the invaders they are, or will they take their time and wait for us to create an opening.”

“Which one would you prefer?”

Runa’s smile got bigger as he answered.

“Of course I want Pareia to just try to attack us, but I cannot tell whether they will do as I want.”

“You seem relaxed.”

“Just as Pareia prepared to take us down, we have prepared to fight against them. Isn’t that why we made all of the preparations? There is no reason for us to be anxious at all. It should be Pareia

that is anxious. It will slowly become that way.”

Abham was amazed at Runa each and every time he saw him.

Runa was still young and not even thirty years of age, but still managed to be so relaxed in a battlefield like this. It really was an amazing confidence.

But since Abham approved of Runa’s abilities, he was understanding of Runa’s relaxed demeanor and confidence. As he mentioned, this was the end of Pareia’s victory.

Abham also believed that to be the case.

Book 3-3.3 The Wikaly Make a Move (II)

Let's row our boat forward~

Across the turbulent ocean water to the other side~

Where the mountain view is great and the wind is cool, to the land of hope~

Row the oars~

[Match it to the blowing wind, push it through the water and let's go~](#)

Thriger's voice rang throughout the ship. His voice was so loud that it echoed from his ship in the lead, to the twelfth ship in the back.

"Captain-nim, this is not the ocean but a field of sand."

As the first mate who had been with him since the days of the Desert Runner shouted loudly from the deck, Thriger waved his hand and shouted back.

"This yellow ocean in front of us, what else would you call it but yellow ocean?"

At Thriger's answer, the first mate laughed as if to say there's nothing he can do about Thriger and focused back on his task.

The song that Thriger was singing was so catchy that the warriors who were trained to use the ships started to hum along to his voice.

The quicksand river was full of strong winds as usual, and the sails were catching these winds to push forward quickly.

"Hey~ Is the repair going well?"

Thriger shouted loudly toward the flapping sail. If you look closer at it, it looked like there were some people hanging on the sail.

They had each tied their lifeline to the watchtower on top of the sail and were dangling around while moving around a large needle.

“This isn’t our first day doing needlework. After three years on a ship, you’ll become better at needlework than your wife. Anyways, when will our newbies learn this needlework? We don’t have only one ship anymore. My body is getting sore repairing sails all day.”

There was no way for the sails that receive the sandy wind twenty four hours a day to remain in good shape.

In addition, if you let a rip in the sail last just a few days, the wind flows through there and creates an even bigger hole, making it completely unusable. Thanks to that, the crew members had to inspect the sails throughout the day to look for and repair any holes.

“Isn’t there nothing I can do? The newbies say needlework is something they cannot do even if they were to die and be reborn. We might just have to carry two to three backup sails in the future.”

The desert warriors quickly adjusted to the ship, but they would not even think about doing needlework.

Thriger tried to beg and threaten them multiple times saying it was necessary, but with them saying they won’t do it even if they were beaten to death, Thriger could not do anything about it.

“We might need to bring women on board or go to the continent and hire some crew members.”

As the crew member continued to work hard while complaining, Thriger shouted back.

“I will give you special treatment for your work.”

“The desert tribes don’t believe in personal property, so how will you give me special treatment?”

“Tsk, anyways.”

“Hehehe, do not worry. I am just happy being able to relax and sleep peacefully at night.

As Thriger clicked his tongue, the crew member must have heard it as he started to laugh and respond.

Other than the Desert Runner, the twelve ships with terrible names (in the eyes of the original Desert Runner crew, names such as ‘Feet of the Desert,’ and ‘Chunk of Wood that Squirms on the Sand’ were really terrible. That was why the crew just called them by number) all moved quickly like the wind.

Thriger was calculating a date in his head. He was trying to calculate how late they would be.

What they had forget to include in their calculations in the beginning was the transportation of rations. They had thought about transporting the warriors through the quicksand river, but they had forgotten about the food to feed these warriors. They could move 10,000 warriors at once, but they could not store any rations.

For the original team, there was only 150 crew members so they had always had enough food on board with them. That was the reason they forgot. As for Pareia’s Greatest Warriors, they were not very knowledgeable about ships to begin with, and they assumed that rations were included in determining the amount that could be transported. This was why none of them had realized this problematic situation.

Because of that, they had to travel across the quicksand river between Pareia and Wikaly twice.

If you consider the fact that the path to invade the Wikaly from the quicksand river was rough, it was normal for them to be late than the arranged time to begin with. That was why he had already sent a messenger to say they may be late.

‘Shit, whatever. It is what it is. I can’t do anything about it, so no

point in worrying.”

Thriger showed the calm that crew members have until they meet a storm and raised his voice again to start singing once more.

Let’s row our boat forward~

Across the turbulent ocean water to the other side~

The Wikaly and Pareia’s stalemate had continued for a week already.

They did have small scale battles with tens of warriors on each side, but they were all small with only a few casualties. It was what you would call reconnaissance battles.

The enemy did not look like they were going to come out, and Pareia also had no desire to clash head on until the warriors from the quicksand took over the center of the Wikaly tribe. Because of that, the battlefield was weirdly calm and peaceful.

The three moons rose up into the air and the darkness spread across the desert. Well, the moon and the stars were shining so brightly that even though it was dark, you could still see about 10m in front of you.

Vibli and Trebol were moving around the flanks annoying the warriors of the oasis.

Although they only had about 4,000 warriors, they made it so that half of the warriors in the oasis could not get a good night’s sleep.

The Wikaly warriors tried many times to chase after them and catch them, but Vibli and Trebol would wisely shoot some arrows before retreating, getting the Wikaly warriors all riled up.

They had to do whatever they could to rile them up and instill fear so that more warriors in the rear would come down to this oasis. That was the way to make it easier for the quicksand river warriors.

That was why they needed to draw the warriors out and play a game of cat and mouse. Since they had less warriors, they needed to slowly push back, retreating as much as the Wikaly came forward. The further they got from the oasis, the better. That was the way to make it so that they will get a greater shock from the central invasion.

After digging trenches in the day to get their rest, Trebol and Vibli's warriors were running around the sides of the oasis at night shouting and shooting fire arrows to get on the Wikaly warriors' nerves.

Boom boom boom boom.

A small drum quickly started beating as thousands of Wikaly warriors came dashing out of the oasis.

"They are chasing us as usual."

Vibli coldly mumbled before getting the warriors to ready their arrows. Pareia's warriors lifted their bows as if they were used to this by now.

Vibli noticed a large black item on top of the Wikaly warriors pirmas and started to mock them once he figured out what it was.

"Hoho. They must have prepared for us. They're bringing such a large shield with them on their pirmas."

"I guess they will chase us for quite a while today!"

As one of the lead warriors shouted back, Vibli nodded his head and ordered.

"Ready."

At Vibli's order, the lead warriors lifted up their flags.

Papapat! Papapat!

At the sound of the pirmas dashing across the desert sand, Vibli lifted his brandistock high in the air and waited for them to get closer.

“Fire.”

At Vibli’s command, the lead warriors lowered their flags and the desert sky was filled with 1,500 arrows.

Psh. Psh. Psh.

The arrows shot through the night air as they quickly flew toward the Wikaly warriors.

Clang. Clang. Clangclang.

As the majority of the arrows bounced off the Wikaly warriors’ shields, Vibli ordered once more.

“Increase the angle!”

The lead warriors shouted.

“Increase your angle and pull the bow string as far as you can.”

Pareia’s warriors uniformly raised their bows to sixty degrees and pulled back their strings.

“Fire.”

A lot of arrows shot across the night sky once more.

It would be easy to block them during the day, but right now was night time. No matter how bright the moon was shining, it was impossible to see all of those thin arrows.

There was the sound of arrows hitting the shields, but more Wikaly warriors fell off their pirma than before.

“Retreat at full speed.”

Since it would be hard to lose the Wikaly if they were too close, Vibli ordered the warriors to retreat. Since they had been doing the same thing for the last week, Pareia’s warriors quickly retreated as if they were waiting for his command.

“Charge at full speed!”

Hearing a loud shout from the Wikaly formation, the Wikaly

warriors threw down their shields and took out their shamshirs.

Originally, the Wikaly warriors responded back with arrows as well, but they were not able to cause any damage to the retreating warriors. After that, they gave up on arrows and just started to chase them as fast as they could on their pirmas.

The chase had commenced once more.

Since Pareia's warriors were moving with two pirmas each for this plan, after about 30 minutes, they switched pirmas while still moving.

Only the warriors with the best mobility and riding skills were brought forth for this plan, so their movements were as natural as flowing water.

“They are really persistent today.”

Seeing the Wikaly warriors who had been chasing them for over two hours, one of the lead warriors started to click his tongue.

After taking a look to the back, Vibli started to shout toward the lead warriors after seeing the Wikaly warriors still chasing them with all of their might.

“Their formation is starting to crumble! We will keep running for about thirty minutes before fixing our formation and counterattacking!”

“Understood!”

At first, there were three to four thousand Wikaly warriors chasing them, but after a long chase, they were starting to look like an “I” formation. The lead warriors understood what their Greatest Warrior was thinking and responded back.

After about 30 more minutes, the number of Wikaly warriors fell down quite a bit. Pareia's warriors made a wide turn as they started to fix up their formation.

“I don't know who it is, but they are really stupid. Even if they

have the advantage, to chase us this far like this.”

Vibli felt remorse for the enemy warriors and scoffed toward their leading officer as he waited for his warriors to finish falling information.

Once the Wikaly warriors suddenly saw Pareia’s warriors turning around and fixing up their formation, they looked behind them and realized that there were not many of them left and quickly turned their pirmas around.

“Alright, it is now our turn to chase them. Charge!”

“Waaaaaaa~!”

Pareia’s warriors shouted as they started to chase down the retreating Wikaly warriors.

The Wikaly warriors in the back started to turn their pirmas around as well after seeing the warriors in the front turn back.

“Don’t leave any of them alive!”

Vibli swung his brandistock widely as he shouted, and the responding shouts of the warriors continued to get louder.

Their bodies were starting to heat up as they managed to push hundreds of hesitating Wikaly warriors off of their pirmas.

After a week of just shooting their arrows and being chased down, they should have quite an itch to fight. Pareia was rushing at full speed to slash the Wikaly warriors in their way.

How much time must have passed like that?

After chasing them for a while, Vibli started to get a weird feeling. Even if the opposing lead warrior was stupid, the desert warriors were not completely clueless. After this amount of time, they should have started to fix up their formation as well.

“All units stop!”

The moment Vibli shouted loudly, thick ropes rose up from the

sand.

The pirmas that were running at full speed ran into those ropes and started to fall over.

“All units stop! All units stop!”

As Vibli shouted loudly trying to get them to stop, he felt like his body was floating in the air. His pirma had been caught by the rope in the sand as well.

‘What is going on? We already retreated through this area before. When did they make such a trap?’

Truth be told, all of this was Runa Brink’s shrewd planning. The reason it felt like a sloppy chase was because the warriors that fell behind had dug the ground and were hiding with the ropes.

Runa had observed and dissected Pareia’s attack pattern for the last week and knew that Pareia’s third generation warriors Vibli and Trebol would definitely counterattack if they saw a sloppy attempt to chase them. In order to catch them off guard, they had set the trap in the same path that Pareia took to retreat.

Pareia’s warriors could not slow down and the majority of them could not avoid the trap as they started to fall off their pirmas.

There were many who broke their necks or backs in the process and died, as well as many who broke their arms or legs and fainted on the spot.

A very small amount managed to luckily get up without injuries or not fall off of their pirmas, but the Wikaly warriors who were hiding nearby caught all of them.

The same thing was happening with Trebol’s formation on the other side.

Pareia’s two Greatest Warriors could not do much as they served their 4,000 warriors to the Wikaly, and they themselves ended up as prisoners as well.

The Wikaly counterattack had started.

End of Chapter 3.

It's [an old Korean song](#); the lyrics are changed slightly for copyright reasons (I would presume)

Book 3-4.1 Negotiations

Man Boo Boo Dang

The phrase Man boo boo dang, which means they can even handle 10,000 people applied to them.

“What did you just say?”

Yulian shot up from his seat as he asked.

Egane looked at Yulian before bowing his head and answering in a depressed voice.

“Trebol and Vibli, as well as all 4,000 warriors were annihilated.”

“Yes, so I am asking you what you mean by annihilated.”

“I was curious as to why the reconnaissance warrior who was supposed to show up did not show up this morning, but the reconnaissance warrior that just went to the oasis.....”

Egane could not easily continue speaking.

Greatest Warrior Amboma who was next to Yulian spoke as if he was frustrated. Egane was not usually one to beat around the bush like this.

“Egane. Tell us exactly what happened. What did the reconnaissance warrior find?”

“Sigh~!”

Egane let out a loud sigh as he continued.

“Trebol and Vibli’s leader flags were hanging on the oasis with a giant hole in them.”

Yulian and Amboma’s hearts sunk.

They could not believe it. Those two Greatest Warriors were Pareia’s best of the best.

The fact that their flags were hanging meant that they weren’t

killed in battle but ended up as prisoners.

If the two of them were dead, the Wikaly would not have raised their flags like this out of respect. This was an unbreakable rule between all desert tribes.

“Are you sure? Is it perhaps a scheme by the enemy?”

As Yulian urgently asked, Egane shook his head. It was something he couldn't believe either, so he had verified it multiple times with the reconnaissance warrior. Furthermore, other reconnaissance warriors brought back the same news.

“This, no, this is not possible. For us to lose two Greatest Warriors right now, even if we manage to take the center of the Wikaly, we won't have a way to pierce through this oasis over here!”

Egane nodded at Yulian's words.

The plan this time was that once they caught the Wikaly off guard and took the central oases, they could cut off the supply line to this oasis and pincer them from both sides while they were in disarray. Then they could take a minimum of four oases from the Wikaly.

If that happened, the remaining three oases would not be able to last very long.

But that was only possible if the main formation could hold back the Wikaly warriors currently in this oasis.

With things the way they were right now, it might be their warriors that end up getting a pincer attack.

“I don't know who in the Wikaly tribe could manage to catch both Vibli and Trebol at once. The only famous person among the Wikaly is Ebinong. There is no way Trebol and Vibli would have been careless, so they must have clearly fallen for the enemy's scheme. Just who?”

Amboma started to mumble as if he could not believe what happened.

Egane was also standing there in complete disbelief. Egane knew that the Wikaly did not have anybody of note as well, that was why they had strategized to send only 2,000 warriors with each of them for 4,000 total warriors to annoy and irritate the 20,000+ enemy warriors.

The inside of the paoe was full of despair. None of them could speak through the shock and just started to think about how to resolve this situation.

“Is there no method to get them back?”

As Yulian ended the silence and started to speak, Egane shook his head as he answered.

“The warriors maybe, but they will definitely not let Trebol or Vibli go. The two of them are Greatest Warriors who have a reputation throughout the desert. It would make no sense for them to let the two of them go.”

“Regardless of what we offer?”

“Maybe if we completely give up on the Wikaly and sign a non-aggression pact.”

“Ah~!”

Yulian let out a long sigh.

If they could not take over the Wikaly now, his dream would be pushed back at least ten years.

“Glow, someone is here from the Wikaly tribe.”

Hearing the voice of a warrior from outside of the paoe, the three of them looked toward each other.

“Send them in right away.”

Once Yulian shouted, a warrior with a Wikaly flag on his back

entered the paoe.

“My name is warrior Yoshishi Mozart. I am here greeting Yulian Provoke-nim, the Glow of Pareia, under the orders of Wikaly’s Greatest Warrior Abham Shuttra-nim.”

Even while he was in the enemy’s base, Yoshishi, who revealed himself as a warrior, did not seem pressured at all as he clearly spoke each word.

“Warrior Yoshishi, what message have you brought?”

“Pareia’s well-known two Greatest Warriors as well as 3,000 of Pareia’s warriors are currently our prisoner. Our Greatest Warrior is hoping you will pay the ransom for their return.”

“What?”

Yulian, as well as the two Greatest Warriors, were shocked.

‘Ransom for their return? Are they being serious right now?’

Egane could not believe what was going on through the Wikaly’s mind right now.

Were they saying they could beat Pareia even if they let the two of them go?

Yulian urgently answer.

“State the condition.”

“We are hoping that you will release all of the Wikaly warriors currently being held prisoner by Pareia. In addition, all of Pareia’s warriors will need to leave the Wikaly territory and promise to never attack the Wikaly tribe while Pareia’s Glow Yulian Provoke-nim is alive.”

Slam!

As Yulian’s fist landed on the table with anger, the table made a loud noise as all four legs crumbled. Yoshishi flinched for a second, but he must not be an average warrior as he remained still and

maintained eye contact with Yulian.

Yulian stared at Yoshishi for a while before clenching his teeth and starting to frown.

“Is that the will of your Greatest Warrior?”

Egane asked from the side and Yoshishi answered.

“Yes. If you are willing to agree to that, he said he will release Pareia’s warriors and the two Greatest Warriors immediately.”

“Are the two of them safe?”

“Both of them are safe. They are unharmed.”

Yoshishi emphasized the fact that they were not injured. It was important in order to raise the price of the ransom.

‘Just what must have happened for the two of them to be caught without even being injured?’

Egane could not understand it.

Yulian shouted at that time.

“Deliver this message to your Greatest Warrior. It is easy to release the prisoners, but we cannot retreat. However, I will offer up something else in return. I will not take your lives.”

“.....?”

Yoshishi had a confused expression on his face and looked toward Yulian.

What was this Glow saying right now? The Wikaly were the ones with the shamshirs in their hands right now.

“You said you will not take our lives?”

“I do not say the same thing twice. Make sure you deliver the message to your Greatest Warrior. If he does not release them right now, none of you will live.”

Yoshishi could not believe what he was saying. Does this Glow

who is called a War God not understand the current situation? That was what Yoshishi thought was going on.

“I am curious to know whether Pareia’s Glow properly understands the current situation.”

“Go. That is not something for you to determine. Deliver that message to your Greatest Warrior. The moment he release them, we will safely release all of the Wikaly prisoners we currently have and pardon all of your lives. The Pareia’s Glow does not lie.”

Yoshishi had a smirk on his face. Honestly, it was not even funny.

“Then I shall deliver that message.”

Once Yoshishi left, Egane and Amboma looked toward Yulian with concern.

‘We needed to find a compromise, so why did he send him away with that kind of message? That means that we lost our chance for a deal.’

“Glow.”

As Egane started to speak, Yulian lifted up his hand to say don’t say anything as he paced around inside the paoe. He sometimes scratched his head, and sometimes rubbed his rough beard with his palms as he continued to pace around. After a while, Yulian finally started to speak.

“Greatest Warrior Egane, prepare to release the Wikaly prisoners if needed.”

“Glow, they will never accept such a proposal.”

“No, they will have to accept it.”

“Do you have something in mind?”

At Amboma’s question, Yulian seemed to be deep in thought for a moment before he answered.

“Just prepare to release them.”

Once Yulian stepped outside the paoe, Amboma looked toward Egane and quietly asked.

“Just what do you think he is planning to do?”

“That is what I wanted to ask you. Just what is he thinking.....”

The two Greatest Warriors looked toward the direction Yulian left in with concerned gazes.

The Wikaly warriors were extremely happy about their victory right now. While they were really low on morale as a result of that terrible defeat in the first battle, catching those two famous Greatest Warriors of Pareia as well as 3,000+ prisoners made them completely forget about that defeat.

All of them were singing praises toward Greatest Warrior Abham as well as lead warrior Runa Brink who came up with the plan. There were even whispers throughout the oasis that they should have put Abham in charge instead of Ebinong from the beginning.

“Shouldn’t we have a victory feast? Our Wikaly warriors have been feeling down for too long, so letting them relax a bit with a win like this should help raise their morale even more.”

Abham was full of joy like everyone else and asked Runa with excitement.

“It is times like this that we really need to keep them under control. Although Pareia only has a little over 10,000 warriors remaining, I have a feeling they will not go away like this.”

Looking at the still composed Runa, Abham made an expression that seemed to say ‘no way,’ as he went behind Runa and started to pat Runa’s shoulders.

“Aren’t you being too paranoid? What can they do with just 10,000 warriors? We have 25,000 warriors and plenty of supplies because we have prepared for it beforehand. We also won’t do a

direct battle with them as you mentioned, so what is the problem?”

Runa rubbed his chin with his thumb and index finger as he answered feeling something was weird.

“Don’t you think they are being too passive even though they were the ones to invade? We only had one real battle in the last month. Even the two Greatest Warriors we caught this time were not trying to fight us. All they were doing was irritating us and then running away.”

“You are talking like you are not happy that we only fought once. But do not worry. As long as I am the Commanding Greatest Warrior, there will be no problems with you showing off your skills. By the time this war is over, you and I will both have a lot of influence in the tribe, so we will not have any future problems either.”

Abham, who no longer had the nervousness he had in the beginning, picked up the bottle of cold cactus tea from the table as he poured Runa a cup.

“Nothing will be a problem anymore.”

Runa shook his head as he answered.

“That is not the problem. Pareia clearly has a plan. No matter how much I think about it, I cannot figure out why they are being so passive. The people who came to invade are not attacking. That means they are waiting for an opening to attack, or waiting until their strategy is complete.”

“Hahaha, that is why I am saying you are paranoid. As long as we are standing strong here like this, do you think they can get past our oasis with just 10,000 warriors? No matter what they try to do, as long as we protect this oasis, there will be no issues for our Wikaly. In fact, it is you who said that to me.”

As Abham laughed and responded, Runa still shook his head as he

answered.

“But that is still not enough to explain this bad feeling I have.”

Book 3-4.2 Yulian's Plan (I)

“It is probably because of the nervousness from the fact that there are not many warriors left in the back that if we lose here, it is over. So just relax.”

“Do you think that is it?”

“Isn't it obvious? I am the same way. I am nervous without reason. That would be the only reason we feel so nervous even though we have more warriors. It is from the fear that if we lose, it is the end for our Wikaly.”

Runa finally relented after Abham's words. It was because what he said was not wrong.

After finishing his discussion with Abham, Runa left the paoe and headed toward the paoe where the two Greatest Warriors of Pareia were staying.

The two warriors standing guard recognized Runa and bowed their heads.

“Were there any problems?”

“No. Both of them have been quiet.”

“You must not do anything to offend them.”

“Yes sir.”

The two warriors responded in unison.

Honestly speaking, guarding the two Greatest Warriors was just a formality. If they were to try to forcefully block the two Greatest Warriors from escaping, they just had to kill them or tie them up and bury them in the sand with only their head remaining above it.

However, the warriors of the desert respected the heroes and strong warriors, regardless of their tribal affiliations.

Especially Pareia's third generation Greatest Warriors Vibli and Trebol, these were the greatest of warriors just underneath the shadow of Venersis. The fact that they were able to catch these two Greatest Warriors was a sense of pride for the Wikaly. As a result, the Wikaly were giving them the respect they deserved as Greatest Warriors.

Furthermore, because Vibli and Trebol were not thinking about escaping as they lost in a fair battle, it really was just done as a formality. They were just hoping for their tribe to pay the ransom and retrieve them.

Runa lifted the cloth covering the entrance of the paoe and entered.

Vibli and Trebol were sitting on the carpet with their eyes closed.

"Wikaly warrior Runa Brink greets Greatest Warriors Trebol and Vibli."

At Runa's words, the two Greatest Warriors opened their eyes and looked toward him.

They had been hearing a lot about this man.

"It was a great leadership and strategy you showed. Both of us ended up being tricked."

"You praise me too much. I was just lucky to have a scheme go in my favor. But I am still happy. The fact that it will not be difficult to hold Pareia back with you two Greatest Warriors here does make me feel better."

"Hmph."

As Vibli snorted before closing his eyes again, Trebol shook his head and closed his eyes as well.

"We have started the negotiations for your ransom."

The two of them opened their eyes again at Runa's words. They were not expecting the Wikaly to offer to release them.

Although they were caught this time from a very big mistake, if they were released, they would not make such mistakes ever again. Furthermore, with the two of them, Pareia's strength will be more than doubled.

“Our condition was that if Glow Yulian-nim can promise to not invade the Wikaly while he is alive, we will let the two of you go. Shouldn't we at least get this much ransom for two Greatest Warriors? How do you think he responded?”

The two Greatest Warriors closed their eyes again. They knew about how much the Glow emphasized the fact that if they miss this opportunity, there will be no other opportunities in the future. And even if there were, they would take too long to appear.

‘I'm sure he was extremely frustrated.’

This was what the two Greatest Warriors were thinking, and they were right.

‘He will not accept this deal.’

“I guess you expected it.”

Runa asked as if he was shocked after seeing their expressions. He was able to verify just how strong of a desire the enemy Glow had to invade them.

“This is what Glow Yulian-nim said. He said that if we do not let the two of you go, he will kill us all. If we let you go, then he will let us live. The thing that makes me wonder about this is whether Glow Yulian-nim understands the current situation properly.”

“.....”

“What do you think? Do you two believe that you can convince him if I was to let you go?”

Vibli's eyes started to shine as he started to speak.

“Just what are you planning to do right now?”

“It is as I have mentioned. I will let the two of you go. Ah! I can

also let your warriors go as well. That part will only be if Pareia releases our warriors as well, but if it is just the two of you, I will let you go with the condition that you will convince Glow Yulian-nim to retreat.”

“Are you joking right now?! Are you trying to mock us?!”

As Trebol shouted loudly, Runa had an expression that seemed to ask what Trebol meant.

“What do you mean? I am being sincere right now.”

“You are telling a Greatest Warrior who leads warriors in battle to tell their chiefs to not go to war? If that is not a joke, then what else could it be?”

“I just want peace. Lately, our Wikaly has never annoyed Pareia by causing issues at our border, and when Pareia’s former Glow had faced that terrible situation and Pareia and the Shuarei went to war, our Wikaly did not act on it. Since he forgot about all of that and turned his sword toward us, how could we not be frustrated by it?”

At Runa’s words that flowed out like the flowing quicksand, the two Greatest Warriors could not say anything.

“Then I shall come visit you again in the future.”

Runa left the two silent Greatest Warriors and headed out of the paoe.

Even after these two Greatest Warriors returned to Pareia in the future, their will to invade should be affected by this conversation.

A smile started to form on Runa’s lips.

Pere and the Red Storm’s four horsemen entered Yulian’s paoe.

Yulian had called for them.

“You called?”

“Sit.”

Yulian offered each of them a seat and slowly started to look at them once they sat down.

They were all reliable warriors. He had debated gathering all of the Red Storm warriors to talk about this, but he thought it would have a greater impact for them to share this rather than him. That was why he had called them over.

“What is going on?”

Pere noticed the hesitation in Yulian’s face and quickly asked.

“I called to talk about entering the lion’s den.”

Once Yulian opened his mouth, Pere, as well as Haisha and the others, all looked at each other. They could not understand what he was talking about.

“I know it is reckless, but I believe it is doable. That

“Just what is it that you are beating around the bush so much?”

As Triquel cautiously asked, Yulian hesitated before finally answering.

“I wish to go rescue the two Greatest Warriors who have been taken captive.”

“Of course we have to do that. If we can take over the center of the Wikaly, that should not be too difficult.”

Yulian shook his head at Pere’s response.

“It will be difficult with just Greatest Warrior Egane. We need the same number of warriors as the enemy, as well as Greatest Warriors Trebol and Vibli. Since we have less warriors than they do, we need to rely on the movement of segmented groups to capture the Wikaly. Right now, our choices are to either retreat, or partake in a dangerous battle.”

“So what is it that the Glow is thinking about?”

Haisha’s eyes opened widely as he asked. It was as if he could

vividly see Yulian's idea.

"The Red Storm and I will barge into the Wikaly Oasis to rescue the two Greatest Warriors."

"Hyung-nim!"

"Glow!"

The ones to shout at Yulian's idea were Pere and Shubeon.

"How could you think about doing something so reckless?"

"That idea is terrible. We may have accepted the fact that we may die at war, but I do not wish to die such a dog's death. Even if I die, I wish to do it in a large battlefield after I have done everything I could."

Pere and Shubeon each stated their opposition against the plan.

Yulian looked toward Haisha. Haisha was the warrior who understood Yulian the best. Haisha had understood Yulian's intentions from the beginning as Yulian was beating around the bush, and had been thinking deeply about it from the beginning. Triquel was just looking at Yulian with his eyes wide open.

"Is it an order?"

Thrint looked Yulian directly in the eye as he asked.

"Can you call this an order? I am just bringing up a potential course of action."

"Are you confident?"

Shubeon turned pale at Thrint's question and shouted.

"Thrint, what the hell are you saying right now? It is our job as his personal guards to prevent the Glow-nim from making the wrong decision."

"Shubeon, are you confident that we will die a dog's death?"

"Thrint!"

“We have been a part of three different battles where over 10,000 warriors clashed against each other. Have the members of Red Storm ever ended up with injuries in any of those battles?”

“We had allies with us then. This time, it will be just us.”

“It is still the same thing. All we have to do is run toward Yulian-nim’s back. It does not matter whether we have allies with us or not. Answer me. Do you think that all of us in the Red Storm will die a dog’s death while fighting with Yulian-nim?”

“That.....”

Shubeon could not say anything.

He was confident about any challenges as long as he followed after Yulian. The thing that he felt in every battle was that as long as he followed after Yulian, he was certain that there would be no problems.

The fact that there were no injuries whatsoever to the Red Storm warriors was proof of that.

“I want to ask that question as well. Glow. How confident are you that we will succeed?”

Haisha must have finished thinking as he finally started to speak.

The moment Yulian nodded his head, Pere shot up from his seat as he started to shout.

“What the hell are you all saying? Haisha, even you are going to agree with the Glow’s reckless plan? If something happens to the Glow, it will not just be an issue with the war. It will be the end of Pareia.”

Yulian reached his arm out and grabbed Pere’s wrist and sat him back down.

“Hyung-nim!”

As Pere shouted in frustration, Yulian started to speak.

“That is why I called you here, Pere. In the off chance that something happens to me, you must take control of the tribe.”

“Do not say something so stupid. Do you really think that makes sense? How could there be such a reckless plan? You want to take 50 people to take on 20,000 because you have faith in your abilities? Hyung-nim, do you think that you are some kind of god?”

“Pere!”

“I cannot agree to this even if I die. You want me to take control if you go and something ends up happening? Do you think that the position of Glow is some type of child’s play?”

Pere huffed and puffed as he looked toward the Red Storm warriors and started to speak.

“You all say something as well.”

Thrint stood up from his seat and started to speak.

“If it is an order, I will prepare.”

“Thrint!”

Shubeon grabbed onto Thrint and shouted, but Thrint did not move as he just stood there looking at Yulian.

Haisha stood up as well as he started to speak.

“I also believe that we will not have any problems as long as we are with the Glow. I will convince the Red Storm warriors.”

“Haisha, what will we do if even you are convinced by this unbelievable plan?”

This time, Shubeon looked toward Haisha as he started to shout. He then started to speak toward Triquel who was still looking around at everyone.

“Triquel, help me stop them.”

Shubeon felt like he could stop this if Triquel was on their side as

they would outnumber them three to two.

But Triquel looked toward everyone before hitting the table and starting to speak.

“Shit, whatever. Half of us have already agreed and the Glow is saying let’s do it. All I can do is follow his will.”

Pere and Shubeon looked toward each other and beating their chests with frustration in their minds.

“I will never agree with this. But if you still wish to go, I will follow you as well.”

“You are not allowed to come.”

“Hyung-nim, just why is it that you are allowed to do it but I am not?”

Book 3-4.3 Yulian's Plan (II)

“You might think that I am reckless, but I do not think that I am being reckless at all. It might not be responsible of me, but I truly feel that way. Nobody can kill me. And Red Storm just needs to chase after my back. Nobody in the desert can stop the Red Storm when we are charging in a straight line.”

“The enemy has already prepared and are waiting for us to attack. They also have over 20,000 warriors.”

“Whether they have prepared or not, whether they number hundreds, thousands, or tens of thousands, the ones who will be in our way will only number in the tens at once. I will pierce through and Red Storm will follow.”

“If you are so confident, why did you call us all here? Furthermore, how come I am not allowed to go?”

“My master mentioned that you must always be cautious just in case. No matter how perfect a plan is, as long as it is not something being done by the heavens, there will always be an opening. I am just hoping that you will fill that opening.”

“Ah! You...you make me speechless.”

“Weren't you always more action than words?”

Pere started to breathe heavily. Thanks to that, his shoulders went up and then fell down. He had given up. His hyung's head was already filled with this plan of his.”

“Do whatever you want. To ask for our opinions when you have already made up your mind is the same as ignoring us.”

Pere said that as if he was really angry and left the paoe. Shubeon watched with a disappointed gaze, as if he had lost a sturdy ally.

“Shubeon, are you planning on opposing this until the end?”

Once Yulian asked, Shubeon signed internally as he responded.

How could he convince him when his own flesh and blood failed to do so?

“What good will it do for me to oppose it on my own when the other warriors have all agreed? I will start to prepare.”

Once the four Red Storm warriors left the paoe, Yulian put his greatsword on top of the table.

This sword will be drenched in blood tonight.

“Huuuuuuuu~!”

Since he was nervous about it as well, Yulian started to take some deep breaths.

At first, he considered asking his master for help and just charging in with just the two of them. However, he quickly got rid of that idea.

‘If I keep on relying on my master, I will not be able to do anything without him in the future.’

That is what Yulian was thinking. That was why he had not told Chun Myung Hoon about this plan. Although his master wasn’t one who wouldn’t figure it out just because Yulian didn’t tell him, he wanted to do it without his master’s help.

‘That sensation came every time I was in a battle. Since I felt it again this last battle, there shouldn’t be any problems. The only question is whether I can succeed with just that.’

Yulian was seriously thinking.

Honestly speaking, this plan was made relying on that intuition alone.

The scenarios that got created in his mind even without him looking. The location of the enemy, the movement of the allies, this intuition was something that expanded his senses to the point that if he wanted to, he could even hear each person’s breathing.

He had wondered about how he had developed such intuition

after the first campaign against the Shuarei, and what he finally realized after thinking about it for a long time was that it was the blessing of the Red Dragon he met during his coming-of-age ceremony.

- May you have the protection of the Gods.

IT was hard to believe, but there could not be any other answers.

‘I’m sure Venersis has this type of intuition as well. He must have become a War God because of the protection of the Gods.’

That was what Yulian believed. According to his master, both Venersis and he had received the mandate of heaven.

As complicated thoughts started to fill his mind, Yulian strongly shook his head. He decided to only think about one thing right now.

‘As long as I do my part we will not fail.’

Yulian firmed that resolve in his mind and decided to only think about that right now.

The Red Storm were warriors who had trained like that.

A bit later, Haisha returned to let Yulian know that they were prepared to move. Yulian stood up from his seat and put his greatsword on his waist as he stepped out.

Yulian slowly looked around the Red Storm warriors who were lined up in four lines under the sunlight.

Although this really was a reckless plan, he could not find even a glimpse of fear in the eyes of his warriors. Rather, they were all shining as much as the swords on their sides.

Yulian asked in a loud voice.

“Did you all hear?”

“OOwooooooooo~!”

“Others may think that this is reckless. However, I believe in

myself, as well as us. Am I wrong to feel this way?”

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

“Are you confident? Are you confident that you will not die? Are you confident that you will be able to follow me?”

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

Each time Yulian said something, the Red Storm warriors chanted back in union.

“Then, let’s go. Once today is over, The Wikaly, as well as the entire desert will know. They will know why we are the Red Storm.”

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

“We will finish this before the sun comes back up.”

The Red Storm started to move forward at Yulian’s command.

As the sun started to head down, the Wikaly patrol warriors saw a group of warriors in the distance.

“Is there some type of training today?”

“I didn’t hear about anything like that.”

One warrior answered another warrior’s question.

“Then what are those warriors?”

“I’m not sure. Did anybody receive a message?”

The other warriors shook their heads.

“Is it perhaps Pareia’s warriors?”

When one of the warriors asked that, the rest started to laugh.

“It doesn’t even seem like there are 100 of them. Maybe 60, or 70 max? You think Pareia will charge in with that many people?”

“I guess unless they were crazy, they would not attempt to charge in with that small amount.”

“They might be the diplomatic team. Since two of their Greatest Warriors are captured, wouldn’t they need to come negotiate the ransom for their release?”

As one of the warriors shared their thoughts, all of them nodded their heads. They were moving pretty fast and had quite a large party for a diplomatic team, but it wasn’t too many people to the point that it would be really weird.

“Shouldn’t we still question them?”

The five patrol warriors agreed and started to ride toward the arriving bunch.

Their thought process was pretty normal if you think about it. Nobody would expect someone to try to do something to an oasis with 20,000 warriors with less than 60.

But their mistake was that all five of them rode toward them.

At least one of them should have rushed back to the oasis to notify them of the situation.

The heads of the five warriors who were just talking flew up in the air with the sun to their back, before falling to the ground.

“We cannot give the enemy any time to prepare. We need to rush in like a storm and escape like the wind.”

Yulian shouted toward the Red Storm warriors.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

Although they were the enemy, to kill the patrol warriors like this did not make any of them feel good.

But this was not the time to become emotional about something like that. This was the middle of a war and it was their fault for forgetting about their mission as patrol officers.

Yulian and Red Storm killed other Wikaly patrol warriors like that as they continued to rush forward.

The Wikaly camp only realized what was going on when two moons rose up into the night sky. It was only after Yulian and the Red Storm crossed the wooden fences around the oasis and reached right in front of them.

“It is a surprise attack from Pareia!”

The Wikaly warriors who noticed the Red Storm rushing forward while killing their peers started to shout and there was chaos in the oasis as they were surprised by the warriors’ shouts.

As they were still prepared for battle, that chaos did not last too long.

Abham quickly gathered his equipment and started to command the warriors with Runa, and it quickly felt like Yulian and the Red Storm was captured in their encirclement.

“The Glow of Pareia, the Desert Conqueror Yulian Provoke and the Red Storm have come to retrieve Pareia’s warriors.”

As Yulian lifted up his chest and shouted loudly with 20,000 Wikaly warriors watching him, all of them could not help but be shocked.

They came with just that many people?

And where is he getting such arrogant confidence from?

Yulian looked around at the frozen Wikaly warriors, and the ones who made eye contact with him subconsciously turned their heads away.

“Where are Vibli and Trebol? Their Glow has arrived.”

As Yulian shouted once more, Runa finally came to his senses and started to urgently talk to Abham.

“Abham-nim, are you just going to sit back and watch? The morale of our warriors is falling.”

Abham nodded his head at Runa’s words and started to shout as he stepped forward.

“Pareia’s Glow, I respect your courage. However, we are in the middle of a war right now! Do not think we will let you return safely when you have dug your own grave. We will end this war by capturing you.”

The moment Yulian turned his head toward Abham, Abham almost subconsciously flinched.

If he did not remember that he was the Commanding Greatest Warrior, he certainly would have done so.

“Today, I will show you why I am called the Desert Conqueror. I will show you why I have received the title of the War God of the East. I suppose I can retrieve my warriors by capturing you.”

Yulian shouted like that as he lifted his greatsword high into the sky. As the moonlight reflected off of the sword, it felt like that light was enveloping Yulian’s body.

Yulian started to move and the Red Storm started to follow.

Yulian and Red Storm were like a wild animal in a herd of pinas. Nobody could stop Yulian’s movements, nor could they stop the Red Storm warriors following behind him. All they could do was chase after them once they passed by.

Some of the valiant Wikaly warriors tried to get in between them, but they just ended up injured or dead for no reason.

The saying that one hand cannot block ten hands did not apply to them.

Each of their greatswords had no problem overpowering ten shamshirs.

Runa, who was seeing Yulian and Red Storm’s might with his own eyes for the first time, could not hide his astonishment.

This must be why the Shuarei, as well as Ebinong, suffered terrible defeats. It was because they did not know about this overpowering strength and ability to charge forward.

“Abham-nim!”

Runa called out to Abham and Abham was finally about to take his eyes off of their power that he was seeing again.

“You must hand out orders! If we cannot handle them quickly, it will become a curse in our warriors’ minds. Please move the warriors. This might actually be a chance for us. If it is not today, who can catch them in battle?”

Abham looked back toward Yulian and Red Storm. They still did not seem to be having any trouble.

“All units, change to the Old Moon formation.”

The Wikaly warriors started to come together at their leader’s command. As long as they had an order, they must follow it even if it leads to their death.

At first they were shocked, and then it became chaotic, but as time went by, their fighting spirit started to burn and their movement started to become more agile.

And as layers after layers of encirclement surrounded Yulian and Red Storm, Yulian’s intuition started to awaken.

The enemy’s movements, location, where they were the strongest, where they were weakest, all of those images were drawn in his head. Most importantly, the exit route that he needed was drawn as well.

“I am the Glow of Pareia!”

Yulian shouted at the top of his lungs as he ran forward to head toward that exit route.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

The Red Storm warriors responded to Yulian’s shout and did their best to stick behind him.

Book 3-4.4 Yulian's Plan (III)

The Red Storm's four horsemen, as well as a couple others, were already at the Greatest Warrior level. Although they still could not compare to the third generation Greatest Warriors of Pareia, they were at the level of the other Greatest Warriors. Two to three Wikaly warriors were falling at their hands each time.

“They really are amazing.”

Abham could not help but be marveled at the sight.

“No matter how strong they are, they will not be able to escape. As long as they are human, they will not have infinite stamina.”

Runa spoke as if he was mumbling to himself and quickly waved the flag to move the warriors.

Although it looked funny that they were moving 20,000 warriors to handle less than 60 warriors, the opponent had that much value.

‘Who knows, they might not be human.’

Runa was having some thoughts that were contradicting what he had just said, but quickly shook his head. Whether the opponent was human or not, they still needed to catch him.

“I must move as well. There is too much injury to the warriors. Wouldn't it be better for me to defend them?”

Runa urgently grabbed Abham as he started to speak.

“You cannot do that. I believe their goal is Abham-nim.”

Abham could only watch the warriors being slashed with despair at Runa's opposition.

As Runa mentioned, Yulian was aiming for Abham.

He determined that Abham was the Commanding Greatest Warrior as he was the first to step forward and wanted to catch him, but there were too many warriors in the way.

As he continued to move here and there to avoid being completely surrounded, he was starting to get further and further from Abham.

He even started to worry that the Red Storm warriors' stamina will fall before he could get to Abham.

They were still moving vigorously so that kind of worry was not needed right now, but they will eventually reach their limit. He needed to push forward even if it was reckless.

“Huuuuuuuu~!”

Yulian took a deep breath. After that, once his body had enough ki, he shouted out loudly.

‘One breath, that will be the end.’

The moment Yulian made up his mind, his movement started to change.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

Like a flag fluttering in a hurricane, Yulian continuously started to swing his greatsword as he moved forward.

If there was something in his way, he slashed and stabbed past it without lowering the speed of his pirma.

He was moving so fast that the Red Storm warriors were starting to fall behind.

“Abham-nim, please escape!”

Runa shouted loudly, but Abham shook his head.

This was an opponent who was showing great strength to fight him. Looking past the warrior's etiquette, he could not escape while watching the Wikaly warriors fall one by one trying to prevent Yulian from getting closer. That was not something Abham's pride would allow him to do.

‘Fine, I will think that I am dead and take you on. If we can catch

you even at the cost of my life, we will win this war. Our Wikaly will still have Runa.'

Abham started to let out a loud shout.

"Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh, come. I will not retreat!"

"Oowaaaaaaa~!"

The Wikaly warriors started to forget about their fear of Yulian and Red Storm thanks to the shout of their Greatest Warrior and started to increase their efforts.

Yulian could not hear anything at that moment. Well, he could hear it, but it was so quiet that you could barely call it noise. The sound of his heart beating that was ringing through his chest and head was the only thing he could hear.

The distance between Yulian and the warrior he was aiming for was not very far now. Yulian jumped off from his pirma high into the air. Although he didn't fly high like a bird, the height of his jump in the midst of a fierce battle stole everyone's attention and made the shamshirs stop moving for a moment.

Although the amount of time it took Yulian to jump up and land back on the ground was only long enough to blink twice, the only thing everyone could remember was the memory that Yulian had flown like a bird.

Yulian started to dance as he was running. He was swinging his arm around and jumping up and down. That kind of dance. Maybe it is best to describe it as feeling free moving on his own two feet after being on top of the pirma for so long. Now this may be hard to believe, but he was actually running faster than he was moving while riding the pirma. That was the truth.

The Red Storm did all they could to follow behind him, As they continued to swing their swords, arms and legs started to fly away as a mist of red blood flooded where they were standing.

As Yulian and the rest of the Red Storm became covered in blood,

they truly embodied their name of Red Storm.

“Yaaaaaaaaaaa!”

Abham shouted toward Yulian who had almost instantly arrived in front of him and ran toward him on top of the pirma.

‘I will kill him with a single slash.’

The shamshir that he was swinging wildly held that type of desire.

Boooooooooong.

The unique noise of the greatsword rang through the air and Abham could feel his shamshir that arrived at Yulian’s side widely being pushed away. Although he had not moved his eyes from Yulian, the sight in front of his eyes was changing.

This warm feeling that hit his face. Abham felt like it took him quite a long time to realize that he had fallen off of his pirma. Yulian, who had broken the legs of Abham’s pirma, tried to get toward the fallen Abham, but the Wikaly warriors protected him with their bodies.

The Red Storm warriors tried their best to get to Yulian who had advanced far far ahead, but the Wikaly warriors did not easily let them through. Although the Red Storm had strong abilities to charge through, they still did not have enough experience to pierce through a dense formation like this one.

Until now, Yulian had used his overwhelming strength to create even the smallest of gaps for them to push through, but right now, Yulian was far ahead of them.

Warriors who cannot move end up being captured. The reason they were able to come so far was because they were running and Yulian was leading in the front.

The Red Storm warriors continued to shout and used whatever strength they could muster, but as they were starting to become

overwhelmed by the Wikaly encirclement, they heard Yulian shout loudly once more.

“Oowoooooooo! My warriors, what are you doing! Come to me! It is time to show them your strength!”

“Oowoooooooo~”

The Red Storm started to respond. They started to ignore the shamshirs and started to run forward.

“I will gladly take the hit from your shamshir. There is no way it is going to hurt more than my greatsword!”

Haisha shouted in a loud voice as he started to rile up the warriors.

“Damn it, I told you we needed a proper plan!”

Although Shubeon shouted in an annoyed voice next to him, his actions were faster and stronger than anyone else in Red Storm that all the warriors who were hit by Shubeon’s greatsword lost either an arm or a leg. The Red Storm started to sustain some injuries all over their bodies. But they continued to move forward and managed to successfully get rid of the warriors who were around Yulian.

With nothing to get in his way, Yulian once more started to approach Abham. Everything happened in an instant.

Boooooooooong.

The Wikaly could hear that terrifying noise once more.

All of the warriors around Abham ended up dead, and although other warriors were running toward them, Yulian had already broken Abham’s shining shamshir into two pieces. Runa quickly tried to lead 500 warriors to prevent Yulian from getting any closer, but Yulian was already too close to Abham.

Tap.

Yulian’s greatsword finally landed on Abham’s shoulder. The

moonlight made the dark blade shine as the tip of the blade inched closer to Abham's neck.

“Abham-nim!”

Runa was regretting that he could not convince Abham to get to safety, and looked toward Abham and Yulian with a shocked expression.

“Order them to lower their weapons.”

Yulian started to speak after seeing the Red Storm warriors who were covered in blood and starting to slow down.

“Kill me. I will not be lonely as there will be many of you joining me in death.”

As Abham answered with a cold smile on his face, Yulian slightly turned his wrist and the blade created a small injury on Abham's neck.

“Didn't I tell you already? I came here to make a deal. I will trade you for my warriors.”

Seeing Yulian speak so casually, Abham clenched his teeth and started to shout.

“Have the respect of a warrior! Do you mock me and kill me.”

Abham's shout stopped the battle. The Wikaly warriors finally saw that their Commanding Greatest Warrior was captured, and looked at each other with shock.

“What are you doing! I told you to kill them all!”

At Abham's shout, the Wikaly warriors started to pick up the pace that they had slowed down. The expression on the face of the Red Storm warriors started to turn dark. Their stamina had already hit rock bottom, and they were just persevering with their mental fortitude. They would not be able to last much longer.

Yulian decided there was no need to see anything else. He had made a mistake. He tried to smudge a warrior's honor.

“I guess I was wrong. It will be hard to capture you. Then I will cleanly kill you. You will have died on the battlefield and since we have ended up in danger for your life, I’m sure you will not regret it.”

Yulian’s sword quickly went up and was right about to come down. But at that moment.

“Wait.”

Yulian stopped his sword at the voice and looked to his side. It was a young warrior who was not over 30 years of age. Well, his body was too small and did not have much muscles to call him a warrior. He might actually be a priest.

“All units stop!”

The lead flags started to move at the young man’s voice, and the oasis instantly became quiet.

‘He is an amazing individual. Is he another Greatest Warrior?’

As the young man in front of him had more authority than he imagined, Yulian was slightly surprised and carefully waited for the young man’s next move.

“Runa, what are you doing?”

“How will we protect an oasis without our Commanding Greatest Warrior? I can only agree to his request.”

“This is an order. Kill all of them right now. As you mentioned, if we do not take this opportunity, there will not be another one. Didn’t you see it with your own eyes?”

“We cannot defend this oasis without you Abham-nim. I also won’t have the desire to defend it without you.”

“What are you talking about, Runa?”

“Do you think I would have remained here if Abham-nim was not here?”

As Abham closed his mouth and glared at Runa, Runa continued to speak.

“There will be no problems even if those two Greatest Warriors are returned. Please do as I ask.”

As Runa said that last thing only loud enough for Abham to hear, Abham looked toward Runa with a complicated expression before lowering his head.

“I speak to the Pareia’s Glow. In return for letting the two Greatest Warriors go, release all of the Wikaly prisoners.”

“They say that a deal is advantageous for the one who agrees later. It is already too late. You must return the two Greatest Warriors as well as all of our warriors you have taken captive.”

“Fine.”

“Runa!”

Seeing Runa agree so easily, Abham loudly called out to him.

“What are you going to do if you let their warriors go as well?”

Runa spoke to Abham once more.

“Just trust me. We are just returning to the beginning. I was feeling a bit iffy about using such a scheme to catch such a large fish in the first place. All we have to do is properly capture all of them again.”

‘Iffy? He feels iffy after capturing two Greatest Warriors?’

Yulian was listening to Runa not with shock, but a feeling of admiration.

“You must be greater than you look, aren’t you?”

As he subconsciously asked Runa, Runa looked toward Yulian and started to smile.

“How could I compare with the Pareia’s Glow and the warriors who came this far with just that many people? No matter how it

goes from here, please take good care of me from here on.”

“Thrilling!”

Yulian shouted loudly as his body started to shiver.

Yulian and Runa, the two men’s gaze made each other start to shiver.

End of Chapter 4.

Book 3-5.1 Metro Arrives

Runa Brink

A warrior who could not complete his coming-of-age ceremony.

A warrior who could not even properly swing a shamshir.

But in some aspects, his name was the same as fear itself.

That day, there was a prisoner exchange between the Pareia and Wikaly tribes.

5,000 Wikaly warriors. Three thousand Pareia warriors and the two Greatest Warriors.

It was a trade that favored Pareia for sure.

The two Pareia's Greatest Warriors that the Wikaly had captured were warriors who could probably slash their way across 10,000 warriors. This really was like letting a wolf that you barely managed to catch go.

The story about how Yulian had taken his personal group of warriors and caused havoc for the Wikaly soon rang throughout the desert, and everyone clicked their tongues at Yulian's amazing courage and figured out why the Wikaly would agree to such an unfavorable trade.

Pareia's meeting of Greatest Warriors.

"We ask for punishment for making the Glow do something that dangerous."

The two Greatest Warriors kneeled in front of Yulian and their fellow Greatest Warriors.

Victory and defeat were normal in war, but for two Greatest Warriors to be captured alive and have such reckless action happen to save them, Vibli and Trebol really wanted to die.

"I have said that the Greatest Warriors will not kneel even in

front of the Glow. Please stand up.”

Seeing the two Greatest Warriors still not standing up, Yulian approached them and made them stand up before starting to speak.

“Think about all the merits you have gained for the tribe in the past as well as how many warriors have been recovered thanks to you. What kind of person never makes a mistake? Even in your defeat, you still have the qualifications to lift your heads up high.”

“Yes. Greatest Warriors Vibli and Trebol. The Glow is right. Who would ask the reason for your defeat? If it is something that defeated both of you at the same time, anybody here would have ended up in the same situation. So stand up.”

As Yulian and the other Greatest Warriors continued to urge them, the two warriors stood up with red faces, but still could not lift up their heads.

Their defeat completely nullified the overwhelming victory they had achieved the first day.

“That was reckless of you.”

As the two Greatest Warriors returned to their spots, Egane started to scold Yulian.

“Why would you decide to do such a thing?”

Egane, as well as Vibli and Trebol who still had their heads down in shame, blamed Yulian regarding that aspect. Thankfully they had good results, but if it was the opposite, it would have caused a serious incident for Pareia.

“I can only think that the Glow still does not understand the importance of your position.”

“Stop! I understand the feelings of all of you Greatest Warriors. However, I was sure of my victory, which is why I decided to take those actions. Furthermore, if I did not do that, there was the fear

that we would no longer be able to head toward our dream. As a result, I will not hear anymore scolding.”

Yulian’s words and actions were starting to take a majestic air as the days went by, so the Greatest Warriors could not nag him about everything that he did wrong as they did in the past.

All they could do was constantly warn him so that it became engraved in his heart.

“I hope that you will all put in your best effort to take down the Wikaly from here on out. It is a clean slate. We should also start hearing news regarding the Wikaly’s central oases soon. We do not have to wait much longer.”

All of their faces became happier at Yulian’s words. They definitely needed to win this war, and they were using all possible methods to achieve it.

“Hurry up and fold the sail! Is this your first time doing this?”

“Is that all you can do?”

The original crew members were berating the warriors from all over the ship. They had trained enough and were properly doing the actions they were taught until now, but no matter how well they did, the original crew members were not going to stop their berating.

In some aspects, none of the things they were saying had to be said, but this was all done so that the warriors would be cautious. It served to prevent unnecessary accidents in the future.

The ten Desert Runner ships each stopped at the end of the quicksand river.

Since it was not a port, stopping a ship on the flowing quicksand required high levels of skill, but the original Desert Runner crew had been maneuvering the quicksand river for over ten years.

They could easily determine where the flow was strong and

weak, as well as where it was not flowing at all, so it was not very difficult.

“Alright. The ships that are ready to unload can start first.”

Once Greatest Captain Thriger’s order fell, large wooden planks were lowered from the ships and Volley Stars were used to shoot those large arrows deep into the sand. Once that happened, there were thick, tight ropes between the ship and the sand.

Under them was the quicksand river. If they made a mistake, they would be killed before anybody could help them, so each warrior carefully disembarked one by one.

“Greatest Warrior Metro.”

Thriger called toward Greatest Warrior Metro who had come with him.

“What is it, Greatest Captain Thriger?”

“I will pass the Commanding Greatest Warrior flag to you. My mission ends here.”

As Thriger handed the small red flag over to Metro, Metro received the flag as he started to speak.

“I, Metro, have received the Commanding Greatest Warrior flag. You have worked hard until this point.”

“It was nothing. I spent my whole life in the ocean and now I just roll around in this quicksand river. I received a title matching that of a Greatest Warrior, but I know nothing about fighting on land.”

“You are the only person in the desert who knows the quicksand. It is a deserving title.”

“Thank you for saying so. Anyways, I hope we are not too late.”

Metro laughed at Thriger’s concern and started to speak.

“They are an enemy we can use normal methods to defeat. It is only because we are trying to lower our casualties that we have to

use such methods. This is enough.”

“Then I shall return to Pareia and prepare to move the new batch of 5,000 warriors and rations.”

“I understand. But I feel like we will not need those 5,000 warriors.”

“I hope that is the case. That would be very good for us. Hahaha.”

“Hahaha. Then I must make my leave.”

“I understand. I look forward to hearing news of your victory.”

Thriger ordered the crew to board the ships once more.

It would be great if they could go along with them, but the truth was that they would be no help. Furthermore, they barely had enough crew members to expertly handle ten ships, so even if they were asked to go along, he would have declined that request.

‘I really need to train the warriors on how to maneuver the ships, but it is disappointing that they need warriors for a while.’

Thriger thought about a lot of things as he prepared to depart. Once they were ready, he gave the order to move. The ten ships of Pareia started to slowly head back to Pareia.

Once Metro saw the ten ships start to leave, he turned around to look at the 10,000 troops that were under his command. The reason that he, who was not one of Pareia’s third generation warriors, ended up with this important mission was because although his strength was not on par with them, he was the best when it came to leadership and strategy.

Since he knew very well that this was the case, Metro decided to not worry.

Now, they needed to quickly take over the Wikaly’s central oases.

He knew that the Wiklay had sent 30,000 warriors south to deal with the 20,000 warriors of Pareia.

‘That means that I need to fight against 15,000, and even then, they will be split up in multiple oases. Furthermore, am I not perfectly aiming for the enemy’s weakness?’

Metro had a confident smile on his face. Even the light of the sun was nice and warm to match his mood.

‘If I still cannot take over the central oases with all of these advantages, I should be killed. This time, it will be an overwhelming victory. Oh Wikaly, your history ends here.’

Metro lifted his shamshir high into the air.

“All units, forward march!”

Pareia’s 10,000 elite warriors started to move toward the Wikaly’s central oases.

Book 3-5.2 Metro makes his move

It has already been two months since Pareia's warriors were in a stalemate with the Wikaly's warriors in the southern oasis.

Even though they had multiple times the amount of warriors as Pareia, the Wikaly did not charge forward to face Pareia head on.

A couple of warriors started to complain about it, but Runa, who had received permission from Abham to be in charge of the strategy, did not do anything other than allowing a small amount of patrol warriors out at a time.

Pareia wanted to just leisurely wait for the news from the 10,000 warriors who had traveled up the quicksand river, but needed to change their plan as the morale of the warriors was starting to fall.

Their mental state was one aspect, but while the Wikaly was in an oasis where there was plenty of shade and a source of water, Pareia's warriors were suffering under the intense heat of the desert sun.

On top of that, since they could only receive a rationed amount of water, it was only natural for the warriors' morales to drop.

"Normally, we would use the nervousness from the fact that they have more warriors than us to help control this frustration and anger, but it is very frustrating as they are just tightly hiding inside the oasis."

As Vibli spoke in frustration, everybody let out a sigh.

They had been trying to start a fight with the Wikaly for the past half month, but the Wikaly did not respond. At one point, they made up their mind and tried to attack the oasis, but they just ended up losing 2,000 warriors to the Wikaly's perfect defense. They even tried to use smaller amounts of warriors to launch surprise attacks to disrupt the enemy, but Runa knew that Pareia's warriors would not dare to barge in and had the warriors rest in

shifts.

This really was what you would call a situation where you could not do anything.

“Let’s try charging at them with our full force once more. If we stay like this, the warriors would lose all motivation and will fall over before we even start to fight.”

As Trebol shouted with frustration, Egane tried to calm him down.

“Do you not remember our last attempt? Night raids, fire attacks, even the Glow and Red Storm’s strong charge was not enough to break past their first layer of defense.”

“Then you want to just sit back and watch?”

“Do we have any other method? The enemy has already prepared perfectly. Honestly speaking, even if Metro takes the central oases and we pincer them from both sides, I don’t think they will fall easily.”

Vibli continued where Egane left off.

“Based on our spies, there are also enough food in that oasis to feed 50,000 warriors for two years. Doesn’t that mean our plan to cut off their supply line is useless?”

Trebol came up with another idea.

“If it’s going to be like this, why don’t we get some reinforcements and attack them at full strength? Or switch some of our warriors?”

“Impossible. We would need to retreat to do that.”

As multiple Greatest Warriors continued to throw out impossible suggestions, Yulian stopped them as he started to speak.

“But as Greatest Warrior Trebol has mentioned, if we just sit here like this, the morale of our warriors will hit rock bottom. It is not like we can just temporarily retreat to our oasis. If we disappear

from here, the 10,000 warriors in the center will be in danger.”

Yulian thought long and hard before starting to speak again.

“What if I take the Red Storm and break into the Wikaly once more and we use that chaos to attempt a full assault again?”

All of the Greatest Warriors opened their mouths at the same time.

“That is not an option.”

A shocked Yulian scratched his forehead before continuing to speak.

“Wouldn’t it be okay to just charge a little bit while they have their attention diverted to me so that we can let the warriors let out some stress?”

Vibli coldly responded.

“That will not work. Do you think they will just let you do as you please again? Last time, it worked because it happened in the center of the oasis and the warriors could not surround you very well. Honestly, it only worked because it was just the Glow and Red Storm. But if you tried to do it again, you will be noticed hours away from the oasis. If they know you are coming, even if it is Yulian-nim and Red Storm.....”

Vibli started to trail off before shaking his head and continuing.

“You won’t stand a chance with just that number. It will be a meaningless attempt. Also, do not forget that they have at least 10,000 more warriors than us.”

“We can’t do this, and we can’t do that. Then what do you suggest?”

Vibli let out a small sigh at Yulian’s question and just shook his head.

Usually in situations like this, they would retreat and wait for the next opportunity.

But Yulian's desire was extremely strong, and as he mentioned, if they did not seize this opportunity, it will be difficult to get another chance like this in the future.

If they didn't take this opportunity, there will be other wolves looking to feed.

They didn't even know whether those wolves will bare their teeth against the Wikaly or against them.

"He really is an amazing human. I thought he was amazing from the first time I met him."

Trebol grumbled as he thought about Runa.

"I don't know why such an individual has remained unknown until now. I would have never expected for there to be such a warrior. From what I hear, he received permission to be the lead strategist from Commanding Greatest Warrior Abham."

Vibli chimed in from the side, but Yulian knew about the abilities of the young warrior named Runa, very well.

A tight formation and warriors who moved with precision. They had been well-trained and prepared thoroughly.

Runa also had the confidence to not worry even after seeing Yulian's might.

Yulian nodded his head in approval as he started to speak.

"He definitely is a surprising warrior. But this is just an obstacle we must overcome. Use whatever tactics you need to use to find a way to make the enemy move. That is the only way for us to win."

Egane realized nobody could stand this situation very well and clapped loudly to clear the air before starting to speak.

"I think we should first wait for news from Metro as he takes over the central oases. If he is successful, there should be some response from our enemies. Our priority right now should be thinking about how we can raise the warriors' morale."

Everyone agreed with Egane and ended the meeting of Greatest Warriors.

“What?”

Abham shouted with shock after hearing what the messenger warrior had to say. Runa also stared at the messenger warrior speechless.

“The Glow has asked that you quickly return or help pressure the central oases.”

Once the messenger warrior delivered the Glow’s message, Abham looked toward Runa and Runa asked a question to the messenger warrior.

“How could they reach the central oases? We have been holding off Pareia’s entire army right here.”

“I do not know the details either. However, it is reported that the enemy first appeared near the western quicksand river.”

“Who can come up the quicksand river?”

As Abham shouted, the messenger warrior flinched before answering.

“I do not know either. But it is certain that 10,000 of Pareia’s warriors appeared from the quicksand river and have already taken over two oases.”

“Just what were they doing? Aren’t there still 15,000 warriors in the rear?”

“As you are aware, we needed to make sure each oasis had enough warriors to defend, so there are only around 2 to 3,000 warriors at each oasis. The enemy quickly invaded, and we did not have time to gather the warriors and ended up being defeated multiple times.”

Runa shook his head at the messenger warrior’s explanation. There was nothing they could do about it. It was normal to keep 2

to 3,000 warriors at each oasis to deal with monsters, wild animals, and potential enemies. Even he would not have been able to do anything about it.

“It is hard to believe, but it looks like Pareia is following the quicksand river north. Now it all makes sense. I was wondering why they only brought 20,000 warriors when they were capable of bringing 30,000 + warriors on this campaign.”

Abham knew about that as well.

But for it to be the quicksand river, that was something nobody could have ever imagined.

“So then what happened?”

“The warriors who were at the other four oasis, as well as the warriors who retreated from the two oasis add up to just slightly over 10,000. Once the enemy realized that we were gathered together, they stopped their attack and started to focus on defending the oases they took over.”

Abham let out a deep sigh as he started to speak.

“Hmm~. That makes sense. Even if it was an oasis without much warriors, you can’t still recklessly charge in.”

“The enemy seems to have wanted to cut off our supply line. Either that, or take over the center and pincer us on both sides.”

Abham started to tap his feet at Runa’s comment. They could not move from here, but the rear would be in danger as time went on.

“What are we going to do about the oases that do not have warriors to protect them.....”

Abham let out another sigh thinking about the people who would be left behind at the oases.

It was possible to protect the oasis from monsters and wild animals with strong women, young warriors who have yet to complete their coming-of-age ceremony, and elders who have

retired from the position of warrior, but they could not fight against enemy warriors.

They had no way to prevent Pareia from doing whatever they want, even if it was pretending to be crazy and killing off all the people in the oasis to clear it.

Abham looked toward Runa and asked.

“Runa, what should we do?”

Runa thought for a while before finally answering.

“We cannot return with the enemy to our back. We would be at a disadvantage in a head-on battle. So we must change our strategy. We have to draw them in to us.”

“Can you do it?”

“We have to try. If we don’t, the Wikaly will have suffered too much damage even if we manage to be victorious.”

Runa’s eyes started to sparkle.

Book 3-5.3 Raising the Morale (I)

“We finally got news that they have taken over two central oases and are preparing to defend them. What should we do now? Even if we were to work together, the enemy will not falter.”

Egane started to respond to Yulian’s question.

“Even if we have to risk some things, I think it is best to send the 5,000 reserve warriors to the central oases to strengthen their hold and then prepare to pincer the enemy.”

“Then are you saying we will continue to be stuck here?”

Egane shook his head at Trebol’s question.

“We cannot do anything else. After our victory on the first day as well as the incident with the Glow and Red Storm, we have completely failed at attacking that oasis. I can confidently say this. When it comes to the movement of troops, that Abham and Runa combination is even more formidable than Venersis.”

“No way.”

“Unfortunately, it is true. If the Wikaly had a strong Greatest Warrior, I’m sure we would be the side that is currently under attack.”

The Greatest Warriors were whispering to each other at Egane’s response, but that was the case. Furthermore, to save the faces of the two Greatest Warriors who were captured alive at Runa’s strategy, they could not really retort Egane’s statement.

Yulian made the Greatest Warriors stop whispering as he asked a question.

“Strengthen our hold in the center, and then?”

“Take whatever forces we can to take over the remaining Wikaly oases except the one currently in front of our eyes, and then convince them to surrender. That is the most certain and safest

method.”

“You mean?”

As Yulian leaned forward and asked, Egane smiled before answering with an energetic voice.

“Yes! We must capture the Wikaly’s Glow Gomai Mao-nim alive!”

“That is a smart method. But the issue is the immediate concern with our warriors. Their morale does not seem like it will go up.”

Vibli responded to Yulian’s concern.

“We should not have any problems for a bit if we share the news that they have taken over the central oases. However, I feel like we need to decide to attack or retreat quickly. This is taking a heavy toll on the warriors’ staminas.”

“Let us do that. For now, we will end it here.”

As the Greatest Warriors left at Yulian’s words, Yulian stood up and started to stretch, twisting his hips and then lifting up his arms. It is weird to say he was feeling bored in the middle of a war, but because he had nothing to do, he was training and exercising with the Red Storm. But maybe it was because there was a lot of concerns in his head, but he did not feel refreshed at all.

“Yulian.”

His master entered his paoe at that time and called out to him.

“Master!”

As Yulian reacted to seeing his master for the first time in a while and greeted him, Chun Myung Hoon patted Yulian’s head as he asked.

“It’s difficult, isn’t it?”

“I am concerned, but there is nothing so far that will be a problem.”

“That’s how it is to be at the top. Your body is relaxed, but your

blood dries. But you must never forget the basics. You haven't forgotten why you wanted to be the Glow, have you?"

"Of course not."

"Then it is fine. I trust that you will continue to do well. The reason I came to find you today is because I need to leave again."

"Where to?"

"A friend I made in the continent is looking for me. The old hag is nagging me to come so much that I feel like I need to go visit her. I had planned on staying by your side to watch over you until the end of this war, but the situation has changed."

Yulian was shocked at Chun Myung Hoon's words.

Even if his master did not step in to help, the existence of his master was a great mental relief for Yulian.

"Is it urgent? This disciple wishes for his master to continue to watch over him if possible."

"If you were a kid who wasn't potty trained, I would ignore her and stay here, but when I look at you, I see a man and a leader. I am leaving because I trust that you will do well."

Chun Myung Hoon also responded in a disappointed voice that seemed to show that he wasn't happy about it either. It was because he knew just how much Yulian had relied on him since Glow Baguna had left the world like that.

"You won't get stronger unless you can overcome this type of obstacles. It looks like the enemy's leader is quite talented. But neither you nor your warriors are weak. If you cannot even overcome something like this, can you even draw a portion of that dream of yours?"

"That's true, but....."

Chun Myung Hoon patted Yulian's head again as he started to speak.

“I thought you were an adult but you are still a kid.”

Yulian could not say anything about Chun Myung Hoon’s comment and just lowered his head.

“A man needs to be strong. You are not going to disappoint your master who thinks you are that kind of strong man, are you?”

Yulian lifted his head up to look at Chun Myung Hoon as he responded.

“Of course. Has this disciple ever shown you a disappointing sight? Just as my master is strong, so is this disciple of yours.”

“I should not take long. When I return, I expect to see a larger Pareia with you.”

“You can expect it to happen.”

“Alright, I will trust you.”

Chun Myung Hoon patted Yulian’s head and back once more before he left. Yulian plopped down to the floor thinking that things were not going the way he wanted them to go.

“But master is not wrong. If I cannot even overcome something like this, I can forget about unifying the desert.”

Yulian let his emotions out as he stood up while mumbling to himself.

“Maybe I am overcomplicating things these days. Isn’t this a war we cannot lose?”

As Yulian filled himself back with confidence and headed outside the paoe, the Red Storm warriors were waiting for him.

“What’s going on?”

Haisha answered as the representative.

“The old master said that Yulian-nim was feeling down, so we all gathered to see if something was wrong.”

‘Master, he didn’t have to.’

Yulian smiled internally as he responded.

“Why would I be feeling down? I trust my abilities, all of you, and Pareia. My body is just itchy. Alright, shall we run for the first time in a while?”

The Red Storm warriors started to smile at Yulian’s words.

“My heart has been beating like crazy since we caused that ruckus last time. I’ve been wondering when we could have that kind of battle again.”

Shubeon shook his head at Triquel’s words.

“It is only because it ended up ending well. Only because nobody ended up dying.”

“Why do you have to blow out the candle when someone is speaking happily?”

As Triquel grumbled back to Shubeon, Yulian started to smile as he started to speak.

“What he is saying is not wrong. But would you believe me if I told you I had absolute certainty about that last incident?”

“Putting all of that aside, I only went along with it because Yulian-nim stepped forward. Otherwise, I would never do such a thing!”

Yulian, who could not determine whether Shubeon was praising him or not, started to smile again.

“Since the overall morale has fallen, it wouldn’t be a bad idea for us Red Storm to be the clowns and throw a show.”

Haisha started to speak.

“I wanted to talk to you about that problem. The morale is unbelievably low right now. Well, we are okay because we are sparring with each other in the back.”

“Didn’t I tell you to take it easy for a while? Nobody ended up

dying, but many people ended up with a lot of small injuries.”

Honestly speaking, after causing that ruckus through the Wikaly oasis that last time, The Red Storm warriors had to suffer from the aftermath of their injuries for a couple of days.

Their ears were flooded with the priests grumbling that even in the battlefield, the Red Storm warriors continued to bother them.

“Hahaha, everybody had too much energy to just sit back and relax.”

“Fine then. Let’s give them a show called a Mock Battle. Since Red Storm is already the representative brigade of Pareia, if we show them something that will light a fire in their hearts, the morale should go back up.”

The warriors’ eyes started to sparkle at Yulian’s words.

“In battles, there is bound to be a reward for the winners.”

At Triquel’s request for a bet, even Thrint, who was quietly sitting there, started to get a glow in his eyes.

He was someone who did not want to lose even if it was just a mock battle against other Red Storm warriors.

“Alright. Then the losing side will serve the winning side as superior warriors for a day. How does that sound?”

Shubeon asked a question at Yulian’s suggestion.

“Yulian-nim, whose side will you be on?”

“I will be the judge. You trust my judgment?”

“Then I am okay with it. I guess we should prepare the wooden swords.”

“Let the warriors know. Shows are always more entertaining when you have a large audience.”

The warriors ran out shouting loudly after Yulian’s final words. They had been frustrated for a long time as well.

There was quite a disturbance in Pareia's camp that had been quiet for a long time.

Red Storm's Mock Battle.

The warriors who all knew about the might of the Red Storm all started to gather in one location.

The lead warriors were definitely there, and even the Greatest Warriors all gathered with anticipation in their eyes. Especially because people like Haisha and Thrint were already pretty much on par with Vibli and Trebol in terms of strength, they were all curious to know how they reached such levels at their young ages.

"Hey hey, it's entertaining having such a large audience, but it's going to be shameful for the losing side."

As Triquel looked toward Haisha and started to speak, Haisha started to smile as he responded.

"Then we will look even cooler if we win."

Shubeon also started to speak to Thrint.

"Hey iceberg. You heard them right? If we lose, you won't be able to sleep tonight because of shame."

"As long as you don't fool around, we will win."

"Fool around? Call me efficient. Don't forget that my squad has won the most times in our squad competitions."

Since that was the truth, Thrint just smiled bitterly as he looked around.

"A lot of people have gathered."

It looked like all of Pareia's warriors had shown up. The warriors were all in a circle that looked like a thick wall because of all the people.

Book 3-5.4 Raising the Morale (II)

Yulian shouted from the center.

“Warriors of Pareia! I know very well that you are having a tough time. But you must not forget why were are all out here! We are here to make our territory larger and bring more people into our tribe so that we can step away from the influence of the strong forces of the continent. We cannot forget that we are here to make our lives better!”

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

“Become strong. Do not die. Shouldn’t you at least see what kind of person your Glow is? Shouldn’t you be here to see the changed desert? Shouldn’t we get out of the current situation where all men become warriors to kill or be killed? I will show you the strength of our Pareia. Look at the strength of the warriors who are about to reach the pinnacle. And follow them. Today, I will show you the goal you should be aiming for.”

All of the warriors could feel their hearts pounding at Yulian’s loud voice.

“Red Storm, are you ready?”

“Oowoooooooo~!”

“You may all be allies, but this is a competition. Do your best. Treat the enemy’s wooden sword as a real sword, and if you feel like you have received a hit that would leave you unable to continue in a real battle, step away. That is the only way to have a fair and just battle.”

“Oowoooooooo~!”

The Red Storm warriors looked over their t-shirt shaped leather armor and their wooden swords.

If they were using their greatswords, these armors would be

useless, but since it was a mock battle, they made sure to put them on. It was possible to get a broken bone with a wooden sword, so the armors were there to help prevent any injuries.

In the middle of the audience of warriors, Red Storm divided into two groups and set up their formations.

“Start the competition!”

With Yulian starting the competition, the two formations of Red Storm warriors quickly ran forward.

Running strength played a large part even in smaller scale battles. And when you are in a battle like this where you are very clear about your opponent’s strength, you needed to take even the slightest terrain advantages you could get.

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

The warriors in the audience started to cheer. They were finally getting to see the might of the Red Storm that they had not been able to see clearly until now.

Clack! Clack! Clack!

They could instantly start to hear the sound of wooden swords clashing. There were even instances of wooden swords breaking from the first clashes.

“Squash them!”

“Flip them over and kill them!”

There were rough words being said in multiple places that it was hard to tell if they really were fellow warriors.

The Red Storm warriors all had higher levels of pride and competitive spirit compared to most warriors. That personality was the reason they selected to join the Red Storm in the first place, and it was what kept them going even when Yulian was mocking them and putting them down.

Although they were on the same side, the moment a competition

begins, they were the enemy.

As wooden swords started to break and people started to fall off their pirms, they started to fight with their fists.

The Red Storm warriors' surprising strengths made the other warriors drop their jaws, and some of them even questioned whether they had to go that far, making each other bleed and shout out in pain. Even though it was a competition, they were still fellow comrades.

Some of them started to be eliminated one or two at a time, and at the end, everyone was down on the ground heavily breathing. There were even a few warriors who had ended up fainting.

Yulian started to shout after seeing them in that state.

“Take a close look. This is the Red Storm. They were able to stay alive because they have worked hard and become stronger. Even 20,000 Wikaly warriors could not stop them.”

Since this was all set up to prevent the morale from falling and bring up the warriors' passion, Yulian started to say things that would light a fire in the hearts of the warriors.

“I will ask you this. Do you think you can take on the Red Storm? I hope you aren't scared, are you?”

The warriors started to get angry in their hearts. They saw the strength of the Red Storm warriors with their own eyes, but they felt that if it was them, they would not let a mere 60 warriors get away from them.

“Do you think I am speaking nonsense right now? If you can't even get past the Red Storm warriors, do you still think that you are strong?”

Their commander was suspicious about their abilities. There was no greater mockery than this.

And Pareia's warriors were not calm enough to just take such

mockery quietly. After all, these were the warriors who never lost their will to fight even in the long wars against the Shuarei.

“We will kill the Wikaly. And we will make the Glow apologize for making such remarks.”

Egane saw the expressions on the faces of the warriors and quickly stepped forward. It was because he realized the purpose of this show today.

Egane continued to shout in a loud voice.

“Doesn’t this make all of you angry?!”

The warriors all turned their gazes to Egane.

“Our Glow is doubting our strengths. I am extremely frustrated at that. I will show him. I will show him my strength. Are you all just going to sit back and let him continue to doubt?”

“Oooooooooooooooooo~!”

The warriors started to shout in one voice. All of their gazes turned toward Yulian. It was as if they were asking him to give them a chance to fight.

Yulian stepped it up and continued to speak.

“If you show the same amount of courage that the Red Storm has shown, I will believe you. But I will not believe the warriors who have expressions full of fatigue as you do right now.”

“Ooooooo~!”

“Show me with your actions. Your time will come soon. Our warriors have taken over two of the Wikaly’s central oases. They will cut off the enemy’s supply line. If we are continued to be pushed back even in such a situation, doesn’t it mean that we have lost?”

The warriors hesitated for a moment, not sure whether they should cheer or rag on Yulian.

The warriors knew as well. They knew what it was like to get your supply line cut off and to be pressured from the back.

“Let’s win. Your Glow will always lead from the front. All you need to do is follow.”

“Oowwaaaaaaa~!”

The warriors started to cheer once more.

As Egane approached him, Yulian whispered in a quiet voice.

“You’re making me into the bad guy.”

“Didn’t you make up your mind to be the bad guy before saying all of those things? If you’re going to do it, might as well do it right. That was why I gave you some help.”

“I guess all of their anger will be directed toward me for a while.”

“Hohoho, in return, their morale should not fall any further.”

Looking at the smirk on Egane’s face, Yulian ended up smiling as well. No matter what, things ended up the way he wanted it to go.

Yulian and Egane both turned their heads toward the Wikaly oasis at the same time.

The Wikaly meeting of Greatest Warriors had currently continued a marathon meeting of six hours because of Runa’s last suggestion.

“Remove 10,000?”

“Yes, Abham-nim.”

Many of the Greatest Warriors disagreed with Runa’s words.

“We are able to persist because of the prepared defenses as well as the numbers advantage. If you remove 10,000 from here, we will not be able to last.”

“I do not understand why the person who said we should avoid a dangerous field battle is now saying we should remove 10,000 warriors.”

“If Pareia attacks us while those 10,000 are secretly moving behind them, we may end up in a very dangerous situation.”

Abham lifted up his hand to stop the discussion and asked Runa a question.

“I want to know what you are thinking.”

“We have already lost two of our central oases and the enemy is already preparing their defenses for those oases. We can’t just sit back and watch like this, can we?”

Everybody agreed with this much. Wasn’t that why they had discussed retreating from here to merge with the warriors in the center?

But it was Runa who was completely against that idea, which was why they were even more confused about Runa’s suggestion.

“Even if we retreat from here and merge with the warriors in the center to pressure Pareia, it is possible that we will end up being pressured from both sides. It is possible for us to leave the minimum number of warriors here to defend, but the question becomes whether they can prevent the Pareia warriors in front of us from getting past them. Is there anybody here who is confident that they can successfully defend with 10,000 warriors?”

The Greatest Warriors could only turn red and let out some fake coughs at Runa’s question.

They were not confident. They had to put aside their pride and make an unbiased opinion about it because if they ended up losing 10,000 warriors for no reason, that would really be the end of the Wikaly.

“I can confidently say that I would be able to defend with 10,000 warriors, but how quickly can you take back the central oases with the remaining warriors? If you cannot take it back within 3 months, Pareia will send reinforcements even if it puts them in danger elsewhere. Time has not been on our side since Pareia took

over the central oases.”

Runa had determined that they would not be able to take back the central oases quickly.

Pareia’s warriors had defended their oases against that Venersis for over 10 years. Their defense really was flawless. That was why he has been thinking that he needed to be the one to go.

“Right now, Pareia knows that time is on their side, but their morale has to be falling. We need to use that to our advantage to hit Pareia with everything we have, before retreating and taking back the central oases. In order to do that, we need to send 10,000 warriors to move behind them.”

“Will they just sit back and watch us do that?”

“The enemy does not know where we will move from, so if we make some movements, their focus will be directed to the oasis. As long as the enemy is not dumb, they will know that they cannot win in a battle where the enemy has 10,000 more warriors than they do. They will plan some kind of scheme to help them. If you head about half a day past Pareia’s current location, there is a location that would allow them to launch such a scheme. All we have to do is ambush them when they get there.”

The eyes of the Greatest Warriors started to sparkle. Runa’s plan had a decent chance for success.

:Amazing.”

One of the Greatest Warriors gave Runa a thumbs up as he said that, and Runa started to smile.

“Abham-nim and I have been preparing for a war against Pareia for many years now. Can’t you tell based on the amount of food that is currently stored in the oasis? Everything around the oasis is already in my head, so this much is nothing.”

“Ha! Abham-nim, you really have an amazing lead warrior. I also cannot stop admiring your foresight to have prepared for this war

far in advance.”

At the other Greatest Warrior’s praise, Abham let out a laugh as he answered.

“Kekeke, everything came out of Runa’s head. We suffered quite a bit to prepare, but I did not expect it to be used like this.”

As the atmosphere in the paoe turned better, Runa started to speak once more.

“If you will allow me, I will like to personally escort the Greatest Warrior there.”

“Of course. We will do as you say. Then what should the rest of us do at the oasis?”

“Please start to make it look like you are preparing to face them head on. If you do that for a couple of days, Pareia’s Greatest Warriors are wise and will not want to engage in a disadvantageous battle. As a result, they will perfectly fall for our trap.”

Runa’s true feelings could slightly be seen. He was blaming the Wikaly Greatest Warriors for being a bit useless. But nobody seemed to have noticed that as they were still happily chatting with each other.

‘It’s not surprising. Our Wikaly has been peaceful for too long while Pareia has constantly been at war.’

Runa was shaking his head internally as he had a bitter smile on his face.

Book 3-5.5 The Battle

“The Wikaly have started to move!”

Trebol shouted as he ran toward Yulian who was talking to Pere.

“They can’t just leisurely sit back since we have taken the center. How are they moving?”

“They have come out of the oasis and are starting to set up a formation. Wouldn’t that mean they want to face to us in a direct battle?”

“Then we should prepare as well. I leave it to you.”

Yulian had been studying hard, but he was still lacking quite a bit compared to the other Greatest Warriors when it came to the movement of such a large army. After asking Trebol and the other Greatest Warriors to prepare the formation, Yulian sent Pere to go gather the Red Storm warriors.

As he watched Pere run to gather them, Yuilan wondered to himself how it would be if he groomed Pere to become a Greatest Warrior instead of a member of Red Storm.

They will be moving around to other external areas in the future, and their army will continue to get bigger and stronger.

‘I would feel relaxed if Pere is defending the capital while I am out at war. Pere will be reliable since his strength is not lacking in comparison to any other Greatest Warrior, and it is always good to have a lot of Greatest Warriors.’

The deciding factor for Yulian’s decision was that Pere was having a hard time connecting with the Red Storm warriors. He hoped that Pere would quickly get along with them and become a leader in the Red Storm, but it did not seem to be easy. Honestly speaking, he had expected it to be difficult because Pere’s weapon was different than the rest of Red Storm, but not to the point of Pere being alienated like this.

‘I made have had the wrong idea in the past. Pere is more fitting to be a Greatest Warrior who leads thousands of warriors, and it is probably more his style as well.’

If you realize that you are wrong, all you have to do is fix it. Yulian quickly made up his mind to have Pere train under Egane instead of with the Red Storm.

Once the Red Storm warriors gathered, Yulian started to speak.

“The Wikaly have finally started to move.”

The Red Storm warriors’ eyes started to sparkle.

“I presume you all know what we need to do without me saying anything. It is the same story this time. Do not die. If you want to die, I will kill you with my own hands, so do not die by anyone else’s hands. Shouldn’t you be killed by someone at least at my level?”

“Huhuhu, what are you saying? We will not even lose to Yulian-nim now.”

The heavy atmosphere relaxed once more at Triquel’s words.

Yulian laughed internally as he pointed at Triquel as he responded.

“Triquel, I will verify that later.”

“There is no need to verify it... mm. I was just saying that is the case. Who said anything about sparring against Yulian-nim? Huhuhu.”

“You sly fox. Fine. I guess I said something useless. Then we will just do as we have always done and push forward.”

“Yes. Push forward.”

The warriors responded to Yulian’s words.

As the Red Storm warriors started to move, Yulian called Pere over and started to speak.

“Pere.”

“Yes, Glow.”

“You must become a Greatest Warrior. Stick next to Greatest Warrior Egane from here on. Watch how he moves, and how he leads. Take note of everything he does. I will let Greatest Warrior Egane know about it.”

Pere stared at Yulian for a moment before bowing his head and responding.

“I understand, Glow.”

“Pere, learn quickly. A time when we will not have enough Greatest Warriors will arrive soon.”

Pere wondered just how far ahead his brother was looking as he nodded his head again.

After giving commands to everyone, Yulian packed his greatsword and got on top of his pirma.

‘If we fail to get an overwhelming victory again, this war will become difficult.’

Yulian made up his mind to run around a little more in this battle and started to move his pirma.

The Wikaly warriors were shouting and the many flag warriors were moving left and right as if they were going to move at any moment, but in reality, they did not move at all.

Thanks to that, Pareia had some time to discuss strategies for taking on the Wikaly.

Egane prepared all of the preparations and went to look for Yulian.

“The other Greatest Warriors are inspecting the formations. Since we have no chances of success in a direct battle this time, I think it would be best to slowly retreat a little by little.”

Pareia was currently over 10,000 warriors less than the Wikaly.

Of course they could make up the difference if they called up the warriors protecting the oases, but the things Egane was saying right now were obvious.

“Where have you decided to fight?”

Yulian was sure Egane would not recommend a retreat without a plan. Egane must have been looking for a location to handle the difference in number.

Yulian knew that Egane had been making a lot of preparations for a direct battle.

“We will divide the army and repeat a hit and run tactic, to the point that the enemy is chasing us back. About half a day’s distance from here is a location where we have dug ditches and filled them with black water. Once we drag them there, the archers will be waiting to fire their arrows.”

“The important thing is to retreat without having too many casualties and creating enough distance for the enemy to have to work hard to chase after us.”

Seeing Yulian quickly understand his intentions and verifying the details, Egane nodded his head.

“Yes. In order to do that, we need the strongest warriors in the front. I have already prepared the veteran warriors.”

“The Red Storm and I can be the vanguard.”

Egane started to tell Yulian a lot of potential dangerous situations. He knew just how strong this young Glow in front of his was, but he was not on board with the Glow taking the vanguard in such a dangerous situation.

“You must be cautious and even more cautious. You must not end up encircled by the enemy and pay attention to the signal.”

“You do not need to worry about that. Haven’t I told you

already? There is a weird intuition that kicks in during battle.”

“If it was not for that, I would never put the Glow in the vanguard. Please do not lose that intuition and pay attention to your surroundings. This time, it is a battle in a large battlefield where the Wikaly can gather speed. If you end up surrounded, even the Glow and Red Storm will not be able to last long.”

At Egane’s continued worrying, Yulian smiled before tapping his chest.

“Please try to trust your Glow a little more.”

“I trust you, very much.”

The two men gazed at each other, with eyes full of boundless trust for one another.

Egane was proud of his Glow, and Yulian was thankful that such a warrior was part of his army.

“Then I will continue to prepare the warriors. Please take 5,000 warriors and stand in the vanguard. Vibli will be with you.”

“Greatest Warrior Egane should be careful as well. If we can get a decent level of success in this battle, the Wikaly will end up falling to us.”

“We must give our best.”

Egane respectfully bowed to Yulian before turning his pirma around.

“Shall I prepare as well?”

Yulian stretched out his arms as he mumbled to himself.

“Why would the enemy be here.....”

Seeing the Wikaly warriors charge at them as if they had been waiting for them, Egane let out a voice of despair.

The enemy should not have been here. He didn’t know just how far they must have gone around to reach here, or how they were

able to accurately know about this area.

Pareia, who had been planning on drawing the Wikaly warriors here and launching fire arrows at them, ended up suffering under the same fire arrows.

The flying fire arrows.

“Retreat, all units retreat!”

Egane quickly ordered the retreat, but flames were rising up from multiple locations.

“Aaaahhhh~!”

“Put out the fire!”

“Save me!”

Even the valiant Pareia’s warriors were shouting left and right, as if they could not handle the pain from their flesh burning.

The enemy had already prepared a perfect formation. Pareia’s warriors had no choice but to be completely defeated. The warriors who were trying to avoid the fire and retreat lost their lives to the Wikaly warriors’ shamshirs.

Egane did all he could to gather the warriors and fight back, but they were seriously lacking in number, and Pareia’s warriors were already in chaos, that there was nothing he could do.

As they were helplessly being defeated, Yulian was heading over with the rest of the Wikaly warriors chasing after them.

“Merge!”

Before the formation ended up in more chaos, Egane decided to merge with Yulian’s vanguard unit and shouted loudly.

Yulian already knew something was wrong based on the smoke he saw in front of him, but he was currently being chased. Thinking that there would be more casualties if they turned back right now, he did not lower his speed and continued forward.

Once he saw the Wikaly warriors chasing behind Egane and the main army, his world turned black.

They were surrounded on both sides. Furthermore, the moment the vanguard unit he was leading merged with the rest of Egane's army, the formation will end up in a mess.

"Red Storm will turn around and fight. Our goal is to earn as much time as possible."

As Yulian shouted with the goal of earning some time for the Greatest Warriors to fix the formation once they merged, the rest of the Red Storm turned their pirmas around and followed after him.

The strength of the warriors dashing forward on their pirmas really was strong. There was no issues killing them, but it was true that it took more effort than last time.

Abham ordered 5,000 of the warriors to continue chasing Pareia's warriors, while ordering the remaining 5,000 warriors to surround Yulian and Red Storm. He was planning on washing away the shame from the past incident.

Although the situation was definitely different than last time, Yulian and Red Storm did not end up surrounded.

Since there was initially some distance between them, they were able to speed up a bit. This, in addition to Yuilan's intuition, allowed them to efficiently aim for the gaps in the Wikaly formation as they dashed forward.

Behind them, Yulian's vanguard army and Egane's main army merged together, and Egane was shouting loudly to fix up the formation.

The Wikaly warriors were relentlessly chasing behind them.

Runa's ability to lead the troops was starting to shine.

He put a small vanguard unit of only 500 warriors with the

remaining main force dashing right behind them to cause chaos in Pareia's unprepared formation.

The worst day for Pareia had started.

Sixteenth day of the fourth month in the year 256 of the continental calendar.

This day will go down in Pareia's history as the worst defeat they faced since Yulian became Pareia's Glow.

Only 5,000 warriors ended up surviving out of their initial 14,000 warriors. It was such a brutal, no, disadvantageous battle that the number of warriors who ended up as prisoners was less than 3,000.

Triquel, as well as nine Red Storm warriors perished in battle.

Greatest Warrior Trebol perished in battle.

This battle made Pareia, who had started to become confident, hesitate about their next move, and gave rise to the genius known as Runa Brink.

End of Chapter 5.

Book 3-6.1 Grief

The Decisive Battle

He knew it was reckless. But he could not retreat.

He needed to make 20,000 warriors stop with just 3,000 warriors.

“Call Greatest Warrior Egane.”

Yulian’s face looked like he had lost a lot of weight in the one day since the defeat as he came out of his paoe and looked for Egane.

Egane, who came into Yulian’s paoe, did not look any better.

Egane was thinking that this terrible defeat was his fault. It made him feel even worse, thinking that they would not have faced such a defeat even if they fought against the Wikaly in a head-on-battle.

“Lift up your head and open up your shoulders. You are Pareia’s strength and pride. You will affect the other warriors if you walk around like that, Greatest Warrior Egane.”

Egane clenched his eyes shut at Yulian’s words. He was embarrassed. He was so embarrassed he wanted to die.

“It was my fault. A terrible mistake that I would have nothing to say as an excuse no matter what you say. If the opponent was Venersis, this type of defeat would not have happened. Even though I knew the opponent was at that level, I subconsciously looked down on him. It is my fault for taking it easy with our patrol warriors.”

“You only went ahead with the plan because I, along with all of the other Greatest Warriors, agreed to it. This is just the result. Our enemy fought really well, nothing more, nothing less. Confidently open up your shoulders. Even if you had made a mistake, you must do that.”

“Mmmmmmm~!”

A long sigh was coming out of Pareia's One Hundred battle Veteran, Egane, whose name was known throughout the desert. Another round of remorse filled his heart, knowing that he even lost Trebol, who he had worked together with for the last thirty years, in this last battle.

“Return to Pareia.”

“What? Ah! No.”

Egane opened his eyes and started to respond to Yulian's words before stopping as a thought lit up his head.

‘Someone needs to take the responsibility for the defeat.’

Egane was thinking that Yulian was relieving him of duty to take responsibility for the defeat.

But Yuilan's following words were not about that.

“Return to Pareia and and gather more warriors in addition to the 5,000 we have in reserve. Other than the oases that are on the border with the Shuarei, gather as many warriors as you can from the rest.”

“What do you mean by that?”

Yulian clenched his teeth once before responding.

“It is not like we can just retreat like this. If we give up like this, even Metro, who has taken over the center of the Wikaly oases will not be able to last.”

“I understand Glow's will, but it will take too long.”

“Do not come back here, but go directly to the center. Since Greatest Warrior Thriger has already gone through that path once, he should be able to shorten the time even more. Greatest Warrior Metro should have also determine the fastest route from the quicksand river to the central oases as well.”

“But Metro will still not be able to last the amount of time it takes for us to return.”

“I will order Greatest Warrior Metro to move north, taking all of his warriors with him. He will be doing his best to avoid the Wikaly warriors who will move up from here.”

Egane continued to voice his concern at Yulian’s words.

“The question is whether he will be able to last the full duration of my returning to Pareia and taking the warriors. They will not have a stronghold if they abandon the oasis they have taken. They also will not be able to rest peacefully because of the large number of enemies.”

“I will hinder the enemy from moving north as much as I can. He will need to take over the other oases as he moves north. There shouldn’t be more than 20,000 enemy warriors left up north.”

“What? How will you do that?”

“3,000 warriors have a very low amount of restrictions. We will be able to move forward without worrying about what is behind us.”

“Are you saying you plan on cutting through the enemy?”

“No, more of a hit and run. If 20,000 warriors are moving, they can’t help but move slowly. If they split into smaller groups, then they will need multiple supply transports. We just need to catch all of those supply transports.”

It made sense.

If they could hinder them like that, they would be able to create time for Metro, as well as give him time to return to Pareia and head for the center of the Wikaly oases.

Egane nodded his head and answered.

“I will do as you said. If you wait just one month, I will make sure to get there.”

It took them a whole month to get here with 20,000 warriors, but since only Egane and a couple guard warriors will be returning,

they should be able to return to Pareia within 20 days if they ride quickly. Then it should take about ten days to take the warriors and head up the quicksand river. So just one month!

“I will hold the enemy back as much as I can.”

“I’m sorry, Glow. It is because of my mistake.”

“Do not let this defeat bring you down. Didn’t you say winning and losing happens all the time in war? We just have to return the same to them.”

“I understand. Then I will leave right now as each second is precious.”

“Please work hard.”

Once Egane left, Yulian called Vibli and the other Greatest Warriors and shared his thoughts with them.

There were some concerned voices, but there was really nothing else they could do right now.

“We have 3,000 remaining warriors. The four of you Greatest Warriors can split them up and move individually. You can think of it as different specialty teams. I’m sure I don’t need to say this, but do not fight against the enemy. Hinder them as much as you can, and prevent them from moving north. Make the warriors feel a sense of revenge and mercilessness. This next month will be a very difficult month as Greatest Warrior Metro moves north with success and Greatest Warrior Egane takes the reinforcements up the quicksand river. Please warn the warriors about this in advance.”

Even without Yulian’s urging, the Greatest Warriors were all One Hundred battle veterans.

They were already coming up with plans in their heads about how to move and how to hinder the enemy.

“It has been a while since I moved with a small group like this. It

has also been a while since I've been able to fight freely with my brandistock."

Vibli answered calmly, but his heart was fired up. If it is a special team, he would be able to fight as well and remove the shame from his last defeat.

Since he had been a Greatest Warrior for a long time, he had not been able to fight much because he was tied down commanding the warriors.

He was able to swing his brandistock during battles of Greatest Warriors, but even that opportunity was gone once Venersis ended up being their enemy.

But now, he was able to show everyone why he had the name of 'Angry Brandistock.'

The other Greatest Warriors were feeling the same way.

Yulian encouraged the Greatest Warriors one more time before sending them off and started to head out as well.

The Red Storm's mood was as low as it could get. This was the first battle they had ever lost their comrades. They even lost a huge amount of nine of them at once.....

Even when they faced 20,000 warriors with just the Red Storm, none of them had died. Although they were surprised and in unfavorable conditions, they could not believe the fact that nine of them had died.

They knew they didn't need to grieve warriors who proudly died fighting for their tribe, but their hearts were not letting them do that.

"Damn bastard."

Shubeon muttered to himself while clenching a leather necklace with three Bavis (one of the most violent wild animals in the desert. It looks like an elephant, but their nose is short and they

are carnivorous. They can be trained and used in war, but there are not many because it is very hard to tame them) teeth.

Everyone knew who the owner of that necklace was. It was the necklace Triquel always had on him. He had made it as a souvenir to remember the animal he took down for his coming-of-age ceremony.

Shubeon had taken it off Triquel's neck once Triquel died.

“How could the one who claimed to be the best be the first to die? This is disobeying command. The rest of them are the same. We were told not to die ... but they die before the rest of us? Damn bastards.”

The warriors all lowered their heads at Shubeon's words. Triquel was the mood maker for Red Storm. To think that they would never hear that loud laughter or his bluffing ever again.....

Some of the dead warriors died while taking a hit to defend another warrior, while others died while taking the lead against all sorts of dangers.

The weight of each and every one of their deaths was pressing down on Red Storm. They were all clenching their teeth and holding back their tears, knowing that if one of them started to cry, all of them would start to cry as well.

“What are you all doing?”

As Yulian appeared in front of the warriors who had their heads down, all of them turned to look at him.

He had changed so much in a single day.

Normally, just looking at Yulian made you feel like he was glowing. He had a mysterious aura that resonated from him. But right now, he just looked like a weak and brittle man.

Shubeon was upset. That was why he said something he would normally have never said.

“Why the hell do you look like that? You look like you just came back from the dead.”

Shubeon also looked that way, but he didn't care about that.

“We are allowed to be that way, but the Glow cannot be like this. Isn't the Glow someone who is supposed to be shining no matter the situation? Doesn't it make us look bad if you show up looking like that? It makes us think you look like that because we couldn't fight properly!”

Shubeon was huffing. He was feeling like he would cry if he didn't at least shout like this.

Yulian immediately turned around.

The warriors were crying.

They weren't visibly crying, but he could see them lamenting in their hearts.

Seeing them like this almost made him cry as well, so he quickly turned around and clenched his teeth before putting a lot of strength in his eyes to prevent himself from crying.

Thrint started to speak toward Yulian's back.

“Glow, you are not here to say we are going to retreat, are you?”

“Of course not. How can we retreat like this...ni...ne of us were lost. We couldn't even retrieve...the bodies of those damned bastards ... they may be damn bastards, but they still died as warriors. Shouldn't we at least give them a warrior's respect and send them off?!”

Shubeon was shouting loudly.

“Shubeon!”

Haisha held back the visibly upset Shubeon. Shubeon was normally very cheeky, but he was the sympathetic and affectionate warrior in the group. That was why he was always nagging everybody. He didn't want others to know how he really was.

Still, everybody knew the truth. That was why they enjoyed his nagging. But today, he was removing that mask and revealing his true self.

He was the first of the warriors to cry.

“I will not forgive you if we retreat like this! I will NEVER forgive you! If I find anyone heading back, I will rip their legs myself!”

“Shubeon!”

Haisha started to slap Shubeon’s cheek before hugging him.

“We are in front of the Glow. Your anger, my anger, and all of our anger is here. Do not lose control, you little punk.”

“I don’t need anyone! Even if everyone else goes back, I will remain here and kill them all! I will not return until I can give each and every one of those nine damn bastards a proper funeral with my own hands!”

Shubeon continued to shout even while in Haisha’s arms, as if he had already lost all sense of reason.

“Shubeon, I will kill you if you cry anymore Stop crying!”

Thrint started to shout. That weak-hearted bastard was making him start to tear up as well.

The majority of the warriors were all crying as well. But wouldn’t it be shameful if he cried as well? If he, the person who was known within the Storm as the most cold-hearted, started to cry as well, then they would really start to believe that something like this happened because they were not good enough.”

“Shit!”

Thrint started to curse. But none of it was directed at anybody. He just continued to swear, using it as a replacement for his tears.

Yulian continued to have his back turned toward them as he looked up to the sky.

‘Damn it.’

Yulian started to head outside. He didn’t feel like he should stay here any longer.

As they mentioned, the warriors would feel shameful if they cried in front of him. Plus.....

Yulian just rubbed around his eye like nothing was wrong.

Book 3-6.2 Fighting 20,000 with 3,000

Egane urgently rushed back to Pareia, and the 3,000 warriors were divided up between the four Greatest Warriors' commands.

“I pray that you do not die and definitely come back to me alive and well.”

That was the only thing Yulian said after gathering all of the troops. Everybody was satisfied with just those words.

“Let us run like a hurricane. Let us drench them in red.”

Yulian quietly said that to the Red Storm warriors as they quietly followed behind him.

The Wikaly warriors were full of rage.

Their morale had spiked up since they overwhelmingly defeated Pareia in the last battle, so trivial issues would not bring their morale down.

If they did not have that victory, their morale would probably be crawling on the bottom right now.

The reason was because the trip to the central oasis that should have taken them about a week has taken them longer than half a month.

It was because Pareia showed up and disappeared like the wind to hinder them, as if they were the Jeria tribe (a wandering tribe without a home oasis. They have special abilities that make others revere them).

The thing that smaller units had over large units was their mobility and ease of movement. They did not fight. They just showed up without warning and quickly disappeared.

But it wasn't like they could just ignore them.

If they just let Pareia do whatever they want, they would strategically hit them and injure tens of warriors in the process.

But more importantly, it was the fear that that group would work together with the enemy Glow and his personal brigade called the Red Storm.

The Red Storm swung their swords faster than any other Pareia warriors and moved much faster as well.

In addition, leading them was one of the desert's War God who could not be stopped by even hundreds of warriors.

Runa had prepared many schemes to catch them - dig traps, prepare nets, ambushes, etc, but they were all useless.

That was why their only choice was to stop and create formations whenever the enemy units showed up.

In addition, since their supply transports were raided, the main unit had to move with the supply carts to prevent further raids. This made their speed even slower.

At the same time, they had no idea what happened to the unit of Pareia's warriors that took over the central oases. All they heard was that they moved up north.

And there was no way for there to be any warriors remaining to defend the oases up north. All of the Wikaly warriors were gathered in the oasis where the Glow resided.

They wanted to quickly chase after Pareia's warriors up north, but the 3,000 Pareia warriors behind them would not sit back and let them do as they wanted.

The morale of the Wikaly warriors which was as high as the sky couldn't help but slowly fall back down.

“Fuck.”

As one of the Wikaly warriors started to swear, it created a domino effect and the warriors all started to whisper to one another.

The lead warriors tried to calm them down, but since they were

annoyed as well, they didn't put much effort to ending the whispers.

“Sigh~!”

Runa shook his head after seeing what was going on.

Warriors needed to know how to wait and be patient, but he could not see any of that right now. This was the problem caused by having a long time of peace.

That day, even though Pareia's warriors were at such a disadvantageous position, he saw how all of them still precisely carried out the leader's commands. These were valiant warriors who were thoroughly trained.

If the other Wikaly oases chiefs trained their warriors as Abham and he had done, they definitely would not have let 3,000 of Pareia's warriors return that day.

“The warriors are faltering.”

Abham was looking around with a worried expression on his face.

“I'm sure they are worried about their families. They know that desert warriors will not harm anyone other than enemy warriors, but it is still concerning.”

Abham let out a small sigh internally at Runa's response before speaking.

“They really are amazing. To be able to hold back 20,000 warriors with a brigade that is not even 50 people.”

“They have 3,000. I could do the same if I was just hindering speed and not fighting. In fact, I could do it for over one month and not a half of a month like this.”

Abham making the Red Storm into this amazing brigade was not good for the warriors' morale.

As the Commanding Greatest Warrior, he should not be saying

things like that.

The expressions on the faces of the lead warriors around him were already turning darker.

“They are just like an annoying hyena. Just hyenas that wait until you are out of strength before they approach. Nothing more than that, Abham-nim.”

Abham must have realized his mistake at Runa’s words, as he opened up his shoulders and moved his pirma to encourage the warriors. Runa could not help but let out a sigh watching Abham head forward.

They needed to merge with the 10,000 warriors currently with the Glow as soon as possible to slowly push Pareia out. The enemy had only around 10,000 warriors, and they should need at least another month to get reinforcements.

‘We need to finish it before then. We can’t let them run amok within our territory.’

Runa thought like that as he turned his gaze toward the quicksand river. There was something that was constantly nagging at him.

‘Did the enemy really travel up the quicksand river?’

He had thought about using the quicksand river a long time ago, but could not figure out a way to achieve it.

How could you use something that will drag you in even with the slightest misstep?

Runa was feeling like something was off, but decided not to pay attention to the quicksand river. It wasn’t like he could stop them even if he knew what they were doing.

Deep wrinkles were starting to form on Runa’s forehead.

Time quickly passed by.

Yulian and Red Storm, as well as the individual Greatest

Warriors who were leading around 500 warriors each, seemed like they were flaunting that low number as they successfully managed to slow down the movement of 20,000 enemy warriors. The 10,000 Pareia warriors who were in the central oases used that time to move north to an empty oasis and avoided getting pincerd on both sides by the Wikaly.

Runa wanted to quickly catch up to them, but the continued harassment from Yulian's forces took up too much time.

Another half a month had passed by when they finally managed to catch up to the 10,000 warriors. He urgently sent a messenger warrior to the Glow's territory up north to ask for a jointed attack, before starting to prepare a strategy to take back the oasis Pareia had taken.

A thunder-like message was delivered to Runa who was deep in thought. More of Pareia's warriors had shown up in the central oases.

Runa could not help but be completely shocked. They had arrived about half a month earlier than he had anticipated. This was not possible. They could not move that quickly.

After a while, Runa had to accept the truth. Pareia had taken control of the quicksand river.

‘Since that has happened, are they going to pincer us instead?’

The moment Runa was sighing in disbelief, Yulian had already merged with Metro who had taken the northern oasis.

“You suffered quite a bit, Glow.”

Metro greeted Yulian and bowed.

“Have the other Greatest Warriors returned?”

As Yulian asked while getting off his pirma, Metro answered.

“They have all already gathered. Glow, you really are amazing. To do that with just 3,000 warriors.”

“The heavens have blessed our warriors. It also shows that we have enough strength to receive that blessing.

Yulian seemed to have changed a lot from this past month of battling. He had always been slim, but now, he had lost so much weight and looked so thin.

But the powerful muscles of his were still there.

In addition, his voice was calm and majestic. Metro thought this bloody war was helping Yulian grow and started to smile.

“Yes. This war will prove that to be true.”

“Let us enter.”

Yulian took the lead and Metro followed behind him. The moment they entered the leader's paoe, Vibli, as well as the other Greatest Warriors who were covered in dust greeted, Yulian. All of them must have come to strategize as soon as they arrived and did not have time to clean.

“The damage?”

Vibli answered Yulian's question.

“Of the 3,000 warriors, we only have about 1,000 left alive. Of them, 300 are seriously injured and cannot fight.”

To block 20,000 warriors with 3,000 warriors. Even though they did not engage in battle and just annoyed the enemy, it was not something that just anybody could do.

The fact that the Greatest Warriors personally took charge was the reason this was possible. But there was no way to completely prevent any injuries.

“Call the priests over to treat them as much as possible. They are heros. They are the heroes who fearlessly fought against the enemy to give our Pareia hope.”

“We have already informed the priests.”

“How is the morale of the warriors?”

This time, Metro answered Yuilan’s question.

“The morale is very high after hearing that our troops have once again taken over the central oases.”

“The enemy should also be excited because Abham is near. What have you decided to do?”

Vibli answered.

“We are still debating it. Regardless of which side we attack, we will be leaving our back vulnerable. The enemy has not made any movements yet.”

“We are bitten no matter what we do. But we cannot just sit back and wait like this.”

Vibli shook his head. He knew that Yulian was anxious right now, but they could not rush this.

“Glow, calm yourself. They are anxious as well.”

“We are at max 20,000 while they are 30,000. I can’t help but worry.”

“Don’t we have the Glow with us?”

Yulian smiled at Vibli’s words. He even thought that it would be great if he could divide himself into two or three and be present all over the battlefield.

“We must wait. The one that has taken control of the center is none other than Egane.”

As Vibli continued to urge Yulian to remain calm, Yulian nodded his head before coming up with an idea.

“What if we move someone else?”

“The other side is empty, but the enemy has more warriors than we do. If we just focus on defending the oasis, we should not have any problems.”

“From what I have heard, it didn’t seem to be well defended.”

“If an enemy manages to make it this far, it would have meant that the Wikaly was done for. That was why the warriors here were not trained as well.”

As Yulian slowly nodded his head, Vibli continued to speak.

“No matter how I look at it, it was completely different than the oasis that Abham was protecting. They are our enemies, but Abham and Runa, those two warriors are really amazing. I never expected the Wikaly to have such warriors.”

He was not saying this just because he had lost and had ended up as prisoners to the two of them.

Vibli was one of the people who had originally said that they could defeat the Wikaly in a head-on battle even with just 20,000 warriors while Metro used the quicksand river to conquer the center.

The other Greatest Warriors had agreed with his statement.

So how surprised were they with the turn of events? Hearing that Egane went back to bring up the 5,000 reserve warriors made them even more shocked.

“Then do we just have to wait forever?”

The Greatest Warriors looked around at each other at Yulian’s question.

Each of them shared their thoughts with their expressions, but all of them were hesitating. In a situation like this, the first to move was always at a disadvantage. Only if they could figure out how the enemy was going to move.....

They would not be able to come to a solution even if they discussed for days. In a situation like this, a different type of good news was delivered to them.

Book 3-6.3 End of the War

“What!”

Abham jumped up out of his seat as he started to shout.

“We have received report that Oklama has crossed the northern border area.”

Abham fell back down at the messenger warrior’s report and Runa tilted his chair back as he rubbed his face with his hands.

It wasn’t a surprise. He had been worried about the northern territory.

But there was nothing he could do. They would not have been able to fend Pareia off with a small number of warriors.

In the beginning, he didn’t think anybody would invade because they still had 15,000 warriors remaining. As long as the majority of the oases remained stable, things should have been fine. But once the central oases was attacked, the remaining warriors had to come battle Pareia’s warriors as well. Of course they would not sit back and watch.

‘This was why I emphasized creating an alliance so much prior to the war. Since Oklama would have been next on Pareia’s radar once we were defeated, they would have welcomed it as well.’

Runa bit his lips. Even he could not come up with a solution as the world started to turn dark around him.

‘This might actually be the end for the Wikaly.’

Abham tried to talk to Runa at that time.

“Runa!”

“.....”

“Runa?”

“Yes! Abham-nim.”

Once Runa realized Abham was calling him, he quickly turned to look at him.

“I’m guessing you don’t have a method either since you could not say anything until I called you.....”

“.....”

Abham put on a bitter smile while seeing that Runa was unable to answer.

If they had listened to Runa’s suggestion from the beginning, the Wikaly might not be this shaken by Pareia’s invasion right now.

“I am sorry Runa. I was unable to create the background for you to show your true abilities.”

Runa shook his head at Abham’s words.

“Not at all, Abham-nim. If Abham-nim was not there, I would just be known as a cheating coward of a man.”

“I’m sure there would have been many people other than me who would have realized your talent. You just did not end up meeting someone like that.”

“.....”

“I am a useless person but still one of Wikaly’s Greatest Warriors. I do not want to Wikaly to disappear like this. That is why I must ask you again. What should we do?”

Abham was waiting for an answer from Runa who was biting his lips. If Runa did not have a way to deal with it, that would be the end.

After a long time, Runa finally had an answer.

“Please tell the Glow to make a deal with Pareia and Oklama. Pareia will be given three oases, while Oklama will be given one.”

“Hmm, do you think the Glow will allow that to happen?”

Runa responded in disbelief at Abham’s question.

“If he wants us to all die while fighting, then he doesn’t have to allow it.”

At Runa’s stern words, Abham knew that there was nothing else to be done.

“I will try to convince the Glow, but will Pareia and Oklama agree to it?”

“That is not important. What is important right now is to buy some time. They should forget about fighting for a short moment. We can use that time to merge our unit with the Glow.”

“And once we merge?”

“If they agree to the deal, the Wikaly will restart with three oases. On the other hand, if they decline the deal and push forward, we will need to last as long as we can until they hopefully tire themselves out.”

There was a level of confidence coming out of Runa’s words.

“If we have 30,000 warriors gathered in one location, I am confident that I can defend against 50, no even 100,000 enemies. The question is how much food has been stored in the other oases.....”

Runa’s words contained both hope and despair. The fact that they had Runa gave hope that they would not fall until the end, but the despair came from the fact that there were probably no other oases which was prepared for war like his had been.

But they could not just give up.

“I understand. I will immediately contact the Glow. While I do that, you come up with a plan to safely retreat. The question is whether they will let us go.”

“I do not plan on moving forward but hitting the rear first. The moment we take back the oases that they have taken will be the best time to start the negotiations. We need to have the upper

hand in order to have any advantages in the deal.”

“What if Greatest Warrior Metro pressures our back? They have already merged with their Glow and the other Greatest Warriors.”

“And behind them is our warriors. They will not be able to send a lot of warriors out.”

“Ah!”

Abram would have normally quickly recognized it. But right now, the pressure was so high that he was not thinking clearly. That was why he couldn't help but rely on Runa more and more.

Yulian had been paying close attention to where Abham's army would move. Once he saw them heading for Egane, he quickly called a Greatest Warriors meeting.

“I thought they would pincer attack us, but they have headed toward Egane.”

Once Yulian started speaking, Vibli answered.

“He must have been scared of you and Egane's army attacking from the rear if they hit us. However, if they give up on the pincer attack and hit Egane first, since we have their other warriors behind us, they would not face much pressure. Furthermore, Egane only has 10,000 warriors with him.”

“It is dangerous.”

“Egane must hold on for a long time.”

Once Yulian heard Vibli's words, something sparked in his mind.

‘Must hold on for a long time? For what?’

He felt like he could almost figure out why but he could not do so.

“How should we move?”

Yulian quickly asked the Greatest Warriors. He felt like he might be able to figure it out if someone else had a similar idea.

“We have two choices. First, we ignore the enemy behind us and

chase after Abham's unit. Since Oklama is behind them as well, they should not be able to easily move the northern warriors behind us."

Metro did not agree with Vibli.

"If I was in the Wikaly's shoes, I would ignore the Oklama and attack us. Once Oklama takes control of an empty oasis, they will not move any further. But since our goal is to destroy the Wikaly, they will absolutely pincer us."

"And if we attack the north?"

"Egane will need to fend Abham off."

"Hold on."

Yulian stretched out his hand to make the Greatest Warriors stop talking as he settled his thoughts.

His mind started to clear up.

"Wouldn't the war come to an end if we can catch the enemy Glow? Since the warriors are spread around everywhere, it would be difficult for them to select a new Glow."

"That is true."

As the Greatest Warriors agreed with his statement, Yulian continued on.

"Why do we need Greatest Warrior Egane to fend them off? Tell them to retreat. He would only need to defend the oasis, but it will be difficult to defeat Abham and Runa on his own."

"Egane is the best when it comes to defending in an oasis. Even Venersis could not break his defense."

Yulian shook his head at Vibli's response.

"Our main goal is to keep at least one extra warrior alive. If their Glow and their oases have fallen, why would they continue to fight? We will wait until Abham's warriors get further away from

us before we quickly move north to attack the north where their Glow is residing. We have a similar number of warriors and they will be pressured from the back as well.”

Yulian felt a burning passion inside of him as he continued to speak.

“We need to take them down before Abham’s unit figures out what is going on. We need to quickly capture the Wikaly Glow.”

Once everything was determined, the warriors started to become busy once again.

Yulian quickly started to move his troops toward where Glow Gomaï Mao, the Wikaly’s Glow, was located.

Egane was already informed and moved further south to avoid Abham and Runa’s unit, and only sent scouts to figure out how they were moving. They did not engage in a battle at all.

After a few days, Abham and Runa heard that Yulian’s side chose to attack the north and quickly headed back north to unite with Gomaï Mao’s unit.

Unfortunately, Egane slowed Abham and Runa down with his 10,000 warriors like Yulian had done before, and once Yulian’s unit quickly overwhelmed Gomaï Mao’s unit, they could start to feel like victory was near.

During that time, the Wikaly sent a messenger with a request for peace. Yulian and the Greatest Warriors had to gather once more to discuss this option.

The warriors were tired after a long war. In addition, they would minimally be able to gain four oases that was on the border between Wikaly and Pareia. But most importantly they could not help but debate this because the deal that the Wikaly offered was too good to turn down.

But while they were debating this, Abham and Runa’s unit managed to unite with Gomaï Mai, and Egane united back with the

rest of Pareia's troops. The negotiations started while the enemy had 30,000 and Pareia' had 20,000 warriors standing by.

After discussing it with the Greatest Warriors for a long time, Yulian decided to accept the deal.

With Abham and Runa having arrived up here, it would be difficult to defeat them again.

Yulian's request were the following.

The three oases that were first suggested were changed to the four southern oases that were currently empty.

In addition, the Wikaly will need to pay a certain level of tribute each year.

Finally, they needed to hand over Abham and Runa.

Yulian explained that he could not just let them go as Pareia had received too much damage because of the two of them, and sent a reply indicating that if they did not hand over Abham and Runa, there would be no deal.

After that, all he could do was wait for their response.

If they declined the offer, they would set up a strong defense in the northern oasis they were currently at, and wait for Oklama to attack. They would use that opening to attack at the same time. But surprisingly, the Wikaly's response was shocking. In fact, it was extremely stupid. Agree to all terms.

The fact that Gomai Mao did not hesitate at all to hand over Abham and Runa, the two best tacticians left in Wikaly, made Yulian and the other Greatest Warriors click their tongues.

"I have not done anything shameful as a warrior. Although I am disappointed that I was not stronger, I ask that you give me a warrior's death as the Glow is a warrior as well."

Abham closed his eyes as he kneeled in front of Yulian.

Runa, who was next to him, did not say anything as he kneeled

their with his eyes closed as well.

“You are my prisoner. What desert tribe kills the warriors they take as prisoners?”

The two warriors opened their eyes at Yuilan’s answer.

“You are both amazing warriors. You are not warriors who should kneel. Stand up.”

Even Pareia’s Greatest Warriors, with the exception of Egane, looked at Yulian with surprised expressions.

“I told you to get up and sit down.”

The warriors around Abham and Runa stood them up and sat them down.

“If you are going to kill us, please do it swiftly. I do not wish to be toyed with.”

Seeing Runa glare at him while speaking, Yulian responded with an angry expression.

“Do you know how many of Pareia’s warriors were sacrificed because of the two of you?”

“I did my duty as a warrior to protect my tribe. There is nothing else to say. Just kill us now.”

“Who said I was going to kill you? I like warriors and I respect extremely talented warriors. Do the two of you not consider yourselves to be warriors?”

Abham and Runa looked toward each other. Abham’s eyes had a look of confusion, while Runa’s eyes had a look of resignation.

“I will use the two of you as Pareia’s warriors from here on. I will not tolerate any disobedience. The two of you are my prisoners, and the Wikaly, who would need to pay your ransom, has thrown you away.”

Everyone was shocked at Yulian’s words.

“We need to take their heads to resolve the souls of our dead warriors.”

As a couple Greatest Warriors and lead warriors shouted, Yulian looked around before answering.

“Nobody will make me change my mind.”

Sensing that there was a majestic tone that made them feel like they could not object, all of them could only look back and forth at Yulian and the two warriors.

There were some who understood Yulian’s decision, while others, who were clouded with a sense of revenge, could not believe it at all.

“Greatest Warrior Egane, please take care of the details to make sure the two of them are treated as Greatest Warriors.”

“I understand, Glow.”

Once Egane answered, Yulian looked toward Abham and asked.

“Abham.”

“.....”

“Do not think this is shameful. Your tribe, your Glow, has thrown you away because of fear. There is no reason you cannot continue to be a warrior.”

“Runa!”

As Yulian called Runa this time, Runa lifted up his head and looked at Yulian.

“It was thrilling for me the first time I met you. Did you not feel the same way?”

Runa should not have forgotten about it. The monster swinging his two greatswords and proving that Man Boo Boo Dang was possible. As well as that eerie feeling and the thrill he felt when that monster looked toward him and smiled.

“I will promise you. Use your brain for me. I will make those ideas in your head become reality.”

Runa could feel his heart tremble once again.

The sixth month of year 255. While Pareia was preparing to return, they heard the news that Okalama had conquered Wikaly's remaining three oases.

In addition, a large number of Wikaly warriors brought their families and crossed over to Pareia's territory.

Once the Wikaly perished, Pareia started to move to take over the oases that Okalama had taken.

It was because a large number of the families of the Wikaly warriors who were now Pareia's warriors were still remaining at the oases. Okalama urgently made a deal with Pareia to hand over two oases and retreated back.

The seventh month in the year 255 of the continental calendar. Yulian had conquered six of the Wikaly oases and received the pledges of loyalty from the individual oasis chiefs before quickly returning to Pareia.

End of Chapter 6.

Book 3-7.1 The Return

Project Strengthen the Tribe

Pareia needed to get stronger.

The return of the victorious warriors.

Many of them returned back to their oases to fanfare, but there were too many warriors lost in this war for any of them to be very excited.

The first thing Yulian did once he returned was providing the rewards for the families of the dead warriors.

Some of the tribe's wealth, as well as the wealth gained from this war went to the warriors' families. They were rewarded with pirmas and pinas because although Pareia did not recognize private property, pirmas and pinas were the exception.

After sending a couple of days chaotically taking care of everything, Yulian finally had time to look around him and start planning toward the changes Pareia will face.

“These are the Red Storm.”

Yulian introduced Runa to the Red Storm warriors who were standing under the scorching sun.

The gazes of the Red Storm warriors who were looking at Runa Brink were nothing but cold.

They clearly feared having Runa as an enemy, however, there were too many things that happened for them to accept him as one of their own.

Just how much did Pareia suffer because of him alone? In addition, just looking at Runa made them recall their nine dead comrades they were trying so hard to forget. That made them not want to see him even more.

“Must we accept him, Glow!”

Someone finally shouted out a complaint after a long time of staring. The person to shout the complaint was Haisha.

Yulian thought that it would be either Shubeon or another warrior that would launch a complaint. But for it to come from Haisha who had always been completely loyal and supportive, Yulian knew the Red Storm’s anger was greater than he had expected.

“Haisha.”

Yulian called out to him in a calm manner, but Haisha continued to speak.

“He is our enemy. Until just the other day, he was the bitter enemy we needed to make sure to catch and kill.”

Haisha was speaking in a teary voice. He had anticipated it, but it didn’t look like this would go very well.

While Yulian was debating what to say, the one to speak was surprisingly Runa. He even had a smirk on his face.

“Pfft, it’s funny. Are these really the Red Storm warriors?”

“What?!”

As Shubeon ran toward Runa while shouting in an angry voice, Haisha stopped Shubeon as he asked.

“Yes. We are the Red Storm. What are you trying to say?”

“I thought the Red Storm was an amazing warrior brigade, but it just seems like you are just a group of stupidly strong warriors.”

Haisha calmed the warriors who were all starting to get angry and put a hand on his greatsword as he responded.

“Take responsibility for your words. If you do not clearly explain what you are trying to say, I will kill you even if it means the Glow will kill me himself.”

“Haisha!”

As Yulian tried to shout something else to Haisha, Runa signaled him with his eyes and looked back toward Haisha to speak.

“You want me to say it again? You are a useless warrior brigade that can only think on a child’s level.”

“You.....”

As Haisha shouted angrily and clenched the handle of his greatsword, Runa continued to speak.

“I have no plans on being close with all of you. I may be your enemy, but to me, all of you were my nightmares. An incomprehensible nightmare. That was why I made up my mind. If it is all of you, you are capable of being my Yulta pieces.”

“What did you say?”

Runa casually responded to Haisha’s shout.

“Didn’t everybody gather together because we were drawn in by Yulian-nim’s dream? Especially all of you, who are said to be Yulian-nim’s personal warriors. Then you should be prepared to do whatever is necessary, and throw away whatever is necessary to make that dream become reality. Using anything and everything I can to make that happen is my way of being loyal to Yulian-nim.”

“So you want us to go ‘oh, is that so?’ and accept you as one of our own?”

Runa shook his head at Shubeon’s question and continued.

“I am saying use me just like I will use you. Honestly speaking, I can confidently say that I am at least a hundred times better than all of you. I’m not the one complaining and crying over my dead comrades.”

Although he was so angry that he wanted to draw his sword, Haisha held himself back as he asked.

“Can you prove it?”

“I will show it to you from here on. I will show you that my brain alone is better than all of your strengths combined.”

Yulian felt like this was not something he should involve himself in and could not step in, while the Red Storm had nothing to say and just looked at each other before clenching their fists.

“Prove it. No, you will have to prove it.”

It was Thrint who ended up speaking to end the silence.

“If it is to achieve our dream, I will gladly forget everything and be your Yulta piece. However, you better use me properly. The moment I feel like you are not using us properly, you will definitely die by my hands.”

Seeing them being this hostile with each other even with him around, Yulian internally shook his head and started to shout.

“Enough!”

They were all precious to him. Yulian did not want them to hate each other even more.

“I am the Glow. The fact that we lost some Red Storm warriors breaks my heart as well. However, I am the Glow. As the Glow, the death of each and every one of Pareia’s warriors must make my heart ache.”

Everybody stopped their whispers and started to look toward Yulian.

“Blood is meant to be spilled in war, and all warriors find that to be normal for the sake of their tribe. Neo Latin-nim decides who lives and who dies. Even so, I do not want any warriors to die, and I believe Runa is the person to make that possible.”

“.....”

“That was why I shared my dream with him, and he agreed to join us. But all of you are publically saying in front of me that you will kill him. Even though you all know that he has the abilities to

save the lives of many warriors.”

None of the Red Storm warriors could say anything. But their hearts still could not accept Runa. Yulian knew that as well, but he did not try to change their minds. He believed that time will take care of all issues.

“Runa, in your head, are all warriors only Yulta pieces? Are you only able to use the warriors’ sublime will as pieces? How can you treat them that way when they are so passionate about what they do? I will not ask any of you to get along with each other. However, I will be happy if all of you could at least respect each other.”

Runa and Red Storm lowered their heads.

“This is the start of Pareia. There are too many things to do from here on. I hope that I will not see any of you growling at each other during this time.”

“We understand, Glow.”

“Thank you for understanding my request. You may all leave.”

Once the Red Storm warriors left, Yulian looked toward Runa and started to speak.

“They are all good warriors.”

“Yes, my heart is beating quickly. I cannot believe that I will be able to put them to use.”

“Do not forget the fact that I am included in there as well, Runa.”

Runa started to lightly smile as he answered.

“It is hard to take that military focus out of my mind. However, Glow, you cannot win a war if you let human emotion control you. You can only think about what you can do to win. You can only think about what you can do to win with the least amount of damage, to protect the forces you can use for the future.”

“I know. However, I just hope that you do not forget about their

will.”

Runa nodded his head and answered.

“Of course, Glow.”

“Good. We will be having a Greatest Warrior meeting with the oasis chiefs soon. My head is already hurting from the mountain load of things I need to take care of.”

“I will share some of that burden with you. Let us go.”

Yulian and Runa stood side by side as they started to walk toward the Greatest Warrior meeting location.

Book 3-7.2

The Greatest Warrior Meeting.

This was a meeting between the chiefs of the oases as well as the chieftains with a lot of influence.

Since the seven new oases chiefs for the seven oases they just gained from the Wikaly were present as well, this was Pareia's largest Greatest Warrior Meeting ever.

Once Yulian and Runa entered the paoe, everybody got up from their seats to greet Yulian.

“Please take a seat wize warriors.”

As Yulian said that while taking his seat, everybody sat back down as well.

“The reason I called this meeting today is, as everybody already knows, to take care of the loose ends from the end of this war. Please share the things that you have thought about and then follow the things that we decide on in this meeting. Furthermore, I am naming Runa Brink as my assistant warrior starting today. He will start to participate in the Greatest Warrior Meeting from here on out.”

Once Yulian introduced him, Runa stood up from his seat and greeted everyone.

“My name is Runa Brink. Please take good care of me.”

Many of them were stumped at Runa's greeting.

The anger from knowing just how much sacrifice Pareia had to make because of this man, the relief from knowing that he was now one of Pareia's people, as well as the remaining thread of connection to the Wikaly for the former Wikaly chiefs.

The Wikaly Glow had pretty much selected a bath of destruction by throwing away Abham and Runa.

Runa and Yulian must have discussed it beforehand, as Runa did not sit back down and started to bring up the topics for discussion.

“Under the order of the Glow, I will be leading this meeting. The most urgent issue right now is the protection of the oases. There are only 80,000 warriors left in Pareia right now. We are lacking too many warriors in relation to the number of oases we hold. Pareia did not have a bad relationship with the Oklama up north, but there were some friction during this last war. As a result, it would be smart to consider them as enemy territory now.”

Runa put the map of the desert that he had prepared in advance at the middle of the table.

“That means that the problem we face is how to handle the Shuarei to the south, the Oklama to the north, as well as the potential hostile forced from the Silence Empire. Thankfully, the Shuarei will take at least two or three years to return to the 60,000+ warriors they used to have.”

Runa stopped talking for a moment before continuing on.

“In addition, the Silence Empire to the east is currently being pressured by a kingdom called the Rojini Kingdom. So I believe it is safe to say that they will not be a big problem for a while. As a result, my suggestion is that we throw away the two oases closest to the Shuarei, as well as the two oases closest to Oklama.”

As soon as Runa stopped talking, the chiefs all started to whisper with one another.

This was especially true for the chiefs of the oases Runa suggested they throw away. These chiefs started to angrily shout.

“Does that make any sense? Why would we throw away any oasis when people are all trying to earn more oasis?”

None of the Chiefs, and even Yulian, could not understand Runa’s intent. Only Egane was lightly nodding his head.

“Do we have the strength to protect them? Do we have the

strength to protect twenty oases with 80,000 warriors?”

Runa glared at the chiefs as he continued.

“The more we split up our warriors, the harder it will be to gather them. It will also be harder to handle any sudden attacks by the enemy. I will not say this if someone is capable of defending against 20,000 enemy warriors with just 5,000. Is anybody confident that they can do that?”

Although Runa’s words were not wrong, the chiefs who believed it made no sense to throw away an oasis started to speak.

“Even so, to throw away four oases. We all sacrificed so much to earn those four oases. What would we say to our warriors?”

“Since we have more women and children in the tribe, our number of warriors should quickly increase again. Why must we give them up?”

“No matter what your reason may be, it does not make sense.”

Yulian lifted up his hand to make people stop talking and then asked Runa.

“Please break it down and explain it to us.”

“It is exactly as I said. Keeping oases that are difficult to defend will not strengthen us. It will instead weaken us little by little. Rather than let that happen, it would be better to focus on our internal affairs to build up the necessary strength to defend them before we go get them back. Furthermore, even if we throw those oases away, the Shuarei cannot take them.”

“And why would that be the case?”

“They don’t even have 60,000 warriors. Do you think they will have the strength to occupy another oasis? The oases they have right now will be enough.”

“And what if the Shuarei end up taking them?”

Runa looked toward Yulian and the chiefs before starting to

smile.

“Do you think the Glow will just let that happen? If you consider the Shuarei’s current situation, they will only be able to gather around 10,000 warriors for an attack.”

“So it is a type of trap?”

“That is not the main goal, but it can end up being that way.”

“Then what do you plan to do about the Oklama?”

Runa quickly answered Egane’s question.

“We would not be giving it to them for free. In return for the oases, we must get a promise of mutual non-aggression for a couple of years. The Oklama will not be able to reject this offer. If they had the desire to fight, they will have shown their teeth at our last interaction. Since they didn’t, it shows that they are wary of us as well. In a situation like that, if they can gain two oases by agreeing to mutual non-aggression, that would be a great gain for them. We would also buy ourselves some time to focus on our internal affairs. Since Pareia’s population is now close to around 800,000, which means that we should be able to gain around 10,000 new warriors in about three years time. It will continue to increase quickly after that. The most important thing right now is to not lose any warriors during that time.”

The gazes of everyone in the paoe had all focused on Runa.

“I have made many plans to make Pareia into a strong nation, and to make strong warriors in exactly 20 years.”

“The most urgent issue is the ratio between men and women. This is an issue for all tribes and not just Pareia, but Pareia’s ratio is too severe. We need to get it to at least a 1:3 ratio so that we do not lack warriors in the future. This is something that we need to enforce for a long time to fix, so we need to make the warriors take at least three wives even if we need to force them to do so. If we start now, I believe we will be able to see the effects of it in twenty

years.”

“Twenty years?”

“It is the shortest amount of time to get certain results. This is also something that we need for after we unify the desert. Population is tied to the strength of a nation. If it is something we can get started on now, it is better to start now than to wait.”

‘He has the same thoughts as Grace and her five wives to a warrior opinion.’

That was what Yulian thought about as he heard Runa speak. The thing that Grace continued to emphasize was the fact that warriors needed to have at least 5 wives.”

Honestly speaking, he thought it was normal to have two or three wives, but he has not said anything about it because it would feel like they were shoving girls at the warriors if he publicly proclaimed it.

“The second issue is the economy. I know this is a touchy subject, but please allow people to own private property.”

The chiefs started to whisper once more at Runa’s words. It was a really dangerous thing to accept private property.

“We cannot do that. If we accept private property, there is a chance that the warriors’ loyalty will go down. Furthermore, Pareia provides the most to our citizens compared to any other tribe, so why would we approve of private property?”

As Shamba, the chief of the sandless oasis jumped up and shouted, Runa lowered his head once before looking around at Yulian and the other chiefs.

“I am saying relinquish that control. Rather than using allocations to earn loyalty, develop trust with each of them, person to person. Give them dreams and hopes. If it is our warriors, I know that they can be twice as effective as they currently are. You need to accept that the reason the desert cannot stand up to the

continent economically is because we do not allow private property. Securing multiple oases have guaranteed us the minimal requirements to survive; this is the only way for the entire tribe to get stronger.”

“Runa, that is extremely difficult and complicated to do. Have you thought about how many issues we may have to change the tribe into one that allows private property? Talking about the biggest issue first, the warrior spirit will shake if they are fighting for something other than the tribe. Second, what would we use to trade? We do not have any type of commerce system set up and the things that we can sell are limited.”

Yulian had not been lazy with his studies until now. He had been using books from the continent to learn about business, economics, history, geography etc, so he knew the strengths and weaknesses of a limited market like the one they had.

“I know what the Glow’s concerns are. However, didn’t you say that a merchant from a large merchant guild goes through here?”

“Are you talking about Edwin? We have created a path for him. We have also received a lot of help from him as well.”

“The volume of the East-West trade is beyond our expectation. The volume that the merchant named Edwin moves pales in comparison. It is like a single piece of sand in a sand dune. We need to expand the trade route and bring in as many merchants as possible so that they compete with each other. Tell them to research the things they can take from the desert, while asking them to give us the things we need. In return, their safety will be guaranteed and promise them they will receive huge profits. If we do that, then commerce will naturally be created in our oasis as well.”

Watching Runa continue to talk without stopping, everyone could see just how much he had prepared for this meeting.

But they still needed to be careful about the things they needed to

be careful about. Not everything in the world would go the way they want it to go.

“I understand that the assistant warrior has prepared a lot for this meeting, however, isn’t it too much? There are so many things we need to take care of right away. If we announce that we are approving private property right now, it will cause chaos and slow down our speed to get other things done. How about we do not do this now, and wait until Pareia’s foundations have solidified? I don’t think it would be a bad idea to start it at that point.”

Yarumaha started to speak.

Thinking about it holistically, he also believed that allowing private property would raise the efficiency of the warriors significantly. However, this was not the time.

For someone like him who had already been infected by Yulian’s passion, private property was something he would not even dream about.

Runa poured out his disagreement.

“If we don’t do it now, when would we do it? This is the time Pareia needs to do everything we can. I hope you are not saying we should start it once we unify the desert. If we are one year late in doing something now, it will make our dream at least ten years further away. We do not have that much time. We cannot waste any time like that.”

Runa looked around at Yulian and the chiefs before bowing 90 degrees. As all of them became confused about why Runa was doing that, he started to speak again.

“Please trust me and leave it to me. I have made preparations for all possible issues. This Runa Brink has seen the Glow’s dream and the passion of Pareia. I too have had problems sleeping at night knowing that I am taking part in such a grand vision.”

Runa ended his bow and looked back to ward Yulian.

“You promised that I would be able to use all of my abilities. And I promised that I will do everything I can to help set the foundation for you.”

“I did promise you that.”

As Yulian nodded his head and confirmed, Runa seemed to have received some strength as he started to try and convince the chiefs again.

Book 3-7.3

“No matter what it is, chaos is bound to follow change. However, we cannot change if we fear that chaos. I want to catch up to the continent in every aspect that the desert is currently lacking in.”

Runa tapped his head.

“There is still a lot in this Runa’s head. All of them cannot be put into play right now, but someday, I plan to carry out each and every one of them. I absolutely need the assistance of the wise oases leaders to make it happen.”

“.....”

The oases chiefs and the chieftains looked at one another without being able to say anything.

Internally, they were thinking, and even shouting that ‘we can’t do this, it is too dangerous,’ but it was not easy to say it out loud.

“Runa, I understand your desire. However, it is too fast. You are correct when you say the faster the better, but the amount of chaos increases the faster we go.”

As Runa’s face started to turn dark at Yulian’s response, Yulian continued on.

“Carry out your plan slowly in multiple parts so that we can minimize the chaos and guarantee we will not fail. Then use that to convince me as well as the wise chiefs that have gathered here today.”

As Yulian responded for the uncertain chiefs, all of them nodded their heads to agree as they looked toward Runa.

Even Runa was happy knowing that he had at least received a positive response.

They will automatically start to follow his plan if he slowly showed them the process.

“I understand. I will slowly show it to you. I will draw the foundation and start to color it one color at a time.”

Runa answered in a confident voice to motivate himself.

The extremely long meeting finally ended long into the night.

Yulian had planned on letting Runa stay next to his paoe for the time being.

Although Runa became one of Pareia's people, there may be many warriors who want him dead because of all of the warriors who died by his hands. So this was just a safety measure. He didn't want something like that to happen, but you could never tell what people were thinking. Yulian did not want even the slightest of dangers to occur.

Yulian asked Runa a question before they entered the paoe.

“When did you prepare all of those things?”

“It is something I have been thinking about even when I was in the Wikaly tribe. However, nobody had paid attention. Since I was a man who could not even complete his coming-of-age ceremony properly, they would not listen to anything I had to say.”

As Runa bitterly answered Yulian's question, Yulian put his hand on Runa's shoulder as he responded.

“I am different. I like people with talent. You might think I am being snobbish, but I believe that is the type of thinking all Glows should have. Show me what you are capable of doing.”

“Do not worry, Glow. From here on out, you will have many headaches because of the suggestions I bring up. Hahaha.”

Seeing Runa laugh, Yulian started to laugh as well, as the two of them started to walk again.

“Glow.”

“Hmm?”

“Abham-nim is not someone who should have lived like that.”

“I know. That is why he recognized your talent. However, since he announced his retirement as a warrior, there is nothing I can do.”

Even after hearing what Yulian had to say, Abham had stumbled like a weak old man.

You could say that he had lost all desire to do anything.

“He is the only person to appreciate my abilities before you. Please do not take this the wrong way, but if Abham-nim had been the Wikaly Glow, the Wikaly may have won the last war. Even with the Glow having taken control of the quicksand river.”

Yulian was not taken back by Runa’s dangerous proclamation. Yulian knew just how much Runa cherished Abham. Yulian started to laugh as he answered.

“Hahaha, I will not disagree with you. Honestly, when Greatest Warrior Egane told me to make you one of my people, I had to think hard about it. I admired your abilities, but I lost too many of my close and important warriors because of you.”

“I guess I should visit Egane-nim today and thank him.”

Yulian started to smile at Runa’s response and put his hand on his chest as he continued to speak.

“However, deep inside my heart, I knew that you were someone I absolutely needed to have. It became even stronger once I started to think about how having you could save even more lives in the future. That was why I threatened the Wikaly to make you mine.”

“.....”

“I am even more certain about it after seeing you today. I do not question that our Pareia will develop significantly thanks to you.”

“I will make sure to live up to your expectations. Anyways, when will that merchant named Edwin come again?”

“I’m not sure. Since the war is now over, he should be bringing a load of materials soon. We will give our black water and Monster’s Souls to him, and he will give us items from the continent, as well as high quality iron and food. We need to prepare for the upcoming growth to our population.”

“I am just disappointed that I was not there in the beginning. The Glow has given him too many things.”

As Runa spoke with disappointment, Yulian shrugged his shoulders as he answered.

“We needed an immediate investor since we did not have much time. Plus, you can’t do anything about the deals we have already promised. You should not need to worry much since we can always ask for anything we need.”

“I am relieved to hear that. Please let me be the one to negotiate with him the next time he is here.”

“I will give you the power to make any decisions in my stead.”

“Thank you. We need to be competitive in order to change the culture of our tribe. I hope that this merchant has a large enough guild to make that happen.”

“I can guarantee his reliability. He is someone who has not broken a single promise we have made.”

“I guess it will be easy to work with him.”

The two men slowly approached the paoe as they continued to talk.

Guoooooooooooo~!

Runa flinched after hearing that loud noise and questioned Yulian.

“Glow, do you hear some type of noise?”

“What noise?”

Runa thought he had heard wrong after hearing Yulian's response. If the Glow, who is a warrior among warriors, did not hear something that he had heard, he must have heard wrong.

Guoooooooooooo~!

However, hearing this noise again, Runa asked once more.

"Guo? It is a noise that sounds like a crying monster."

"Ah!"

Yulian finally realized why Runa flinched and started to smile as he responded.

"It is the noise of my wife's pet."

"This pet makes quite a strange noise."

"Hahaha. You'll need to get used to him so I guess I should officially introduce you. Do not be too surprised. Shopping!"

Runa could feel something large moving in the darkness after hearing Yulian's voice.

He then felt something slowly crawling out from behind the paoe...as well as fear.

"Ahhh!"

Seeing the head of a large monster head toward Yulian, Runa shouted in shock.

"Sand Dragon?"

Yulian reached his hand out to pet Shopping's head as he answered.

"His name is Shopping. He is my wife's pirma, as well as the warrior protecting my wife. You do not need to worry about him. He is completely tamed to the point he does not even drool while looking at people. When he is hungry, he just leaves to eat before coming back. He is a good boy that even brings back wild animals from time to time for us to eat."

“That...you...this monster...is your pet?”

“You’ll get used to it the more you see him. We are hoping that this punk ends up becoming a giant. If that happens, we may be able to tame a few more Sand Dragons.”

“Haaaaa!”

Runa let out a noise of disbelief, as Yulian patted Shopping’s head and introduced Runa.

“He is a new family member. His name is Runa Brink. He is a very smart person, so if you try to trick him, you may end up looking stupid.”

“He understands human speech?”

Grrrrrr.

At Runa’s question, Shopping made a noise before approaching Runa. Runa jumped back in shock.

“He does. He is after all the strongest monster in the desert. Once you get closer to him, just getting on top of him for a ride will be a good experience for you as well. There is nowhere better to get a good view of the entire desert than Shopping’s head.”

“Haa~, I understand, Glow.”

Runa calmed his racing heart before looking at Shopping. He didn’t think he would ever get used to it.

“Let’s go in. I will officially introduce you to my wife.”

“Yes...Glow.”

Runa peeked at Shopping before quickly following after Yulian.

“Grace.”

Yulian lifted the cloth to enter the paoe as he called Grace’s name. Grace quickly hugged Yulian as if she had been waiting and started to speak.

“The meeting went very late.”

Yulian lifted Grace up as he answered.

“I feel like it will continue to be like this for a while. I have someone to introduce to you.”

Grace blushed a bit after realizing Runa was there before moving away from Yulian and greeting him.

“I don’t believe I have met this warrior before. I am the Glow’s first wife, Grace Nellisi.”

Seeing that Grace’s appearance was even more beautiful than he could have ever imagined, Runa subconsciously started to blush as he lowered his head and responded.

“My name is Runa Brink. I greet the Mother of Pa...reia.”

“Pfft, why are you so nervous? The Glow brings warriors over frequently, so there is no need to be nervous. Although it is true that you are interrupting a husband and wife’s alone time.”

Once Grace realized that the young man in front of her was the warrior who had frustrated Pareia for so long, she took a good look at Runa. He seemed to lack the strength of a warrior, but he was a veteran warrior with decent enough looks that some of the desert’s young ladies would like him.

Still, she decided to tease him a bit since he had caused her husband so much trouble. Runa’s face turned even redder and he was at a loss of what to do.

“Grace, Runa is a warrior who is not married yet. Do not tease him too much.”

“Ah! Why is a veteran warrior still not married? It is a big sin for a warrior to not be married. Did you not find any girls that you like in Pareia?”

“That...well, that’s not it...I just ... yet.”

“I have played matchmaker for tens of warriors already. The majority of the Red Storm warriors met their wives through my

introduction. Do not worry. I will find a nice young girl for you. It is tradition for a man to have a wife.”

“That...yes...thank you.”

Yulian laughed while looking at Runa being so nervous and started to speak.

“Runa claims that a warrior needs to have at least three wives even if we have to force them, so introduce him to three young ladies.”

“Omo! Is that so? He thinks like I do. I believe that a warrior needs to have at least five wives. As the Mother of Pareia, I guess I need to work together with Runa-nim to make that happen.”

“Yes...thank you very much.”

Grace smiled once more before asking Yulian a question.

“Did you have dinner?”

“Not yet. The meeting was so long. Runa was so passionately speaking that everyone just continued to listen to him. Now that I think about it, I am very hungry.”

“I will prepare a meal.”

As Grace went to a corner of the paoe to make the food, Yulian offered Runa a seat as he started to speak.

“Tomorrow, we will build a paoe next to mine. You will live there from now on. But for today, rest here.”

As Runa peeked toward Grace, Yulian started to laugh as he answered.

“Hahaha, why is a warrior who was so confident in battle so timid right now? Do not worry. I normally fulfill my duty as a husband very well so she will be understanding for one night.”

“Ah! So that’s the case.”

“Yes. Pay close attention.”

The two men started to laugh while exchanging some interesting words.

That was the first night Runa could get a good night's rest since surrendering to Pareia.

Book 3-7.4

A little less than 50 warriors were gathered under the blistering heat of the sun.

If anybody who knew about them were to look at them right now, they would have found it to be interesting. The warriors faces were very cloudy and they all looked like they had no energy, almost as if they were old men who were about to die. The people would be surprised to know that this was actually the members of the Red Storm, whose name was known throughout the entire desert.

“Did you go visit them?”

As Haisha asked all of them a question, they could only shake their heads no.

They were afraid to go visit them.

Since the Red Storm was such a small brigade, all of them knew about each other's family situations.

They were afraid to visit the families of the nine comrades who died in the last war.

They felt like the families would ask something along the lines of ‘You came back alive after killing your friend?’ They knew that none of the families would actually say something like that, but the pressure in their hearts was too much.

There are many difficult things in life if the family does not have a warrior.

The other warriors of the family would take care of them, but would anybody take care of them as much as a warrior of their household?

None of the nine dead warriors were without a wife. It was obvious. They were already famous warriors in Pareia, and there

were no single ladies who would just let them be alone.

In the middle of the gloomy atmosphere, Thrint started to speak.

“What is there to think about? My friend’s wife is my wife, and my friend’s children is my children. All we have to do is take them in as our wives and adopt their children as our children. We can take care of them.”

Since the tribe had about 5 women for each man, it was normal for a single warrior to have multiple wives.

However, because everyone married single women and nobody married a widow, it was almost impossible for their friends’ wives to marry again. That was why Thrint was suggesting that they marry the wives of the dead warriors.

None of the warriors objected to what Thrint had said.

“Then I will take it as everyone agreeing to it. Go find them yourselves. I don’t think anyone will be tactless about it.”

Everybody nodded at what Thrint had said.

Haisha started to speak.

“In addition, let us all get stronger. Let’s make sure that there is no chance of any of us dying again in battle. Unless you want to make your friends feel this way again. Or make your family feel sorrow like this.”

“Leader, go ask the Glow for a vacation. Also ask for some time for the warriors to train alone. We will use the vacation to go bring the families of our lost friends and then use that training time to get stronger.”

One of the Red Storm warriors responded to Shubeon’s statement.

“We will no longer get stronger from any normal training.”

“The only place fit for us to train is the Monster’s Field. If we split into even smaller groups, the difficulty will be higher, and

shouldn't we try to catch that Sand Dragon we couldn't catch last time?"

Shubeon responded to a third warrior's suggestion.

"Right. How long will we just run away from it? I want my own mount like Shopping!"

The atmosphere became a little lighter at Shubeon's statement.

Triquel was the original mood maker for Red Storm, but it looked like Shubeon was planning on taking on that mission for himself.

"Let's work hard. We are the Red Storm. We just make sure none of us kick the bucket from here on."

Everybody regained their strength at Haisha's last words.

'We are the Red Storm. We will not lose to anybody. We can get even stronger.'

The Red Storm thought that way and believed that it will happen.

Pareia was starting to become chaotic. It was because Runa's plan had changed the daily lives of Pareia's tribe members.

Yulian and the many chiefs, as well as Runa were controlling it as much as they could, but it was hard to control everything that was changing. The majority of the changes did not happen to the warriors, but actually to the women of the tribe.

The long-instilled warriors' mentality of protecting the tribe and getting stronger helped make them to be not very affected by the change, but it was different for the women of the households.

These women wanted to give as much as they could for their children and their husband. Their daily lives changed once they learned that the pina's fur could be exchanged for food, clothes, and all sorts of items as well as the fact that even a monster's skin and teeth could be traded for precious items.

As time went by, the warriors started to react to it as well. The majority of them were affected because they could not win over the nagging of their wives, but once they put it in the perspective that working a little bit harder would make their lives even better, it pushed them to work harder at catching monsters, hunting wild animals, and gathering black water.

The warriors who used to only gather Monster's Souls started to bring the corpses of monsters and wild animals to their wives, and they worked hard to catch even more than before.

In regards to the black water, since the Glow and the chiefs gave them rations in proportion to the amount of black water they gathered, it managed to push the warriors to work a little harder as well.

The fact that the oases were safer was a positive side effect of the situation. As the warriors hunted more monsters and wild animals, the amount that roamed around the oasis started to decrease.

However, there were some negative effects as well.

The warriors were okay thanks to the strict control from the lead warriors as well as their distinct pride as warriors, but it was a different story for the women of the tribe. The women were starting to distinguish what was yours and what was mine, and there were multiple instances of verbal arguments as well.

Starting then, Grace's influence started to shine.

Grace, who was respected as the Mother of Pareia, ordered them to bring all arguments to her, and punished anyone who went against that order without leniency.

Runa had already anticipated the type of issues that would arise at the beginning of introducing private property and had asked Grace for help.

As Grace got angry and fiercely came at them, the women of Pareia did not dare to cause any disturbance, and in the times they

felt wronged, they brought it in front of Grace to resolve.

Runa was also strict about the items brought in from the continent. He had given stern warnings to the merchants of the continent. They were only approved to trade the items that were previously approved. It was because of Yulian's order that allowing anything and everything to start will make the desert go crazy.

Since the fact that the continent was more developed proved to show that this cultural change was for the better, it was the only thing they could do to prevent total anarchy.

The biggest problem was that once this economic lifestyle became the norm, the warriors would have to earn something for the family. It would be separate from what the women earned for the family.

Right now, all of the men still needed to be warriors. It was great for the tribe to become rich, but the truth was that they needed to strengthen the tribe first.

That was why until there was an increase in the number of men, they needed to pay the warriors equally. Thankfully, since all of them pretty much took turns hunting monsters or wild animals, gathering black water, etc, there wouldn't be many issues for a while.

A giant marketplace was created in Pareia in just half a year, and people from Edwin's merchant guild started to reside in the tribe to run the market.

These merchants figured out the needs of the continent and the desert before creating sensible prices for items, and they were in charge of trading with the guild whenever they came by.

The people of Pareia started to get used to this restricted capitalistic society without much issue.

Yulian, who could see Pareia slowly starting to change, decided to share this market with the Rivalde as well.

It was the promise he had made in the past with Glow Dejaine Nellisi of the Rivolde tribe.

Although Dejaine had not specifically asked for anything for his past assistance, Yulian had continued to keep that promise in his mind.

Thanks to that, the Rivolde were able to find a consistent trading partner for their Monster's Souls and black water.

Pareia and the Rivolde started to get wealthier and wealthier as time went by.

End of chapter 7.

Book 3-8.1

Just five more years

After hearing Runa's story, his heart was thumping.

There could be no other response.

1st month of year 266 in the continental calendar.

The large marketplace in Pareia opened.

Since Edwin's Merchant Guild was in charge of it, the size was three times larger than they had expected.

"Welcome."

Runa happily welcomed Edwin, but Edwin responded with a complicated expression.

"I am scared seeing you welcome me like that."

Ever since his discussion partner changed from Yulian, who was a beginner in trading, to Runa, Edwin had not been able to have as much fun.

Runa questioned everything, and used the fact that they gave Edwin a monopoly as a way to ask for compensation. Edwin could not say anything against that.

"I was waiting for you to arrive. Since you are the one to bring a large amount of materials to Pareia, as the person responsible for Pareia's finances, Edwin-nim is like rain in the middle of summer."

Edwin was someone who had thrown away the easy life of a noble and decided to join the rough world of commerce.

'Right, it needs to be at least this level to be entertaining.'

Edwin put on his work smile and started to speak.

"For one of Pareia's warriors to rate a lowly merchant like me so highly, I am very thankful."

“Now I am scared seeing you smile like that. Let’s head on in.”

As Runa offered Edwin the prepared seat, Edwin nodded his head and follow after him.

And then, the two men got straight to the point as soon as they sat down.

They had already felt each other out multiple times the last time they met, so they both felt like there was no need to share useless words.

“What is it you want this time?”

Once Edwin started to talk, Runa revealed the things he had thought about.

“The first is to increase the amount of iron by twice the normal amount.”

“Iron is not easy to get. Furthermore, with the serious tension in the Eastern continent right now, the other guilds are not willing to hand over any iron either. No matter what, the Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom will most likely go to war within the next three years. With the two strong nations going to war, it means that the multiple smaller nations under their control will be forced to take part as well. Knowing that is coming up, who would want to give up their iron right now? I’m sure that all of them are working hard to gather as much iron as possible right now.”

“Would I be asking you like this if it was easy to do? Furthermore, isn’t Edwin-nim’s guild based out of the Western continent where the situation is better?”

Edwin took a peek at Runa as he cautiously asked.

“Pareia should have gathered a lot of iron and weapons from the war against the Wikaly. Are you still that low on iron? Your number of warriors should not have increased by that much.”

Runa did not even blink before he answered.

“Since we will continue to go to war in the future, having more iron is always better. In addition, we need a lot of iron because we are trying to build a castle.”

“A castle? In the desert?”

As Edwin asked in disbelief, Runa just asked the question again instead of answering.

“So can you get it or not?”

“I’m sure you’ll threaten me again if I say I can’t?”

“I just explained the truth to you, I did not threaten you.”

Edwin glared at Runa who was calmly answering before finally opening his mouth.

“Fine, whatever. I will gather every little scrap of iron I can gather.”

Seeing the answer come out so easily after Edwin was contemplating for a long time, Runa started to smile internally.

Originally, he should have been afraid of the cards in Edwin’s hands, but the situation was different this time.

He was ready to take any attack. It was because he had a very strong card in his hand this time.

‘If I don’t ask now, when would I ask?’

Runa started to talk about the next item.

“Second, I hope you can find us some help.”

“I’m guessing you mean people?”

“Yes. In regards to this aspect, I can only trust in Edwin-nim’s reliability. We would also need experts in castle-building as well.”

“Hmm, there are many demands for castle renovations right now that I do not know if any such experts would be left.”

At Edwin’s fake tantrum, Runa slowly revealed the card in his

hand.

“Aren’t you curious about the card in my hand? I plan on asking Edwin-nim for a lot of things today.”

“Hmm.”

Edwin, who had lost his smile at Runa’s stoic expression, could feel his heart beating loudly. This might be a jackpot.”

“I understand. I will find you the experts. Depending on the card that Runa-nim is about to reveal, I will even find a master-level castle-building expert.”

“I’m glad that your network is as wide as I expected. If it is a master-level expert, it wouldn’t be that easy for them to leave the country.”

“Well, that is my small talent so do not worry about it. How many people, and how long would you need them for?”

“The more people the better. In terms of the time, let’s just say until the castle is finished. Ten years is probably about right, don’t you think?”

Edwin rolled his head at Runa’s retort before answering.

“That should be long enough. And the next item?”

Edwin started to rush Runa to see his card.

Runa was stingy, but the trade with the desert was his monopoly.

Even Runa could not go against that. But since Runa was the person in charge, Edwin was just preventing Runa from cleverly hindering them, as well as raising his own prestige for the future. That was why Edwin was willing to take some losses right now.

“I want to acquire some wheat. Of course I am aware that it will be difficult.”

Seeing Runa take the lead like that, Edwin wondered just what kind of card Runa had in his hand to come out so confidently.

“That is also possible. Now that I am calculating it in my head, I think I understand what Runa-nim is trying to do. Are you going to ask for large amounts of stone and wood next?”

As Runa nodded his head, Edwin raised the number in his head much higher.

‘In order to build a castle, you need wood, stone, and iron. Is he already preparing for the war against the continent? Even though the desert is not even unified yet?’

That was what Edwin was thinking as he answered.

‘I will gather everything you have asked for. What is Runa-nim able to give me in return?’

“What can I give to Edwin-nim who already has the monopoly of the trade in the desert?”

“What?”

As Edwin’s voice was starting to go up a little bit, Runa continued to speak.

“However, the slight change is that we will be able to guarantee the safety of a larger caravan with 100 percent certainty. Since our Pareia is slowly settling down, we will be able to provide warriors to protect the caravan. Other than the Silence Empire, we can even protect you into the country if it is a country by our border.”

It was something that completely caught Edwin’s attention.

“Then, from the beginning?”

“If it is a caravan with Edwin-nim in the front, you will be safe even if there were thousands of carts behind you. If you wish, we can even meet you close to the border.”

“Will you be able to handle it?”

Since it was an unexpected card, Edwin had to verify it even though he knew there was no need to do so.

“Have you ever seen a warrior of Pareia lie? Since I said it is possible, it is possible. The Glow has given his permission.”

“When I had asked before.....”

“We didn’t have the northern territory at that time. However, the situation is different now. The Wikaly’s northern territory is now part of Pareia’s territory. Furthermore, if it is a group of bandits from the continent, our warriors are strong enough to handle thousands of them.”

Even Edwin knew that a veteran desert warrior was better than the average knight from any nation.

For them to guarantee 100 percent safety for an unlimited size of caravan was definitely a strong enough card for Runa to make all of those unreasonable requests.

“In addition, please invest in Pareia. As a merchant of course.”

Seeing Runa continue, Edwin asked a question.

“Invest? How so?”

“We need gold.”

Edwin looked at Runa with a confused expression.

“Why do you suddenly need gold?”

“Jewels are fine as well. We need to expand the views of Pareia.”

“Ah!”

Edwin, who figured out why Runa needed gold or different jewels, raised his hand and started to rub his cheek.

‘This might shake the foundation of the guild itself. I need something that I can immediately turn into money.’

Runa, who could feel that Edwin was troubled, felt the need to give him some more carrot.

The amount of things he had requested was difficult for a single merchant guild to complete in a short amount of time.

“The stronger our Pareia gets, the more Edwin-nim’s merchant guild will continue to thrive. Pareia’s warriors keep the warriors who put their lives on the line with us in our hearts forever.”

“Huuuuuu~”

Edwin let out a sigh as he answered.

“There is a bit of a burden to gather it right now. I am already reinvesting everything I make into Pareia thinking about the future. As time goes on and the size of the guild grows, this type of investment will not be a problem. However, I need something that I can turn into money right now.”

Runa contemplated after hearing Edwin’s words.

‘What is there to take from the desert? There is a limit on how many Monster’s Souls warriors can gather, and that is the same for black water and things like the skin of wild animals. Hold on... there’s no reason that we have to be the one to gather the resources, is there?’

“How about this? Please gather extra people, other than the ones to build the castle, to collect black water. The amount of black water that those people gather will be given to your guild for free. However, please do not put the pay for those workers onto Pareia’s debt.”

“Ah! There is such a method. I can’t believe I didn’t think of such a simple solution. Although only warriors can go to the Monster’s Field, anybody can gather black water as long as there are warriors to protect them.”

“Then is it settled?”

“Of course. Since the cost for black water is currently on the rise, it should be enough to help us. However, please work to ensure this does not make it to the Eastern continent through the other tribes.”

Runa nodded his head at Edwin’s request. It was not a difficult

request.

“There are no tribes left in the Eastern Desert who can defeat Pareia. Since we were able to win the last war, the balance of power has pretty much been broken. That is why we are able to offer Edwin-nim protection for an unlimited amount of carts. If there are materials coming from the Western Desert, they will not be able to get past the quicksand river. We will make sure to pay attention to that.”

“Then there should not be any more issues. Is there anything else you need to say?”

Runa shook his head. He then reached his hand out toward Edwin as he started to speak.

“I know that I made many burdensome requests today. However, I meant what I said earlier.”

‘I’m sure he is talking about keeping me in his heart.’

Edwin grabbed Runa’s hand as he responded.

“Do not worry. I plan on reaping multiple times the benefit in the future. You will need to turn a blind eye at that time.”

“Hahaha, feel free to do as you please.”

The two of them shook hands vigorously as they started to laugh.

Book 3-8.2

As the sun reached high in the sky, Yulian and Runa were walking around the oasis.

The oasis itself seemed to be full of life as people were still running around full of energy even with this hot weather.

Yulian started to walk toward where children were playing around in a puddle as he started to speak.

“I heard it went well?”

Runa started to smile as he answered Yulian’s question.

“Yes, Glow. It was a deal that everyone can be satisfied with.”

“Do not put him too much into a corner.”

“He is an experienced merchant. He will only accept a deal where he will not face a loss.”

“That is true.”

Yulian stopped walking as he agreed with Runa’s statement and continued to speak.

“I know we do not have much time, but we do not need to be rushed. There are a lot of things to do, but I am young and you are also young. The Red Storm is young as well.”

“I am only pushing it a little further than we can handle. There should not be any problems.”

Yulian nodded his head as he started to walk again.

“Are you having fun?”

The kids who were having fun in the water were shocked to see Yulian approach them and ask them a question.

But that was only for an instant. The three children quickly got out of the puddle and stood in a line in front of Yulian before bowing their heads.

“We greet Yulian-nim, the Desert’s Great Conqueror, the Eastern War God, the future undisputed War God of the Desert, and Pareia’s Glow.”

Yulian thought that these children, who seemed to not even be ten years old, greeting him so respectfully like this was very cute. Yulian and Runa were smiling without even realizing that they had started to smile.

‘These are the children and the lives that I need to protect.’

Yulian recognized his responsibility once more as he kneeled down to make eye contact with the children.

“It must have been difficult to memorize that long name.”

“Hehe, my father and mother told me that even if I do not memorize anything else, I needed to memorize that. They said it was the pride of Pareia.”

Seeing one of the children boldly answer, Yulian caressed the child’s head as he answered.

“Hmm, that is only a little correct.”

“What?”

The child’s eyes became extremely round.

“Pareia’s pride is your parents, and the warriors who are sweating over there while training themselves. This Glow is just one person who is with them.”

Seeing the children’s eyes become extremely round, Yulian lifted all three children with his arm as he continued to speak to them.

“And all of you, who will be warriors in the future, are Pareia’s pride as well.”

After hearing what Yulian had to say, the children all started to smile like their lips were going to rip. It was the destiny of all male children to learn from an early age that they will grow up to be warriors; and they learned the way of a warrior from a very young

age.

But today, they met the warrior among warriors and even received some encouragement.

Seeing the children smiling so widely, Yulian ended up putting a little too much strength into his arm while thinking they were so cute.

“Owwwww~!”

As one of the children suddenly shouted in pain, Yulian released the strength in his arm i shock and let them down.

“Then grow up strong to become Pareia’s great warriors. That will be your pride.”

The children bowed once more to Yulian before running off to show off to their friends and parents. Yulian smiled once more after seeing them run off.

Yulian was now 26 years old. Other men of similar age already had three or four children, but Yulian still did not have a child.

Pere had a two year old son, and even Orca had recently had a cute daughter who was taking the attention of everyone in the family, but Grace showed no signs of being pregnant.

Yulian really wanted a child, but he had started to be cautious after hearing Grace sigh while he was having too much fun with his niece and nephew.

Yulian started to talk to Runa as if to calm his sad heart.

“Runa, shouldn’t you get married as well? Since you are the Glow’s assistant warrior at such a young age, the single ladies might want to make you their man.”

“Make me their man? Do not say something so scary, Glow.”

“Should we make a bet to see how long you can last?”

Runa tilted his head at Yulian’s question and responded.

“What do you mean by how long I can last?”

“Until you are married.”

“I have no thoughts right now.”

Yulian started to smile at Runa’s uncompromising response.

“Didn’t you say we need to force warriors to have multiple wives?”

“Please consider me to be the exception. I would prefer if you would consider that one hour of my time is like one day’s worth for Pareia.”

Yulian smiled once more at Runa’s uncompromising response.

“That is why I said let’s make a bet.”

“I do not bet on things I am not certain about. Furthermore, I am not lacking anything to fill by winning a bet.”

“But who cares? You’ll end up doing it anyways.”

“Please be more clear, Glow.”

“Oh, nothing much. There should be five to six single ladies waiting for you when we get home.”

Runa was completely shocked.

“What did you just say?”

“Do not blame me. I may be Pareia’s Glow, but Grace is the Glow of the Provoke family.”

“Ah!”

“What is wrong?”

“I suddenly have a stomachache. It’s been hurting for a while, but I think I need to visit a priest today for treatment.”

Yulian smiled at Runa’s very visible lie and answered.

“Do not think about running away to a priest’s house. One of the single ladies who are waiting for you is Tuma Takaka-nim’s

granddaughter.”

Runa turned stiff where he was standing and started to contemplate. Unfortunately, there was nowhere for him to go.

Yulian happily watched as Runa was being overwhelmed by Grace and the ladies inside the paoe.

Seeing Runa, who was able to speak his mind in front of over 10,000 warriors, and even in front of the murderous aura of the Red Storm, suffering in front of the women was pretty sweet to see.

“Hyung-nim.”

While he was laughing, Yulian heard Pere calling for him and stepped outside.

“What is going on?”

“Please come with me for a bit.”

Yulian thought of something based on Pere’s words and quietly followed after him.

Once they got far away from the paoe, Pere turned around and started to speak.

“They have failed.”

“.....”

“Hmm...!”

Yulian let out a groan. However, he had expected as much.

It was something he attempted even while knowing that the chances of failure was very high. To take the head of a diplomat of a strong nation like the Silence Empire was not something your average assassin could accomplish.

“What should we do?”

“Honestly, I did not like this method. We sent the assassin because of our grief and sense of urgency, but it is best to take

revenge with our own hands. Let's just wait 10 years. We just need to take the heads of those fancy nobles within that time. We will have 100,000 warriors in three years."

"Hyung-nim, you are right. A cheap revenge like that is not our style."

The two brothers had hired an assassin to try and kill Janet, the diplomat of the Silence Empire.

He was the reason their father and mother had died. He was the reason their tribe was almost broken into pieces.

Yulian had wanted to get his revenge since he became Pareia's Glow, but in some aspects, getting revenge on Janet was even harder than getting revenge on Venersis. That was why they had hired an assassin.

Pere had brought the results of it today.

Yulian had not expected much, and hearing that the assassin had failed, Yulian thought that it really was important to take revenge with his own hands.

Maybe his father had made the assassin fail because he wanted Yulian to do it with his own hands.

"Great. I was feeling iffy about it but I feel much better now."

Book 3-8.3

Pere, who heard what Yulian had to say, nodded his head once before speaking.

“Also, the Greatest Warriors and veteran lead warriors suggest that you visit the warriors’ training frequently.”

“Mm. I’ve been so focused on the internal affairs lately. I have felt that the warriors have been a bit disappointed with it.”

“It is because hyung-nim is the symbol of Pareia’s warriors.”

Yulian started to laugh as he responded.

“I understand. I have been feeling that we need to conduct a large scale training in the oasis, and tighten their minds that have gotten loose through this radical reform.”

After hearing what Yulian had to say, Pere decided he did not have to share his concern anymore.

His brother already knew about everything.

Pere swung both of his arms widely in the air as he changed the topic.

“It’s a great night tonight.”

“Yes it is. By the way, is it going well?”

“What do you mean?”

“Learning under Greatest Warrior Egane.”

Pere lightly scratched the back of his head as he responded.

“It is very difficult. Normally, it is something you are slowly supposed to experience, but to learn it like this.....”

“If we can add a Greatest Warrior’s leadership skills and discernment to the herculean strength you already possess, it would be like having another War God in Pareia. Do not be lazy with your studies.”

“Hyung-nim, I am not a little kid. You are worrying about useless things.”

As Pere answered with a bitter smile, Yulian put his hand on Pere’s shoulder as he started to speak.

“You seem to be young as well because of little Sense, hahaha.”

“Sense Provoke was Pere’s two year old son.”

“Hyung-nim.....”

Pere had heard from his wife that Grace felt a huge burden from the fact that she still has not beared a child. He also knew that Yulian really liked children to the point that it was hard to take his son or Orca’s daughter out of Yulian’s arms.

But maybe one of them has an issue, since his hyung-nim has been married for over five years and still has not has a kid. As a result, Pere had to be very cautious with the things he said.

‘Knowing hyung-nim’s personality, he will never take a new wife until hyungsoo-nim has a child. And hyungsoo-nim will drag a single girl into hyung-nim’s life even if she needs to force it.’

Yulian was very stubborn and it was very difficult to change his mind about anything, and his hyungsoo-nim was also someone who accomplished anything she put her mind to achieve.

Pere was worried that the two of them would end up getting into an argument because of it.

Honestly, Yulian was being stubborn because he loved Grace and did not want to see her feeling hurt.

Seeing Pere’s expression turn grim, Yulian patted his shoulder as he started to speak.

“Do not worry about it too much.”

“I am not worried at all.”

“I know.”

“I will head back now.”

Pere bowed to Yulian before turning around and walking away, as Yulian just continued to watch Pere with a bitter heart until he could not see Pere anymore.

“Castle?”

Yulian looked at Runa with a shocked expression at the unexpected suggestion.

“Yes, a castle.”

“Are you talking about that thing in the continent?”

Runa answered Yulian’s question.”

“Yes. A CASTLE.”

“Not a fortress but a castle? Why?”

“Aren’t you planning on fighting against the Silence Empire?”

“.....”

Yulian continued to gaze at Runa. It felt like Runa had looked right through his thoughts.

“We need to at least have the entire Eastern Desert under our control. Only then will we have enough strength to take on the Silence Empire.”

‘Just how far has he thought about ?’

It should have been easy for Runa to figure out why Yulian had a grudge against the Silence Empire.

But for him to have already been preparing to go against them; that was beyond Yulian’s expectation.

“We definitely need a castle. In order to take on the Silence Empire after unifying the Eastern Desert, there are too many disadvantages with the current oasis structure.”

“But we have so many places to use the materials right now. We

do not have the luxury to create such a thing.”

“The construction will take a long time. We need to start the construction now so that the castle’s foundation will be completed by the time we unify the Eastern Desert. Of course we will need to continue strengthening it after that, but we need to start now because the foundation is the most important part.”

Yulian thought about Runa’s statement for a bit before asking a question.

“Are you thinking about building a castle and then using that as the location to create what they call a capital in the continent?”

“Yes, Glow.”

“But then wouldn’t it be difficult to quickly react to a Shuarei invasion?”

Runa put his hand on his chest before speaking.

“We will not move right away. Furthermore, the moment we unify the Eastern Desert, the balance of power in the desert will completely break. I am currently planning for ten years into the future.”

“Ho! Amazing. I’ve only had the vague thoughts about unifying the desert and fighting against the continent.”

“I know that the Glow has made some preparations as well. I’ve just divided into different segments.”

“I am curious about this plan of yours.”

Runa started to describe his ten year plan.

“First, the biggest hindrance to our unification of the Eastern Desert is, as the Glow expects, the Shuarei. However, the Shuarei should not be able to have more than 60,000 warriors by the time we have 100,000 warriors. Our population is already at least 1.5 times the Shuarei’s population.”

Yulian had been thinking about that as well. Pareia’s population

had already passed 1,200,000 while the Shuarei's population was now around 700,000.

Runa continued to speak.

“Time is on our side. Three years from now, we will not need to worry about their provocation as long as the Glow and I are around.”

“Runa, do not look down on the Shuarei's Venersis too much. He is the only person in the desert that I am unable to defeat.”

“I heard about Pareia's war against the Shuarei. It was because I had heard about that war that I was, at one point, able to effectively defend against the Glow. All you have to do is not face a monstrous warrior like that. Furthermore, now I have a Glow who can take him on, so even if we went against him, it would be our complete victory.”

Yulian, who started to smile at Runa's confidence, was laughing as he shook his head.

But internally, he felt that this confident warrior was very trustworthy.

He really felt like he could not lose a war as long as he was together with Runa.

Runa opened one of his hands as he continued to speak.

“The quicksand river and 50,000 warriors. If you give me the leadership over these 50,000 warriors, this Runa is confident that I will be able to successfully defend against even 100,000 warriors invading from the Western Desert. We have many talented Greatest Warriors, and it seems even Pere-nim is studying to be a Greatest Warrior as well.”

“Pere was born with a divine power, so soon enough, I expect that other than some of the Red Storm members and myself, none of the other warriors in Pareia will be able to fight him one on one.”

As Yulian started to happily talk about his younger brother, Runa nodded his head and agreed.

“It is true that he is an amazing person. While Pere-nim and I are defending Pareia, Yulian-nim can take the remaining warriors and move to unify the Eastern Desert.”

“That was what I was thinking about as well. It is just a problem of time.”

“There are only three tribes left in the Eastern Desert, with similar numbers of oases. Maybe if the three of them joined forces they would pose a threat to us, but the tribes of the Eastern Desert have not had good relationships with each other for such a long time that it would be difficult for them to work together. As a result, I believe we will be able to defeat them in a short amount of time.”

Runa smiled again as he opened his hand once more.

“I believe we will need five years to accomplish all of that. I also predict that the war between the Rojini Kingdom and the Silence Empire will begin within these five years as well.”

Yulian asked with a shocked expression.

“You’ve already considered that far?”

“Even if we unify the Eastern Desert, the truth is that we will not have the strength to fight against the Silence Empire. The Silence Empire is a strong empire with a population over 20,000,000 people. In addition, their number of troops is over 300,000. Wouldn’t we need to accurately know about the situation of the continent in order to take them on?”

Yulian started to shudder.

And seeing that the person who made him feel that way was saying all of this as if it was nothing made him shudder once more.

“The only feeling I can have of you is awe.”

“Since I am the Glow’s assistant warrior, I I just worked to make sure my thoughts were in line with yours. And that is why I have a suggestion for you.”

Yulian moved forward as he asked.

“What is it?”

“Please create a relationship with the Rojini kingdom. The sooner the better.”

“How so?”

“You can dispatch a diplomat or even send a messenger. All we had to do is show them that the desert tribe known as Pareia is able to annoy the Silence Empire. I presume the effects will be multiplied if you also tell them that we are able to provide them with black water they will need for war.”

“Isn’t all of our black water traded to Edwin?”

“We will increase our output. In addition, I’m sure Edwin will be the happiest about this deal.”

“Why is that?”

“It is not like we can transport the black water. We will need to send it through Edwin.”

Yulian tilted his head as he asked.

“Why would Edwin like that?”

“It is the perfect opportunity for a merchant guild to make connections with the royal family of a strong Kingdom. War has always been a once in a lifetime opportunity for merchants to benefit significantly. He will also have connections to both us and the Rojini kingdom, so the amount of classified information he will have access to will be very high. There is no way that merchant will not take advantage of this opportunity.”

Yulian looked toward Runa with a worried expression.

“Will he be able to handle it?”

“That is that person’s issue and something for him to figure out. If he makes the wrong move and goes bankrupt, we can break the monopoly contract and make many merchant guilds compete against one another to give us the most profit.”

Yulian started to frown a bit.

“He is someone who has helped us quite a bit. I do not want to just use him.”

“Glow. War in itself is something people should not do. You must harden your resolve. Furthermore, the decision is in Edwin’s hands so you have no reason to feel guilty.”

At Runa’s stern words, Yulian started to smile bitterly.

“For now, that is my plan for the next five years. I still need to think through the different scenarios for the five years after that, so I will report that once I have everything prepared.”

“I understand.”

“Oh, and Glow.”

“What is it?”

Runa suddenly started to stumble upon his words and could not make eye contact with Yulian as he started to answer.

“That... you see... well.”

“You were talking so well, what is going on?”

“Mm...that... could you please tell Grace-nim that...I liked the girl...whose hair comes down to her shoulder.....”

“.....”

The two of them stared at each other for a long time.

“Hahahahat, I understand.”

“Glow.....”

“Hahaha, I’m sorry for laughing. But I just can’t help ... hahaha.”

Runa’s face started to turn bright red.

The sixth month in the year 256 of the continental calendar. Many people of the continent were currently moving around in Pareia.

There were a lot of people who were gathering black water, and the construction of the Castle of Storm had started in the Eastern Oasis.

I hope that all of my novels are connected to each other.

In the next chapter, we will be introduced to two figures who are my next project’s main character and heroine. We will also head to the Magic Tower, which will be the largest arc for this novel.

I am just telling you in advance in case you start to wonder if this novel is completely changing to focus on martial arts from here on.
^^;;

From here on, you can pretend that any extra characters with importance (Chun Myung Hoon and Edwin are kind of the representatives of that group ^^;;) are figures from other projects.

I plan to share with you the stories that I had thought about from the moment I started to write my first novel 3 years ago, one by one.

The feel of the story might not seem to align with each other (based on the character), but I am cautiously thinking about whether you will develop interest and enjoy the figures that the Red Storm characters come across for the rest of the series. But I am letting you know now that there will be no overlapping in the stories themselves.

I will briefly bring this up again with the introduction of the Magic Tower.

End of Chapter 8.

Book 3-9.1

A New World

The place he returned to.

A new world and meeting new people.

A large scale warrior training occurred in Pareia for the first time in a long time. It was a training focused on attacking, defending, and requesting reinforcements from the individual oases, as well as quickly gathering at the largest oasis where Yulian was located.

Since Pareia was in the middle of a significant development, it had been a long time since they had a large scale training like this. Even the warriors were slightly nervous about this upcoming training.

It made sense they were nervous; because they were all assigned to different tasks to help develop the tribe's economic base, there had only been smaller scale trainings for a long time. This was actually one of the concerns that many of the Greatest Warriors were worried about the most.

Yulian and the Greatest Warriors knew that the warriors needed these types of large scale training and decided to periodically have these trainings as they scheduled the future training sessions.

“Glow.”

Once Haisha came to visit him, Yulian looked up from the pile of paperwork in front of him.

“What is going on?”

“Are you busy?”

“Speak. It seems like you have something important to say.”

“We are hoping that you can give us some time to train as a group. Individual training is not very helpful to us right now.”

Yulian lamented the fact that he had been so busy lately and had neglected the Red Storm as he responded to Haisha.

“I haven’t been able to spend any time with all of you. Once we settle this training schedule and a couple other larger matters, I will participate as well. I’ve been concerned that I haven’t had time to train properly lately as well.”

“Well... with the Glow’s permission, we are thinking about heading back to the Monster’s Desert. We need hands-on experience to test out the areas we believe we have gotten stronger in.”

“The Monster’s Desert?”

“Yes. Last time we went under the Glow’s protection, but we believe that we are now strong enough to handle it on our own.”

Haisha’s comments made Yulian think about the things that happened underneath the desert sand.

He was curious about what happened to Mai, and since his master was not here, he was also curious about Luff, the person who could accurately tell him his strength level, and what he may have been up to.

“I will go with you as well.”

“Aren’t you busy?”

“Shouldn’t I get a bit stronger since I am called the symbol of the warriors? Furthermore, there is nothing special I need to do other than training with the warriors. I just need to read over Runa’s plan and approve it.”

Once Yulian started to talk about Runa, Haisha’s expression turned a bit darker. It was still difficult for him to get along with Runa.

“You can relax around him. The Red Storm are the best of the best warriors.”

“That is indeed the case.”

“He is a warrior as well. Not one who speaks through his strength and courage, but one who speaks with his wisdom. To hate on a fellow warrior who has pledge his loyalty to me makes my heart ache, Haisha.”

“My heart does not allow me to do so yet, Glow.”

Yulian stood up from his seat and started to pat Haisha’s back as he answered.

“Let’s go. This training, let’s have some fun with it.”

“They are talking about catching a Sand Dragon. You will have to allow us to do so this time.”

Seeing Haisha talk as if his mind has cleared, Yulian nodded his head.

“Of course. Anyways, if you manage to catch a Sand Dragon, am I the final goal?”

“Hahaha, how did you know? Right now, Thrint or I are serving as their opponent, but our goal is definitely the Glow.”

Yulian shrugged his shoulders as he answered.

“Feel free to come at me whenever you want. I enjoy a good spar as well.”

“Not just yet, hahaha.”

The two of them looked at each other as they walked out of the paoe.

When Yulian announced that he was planning on heading off for a month to train with the Red Storm, it was actually Runa who had a look of disapproval.

There was a problem with the Glow, who was the final decision maker, leaving his position for a whole month.

“There should be no problems since Grace, Pere, and many of the

Greatest Warriors will still be here. And since Yarumaha-nim is here as well, if there are any unique problems, you can discuss it with him.”

Yulian calmed Runa down that way as he started to head to the Monster’s Desert with Red Storm.

This time, the Red Storm went further in than where they had set their base camp last time.

They were confident, and since they were split into three squads with Triquel’s death, each of their squads had more people as well. As a result, they felt like they should be fine traveling a bit further in.

“It will not be any fun to just train. But it is not like it would seem like a punishment if I did the same thing as last time and said I will put you through harsh training.”

The Red Storm warriors started to laugh at Yulian’s words.

“To the squad that gets first place this time, I will give each of you 10 pinas and 5 pirmas as a reward.”

“Oowoooooooooooooooo~!”

“Since we are now recognizing private property, you will each get to keep half of the Monster’s Souls that you collect during this hunt.”

“Oowoooooooooooooooo~!”

Seeing the warriors responding positively, Yulian lifted up his hand as he continued to speak.

“As you are all accomplished warriors, I will not say much. I’m sure you all know what I want to say. All I will say is this. Do not do anything that will make my heart fall.”

“Oowoooooooooooooooo~!”

“For one month starting from now, let out your skills to the best of your abilities. It will be good if you can find a way to continue to

improve yourself from this training. When I am not here, Haisha will be the leader. Alright then, let us start.”

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

Almost immediately after Yulian finished speaking, each squad quickly left a few members to protect the base camp and started to quickly leave to hunt.

Yulian called Haisha and the other squad leaders to re-emphasize the safety of the warriors.

“Are you thinking about going somewhere?”

Yulian pointed to the ground with his hand at Shubeon’s question.

“I plan to go down there again. There is someone to meet down there.”

“We don’t need to worry about the Glow’s safety, right?”

As Shubeon said something that combined both concern and sarcasm, Yulian started to laugh as he answered.

“I don’t know. It might make a good story for Pareia’s Glow to be captured by the Demon King underground and the Red Storm rescues their Glow.”

“That is terrible even if it is just a joke. Please be safe.”

Yulian laughed once more at Haisha’s comment and reached out his hand toward Haisha.

“Please let me borrow it.”

“What are you talking about?”

“The Golden Turtle.”

“Ah!”

Haisha scratched the back of his head as he took out a Golden Turtle the size of his palm from his chest.

“I received less injuries in the last war thanks to this punk. I guess he really is a turtle since he blocked all the arrows and shamshirs that almost nicked me.”

“He is useful like that as well?”

“At first, he only tried to run away from me, but as time went by, he has no intentions of leaving me now.”

“What an amazing animal.”

Haisha shook his head as he answered.

“Would he be as good as Shopping? Now that I think about it, we should have brought Shopping with us. He would have liked being here. Plus, isn’t piercing through the quicksand river Shopping’s specialty?”

“That punk never wants to leave Grace’s side. Every so often, I feel like the way he looks at Grace is the way you would look at a girlfriend. I have debated quite a bit about whether I need to beat him up at least once.”

“Hahaha. If it is Grace-nim, it is not surprising that anybody would fall for her. But for even Shopping to be that way, hahahahaha.”

Haisha started to laugh at what Yulian had just said and the other warriors started to laugh as well.

Yulian started to speak.

“Then I will take good care of him and return him to you.”

“I understand, Glow. Then we shall head out now.”

“Do not forget what I said.”

Haisha nodded his head to say ‘do not worry,’ as he responded.

“Glow, you be safe as well. Don’t let the story change from saving a beautiful maiden from the Demon King to the Red Storm warriors saving the Glow from the Demon King.”

“Hahaha.”

Everybody laughed out loud once more. Once the Red Storm left, Yulian started to guide his pirma to meet up with Mai and Luff.

Book 3-9.2

After arriving at a location he thought was the right place, Yulian started to look for the quicksand that was the entrance to the underground tunnel.

The desert was a place where sand dunes appear and disappear after a sandstorm.

After spending a whole day looking, Yulian finally managed to find that specific quicksand and jumped in without any hesitation.

Since he had already experienced it once before, Yulian covered his nose and ears with ki, before protecting his eyes with ki as well. Then, the moment he felt like there was nothing under his feet, he navigated his ki to slowly lower himself down.

“Seeing this place again makes me really nostalgic. The last time I was here, I never expected all these things would have happened.....”

A lot of things had changed. His father had passed away, he had become the Glow, he fought against Venersis, and he conquered the Wikaly.

Yulian was full of nostalgia for a bit as he mumbled to himself before putting the Golden Turtle on his shoulder and starting to walk.

‘Now that I think about it, I have never been to the other side.....’

The thought that suddenly crossed his head. One side was where Mai and Luff were, while the other side was somewhere he had never been.

This emotion called curiosity surrounded Yulian.

“Whatever. I’m just taking a look. There shouldn’t be any problems.”

Yulian decided to head down the opposite path and started to quickly move in that direction.

How long must he have walked? Everything was still pitch black in front of him, but he started to see red lights shooting up from underneath the ground every so often.

‘What is that?’

Yulian had a surprised expression as he started to run forward. The area in front of him was still pitch black, but the monstrous symbols underneath his feet all started to radiate in a red light.

‘What could it be? The sealed area is in the opposite direction... is there perhaps some type of crystal that glows red underneath the ground?’

Yulian hesitated for a while before bending over and putting his hand lightly onto a symbol.

‘Oh?’

He then instantly felt like his body was being sucked in.

Yulian had briefly lost his consciousness from that odd feeling. When he regained his consciousness, he was floating in the air. He was floating in a sky full of auroras in every direction.

“Just what is this?”

The moment Yulian anxiously shouted, he felt his body being sucked in one more time.

Chirp chirp chirp.

A wind as soft as cream soup was blowing, and the sound of birds chirping could be heard in this plain that was full of the refreshing fragrance of the flower and grass. Unlike the sticky and burning heat that he was used to, Yulian woke up to a refreshing and chilly wind hitting his face.

Bushes.

The thing that Yulian saw as soon as he opened his eyes was the green light of the sun that was breaking apart through some tree branches. Seeing this environment that he had never experienced before, even though he had opened his eyes, Yulian just continued to lay down and move his eye around.

A small animal had been staring at Yulian from the bush, but once their eyes met, it quickly ran away into the bush without looking back.

‘Am I dreaming?’

There was no way a place like this would be in the desert. There were trees, flowers, and even that green sunlight in the desert, but it did not feel like this. Wasn’t this place like the place in the desert, that forest place that is said to be full of bushes?

After laying around like that for a long time, Yulian abruptly stood up. This sensation was too realistic to be a dream.

“Impossible!”

This was the real world, and this was absolutely not the desert. There was nowhere in the desert that looked like this.

Yulian quickly looked around him. He was looking for some type of marking.

Those monstrous symbols that he had seen on his way here. He realized that those must have been the instant teleportation magic circle that Mai had shown him last time. But no matter how much he looked around, the only thing around him were trees that showed off the width the size of two warriors’ heights.

“Ah! I shouldn’t have gone that way without asking. I should have met with Mai-nim first and asked. That would have resolved my curiosity, wouldn’t it?:

Yulian was regretting his actions, but it was already too late.

“No matter what, there should be people living here, and since he

said you cannot move very far with a magic circle, I should start looking around.”

Thankfully, the two greatswords on his side were still right there, so he wasn't too worried.

Yulian slashed the small bushes, weeds, and branches in his way as he moved forward.

How long must he have traveled like that? His sensitive ears could hear the sound of weapons clashing not too far away.

‘There are people nearby.’

He was so happy about the fact that there were people that he didn't care that someone was fighting, and Yulian quickly started to run toward the sound of the weapons.

The sound started to get closer as he continued to run, and Yulian saw a surprising scene where a man with white hair being attacked by people wearing black armors.

Next to the young man who was surrounded, was a girl wearing a white outfit who had fainted. She too, unsurprisingly, had beautiful white hair.

Yulian could feel his heart starting to beat quickly seeing that woman.

And he was shocked. He never expected there to be another girl as beautiful as Grace in this world, but that woman who had fainted was as beautiful as Grace. The only difference was that while Grace looked strong, the fainted woman looked a bit weaker. That was the only difference.

Yulian turned his gaze back to the white-haired man. The man was showing so much skill that Yulian's hand subconscious went to the greatsword at his waist.

There were already tens of armored soldiers fallen around him, but there were too many armored warriors surrounding him.

In addition, the pressure coming from the man with the black cape who was surrounded by the armored warriors was overbearing as well.

As time went by, the white haired man was starting to be pushed back, and the armored warriors reached toward the fainted woman from time to time, but the white haired man did everything he could to prevent them.

He didn't know what the consequences may be, but Yulian made up his mind to first help the white haired man and started to move.

As Yulian instantly swung his two greatswords and clashed against the armored warriors, both sides sent gazes of shock toward him. Yulian pierced through the armored warriors' encirclement and arrived next to the white haired man and started to speak.

"I thought it would be the right thing to help you. You're not a bad person, are you?"

"....."

The white haired man had a confused expression.

Yulian realized he spoke in the desert language and switched the the language of the continent before saying the same thing again.

"I thought it would be the right thing to help you. You're not a bad person, are you?"

Thankfully, he must be in the Eastern continent as the man nodded his head as if he understood what Yulian was saying.

It really was a stupid question, but in the perspective of the white haired man, he couldn't be more helpful.

"Thank you."

The white haired man wanted to say more to Yulian, but the man in the center of the armored warriors started to shout.

“He must be reinforcement from the Magic Tower. Quickly take care of him and then we will return with Hwai-nim.”

At the man’s command, the armored warriors who were standing by started to move toward Yulian and the white haired man.

“Oowoo!”

Yulian shouted out loud as he started to swing his greatsword and prevented the armored warriors from approaching.

“Can you last any longer?”

As Yulian asked the white haired man, the man nodded his head. He had been able to catch his breath thanks to Yulian.

“Then.”

Yulian answered briefly before running into the group of armored warriors. Yulian’s sword was one that shined even brighter when he was going up against a large amount of enemies.

“Oowooo~!”

Yulian let out a unique shout as he started to swing his sword. The green sunlight flowed following Yulian’s greatsword and started to send light in multiple directions.

“He has amazing skills. The Black Brigade will not relax and make sure to suppress him properly.”

Once the cape-wearing man, who seemed to be the leader of the armored warriors, stepped forward and shouted, the armored warriors gathered together and slowly started to push Yulian back.

Yulian wanted to slash them all at once with the greatsword, but the armored warriors were pretty skilled as well.

Their strength seemed to be on par with the Red Storm warriors.

Yulian had swung his sword in multiple directions, but the number of fallen armored warriors were less than ten. Yulian was completely shocked.

As he peeked toward the white haired man while fighting, the man seemed to be barely dodging the armored warriors swords and shields, while killing them off one by one.

It seemed that his specialty was not a group battle but a sword art focused on one-on-one battles.

Book 3-9.3

Yulian slowly backed up until he returned to the white haired man's side. It was because he had determined that combining his strength with the white haired man's strength would make them battle more effectively. The white haired man must have been paying attention to Yulian as well; he quickly noticed Yulian's plan and started to match his rhythm.

With Yulian preventing the further enemies from exerting their strength while the white haired man used the openings Yulian created to take the closer armored warriors out, the armored warriors started to get extremely nervous. In the end, the cape-wearing man took out his sword to start defending against the white haired man's sword. Their skill level was pretty similar.

Yulian swept the surroundings with his sword and started to protect the white-clothed maiden from the armored warriors so that the white haired man could fight without worry.

Neither side went down quickly, but as time went by, a sense of nervousness was starting to become visible in the cape-wearing man's face. It was as if he was being chased by time.

While Yulian was thinking that it was odd since the armored warriors were definitely at an advantage, he was able to figure out the reason for their nervousness as some more time went by.

The white-clothed maiden squirmed around a bit before sitting right up.

“Hwai!”

The white haired man enthusiastically shouted, while the cape-wearing man bit down on his lips.

“What is this?”

The white-clothed maiden looked around her before shouting in a sharp tone. Finally, the cape-wearing man shouted to his

warriors.

“Black Brigade, retreat.”

The armored warriors started to retreat as soon as they heard his command, but the maiden laughed as if she thought they were pitiful and started to speak.

“Where do you think you are going? I warned you.”

Yulian could not help but drop his jaw at that moment.

The maiden started to run toward the armored warriors, making the lace on the hem of her clothes start to flutter as she swung both of her hands.

It was as fast as the martial arts that his master had shown him. Even though the maiden seemed to lightly run into the armored warriors, all of them ended up flying high up into the sky before falling to the ground.

“All units, retreat.”

The Black Brigade did not even look around to their comrades as they quickly started to run.

As the maiden tried to chase after them like she did not want a single one of them to leave, the white haired man stopped her.

“Hwai, enough!”

As soon as the white haired man finished speaking, the maiden stopped immediately.

“We need to quickly go. What good will it do to chase them? They will return anyways.”

At the white haired man’s words, the maiden who was called Hwai turned around to look at the man before smiling and sticking right next to him.

“Are you angry?”

“No. Is there a reason for me to be angry? We just have to hurry

onward so I was saying it was enough.”

“Okay.”

The maiden named Hwai grabbed the man’s arm like she was a kid and started to rub her face on his arm before looking toward Yulian.

“Who are you?”

Seeing the maiden talk so casually to him, Yulian started to speak with disbelief.

The white haired man pulled her behind him and bowed to Yulian before starting to speak.

“Thank you for your help. My name is Aizen of the Rojini Kingdom. May I ask for our benefactor’s name?”

“I am Yulian Provoke, the Glow of Pareia, one of the desert tribes.”

The man who was called Aizen did not know what the term Glow meant, but since he was able to get Yulian’s name, he bowed his head once more before starting to speak again.

“Thank you. We would have been in serious trouble today if it wasn’t for Yulian-nim.”

Yulian looked at Hwai who was peeking at him from behind Aizen and awkwardly started to speak.

“Well, it looks like you wouldn’t have been in much trouble even without me. Hahaha.”

“We were in danger because the enemy used the moment Hwai was poisoned to attack. We were able to get past it thanks to Yulian-nim’s help. As you may have noticed, they are not just your typical warriors.”

Yulian had indeed realized the strength of the armored warriors. For someone to have warriors of that caliber, this Aizen’s enemy must have some power.

“Now it makes sense. I was shocked because their level of strength was not something that you can see very often. But could you tell me where this is?”

Aizen looked toward Yulian with a shocked expression.

“Did you not come from the Magic Tower?”

“The Magic Tower?”

Yulian had heard that term before.

‘Where was it? I definitely heard it before. Who did I hear it from? Was it from a book?’

Yulian tried to remember this name that he was sure he had heard before.

- There is a continent to the end of the north that people do not know about. We call it the Ancient Continent. That place is like the desert; it is full of monsters. That is actually the continent of the past civilization. There is a large tower on that continent called the Magic Tower, and it has hundreds of floors. It was made of magic.

“Ah! Master!”

Yulian remembered what he had heard from Chun Myung Hoon and shouted out loud.

Aizen looked at Yulian as if he was weird, and Yulian started to ask Aizen a question.

“Then is this the hidden continent to the end of the North?”

Aizen was nervous as he responded.

“We are headed there right now. We should still be in the Eastern Continent.”

“Ah! But how did I end up here from the desert?”

“The desert?”

“I came from the desert.”

Yulian decided to travel with Aizen and Hwai. Since he didn't know how to get back to the continent and knew nothing about this place, it was the best decision.

But most importantly, he remembered that his master knew the master of the Magic Tower. He felt like he might receive some news about his master if he went there and asked.

“The granny at the Magic Tower is said to possess an immense amount of strength. If we arrive there, she should be able to find a way to return Yulian-nim back to your original spot.”

Yulian nodded his head at Aizen's words.

Yulian and Aizen hit it off as if they had been friends for over ten years. Maybe it was the bond of fighting together with their lives on the line, but they became so close that Hwai kept getting annoyed at Yulian.

Yulian decided not to care about Hwai at all.

She was extremely beautiful and strong, but surprisingly, her mental state seemed to be that of a child. An extremely immature child.

Aizen did not say much about that. Yulian did not ask much about it, since there seemed to be some type of situation.

Other than the uncomfortable situation with Hwai, the two men were enjoying themselves because they had so much similarities with each other.

They also had some similarities when it came to the way of the sword, so they were able to teach each other about their weak points.

Although Aizen used something called mana like the rest of the swordsmen of the continent, the skill that he used to make his mana burst out from time to time was similar to Yulian's internal ki.

The two men continued to get closer as they shared all sorts of stories, and as time went by, it was revealed that Aizen was four years younger than Yulian. Once that was revealed, the two decided to become sworn brothers.

They saw many things on their way to the Magic Tower. A tree person who wanted to become human, a Lycansloph that was depressed, they saw so many things that they would have never dreamed about.

The three people resolved all issues on their way and started to get closer to the Magic Tower.

The time that it took to arrive at the Magic Tower under the guidance of the Elf race that he had only read about in books, was exactly three days less than one month.

“Ah!”

Yulian and Aizen both let out a noise of awe the instant they arrived at their destination.

The Magic Tower.

A tall tower that seemed to pierce the sky.

A magical tower than humans would never have been able to make.

Yulian tilted his head 90 degrees to look toward the top of the tower once more and could only be amazed.

Author's Thoughts – At the end of Book 3

There are a couple things I need to share.

A good portion of book 3 was focused on the individual named Runa Brink.

I wanted to show all of you that he was an amazing warrior, and share that when this genius continues to impact change in the future, that he was prepared to play that role.

- The division of the war

I feel like I made this book quite lively, but I felt like it would drag on for too long if I just continued to talk about the war, so I decided to make the latter parts of the war much shorter. Honestly, to keep your interest, I actually decreased it by quite a bit. There will continue to be wars in the future, so there was no need to make it drag on forever.

It's not like there were mountain ranges or anything. Since it was the desert without much of anything, they said that there were not many scenes to depict great war scenes...cough.....

- The last thing for now is how non-realistic it may be

I know that it may seem non-realistic, but it is impossible to keep it completely realistic due to the restrictions of time.

I know there may be a lot of issues with how they are taking over the desert.

However, if I keep it too realistic and have them fight against every desert tribe, this novel will really end up going over 10 volumes. ^^;; (I am planning on a total of 5-7 volumes for Red Storm)

I feel like it needs to hit your emotions whenever you are reading something.

So if it feels non-realistic, please just laugh haha! And look past it. In return, I will do my best to create atmospheres for you to be sympathetic about.

If you have suggestions about war, feel free to send me an e-mail or post in the forum at any time. ^^;;

End of Book 3.

Book 4

Book 4-1.1

The Magic Tower

A tall tower that goes beyond your wildest imagination.

Without a single flaw in its color

That place broke all limits of his imagination.

This place was not decorated like a fancy room, but the wooden desk, chair, and bookshelves full of books made the room seem better than it actually was.

But it was not like a scholar's room where the books on the bookshelves were in a mess and the table was full of all sorts of memos and books related to those memos with all sorts of papers scattered on top of the desk.

On top of the desk was a single book and a piece of paper, and the books on the shelves were properly organized without a speck of dust that could be found. Should it be called the room of someone who is already all-knowing? The image gave off the personality of the person who used the room.

Then a boy, who was not wearing a luxurious outfit of a noble, but a majestic looking silk outfit with a clean design, came into the room and sat on the chair.

Although this room seemed too big to use on his own, this young man had restricted anybody else from entering this room. The only person allowed in the room other than him was the mute maid who was responsible for keeping the room clean. Nobody could go against his order.

There was only one person who could go against this young man's order in this place.

“I greet my master.”

As soon as the young man sat down, a black-clad man entered the

room and bowed in front of him before speaking in a quiet voice.

The young man did not even look at him, but asked while looking at the document on the table.

“Didn’t I ask you to please not call me master? Please just call me employer. That is more comfortable for me.”

“.....”

The black-clad man was quiet and did not say anything.

Even now, there were many nobles and kings who were trying to scout him. However, the master that he decided to follow had still not accepted him.

“How is it?”

As the young man asked, the black-clad man stopped his train of thought and quickly answered.

“They were extremely busy building the foundation.”

“Extremely busy...I can’t understand how Pareia managed to handle that much materials. I also don’t know where they would have hired so many workers. They shouldn’t have that many people available.”

The young man was ordering the black-clad man to investigate that information.

But the black-clad man had already worked with the young man for over ten years and had laid down roots in the Silence Empire as well as throughout the entire Eastern Continent under the unbreakable trust of the young man.

“I have already researched all of that as well.”

The young man smiled at the black-clad man’s response. He was a person that was easy to work with, especially to handle things that cannot be leaked to others.

The black-clad man took a file out of his chest and put it on top of

the young man's desk before returning to his position.

“Hmm.”

Something caught the young man's eyes as he read through the document the black-clad man provided him. He had seen a familiar name.

Edwin Papent.

A merchant from a slightly larger than mid-tier merchant guild who wanted to trade with the young man. He liked the man himself, but he sent him back because the guild was not the size that he was looking for.

‘Although Pareia does not have more than 1,000,000 in population, they are a strong warrior nation with close to 800,000 warriors. It should be difficult to provide materials to such a tribe, so how? Did I perhaps misread him? Did I mistake a frog to be a tadpole?’

The young man was thinking about that before shaking his head. He hated thinking or worrying about things that were already over. It was not his style to do so.

“Hmm.”

The young man let out a snort before starting to speak.

“So the merchant guild that was said to be crossing through the desert and making a lot of money was this person's merchant guild. The rest of the business world was groaning about it.....please investigate more about this person.”

“As you command.”

“I told you not to respond like that. I am just your employer. I would to like to be related in any other way. Furthermore, I will deposit the payment for this like I have done in the past.”

“I understand.”

“Then I will be on my way now.”

The elf who had guided them said that before disappearing without even waiting for a response. Yulian and Aizen looked at each other before nodding their heads and started to walk to the entrance of the Magic Tower.

They saw a large iron door that seemed to be at least five meters tall.

“How do we go in?”

“Should we knock on the door?”

While Yulian and Aizen were talking to each other, Hwai stepped forward and banged on the door with her small hands.

Bang. Bang.

She was still very mysterious. She just knocked a few times with her child-like hands, but the noise was so loud they could hear it echo.

Aizen must already be used to it since he did not seem surprised at all. He was just waiting for a response from the Magic Tower.

“Huehuehue.”

They heard a weird laughing noise from inside the door before the large iron door started to open.

Once the door opened, a weak looking old woman who did not fit the image of large iron door, was waiting for them in the middle of the entrance.

The old woman had a mysterious smile toward Hwai as she started to speak.

“Hwai, the door is going to break.”

“You damned old hag. If you knew we were coming, you should have left the door open.”

Hwai’s tone was very rough.

While Yulian and Aizen, who were hearing their conversation,

were started to get nervous, the old woman motioned with her hand to call the two of them over.

“All of the guests I have been waiting for have arrived.”

“Are you saying you were waiting for me?”

As Yulian asked in amazement, the old woman nodded her head.

“It was all expected. Is this our second time meeting, Aizen?”

“Yes, grandmother.”

The old woman looked at Aizen as she nodded her head.

“You’ve improved quite a bit. Men really do need a sense of responsibility.”

“I do not have time.”

As Aizen anxiously answered, the old woman put on another mysterious smile before responding to him.

“Alright, alright, head on in. You are prepared to solve the homework I gave you last time, right?”

“Damn hag. Stop making him suffer and just hand it over. Don’t bother our Aizen.”

“Hwai, don’t do that.”

Aizen pulled Hwai toward him as he said that.

Yulian was confused while seeing that happen. It felt like Aizen and Hwai already knew the old woman, but there was something odd about the way they talked to each other.

“Okay okay, you two go up first. I have something to say to this young man with the ambitious name of Desert Conqueror and War God.”

“Aize, let’s go.”

At the old woman’s words, Hwai pulled Aizen forward and headed to the Magic Tower.

“Uh...uh.....”

Aizen was looking at Yulian while debating what to do, but he was still being dragged by Hwai.

“You’re meant to see him again in the future, so head on up. Don’t you need to talk about Adelia?”

As the old woman saw how Aizen was acting and answered, Aizen’s gaze suddenly changed.

“Hyung-nim, then I will see you once things are resolved.”

“Sounds good, Aizen. I don’t know what is going on either.....”

Once Yulian answered, Aizen headed into the entrance of the Magic Tower with Hwai.”

“You must be confused.”

As the old woman looked toward Yulian and said that, Yulian nodded his head.

“How did you know my name?”

“I would not be a master if I didn’t know the chosen ones. Huehue.”

Seeing Yulian even more confused as she continued to say things that he did not understand, the old woman continued to speak.

“Alright, let’s head up. Aizen needs to walk up due to his promise, but since you are a guest that we have invited, I need to be courteous.”

“You knew that I would come?”

“I even know your master old man Chun, so how would I not know about you?”

“You know my master?”

“Huehue. Didn’t he talk about me? About a monstrous old woman in the Magic Tower.”

“Ah!”

Yulian shouted as if he remembered. He recalled how his master talked about meeting a old woman who might be as strong as him. He finally realized that this old woman was the one his master was talking about.

“Is my master here as well?”

Book 4-1.2

“That old man left to figure out his own Heaven’s Mandate. And you followed your Heaven’s Mandate to get here.”

“I do not understand anything you are saying.”

“Do not be too curious or try to find out. That is not your destiny. I will tell you what you need to do upstairs.”

The old woman grabbed Yulian’s hand before starting to speak again.

“And up we go.”

“Ah!”

Yulian shouted out in surprise. His body was flying up at a fast speed.

“Why are you getting surprised at something like this? Old man Chun walked up the side of this wall.”

“You mean this wall over here?”

“Yes. He walked up like that all the way to the hundredth floor that I questioned my eyes. They must have that kind of talent in the foreigner’s world.”

Yulian was thinking that he really couldn’t consider his master in terms of human limits. He felt like five floors would be the limit for himself.

“But doesn’t it feel nice? Using levitation (One of the middle-tier magic. Similar to the magic that is inscribed in the Desert Runner) to go up this high is not something just anybody can do. Huehue.”

The old woman was speaking as if it was amusing, but it was not the case for Yulian. When he moved his head to look down, it was scary for even Yulian, who did not fear many things.

‘There won’t be anything left of me if I fall from this height.’

While Yulian was having that type of thought, the old woman and Yulian had pierced through the clouds and arrived at the top floor of the Magic Tower. Yulian felt a bit relieved once he felt the solid flooring underneath his feet again, but just looking down from the balcony was still pretty scary.

“The world is so small when you look at it from here. I don’t understand why everyone is so anxious to go to war and kill each other.”

Yulian started to speak at the old woman’s mumblings.

“Each person has their reason. There are no battles without reason.”

“Regardless, they’re only going to be alive for about a hundred years.”

Yulian was not feeling good because he felt like the words the old woman was saying were directed at him, asking why he continued to fight.

“I must have upset you.”

“No. I am just telling you how I feel.”

“I guess people have to follow the will of the heavens and your mandate from heaven is that of war. Why they gave you such a brutal mandate, tsk tsk tsk.”

Yulian saw the old woman clicking her tongue and started to ask.

“What does that mean? Are you saying I am destined to always be at war?”

The old woman nodded her head but did not respond.

“Please explain it to me in detail, senior.”

“In the world, there are quite a lot of people. But not everyone is the same. There are people who know something and those who don’t, the ones who can move and the one who cannot, the ones who can defend and the ones who cannot. And finally, the chosen

ones and the not chosen ones.”

The old woman rubbed her staff. Almost as if she was giving Yulian some time to think it over.

She then slowly started to speak again.

“If there are 10,000,000 people in the world, about 100,000 know something, about 1,000 can move, about 100 people can defend, and only 1 will be the chosen one. That is the ratio that has not changed among people and part of destiny.”

Yulian could not understand anything she was saying.

“Please explain it in simple terms.”

“I am explaining it in a way for you to understand. How nice would it be if that punk Mai explained everything to you beforehand? He knows about everything.”

The old woman started to grumble.

“People receive their destiny based on this ratio. But in order to return to the will of the world, you need a somewhat special destiny. Within it, a destiny is created where the person living a mundane life is the happiest.”

“Hmm. So you are saying out of 10 million people, the heavens only give a special destiny to 10,000 people?”

The desert tribes each believed in a guardian of the tribe, and believed in destiny. There were plenty of things to make them feel that way as men who were born in the desert to fight as warriors.

The old woman stared at Yulian as if she was trying to pierce him with her gaze and started to speak.

“That is why the destiny of the twelve chosen ones are so shitty.”

“Are you perhaps saying I am one of those twelve people?”

The old woman did not turn her gaze away from Yulian and answered.

“To put it simply, yes. Aizen, who came with you, is also a chosen one as well.”

“We need to fight in wars because we were chosen?”

“Rather than war, it is better to say you fight to protect. Didn’t Mai tell you? In the middle of the desert is the center of the rift.”

‘The Monster’s Desert.’

Since he had heard about it before, Yulian quickly started to think about it.

“Mai-nim told me that if I try to know too many things, my head will hurt and did not teach me anything. What is this rift you are talking about?”

“It will give you a major headache. However, you are someone we cannot leave in the dark. You may be one of the chosen ones, but you still have one decision left.”

“A decision?”

“A shitty decision indeed. Why did the heavens make you decide on such a thing? The more it continues, the more humans break apart from each other.”

The old woman looked to the sky as she mumbled in lamentation.

Yulian scratched his head because he knew he had to think really seriously about what was happening to him.

He selected the opposite path due to sheer curiosity, and it led him to the Western continent, and along the way, so many unbelievable things happened. Now, he had instantly arrived at this unknown continent.

In addition, now he was at this unbelievable tower called the Magic Tower, and an old woman started to ramble about how he was a chosen one who was destined to be at war for the rest of his life. She was also sighing as she told him that he had a decision to

make. He could not understand any of the things that were going on.

The old woman started to speak.

“Listen well, Yulian. Your master should be in the process of finding his path and his answer after realizing the truth.

Once she started to talk about Chun Myung Hoon, Yulian focused and looked toward the old woman.

“When I see you, I see both things that make me relieved as well as worried. The part that I am thankful for is that you possess a strong mental fortitude, endless bravery, and relentless sense of responsibility to easily defeat your destiny.”

“.....”

The worried part is that as a member of a desert tribe, you do not know about the Holy Scripture. Without knowing that, I cannot explain anything about the rift.”

“I know a bit about the omnipotent God. I have also memorized everything the tribe’s Guardian has passed down as well.”

“It was altered to meet the needs of the desert. How should I put it? The father loves all of his children, but does not teach them all in the same way?”

“Hmm.”

The old woman groaned before looking toward Yulian and continuing to speak.

“Even if I try to explain it in the simplest of ways, it will be difficult without knowing the Holy Scripture.”

The old woman contemplated for a long time before clapping and starting to speak.

“Alright. I will give you a short explanation. Listen well. I had to think really hard to come up with this.”

Yulian started to smile as he answered.

“I will listen to it as if it was my master giving me a lesson.”

“In the world, there is a god and angels and devils. Since you are also the king of a nation, you should have read many books right?”

“Yes.”

“What is a devil? The majority of people call Satan, who was born with the name Lucifer, to be the essence of evil.”

“I am aware of it. The Archangel who descended down after going against the omnipotent god.”

“Oh you know about it.”

“Who would not know about angels and devils? Even our tribe makes sure to teach about religion. Neo Latin-nim, the guardian of our tribe, is one of the Archangels as well.”

“It should be easier to explain than I thought then. Then listen well. I will tell you about why the devil split away from the Lord.”

Book 4-1.3

There was a single existence in the middle of an glorious ball of light that was hidden away from the world.

At one point, this existence radiated throughout the world.

He quietly landed down while flapping his twelve wings of authority.

There did not seem to be anyone looking at him, but he was already aware of the person looking at him.

“Father.”

The existence opened his mouth and looked for his father.

“I am aware.”

The existence heard an answer in his heart.

“My son.”

If you faced this person face on, you might burn away. The existence felt like he was so shabby and felt like he could burn away from embarrassment, as he looked up at the empty air and started to speak.

“Father, did you really have to do that?”

The tone of the voice was very calm and relaxed, but there was a lot of unexplainable emotions mixed into it.

The existence continued to speak.

“Didn’t you really like them? Didn’t you really love them?”

“My son, I still love them.”

The existence started to speak louder.

“Then why did you have to do that? Weren’t they the creation you created with your two hands and breath?”

The father answered.

“My son, I do love them.”

“Did you destroy them because you love them? Is that why you put them through so much pain?”

The light started to shake as the existence started to raise the tone of his voice.

“I am their father and their creator.”

Once he heard a response, the existence bowed his head.

“Their sins had filled the world, and their every thought was evil that I regretted creating them in the first place.”

This existence named Lucifer, who was at one point, one of the most radiating of all Archangels but now had revolted against God and left, started to shout.

“Father, why did you not forgive them? Didn’t you forgive them in the past and won’t you forgive them in the future either?”

“I regret that I destroyed all of them with my water. I regret not loving even their wrongdoings. I will never destroy them with water ever again. And I promise change for the single pair of life that is now left in the world.”

Lucifer looked down at the world. Since the speed of time between the world and the location where Lucifer was currently at moved at a different pace, the world was already quickly starting to change.

Lucifer let out a loud sigh as he started to speak.

“Wasn’t it you who taught me to love? Wasn’t it you who taught me to love and love again? The wails of the people you have ordered to be destroyed continue to pierce this son’s heart. The emotions you gave them to think and feel on their own continues to bother me.”

Tears started to form in Lucifer’s eyes.

“Father, your son who does not know this thing called oblivion

that you have given them is tormented without rest. That is the only thought that has been in my head ever since I have learned of your plan. That was why I put my faith in your love and forgiveness to go against you, father. I took up arms against you because I was afraid of your anger that may endlessly continue.”

Lucifer already knew of his father’s plan. That was why he went against his father and gathered many angels to revolt with him. However, Lucifer was blocked by the Archangel Michael and ended up falling down to earth.

He tried to get the people of the world to ask for his father’s forgiveness and make amends for their sins. However, his father’s anger was too scary, and Lucifer wanted to defend the world against that anger regardless of what it took.

Even with all of Lucifer’s efforts, the beings of the world that his father had created did not reflect on their actions.

That was why his father had ordered to destroy them with water. The order was carried out and the world was completely submerged under water after around forty days of continuous downpour.

Lucifer was very pained because of this.

Because of the abilities given to him by his father, he had already known about his father’s will and was prepared for this pain, but he was not able to adjust and it tortured him.

If he had not revolted against his father and fallen down to the earth, the order to destroy everyone would have been given to him with certainty.

“Father.”

Lucifer continued to feel the pain that could not be relieved and continued to wail out in tears.

“I am fearful about when the world will go against your will again in the future. I am fearful that they will call forth your wrath

again in the future.”

Lucifer’s whole body started to shake.

“The seal where your other wrath is sealed, I am fearful that they will forget about it. I feel that they will question your omnipotent existence. The day that they release the seal that has your wrath sealed within it, I fear about the loudness of their painful wails. I am extremely fearful of that day.”

Lucifer stopped talking at this point and just blankly stared out.

The area surrounding Lucifer was filled with darkness.

“My father is the light and your son, the one who goes against your will is the darkness. I believe in your love father, and I believe in your grand presence, father. That is why this son will revolt against you once more. The seal of your wrath, this son will seal once more. This son may end up an eternal sinner that may never be forgiven for not following your will, but your son will trust in his father’s love and do what he believes to be right.”

“The seal that is stated in the Holy Scripture to prevent the end of the world. The seal of destruction.”

What the old woman was saying was definitely surprising. However, Yulian was not surprised at all; he was merely curious.

“Mm, is that the truth?”

“Since they say that Lucifer himself had said so, there is a high chance that it is the truth. Neither devils nor angels ever lie. They just find ways to hide the truth.”

“Hmm, if it is as you say, then they did not do anything wrong?”

“It is because of the difference of opinion about that aspect that led to the continuous conflict between the Magic Tower and the Chaos Island. Each side believes that their belief is the right one.”

“I’m sorry to turn this conversation in a different direction, but I am not sure why I need to listen to this story.”

At Yulian's question, the old woman had a 'What a shocking question?!' type of expression on her face.

"Didn't I tell you earlier? You are a chosen one who was born with the Mandate of Heaven."

"Why am I a chosen one?"

"How would I know the workings of Heaven?"

"Tsk."

As Yulian made a noise, the old woman cautioned him as she continued.

"Listen closely. There are twelve chosen ones in the world and thousands of people who know and are aware. Six of the twelve chosen ones are destined to meet the Magic Tower first, while the other six are destined to meet the Chaos Island first. Isn't that amazing?"

"Senior, I already have a lot of things to do. I really don't understand why I need to hear such a story. I have my own dream and I do not want to get myself involved in anything else."

"It is not getting involved but just the flow of destiny. Furthermore, how many people would choose not to care about the rift that can bring for the end of the world?"

Yulian shook his head at the old woman's words. How preposterous was all of this?!

As Yulian thought about it, he remembered Mai saying something very similar. Did he say the recreation of the world?

"Mm, then please continue."

At Yulian's response, the old woman lifted up her hand to draw a weird drawing in the air.

Once she did that, a dim light started to shine in the path the old woman's hand moved.

“The origin of the rift was from the creation of the seal on Chaos Island to seal the final judgement of heaven. The people of Chaos Island want to use human strength to make the world go around, and to prevent the end of the world. However.”

The old woman opened her hand and erased the drawing of light before starting to draw again.

“There is an absolute rule in the world about causality. Everything that happens in the world, and the results of those actions have a cause and reason for it. Our Magic Tower believes in that philosophy.”

The old woman’s hand started to draw a red image which started to intertwine with the original image. It wasn’t randomly moving, but actually creating exquisite figures..

“The Chaos Island goes against that absolute rule. Their action alone will make the world more chaotic, but they believe that is the right way. They believe that this world needs to move based on the will of the people in the world.”

“It is complicated.”

“Of course. When humans try to use their head to go against the rules of the heaven, it will always be complicated. But they do not believe that their actions will create the rift that will push forward the recreation. In fact, they believe that they are slowing it down by sealing it.”

Yulian thought of Mai and asked.

“Then what is Mai-nim doing?”

“Mai is reversing the seal of Chaos Island to nullify the effects of the seal of Chaos Island.”

Yulian finally understood why Mai had spent years down underground without ever being able to see the sunlight.

“Then Mai-nim must be one of the chosen ones as well?”

“Even that kid with him, Luff, is a chosen one. And the two of them have chosen to stand on the side of our Magic Tower.”

“Will I need to make a decision as well?”

Book 4-1.4

“Will I need to make a decision as well?”

“When the time comes. Of the chosen people, there are some who are helping us and some who are helping the Chaos, but the majority are still torn, so it is a complicated problem. And one day, someone from Chaos will come to look for you. Persuading you in advance will help them at the final moment.”

“So I still have the luxury of making a decision?”

“Yes. However, in this granny’s eyes, I believe you will be someone who makes a smart decision. After all, the rift was created to seal the endless amount of monsters coming out of the Monster’s Desert.”

“Mai-nim told me to prepare myself.”

The old woman nodded her head.

“You will need to. From the beginning, it was impossible for a human to prevent something that a devil has sealed. I’m actually surprised that we managed to last this long in the first place.”

The old woman said that as she started to fall deep in thought.

She pretty much had no contact with Mai. The old woman was not able to leave the Magic Tower, and Mai could not leave his post. After speaking with Yulian, the old woman was thinking that the time of chaos was getting closer little by little.

“The moment Mai cannot last any longer and let’s go, I presume that you will no longer be fighting against humans, but only against monsters. You will also naturally realize that everything needs to progress in the order that they are destined to go.”

“It certainly is amusing and definitely a problem I will have to think about, but right now, I am unable to put any of my thoughts toward it.”

“All you have to do is do as you will. Nobody will bother you.”

If you think about it in one way, it seems to be the most urgent and scariest issue, but if you think about it again, this story was so unbelievable that Yulian decided to not put much thought into it right now.

As he had just stated, right now was not the time to think about it.

“Is my master involved as well?”

Yulian thought about that as he asked, and the old woman answered.

“Your master is one of the people who know, as well as a helper. He followed his mandate of heaven to this world, and even now, he is traveling across the continent for this issue. he is most likely debating between the patriarch of the Chaos as well as myself right now, I presume.”

“Since my master is a wise person, I am sure he will make the right decision; since you said he will return, I will make my decision at that time with him.”

“All you have to do is select the direction you think is right. My wish is to strongly emphasize that we are the ones who are correct, but after living such a long life, I’ve realized that not even one out of ten things really go the way you want it to go.”

“I always enjoy listening to the stories of seniors with deep levels of wisdom.”

“Huehuehue. I am thankful you feel that way.”

The old woman started to laugh in an odd way.

“Anyways, this is a really amazing place.”

As Yulian looked around in awe, the old woman looked around while standing next to Yulian and started to speak.

“It definitely is amazing. It was built on human haughtiness after

all. It wasn't really built with good intentions. You can ask your master later. You don't seem to be too interested, so you'd probably quickly forget it even if I told you."

Yulian looked around at the building for a long time before asking a question.

"By the way, where are Aizen and Hwai?"

"Aizen is currently paying the price for his words and Hwai is on a path that she has selected for herself. Even if it is not now, you will meet them again at some point in the future."

Yulian did not understand what she meant and asked again.

"So you are saying I will not be able to meet them here?"

"Don't you have to return quickly? It seems to me like you don't want to listen to my blabbing and want to quickly head back?"

It was true. A month had already passed by, so he was sure that the Red Storm warriors would be worried. It was even possible that they followed Haisha into the dungeon. It would be okay if Haisha was there, but if Haisha was not with them, they might all end up being destroyed by Luff.

"Plus, Aizen's mind is hectic right now. He is a man with a goal and he knows that he does not have much time."

"I see."

Yulian nodded his head before looking toward the old woman as a thought passed through his head.

"Senior, just how am I supposed to go back? I don't even know where I am."

"Huehuehue."

The old woman let out that odd laugh again as she started to speak.

"Originally, I would make you walk back since you followed your

own decision here, but I will grant you a special favor. I will return you to the first magic circle that you saw. However, I just hope that you don't forget what this old lady has said to you."

"I understand."

"Then I will send you back right away. I will let Aizen know for you. Plus, the chosen ones are destined to run into each other over and over, so you will meet again. Finally, the decision is something you will need to sincerely think about and decide on your own."

"Yes."

"Then have a nice trip. It's rude to send a guest back empty-handed, so I gave you a small gift. Raise it well."

"What?"

"You'll slowly find out later. Then, I hope to see you at the Magic Tower again next time. Return teleport."

As Yulian blinked while looking at the old woman chanting the spell, Yulian felt his surroundings turning dark.

"What happened?"

Yulian rubbed his eyes but realized that there was nothing wrong with his eyes. His surroundings were actually completely dark. Once he got used to the darkness, he started to see the faint light of the magic circle. He had instantly returned to his original location.

Yulian started to walk while filled with amazement. He was going to quickly meet with Mai and Luff before urgently heading back.

Yulian took the golden turtle out of his chest to light up the area and started to walk toward the other side.

"Yulian?"

As he was walking forward, Yulian heard someone calling for him from far away.

"Is that you, Luff hyung-nim?"

“It really is Yulian.”

Seeing that the voice instantly got closer, Yulian realized that Luff’s martial arts had taken a step to the next level.

“Where were you? I spent a lot of time looking for you.”

Luff, who should have been over 30 years of age now, still looked exactly the same as last time. In fact, he even looked a bit younger than Yulian.

“Good to see you, hyung-nim. I missed you.”

Yulian patted Luff’s back as Luff hugged him and was really happy to see Luff as well.

Luff let go before starting to speak.

“I came over because Mai said someone came in a bit ago and asked me to go find them. It must have been you. Mai must be curious as to who it is right now.”

“Yes. Let’s go.”

Yulian and Luff stood shoulder to shoulder before starting to run. Luff seemed to be taking peeks at Yulian and keeping pace with Yulian.

He could finally start to see the familiar environment. Mai was outside of his room.

“I felt a vibration in the magic circle and knew someone had entered, but I didn’t know it was you. What happened? That magic circle is the entrance from the Eastern Continent.”

Yulian shared all of the things that he had been through. Mai let out sighs every so often as Yulian continued with his story. The majority of the sighs happened when Yulian was talking about Hwai.

For the rest of the stories, Mai was disappointed and amused, just like Yulian. He was missing people as well. There was pretty much nobody who visited this underground dungeon, and even when

someone came, it was not very often. Since Luff was not someone Mai could have long conversations with, it frustrated Mai even more and made him miss people so much.

What was why he was happy to see Yulian.

Once Yulian finished his story, Mai started to speak.

“What Master said is correct. Your decision should be based on what you think is right. Although I am taking the Magic Tower’s side right now, honestly speaking, I do not like either side. However, I didn’t want to avoid my destiny so I am doing what I believe is the right thing to do right now.”

“Honestly speaking, I do not have time to worry about that right now.”

“Then don’t worry about it. You just need to go down your own path. If I had to add what I want to it, it would be that you quickly unify the desert. It is starting to get hard to hold this back. If you can become the unified ruler of the desert, it would put me at ease.”

“It is a hard to believe story.”

Mai had a look of understanding at Yulian’s words. At one point, he too had found it hard to believe, and did not care much about it until the moment he lost her.

“But it is the truth. The moment I cannot hold back the seal any longer, the speed of monster regeneration will become much faster. This is not for the desert or for the continent. It is a battle for humanity itself. If your mandate from heaven is for war, I trust that you will magnificently accept your destiny.”

“Hmm.”

“I’m sure your head is already hurting, but just ignore it. All you have to do is do as you want.”

“I understand.”

Once Yulian and Mai's conversation ended, Luff pulled Yulian toward him.

"Luff must be itching to move since you have come. The majority of my friends have non-human like tendencies, but lately, Luff has been really bad. Be careful."

"Huhu. I couldn't handle him in the past. Originally, I had planned on coming to work on my own martial arts. Since my master has left again, I have not been able to train that much."

"Do as you would like. But won't your underlings up there be worried?"

Yulian recalled the Red Storm warriors he had forgotten about at Mai's question and started to bitterly smile.

"I will stay only about three days. Since there is a warrior who knows where I am, there shouldn't be any large issues. If they are in a rush, I presume they will fall into this tunnel."

"Do whatever you want. Luff is calling you over."

"Let's go Yulian."

"Yes."

As Yulian and Luff started to walk away to train, Mai let out a sigh after seeing their figures.

All he could think about was how someone else had become involved in this damned game of power.

But seeing Yulian not pay much attention to it and that Yulian was focused on his determination, Mai decided not to be worried.

Book 4-1.5

After having fun training with Luff for three days, Yulian felt like the Red Storm and his tribe would worry too much if he stayed any longer and started to say goodbye to Luff and Mai.

Luff threw a fit but Yulian calmed him by saying he will come back every so often and barely managed to leave.

When Yulian made it outside, as Yulian had expected, the Red Storm was gathered around the entrance of the underground dungeon. In fact, they had moved the base camp over there as well.

“We were debating whether to go in or just wait.”

“I had some things to do. Did the training go well?”

“Oowoooo~”

As Yulian responded to Haisha’s question, the warriors responded loudly.

“Hmm? What is that?”

Yulian had a satisfied grin on his face at their response before he noticed a Sand Dragon that was tied up with a ton of ropes and asked.

“We caught that guy alive to try to tame him like Shopping, but it wasn’t as easy as we thought it would be.”

As Haisha proudly answered, Yulian started to laugh.

“Ha! How did you come up with that idea?”

“Since there are not too many people in the Red Storm, wouldn’t we be even more unstoppable if we all rode Sand Dragons instead of pirms? If we could do that, I feel like the Red Storm alone could take on thousands of enemy warriors.”

Yulian shook his head in disbelief at Shubeon’s answer.

He knew that Chun Myung Hoon had personally trained the Red

Storm for a while and that their skills had increased from this last war, but he never expected them to catch a Sand Dragon alive.

“It is a good idea, but I do not think it will be easy to do. Shopping was tamed by my master, not by me. I don’t even know if it would be possible.”

“We will attempt it. They say that these punks live much longer than humans, so even if we manage to tame one a year, we think it will be a good support for Pareia.”

Yulian responded to Haisha’s words.

“Even if we manage to tame this one, Red Storm will have to organize the troops without it. It will be hard for this guy to fight along with us and create a path for us. So if we consider the tactical value of the Red Storm, it will be better to give up on it.”

If you consider the large size of the Sand Dragon, it was highly likely that the Sand Dragon would also hurt their warriors in battle. So it was a double-edged sword.

When he first saw Shopping, Yulian had also considered ‘what if the entire Red Storm became Sand Dragon riders?’ but he gave up on it because of this problem.

“Mm.”

After hearing something that they had not even considered, the Red Storm warriors were full of regret looking at the Sand Dragon they barely managed to catch alive.

“But there is still value in having at least one as a symbol of the Red Storm. It’ll be unfair for both the catching side and the caught side if you end up just killing it after all of that effort.”

The Red Storm started to smile again at Yulian’s words.

“Ah! Haisha!”

“Yes, Glow.”

As Haisha arrived in front of Yulian, he handed the Golden

Turtle back to Haisha.

“He is a smart one.”

“He sure is. I had originally planned on leaving him at home, but now I’ve gotten attached so I couldn’t do it. But it looks like something has changed?”

“What changed?”

“I can’t say with certainty, but something’s changed with this fella.”

“I fed him well and he energetically followed me around. There weren’t any issues.”

Haisha put the Golden Turtle on his hand and looked all over it.

“Maybe i am mistaken. It must be because I have not seen him for a while.”

Yulian nodded his head and pointed at the Sand Dragon as he started to speak to the Red Storm members.

“Everybody, beat him up but make sure he does not die. Beat him up until he develops obedience. If we do not instill the fact that we are above him, it will end up being dangerous, so mercilessly beat him up. Since they understand human language, watch what you say as well.”

Oowoooooooo~

“Once we take him to Shopping later, I’m sure Shopping will teach him well. I’m sure he is lonely on his own as well. But how do we tell a female Sand Dragon apart? It would be great if this one was the opposite gender of Shopping.”

“Hahahaha.”

The Red Storm all had a good laugh before sheathing their greatswords and casually walked toward the Sand Dragon that was glaring at them with murderous intent.

‘What is going on?’

The Sand Dragon was surprised as the Red Storm suddenly headed toward it and flinched its body.

“Adjust quickly.”

Puk! Puuuuuuuuuuk. Paaaaaack. Pooooooooooooook.

Close to 100 greatswords almost instantly started to attack the Sand Dragon.

Kwaaaaaaaaaaaaak~

As the Sand Dragon’s scream echoed across the Monster’s Desert, the other monsters did not dare to move around and even the one Sand Dragon that was nearby also slowly crawled into the ground.

A man with a full head of black hair with small amounts of white hair peeking out to show his age was looking toward the Eastern sky.

“Hohoho.”

The man must be happy as he started to laugh out loud.

“Venersis-nim.”

The man turned his head as someone called out his name. It was Bucord, the leader of the Desert Sword.

“Bucord, what’s going on?”

“Are we really going to just let them do as they please?”

“What do you mean?”

“Pareia.”

Bucord could not reveal his frustration as he cautiously answered.

“Pareia... Pareia...they’ve gotten stronger. No, they were strong from the beginning. Our Shuarei had been aiming for them for so long but in the end, they did not fall. Amazing.”

‘It is not the Shuarei but you, Venersis. If it wasn’t for you, would anybody have dared to fight against pareia?’

Bucord thought that in his mind as he started to speak.

“If we let them continue like this, we will not be able to defeat Pareia. Pareia will only get stronger as time goes on. In addition, they have a solid alliance with the Rivolde.”

“I know.”

“We are slowly becoming isolated, Venersis-nim.”

“I know that as well.”

Even this time, Venersis looked very calm, as if it had nothing to do with him.

Bucord could not understand and asked.

“But you will still just leisurely sit back and watch?”

Venersis looked directly at Bucord.

“What is it that we can do right now?”

“That.....”

Bucord could not say anything. He wanted to say they needed to hit Pareia, but with Venersis asking like that, he realized that that wasn’t really possible either.

“We have less than 60,000 warriors. You are not saying we should ignore the Rivolde who are eyeing us and invade Pareia, are you?”

“That’s not what I am saying.....”

“If you are not planning to perish together, then it is better to just sit back and watch for now. And if we have made up our mind to sit back and watch, we need to be as quiet as a dead field mouse. We don’t want to surprise them and get their anger.”

That truth was not something that Bucord, one of the Desert Sword, would not know. However, the diversion from above was

too much.

They were wondering why they were just letting Pareia be. There were even some Greatest Warriors who knew why they weren't attacking Pareia, but they were still doing it for political influence to go against Venersis.

Bucord could not believe it when he saw what was going on. Was this how they treated Venersis, who had put his life on the line to fight for the Shuarei for tens of years?

It had already been twenty years since Bucord started to follow Venersis. The amount of enemies who were in awe at the warrior in front of him during that time were countless, and the number of enemies who paid tribute to his endless passion and fighting spirit were endless as well.

However, the tribe's Glow as well as a couple Greatest Warriors who wanted to rip him into pieces, these people were tying this glorious warrior down.

- Go with me. I will show you the greatness of the Shuarei.

Bucord remembered what Venersis said to him the first time he invited him to the Desert Sword. Bucord felt like tears were going to pour out of his eyes.

“Why are your eyes turning red? Bucord.”

“It's nothing. Venersis-nim.”

“I understand how you feel, but no matter what anybody says, we must wait. We must wait until the number of our warriors grow and Pareia shows an opening. Either that or for that Rivalde to show an opening. If our Shuarei moves on our own right now, we will perish.”

“I understand.”

“Send a message to the Desert Sword. Maintain your strength, a chance will definitely come.”

Venersis sounded like he was urging Bucord, but in reality, he was urging himself to be patient.

The opposition of the Magic Tower and Chaos, as well as the recreation of the world. These are both topics that will be the core of the continent chronicles.

However, in order to prevent boredom, I have not put too much explanation. I will be thankful if you just accept it as 'So that's how it is!' I will be even more thankful if you continue to read this series as well. ^^;;

The characters Aizen and the woman named Hwai Resaruche are the characters of my next project.

That was why the journey to the Magic Tower was briefly described as well.

If I am being honest with you, that series is a very different atmosphere than Red Storm, so there were even parts that I took out as well.

Now that we are at the exact middle of the series, it is time for the main story to slowly get started.

The composition of the confrontation, which is the core of the series, should not impact Yulian too much if you think about his personality and the environment around him, however!

I believe that he won't be able to completely remain unaffected by this influence.

Honestly, as well head into the fourth volume, the future of the characters in the story is something that even I, as the author do not know for sure, so I cannot accurately say 'This is what will happen!'

I will work hard to give you the feeling of joy and the mentality of 'let's get to the end together!'

End of chapter 1.

Book 4-2.1

Pain

Once a war ends, it leaves behind pain.

Slash slash.

Thrint was taking care of his greatsword and the leather armor made with layers of different type of leathers.

It had been a while since there was any blood on it, but if you do not take care of your weapon and armor after a couple days in the desert's blowing sand, it will quickly rust and break down. That was why it was important to pay close attention to it.

In addition, even the warriors with high status never left the maintenance of their equipment to someone else. It was because all warriors felt like that was equivalent to leaving their lives in someone else's hands.

“Hmm.”

Thrint finished maintaining his greatsword and let out a noise of satisfaction as he lifted it up high in the sky into the sunlight. It suddenly made him reminisce about the suffering he went through to lift this stupid sword in the beginning.

“Dinner is ready.”

A woman who seemed to have no vitality in her face cautiously spoke to Thrint as he nodded his head and responded.

“Why do you look so tired?”

“Tired? No I am perfectly fine.”

As the woman slightly bowed and answered, Thrint shook his head.

“You know that's not what I meant. Is there something worrying you?”

“.....”

As the woman kept her head down and could not respond, Thrint approached her and hugged her as he started to speak.

“Talk to me. Tell me what is bothering you.”

“Nothing...it’s nothing.”

The woman started to tear up after saying that. Thrint let her go as he spoke with frustration.

“I can’t know what the issue is unless you say something. As you know, I am not a romantic person, but I am not so terrible to just sit back and watch my woman cry.”

“Sob.....”

The woman started to cry the moment Thrint said ‘my woman.’

“I am frustrated. Just what is making you like this? Is it Verena? Is she being jealous of you?”

Verena was Thrint’s first wife. Once her name was brought up, the woman quickly shook her head and answered.

“No. Verena-nim is very kind-hearted. She is always paying a lot of attention to me.”

“Then just what is the reason? It’s frustrating.”

“It is nothing. I just..... There are times when women are like this. You do not need to worry about it.”

Thrint sighed internally as he shook his head at the woman’s words.

“Father, dinner is ready.”

“Alright. I understand. Let’s go in.”

As Thrint was late, Thrint’s first son Mereo ran out of the paoe to get him. Thrint held the woman’s hand and walked into the paoe.

Inside the paoe, Thrint’s two wives and four children were

waiting for him with payanat (a baked dish using paya, a grain of the desert, which is prepared by soaking it and making it into a dough) and saoota (a dish boiled with potato from the continent and pina meat) among other dishes in the middle of them.

Thrint sat the woman and Mereo down before taking the center seat on the inside. Once Thrint sat down, Verena started to put food in everyone's plates.

Thrint put some saoota in his mouth and chewed on it before swallowing it and starting to speak to Verena.

"Starting tomorrow, we have three days of group training with the Red Storm, so I will not be home for the duration of it."

"I understand."

Meal time was the time for the entire family to gather together and chat. The desert warriors were very busy, and since each wife resided in different paoes, it was difficult to get everyone together other than during meal time.

The problems that the family needed to know were discussed with the first wife first regardless of how many wives you had, and the first wife took care of the children and the other wives.

That type of tradition had been practiced since a long time ago, and the woman who would become the first wife were trained early on by their mothers from a young age to learn the responsibility of their position, so they considered it the greatest virtue to take a good care of the family and assist their husband.

"Also, we may get some allowance from the Glow. I leave it up to you to take care of the little wives and the children."

"Yes, I understand."

Verena respectfully answered and looked at her husband with satisfaction. It was a bit difficult with the household atmosphere being strict and quiet, but it was rare to find a husband of Thrint's caliber.

He was faithful, and even though he was stoic, he did not lack anything when it came to taking care of the family. Having a dad like that, even the young children in the house did not cause much headache, so Verena could not be any happier.

Thrint said a couple other things to his little wives and the children and finished the meal in satisfaction before starting to speak again.

“Verena, let’s talk a bit after dinner.”

Verena blushed a little as she nodded her head. That meant that he would be spending the night with her.

Once night arrived and he was left alone with Verena, Thrint asked her a question.

“Do you know why Tuomi is acting that way?”

“What?”

Verena asked back in surprise as Thrint suddenly asked about the third wife.

“She is frowning all day like someone who has a lot on her mind. I am asking because I feel like something is wrong.”

Verena was a bit disappointed that her husband was asking about another woman when this was their first time together in a long time, but she decided to be understanding.

It was because Tuomi was a slightly special woman to Thrint. If it was not for that reason, her husband would have never brought up another woman when he was with her.

“Mm, did she say something to you?”

Thrint shook his head at Verena’s question.

“I asked her but she told me it was nothing and that women are sometimes like that.”

Verena thought for a moment. There were a couple things that

came to mind.

“Please only stay with her for awhile. I will tell Pona - second wife - so that she will have no complaints as well.”

As Thrint made a confused expression, Verena pulled her husband’s hand to sit him down before starting to speak.

“She is thinking about Triquel-nim right now. Triquel-nim was a very romantic person, so he is not someone a woman can easily forget.”

Verena cautiously looked toward Thrint as she said that.

“Of course you are an amazing man as well, but this is a different aspect. Please do not get the wrong idea.”

“Triquel was a manly man. I will not get the wrong idea. But is that really the reason?”

“In addition, she does not have a child. Honestly speaking, you are not someone who shows much love, and you are also busier than other warriors, so she is feeling down because she has not felt any love.”

Thrint nodded his head at Verena’s words and started to speak in a mumble.

“Is that so?”

“I heard something from Shubeon-nim’s first wife not too long ago. Shubeon-nim was worried about that as well but did not know what to do so he had come to her for advice.”

“Hmm~”

Thrint let out a long sigh.

Tuomi was the dead Triquel’s fourth wife.

After agreeing that the wives and children of the dead Red Storm members needed to be taken care of by the rest of them, the Red Storm warriors each went and brought a wife and children of their

dead comrades to be a part of their family. Tuomi was the one Thrint had brought over.

No matter how much help they get from the side, it was difficult for a woman to raise a child on their own. That was why the families of their dead comrades all followed the Red Storm warriors, and the Red Storm warriors felt like they had done the right thing. There was a positive factor that if they somehow ended up dying, they could be at peace knowing their comrades would take care of their remaining wives and children.

But the titles of husband and father were in front of the title of warrior.

That was because a warrior existed to protect the family and the tribe.

Thrint had thought about a lot of things, but longing was not something you could forcefully get rid of. That was why he could only ask Verena for help.

“It would be good if you could take good care of Tuomi. If there is something for me to do, please let me know.”

“Do not worry. I will make sure to not cause you to worry.”

“Thank you, Verena.”

Thrint hugged her and started to caress her back.

Book 4-2.2

“Grace, isn’t it amazing?”

Yulian slowly pointed forward with his sword as he asked Grace. The place his sword was pointing toward was the the Storm Castle that was being built at Runa’s strong urging.

It was only in the beginning stages, but they had already finished constructing the base to build the castle on, and the boulders to be used as headstones were laying around the base.

The fact that once the castle walls and the pillars start to go up it will become an enormous castle automatically entered your head when you saw the size of the base.

“How long did you say the construction was going to last?”

“Until it gets to a basic level, five years. To finish the complete castle following the blueprint after that will take another five years, so a total of ten years was what they said.”

“He really is an amazing person. I didn’t expect him to push for this so passionately.”

Grace looked around in awe as she started to speak to Yulian.

Truthfully speaking, this construction had a lot of opposition from the chiefs and the heads of the tribe. It was because a castle did not make sense in the desert and had no use.

Yulian felt the same way as well, but he still strongly advocated for Runa’s idea.

They wouldn’t need it if they only planned on staying in the desert, however, in order to achieve the basic goal of contending against the continent, a castle was a necessary item.

The fortification of a castle and development of infantry was common in the continent, but in the desert, that was not the case. Runa emphasized that doing something fresh like this would be

better for the tribe than defending the oasis. In the aspect of aiming for the continent, a castle was definitely needed to provide rest and rations for a lot of warriors.

Yulian agreed with that statement and eventually, the chiefs started to agree one by one to get the construction started.

“He is similar to you in regards to getting the things he starts to the end.”

As Grace brought up the similarities between Yulian and Runa, Yulian happily answered.

“If a genius like that had been born in Pareia instead, we could have shortened the time for all of this by a few years more.”

“Pii~, don’t be so greedy. If we are being honest, if Runa-nim was born in our Pareia and pushed for such a thing, how many people would have recognized his abilities? It was because he was the enemy and you knew of his abilities that you have so much faith in him, wasn’t it?”

Yulian shook his head.

“To be honest, it was not because of his abilities at first.”

“Then?”

Grace opened her eyes widely at the unexpected answer and asked.

“I felt chills the first time I saw him. A thrilling feeling. I felt something like that. His boldness to not even blink when I was in front of him; the willingness to make bold decisions for the Greatest Warrior he served. All of those things left quite a shock on me.”

“Hmm, I was the same way when I first met you.”

“Hahaha.”

After hearing what Grace had to say, Yulian lifted Grace high up into the sky and sat her on his shoulder as he secured her by

holding onto her legs.

“Please let me down. What if someone sees this?”

As Grace tickled Yulian’s hands and asked, Yulian just laughed out loudly without any intentions of letting her down.

“Who will say anything about a husband hugging his big wife? I know that you are tired from taking care of the oasis and dealing with the issues of the people. I am always thankful to you.”

“Darling.....”

Grace cautiously caressed Yulian’s face while she continued to sit on his shoulders. And then came the thought in her mind.

‘I guess I should tell him now.’

“What are you thinking so deeply about?”

He used the other hand that was not holding Grace up and patted Grace’s leg to get her attention as he asked.

“Honey.”

“Hmm? Go ahead.”

“That... you see.....”

Why are you beating around the bush so much? This isn’t like you. They told me they call you the Iron Woman. I’ve also heard people say you are the true ruler of Pareia.”

Yulian smiled to show that he was proud of his wife as he lightly pinched Grace’s cheeks.

“So, honey, don’t you think you need to get a second wife?”

“.....”

Yulian stopped moving side to side as he looked toward Grace.

“Didn’t we decide not to talk about that? We are still young. I have no plans of taking in a second wife until we have our first child together.”

“Sigh~”

Grace let out a small sigh.

It would make more sense for her to like her husband to say something like this. But that was just a dream and not the mentality that the first wife of Pareia's Glow, the Mother of Pareia, should have.

Pere was there but it did not matter for the successor. They needed someone who had the Glow's blood flowing inside of them. This was especially important because Yulian was a special type of Glow who stood as the vanguard during war.

This was something that she needed to convince him to accept as the wife.

“Honey.”

“If you are planning to keep talking about that, stop.”

Yulian sternly answered as he turned his head away.

He could feel Grace shaking through his shoulder.

His shoulder was starting to get wet. Grace had lowered her head and started to cry.

“Why are you crying.”

Yulian's heart was breaking seeing her crying like that. That was why he could only oppose taking in a second wife even harder. It was because although Grace was strong, she was also weak.

‘My wife, who, at the young age of twenty, had to take on the heavy burden of being the Mother of Pareia.’

“Don't cry.”

Yulian let her down and hugged her as he started to pat her back. She just quietly cried in his arms.

“Do not feel pressured. This is what my master said. This type of issue is the will of heaven. Neither you nor I have any problems, so

the fact that we still do not have a child is the will of heaven. Do not get anxious.”

“Sob~”

Grace finally let out a noise as she continued to cry. She then pushed Yulian away as she started to speak.

“What do you know? The other people ... I’m sure the other people are pointing their fingers at me. I am the first wife of none other than the hope of Pareia, the Glow of Pareia. I am the Mother of Pareia.”

Grace continued to speak in a teary voice. Yulian even felt like everything he thought he was doing because he knew Grace and thought he was doing for Grace might have been wrong.

“Do you know how many people are waiting for the Glow’s bloodline to continue? Pere-nim and Orca-nim already have kids. But why me...just why not me?”

“Grace!”

Yulian called her name but did not know what to say. All he could do was call her name out and hug her.

“If you do not have any girls you like, I will bring one. Do not say anything about it. This is an important problem where my opinion as the Mother of Pareia is more important than yours as the Glow.”

Grace, who had stopped crying at some point, urged Yulian once more in an emotionless, stoic voice.

Yulian still did not know what to say to her.

Book 4-2.3

Runa was very busy.

He needed to check on the progress of the castle construction and also needed to check the catalog of items being traded in the desert. At the same time, he had to take part in the large-scale training with Yulian to increase the success rate of the strategies he created.

With Runa spending over sixteen of the twenty four hours in a day working, the sweet honeymoon phase of a newlywed was getting further and further away from him.

Even now, Runa was putting all of his attention on the matter of the large caravan that will be coming through. Yulian, who had approached while Runa was deep in thought, started to talk to Runa.

“Aren’t you going to get kicked out by your wife if you keep doing this?”

Runa smiled bitterly at Yulian’s joke.

Maybe it was because she was handpicked by Grace, but his wife was a very understanding woman. Although it was true that he was sorry, there was no way for him to spend more than eight hours a day with her right now.

“Do not push yourself too hard. It is for Pareia, however, you should not think about sacrificing yourself for the good of others. The happiness of the tribe is everyone’s responsibility together.”

Although he said that, Yulian knew many aspects of the tribe would struggle if Runa took a break right now. However, he still said that because he was feeling bad for Runa.

“Glow, you and Red Storm are conducting many overnight training sessions as well.”

As Runa was implying that it was not just himself but also Yulian and the rest of the Red Storm members who were not spending that much time with their family, Yulian laughed out loudly before answering.

“Hahaha, but we are not newlyweds. Plus, we are doing it to survive.”

“I am working to help Pareia survive as well.”

Runa’s face changed colors as he answered and Yulian recognized that he had made a mistake and made an apologetic expression.

“Mm, I made a mistake.”

“Do not worry about it. The pressure the Glow and Red Storm face to face the enemy head on is not something I will be able to understand.”

As Runa continued to grumble, Yulian patted Runa’s shoulders and continued.

“You’re making me feel uncomfortable. You are someone who can move over ten thousand warriors with a single command. I am fully aware of how much pressure that is. I feel the same way about that aspect.”

“There has not been any big issues until now. In fact, I am worried because everything seems to be going too smoothly.”

“That is good to hear.”

Runa turned his gaze to the document he was looking at.

“Just one thing. I feel like we need to take special interest with this item. And once this is over, I will get some free time as well.”

“Is it the issue of the caravan that is coming with Edwin?”

“Yes. The size is very large..... Edwin, this friend seems to want to reverse his losses in a single trip. The size of the caravan this time is larger than we would have ever expected. He is not the type to go overboard like this. If this trip ends up in failure, he will end

up penniless.”

Yulian tilted his head and asked.

“Could something have happened?”

“I don’t really know either, but I presume that something must have happened. If it didn’t, there is no way he would do something like this.”

“Mm, how big is it?”

“There are 3,000 carts, 3,000 people and 500 mercenaries for security.”

Yulian asked as if he was concerned.

“Shouldn’t we go as far as we can to meet up with them?”

“Since you mentioned it, I was planning on reporting it to you as they will be here in a few weeks. It would be great if we could take 1,000 of our strongest warriors and meet them by the border to the Inama kingdom.”

“I’ll consider it a hike and go escort them myself.”

Runa shook his head at Yulian’s answer.

“There are a lot of things for the Glow to do here. But we do need to show him that we have a special interest in him, so I believe it would be a good idea to send the Red Storm since he should know about the reputation of the Red Storm in Pareia.”

“That sounds good as well. Should I send all of them?”

“Since it is so large, I think we should send the Red Storm as well as around 1,000 other warriors. Furthermore, since pirmas are better than horses in the desert, it would be great if we can take pirmas to switch with their horses. Also, if the situation calls for it..”

“If the situation calls for it?”

“We can destroy the Inama Kingdom’s border checkpoint and

protect them from beyond the checkpoint. The checkpoint area is always full of crime.”

“You have a tendency to go overboard for things that we need to do. The border is far away and we have the quicksand river, but wouldn’t it be bad for us to touch the Inama Kingdom right now?”

Runa shook his head and answered.

“Their kingdom would not invade us just because a border checkpoint was destroyed. Furthermore, we would destroy all of it without leaving any evidence behind. It does make me feel bad ,but I don’t think it is bad idea.”

Yulian clicked his tongue as if to show disbelief. Although Runa had never made a mistake, he really had too much confidence. There were even times that Yulian wished he could borrow that confidence.

“If it is as you say, Edwin is in charge of a pretty important aspect of our Pareia.”

“It was because the Glow promised him a monopoly. Honestly speaking, it would not harm us much if he was to fail, but since everyone working in Pareia has made a contract with Edwin, it would become chaotic if something was to happen to him.”

“That is true.”

Runa thought about something for a moment before continuing to speak.

“We would also need a lot of time to get a new merchant and get things moving. In that aspect, Edwin really is a highly talented merchant. We are pretty similar when it comes to quickly taking action if we think it is the right course of action.”

“So you are saying he is very important.”

“Yes. Until the end of the monopoly contract, he is one of the most important individuals for Pareia.”

“Then I will send the Red Storm as you suggested. But we cannot touch the Inama Kingdom just yet.”

Runa bowed at Yulian’s response and answered.

“The final decision is always up to the Glow, so I will do as you instructed.”

“And I know it is hard, but try to get close to the Red Storm. To me, the Red Storm and Runa, both are existences I cannot be without.”

“I will work on it.”

“Great. Then go ahead and tell the Red Storm yourself. I will go meet with the Greatest Warriors.”

“I understand, Glow.”

Yulian patted Runa’s shoulders a couple times before heading out to meet with the Greatest Warriors. Once Yulian left, Runa looked toward the direction Yulian left in before letting out a sigh.

“Sigh. I guess I need to frown again.”

Runa knew that frowning in front of the Red Storm did not affect them at all, but he opened his eyes wide and confidently walked over to meet with the Red Storm.

By the time Runa arrived at the Red Storm’s training ground, the second sun had reached its apex as well.

“What is going on? What brings our amazing assistant warrior-nim here?”

Shubeon, who was the first to notice Runa, asked mockingly. Although he knew in his mind that he should not speak like this, Shubeon could not think straight anytime he saw Runa and always ended up speaking in a mean manner.

The warriors stopped their training at Shubeon’s shout and looked toward Runa. Everyone was the same as Shubeon. As they had their dead comrade’s families in their homes, it was impossible

to not think about them. That was why none of them could help but glare at Runa.

“I came over as there is something I need all of you to do.”

As Runa took in a deep breath before saying that, one of Shubeon’s eyebrows started to twitch as he answered.

“I’m sure it is a very difficult issue that requires us to get involved?”

“There is nothing difficult. It is just protecting the caravan.”

“You... are you saying you are going to make us protect a caravan? Us, the Red Storm?”

As Runa nodded his head at Shubeon’s rude tone, one of the Red Storm warriors started to speak.

“We are the vanguard during war, not a security brigade. If you are going to put us to use, shouldn’t you come up with an appropriate task? Glow’s A. SIS. TANT. WA. RROR. NIM?”

Runa was not affected by his choppy emphasis on his title. It was always like this with them. They always had mean gazes and tones. Someone else might have been affected by them, but Runa did not even blink once.

“The caravan has a greater importance than you are thinking about. The caravan this time will come with a large amount of materials, so we must show them an equal level of respect. There is nothing I can do since all of you have ended up as the face of Pareia.”

“Hmph. You are treating us as trash now.”

At Shubeon’s words, now it was time for Runa’s eyebrows to twitch.

“Are you saying you cannot do it?”

“You need to give us a fitting task. Did you listen through one ear and let it out through the other when we told you to put us to good

use?”

“I am the one who will make that decision. Are you saying that you will not follow this command?”

Shubeon turned around and spoke to the other warriors as if he was mumbling.

“A command needs to make sense!”

Runa could not hold back and started to shout.

“I have already received the power to command the warriors. I will let you know that not doing as I say will be considered insubordination.”

“Do whatever you want.”

“Shubeon!”

The first person to speak before Runa could answer was Haisha.

Book 4-2.4

“Didn’t we promise? We said we will listen to him for now.”

Shubeon tried to say something at Haisha’s words before shutting up and nodding his head.

“Speak, Assistant Warrior. Tell us what the Red Storm needs to do.”

Once Haisha spoke, Runa looked around at the warriors before finally starting to speak.

“In about one month, Edwin is scheduled to come with a very large caravan. All of you will have to protect the caravan and safely return to Pareia with them. The size of the caravan is so large that they will need to do three trips across the quicksand river. Please keep that in mind.”

“We understand. We will follow your order.”

Runa felt a bitter taste in his mouth while looking at Haisha. In the end, it ended up like this again.

Even though he approached it every time saying ‘I need to control my pride, I need to kill my pride,’ the ending was always like this.

As Runa nodded his head and left, Haisha started to talk to Shubeon.

“Shubeon, why are you always like this? Didn’t we promise not to be like this at least on the outside?”

“What can I do when I get angry every time I see him?”

“You still need to hold it in. If we fight, the ones to be happy will be our enemies, the one who will be sad is our Glow.”

“The Glow is the same way. How could he accept that bastard.....”

“Do not talk about something that has already happened, Shubeon.”

As Thrint answered in a cold voice from his side, Shubeon ended up saying something he shouldn't have said.

“Have you forgotten about Triquel and our friends already too? How can you be that cold?”

Suddenly, silence filled the room. Shubeon realized that he had made a big mistake, however, he could only shut his mouth.

“Yes!”

At that moment, surprising words came bursting out of Thrint's mouth.

“I forgot about all of them. Those damn bastards who went and died. I forgot about them a long time ago. Why do we have to remember those types of bastards!”

“Thrint!”

Shubeon shouted loudly and clenched Thrint's collar.

“What did you just say?”

“They went against orders, they lowered all of their peers' morale, and now, they are making us argue against other people who are on our side. Why should we remember those bastards. That is what I said.”

Pow.

Shubeon threw a punch at Thrint's face, and Thrint was pushed far away by the force of the punch.

“Say it again.”

“I said there is no reason to remember those bastards.”

“You... son of a

Shubeon ran toward Thrint and continued to punch as Thrint started to throw punches back and they started to fight. Even

though the two of them were fighting, Haisha, as well as the rest of Red Storm just watched them with blank expressions.

“How can you say something like that!”

Shubeon continued to punch as he shouted at Thrint; Thrint punched back as he responded as well.

“Then how long do I have to remember them for?! There are so many things we need to get done, but we can’t do anything while we argue with each other like this. We are the Red Storm. Pareia’s greatest brigade. How much longer must we be in pain for those dead bastards?”

The two warriors fought until they ran out of energy and they both fell down to the ground at the same time. None of the other warriors moved a finger until that happened.

“Shit.”

Shubeon stayed down as he lifted up his arm to wipe both his tears and the blood from his nose.

“I know. I know we need to forget about them. But I can’t seem to do that. I can’t help but remember them when I go home.”

“We still have to forget them. We don’t have the right to decide. Forget them.”

“Shit. Aaaaaahh~!”

Shubeon hit the ground with both his arms and legs. Shubeon liked to flail and laze around, however he cherished friendships very much.

“Everybody, let’s stop.”

Haisha approached the two fallen warriors and lifted them up as he calmly said one thing.

“Thrint is right. Forget about them. It’s not that it is hard to forget them. It is that we do not want to forget them. That is why we need to stop making excuses and forget about them.”

“Shit, I’m sorry everyone.”

Shubeon apologized before pushing Haisha’s arm away and starting to walk away.

Each and every one of his steps looked extremely difficult, but nobody went up to stop or help him.

They just watched his back with a rueful expression.

For being your average merchant, the size is extremely large.”

The young man was reading the report the man handed over as he mumbled to himself. Maybe he really did make the wrong call about that man.

‘For him to have the power to move this much materials.’

The young man shook his head as he thought that in his head and started to speak toward the black-clad man in front of him.

“Honestly, over half of that belongs to the nobles of Inama Kingdom.”

“Is that so?”

“Yes. The guild itself is being pressured by external influences quite a bit. Now that they’ve been doing well, the nobles forced themselves on board.”

“It should be interesting. So if he fails this time, he will end up destroyed?”

The black-clad man responded without even lifting his head.

“Yes. In fact, the entire guild might go down. The nobles of the Kingdom are very greedy; they won’t be able to stand taking a loss like that. They will do whatever they can to recover their losses.”

“It makes it sound like the nobles of our kingdom are like that as well.”

The black-clad man bowed down almost to the point his head was touching the ground at the young man’s response and answered.

“I’m sorry. I should have said the Inama Kingdom’s nobles.”

“Well, everybody knows it is the truth. I just don’t mention it because it’ll taint my mouth.”

“I really didn’t have any intentions.....”

“Enough. That is not the important part.”

“It will help us be more relaxed if we get rid of the people who will become our enemies, as well as the ones who are helping them. Mm. How should we take care of this?”

The black-clad man believed that the fact that the young man could speak so casually meant that he already had a plan in mind.

“Master.”

The young man called the black-clad man.

“Yes, master.”

“Do you know who will be protecting that caravan?”

“They are in a different continent so I cannot be sure, however, it was said to be a well-known mercenary guild in the Western Continent.”

“A mercenary guild? What about their size?”

The young man was surprised at the black-clad man’s answer. He thought it was weird that such a large caravan was being protected by mercenaries instead of soldiers.

“I heard around 500 people.”

The young man tilted his head in confusion. Mercenaries were one thing and soldiers were another, but 500 mercenaries seemed to be quite small for a caravan this size.

“I guess they must be quite talented mercenaries if they think 500 will be enough to protect them.”

“We do not have any information yet.”

“Will it be possible?”

There could be no other answer to this question.

“As long as you leave it up to me.”

The young man peeked at him before starting to smile. He didn't let the man in too close because of where the man was born, however, he was still a trustworthy subordinate. He also knew that the man was sincerely loyal to him as well.

Of course, that loyalty was based on the fact that the young man was the black-clad man's lifesaver and the reason the man was able to grow up like this.

The young man casually continued to speak.

“I hope you won't let me down. I know you have never let me down before, but I see that this opportunity will be a very important opportunity for you.”

‘Ah!’

The black-clad man lifted his head up to look at the young man with sparkling eyes. If he was able to succeed in this endeavor, his existence would finally be validated.

The young man may be cold and ruthless, but he never went against the things he said, and took care of his subordinates very well.

“Just leave it to me. I will make sure nothing goes wrong.”

“Then please make sure to report back good results.”

“I will do as you command.”

The black-clad man bowed once more to Shaone Fury Silence III, the crown prince of the Silence Empire, and walked away.

The black-clad man was confident. No matter who was protecting the caravan, they would not be able to avoid the methods of the assassins under his command.

They had easily taken care of the assassins those barbarians had sent not too long ago.

The black-clad man quickly started to move.

End of chapter 2.

Book 4-3.1

Protection

The ones who attack first deserve retribution.

That was the law of the desert.

The man looked around the oasis and had a satisfied smile on his face. He had sent his S-rank assassins to hide underneath the oasis sand while preparing the regular assassins to launch an ambush.

It was difficult to act inside a city. First, there would be too many people. That meant that no matter how quickly you took care of them, the kingdom's security forces were likely to notice the commotion.

The Basara Kingdom might be a small kingdom, however, they were focused on power and their soldiers were all elite soldiers. In addition, their strict military discipline made it even more likely that they would notice any type of commotion.

Because of that, it was smart to take care of the targets before they entered the city. And just like they had done before, the targets were likely to rest in this location before they started on the last leg to the city.

‘Once this job is completed, I can be properly accepted. I will be able to have some subordinates working in the light as well.’

The man thought that way as he put on a hopeful smile. Even if the mercenaries protecting the targets were strong and numerous, he had brought 1,000 assassins with him for this job.

He didn't have enough assassins nearby in the kingdom that he had to hire other assassins from throughout the continent.

Many guild members will most likely die from this job, however, it wasn't a big problem if they managed to successfully complete their objective. There were still many orphans out on the streets,

as well as people in the dark alleys who would gladly stab a passerby in the back to take care of a single meal.

So he would just need to retrain new assassins. The most important thing was to be accepted by his employer.

“They will pass by here within the next three days. I believe that you are all aware of why I put the viability of the guild on the line for this job.”

In front of the man was the group of SS-rank assassins that he had groomed himself. They were listening closely to everything he had to say. They all knew how important this job really was. If they succeed, they would be able to finally step out of the shadow and into the light. It would create that path for them.

The man continued to speak.

“Suppress all of the sentry and then signal. Once they see the signal, the assassins hiding outside of the oasis will enter. I will be moving on my own to find an opportunity to kill the targets and the mercenary leader.”

“We will be okay but I don’t know if our peers will be able to stand hiding underground.”

“Kill the ones who cannot stand it. A single weakling might put all of us in danger.”

The assassin’s nodded their head at the assassin’s cold words.

“This is something we must absolutely make sure that we successfully complete.”

The man clenched his dagger as if he was reminding himself of the importance of this job.

The size of Edwin’s caravan was even bigger than they had heard about.

Three thousand carts, four thousand people, and five hundred mercenaries. This caravan that transcended imagination created a

grand sight of grandeur.

This caravan was probably better described as a small supply team during a time of war rather than a merchant caravan. It was amazing that a merchant could even bring a caravan this size all the way here. Edwin may be resourceful, but it probably cost him quite a bit of money to bring all of it here.

“Good work. We will protect you from here.”

Haisha approached Edwin and started to speak.

“Ah! You came all the way out here to greet us.”

There was no way Edwin did not know about the Glow’s personal brigade, the Red Storm. He immediately recognized them and happily shook Haisha’s hand as he answered.

Haisha looked around Edwin in awe.

“Assistant Warrior Runa had told us about it. He said it was a very large caravan, but this is beyond our wildest imagination.”

“It ended up that way. We can talk about the specifics as we move. Please wait a moment. If all of you are here, we can send the mercenaries back.”

Edwin said that and headed over to the leader of the mercenaries. Haisha could see that the mercenary leader who was in charge of 500 men was pretty young. His red hair lightly covered his eyes while his long hair flowed in the wind. He was quite an impressionable man.

Most importantly, Haisha was drawn to him because of the hook-like weapon on his waist that Haisha had never seen before.

After Edwin and the mercenary leader chatted for a moment, the red hair man nodded his head. After that, he took the mercenaries and started to retreat.

“The majority of that mercenary guild seem to be pretty young.”

Haisha asked with interest as Edwin approached him once more.

Edwin looked toward the retreating mercenaries and answered.

“They are a strong and trustworthy guild. Their name is a bit ominous though.”

“What is their name?”

“Their official name is the Blood Soaked Crow. Everybody just calls them the Red Crow.”

“Red Crow?”

“Yes, the Red Crow. Since they are soaked in blood, they become Red Crows.”

“Ah!”

Haisha finally seemed to understand as he looked at the back of the retreating mercenary leader. Since they both had the same ‘Red’ title, it made him feel a certain level of familiarity.

“Honestly speaking, that young friend, the mercenary leader, is even more amazing. Many nobles in the continent tried to scout that friend into being the leader of their personal knights corps, however, they have all failed.

“He’s that good?”

As Haisha asked in shock, Edwin nodded his head and responded.

“He is only twenty-five this year. He is a Claw (means the toenail of a monster and has 2-4 large hook-shaped blades on both hands) Master.”

“Claw? It is an interesting weapon.”

“It is really a weapon often used by assassins. I presume that he was an assassin master before becoming a mercenary.

“Hmm.”

Haisha made a disappointed noise at Edwin’s answer. Haisha knew what the word master meant in the continent. To be a master of assassins at that age, it made it feel like the surrounding

atmosphere was very ark.

“It was because I trusted him that I was able to make it all the way here. He is good at keeping promises.”

“I see. Then shall we get on our way?”

“Yes. Now I am starting to get drawn to the desert.”

“Hahaha. If you have any thoughts of staying here, we will make the best paoe for you.”

As Haisha laughed and responded, Edwin quickly shook his head.

“I will have to pass on that. Hahaha.”

Edwin’s caravan started to head toward Pareia with the Red Storm and 1,000 warriors protecting them.

It officially translates to escort, but I thought protection would serve the purpose better

Book 4-3.2

Yulian, Runa, as well as the members of the merchant guild residing in Pareia were all waiting outside of Pareia to greet Edwin.

“I greet the Glow.”

Edwin ran toward Yulian and bowed in front of him.

“Welcome, Edwin.”

“You personally came all the way out here?”

“I was curious after hearing that it was a giant caravan. It really is as large as it was rumored.”

Yulian spoke with shock after seeing the caravan behind Edwin. Edwin bowed once more.

“It ended up being that way. I relied on the Glow’s promise to push forward even though I knew it was a bit much.”

“You do not need to worry about your caravan since you are now in Pareia. Our Pareia will guarantee your safety.”

“Thank you, Glow.”

Edwin knew Yulian would say that, but this trip really was putting the guild’s existence on the line. So hearing Yulian say it once more let him let out a sigh of relief.

“Then let us enter.”

Yulian called the Red Storm over and shared stories with them as they entered the paoe. Once they entered, Runa started to speak to Edwin.

“We have prepared 300 paoes for the caravan. Please organize everything.”

“Thank you for the preparations, Runa-nim.”

Edwin showed his thanks to Runa before calling the members residing in Pareia over to have them organize the cargo. Once that

was finished, he headed into the paoe with Runa.

Once Yulian, Edwin, and Runa were all in the paoe, Runa was the first to speak.

“Edwin-nim. The size of the caravan this time really does go beyond our wildest imaginations. Did something happen?”

“To be honest with you, it was the nobles. Once they found out that we were making a lot of profit by crossing through the desert, they wanted us to combine their personal merchant guilds with ours. A small guild like ours could not reject the request of the nobles.”

“Then the carts you brought this time have the belongings of the nobles as well?”

“Yes. Our items are probably not even a fourth of the entire caravan. It’s very frustrating since they haven’t even helped us with the cost of travel or security. They are probably plotting so that if their items end up being robbed, they can use that as an excuse to eat up our guild. Well, it might be difficult because there are so many of them.”

“Ho!”

Yulian shouted in disbelief. He could not understand these people known as the nobles in the continent. There were similar types of nobility in the desert, but they were all warriors and people who knew how to love the citizens of the oasis.

The nobles of the continent should be more civilized and have received proper etiquette lessons, but their actions were more childish than the children of the desert.

“That is how it ended up such a large caravan.”

Edwin let out a sigh at Runa’s comment and answered.

“Sigh~, it ended up that way.”

“If you let them do it once, they will repeat it a second, and third

time. Are you planning on bringing such a burden with you every time?”

“That is what I am worried about as well.”

Runa thought for a long time before starting to speak.

“Edwin-nim, do you have any thoughts about joining our Pareia or a different country?”

Edwin quickly understood Runa’s intentions. However, it would not be possible.

“That is not possible. The guild members still have a lot of family members in the kingdom, and my father is a viscount in the kingdom.”

Yulian and Runa, who had never heard that Edwin was the son of a noble before, looked toward Edwin with shock.

“I never had a chance to bring it up since my identity was not very important. I understand Runa-nim’s thoughts, but it is not possible. I plan to do so some day in the future though.”

“Mm.”

Runa started to think again. If Edwin falters in this situation, Pareia would falter as well.

He then came up with a great idea.

“Edwin-nim.”

“Yes, please speak.”

“This time, the warriors of our Pareia will help you safely get to your destination, so you will not need to worry about this caravan. The GLow’s horse is one that even ten thousand pirmas will not be able to catch.”

“Of course. If I am being honest with you, if it was not for the Glow’s promise, I would have rejected the nobles even if it made the guild falter.”

Seeing Edwin answer like that, Yulian wanted to help reduce Edwin's anxiety a little more and confirmed for him once more.

"I will help you as much as you have helped me. Even if it is bigger than this, if you can make it safely to Pareia, I will take care of you from there. No matter how many times it may be."

Edwin bowed his head deeply as he responded.

"The Glow's deep friendship, this Edwin will never forget it."

Runa started to speak to Edwin.

"However, it is not practical to come with such a burden each time. So this is the plan I came up with. The next time you come, please make sure to bring along some important nobles with you."

"What?"

Edwin tilted his head in confusion as he could not determine what Runa was plotting and asked for clarification. Runa continued to speak.

"I am telling you to come with important nobles next time. It would be great if the caravan is as large as possible. The thing to keep in mind is that the size of Edwin-nim's portion of the caravan needs to be the largest of them all."

Edwin was getting more confused as Runa continued to speak and had to ask for a direct answer.

"I cannot understand Runa-nim's intentions."

"Do the nobles know about Edwin-nim's relationship with us?"

"Of course they do not. If they did, it would be hard for me to be safe. All they know is that I trade with Pareia while going through the desert and that I pay mercenaries to keep me safe through the desert."

"Isn't that dangerous as well? There is a significant amount of steel coming to us."

“I am paying the relevant taxes for it. Please continue.”

Edwin urged Runa on. If he could get rid of these greasy nobles, Edwin would gladly give up a month’s worth of profit.

“Then, act natural as you come into our Pareia to trade. We will then give you some warriors to protect you as you head back into the desert.

“Then?”

“Then our Pareia’s warriors will show up as a band of thieves to steal your items. If we kill the most annoying noble to set an example, everyone will be quiet. All Edwin-nim will have to do is stand next to the most terrible noble at that time.”

Runa thought that his plan was pretty good and started to smile as he continued.

“If your items get stolen like that, I presume the caravan will return directly to the continent. At that time, Edwin-nim can apologize and say that you will slowly return the amount that was stolen on the trip.”

“Mm.”

Edwin was finally starting to understand Runa’s plan.

“In their point of view, the one who lost the most would be Edwin-nim, and since there will be nobles to serve as witnesses for it, they will not be able to touch you. They will also never think about stepping foot into the desert ever again since they will think you are putting your life on the line and taking a gamble.”

“That is quite an exquisite plan.”

As Edwin praised his plan, Runa opened up one finger as he answered.

“There is one extra effect as well. Edwin-nim must make sure to bring materials belonging to very important nobles. With Edwin-nim promising to pay back for the losses, that noble will protect

Edwin-nim with the greed of getting their money back. So wouldn't it be killing two birds with one stone?"

Clap.

Edwin clapped and started to laugh loudly.

"Hahahaha. Runa-nim. Very exquisite. Truly exquisite. There is already a small portion of money that are taken as donations or taxes, so I can use that money to pretend to repay the debt. Hahaha."

Yulian knew he would have to do something terrible with his warriors turning into a band of thieves, however, he nodded his head knowing that the plan will definitely get those noble bastards away from Edwin.

"We will need to be cautious at first. I think it would be better if the stolen goods were stored in Pareia for a bit of time. You need to act like a merchant who took quite a hit for a while."

"Of course. From then, it will be about keeping a complete poker face. Haha."

Edwin felt refreshed, as if a ten year long congestion was finally pushed out. He did not have any means to get rid of the nobles on his own.

'You bastards. Just wait for me.'

Edwin started to grind his teeth while thinking about the nobles.

"Some of the Red Storm warriors, as well as other desert warriors will protect you until you reach your destination."

"Thank you very much."

'They say that the best time to start negotiations are when you are at an advantage.'

"Then let us talk about our trade now."

Runa put on an eloquent smile as he started to speak. This

negotiation will definitely be advantageous for Pareia.

‘I cannot let my guard down.’

Edwin realized that he had let his guard down at Runa’s sudden change, but it was already too late.

Book 4-3.3

“Mm, there shouldn’t be any issues, right?”

Seeing Yulian worrying about the warriors who left to escort Edwin half a month ago, Runa confidently answered.

“Aren’t they the best of the Red Storm? Do not worry. I’m sure there will be no problems.”

“There better not be any.”

Yulian had sent the trio of Haisha, Shubeon, and Thrint with 500 warriors each to protect Edwin.

At first, he had planned on sending all of the Red Storm, however, Runa asked him not to do so, in order to keep some of them at the construction site and training grounds.

The Red Storm was already the symbol of Pareia’s warriors. The efficiency and morale of the warriors tended to go down when all of them were not around.

That was why Yulian had sent the trio after discussing the situation with Runa. It was a way to train them to become Greatest Warriors by having them lead a brigade of warriors.

Of Pareia’s third generation Greatest Warriors, Trebol had already lost his life at war. In addition, Egane and Vibli were getting older and older. So when thinking about the future of Pareia, it was time for a changing of the guards and train new Greatest Warriors.

“Warriors who cannot be touched in the desert will be the same in the continent. Even in the desert, the only ones who can defeat them are the Glow, Greatest Warrior Vibli, and a small handful of other Greatest Warriors.”

Yulian decided not to worry too much since he trusted the warriors he had sent.

“Their skills have strengthened lately that other than myself and Greatest Warrior Vibli, there probably isn’t anybody who can defeat them.”

“It makes me happier the stronger they get, of course.”

Yulian thought that he had said something he didn’t need to say once he heard Runa’s answer.

Many people were struggling under the intense heat and humid desert air. The workers who had gone through the desert many times were relying on their know-how to persevere, but for the people who were going through the desert for the first time, it was painful.

The only thing to make them feel better were the desert warriors who were slowly guiding their pirms around them.

Their eyes seem to radiate as they looked around, and each of them seemed so valiant to the point that you could tell they were not your average person.

It was not just in their physical appearance. They had handled all of the monsters and wild animals they ran into along their journey.

Of course mercenaries could handle those type of issues as well, however, the desert warriors made it seem like it was part of their typical hunt and managed to kill them with a single arrow, or even a single slash of their sword. It was no wonder the new merchant workers were amazed.

The three of them who seemed to be the leader were holding onto two greatswords each that seemed like normal people would never be able to even lift, and managed to split a Giant Scorpion in half with a single slash. The new workers could not stop themselves from being filled with awe.

Being protected by warriors like this, they didn’t need to worry about thieves or monsters. Thanks to that, they were able to sleep

peacefully at night.

“The workers seem to be struggling quite a bit.”

Shubeon started to talk to Edwin. Edwin and Shubeon surprisingly had similar personalities and quickly got close with each other.

“There are a lot of them who have never gone through the desert before. Well, the majority of those workers are part of the nobles’ guilds, but it is not like they did anything wrong to deserve this. It is making me feel a little bad.”

“If we go a little further, we will see the last oasis before we arrive at the continent. If we rest there overnight and travel three more days, we should be able to reach the Basara Kingdom.”

Since Edwin had been on this journey many times already and knew about the oasis already, he just nodded his head without saying anything.

“The question is whether we can make it through.”

Edwin motioned for him to not worry as Shubeon’s words were full of concern.

“We just have to tell them that you are mercenaries. This caravan has a mountain load of items from the nobles of the Inama Kingdom, so there shouldn’t be much issues. I didn’t expect them to be of assistance for this though. Hahaha.”

While the two men were chatting away, they arrived at the oasis and prepared their campsites. Pareia’s warriors set up their paoes and created a reconnaissance team and a boundary team before getting ready to rest.

Once everyone finished eating dinner, Haisha called the lead warriors over to chat.

“I’m sure you are all aware that the protection of this caravan is very important for our Pareia as well. Please make sure that

nothing goes wrong.”

Haisha was the overall commander, however, the lead warriors were all veteran warriors who were older than him. Because of that, Haisha showed them respect whenever they were alone, and the lead warriors followed him with their whole heart because of it.

Haisha sent the lead warriors away before calling over Shubeon and Thrint.

“Who shall lead the reconnaissance and boundary teams first?”

Thrint opened his mouth.

“I will go first. You all rest up.”

“Work hard.”

Once Shubeon and Haisha went into the paoe to rest, Thrint guided his pirma to slowly roam the boundary of the camp.

He was not very happy. And on days like this where he was not happy for no reason, things always went wrong in the past. That was the reason he had volunteered to stand guard first.

One moon ... two moon ... until the third moon was up in the sky, everything was peaceful. However, Thrint still had a bad feeling like something was going to happen.

He started to check in with all of the warriors standing guard. As he did that, he noticed a warrior who had fallen asleep while standing guard.

“Hey.”

Plop.

The moment Thrint tapped the warrior’s back, the warrior fell down to the ground without moving.

“Oowooooooooo!”

Thrint started to yell in response.

Thrint's voice instantly rang across the campsite. Almost instantly, the lights inside the paoes and tents started to light up. Some veteran warriors even came running out of their paoes naked while holding just their shamshirs.

Thrint continued to yell as he started to think.

'The enemy must have been hiding here before we arrived. We have over 50 warriors on reconnaissance; there is no way we would have missed them while looking through this small area. Plus, even I did not hear anything. Seeing the injury he has, it was a sosoonta type of weapon.'

After inspecting the dead warrior's body, Thrint realized that it was not your typical band of thieves. He started to feel rushed. It was because he didn't know how many of them were already attacked. He got on his pirma and looked around as fast as he could to try to find the enemy.

Shooooooooooooong.

At that moment, a long strand of light shot up into the sky.

A bright glare.

Thrint was able to see a man completely clad in black running around with a weapon that looked like a sosoonta.

"You bastard!"

Thrint shouted out loud. He rushed the pirma and lifted up his greatsword into the sky.

The black-clad man felt an overwhelming presence behind him and started to roll without even looking behind him.

Slash!

'Huh...I rolled on the ground.....'

The black-clad man felt his neck become cold and felt like his body was suddenly flying up in the air.

Thrint smirked at the black-clad man who decided to roll on the ground against his greatsword and cleaned the blood at the end of his sword.

The black-clad man's head, which was separated from his body, was looking toward Thrint with the eyes still open.

If he had looked back and seen Thrint's long greatsword, he wouldn't have done something as stupid as rolling on the ground. If he was still conscious, that was probably what he would have thought.

The moment Thrint started to look for any other enemies, he could hear the sound of blades clashing in multiple locations.

Since all of the warriors woke up, the assassins were all discovered. Thrint moved around left and right taking care of the assassins one by one.

“Oowooo! Ohhhhhh!”

At that moment, he heard a loud yell coming from one direction. Thrint gasped and started to run toward the origin of the yell.

The shouts which became a type of code for Red Storm held different meaning based on the tone. The one just now was the one asking for help. However, they had never heard this shout before. Until now, there had not been anyone that the Red Storm could not handle.

As workers and warriors were gathered in front of him, Thrint jumped off his pirma and started to run toward the location that Shubeon shouted from.

Book 4-3.4

“Damn it.”

The man started to subconsciously swear. Just how did they figure out the movements of the S-grade assassins and shout?

In addition, the timing was immaculate as they did it as soon as he had entered the target’s tent. A dangerous looking warrior had been chatting with the target for a long time before finally falling asleep. That was why it took him so long to come take care of the ordeal, but he was discovered.

“Who are you?!”

The man he thought was not your average warrior opened his eyes as soon as he heard the shout and jumped up as he started to shout.

He didn’t know when he picked it up, but that man already had a greatsword in his hand.

‘He should not be used to the darkness yet.’

There was some moonlight coming in through the small hole in the ceiling, however, the man determined the warrior’s eyes would take a while to adjust to the darkness. That was why he started to head toward the target with a dagger in each hand as the target got up and started to rub his eyes.

However, that type of action was looking down on a warrior of the desert.

Just as assassins were used to the darkness, desert warriors were also used to the darkness. Since both sides considered it a problem of survival, they both started to quickly move.

The man was pretty skilled. The warrior’s greatsword managed to deflect one of the man’s dagger, however, he did not have time to block the dagger in the other hand.

Stab.

“Ah!”

“Ugh!”

There were two shouts that came out at the same time. The warrior had stretched out his leg in urgency and kicked the young man who was vulnerable to the dagger. Because of that, the man's dagger had stabbed the warrior in the thigh.

“Oowoo! Oooooo!”

The warrior shouted out a long yell. However, it was too much to consider that a shout of pain.

Shubeon flexed his thigh to make it difficult for the dagger to come out and tried to grab the man's wrist at the same time.

The man had no choice but to leave the dagger in there and roll backwards to avoid Shubeon's hands.

“Who are you?”

“For a barbarian of the desert, you are quite amazing. There is no way you don't feel the pain.”

The man just answered in awe at Shubeon's question and took out another dagger from his chest.

“For a man to be acting in the darkness, you must be a real coward.”

Shubeon said that as he reached out and took the dagger out of his thigh before throwing it back at the man.

Swiiiiish.

The man avoided the dagger that Shubeon threw by simply moving his head to the side. He then started to run toward Edwin, who was down on the ground with his mouth wide open.

“Where do you think you're going!”

Shubeon swung his greatsword to prevent the man from

approaching Edwin. The man did not dare try to block the greatsword with his dagger and jumped around side to side to avoid the greatsword.

It was difficult to use a greatsword in a narrow area like this, however, since Shubeon just sliced away anything that got in his way, the man could not find any opportunity to kill Edwin.

Shubeon started to realize that he was losing strength every time he swung his sword. Blood continued to spurt out of his leg and his consciousness was starting to fade. However, the man was showing an unbelievable amount of strength that he would need to fight with all of his strength even if he was feeling normal.

Edwin quickly came to his senses and held up his rapier to help Shubeon attack the man, however, Edwin was not as good with the sword as he was at commerce.

Oowooooooooo!”

As Shubeon started to realize that he would not be able to last much longer, he heard a loud yell from outside the paoe.

It was the assassins the man had stationed outside.

“Thrint!”

Shubeon realize the one to make the noise was Thrint and called him in a loud voice. After hearing Shubeon calling for him, Thrint cut one side of the tent and rushed in.

“Shubeon!”

Thrint saw Shubeon with the injury on his thigh as he barely managed to swing his sword and rushed toward the man with his sword.

“How dare you!”

Hearing the anger in Thrint’s voice, the man realized that this job had gone significantly wrong. The might of the warriors transcended his imaginations.

There were not many people in the kingdom who would be able to defend against his two daggers even if he was not using his specialty of assassination and fought them head on.

These may be the leaders of the warriors, however, with the other warriors prepared as well, the man realized that he would just end up losing guild members if they fought head on and started to run.

Thrint tried to chase after him, but Shubeon's injury was too large, and he was worried that others might come cause a ruckus while he was lured away.

"Are you okay?"

Thrint urgently sat Shubeon down and ripped his clothes to tie down Shubeon's thigh.

"Ugh."

Shubeon let out a short grunt.

"Just hold on a little bit. You've lost too much blood. If I don't do this now, it will be dangerous."

"The situation outside?"

"There aren't too many of them. I think they were waiting in advance for us to arrive. That was why we did not notice them."

"If there were a lot of them, we would have noticed. How much damage did we take?"

"Since there weren't that many of them, it shouldn't be that big. However, their abilities were really amazing."

"They weren't aiming for the stuff. They were aiming for a person."

"What?"

Shubeon's mind was starting to fade. He should have really fainted a long time ago, but he had been holding on with the

thought that he needed to protect Edwin. However, as Thrint was here now, his body had relaxed and finally let him faint away.

“Shubeon? Shubeon!”

Thrint slapped Shubeon’s cheeks and called out to him, however, Shubeon had already fainted and showed no signs of waking up.

“Hold on.”

Edwin held a glass bottle in his hand as he pushed Thrint to the side.

“What is that?”

Thrint asked about the blue liquid in the glass bottle. Edwin took the cork out of the bottle and started to pour the contents on Shubeon’s injury as he answered.

“It is called a healing potion. I bought it from the temple just in case I would need it.”

The moment the blue liquid landed on Shubeon’s injury, it started to bubble up and clean the wound before starting to attach the skin together.

“It is an amazing medicine.”

Thrint was full of relief as he started to become amazed by this amazing medicine. Once he poured the entire content on Shubeon’s thigh, Edwin was able to go grab a cloth and clean off the area around the wound as he answered.

“It was worth its cost.”

As time went by, Haisha, as well as some of the lead warriors and shamans entered the tent.

Haisha urgently asked.

“What happened?”

“There is no issue with his life. He just bled out quite a bit.”

Haisha started to relax after hearing Thrint’s response. The

shamans fed Shubeon a liquid made from medical herbs.

“Outside?”

“All cleared up. There was only around fifty of them. But they managed to kill over 100 warriors.”

“It is quite a mess. Did we manage to catch any of them alive?”

As Thrint asked trying to find the responsible party, Haisha shook his head.

“It’s making me angry that something like this happened on our territory.”

“I guess we need to increase our patrol. There is nothing preventing something like this from happening again.”

As Haisha talked about increasing the amount of patrol, Thrint nodded his head in agreement. This time may have ended well, but there was a chance they might have lost Shubeon.”

“We definitely need to pay them back for this.”

Thrint started to mumble in a voice full of murderous intent.

Book 4-3.5

The group safely arrived at the Basara Kingdom and dropped their cargo with the guild working out of the castle.

Many merchants gathered to trade with them. With them having so much items this time, quite a lot of merchants gathered around them. The trades happened with the Basara government taking their commission.

“Will you be okay?”

Haisha approached Edwin after he completed trades for the day and asked. The attack this time was not aimed at the cargo but at Edwin. They were sure of it. Haisha was worried because Pareia’s warriors who had protected them would now need to return.

“Since I am here as a guest of the royal family, I shouldn’t need to worry about my safety. My residence will be within the castle as well so there shouldn’t be much of an issue.”

Edwin told Haisha not to worry, but Haisha could not relax.

“What if you travel with us? At least until the assassins are caught.”

“Not only do I need to sell stuff, I need to also purchase stuff before I return. That is why Runa-nim is taking good care of me after all, hahaha.”

“Even so, they were not your average assassins. I am not exaggerating when I say that no matter how bad the situation was, the fact that Shubeon was hurt that badly proves that they were very skilled.”

“Even if we managed to get through it this time, they will continue to come after me. I can’t just be afraid and not go about my duties because of it. Please don’t worry about me and return to Pareia.”

Haisha was contemplating about what to do. Right now, Edwin's impact on Pareia was big enough for both the Glow and Runa to take such good care of him. IT was because Edwin was responsible for all foreign materials coming in and out of Pareia.

While Haisha was worrying, Thrint entered the room with a stiff expression.

"Thrint, how did it go?"

Thrint had taken Shubeon to the Basara Kigdom's temple as Shubeon did not seem to heal after being injured at the oasis.

"The bastard that injured Shubeon. We need to catch him."

"What the heck are you talking about?"

"There was poison on the dagger. Furthermore, the poison is pretty special that you can't see anything on the outside. That was why our shamans did not realize it at al."

Haisha's expression started to become stiff as well.

"Is it dangerous?"

"No matter who it is, it would be hard for them to make it more than one month after being poisoned by it."

As Thrint said something that made Haisha's heart drop, Haisha started to stumble. No wonder Shubeon was looking so weak since the battle.

"Wouldn't Tuma Takaka-nim be able to heal him?"

"It's already been 10 days since he was poisoned. There is no way to get him to where Tuma Takaka-nim is within 20 days."

"But we can't just sit still like this."

"That is why we need to catch the bastard. People who carry poison around tend to carry the antidote as well."

"And if they don't come?"

"They will. People with that much skill will never give up so

easily after failing their mission.”

Thrint’s confident answer made Haisha nervous.

“If, by chance, they do not come, Shubeon will die. If we change pirms as we go, we will be able to make it back in a month.”

“The man in the temple said a maximum of one month. Normal people would die within half a month when hit by that poison.”

“That is why I think we should pick the more certain option. Tuma Takaka-nim should be able to cure him.”

“I trust Tuma Takaka-nim as well, however, the priest in the temple was confident. He said the poison is very effective, and because it leaves no traces of whether you were poisoned or not, it is very difficult to find an antidote. If Shubeon can’t resist, he will die. So wouldn’t it be more certain to catch the bastard carrying the antidote?”

In the end, they were stuck between a rock and a hard place.

They didn’t have enough time to reach Tuma Takaka, but just waiting here was dangerous as well.

After hearing the two of their conversation, Edwin realized that things were pretty serious. Shubeon was one of Pareia’s important people, but beyond that, he was Edwin’s savior. He was ready to do anything to save Shubeon’s life.

“If the assassins were really aiming for me, how about we try this?”

Haisha and Thrint started to look toward Edwin as he started to speak.

The man thought things were more difficult now that they had so much protection and made it into the city.

The target must be worried as he did not give them any openings. However, the man endlessly roamed around the target to look for an opportunity. They could not fail this mission.

The peak that he had worked so hard to reach was just a step away. He could not fail after coming so far.

The man was waiting. He was waiting until the target would let down his guard. He was waiting until the dangerous warriors around the target left.

Then one day, the opportunity finally arrived. His mercenaries must have reached the end of their contract as they started to prepare to retreat.

The man had a smile of relief as he waited for them to completely leave.

A few days later, the mercenaries started to leave and Edwin was left alone. The man thought it was odd that Edwin was alone.

People who had their lives targeted found it difficult to relax. That was why they had mercenaries or security guards around them.

But Edwin was not like that. He should have plenty of money to spend on it, but he did not do that. Something was odd.

The man soon realized that it was his misunderstanding. As he paid careful attention for a couple of days, he noticed that Edwin had protection stealthily following him around.

The man let out a laugh. The security around Edwin was much weaker than the mercenaries from before. In addition, the current security force was made up of assassins.

To the man, they were like children playing around in front of their grandpa.

The man who felt like he would be able to succeed this time, called four S-grade assassins and infiltrated the castle.

The S-grade assassins took care of the guards protecting the castle that Edwin was residing in. While they stealthily kept watch outside, the man personally entered Edwin's room to kill him.

The hallway had carpet and the door was a luxurious door that it made no noise, but even if it wasn't the man would have made no noise as he moved. It was a skill fit for an assassin."

Once the man approached the bed that Edwin was sleeping in, he verified that he was sleeping before putting his hand inside his shirt. Once he took the hand back out, there was a sharp dagger clenched in his hand.

Stab.

The man was extremely uncomfortable after stabbing Edwin without any hesitation. The feeling was off. The man had killed hundreds of people with his own hands. There was no way he wouldn't know how it would feel to stab a person in the chest.

The man urgently took the dagger out and tried to stab Edwin's neck this time. However, Edwin's eyes opened at that instant. The man became shocked after seeing that.

"Die!"

He was only shocked for a moment as he quickly tried to lower the dagger toward Edwin's neck once more, however, he felt a strong pain in his ankle and felt his body falling to the side.

"You bastard, I was waiting for you."

The man who grabbed the assassin's neck while overflowing with a murderous aura was Thrint.

"Gaaak."

The man tried to slash Thrint's wrist with his dagger, however, both of his hands were instantly caught by Thrint. In the end, the man ended up choking himself with his own hands.

He tried everything he could to escape, however, the man would never be able to handle Thrint's strength that was strong enough to freely handle two large greatswords.

He tried to even use mana to release Thrint's hand, however,

even that did not work on Thrint's clenched hands.

“Who is it that ordered you to commit such a vile act?”

“Ooooooooo~”

The man let out a moan before realizing that Thrint was as strong as a master grade individual in the continent and realized that this was the end. He felt it was unfair that things ended up like this, however, there was no way he would cause any harm to his life savor the crown prince or his subordinates before he died.

The moment the man tried to bite down on the poison inside of his mouth, Thrint grabbed the man's cheeks with one hand so that his teeth could not clench down.

“You think we would fall the for same trick twice? Your underlings did the same thing last time and died right away that we couldn't find anything out.”

Thrint followed up by lifting up his fist and punching the man's face.

“Ugh~ah~.”

The man started to cry out in pain as he continued to receive Thrint's punches.

Once the man seemed to faint, Thrint grabbed the man's hair with his left hand while lowering the man's chin with his right hand before slapping his cheek very hard.

Plop.

Something came out of the man's mouth mixed with the bloody saliva. It was the man's teeth.

“If you were a warrior, I would treat you like one, however, since you are a coward, I will treat you like one.”

“Oooooo~”

As the man let out a long moan, Thrint tied the man's two hands

before looking through his clothes.

He found seven throwing knives the size of an adult's palm, a leather bag full of money, and nine bags that smelled like different medicinal herbs.

Thrint looked at the man's possession before asking.

"Your dagger is smeared in poison. Which bag is the antidote to remove the poison?"

"....."

"I will ask once more. Which one is the antidote?"

"Spit."

Maybe it was because he lost so many teeth, but it seemed pretty hard for him to even spit.

Thrint saw the blood on his chest and silently clenched the man's hair again. He then hit the man's face once more. The man's remaining few teeth all fell to the floor.

Thrint asked once again.

"Which one is it?"

Book 4-3.6

“Uuuuuuuuugh.”

The man felt his consciousness starting to fade away from pain and started to move his body left and right.

“You still haven’t figured it out. Warriors hate warriors who do not fight fair. You are someone who possesses amazing skills, yet you do not fight fairly. As a result, we hate you too. And I know exactly how to handle warriors who do not fight fairly.”

Thrint grabbed the man’s left hand and started to twist the man’s finger with a stiff expression.

Crack. Crack. Crack.

“Ahhhhhhhhh~!”

The man shouted out in pain but Thrint did not stop. In the end, all of the joints and bones in the wrist of the man’s left hand were broken.

“I don’t know much about assassins but I do know that for someone to get to your level, they need to work hard and have a strong will. That is why I’m sure that you won’t start talking with just this much. Am I right?”

“Uhhhhhhh...mm!”

The man continued to moan. Thrint did not care too much and now grabbed the man’s right hand and started to do the same thing and break the bones in the right hand.

Edwin could not even think about stopping him as he calmed his shaking heart and continued to watch.

Thrint did not need to put in much effort to break all of the bones in that right hand. After that, he lifted up his fist and attacked the man’s elbow.

Crack.

After completely breaking the man's elbow, Thrint started to frown.

"It hurts my fist a bit too. This method is probably not such a good idea."

He then lifted up the man's two arms that were still tied.

Grind. Grind.

The man, who had been withstanding the sound of his own bones breaking, finally fainted.

"My my. I was so nervous that I didn't control it very well."

Thrint stood up and went to the corner of the room to grab a vase and poured it on top of the man's face. The falling water and flowers made the man regain consciousness.

The first thing the man saw once he opened his eyes was the red flower that was slowly absorbing his blood, as well as Thrint's face.

"Ah oo ah ee uh oo uh."

The man tried to say something, but there was no way he could talk properly without any teeth.

"Thrint!"

At that moment, the door opened and Haisha came in the room. He was shocked to see what was going on and called Thrint's name out loud. Behind Haisha, tied up in ropes, were the other assassins who came with the man.

"How could you do this to a person.....!"

Haisha saw the man's swollen arm and hands as well as his completely destroyed mouth and started to mumble in disbelief. Thrint grabbed the man's head and lifted it up.

"To me, this is not a person but an animal that knows the antidote for Shubeon. And animals only listen when you beat them

up.”

The ones who were really surprised at Thrint’s words were the S-grade assassins who were behind Haisha with gags in their mouths.

Seeing that their master no longer looked to be human, they started to shake in fear. The assassins could not figure out how the warriors were all at this location.

Honestly, Haisha, Thrint, as well as some of the lead warriors were hiding at this location a couple days before the rest of the warriors returned. They were waiting here to ambush the assassins. They sent the majority of the warriors back to Pareia to trick the enemy. That was why the assassin never expected them to still be here.

“He keeps mumbling something but I can’t understand what he is saying. We could have had a proper conversation if he complied with my request from the beginning.”

Thrint put the man down and asked.

“You can nod your head right? I will ask you one by one so respond by nodding your head. Understand?”

The man did not nod or shake his head at Thrint’s question.

“I really want to praise you and tell you that you are amazing, but I have no thoughts whatsoever to do that right now. I am disappointed that I judged you wrong. I wasted precious time.”

Stab.

“Ahhhhhh~!”

The man felt a terrible pain in his eye, lowered his head, and started to twist his body. Every time he did that, he could feel pain from his broken arm and fingers and tried to bang his head on the ground. Unfortunately, the man’s head was already back in Thrint’s hand.

Wiggle wiggle.

Everybody was looking at Thrint as he held the man in the air by the head. Edwin quickly motioned to Haisha with his eyes. If the man ends up dying like this, they wouldn't have a way to find the antidote.

Haisha nodded his head in response and called out to Thrint.

“Thrint, enough. He might end up dying like that.”

“This bastard will not die from this much. I can guarantee it.”

Thrint looked toward the man's destroyed face and continued to speak.

“There is no way someone with this much mental strength and skills would die a dog's death like this, Am I right?”

Thrint started to smile. It really looked like he was the grim reaper playing with a life that was about to end.

Haisha started to ask the assassins behind him.

“Do any of you know which poison was on this dagger?”

“.....”

None of the assassins moved or responded. After seeing that, Thrint started to speak.

“How could they respond with a gag in their mouth? Before you take the gag out, you need to make sure to remove all of their teeth, Haisha.”

The assassins could only wait and hope that they die quickly as they heard Thrint speaking like that.

“I promise on my pride as a warrior that I will let the person who tells us the antidote back safely.”

The assassins looked to be debating the deal for a bit before not moving in the end.

“We don't need them Haisha. Once I find out from this bastard, we can just skin them alive and rip them up into pieces.”

The assassins felt like their body was ripping into pieces just listening to Thrint speak. There was no way they would know how terrible that kind of pain was, but they felt the fear that the man would definitely kill them by ripping them into pieces.

Thrint turned his back toward the man. He thought about what gave him such a strong will. But that was only for a moment.

“Alright, shall we start again?”

Thrint tapped the man’s hand with his finger as he continued to speak.

“Which is the antidote? If you answer, I can send you off painlessly.”

The man’s entire body quivered every time Thrint tapped on his hand. His body was not listening to his mind.

“Ahhhhhhh~”

“Do you feel like answering? If not, you will need to change your mind quickly. There’s still quite a lot of places in your body to break and or pull off. There’s also a way to skin you without using a knife.”

“U...uh.....”

Thrint cleaned the man’s face that had become bloodied with a cloth before lifting up each of the bags with the medicinal herbs one by one in front of the man’s face.

“Is it this one? If it is, just nod your head.”

The man finally started to respond. The man looked at the leather bag and shook his head.

“Then this one?”

Thrint picked up a different bag and shook it. After doing that a couple times, once he picked up the fifth bag and shook it, the man nodded his head.

Thrint smiled brightly as he answered.

“You should have done so from the beginning. Then shall we test it out?”

“Ouu?”

The man lifted his head and made a noise at Thrint’s words. Thrint left the man there and picked up the dagger from the floor before heading to one of the assassins.

“Thrint?”

Thrint did not respond even when Haisha called him and grabbed the heads of one of the assassins before pulling him forward.

“Mm, mm, mm~”

The assassin who was pulled forward was making noises without even realizing he was making noises. Thrint stabbed the dagger into the assassin’s shoulder without any hesitation.

“Mmmmmmmm~”

The assassin let out a muffled groan through the gag. Thrint took the dagger out before stabbing it in the assassin’s thigh next.

“Mmmmmmmm~”

Once the assassin started to roll around in pain, Thrint started to speak.

“Stand and jump up and down in place, If you jump slowly, I will cut off your toes and then your ankles, followed by your knees.”

The assassin became shocked and stood up with a painful expression as he started to jump up and down in place.

They had lost the courage to bite down on the poison in their mouth and kill themselves a long time ago. The only thing dominating their minds was the fear created by Thrint. They followed his words like it was an order from God.

“Mm.”

The assassin started to moan again. He looked at the dagger that stabbed him once more and looked toward Thrint.

“Jump quickly and move your body as much as possible.”

The assassin started to jump up and down with all of his strength. Once he started to run out of breath, he tried to open his mouth as much as he could through the gag to gasp for breath.

“Enough. Now sit.”

As the assassin sat down in relief, Thrint poured the powder from the bag on the assassin’s injuries. Haisha and Edwin finally figured out why Thrint had done that. He was trying to test it to see if it really was the antidote.

A moment later, a white bubble started to boil from the assassin’s injury.

“Uuuuuuh, ahhhhhh!”

The assassin started to flail. A moment later, his body fell limp, as if he had died.

Once the man closed his eyes, the assassins anticipated that they would be the next test subject. Weren’t they perfect to serve as test subjects?

“You lied to me.”

As Thrint mubled with a stoic expression, he approached the man once more.

Slice.

Thrint instantly sliced the man’s nose off before starting to slice his lips. Even Haisha had to turn his head away from such terrible scene.

“I suddenly had a great idea. There’s quite a lot of ingredients here. I just need to stab all of them and try your medicines one by

one. Why didn't I think of this great idea earlier? Don't you think so? Ah! Don't worry about not having enough ingredients. We just need to go catch more assassins."

The man thought that it was the end. If they lost all of the S-grade assassins he brought with them, the kingdom and the Eastern Continent would lose the foundation of the entire assassin guild. If that happens, he wouldn't be able to serve his lord at all. He was starting to feel regret that he did not make a deal with this warrior early on with just his life and the antidote. The man put some blood on his tongue and wrote on the floor.

I will give it to you so let at least one person live.

The ugly writing showed the man's pain and anxiousness.

Thrint thought for a moment after reading the words. He was worried because Shubeon's life was on the line.

"I will allow it."

At Thrint's answer, the man crawled as best as he could to push the antidote with his head. He was hoping that they would let at least one person go as they promised.

It was too woeful of an appearance for the master of the 'Black Knife,' the strongest assassin guild in the Eastern Continent.

Retaliatory Blade and The Shire

The response was fast.

And it was something they needed to gain.

Book 4-4.1

Retaliatory Blade and The Shire

The response was fast.

And it was something they needed to gain.

“I am planning on increasing the number of spies sent to the three tribes left in the north, as well as the Silence Empire. We will need a lot of supplies for it so please read it over and make a decision.”

Runa handed over the detailed file with the types of spies, their actions, and compensation to Yulian.

Yulian slowly read through the file as he asked.

“I didn’t know there were so many different types of spies.”

“There are quite a lot, but the ones we need are just two types. First, we need to bribe some nobles of the kingdom to become our eyes and ears. It has the lowest success rate and we need a lot of materials as a bribe even if it fails, but they would be the way to get the highly guarded information.”

“Will it be possible? All of our people will stand out in the continent. At the same time, we cannot use other people to do it for us.”

“That is why I plan on leaving this aspect to Edwin. Since he is a merchant, he should already have a connection with a lot of nobles. If he hides the fact that it is for Pareia and says he needs the highly guarded information for trading, even the nobles should not suspect him too much.”

Yulian nodded his head at Runa’s explanation.

“And the other?”

“It isn’t anything amazing, but we need to convert some of the

regular civilians. We won't get anything really important from them, but we can find things out like the flow of the public opinion as well as some still useful information."

"We can't ignore them. The highly guarded information is important, but the information from the civilians will be what we can quickly use."

"Yes. They can also be used to rile up the public or convince them of whatever we need them to do. If we plant them now and start giving them bribes, they should be able to play a decent role."

Yulian thought about it for a bit before starting to speak.

"We will need quite a lot of them."

"I have described everything in the report."

After listening to Runa, Yulian looked through the file before reading something and letting out a gasp.

"This, isn't this too many?"

"We are already starting late. We need to pour money at them for a year or two in order to convert them. If the Empire was in chaos, it would be easy to convert them since all they would have left is the money, but right now, we need to use about that much."

Yulian scratched his head as he stared at the numbers written on the file. They were never short for money after Runa made a deal with Edwin, however, he felt like this was a bit much.

"Amazing. Just amazing. You wrote down all of the different types of spies. Just where did you learn all of this?"

"I learned it from books. I also created a world in my head and thought through ways to create it and break it, as well as creating people and repeatedly killed them and brought them to life. Some of those thoughts may not be useful in battle, however, after repeating it for a long time, it helped me get rid of the holes in my theories."

Yulian looked toward Runa with awe before returning the file to Runa.

“Since it is an area I do not know a lot about, there is nothing else I can tell you.”

Seeing Yulian respond in a disappointed tone, Runa started to ask.

“Do you know what the differences between you and I are, Glow?”

Yulian thought about it for a moment before responding.

“What is the difference between us? Mm, I fight with my body while you fight with your head to effectively lead the warriors?”

Runa started to laugh as he answered.

“The Glow is the decision maker while I am the suggestion maker. No matter how great of a plan I come up with, all of it becomes useless if the Glow does not agree with it. Glow, you are already doing a difficult job by making the decisions.”

“What I am getting out of that is you telling me to just make the decisions.”

As Yulian half-jokingly grumbled, Runa smiled once before answering.

“Haha. If it is something I can make the decision for, I just report it to the glow. But creating spies, or building a castle, do you know why I make sure to get your approval before doing large projects like this?”

“I’m not sure. Because I am the Glow?”

Runa shook his head.

It is because I cannot make the decision. The strategist is someone who has a complicated mind and sees their suggestions from multiple perspective, including the enemy. We come up with tons of terrible plans. We need a solution for such situations as

well. However, in order to create the perfect plan, we put too much time into a single task.”

“Time.....”

“Furthermore, no matter how much time we spend to come up with a plan, there is bound to be a flaw in a plan made by a person. That is why there is no such thing as a perfect plan. That is why sometimes strategists end up focusing too much on creating a perfect plan that they are not able to offer any suggestions to their liege and end up just a scarecrow.”

“Don’t just bring up everything because you don’t want to be a scarecrow. Hahaha.”

“Hahaha. Do not worry. I’ve experienced being a scarecrow way too much in the past already. I do not want to do it anymore.”

The two of them laughed out loud for a while.

“Then I will proceed with these as described. Oh, and I heard an interesting story from Captain Thriger today.”

“What kind of story?”

“Do you know about the Shire tribe?”

“The small tribe in the Western Desert? I believe they have a small oasis near the quicksand river that serves as their base.”

“Yes, that Shire tribe.”

“What about them? You’re not planning on asking me to take over their oasis, are you?”

“You are correct. I hope that you can personally visit them.”

Yulian made an odd expression as he answered.

A small oasis does not help us in any way. What would be the point of taking over an oasis that can hold at max 500 people? That type of small oasis is present throughout the desert. They are reserved for travelers or lost warriors.”

“That’s how it is rumored. However, according to Captain Thriger, that oasis is not that small, and the tribe is over 1,000 people. The funny thing is that all 1,000 of them are shamans.”

“Shamans?”

“They received their help many times. Apparently they have a lot of incantations that are similar in effect to the magic of the continent.”

“Hmm, is that so?”

Yulian was surprised at this news that he heard for the first time and started to worry about what to do.

“Based on what I heard, they are people with amazing abilities. However, they are all gentle and do not like socializing with other people. That is why they just reside in that oasis. They don’t mind that their numbers are low.”

“How could they stay in the dark for so long when they have such amazing skills? The other tribes would have been tempted to take them as well.”

“It is probably because they have never stepped forward and there are no tribes with any interest in them as well.”

“And your thoughts?”

“Absorb them into Pareia.”

Runa quickly answered Yulian’s question.

“1,000 shamans.”

Yulian started to mumble with interest.

Shamans usually led the festivals, cured the sick and blessed the warriors heading outside, however, during times of war, they played a bigger role.

They could curse the enemies so that they become cowards while buffing the allies with incantations that raises their bravery. They

heal the injured while preventing the curses of the enemies from affecting their allies. That was the role of the shamans during times of war.

However, for the veteran shamans or Grand Shamans like Tuma Takaka that are rare in tribes, their role goes above and beyond all of that.

Grand Shaman Tuma Takaka was now old and Yulian could not force him to go to war, however, Yulian vividly remembered just what kind of abilities Tuma Takaka had.

Tuma Takaka was a shaman who could call the rain and storm as needed. He could make hundreds of warriors crumble down in pain with a single incantation.

One of the greatest reasons Pareia could withstand Venersis was the Grand Shaman Tuma Takaka.

He did not expect that much, but since it was not easy to raise a shaman, it would be great if the tribe could even have a couple veteran shamans.

“It should be okay.”

Yulian thought for a long time before nodding his head and making his decision.

Seeing Yulian nod his head, Runa chimed in.

“I think it would be best to consult Tuma Takaka-nim. Since it is a tribe of shamans, he might know of them.”

“I will do that.”

Yulian answered before heading out to go visit Tuma Takaka.

Book 4-4.2

“Tuma Takaka-nim.”

“Oh, Glow, you are here.”

Tuma Takaka was lying down but used a lot of effort to stand up when Yulian arrived.

“Please remain lying down, Tuma Takaka-nim.”

Yulian quickly ran over and helped Tuma Takaka lie back down. Tuma Takaka had aged significantly in the past few years.

He was pretty active even when he was past his seventies, the the flow of time would not leave this great shaman alone forever. It almost instantly made him an old man fitting his age.

“I’m sorry, Glow. This old body of mine will not listen to me anymore.”

“Don’t say that. Once my father passed away, the three of us brothers relied on you for everything. How could you say something so weak like that, Tuma Takaka-nim?”

“Kekeke. Old warriors, mm, I lived as a shaman, but I lived with the heart of a warrior.”

“I know. Tuma Takaka-nim truly was a warrior among warriors.”

Tuma Takaka smiled at Yulian’s words and started to speak.

“I at least did not fear war. I may look like a gentle pacifist, but I protect what I need to protect and take what I need to take. That is the nature of the people of the desert.”

Tuma Takaka’s voice went up as he seemed to be slightly excited after seeing Yulian for the first time in a while.

“You are right. That is how the people of the desert are.”

Yulian agreed with Tuma Takaka and raised his spirit.

“But I’m sure the busy Glow has a reason for coming to see me?”

“Haha. Seeing you put it that way makes me feel guilty. I should have visited Tuma Takaka-nim more frequently.”

Tuma Takaka lightly smiled as he answered.

“Glow, that is not what I meant. Please do not take this old man’s words to heart. Please speak. If it is something this Tuma Takaka knows about, I will gladly help.”

“To be honest with you, I came to ask about the Shire Tribe.”

Tuma Takaka had a slightly surprised expression as he asked.

“Who did you hear it from?”

“Captain Thriger said he has been helped by them a couple of times. I heard that everybody in the tribe is a shaman.”

Tuma Takaka contemplated for a bit at Yulian’s words before answering.

“It is my hometown. I am also originally from the Shire Tribe.”

“Tuma Takaka-nim was from there?”

“Yes. But I left my hometown after meeting the former former Glow Orisen-nim. Now that I think about it, I haven’t thought about them for a long time.”

Yulian, who had been gazing at Tuma Takaka’s wet eyes, started to speak.

“Would it be difficult for them to become part of our Pareia?”

“Mm.”

Tuma Takaka let out a moan at Yulian’s question. It would not be easy.

The Shire Tribe were sensitive about freedom more than anybody else. That was why they were the only desert tribe to not make any distinctions such as Glow or Greatest Warrior. They were each the Shire and valued their freedom.”

“It will not be easy.”

“That is why I came to visit Tuma Takaka-nim like this.”

Tuma Takaka let out another moan at Yulian’s answer.

“Mm. It’s possible if they choose Pareia on their own, however, there will be terrible things coming our way if we try to force them to become a part of us. The only advice I can give you is to throw away any thoughts about using force. They are very sensitive to freedom.”

“Hmm.....”

This time, it was Yulian’s turn to moan. He knew it would not be easy when he heard there were 1,000 shamans. However, seeing his trusted Tuma Takaka turn pale like this was beyond his expectation. He thought that Tuma Takaka and his wealth of knowledge would be able to come up with a method.

“They must be very amazing for even Tuma Takaka-nim to be worried.”

“It would not be difficult for you to use force to force them to join us. However, terrible things will continue to happen to the tribe afterwards. Their incantations are so strong that even if all of our Pareia’s shamans worked together, we would not be able to block all of them.”

“Is there no other method? Runa seems to want to use that as a base to fight against the Western desert.”

“Anywhere else is fine but please do not make that the base. It will be difficult to even do any construction there.”

“Why is that?”

“The place the Shire Tribe resides at is an old desert sanctuary. All of the older Glows knew about that fact, however, it has become forgotten as time passed by.”

“A sanctuary?”

As Yulian was shocked about this news and responded in shock, Tuma Takaka lightly bowed his head.

“I’m sorry I could not tell you, Glow. Only those who are fated to know are to be told about it and share the burden. In my opinion, it is better for the Glow to not know about it.”

“Mm, is that the only reason?”

Tuma Takaka shook his head.

“The people of the Shire will not like it. It will be very difficult until they choose to follow you on their own. If I am right, there should be a minimum of three people in the Shire that are around my level.”

“Similar to Tuma Takaka-nim?”

Yulian was very shocked. Tuma Takaka was probably one of the greatest Grand Shamans not just in Pareia, but in the entire desert. Even amongst them he was in first place by an overwhelming amount. But the Shire has at least three people at Tuma Takaka’s level? He couldn’t help but be shocked.

“A minimum of three. That was why even Yulian-nim’s grandfather Orisen-nim really wanted them to join Pareia as well but gave up in the end.”

“So that’s the case. Then when did Tuma Takaka-nim come to Pareia?”

Tuma Takaka answered.

“To be honest with you, I had been getting tired of the simple life of the Shire. It was then that I met Orisen-nim. He was an amazing person. I was still a young kid at the time and chose to follow him to Pareia.”

Tuma Takaka’s eyes glazed over a bit as if he was thinking about the past.

Yulian did not interrupt him and just quietly waited. Tuma

Takaka finally started to smile after a long time and started to speak.

“Oh my, this old man wasted the Glow’s precious time.”

“That is not the case. I am happy to learn about things I didn’t know about before. Tuma Takaka-nim, is there really no way at all?”

Tuma Takaka thought about it once more. After thinking about it, he suddenly thought of something.

“Glow, there is a legend that is passed down in the Shire Tribe. It is the legend of the savior who will gathered everyone’s will together and give freedom to all people.”

“The legend of a savior?”

“Yes. It is a prophecy that has been passed down from ancient times. Now that I think about it, I feel like the savior in the legend is very similar to Yulian-nim. If the Glow can prove to them that you are the savior, they will choose to follow Yulian-nim on their own.”

Yulian felt himself becoming interested and asked.

“How would I prove that I am the savior?”

“That is what was written in the prophecy; there were no details about it.”

“Then how would they recognize the savior?”

“The intuition of the shamans. I presume that is what it would be. I trust that there will be a test, however, since the elders of the Shire are wise, I trust that they will recognize Yulian-nim as the savior.”

Yulian started to smile at Tuma Takaka’s words and asked.

“Am I really someone fitting of an important title like savior?”

“The prophecy discussed information related to the desert. Right

now, is there anybody else in the desert who would fit that title more than Yulian-nim? Time, luck, and people. I don't think there will be any other time like this in the future. Furthermore, Yulian-nim is the one who broke the balance of power that had been commanding over the desert for many years."

"Mm."

"If Yulian-nim chooses to go, I will go with you."

"Tuma Takaka-nim will? No. Even if we take the ship, it will be a far distance."

As Yulian opposed, Tuma Takaka put on a comfortable smile as he answered.

"I do not know when I will die. I hope that I can serve Pareia and Yulian-nim even a little bit with this trip."

"Please do not say things like that. Words are sacred. That is what you told me, Tuma Takaka-nim."

"Keke, I am just thankful at the Glow's interest in my health. However, if the Glow is going, I must go with you. They are a very reserved tribe so it may be difficult to even run into them."

"Hmm, since you say they will be a large benefit to our tribe, I do believe I will need to go. With the unification of the Eastern desert not too far away, I feel like we would gain a lot if they choose to join us."

"Then we must go. Even if it is right now, we must go. Cough cough."

Tuma Takaka was coughing after being excited for the first time in a long time. Yulian became worried and patted Tuma Takaka's chest as he started to speak.

"Please do not overdo it, Tuma Takaka-nim. I will go to the Shire alone."

"Glow, I need to go."

Seeing Pareia's Grand Shaman and old warrior speaking so sternly, Yulian stared at him for a while before nodding his head.

"You must not push yourself too hard."

Once Yulian gave his approval, Tuma Takaka started to smile. This may perhaps be the last thing he does for Pareia in his life.

"You must not deploy warriors. Some warriors to protect you are fine, but we must make sure not to take many warriors. We need to make sure they do not think we are there to invade. Orisen-nim went with only 100 warriors when he went."

"Do not worry. I plan on only taking the Red Storm with me."

"When are you planning on heading over?"

"I will first discuss it with Runa and Grace as well as a couple of the oasis chiefs. However, I plan on leaving within the next month."

"Then I will expect us to leave in half a month. I will slowly start to prepare as well."

"I will say it once more. Please make sure not to push yourself too hard."

"Keke. Do not worry, Glow. This Tuma Takaka, I am still not dead yet."

Yulian shook his head.

"You never change."

Book 4-4.3

Even Shaone Fury Silence III, the Crown Prince of the Silence Empire who was known as the Ice Prince for always being cold, could not help his face from turning red after hearing the news.

Bang.

In the end, he could not hold back his anger and hit the table really hard. Something completely unexplainable had happened.

“And then?”

“Master and the S-grade assassins were killed on the spot and they let me go according to the promise.....”

“This... this unbelievable thing”

Shaone’s body started to shake.

It was a job that he expected his subordinate to easily complete and return. He had even prepared that official position that his subordinate had wanted for so long, but one of his best subordinates was killed without producing any results.

‘He was still someone who dedicated his life to me. Just that reason alone is enough to call it a loss.’

This subordinate had thrown away his pride as a master of a guild in order to keep the organization from falling apart for his benefit.

Thinking that to be the reason Master sent this man in front of him back even though he could no longer be an assassin, Shaone was full of emotions.

‘I want to get revenge for myself as well as for him. But isn’t this a really bad time for it right now?’

If Shaone took a bunch of troops and left the border, he would set Pareia’s first oasis on fire and release poison so that the oasis would not be usable for many years. That is what he wanted to do.

However, this was not a good time to do that.

The neighboring Rojini Kingdom had stationed all of their available troops on the border to the Silence Empire. In addition, Rojini's allies and its subservient kingdoms were sending reinforcements as well.

The Silence Empire was currently putting all of their troops in that direction as well. They were at a point where other than the minimum required to protect the city and the capital, the rest of the troops could not be moved.

Until now, there were really no good ideas other than using the assassin guild or mercenaries.

However, even with Master personally taking the S-grade assassins with him, he failed to assassinate a single person. So what else could he do?

Seeing Shaone contemplating, the man who reported the situation cautiously asked.

"I want to get revenge."

Shaone lifted up his head and sharply asked.

"How? You are going to succeed where Master failed? How would you do that?"

"We infiltrated successfully. Our plan was perfect as well. We only failed because three of the mercenaries protecting him were skilled enough to fight against Master one on one. Even if I cannot manage to kill them, we can cause damage to their tribe."

Shane started to lean in at the man's answer.

"Tell me your plan."

"Those bastards are building something right now. I can interrupt their construction."

He had heard that Pareia had started to build a castle from a spy. For them, the Silence would be the people who killed their parents.

Shaone knew about that fact but had no way to do anything right now. Pareia had started to build this castle at the worst possible time for the Silence Empire.

‘They were smart for being barbarians of the desert.’

That was what Shaone was thinking internally as he gestured the man to continue.

“We will not aim for the warriors. Instead, we will assassinate the construction workers one by one.”

“The workers... it should have a large impact.”

Shaone quickly understood what the man was trying to do. If you instill fear in the hearts of the workers, it would be easy to cause havoc.

Since they would not be assassinating any specific person, even if there were ten master-class warriors and not three, they would not be able to stop all of the assassins and the number of workers will slowly decrease. So wouldn't this be the most effective disruption plan? They didn't even need S-grade assassins. Even general assassins would be able to leave enough destruction with this plan.

Shaone wondered why he did not come up with such a simple plan on his own as he started to speak.

“Can you move the guild in Master's place?”

“That was the reason Master chose to send me back alive.”

“Mm.”

Shaone made a noise as he started to think about the man's answer before starting to speak again.

“Alright. I will give you the strength to do it. You might be in danger if you go back like this, so I will give you some protection. Cause as much chaos as you want. Calm Master's soul and make me happy.”

“I have received your command.”

“I am someone who believes in properly rewarding successes. Depending on how well you succeed, I will give you what I promised to give Master.”

The man's eyes started to sparkle. He remembered what his teacher and Guild Master had discussed in front of himself as well as the other S-grade assassins.

- We will now be able to proudly stand in the sun. We do not have to live in fear anymore while taking individual contracts for assassinations. We will be assassins hired by the Empire. It is for that reason that I put the fate of the guild and myself on the line. I would like for all of you to join me.

Nobody opposed the decision. The hope of going out into the sun. That alone was enough. Furthermore, the person that was offering it was someone who really had enough influence to truly lift the entire guild into the sun. As Master had described, Shaone was cruel and cold, but his words carried significant weight.

“I will put my body and soul on the line to complete this task and show my loyalty to you.”

Shaone just sat there looking through the files on the table as he had finished what he had to say.

“I was worried. What took you so long?”

Yulian asked Haisha, as well as the rest of the Red Storm, lead warriors, and shamans who returned separately from the rest of the brigade that was sent to protect Edwin.

The Red Storm cherished their personal time a lot, but they were all warriors who would always put orders above their own desires. That was why Yulian knew that something must have gone wrong for them to unexpectedly return late like this.

Once Haisha reported everything to Yulian, Yulian quickly started to ask while turning pale.

“So is Shubeon safe?”

Haisha looked toward the cart behind him and answered.

“He has not recovered all of his strength yet. The shamans have made him some medicine to eat. They say that he will slowly recover his strength.”

Yulian did not say anything else as he ran over to the cart and opened the door. A shabby looking Shubeon turned his head to look at Yulian.

“G...low.”

Shubeon called out to Yulian and tried to sit up, but his body was shaking and he could not put any strength into his arm.

“Shubeon, stay down.”

Yulian lightly pressed down on both of Shubeon’s shoulders as he told him to lay down. This put a bitter taste in Shubeon’s mouth.

“This is so embarrassing... I did not want to show myself like this in front of the Glow.....”

“I’m relieved knowing you have enough strength to joke around. Are your hurting anywhere?”

“No, I am fine. Other than this terrible feeling of having no strength in my body, I have no other problems. I don’t have any broken bones either.”

“I heard you were attacked while saving Edwin.”

“To be honest with you, he was not someone I could definitely beat in a 1 on 1 battle, Glow.”

As Shubeon honestly answered, Yulian started to smile as he responded.

“Either way, he is already dead. Just focus on getting better and do not push yourself for a while.”

Yulian patted Shubeon’s shoulder a couple of times before closing the cart door. He then quickly called Haisha and Thrint

over to ask.

“Where is it?”

He was asking who was behind the attack. Yulian looked to be very angry.

As the Glow, the life of a Red Storm member should be worth the same as the life of any other warrior. However, since Yulian was also human, he was angered at the fact that he almost lost another Red Storm member who he had worked so hard to develop and cherished so much.

“We could not get them to share that until the end. Maybe it was because we put Shubeon’s life as the top priority and let them send someone back for telling us where the antidote was.”

Yulian nodded his head at Thrint’s response and started to speak.

“That was the obvious and smart decision. We can always catch the enemy later on, but a warrior only has one life. Good work.”

“Glow.”

Edwin called out to Yulian.

“I am truly sorry that you lost Pareia’s valiant warriors and that Shubeon-nim ended up in danger because of me and my caravan.”

“No need to apologize. Protection was something Pareia had promised a long time ago. It was for Pareia’s benefit as well. Do not worry about it too much. Something like that would actually hurt the pride of our warriors.”

Edwin could not help but be sorry even after Yulian’s words. If something had really gone wrong, he would not be able to even lift his head up.

Haisha started to speak at that moment.

“Based on the size and strength of the assassins this time, I do not think they will give up so easily.”

“Just who is it?”

As Yulian started to mumble, Runa answered from his side.

“Isn’t there only one?”

“Hmm?”

“Desert warriors would never do anything so cowardly. If you think about it that way, it must be someone from the continent. Isn’t there only one power in the continent that would get in our Pareia’s way right now?”

“Silence?”

As Yulian, Haisha, and Thrint all answered at the same time, Runa nodded his head.

“They are the only possible answer. I’m sure they have heard that our Pareia is starting to get stronger. They knew they needed to start meddling in our affairs. After all, they also know of our people’s way of life, don’t they?”

“Of course. They know very well that we are grinding our teeth. They know that we will definitely get our revenge.”

Book 4-4.4

Yulian scrunched his face to hold back his anger as he spoke. Seeing Yulian being like this, Runa started to speak.

“They are guaranteed to have planted many moles in Pareia as well. That is how they would have found out that Edwin-nim was related to the changes we are going through and probably tried to get rid of Edwin-nim to cut off one of our pillars.”

“I am just a lowly merchant. Why would they think so highly of me?”

Listening to them say that he had suddenly become the target of the Silence Empire, Edwin started to speak in shock. Runa shook his head as he answered.

“What would happen if Edwin-nim was missing from our current operations? Edwin-nim currently has a large influence on Pareia. It would be a significant hit for us as well if Edwin-nim was assassinated.”

“The Silence was aiming for that.”

Once Yulian interjected, Runa finished his response.

“Yes. We must hurry as well. We need to install enough moles so we can see the movement of the Silence Empire on the palm of our hands.”

“Since I left that to you last time, take good care of it. Anyways, I need to leave for the Shire tomorrow, but I am not feeling very comfortable with leaving because of what happened.”

“We will need to increase patrol on the borders as well as the number of warriors on the construction site.”

“I guess I should leave the Red Storm here.”

As Yulian responded that he would increase the patrol warriors and leave the Red Storm at the construction site, Runa quickly

jumped up and down.

“You cannot do that. The most important thing is the Glow’s safety. I will personally go to the construction site.”

“Mm. If that is the case, take Greatest Warrior Egane and Pere with you. You are also a very important person.”

“I already have a plan in mind. The Glow can just go and safely complete the goal.”

“I will not be stubborn since I trust you.”

Yulian answered that way before asking Edwin a question.

“What if you reside in the desert for a while?”

“I cannot do that thinking about the people who will be waiting for me with their eyes wide open. I also need to keep delivering goods to Pareia so I think I should quickly return.”

Yulian nodded his head at Edwin’s answer and started to speak to Haisha.

“Haisha, you will not take part in my trip this time. Instead, please take 1,000 warriors and make sure Edwin reaches the border to his kingdom safely. You do know why I am saying this, right?”

Haisha immediately bowed his head and responded.

“I will do as the Glow instructed.”

Once everything was resolved, Yulian started to think about the Shire once again. He also started to think about the term ‘savior.’

He still didn’t think he deserved such a grand title. However, thinking about what Tuma Takaka had said, he felt like he would be able to safely absorb the members of the Shire into Pareia.

The night passes by and the dawn arrives.

Let the bell ring out loud.

Far far away, I see the yellow sand.

Toward the Land of Hope.

Raise the sails!

Follow the wind and let's cross through the sand~

Captain Thriger's fun and refreshing song was good to hear and helped raise the mood.

Nobody knew where the song came from, but Captain Thriger's love for this song was quite extensive. The song originally has two verses, but everybody was looking forward to the day Captain Thriger completed the third verse as he always claimed he would do.

"We are almost there, Glow."

Captain Thriger shouted loudly toward Yulian who was looking around from the deck. Once Yulian heard Captain Thriger, he started to look forward.

There seemed to be nothing out there except the desert sand. However, the Shire people who have lived in secrecy were supposedly right there.

Tuma Takaka started to mumble next to Yulian.

"They used an incantation to make it look like the desert. I presume that Captain Thriger received help right outside the entrance into the tribe. It is difficult for foreigners to enter the tribe itself. Orisen-nim was only able to enter after visiting four times."

"What is in their tribe for them to be so secretive?"

"I presume the Glow will be shocked at the scenery that does not look like the desert at all."

Yulian looked at Tuma Takaka with confusion at the answer before deciding that he would find out soon enough.

The Desert Runner #0 stopped at the edge of the quicksand river and quickly lowered the anchors. Once the ship had completely

stopped, they lowered the wooden ladder for Yulian and Red Storm to get off the ship.

“Please be safe Glow. We will be waiting over here.”

As Captain Thriger and the crew watched Yulian and the group off, Yulian started to smile as he answered.

“Since Tuma Takaka-nim has said it shouldn’t take too long whether it goes well or terrible, it shouldn’t be too long. Take some time to relax and go sand fishing or something.”

“Hehehe, for some reason, there are no monsters at all in this area. I presume the mysterious people here have done something to make that happen. Please have a successful trip.”

Yulian nodded his head before leading Tuma Takaka and the Red Storm forward.

“It’s been a long time since I walked the Path of Illusion.”

Tuma Takaka became nostalgic walking through the path to his hometown. He had not been here for fifty years. Seeing Tuma Takaka being like that, Yulian started to ask a question.

“Are you saying this whole road is an illusion?”

“Yes. Close your eyes, clear your mind and then take a step. You will understand what I am talking about.”

Hearing Tuma Takaka’s quiet voice, everyone closed their eyes as if they made a promise and started to control their breathing.

Bang.

As soon as they all lifted up a foot and took a step, Yulian and the Red Storm quickly opened their eyes and looked around at each other in shock.

Putting aside the fact that there was a ‘bang’ noise on the sandy ground, the ground itself was hard. It did not feel like sand.

“The whole path is made of stone. Shall I show you?”

Tuma Takaka looked around at Yulian and the Red Storm amusingly as he asked. Yulian, as well as everybody else, nodded their heads.

“If this was a weird incantation that affected a person’s senses, someone like the Glow or the Red Storm warriors who have strong mental fortitude would not have been affected. However, the incantation here is not just a trick; it is something that you cannot see unless you clear your heart.”

Tuma Takaka said that before lifting up his staff and lightly tapping on the ground.

Tap.

There was a small noise from the staff before the surroundings instantly changed. The ground that Yulian and Red Storm were walking on quickly changed to a road made of white stone, with odd looking stone monuments on the side. Each of the monuments seemed to be made of two long stones standing up with a large rock placed on top of them. It was so amazing as there was no way humans would have been able to lift up such a large rock and put it up there.

Boom. Boooooooooom. Boom. Boooooooooom. Boooooom.

The group started to hear the noise of a drum that was slowly approaching them. As the Red Storm members put their hands on their swords out of nervousness, Tuma Takaka quickly urged them to stop.

“They are only coming out because they are shocked to see the illusion being broken. Do not ever put your hand on your swords.”

As the Red Storm quickly took their hands off of their swords, they heard a clear but quiet voice.

“Hello esteemed guests. From where have you come?”

Even Yulian could not see the person as they were so far away. The person must be extremely skilled for them to be able to clearly

hear the person at this distance.

“It is a type of incantation. They must have realized that I broke the illusion and reaching out to figure out my identity.”

Tuma Takaka who had a good idea as to what Yulian was thinking after seeing his surprised expression started to speak. He then lifted up his staff.

“Pareia’s Glow Yulian Provoke-nim, his shaman and his warriors ask for your understanding for visiting the Shire without prior notice.”

“Who is the one that knows of our ancient incantation?”

Once they heard someone speak again, Yulian could see something moving far far away.

“My name is Tuma Takaka. At one point, I had been given the name of ‘New Person’ by the Shire.”

The approaching people did not say anything and just increased their speed toward them. The five men who were wearing black clothing which was not often worn by the desert people, approached Yulian’s group the instant the group felt like they could finally see the approaching people’s faces.

“The Desert Conqueror, War God of the Eastern Desert, Pareia’s Glow Yulian Provoke-nim’s great name has been spread to our Shire as well. It is our honor to meet a hero.”

As the youngest looking man of the group stepped forward and bowed to Yulian, the four behind him started to bow toward Yulian as well.

“You are praising me too much. It is my honor to meet the members of the Shire who are known as the hermits of the desert.”

Seeing Yulian modestly answer like that, the young man bowed once more before starting to speak to Tuma Takaka.

“The young Shire who left a long time ago. I finally get to meet

Tuma Takaka-nim who is now treated as an elder of the Shire.”

Tuma Takaka became slightly shocked hearing that he was treated as an elder of the Shire and asked.

“I left the Shire when I was young. Although I was born in the Shire, I ran away from that responsibility and followed my own will. How could someone like that become an elder?”

Tuma Takaka spoke respectfully to the man who seemed to be much younger than him.

Book 4-4.5

Age was not important in the Shire. What they focused on was how much skills and incantations abilities a person had in order to protect the Shire and the sanctuary that has been passed down through the generations. That was what determined your status in the Shire.

With the young man speaking as the representative of the group, you could tell that he had the highest status amongst the group even though he was the youngest.

“Grand Elder Shulmirutz-nim who has already returned to heaven told us something in the past. When Tuma Takaka-nim left with Orisen-nim, he mentioned that Tuma Takaka-nim acted according to your name. He said that you did not leave the Shire but left to fulfill your destiny. That was why Tuma Takaka-nim was approved as an elder of the Shire ten years ago.”

Seeing the young man speak his teacher’s name, Tuma Takaka closed his eyes and thought about his teacher. His teacher was very strict with his teachings as Tuma Takaka was being groomed to become the Grand Elder of the next generation.

“He said something like that?”

Tuma Takaka’s voice was shaking.

“Please enter. The Grand Elder knew that Pareia’s Glow would come looking for us soon. However, we did not expect Tuma Takaka-nim to come as well.”

The young man moved to the side and gestured with his hand to lead Yulian and the group.

After they followed the white stone road for a while, they saw an amazing view in front of them.

There were many towers built in the style of the continent throughout the area. There was also a castle that was not the

typical 5 meter tall castle, but one that was surrounded by one meter stone walls that were creating a giant circle.

Inside of the circle were buildings made of stone instead of paoes. This was definitely a sight that Yulian and the Red Storm had never seen before. Even in the continent, the buildings made of stone were reserved for small castles for nobles or temples. It was rare to find.

Furthermore, each of these houses were all elaborately constructed and looked very luxurious.

“I feel like I am in a different world.”

The young man simply smiled as Yulian spoke out in awe.

Tuma Takaka responded instead.

“This is a place that has existed together with the history of the desert. Truthfully speaking, it looks like it has existed long before the history of the desert, however, we do not have any records beyond that.”

Yulian nodded his head as he continued to admire the buildings.

“I’m sorry but you cannot take any metal items past this point. It is because of the ancient magic that is surrounding the village and hope that the Glow understands.”

Once they reached a point where the entrance to the village was visible, the young man respectfully informed Yulian. Yulian looked toward Tuma Takaka.

“Now you should know why I said this place cannot serve as a base and could be a danger for even a strong tribe like Pareia. The Shire is a place that is protected by magic and incantations that have existed from a long time ago.”

Tuma Takaka said that to Yulian as he first took out different metallic items from his chest and put it on the ground. Yulian also put his greatsword and a sosoonta that was hidden at his chest on

the ground.

Even the Red Storm who were showing signs of opposing the young man's words put their greatswords down on the ground. They did not like it, but seeing Yulian and Tuma Takaka stepping forward and dropping their weapons, they followed suit.

"Thank you, Glow."

"I need to follow the laws of the Shire since I have come as a guest."

As Yulian smiled and responded to the young man's words, the young man lightly smiled before bowing his head and motioned to his group once more.

The five members of the Shire started to move and Yulian and the Red Storm noticed their surroundings starting to spin. Yulian was thinking that it was odd when Tuma Takaka started to whisper next to him.

"That entrance is a trap. Until those white stonewalls are broken down, you can only move in and out through incantations."

"This place is hard to figure out."

"Even the Shire do not know all of the secrets of this place. They just know they have the mission of protecting it."

"Just what are they protecting?"

"It is exactly as it says. The Shire land. The things that are here as well as the secrets and legends that have been passed down through generations."

Yulian smiled at the confusing words and started to speak.

"Haha, It seems like a story out of a book."

"Everything before the truth or reality is all just a fantasy from books."

It seemed to be kind of a serious story, but Tuma Takaka did not

give Yulian any time to think as he continued to speak.

“Glow, please do not worry about the complicated things and just focus on your goal. If you show an unwavering will regardless of what happens, everything will work out well.”

“I understand.”

Their surroundings started to become blurry right around the time the two of their conversation was coming to an end. Yulian was used to this sensation. It was the same feeling he had when he touched the magic circle in the underground dungeon in the Monster’s Desert.

The moment he closed his eyes and opened them back up, Yulian and the Red Storm were already inside the Shire. Once he blinked once more, there was a woman wearing a light purple silk outfit.

“Welcome to the Shire, Yulian-nim, Tuma Takaka-nim, and the Red Storm warriors.”

The woman, who had eyes shining brighter than the fireflies in the night sky, had purple hair that flowed down like a waterfall down to her hips. The tall woman who seemed to be at least 170cm tall, spoke in a voice that made you feel relaxed as she bowed her head at Yulian and the group.

The desert suns were shining down ruthlessly hot rays. There were many workers moving large pieces of stone underneath it. The masons were busy hammering away at the rocks to make them into the right sizes.

Some of the site managers were shouting loudly as they were getting verbal about each other’s work. The construction master that Edwin worked so hard to bring over was running around endlessly with the blueprint in his hand to talk to the site managers, stop people who were fighting, and give commands to keep the construction going.

This construction was harder than any other construction in the

continent. Even with Pareia's shamans using incantations to change the weather every day, there was a limit to how much humans could do to lower the heat in the desert.

However, they promised better wages than any other job. The person to make the contract with them was also not a noble but the Serubil Merchant Guild which had a great reputation so they didn't need to worry about not getting paid for their work. Thanks to that, the workers were able to persevere through the heat and continue their work.

"Mm. I'm looking forward to how grand it will be when it is completed."

Grace looked around at the construction site before speaking to Runa.

"I plan on making it quite large. If it was just the Silence we were going after, we would just need a couple fortresses and storage, but our goal is not just the Silence Empire."

"Every so often, the Glow says something like this."

Runa asked with curiosity.

"What does he say?"

"He wishes he could dissect the inside of your head. He wants to figure out how you can come up with so many ideas and the ways to make them a reality."

"You are praising me too much. I actually think the Glow-nim is more amazing. Even if you took away Yulian-nim's strength, he would still have his natural abilities to lead."

"The Glow would enjoy hearing that. Hohoho."

Grace started to laugh as she continued to speak.

"But please pay some attention to Aileen. I heard you haven't gone home at all lately."

"I have a lot of work to do...but i am planning on taking a short

break after we get through the initial phase of building this castle.”

“You don’t know how happy Aileen was to catch Runa-nim’s attention. Especially to be your first wife. You need to quickly have a kid and take in a second wife as well.”

Runa started to blush a bit as he responded.

“I will start to think about that once a lot of things start to settle down.”

“Omo, if the Assistant Warrior that the Glow trusts says something like that, you will be hated by the other warriors. The Glow will also be disappointed and of course I would be disappointed as well.”

“That’s not what I meant.....”

Seeing Runa start to get nervous, Grace started to smile internally. He was a genius but he was just as innocent in certain ways as well.

“It will start to get dark soon. Grace-nim should start heading in now. And tomorrow, you must return to the large oasis.

Runa wanted to get away from Grace as soon as possible. Seeing Runa pretty much pushing her away, Grace lightly waved her hand and headed into the paoe.

‘I don’t know what to do with her. But I guess if it wasn’t for that personality, she wouldn’t be able to handle the responsibilities of being the mother of a tribe at that age.’

Runa thought that to himself as he decided to meet with the master one more time before heading into his paoe and headed over.

Book 4-4.6

The busy construction site was empty other than the Pareia warriors patrolling it. The construction in the desert was so tiring that if you did not get enough rest at night, it would impact your efficiency the next day.

Everybody had gone to sleep to prepare for the next day. Other than the moonlight and couple bonfires nearby, there was no other light over the construction site. It was at this time that a group of people were stealthily approaching while avoiding the sharp gazes of the patrol warriors.

“We need to instill as much fear as we can today. The security will get stronger and stronger as time goes by.”

As the man in the lead warned the black-clad men behind him, they all nodded their heads instead of responding.

“We will separate here. I trust that you will all do a good job. Don’t forget that Master has said we will be paid based on our merits. Losing to other brigades will hurt the pride of our Claw Brigade.”

The black-clad men nodded their heads to say that was obvious. The mission consisted of four brigades attacking from the North, South, East, and West. And the Master said he will pay the brigades based on merit.

The most skilled of these four brigades was this Claw brigade made of twenty A-grade Assassins. They had less members than the brigades attacking from the other three directions, however, in their world, fame was very important. Thanks to that, if they managed to achieve greater merit than the other brigades, some of the assassins from the other brigades may crawl over to join them.

In addition, there was also the revenge of the Eastern Continent’s greatest Assassin Guild the ‘Black Knife’ on the line with this

mission. That was why the members of the Claw felt a sense of excitement as well.

At the man's order, the assassins started to quietly enter the paoes where the workers resided.

It took them a while to completely sneak into the paoes as the patrol warriors were being very careful with their duty to the point that the assassins felt a sense of burden. But they were A-grade assassins. Unless someone was completely focused on protecting the paoe, it would be difficult to spot them.

The assassins could finally start to complete their mission. The workers said goodbye to this world without letting out a peep thanks to the assassins' daggers.

As they had been ambushing the workers, a loud noise of a drum started to echo around five minutes later.

Boom. Boom.

Pareia's warriors jumped up out of their paoes and put on their gears. The sound of the drum signified that enemies have invaded. Many warriors gathered with the veteran and lead warriors in less than five minutes before directly heading over to the construction site.

"Shit."

The leader of the Claw started to curse. The brigade that attacked from the north was discovered even before they finished infiltrating the camp.

He felt like they would have been able to achieve more if the Claw was the only brigade to attempt this mission. He put a wooden flute the size of a fingernail into his mouth and let out a long noise.

TwEEEEEEEEEEEEEEt—

It was so low that it was almost impossible to hear, but for the

trained assassins, this was like the sound of thunder.

All of the members of the Claw stopped their actions and started to escape from the paoes. They needed to escape as quickly as possible as the patrol warriors were already heading in their direction.

They had been trained over and over before coming out here. They were trained to not treat the barbarians of the desert like the soldiers of the continent. They were also told to never think of taking on these warriors 1 on 1, even if they were A-grade assassins.

The sound of many assassins shouting out loud could be heard less than five minutes after the leader of the Claw blew his flute.

It was an unbelievably fast response.

“You damn trash who don’t know how to fight fairly dare to.....”

Pere let out his anger as he rushed his pirma toward the escaping black-clad men and stabbed them to death.

Yes, Pere was the warrior in charge of the three thousand warriors residing at the construction site.

Pere had already heard from Runa, who had come together with Grace, to be very cautious.

Runa had told Pere about how Shubeon almost died from the assassins of the continent, as well as how Thrint killed the Master of the assassins. Runa warned that there may be retaliation.

That was why he had increased the number of patrol warriors as if they were at war, and trained them to respond quickly in case of an enemy attack. Even still, close to 100 workers were hit. Pere became extra angry at the fact that the damage could have been much worse if he had not prepared in advance.

“Kill them all. We already know who the enemy is and do not need to think about getting any prisoners. Just kill as many of them as fast as possible.”

Pere shouted out loud as he ran amok left and right.

One of the Claw's assassins looked toward Pere as he retreated. He could clearly tell that this barbarian was the leader of the warriors.

‘If I kill that bastard, it will make it easier to move in the future. I will also gain a lot of fame.’

The assassin thought like that as he lowered his body as much as possible and shielded his body with his camouflage cape.

With only the moonlight and some bonfires to light up the night, the assassin was almost impossible to see once he covered his body up like that.

It did not take long for the barbarian to approach the location. In fact, it was so fast that the assassin did not even have time to calm his breathing. However, for an A-grade assassin like himself, killing an enemy who was caught off guard because of the camouflage was like taking candy from a baby.

The assassin confidently kicked the ground and jumped up toward Pere and flung his dagger toward Pere's neck.

“Hmph!”

Pere shouted out in contempt as he blocked the flying dagger with his shamshir. He had debated catching it with his hand, but did not do so as he was warned about their daggers being coated in poison.

“Disappointing. You thought you could get me with something like this?”

Pere was someone who had an even sharper intuition than Yulian on a normal basis. Even without that intuition, there were less than five individuals in the entire desert who could trick Pere's eyes.

Pere had so much strength that if his older brother Yulian was

not there, Pere would have easily gotten the title of War God of the Eastern Desert. So for an assassin to camouflage himself and throw a dagger at Pere? That was not even funny.

The assassin gasped and tried to run away, but fell down in place without being able to move a single step. In his back was a sosoonta that was stabbed so deeply that you couldn't even see the blade anymore.

“Do not let a single one of them live.”

Pere did not care whether the sosoonta he threw hit or missed the enemy. He started to shout again while riding through the site again.

Book 4-4.7

The moon disappeared and the sun started to rise over the sands that had turned cold through the night.

This was usually the time everybody energetically prepared to start their day, however, everyone seemed to have heavy expressions today.

If you took a closer look, you would be able to see the fear that was hidden in the faces of the workers. There was also a sense of relief that they were able to see the morning sun.

Some of the people were even packing their stuff and preparing to return to the continent. They liked making the money, but they did not want [to die in the middle of the night without even the mice or the birds knowing](#).

The on-site managers of the Serubil Merchant Guild promised their safety and told them they would increase their wages due to the danger, however, nobody could stop the workers from running away.

Pareia's warriors even told them they will have 2,000 guard at night, however, even that had no effect.

The number of people dying fell significantly since the first day with only two or three people dying every night now, however, there was no guarantee that they would not be one of those two or three people killed.

With many leaving and even the remaining workers losing their efficiency, the castle building plans were significantly dented.

“Mm, the situation is worse than I thought.”

As Runa let out a groan and started to mumble, Pere was embarrassed. At first, he was confident that taking care of weaklings who did not even fight fairly would be easy. However, even if they remained fully alert all night, a couple of workers still

ended up dying every night. It was frustrating.

Pere responded in a weak voice.

“I’m sorry. I just can’t figure out how they are coming in.”

“Do not worry about it. It is my fault for not being able to come up with a proper response. Assassins from the continent were not a part of my plans.”

Runa started to frown as if it was his fault.

Runa was a genius who enjoyed creating a perfect plan and then seeing everything run the way he expected it to go. He didn’t have the power to control the minds of others, however, he was pretty good at leading people to the direction he wanted them to go or in a way that he could anticipate their future actions.

Just like many other genii react to a crack in their plan, Runa also became nervous and short-tempered when things forced him to change his plans.

This castle construction was started even though things were not exactly how Runa had wanted it to be, however, assassins were not part of any scenarios Runa foresaw getting in their way. The closest thing to it would be moles from the continent.

Runa started to think about all sorts of different scenarios since the day after the first assassinations, however, even after spending the majority of his time trying to come up with a response, he could not find a good solution.

The assassins who showed up at night were less than ten total. They all approached from different directions and attacked at the same time. Even if some of them were caught, at least one was able to assassinate some of the workers to instill the fear. They were only able to figure that out by managing to catch some of the assassins trying to stealthily enter from different directions.

Apparently there were about 500 assassins, so even if they caught 10 a day, it would go on for 50 days. But if assassinations like this

continued to happen every night, all of the workers would leave before the month was up.

“What if we brought some warriors from each of the oasis to strengthen the protection of this location a little more?”

Pere thought hard for a while before asking but Runa shook his head.

“It would be a big hit on Pareia’s fame if it gets out that we sought reinforcements because we could not take care of 500 enemies. We are a tribe that will eventually unify the desert. We cannot have anything affect our fame.”

“Life is more important than fame. Furthermore, the construction will have to be halted if it continues like this.”

Pere was in charge of the warriors, however, Runa was in charge of the construction. Pere needed Runa’s permission to increase the amount of warriors or really do anything. That was why Pere was consistently asking Runa to increase the number of warriors.

“Let me think about it for a few more days before making a decision. It is not yet time.”

As Runa rejected his request once again, Pere let out a sigh internally and nodded his head. If his brother was here, he would definitely have put the lives of the people first, however, Runa cared more about the greater gain.

‘I’m sure he’s doing well.’

Pere suddenly thought about Yulian.

There was a person mumbling nonstop inside the paoe. The words that he seemed to be familiar with were being spoken in rhythm while his hand was moving around as if he was drawing something in the air.

A moment later, a shiny powder started to fall from his hand.

“I call upon...thee...the falling flower...petal.....”

The young man suddenly started to stumble across his words.

“Like a flower petal...the stars...in the night sky.....”

The young man continued to stumble over his words before the shiny powder disappeared from his hands.

“This is always where I run into issues.”

The young man was stuck at the same spot for the last few days. He slammed the book onto the table with anger before glaring into it again.

There were a lot of books in the young man's paoe. There were a lot of books from the continent because his father and his older brothers all were avid readers. There were even scrolls from the tribe's ancestors who wrote down their personal experiences before their death.

He even had some ancient books that he did not even know where they originated from. It was one of these ancient books that caught the young man's attention. It was a book left by a man named Cecil.

This book, which seemed to be an autobiography, explained the magic that was used in the desert. He only attempted it out of curiosity in the beginning, however, seeing that it had a different type of effect than the incantations he had been learning, he decided to focus on these magic spells.

“Isn't this a completely impossible spell? There is no way you can borrow the great strength of nature to make it rain large boulders.”

The young man was grumbling, but he couldn't help but feel an odd type of charm from these spells. All of the other spells he had attempted so far had worked, so there was no way just this one was a fake.

“Tsk.”

The young man clicked his tongue before picking the book back up.

“Let’s see if you win or I win. I have quite a bit of time right now. If I can learn how to use you properly, I will instantly become famous.”

The young man opened the book again and started to research the area that he kept getting tongue-tied by repeating that section over and over again.

End of Chapter.

Next up:

The Will of the Savior

- If you speak, you’ll die

It is based on the Korean saying that says to be careful about what you say because the birds hear the things you say during the day and the mice hear the things you say during the night. So in this case, it is talking about dying so secretly that even the birds and mice won’t know

Book 4-5.1

The Will of the Savior

- If you speak, you'll die

“Who are you?”

Yulian could subconsciously feel his heart beating as he reflexively asked.

“I am the Grand Elder of the Shire, the ‘Fragrance in the Air,’ Violet. Welcome.”

Yulian, the Red Storm, and even Tuma Takaka was shocked at the fact that the woman in front of them was the Grand Elder and leader of the Shire.

The woman who revealed her name to be Violet continued to speak.

“Starting from now, Tuma Takaka-nim as well as the Red Storm warriors must not speak. Could Yulian-nim make a promise regarding this aspect?”

Everybody closed their mouths tightly as if they were about to sneeze. Once Yulian nodded his head, Violet started to speak again.

“From now, the only people who can talk in the Shire are Yulian-nim and myself. Only the two of us. Yulian-nim, you came to prove that you are the Savior, correct?”

“Rather than saying that was the reason, it was more the desire that it would be great if the Shire would join our Pareia.”

“That is impossible. The Shire is a tribe tied to their laws. If you desire to draw us in, you need to become the savior. Nobody other than the savior can give us orders of any kind.”

Yulian stood up tall at Violet’s stern words and answered.

“If that is the case, I will take the test.”

“Great. The test is simple. Yulian-nim just needs to show us his will.”

“How so?”

“Inside the Shire we have 1,000 shamans and their 4,000 family members. Yulian-nim has less than 50 people in your group, am I right?”

Yulian took a look at Red Storm and Tuma Takaka before answering, even though he already knew how many of them there were.

“Yes.”

“Everybody has entered into silence now. I have already told the people of the Shire before coming out here.”

“You knew that I would accept the request?”

“Of course. Yulian-nim would not have come here if he did not have that type of desire.”

“That is true.”

“In the Shire, it is best to not say useless words.”

“I will keep that in mind.”

“Then I will explain the rules to you. Everybody will be living their lives in Silence. If one of the people of the Shire speak, it will confirm that Yulian-nim is the savior. If Tuma Takaka-nim or any of the warrior-nims speak, then Yulian-nim just forget about the Shire and return to your tribe.”

Yulian was flabbergasted. He could not understand how they could test his will based on which side speaks.

“Is that it?”

“Yes. That is it. The duration of it is until one side speaks. However, if someone on either side speaks, the competition can continue if you kill that person. Do you understand what I mean?”

Violet was saying things that did not fit her beauty without any issues.

“You mean.....”

“Yes, if someone from the Shire speaks, I will personally kill that person to continue to competition, while if one of the warrior-nims speak, Yulian-nim can either give up or personally kill that warrior to continue this Savior’s Test.”

“It does not seem like a good method.”

Violet responded to the statement Yulian made while scrunching up his face.

“The Savior’s Test is definitely not easy. If someone from the Shire opens their mouth and they all die, Yulian-nim will automatically become the savior, while if all of the warrior-nims end up dying, Yulian-nim will just need to return like that.”

“Is there no other method?”

“There is not.”

Seeing Violet sternly respond even without thinking, Yulian subconsciously started to clench his fist.

“Fine. WE will do as you said. Our warriors have heavy lips.”

“The people of the Shire do not say any useless words. They also have no problem not saying anything for the right reasons.”

Maybe Violet was very competitive or she just wanted to play along with Yulian, but that was how Violet had responded to Yulian’s statement. That was a proclamation that she had no intentions of accepting Yulian as the savior.

Yulian decided that he needed to change first. He needed to imagine that the Red Storm did not exist. If he accidentally called out one of their names, they might respond out of reflex and that would be a big problem.

Yulian and the Red Storm were given residences and spent their

first night in the Shire. They should have slept well since they were all tired from not being able to sleep much traveling on a ship, but they were not able to do so.

Humans tend to make mistakes regardless of their will. That was why even the Red Storm who had very strong wills had to be cautious and even more cautious.

In order to be cautious, all of the Storm warriors chose to bite down on a candle as they went to sleep and took turns standing guard as if they were out training. There was no way they could sleep peacefully while being on the alert like that.

Once morning came to the Shire, the majority of the warriors opened their eyes on their own and woke up the rest of the warriors who finally managed to fall asleep around dawn while making sure to cover their mouths first.

Yulian was not happy seeing the tired faces of the warriors. Other people may not be able to tell the difference, but Yulian would not miss it. They all seemed to be extremely nervous. Seeing the warriors look like this when they were not at war was never good.

“Did you get a good night’s rest?”

As Violet approached from far away asking about the night, Yulian answered bluntly.

“There is no way they could relax well.”

“You seem to be very angry from the early morning.”

“I am not angry, but it is true that I am not very happy.”

“You’ll get used to it pretty soon. Everybody, please come with me. It is time for breakfast.”

Violet responded with a stoic expression before guiding them to breakfast.

The place she guided Yulian and the Red Storm to was a garden in front of a large building. It was covered in grass which was

almost impossible to see in the desert, and there were also many different flowers with complicated patterns. In the middle of the garden was a giant tree that did not seem to fit in with the rest of the garden

When they got there, there were already many young and beautiful women who had placed long pieces of light yellow silk down on the ground and filled it up with plates full of payanats.

They then disappeared before returning with vegetables and fruits that were not usually seen in the desert. After that, they finally sat down.

“The food of the Shire have divine power inside of them. Even each and every one of the payanats are blessed. The priests of the Shire will personally prepare them for you, so please take a seat.”

Yulian motioned for the Red Storm to sit down before going over to sit down with them.

Once everyone sat down, the women moved their hands quickly to divide the payanat, vegetables, and fruit to each of the warriors.

Everybody started to eat in silence. As Violet mentioned, although it was the same payanat that they ate everyday, the taste was very different. The payanat tasted as sweet as honey.

Violet did not touch the payanat and just ate one of the yellow fruits as she started to speak.

“Today, I will take you on a tour of the Shire. There are buildings and artwork as old as the history of the desert. If you want, I could let you even read some of the books. However, since they are all written in the forgotten language of the ancient continent, you will not be able to read most of them.”

“I guess I have no reason to say no.”

Yulian answered like that before taking a bunch of vegetables and putting it in his mouth.

‘They were said to be a tribe that loved their freedom, but they are conducting such a brutal test. I didn’t understand why the prominent shamans did those silent meditations, but now that I think about it, it really must be hell.’

Yulian took a look at the Red Storm warriors who were not even breathing heavily before focusing on eating once more.

He decided that since he overcame all other difficult obstacles, he would just treat this as another type of training. He felt like if he considered this a type of meditation training, it would make the pressure of this silence a little less burdensome.

“It is meditation training.”

The Red Storm immediately understood what Yulian was saying and nodded their heads.

Book 4-5.2

Once everybody finished eating breakfast, Violet led Yulian and the completely silent Red Storm to the different buildings of the Shire.

The temple where they can gather to pray and the steps for the religious rituals were the most interesting. Pareia had a strong religious belief for their guardian Neo Latin, but they did not have a temple for praying to him.

They just prayed on their on inside their paoes. That was the extent of Pareia's religious rituals for their guardian.

However, Violet showed them the temple, as well as the rituals they conducted. She also started to explain the different prayer methods for certain occasions.

“This is one of the traditions that have been passed down for generations. We use this to receive a message from the God in the heavens. To be honest with you, the many tribes of the desert have received the Lord's word in different ways.”

Violet looked at Yulian with a disappointed expression as she continued to speak.

“But as time went by, all of those methods disappeared. Only a few Grand Shamans of the tribes barely managed to remember those basics. At this point, I think us here at the Shire might be the only ones who still remember.”

“So that's how it is. Would it be okay for our Pareia's shamans to come learn those methods as well?”

“Tuma Takaka-nim also knows of those methods. However, you need a lot of things to properly offer up your prayers. An altar, offerings. As you saw for yourself, it will be difficult to make something like this with the fortress construction methods.”

After answering Yulian's question, Violet looked toward Tuma

Takaka and started to speak.

“Pareia shouldn’t have any problems because Tuma Takaka-nim is there, right Tuma Takaka-nim?”

Tuma Takaka smiled brightly as he opened his mouth. He then put his hand in the air and started to wave it around.

...It would be difficult anywhere else than the Shire. Also, please do not try to make me speak. You need to play fair, Miss Violet, Grand Elder of the Shire

The rest of them finally figured out what Tuma Takaka was writing and started to look toward Violet.

The Red Storm started to glare at her thinking that if she suddenly asked them a question in the middle of a conversation, they would subconsciously respond. As warriors, they hated people who used such detestable tactics.

“I am not a warrior. Furthermore, this is a test of will. If you are not completely prepared, you cannot become the savior. The savior is someone who can survive the hardest of tests, so as a member of the Shire, I will use any and all methods to test him.”

Violet casually answered, as if she had read their minds, before starting to walk again. The Red Storm warriors were cursing internally as they followed behind her.

The next place Violet took them to was an open area with a large picture on the ground.

All of the Shire was covered with white stone roads, however, just this location had a red ground with purple lines.

The purple lines were drawn on top of the picture, however, they were so transparent that it did not impact the visibility of the image itself. Yulian and the Red Storm warriors were able to get a clear look at the picture.

The picture itself was one that the desert warriors would like.

The picture depicted stories of many warriors. There were some stories they knew about, as well as some that they did not know about.

There was a drawing of a well-known story that even children knew about, where the ancient desert warrior defeated the terrible underground Parvinon. There was also a picture of the desert's hidden hero Madland which was either depicting that he gave his own life to prevent a war or took a shamshir to his own neck in front of a lot of people. The pictures were drawn extremely detailed and realistically.

“I’m sure you already know about this desert hero. The reason ancient warriors were able to leave their tribes and become a hero to the people was because the desert was a unified tribe at that time. But that became divided at some point and turned into the current desert.”

Violet bitterly looked toward the picture before continuing to speak.

“I don’t think a hero like Madland was born during the division of the tribes. If a hero like that was born, the desert probably would not have become divided like this, a lot of traditions would not have disappeared, and our Shire that held the command of the pontiff would not have had to isolate ourselves while waiting for the savior.”

All sorts of stories came out of Violet’s mouth.

It was true that a lot of the desert’s history was lost when the tribe became divided. Everyone knew that they were one tribe far in the past, however, that was about it. Since all of the records disappeared when the tribe was divided, the only history they had now showed the history starting from the moment the desert was already called the Red Desert.

“I feel like it is a story I need to pay attention to. Could you tell me more?”

As Yulian asked Violet for everyone's sake, Violet pointed to the area and started to respond.

"This area is called the Hero's Land. It is the location where many of the desert's warriors are resting. The red ground represents 'things you need to protect even at the cost of your own blood,' while the purple lines represent the souls of the warriors who are still working hard to continue fighting."

"What do you mean they are still working hard to continue fighting?"

"As I said, those heroes are still fighting for the desert and their descendants."

"Didn't all of the warriors return to the ground? All warriors return to the Lord's embrace after death....."

Violet cut into Yulian's shocked response as she continued.

"The warriors went to the Warrior's Land, however, the heroes are still fighting the battle in the Hero's Land. The most important task for our Shire is to protect this Hero's Land."

"Ah!"

"There are 1,000 shamans in the Shire. However, that is enough to defend against all of the tribes in the desert."

Yulian and the Red Storm all frowned at Violet's confident proclamation, but Violet did not even blink. It was up to them to accept the truth or not accept the truth.

"But the reason we do not leave the Shire is because we have our hands full just protecting the Hero's Land. The moment that is broken, the desert will become a place where people can no longer survive."

Everyone's jaws dropped at Violet's words.

Half a month passed by without them being unable to do anything.

The morale of the workers were currently at rock bottom, and the construction was not making much progress.

The number of workers who returned to the large oasis was reaching close to half..

“Let’s bring in some more warriors. Even if it hinders our other plans or makes the other tribes mock us, we cannot let it continue like this.”

Pere could not hold it in anymore and started to speak as soon as he entered Runa’s paoe.

Runa raised his extremely red eyes at that moment and greeted Pere.

“Pere-nim, you’re here.”

“Assistant warrior!”

Pere quickly ran over to Runa who was falling to the side while shouting out loud.

“Warrior outside, bring a shaman over!”

“That’s okay. I am just feeling weak because I am tired.”

Runa quickly put his hand on Pere’s arm as Pere shook his head in disbelief before putting Runa on a chair.

“Just how many days have you not slept for?”

Runa lightly smiled as if he did not even have the strength to smile properly and answered.

“Sigh, I only stayed up for three days straight but my body does not seem to want to hold up.”

“You stayed up for three days? Even I would be weak after not sleeping for that long!”

As Pere shook his head, Runa started to smile again.

“When I was in the Wikaly, there was a time I could not sleep for a weak in order to defend against the Glow. I was able to last back

then, but lately, maybe my body has become weak as my consciousness seems to be cloudy.”

“You really are amazing. Rest a bit first. You will suffer for the rest of your life if you ruin your body like this.”

“I guess I should get some sleep. But I need to complete some things first. I’m glad you’re here as I was thinking about going to see you right now, Pere-nim.”

“Sleep a bit first before you speak.”

Runa shook his head at Pere’s concern.

“No. I need to tell you now.”

“Just what is it that you are so rushed?”

“How to catch those damn assassins of course. We were overthinking the whole thing. It was so easy!”

Pere’s eyes started to shine at Runa’s words.

“What is the method?”

“It’s pretty simple. So.....”

“Mm~”

Pere debated whether it would work as it seemed to be so simple, however, Pere decided to follow along as Runa must have thought about it quite a bit and simulated it in his mind for the last three days.

Book 4-5.3

“A long time ago, there were no righteous people that the heavens rained down a terrible flood to wash all of the world’s sins away. This hole that can twist the world is what was given to us as a warning.”

Violet had a serious expression on her face as she explained what the Hero’s Land was currently defending.

“The heroes in the Hero’s Land were all people who left this world on their own volition. They knew about the existence of this hole and sought to help defend the world from destruction with their souls. But something else had already sealed it already.”

The things that Violet just said were a shock to both Yulian and the Red Storm. Only Tuma Takaka was better off as he heard this scary story once more after first hearing of it as a child.

“However, there was something else that they were able to find out. It was the key to this hole. That key was a bomb that could destroy the seal at any time and completely twist the world.”

Violet put her hand in the air and spun around one time before continuing to speak.

“The souls that reside here had to protect it. Whether it was the hole or the key to the hole, all of it was the will of heaven, however, they thought that no matter what it was, the lifeforms living in the world had to defend against it. It was a sense of humans needed to take responsibility for the actions of their kind, even if it was in the ancient past.”

“What does it mean that the world will become twisted?”

Yulian suddenly recalled something he had heard before and asked Violet. Violet looked toward Yulian as she answered.

“It is a twisting of the world as it stated. Whether there will be natural disasters or new plagues that humans have no knowledge

about, something will happen to lead the world toward the brink of destruction. It will be similar to the ancient land that was destroyed by the great flood.”

The Red Storm warriors almost let out a shout due to their curiosity.

‘Then we should destroy it, why are you protecting it?!’

But the Red Storm held back and Yulian spoke on everyone’s behalf.

“I have heard a similar story before. However, I just decided to accept it as is because I thought it did not have anything to do with me.”

“You heard a story like this?”

Violet asked in shock as she did not expect Yulian to have heard about such a thing. Yulian nodded his head and responded.

“Yes, the ancient continent that Violet-nim spoke of, I have been there. I visited a place called the Magic Tower that was tall enough to pierce through the heavens.”

“My goodness.”

Violet let out a sound of astonishment as her jaws dropped. That was what she was taught and accepted as the truth, that was why she was working very hard to get used to this boring and completely dull lifestyle.

‘He is definitely talking about the Tower of Haughtiness in the destroyed continent. That tower that those fools who wanted to fight against the Lord built to attack the heavens.’

Violet knew the truth, however, she did not know where the ancient continent or even the Tower of Haughtiness was located. That was why she was shocked to hear that Yulian had personally visited and spoke with someone at the tower.

“The old granny who was the master of the tower told me a

similar story. The story she told me had a similar influence like the power that Violet-nim mentioned.”

“Go on.”

Violet urged Yulian to continue. The things that she just knew to be the truth were finally starting to take form in her mind.

“We did not speak much. I had a dream and I already had enough on my plate to achieve that dream.”

“Ah! For such a thing.....”

Violet let out a sigh as she glared at Yulian.

“The Glow’s dream is small while this issue is a problem for the entire world and its population. How could you do such a thing.....”

Yulian confidently shook his head and responded to Violet’s disappointed words.

“My dream is not small. It is something to console the souls of the many desert warriors who have died in battle, and something that is needed for the people who will continue to die in the future.”

‘It was the will of heaven for you to be born as a conqueror. However, you are merely an ant in the overall scheme of things.’

Violet wanted to shout that out loudly, but she was not able to share the will of heaven with others.

Even still, she wanted to shout that to Yulian so that she could awaken him. However, she had to hold herself back as she was not a savior yet.

“There is no loss in being prepared.”

“You are the third person to tell me that story. However, I have decided to focus on the things that I can personally do right now.”

“.....”

Yulian and Violet stared at each other for a long time. It was clear that both of them had a lot to say.

“Sigh~, since that is the will of the Glow, I guess that is what you will do. Even the fact that you are taking this Savior’s Test is because the Glow is focused on the present. Please continue to focus on the present so that things go as planned.”

Yulian tilted his head at Violet’s response as he could not understand why she was sighing and reacting this way.

Violet continued to explain.

“That unknown strength had been getting weaker until a while ago, however, it has started to get stronger again these days. I’m sure our heroes will have another terrible battle in the near future. However, this is a land that cannot be broken. I pray for the heavens to call me to help them protect the world, however, they have not called me just yet.”

‘I’m sure it is related to Mai hyung-nim and Luff hyung-nim.’

Yulian thought that to himself as he started to speak.

“This is what I think. I think that everything will work out properly if each person focuses on their life and do not do anything to anger the heavens.”

“What the Glow says is correct. However, not everyone in the world thinks the same way as the Glow.”

“We need to work to create such a world. Rather than worrying about balance, the hole, or even the things that will happen following the will of heaven, shouldn’t we work on creating a world where everyone can live like proper humans?”

Yulian had a charm that convinced others with his words when he spoke his thoughts clearly and thoroughly. That was the reason many oasis chiefs and chieftains all believed in Yulian. Yulian, the man who started to slowly bring to fruition a dream they thought was impossible, was a charismatic man they could not go against.

Even Violet lost her words for a moment. She had many answers in her mind, however, there was nothing that could convince this man named Yulian.

“I pray that the Glow’s will flows in a positive direction. I say that with full sincerity.”

After choosing to not clash against Yulian, Violet started to walk once more.

The next thing Violet showed them was a school to teach young shamans. This house was as big as five paos put together, and around thirty little children were sitting down with their mouths moving.

“The shamans of the Shire spend ten hours a day even when they are very young to study the ancient incantations. They then spend two hours learning about the history of the desert.”

Yulian shook his head internally at Violet’s explanation and started to speak.

“It must be very difficult. They should be out having fun at such a young age.”

“They learn about the responsibilities that come with strength from a very young age.”

“A responsibility for their strength.....”

Yulian knew Violet’s words were not wrong, however felt like it was a bit too much. The youngest of the children who were mouthing incantations seemed to be no older than ten years old. It seemed too much for such a young child to be studying twelve hours a day.

“The Shire tribe has never had many people. In addition, we surprisingly have a lot of people who die very early. The average age of all of the Shire’s people is lower than thirty years of age.”

If you compared it to how the average age of the desert people

was 38 or 39, it was extremely low.

“Having a lot of people means having the power to protect the tribe. It must be difficult for you.”

Even though Yulian was pretty much saying ‘that is why it would be great for the Shire to join Pareia,’ Violet’s expression did not change at all.

“By the time they become adults, even veteran warriors of the desert will not be able to avoid their incantations. They will have enough strength to defend against tens of warriors. Furthermore, the incantations of the Shire become stronger and stronger based on the amount of people working together.”

“What?”

In order to defend against tens of warriors on their own, they would need to have more strength than a veteran lead warrior. If you think about how Pareia only has slightly over 100 lead warriors, Violet’s words seemed a bit exaggerated.

“If I am being honest with you, these thirty children here can easily defend against one of the Red Storm warriors.”

Yulian could not understand Violet’s provocation.

‘Is she trying to make one of us speak out of anger?’

While Yulian was thinking like that, Violet said something else to provoke them.

“You look like you do not believe me. I do not mind if you test it yourself. You will be able to see why our Shire was able to continue being independent and how we managed to protect this place with only 1,000 shamans. The reason we hide ourselves is to not be annoyed by the other tribes, not out of fear.”

“Please do not look down on our warriors anymore Violet. I have no thoughts of using warriors to forcefully takeover the Shire.”

“I am not looking down on them. I am just speaking the truth.”

Violet had an expression that seemed to be saying ‘why are you angry?’ as she looked toward the Red Storm warriors and lightly smiled.

There was no way the Red Storm warriors did not know what that smile meant, however, they trusted it was her trying to provoke them so that at least one of them started to speak. That was why they just focused on clenching their teeth and not looking toward Violet.

Yulian and Red Storm continued to restrain themselves, but the next words out of Violet’s mouth made it difficult to listen anymore.

“Now that I think about it, it will be better for you not to test it. There is a nine out of ten chance that one of the Red Storm warrior-nims will be injured.”

“Violet-nim. If you really think that will be the case, I feel like it would be better to test out one of those children’s strengths. I will consider it to be a sample as I will need to know the strength of the Shire if I become its leader.

“Even if you will regret it?”

Violet’s continued provocation actually calmed Yulian’s mind. He was certain that Violet’s goal was to provoke either himself or the Red Storm.

“A warrior does not know of regret.”

Yulian said that as he looked toward the Red Storm. Haisha was currently not here as he was protecting Edwin on his way back while Shubeon was still recovering in the oasis. That meant that that was only one warrior suited to represent the Red Storm.

“Thrint.”

Thrint walked forward at Yulian’s call.

Book 4-5.4

‘Let’s see what she says once they are all defeated.’

Yulian thought like that as he started to speak to Thrint.

“Since Violet-nim sounds so sure, make sure to do it properly. I ask you not to do anything that will damage our pride.”

Yulian was telling Thrint to not hurt the child. Thrint was also a bit angered by what Violet had just said, but nodded his head thinking that a woman who knew nothing about them could not know the truth.

Violet smiled brightly as she clasped her two hands together before releasing them. Once she did that, one of the greatswords the Red Storm left outside the Shire showed up in her hand.

“I made a temporary one using incantations. The weight, length, width, everything should be the same so please try your best.”

Thrint, who had been looking at the greatsword Violet had instantly made with interest, started to frown at Violet’s words before grabbing onto the greatsword in Violet’s hand.

It was the exact same weapon he always used.

“Jose.”

Violet called one of the children forward.

“Please show the strength of the Shire’s incantations to Pareia’s Glow.”

“Yes, Violet-nim.”

This child who hasn’t even gone through puberty quickly answered. Jose then looked toward the children who were studying with him.

The other children quickly got up and surrounded Jose.

Yulian suddenly realized that things got much easier and started

to speak.

“The child seems to have spoken. Didn’t we decide nobody else could speak?”

“It is hard to show the strength of incantations without speaking.”

“Then I suppose my test is over?”

As Yulian smiled and asked, Violet shook her head.

“Are you trying to go against the promise?”

As Yulian asked about Violet’s actions, Violet shook her head once more before starting to speak.

“You seem to have forgotten about something. Let’s show you the strength of our incantations first. The Glow should know the power of the Shire that he is trying to make his own.”

Violet did not even wait for Yulian’s response as she shouted over to Jose.

“Start.”

As soon as Violet’s command was given, Jose took out a stick with long black furs on it out of his chest and started to chant his incantation.

Once Jose started moving, the children around him stood in a triangle formation behind him and took out their own incantation tools to work with Jose.

Thrint knew about how scary incantations could be. Even if he was against Tuma Takaka who could not even lift the greatsword one inch off the ground, he did not think he would have much of an advantage.

But the opponent was not Pareia’s Grand Shaman Tuma Takaka. They were children who did not even have peach fuzz on their faces. Thrint decided to wait for the opponent’s incantation to finish and completely destroy it as he just waited their with his

greatsword in his hand.

“Hear my will. The source of my strength is the heaven and earth. The responsibility for this strength falls within my will and determination.”

Jose continued on with his incantation as the children behind him started to shake their incantation tools wildly in the air. Suddenly, each of the other children's strengths followed the triangle formation to gather inside Jose.

There was no way Thrint, who was already a master level warrior, would not notice that. He was just slightly nervous at the fact that they were stronger than he had expected them to be.

‘If it continues like this, it would not be honorable even if I win. I need to cut down down around now to avoid being embarrassed.’

That was what Thrint was thinking as he moved his greatsword to the side.

“.....”

Thrint hesitated for a moment. He had almost let out a grunt to energize himself. That woman was being really sly and doing whatever she could to make them talk.

‘It is something I need to be wary about. But the fact that I almost let it slip shows that I still need more training.’

While Thrint was thinking internally and starting to get into position again, Jose and the children must have completed their incantation as a strong wind started to blow from around them.

There was no sand storm because they were standing on stone, however, small pebbles started to fly toward Thrint and cutting through his clothes.

But Thrint did not even blink an eye. Compared to the Sand Storm he experienced in the Monster's Desert, this kind of wind was comparable to a cold wind blowing toward the oasis

underneath the hot sun.

As for the injuries he just received? They were so small that they would heal in a day even without any medical herbs.

Thrint started to slowly walk from the center of the storm that the children created.

“Dioma!”

Jose shouted loudly as he slammed his furry stick to the ground.

Rumble—

The moment the stick hit the ground, the earth started to split as it quickly approached Thrint. Thrint moved his body to the side to avoid the giant gap in the ground, but that was not the end.

“Dioma!”

Jose shouted loudly once more as the earth started to split once more perpendicular to the crack that was just created.

‘This is no joke.’

Thrint finally realize that Violet was not just bluffing earlier. This type of magic was a special type of difficult incantation that they had only seen Tuma Takaka use.

‘Even if thirty children are gathered together, how could they use a supreme level incantation like this?’

Thrint was no longer looking down on the children as he quickly increased his internal ki to avoid the earthquakes that continued to attack his feet.

“What?”

Yulian shouted out wondering what was going on as Thrint suddenly started to move his body left and right as he swung his greatsword.

Thrint was even biting down on his lips as he swung his greatsword and instantly approached the children.

“Dioma!”

Once the child chanted another incantation, Thrint had to start retreating once more.

‘Just what is making Thrint retreat like that?’

Yulian could not understand why Thrint was repeating his advance and retreat while dodging to the left and right.

“The effect of the incantation that warrior named Thrint is currently experiencing is something that only the affected party can see. That is why Yulian and the Red Storm warriors cannot see it.”

Yulian started to frown after seeing Violet smile and respond to his confused expression.

“An incantation that only the affected person can see. Is it an illusion then?”

“The Shire’s incantations are not that weak. What they see may be illusions, however, if you are hit by the effect of that incantation, it will not be just an illusion. Jose is currently borrowing the strength of the earth to use an incantation called Seismic Wave.”

“Seismic Wave?”

“It is an incantation that breaks the ground apart. If that warrior ends up missing a step and falling into the ground because of this earthquake, he will become buried alive underneath the earth. But you do not have to worry. Jose’s skills are not perfect yet so he should not have been able to make that big of an earthquake.”

Yulian started to frown at Violet’s words.

“Whether it is a seismic wave or any type of wave, Thrint will overwhelm those children. He is part of the Red Storm.”

“Of course. I feel the same way.”

In comparison to Yulian’s frown, Violet was smiling as she

answered. However, Yulian was not happy as he felt like she was just smirking at him.

The battle between Thrint and the thirty shaman children did not end even after a long time. This result was not something either Violet or Yulian had expected.

For Yulian, he was surprised that Thrint was struggling to fend off the children. There may be thirty of them, but they were children who still had a long way to go until their coming-of-age ceremony. On the other hand, Violet was surprised because this incantation that was strong enough to easily defeat a Greatest Warrior level warrior could not defeat Thrint.

‘I must make sure to make them ours.’

Yulian started to think that he really must get the Shire to join Pareia.

With the Shire’s 1,000 shamans, unifying the desert would just be a problem of time.

It was at that moment that Thrint suddenly jumped away from the battlefield. He then approached Yulian and bowed his head.

Thrint realized that there was nothing he could do and decided to step away as he would be the one embarrassed if this continued on.

“You did well. The children are quite talented.”

Yulian accepted Thrint’s decision and started to speak as he looked toward Violet.

“I have no choice but to accept Violet-nim’s words. However, I have passed the Savior’s Test as someone from the Shire has spoken, correct?”

“Not yet. Didn’t I tell you to watch until the end?”

“Is there another method?”

“Jose!”

Instead of responding to Yulian's question, Violet called over Jose who was standing in front of the children.

"Yes, Violet-nim."

Once Jose approached her, Violet looked toward Yulian before starting to speak once more.

"There is only one method. I just have to kill the person who spoke. Jose."

"Yes, Violet-nim."

Jose started to shake a bit as he answered.

"We can't end the Savior's Test this easily because of you, right?"

"You... are right."

"Then die."

As calm as if she was greeting someone and as natural as if she was asking for some borrowed money back. Violet's voice had both of these characteristics.

But the more surprising thing was the boy's response.

"I understand."

The boy's body may have been shaking, but he answered without hesitation and took a sosoonta out of his chest. He then started to cut his own neck.

Ting!

"What do you think you are doing?!"

The sosoonta that was in Jose's hand flew up far into the sky.

Yulian, who had flicked his finger to send Jose's sosoonta flying was glaring at Violet and Jose with an extremely angry expression.

End of chapter.

Book 4-6.1

The Birth of the Savior

- Only I will follow the Glow.

As a shaman and as a wife.

The Claw Brigade was excited. They managed to not lose a single person in the last few days. In addition, they currently had the best results of all of the assassin brigades gathered for this mission. The reward they would get at the end of this was already very large.

There were more warriors on night patrol and the atmosphere had become much more serious, but the assassins of the Claw Brigade were pros. No matter how many warriors there were, the area was so large that as long as they were a bit careful, there was no way to find them. In addition, they were in an open area with no walls. There were no obstacles to enter from any direction.

The other brigades were failing and dying every so often, but that was purely because their skills were lacking.

Even the Claw Brigade sent ten people to hide but only had one or two assassins who felt like they had a hundred percent success rate actually infiltrate the paoes. But that was enough. The important thing was that they were instilling fear in the workers.

Even today, one of the Claw Brigade assassins managed to successfully infiltrate and complete their mission before making their escape.

“Anyways, how long do we have to be here for?”

One of the assassins started to grumble. It made sense. Since they had to rest without any signs of their existence, it was hard for these assassins to survive the desert during the day. It was fine to live underground one or two days, but they were definitely getting worn out the longer they were there.

“It should not be much longer. The number of workers are slowly going down.”

One of the other assassins tried to console the grumbling assassin and started to quicken their pace. Today’s mission would be over if they can make it to where the pirms were hidden.

“I don’t have a good feeling about today.”

The leader of the Claw Brigade started to frown after getting a bad feeling.

“Leader, you must be getting more sensitive.”

As one of the assassins responded while laughing, the leader of the Claw nodded his head.

“You might be right. Either that, or I may just be worried because things are going too well. Anyways, let’s head back.”

The leader started to walk faster and the ten or so assassins quickly followed behind them.

After walking about thirty minutes to reach the location of their hidden pirms, the Claw Brigade removed the camouflage cloth that was hiding the pirms and started to get on.

They then traveled another two hours to arrive at the gathering location of the Black Knife assassins.

The man who became the new master of the Black Knife verified the Claw Brigade’s success with satisfaction. Soon after, the other assassin brigades started to return as well.

The Claw leader smiled at the fact that only the Claw successfully managed to assassinate some workers again today. They were just at a different level.

“Good work Claw. As for the rest of you, do not feel too depressed. It is not something we need to absolutely succeed in and the number of enemies to kill is not determined either. The goal is to instill fear.”

The guild master said this to the gathered assassins every day. None of them questioned it as they believed that the master's plan was right and because they all valued their lives very much.

“Tomorrow, we will have to move our base further away. The barbarians' patrol is starting to reach this area.”

Once everyone nodded their heads, Master ordered them to rest. The close to one hundred assassins all returned to their location and started to camouflage themselves. Since it was hard to deal with the heat of the desert sun, the majority of them dug deep caves and just camouflaged the entrance.

Once he personally checked that everyone was camouflaged properly, Master hid himself in a cave a bit further away.

Just like that, the Master of the Black Knife could relax knowing that they managed to safely make it through another day.

“How could you do something so stupid and tell someone to take their own life?!”

Violet looked toward Yulian with confusion as Yulian started to shout at her.

“Didn't I tell you in the beginning? If someone on either side speaks the test will end. If you do not want it to end, you need to kill that person. Is the Glow angry because I am not personally killing him? If that is the case, I will kill him myself.”

Violet picked up the sosoonta that Yulian had flicked into the air before falling back down.

“That is not what I mean.”

“Then just what is the problem? I do not believe that you have shown us the will of the savior yet. Actually, shouldn't the Glow just sit back and watch? This is all so that you can become the savior.”

“You're telling me the savior needs to just watch people die?”

Violet nodded her head at Yulian's question.

"You need to do so if the need arises. There are bound to be sacrifices that need to be made to get results."

"So you are saying you will definitely kill that boy?"

Violet responded without any hesitation.

"Of course. That is part of the test."

Yulian was at a loss for words. He did hear the conditions in the beginning, but he had not paid much attention to it. He just considered that the test would be over if someone spoke as he had no plans of killing anyone.

"Isn't there a problem with forcing them to speak and then killing them?"

"That is the test. In addition, I believed that I could strengthen the Glow's will by showing you the strength of our Shire. Aren't you envious of our Shire's strength? If you pass the Savior's Test, all of this will be yours."

"That's incomprehensible....."

Yulian could not finish his sentence. He knew that there needed to be sacrifices. However, that was not a term used for a situation like this. A warrior fighting for his family and tribe puts their life on the line during wars. The deaths of the warriors in battle is where the word sacrifice can be used. You cannot call something like this a sacrifice.

"Is it really a sacrifice if a third party decides the person's life and it is not their own free will?"

As Yulian asked in a still angry voice, Violet looked toward the children before responding.

"They all have their own wills and choose to follow my orders. Do you think that their wills are significantly lacking compared to the wills of warriors? Our Shire has a very small population.

Thanks to that, we do not take our lives lightly. Our Shire definitely has at least, if not more pride than any other tribe.”

Yulian could feel himself getting angry at her stern words.

“How could such a person order a boy who has not even completed his coming-of-age ceremony to kill themselves? How could you give such an incomprehensible command?”

“That is the life of a Shirean. The Glow has not become the savior yet and has no authority to tell us to do this or that. Become the savior. I will loyally carry out your orders once you become the savior. Even this test was given because the Glow has enough clout to be permitted to take the test.”

Violet approached the child once more. The moment she tried to put the sword to his neck, Yulian shouted once more toward her.

“Stop! If the person receiving the test chooses to look past the opponent’s mistake, it will not be a problem. I will continue to test so leave the boy alone.”

“Then you will never ever pass this test.”

“I am the one taking the test. So leave it alone.”

“If that is the Glow’s decision, then I will do so. However, the Glow may overlook it but I will not do the same. Please make sure to practice caution.”

“Hmph.”

Yulian snorted at Violet’s words and turned around to head toward his residence.

The Red Storm followed after Yulian and Tuma Takaka thought about something for a moment before following right next to Yulian.

As Yulian was sitting in his residence still completely angered, Tuma Takaka tapped on Yulian’s shoulder.

“Their abilities may be great, but what is this extremely terrible

Savior's Test? I even question whether they really are the same Shire tribe that Tuma Takaka-nim talked about."

As Yulian vented his frustrations to Tuma Takaka, Tuma Takaka started to smile before sitting down and writing something on the table with his finger.

Glow, isn't something weird?

"What do you mean?"

Tuma Takaka started to write again.

Isn't it weird that Violet said the test will not end until everyone is dead? If they verify your will that way, it will take very long and the entire Shire tribe will perish.

Yulian nodded his head. There really were quite a few questionable components to this test.

"But I cannot say anything because she claims this is their method."

We need to find out exactly how they verify your will. That is the most urgent order of business.

"Do you have any good ideas?"

I'm not sure. The Savior's Test is something only the Grand Elder can know about. I know nothing about it. But I'm sure she is also hoping for this test to not continue much longer.

"You might be right. She might be waiting for me to just back out on my own. If that is her plan, she might end up succeeding. I am currently debating whether we really need to have the Shire be a part of our Pareia."

Tuma Takaka quickly shook his head.

I don't think so. The savior is someone the Shire has desperately been waiting for. Even the past past Glow was sent back because he did not have the qualifications to take the Savior's Test. I'm sure she is also hoping for the Glow to actually be the savior.

“Hmm, I do not believe that but I will try a bit harder as Tuma Takaka-nim mentioned. But if I still feel like nothing will come of it, I will give up on the Shire and return.”

Yulian thought for a moment before continuing on.

“This is an important time for Pareia right now. I cannot waste many days, or months doing nothing in the Shire.”

Tuma Takaka did not seem to want to suggest anything more.

Truthfully speaking, Tuma Takaka also believed that the Shire was strong but that Yulian could probably unify the desert even without their help.

He just thought that if the Shire helped them, Yulian could unify the desert a bit easier with less sacrifices.

Furthermore, it would be great for the savior to show up, however, the savior is also the precursor for the twisting of the world. After thinking that far, Tuma Takaka had no more desire to aggressively push Yulian to continue to test.

Book 4-6.2

The desert moon rose up into the night sky. The assassins of the Black Knife started to wake up one by one. They were shivering from the cold air that swarmed their bodies and started to come out of their holes to settle their hunger and sit by a fire.

‘Holy crap.’

The leader of the Claw Brigade cautiously looked out of the hole before coming out. He then became completely pale after looking at the scene in front of him.

The barbarians of the desert who had been trying to find them with extremely red eyes had rounded up all of the hundreds of assassins who were camping there.

‘How did they manage to find this place?’

The moment that question went through the leader of the Claw’s mind, he was hit on the back of his head and quickly turned his head.

“Found another one here.”

He could hear a voice full of murderous intent right next to him. The moment the leader of the Claw tried to bite down on the poison inside of his mouth, he felt another strong hit on this face before passing out.

“What kind of training did these bastards receive to all immediately try to kill themselves? They should use that determination to live a just life.”

The warrior who broke the Claw Brigade leader’s right molar mumbled to himself as he pulled the leader out of the hole.

The situation was resolved quickly. The assassins that were slowly crawling out and the assassins who were either still asleep or hiding were located through the veteran warriors’ thorough

searching.

The total number of assassins was 150. There was not an ounce of friendliness in the warriors' hands for these assassins who had been annoying them intensely for the last month. All of them had either one or both molars completely destroyed.

"I never expected to catch them this easily."

Pere smiled bitterly as he started to speak to Runa. Runa also could not hide his joy.

"I had been overthinking it for too long. I was too focused on the fact that they were assassins from the continent. They are still human and need to eat and sleep. In order to do that, wouldn't they need to hide underground?"

"Of course. And when it comes to hiding out in the desert, it is our warriors that specialize in it, not them."

Pere answered in disbelief.

The strategy Runa had developed while not eating or sleeping for a couple days was just too simple.

The plan was to have the warriors hiding around the assassin's resting area. Pareia's warriors were strong and normally trained in hiding in the desert, so it was even more perfect than the assassins' attempt to hide themselves.

Their intuition to pay attention to what was going on outside of their hiding spot was at least at the same level as the assassins, if not better. It might be a job for the assassins, but it was their livelihood for the warriors.

The assassins may be able to run quickly without making any noise, but there was no way the warriors who were known for their stamina and lived in the desert their whole lives would not be able to do the same.

That was how they were able to stalk the assassins who were

returning to their base thinking they had made it out safely.

But they could not follow the speed of the assassins once they got on the pirmas. That was why they had to focus on the direction and distance the assassins seemed to travel and slowly increased the range of their hiding spots. After working hard for three days, they were able to accurately locate the assassins.

Today was the day they completely surrounded and infiltrated the assassins' base.

“We have no need to treat them as prisoners. They are not warriors or even men. They could not attack the warriors and chose to secretly attack and kill the weak. They are no more than trash.”

Pere told the warriors to treat the assassins worse. There was no need for him to say that. The warriors were already manhandling the assassins.

“I presume they all received their command from the Silence Empire, but we need to use this opportunity to accurately figure out our enemies. If it is an Assassin's Guild, that would mean that there are other assassins as well. We need to locate their actual base and completely wipe them out. That will save us trouble in the future.”

Pere nodded at Runa's words. The warriors did not enjoy torturing people, but they could definitely be cruel based on the situation.

The assassins were all dragged away at Pere's order.

There was a man who was watching all of this from a distance. This man was the one who had become the new master of the Black Knife. He was the one that Thrint had made into a useless man.

He had chosen to create his cave further away from the rest of the group. That was the only reason he was able to avoid the

warriors' search.

The man took another look at the scene in front of him and decided that this was the end of the Black Knife.

The Guild Master and S-grade assassins were all killed after failing to assassinate a single merchant, and the assassins he brought with him this time were the guild's A-grade assassins.

It was almost impossible to redevelop the Black Knife with average assassins. It may have been possible if he was still at full strength, however, he was pretty much completely handicapped and could not do much of anything.

'There is no point to even make a report. This is the end.'

The man shook his head as he slowly turned around. He was thinking about returning and throwing everything away before hiding out in a rural village for the rest of his life.

This fog that was rare in the desert was actually pretty common in the Shire. There was almost no days without the fog.

Once the entire Shire was covered in fog, the white buildings of the Shire shined even brighter from the light of the sun. It made it look like a magical city that can only be seen in black and white.

Yulian had been thinking about the same problem for the past few days.

The test of the Savior's Will that was started at Violet's suggestion and the resulting vow of silence for everyone other than Violet and himself.

'Looks easy but is hard to keep... what is the reason for taking away their freedom to speak?'

He continued to think about it.

'Not speaking is not the entirety of this vow of silence.'

The reason he had been thinking about this for the past few days was because of something he happened to hear from Violet.

‘What did she mean by that? A city filled with silence, it not being normal. Is there a special reason we have to do this?’

Yulian continued to come up with more questions as he continued to think.

As he was pacing around while thinking, Yulian did not really know where he was going. Once he snapped out of his thoughts and looked around, he was standing on the Hero’s Land that the Shire is supposed to protect.

While looking at the drawings on the ground, Yulian started to recall the stories he had heard as a kid and just how much respect he had for these warriors of the past.

He then started to smell a light fragrance.

Yulian closed his eyes as he was becoming drunk on this fragrance he was smelling for the first time in his life. His complete attention was now on the fragrance as it started to slowly change.

The smell of blood.

The fragrance was definitely starting to change to the smell of blood. This smell that he was used to but could not really get used to and did not want to get used to was starting to fill his nose.

Yulian quickly opened his eyes at that smell of blood. He even hallucinated that the purple lines on top of the drawings of the warriors were starting to shine.

- Those purple lines represent the souls of the warriors who are still working hard to fight.

It made Yulian recall Violet’s words.

‘Does that mean that the great souls of the warriors are fighting right now?’

This intense heat that was radiating from his chest and the feeling that he could not survive without shouting out loud.

Yulian stood up tall and opened up his chest. He then took a deep breath before channeling all of his energy and letting out a loud yell.

“Oowooooooooooooooooooooo!”

Yulian’s clear and ringing shout echoed throughout the Shire. It made everyone stop what they were doing and woke up anyone who was sleeping.

The lines over the drawings started to fade away at Yulian’s shout. Yulian’s heart started to beat faster at the thought that they had gained strength from his shout.

Book 4-6.3

“Great warriors are heroes even after their death.”

Yulian then subconsciously started to shout out loud.

“Knowing that you were not able to find peace and continue to endlessly fight for our sakes makes my heart boil, no, burn as a warrior. This little warrior looking up to my senior warriors’ souls here today is named Yulian Provoke, a strong warrior hoping to follow in the footsteps of my seniors. A warrior who has the desire to conquer the desert and have everyone live together as a single tribe just like in the past. This little warrior who has the name of the Desert Conqueror will receive the will of the great heroes before me and make a vow that my will will not waver even if I am standing in the middle of a Sand Storm.”

Yulian continued to shout out loud and his booming voice gathered the Red Storm and the Shireans.

The charisma and dreams that managed to convince the many oasis chiefs and chieftains at the young age of twenty started to show themselves once more. Seeing Yulian’s confident appearance made everyone become absorbed by his speech and even the Hero’s Land started to react to Yulian’s booming proclamations.

The smell of blood started to disappear and the purple lines had become completely transparent, no longer visible to the naked eye. At that moment, tiem completely stopped.

- Come to us.

Was he hearing things? Yulian did not even realize that he was slowly starting to walk toward the Hero’s Land.

- The one who wishes to see our will. Come to us.

His surroundings instantly changed. He was not on a battlefield. Everything in front of his eyes was currently burning, and the area was full of the smell of blood and the smell of the warriors’ sweat.

There were many warriors who looked strong enough to easily destroy him working hard to slash against something.

He could not hear any shrieks, but there was definitely something being defeated by them, and there were times some of the warriors were even pushed back. But the warriors next to them would quickly help them to recover and instantly return to defeating the invisible existence.

- Welcome warrior who has revealed his will on his own.

As soon as he heard that voice, all of those strong warriors started to turn their gazes toward him.

- Your will and cheer has become a source of great strength for us. We were wondering what was going on as we were unable to receive any strength from our descendants for the past half month.

The person speaking in front of Yulian with a burning shamshir in his hand was the Great and Mighty Warrior Venekan, the Glow of the now forgotten united desert tribe.

The overwhelming pressure Venekan gave off was welcomed by Yulian. He could feel himself start to get excited.

- The Shire is the ones with the most righteous will out of all of our descendants. I was worried about their silence but now I know it was because of the arrival of the savior.

Yulian did not dare to respond. He was like an ant compared to them. How would an ant like himself dare to respond to Mount Tai? But he could tell. The Shire was singing the warriors' song and continuously maintaining their incantations to lower the burden on these warriors.

- Your strong will has given us great strength. The name of this place is Valhalla, the Hero's Land. The Land of the End. It is the location countless numbers of heroes from all over the world have gathered to prepare for the final battle.

The scenery changed once more. Yulian could now see hundreds,

no thousands of strong individuals. Venekan had shown it to him as the heroes had accepted him as one of them.

It was not just warriors from the desert. There were even knights from the continent wearing their armors and wielding their swords, as well as magicians carrying their staffs and wands. There were even people whose white hands were shining.

There were old people and young people, men and women, and even some who were not human. The important thing gathering all of them together was the fact that they were strong heroes.

- Another savior has been born in front of our eyes.

“What ... do i have to do?”

As Yulian stumbled over his words and asked, Venekan reached the burning shamshir out to Yulian as he answered.

- You are already a warrior. Do as you wish. A warrior must use their will to overcome all obstacles. As you wish, in your own method. Just show us your actions.

“As I wish?”

- You are already a warrior we have accepted. Your will alone has already made you the savior. Take this shamshir.

The moment Yulian cautiously accepted the burning shamshir, an intense heat filled his entire body. This pain that felt like he was burning hurt so much that he would end up fainting if he let his guard down even for an instant. But Yulian did not faint and just clenched his teeth to keep his eyes open.

- This is a small gift from us to you. We hope you can become a great warrior.

Yulian continuously used his ki to divide up the immense amount of strength that was flowing into his body. The strength used Yulian's veins to flow through his body before becoming completely absorbed in his blood and dantian.

He could feel his consciousness fading. He had no thoughts, no feelings, and even felt like he himself did not exist. Yulian realized this was the 'State of Nothingness' that his master had mentioned and let the power take over his body.

He did not know how much time had passed.

By the time he was able to divide up the power and absorb all of it, Yulian had changed. It felt like everything that was clogged was now suddenly free and he could feel a level of strength that he had never felt before flowing through his body.

Once he realized that he had changed, Venekan started to speak.

- For so many saviors to be born in one generation and for two to be born in the desert alone is definitely a sign of troubled times. Before trying to decide who is right and who is wrong, just focus on what you personally believe to be justice. That is the will of the savior.

Yulian had to ask a question.

“Am I doing the right thing?”

- I am not a god. I am in this battle not because of who is right and wrong, but because it is my will. You should do the same thing. If you believe that what you are currently doing is right, push forward. But if you think that it is wrong, stop and turn around to reflect.

No matter how noble the cause may be, many people will die in war. Yulian was certain that this sacrifice will lead to saving more lives in the future, but killing even a single person was not a good thing. It was because even the enemy stepped forward into war because of their own mission and responsibilities.

Killing such people would not be easy even if Yulian had an Iron Will. Yulian started to change once more at this point.

War itself was a fight between two different perspectives on justice and two different wills.

“I hope to become a hero and step foot on this land once more.”

Yulian's eyes started to glow to the point that the best way to describe it would be that there were beams of light coming out of his eyes. Venekan sent Yulian a warriors smile as he watched Yulian's eyes glow like that.

- We would welcome that although it also means that the final battle is near. But it is not time yet so let us speak once more once your life is over. Return for now. Many people are waiting for you right now.

Venekan sent Yulian away with a slight gesture just as he had done so to call Yulian over. Yulian could feel his surroundings change once more. The first thing he saw was the desert moon.

‘I entered at dawn but it is already light. It is very peculiar.’

“Glow!”

As Yulian looked toward the direction of the voice, he saw Violet, the Shireans and the Red Storm all waiting for him.

Book 4-6.4

“Violet.”

“You cannot thoughtlessly enter the Hero’s Land. Just what did you do in there for a month?”

“One month?”

Yulian’s eyes opened wide at Violet’s words.

“To be specific, it was one month and half a day. We were lucky that Tuma Takaka-nim informed the Red Storm that it was not our incantations. If he didn’t, the Red Storm would have attacked us and ended up disappearing by our hands.”

Yulian urgently looked toward the Red Storm at Violet’s words.

After verifying that everyone was safe, Yulian looked once more toward Violet and started to smile.

“.....?”

As Violet put on a confused expression, Yulian smiled once more before starting to speak.

“I am the savior of the desert.”

“The test is not over yet.”

Yulian shook his head. There was no test from the beginning. All the savior had to do was give the Shire an order.

Yulian started to speak in a quiet yet loud enough voice for everyone to hear.

“Violet, and the Shireans of the Shire. Listen to my word. Immediately start to sing the warriors’ song that you have sung until now and start your incantations for the great souls. The Shire is a place that must not be silent. Raise your voice and light your passions. I am now the will of the Shire.”

The Red Storm warriors who heard Yulian’s voice did not know

what was going on. But Violet and the rest of the Shireans quickly started to do as Yulian had instructed.

The savior had finally been born. The savior was able to look past the trap of silence to realize the reason for their existence and the truth of the Shire.

Violet started to shake in excitement and she could not hide the joy in her face as she kneeled in front of Yulian. She then started to bow as she responded.

“We will follow Yulian-nim’s command.”

“Absolutely not.”

“That is what we have prepared for.”

“You do not need to prepare for it and there is no reason to do that.”

“There is no reason we cannot do it.”

Listening to Violet coldly answer, Yulian wanted to jump up and down in frustration. After understanding the strength of the Shire and the reason for their existence, Yulian’s decision was not to involve them in war.

The shamans of the Shire was doing something much more important than that. That was why the decision was for Violet and some strong shamans to join Pareia while the rest of the Shireans will continue to assist the heroes with their incantations and songs.

Yulian was satisfied with the immense amount of strength he had received from Venekan. He would have no issues with a couple shamans at Tuma Takaka’s level joining his ranks.

Tuma Takaka was old and had to remain at the large oasis, which prevented him from traveling with Yulian to battle. But that was not the case anymore. They could now go to war with the help of some strong incantations and hopefully end with less casualties.

Yulian had thought everything had gone well, but a problem occurred on the first night they were camping after leaving the Shire.

Violet had entered into Yulian's paoe. The bigger problem was that she was confidently proclaiming that she was now Yulian's wife. There was not an ounce of embarrassment. She was as natural as if she had been his wife for a very long time.

"I already have a wife."

"That is normal. It would be weird if a hero like the Glow did not have a wife. I do not mind if I am the seventh wife. I must conceive the Glow's seed."

"Gasp!"

Seeing Violet becoming even more blunt made Yulian completely at a loss of words.

"That is the will of the Shireans. Why else would I follow the Glow? If I remained in the Shire, five strong shamans could have come with you. Please do not reject me. I have been prepared for a long time and have studied a lot as well."

'Study? What did she study?'

While Yulian was nervously trying to figure things out, Violet untied the cloth around her body and laid down next to Yulian naked.

"What do you think you are doing? Hurry up and put your clothes back on."

"Are you rejecting me?"

As Violet turned her body toward Yulian and asked, Yulian moved his gaze away from her naked body as he responded.

"I am not able to take another wife right now."

"Is the Glow rejecting me because the Glow does not need me?"

“At least as a wife I do not.”

“You are insulting me.”

As Violet responded while shaking, Yulian quickly put some clothes made of pina fur over her as he answered.

“How is this insulting you?”

“It is definitely an insult in the Shire. Furthermore, I am not only here for my own desire but as the representative of the hope of the Shire.”

Violet suddenly got up and started to run toward Yulian’s greatsword.

“What are you doing?”

“How many women can live on with such an insult? In addition, I am not just an average woman. I will die to wash myself of this insult and apologize to the tribe for not being able to live up to their expectations.”

As Violet answered like that and tried to put her neck on the greatsword with no hesitation, Yulian quickly swung his hand.

Yulian’s martial arts had already become stronger to the point that he could now freely move his hands, feet, and even the greatsword like Chun Myung Hoon had taught him to do so in the past. It was the result of being in the state of nothingness for the long duration of a month after receiving the strong power from Venekan.

A strong wind was created and gently lifted Violet a few steps to the side. She was surprised at the fact that something had moved her body against her will, but still managed to say what she needed to say to Yulian.

“I do not know what situation the Glow may be in, but you will not be able to bend my will no matter what you may say. This is my promise to you not as the Grand Elder of the Shire, but as a

woman.”

As Violet took the lead before Yulian could get angry, the cat suddenly got Yulian’s tongue.

“I must conceive the Glow’s bloodline. That is my only personal hope.”

Yulian stared at Violet, whose beautiful purple hair was flowing as she kneeled and bowed in front of him, for a very long time.

It made him think of Grace, her pain, and her request.

Yulian would be thirty in a couple year. The fact that he still did not have an heir was definitely a problem.

“Then you are my second wife from now on.”

Yulian finally gave his approval.

Year 258 in the continental calendar.

Yulian Provoke, age 28.

Yulian who had gained the Shire and a second wife started to push forward Pareia’s development even stronger than before.

Author’s Notes As the 29th Chapter comes to an end

My goal for this chapter was to show you the fantasy portion of a fantasy novel. It ended up ending too quickly, but this chapter took me the longest to write even though it was so short. (It took me a whole week to write about 25 pages.)

Valhalla, Hero’s Land, The Land of the End, they all mean the same thing but I am a bit disappointed that I was not able to accurately portray the fantasy I was going on.

To be specific, I thought you would get bored reading about it and decided to cut it down significantly. My lack of writing skills played a role as well.

Once I wrote the whole thing, I realized that it ended up becoming a chapter about Yulian powering up. I personally enjoy

the traditional stories from different countries and wanted to use it in my own writing, but I don't think I have the skills to do that just yet. (Even after finishing the chapter I am still contemplating it ^^;) Even still, this was the chapter I had the most fun writing since I started writing <<Red Storm.>>

Thank you to writer Yoo Woon Gwon hyung-nim, the author of <<Epicureanism>> and <<Hyderon>> for helping me contemplate what the will of the savior should be.

I will continue to work hard for <<Red Storm>> to become something we can enjoy together in the future.

End of chapter.

Book 4-7.1

The Calm Before the Storm

- Things are always calm before a war.

Pareia's Meeting of Greatest had started.

The goal of this meeting was to share the results of three years worth of development so that everyone was aware of just how much has changed.

Yulian, Grace, Runa, and the individual oasis chiefs, all of Pareia's movers and shakers gathered together for the first time in a long time. It had been a chaotic three years for everyone.

Everybody at the meeting had joyful expressions on their faces. It was because everything they had planned and prepared for were progressing well.

The individual chiefs all took turns sharing the developments of their oases, before discussing different issues they could use the advice of the other chiefs to get their ideas.

Once everybody finished their report, Runa wrapped it all up and started to share the plans for the future.

"Next year, once with the birth of 5,000 new warriors, the total number of Pareia's warriors will be 100,000. It proceeded much faster than expected because of the foreigners joining our tribe, but we have determined that the most important task right now is to instill a belief that they are all people of the desert."

"This should not be a problem as the Greatest Warriors are working hard and those people themselves feel like our tribe is a nice place to live. Let's take the term foreigner out now. They are now all people of Pareia."

Runa nodded at Yulian's response.

"I think that we should put the new desert warriors to work with

Greatest Warrior Thriger. No matter how much we train them, it is difficult to train people who have become used to riding pirmas from a young age.”

“You want to have them work on the Desert Runner. Greatest Warrior Thriger will be happy. He keeps telling me he does not have enough people.”

“The effectiveness of the quicksand river will start to go up in the future. I think it would be good to start training with that in mind starting now.”

“We will do as you have planned. Next.”

Once Yulian gave his approval, Runa brought up the next topic.

“It is becoming more difficult to bring in iron, food, and other materials. I presume that the continental war in the Eastern Continent is getting closer. Edwin is working hard, but it is true that the amount of materials is becoming smaller.”

“That is a problem. We will only need more materials from here on. Maybe if people didn’t know about it, it would not be a problem. But the people are starting to use more and more. It was one of the things we were worried about, but since it reduced the labor force quite a bit, it is not like we can tell them to go back to the old ways. I presume it is the same for all of the other oasis as well.”

The other oasis chiefs nodded their heads at Yarumaha’s response.

“We cannot do anything about it because the ratio of men and women as well as the fact that all men had to become warriors was abnormal to start. In a normal country, if there were one million people, only about 30,000 of them will be warriors. However, in the desert, even though the total population is less than 5.5 million people, there are over 600,000 warriors. They were needed to hunt for food and protect the tribe.”

Runa paused for a moment before continuing to speak.

“It is something we cannot change because of the needs of the desert. But the problem will change once the desert is unified. All men will not need to become warriors once the desert is all one tribe.”

He was right. It was not something they could resolve right now. Everybody knew that to be the case, but they had asked because Runa always seemed to have a response for everything. Runa of course answered as if he had thought a lot about that issue.

“I need to take another look at the situation to accurately make a decision, but everything will be resolved once that time arrives. Our men of the desert will be able to take on other jobs. Once they learn how to produce materials, it will no longer be a problem. Once we unify the desert, we will reduce the proportion of men who become warriors and increase the proportion of material producers.”

“I guess we really don’t have any options right now.”

“Yes. The only thing we can do is tell people to conserve.”

Runa brought up the next issue while everyone was nodding their heads at his response.

“The construction is moving slower than expected, especially because of that situation with the assassins. I would like to hire some more workers with your approval.”

“There are a lot of places for us to spend money right now. Is there a reason to urgently push this construction right now?”

Runa sternly answered Yulian’s question.

“We would not need a castle if we were going to just stay in the desert. However, if we want to get our revenge on our nemesis, the Silence Empire, we must absolutely build this castle.”

“Mm.”

As many of the chiefs started to contemplate Runa's words, Runa continued to speak.

"The feeling of war is getting stronger in the Eastern Continent. That is the only chance for our Pareia to aim for them. That is why we need a base close to them. We also need a castle that can defend against the potential attack from the Silence Empire. Most importantly, it will be the symbol of Pareia for the continental powers."

"It will probably be better to leave that in your hands."

Nobody could offer another suggestion once Yulian gave his answer. This definitely had to be one of the first things Pareia needed to take care of.

"Everybody has been doing their parts and we have discussed all the parts we need to work together to accomplish. All that is left now is the fine-tuning."

Yulian looked to the left and right before starting to speak again.

"We will conserve our strength until the end of this year. But next year, we must make sure to conquer the rest of the Eastern Desert. Please keep that in mind and act accordingly in the upcoming months."

"We understand, Glow."

Yulian's parting words ended the meeting and everyone started to head back to their paoes.

Yulian and Grace walked side by side as they headed back to their paoe.

The sun was up in the sky when they started the meeting, but it was already night time.

"Are you hungry?"

Grace linked her arm with Yulian's arm as she asked the question.

Yulian responded by nodding his head.

“Now that you mention it, I am very hungry. Let’s hurry back.”

As Yulian started to walk faster while still linking arms with Grace, Grace started to frown.

Yulian was confused at Grace’s expression and tilted his head. Grace had more stamina and abilities than most warriors. There was no way she would frown because he pulled her just this much. Grace pulled on Yulian’s arm to get him to stop before starting to speak.

“Honey.”

“What is it? Are you ill?”

Yulian lightly grabbed onto both of Grace’s arm with concern as he made eye contact with her.

“That’s not it.....”

Seeing Grace, a woman who bluntly stated anything she needed to say and did not even mention a peep about something she shouldn’t say acting like this, Yulian felt his heart drop. He felt that something was wrong.

“Are you really sick? Did you visit Tuma Takaka-nim?”

Seeing Yulian not even giving her any time to respond, Grace put her hand up to caress Yulian’s face.

“Are you worried about me?”

“Why are you asking such an obvious question. Hurry up and tell me. What is wrong?”

Grace felt extremely loved seeing Yulian worry like this. On one hand, she was even sorry for making him worry for now reason.

“To be honest with you, I have something to tell you.”

“Hurry up and tell me.”

“I...I’m pregnant.”

Seeing Grace shyly speak, Yulian flinched for a second before cautiously asking again.

“Grace, what did you just say?”

Both of Grace’s cheeks turned even redder as she answered once more.

“I am with child.”

“Is that for real?”

“Yoo~hoo!”

Yulian jumped up and down in place while shouting out loud enough for the entire desert to hear.

“The entire tribe is going to hear you.”

Yulian was about to hug Grace tightly as she warned him, but she looked at her stomach for a moment before just lightly hugging her.

“Let’s announce it right away tomorrow morning. Everyone will be extremely happy to know you are with child. No, let’s immediately call for a celebration for the entire tribe.”

“Stop making such a big deal out of it. I took so long to do something everybody else has already done.”

“Making a big deal? You are the Mother of Pareia. Your child is the child of everyone in the tribe.”

Yulian was extremely excited. How long had he been waiting for this news? Even taking Violet as his second wife had been on his mind because of Grace.

Book 4-7.2

“This is extremely great news. I have never been so happy in my life.”

“Oh stop it~”

Grace shyly answered as she tightly hugged one of Yulian’s arms. She was happy but also hurtig. It was because she could tell how long Yulian had been wanting a child.

‘How much did he have to hide his desire in front of me?’

Grace started to hold onto Yulian even tighter.

“We will let everyone know tomorrow. Also ask father and brother-in-law over in the Rivolde to come over. You need to be celebrated.”

Yulian continued to chat away as he carefully escorted Grace back. Yulian and Grace were able to talk like a couple for the first time in a long time as they headed back to the paoe.

“Welcome back.”

Violet was outside the paoe to greet the two of them.

Violet had a different, majestic feel than Grace. It was probably because it was engrained in her as the leader of a tribe.

If Grace’s style was to personally intervene, Violet’s style was to silently control the situation from the back.

Those passionate interventions gave Grace the nickname of Iron Woman, while Violet’s style gave her the nickname of Quiet Coordinator. The two of them were completely different.

Thankfully, both of these women were far from being the jealous type. Violet accepted Grace as the Mother of Pareia and was cautious around her, while Grace also treated Violet well. This was why the Provoke household was always peaceful.

“Let’s head in first. We have something to tell you, Violet.”

Violet nodded her head at Yulian’s words before starting to speak.

“I also have something to tell the both of you.”

The three of them all walked into the paoe and sat down facing each other before Yulian started to smile and start to speak.

“Okay, Violet, what is going on? I hope it is not bad news. Today is a great day.”

“What is it that has you so happy? There is no way I wouldn’t know about such good news.”

Seeing Yulian being uncharacteristically happy, Violet tilted her head as she asked.

“You see.....”

The moment Yulian was about to speak, Grace motioned with her eyes to make him stop. She thought it would be better for her to tell Violet about this herself.

Having a child was not a competition, but it was something on both of their minds. Especially for Violet, she was extremely careful because she could tell how Grace felt about not being able to have a child.

“What is it? Seeing unni stop you like this, it is kind of suspicious.”

As Violet lightly smiled as she asked, Grace smiled along and shook her head.

“I will tell you later. Okay, what is it you want to tell us?”

Violet did not stop smiling at Grace’s question and started to turn red as she cautiously started to speak.

“I am pregnant. I’ve had the symptoms for a while, but I wanted to be certain about it before sharing it with you. I received Tuma

Takaka-nim's confirmation today."

Grace's two eyes turned extremely round and Yulian's face was full of joy.

"Hahaha. Is that so?"

Seeing Yulian laughing loudly while asking, Violet nodded her head.

"Hahaha. Multiple jackpots. Today really is going to be the best day of my life."

"Then please tell me. What other jackpots did you have today?"

Yulian grabbed Grace's hand and answered Violet's question.

"Grace is pregnant as well. How could I not be happy when both of you are pregnant at the same time. Hahaha."

Yulian was smiling nonstop, but Grace turned slightly pale. It wasn't about the fact that Violet was pregnant, but at the fact that they were pregnant at the same time.

It might become complicated if it ended up like Yulian and Pere's relationship in the past.

Using her sixth sense as a woman and the knowledge from having been the chief of a tribe at one point, Violet quickly realized what Grace was worried about.

Yulian and Pere were able to resolve their differences with the death of the former Glow, but if things go wrong, there could be a big fight regarding the successor.

Both of them will have none other than Yulian's blood, and neither Grace nor Violet were your average woman. There may be no reason to worry, but there was no way they could not worry as both of these women were both not average.

Pareia had always been one of the strongest tribes in the Eastern Desert, but now they had surpassed that to become one of the greatest tribes in the entire desert.

It had been a long time since they surpassed the fame of the Rivolde tribe, the greatest tribe in the Western Desert, and they also had the most wealth and number of warriors. It would be weird if they were not the strongest.

The reason Pareia could grow this quickly in less than ten years since welcoming a new Glow was because the Glow himself was the strongest warrior in Pareia, as well as the fact that he did not decide on everything on his own. He took the time to discuss things with the experienced and wise Oasis Chiefs and chieftains before making decision.

Many Oasis Chiefs carried out the Glow's orders without issue because they had a say in the decision making process. That was why it was obvious that they would be developing much faster than the other tribes.

In addition, they were able to have a safe source of food and materials from trading with a merchant guild from the continent, which led to an explosive growth in Pareia's population.

The other tribes tried to follow Pareia's development by trading with other merchant guilds from the continent, but it was not possible to do so because Pareia had full control of the quicksand river that cut through the desert.

All of the other tribes were afraid of Pareia now that the desert's balance of power had been broken, and the ones to feel the most danger was of course the remaining three tribes of the Eastern Continent. These three tribe were the Okland tribe who shared a border with Pareia, and the Baradona and Pawai tribe who both shared a different border with Pareia.

These three tribes could not help but seriously consider when Pareia would point their shamshirs at their tribe.

In order to break the balance of power in the desert, Pareia had started a war with the Wikaly even with a strong enemy in the Shuarei remaining on the side. That was why these tribes were

always on the edge waiting for Pareia's declaration of war.

The biggest issue was that none of these three tribes had enough strength to fight Pareia off. That was the reason the Glows of these three tribes had gathered together today.

"We can only live by gathering together."

Okland's Glow Kinicks started to speak.

"There are many different types of coming together. What kind of coalition is Glow Kinicks thinking about?"

Once Baradona's Glow Kupepa asked, Kinicks looked back and forth at both men before starting to speak again.

"If we think about the gains for each tribe, we are going to end up losing the historied name of our tribes that we have protected for hundreds of years."

"We are already aware of that. Please stop beating around the bush and tell us what you are thinking, Glow Kinicks."

As Pawai's Glow Nakatin responded with frustration, Kinicks let out a fake cough before continuing to speak.

"Mm. I'm sure everyone is aware of the fact that Pareia has gained control of the quicksand river. Surprisingly, Pareia is able to quickly transport a lot of warriors at once through the river. To what I have heard, Pareia already has more than 100,000 warriors."

"100,000?"

Nakatin responded in disbelief. He knew that Pareia was strong, but it was surprising that their number of warriors surpassed 100,000.

"100,000 isn't the problem. Pareia's population is exploding very quickly. I heard they are even taking in people from the continent who chose to leave the continent."

"You really think they would do that? If you bring in more people

from the desert, you are likely to lose the mentality of the desert. I cannot believe that any tribe, especially Pareia, would do such a thing.”

As Nakatin disagreed with Kinicks, Kinicks looked at Nakatin like an idiot before answering.

“The reason they were able to take control of the quicksand river was because of those people of the continent. You do not seem to be up to date with the news.”

As Nakatin turned slightly red at Kinick’s insult, Kupepa quickly interjected and started to speak.

“Everybody has their own situations. Let’s look for a way out together instead of fighting with each other.”

“Hmm, I must have said something rude because I’ve been on the edge lately. I hope Glow Nakatin can be understanding.”

As Kinicks quickly realized his mistake and apologized, Nakatin nodded his head.

“It was because of my uselessness. If Glow Kinicks has good information and suggestions, this Nakatin will quietly listen.”

Once the atmosphere got better again, Kinicks started to speak once more.

“I’m sure there are not too many people coming from the continent, but we cannot just ignore it. They seem to be getting about 100 people a month, so in about 20 years, there will be quite a gap between us.”

“That is indeed a problem.”

“I presume that there will be no tribe who can take on Pareia on their own as time goes on. If there is someone who still can compete with them right now, it would be their eternal enemy the Shuarei and the Rivolde, the strongest tribe in the Western Desert, but as you are probably aware of already, Shuarei is barely getting

back to their old strength and we can just say that the Rivolde is on Pareia's side."

Kupepa let out a sigh at Kinicks's words and started to speak.

"Sigh~ Pareia might have gone to war in the first place relying on the Rivolde. With the Rivolde putting pressure on Shuarei, the Shuarei would not be able to attack them with a lot of warriors."

Silence filled the paoe for a moment. The moment the teacup on the table no longer let out any steam, Kinicks started to speak again.

"To start with, if the three of us were to unite right now, we would have more warriors than Pareia. Our three tribes together have a total of 120,000 warriors."

Kinicks must have been thirsty as he drank the cooled tea before continuing to speak.

"We need to determine a unified leadership system before we can come together. If you do not agree that is the most important, please let me know."

There was no need to respond. Everyone was afraid of Pareia.

Fifth month in the year 268 of the continental calendar. An incident that caused a stir in the desert suddenly occurred.

The three tribes of the Eastern Desert, Okland, Baradona, and Pawai, had united together to become a single tribe.

This was the first time multiple tribes had decided on their own will to unite together. The only thing in the desert's history was the winning tribe absorbing the losing tribe during war.

Everybody knew that this unification was to protect themselves from Pareia, and they all waited to see what kind of response Pareia would give regarding this situation.

Book 4-7.3

The Silence Empire had a lot of spies to receive a flood of information.

They had a system in place to first determine which was important for the informants in the Empire needed to see and which were not, before the Emperor and Crown Prince's personal experts looked through the pile once more. Even still, there was quite a lot of information for them to know.

The Emperor of the Empire. Once Emperor Shaone Fury Silence II relinquished all power to the crown prince and retired due to old age, Shaone Fury Silence III had to look for important information from even a large pile.

The biggest issue for the Silence Empire right now was of course the upcoming war with the Rojini Kingdom.

A population of 25 million, 50,000 knights and 400,000 infantry soldiers. In addition, 5,000 members of a Special Forces team made up of people with special skills.

The only kingdom that could take on the Silence Empire with that much military force was that Rojini Kingdom.

They had gone through an unexpected reform after a civil war and was growing at an extremely quick pace.

Most importantly, their citizens were receiving a lot of support from the royal family that their national pride was extremely stable. It was something that citizens of other countries could not even dream about.

“Damn it.”

Shaone threw the information about the Rojini Kingdom before uncommonly swearing. After spending a lot of effort and money, he had finally received information about the strength of the Rojini Kingdom.

‘They have ten war-related weapon masters?’

Shaone could feel his head aching. Masters played an extremely important role during war.

You could consider that a single master had the strength of thousands of knights. Of course they didn’t really have the fighting force of thousands of warriors, but with the right strategy, they definitely had enough strength to have such an impact.

Most importantly, they served as a symbol. The amount of masters greatly impacted the morale of the soldiers. That was why this number of ten brought such a headache to Shaone.

The Silence Empire had a total of nine masters.

‘Damn it. How could they have ten? Things are getting more complicated. The only thing we have on them is the number of warriors. We should have either not touched them at all or destroyed them completely while they were going through their civil war.’

Shaone had such thoughts, but it was already too late to regret it.

Shaone pressed down on his temples as he started to look through other files. He then landed on a report about the desert.

Shaone clicked his tongue. His idiotic younger brother had screwed things up, and the diplomat tried to fix things up before actually making things worse.

If the empire had been able to get some warriors from the desert, he would not have such a headache. Things would not be like this if they were able to even get one of Pareia’s third generation warriors, who were known to be at the continent’s master level, as reinforcement.

But this was also too late to regret. Shaone was not someone to regret anything, so all he could do was curse and hold back his anger. However, he could not help but become angry again after reading the report.

The report indicated that Pareia's construction of the castle was definitely aimed at the Empire. It wasn't like he did not expect this, but looking at the construction speed and the size of this castle, it could become a great danger for them in the future.

It would normally not be an issue, but they were currently preparing to go to war with the Rojini Kingdom.

Even the Assassin Guild who was a hidden power for him could not properly damage them before becoming disbanded. Shaone had another source of headache.

“Hmm?”

He then read through multiple pages of information about the desert.

The reason Pareia was suddenly able to develop like this. As well as the unification of the remaining tribes in the Eastern Desert.

Shaone lowered the hand on his temple and rubbed his chin. His cheeks then started to rise toward his eyes as he smiled.

This warrior, who anyone could tell was not average, was sitting on a sandy hill looking toward the falling sunset as he was deep in thought.

‘I wanted to make your will a reality, but the time and people are not moving as I wish.’

The warrior let out an uncharacteristic long sigh. He had never felt like this since becoming a warrior. This warrior was someone who had always given his best no matter the situation.

But his surroundings had given this warrior quite a lot of wrinkles.

He was already over 40 years of age. The fact that he had not managed to achieve anything made this warrior even more depressed.

He longed for some people. He really missed them a lot. The wise

Glow who understood and relied on him, as well as the other Greatest Warriors. It was because of them that he was able to forget about everything else and show them everything he got. But there was nobody left who could understand him.

There were now only people who envied him while leaning on him for everything.

‘Pareia has now become an entity that we cannot touch unless they show a really big opening. What am I supposed to do in such a situation?’

This must have been it. This must have been the reason this warrior’s heart was so unsettled. He was unable to find a way for his tribe to push forward.

“Venersis-nim.”

At that moment, the warrior looked back toward the voice calling out to him.

“Buchord.”

Venersis called out to the warrior who represented the only group of people he could rely on.

“Your image from the back looks quite foreign.”

Venersis put on a bitter smile at Buchord’s words. The only warrior who understood his pain had realized his thoughts.

“Did I seem that way?”

Venersis’s answer made him seem even more foreign to Buchord, the lead warrior of the Desert Sword. He could no longer see the tough warrior who led this group of tough warriors and could only see an average warrior full of anxiety.

“Did the Glow again.....”

“No. I think I just became reflective after seeing the fallen sunset.”

Venersis shook his head as Buchord cautiously asked. This type of worry was enough for one person to have.

But Buchord was not someone who would not recognize such a thing. Buchord had already been running through the battlefields with Venersis for over twenty years already. The years he spent drawn in by Venersis's pure strength helped him understand Venersis better than anybody else.

"I know that you are coming back from meeting with the Glow."

Venersis looked toward Buchord with disbelief as he started to answer.

"It's the same everyday. Anyways, did the training go well?"

"The warriors are waiting for you. Everyone wants to be beat up by Venersis-nim."

"Is that so?"

As Venersis returned to his usual expression and happily responded, Buchord started to smile internally. He wanted to help lessen the burden on the warrior he served, but he didn't really have any other way but to make him think about other things.

How could someone dare to try to help him resolve a situation Venersis could not solve? He was Venersis, the War God of the Desert.

"Old memories seem to be remaining in their heads."

"What memories?"

Venersis asked in response to Buchord's words.

"The time we were unable to pierce through those baby chick warriors called the Red Storm. The fact that we could not follow Venersis-nim's line properly was quite shocking to us."

"It was not your fault. They were abnormally strong. Even I was blocked off by that young Glow's interference. We need to accept that they are strong. That is how goals are created."

“We just need to wait for the next war as we trained to the best of our abilities the last few years. We finally finished the goal we set for ourselves today. Now we are looking to get our Greatest Warrior’s evaluation.”

“Hooo~ I’m looking forward to it.”

Venersis was amused as he started to descend the sand hill with Buchord.

Book 4-7.4

“They have clearly united to stand against us. It might have been better to strike them earlier on even if it would have been pushing it a bit.”

Pareia was having another meeting of Greatest individuals, and the Greatest Warriors were also present for this meeting because it was a discussion about war. Egane was the first to speak up about the three tribes uniting together.

“If they have joined together, then they must have more warriors than our Pareia. They should have a minimum of 120,000 warriors.”

Many of the chiefs and Greatest Warriors turned pale at Egane’s words. They had anticipated as much, but hearing it directly from Egane made them feel a sense of burden.

Vibli followed up to Egane’s comment.

“Since they have joined together and have no enemies around them, they should be able to move at least 70,000 warriors should they choose to attack us. They’ll need about 40,000 warriors reserved for an emergency.”

Everyone’s faces started to turn darker.

Realistically speaking, in order to move 70,000 warriors, they will need to reserve 20,000 for the supply caravan. With Pareia also having 100,000 warriors, there was only a low chance of the united tribe attacking them, but it was still a large enough number to feel the pressure.

“It is actually better like this.”

The person who started to speak with an energetic voice in the middle of the gloomy room was Runa.

“We do not have time to take them all down one by one. Our

Pareia should be thankful that they have united so that we can take them down together.”

“Assistant Warrior. Did you not hear about their number of warriors?”

As one of the oasis chiefs looked toward Runa with disbelief, Runa responded back with a confused expression.

“A war is not decided by the number of warriors. Isn’t the results of war determined by who prepared more for it? It is also determined by who has more confidence and fighting spirit.”

“Assistant Warrior, do not take this so lightly. 120,000 warriors is a number that nobody has been able to reach before.”

As Grenti, the chief of the Minimal Sand Oasis of Wikaly origin, responded with frustration, Runa just tilted his head before responding.

“I’m not sure. Our Pareia has too far to go still to be talking about the past. If I am being honest with you, if we just focus on our defenses, within about ten or so years, our number of warriors will be close to 200,000. That is how the rich get richer while the poor get poorer.”

Runa looked toward Grenti with a relaxed expression as he followed up with a question.

“Is it possible that Grenti-nim thinks our Pareia needs to wait 20 years? As time goes by, the Shuarei will become even stronger than they were before, and we might even miss the chance to attack the Silence Empire, our sworn enemies. Will you still wait?”

“That...I’m sure everyone thinks that it will not be a big issue, but we are just thinking that it will be hard to bring them under Pareia’s control.”

As Grenti responded in an uncertain voice, Runa shook his head. He then looked toward Yulian before speaking.

“I have a message for the Glow. Our Pareia has not slacked off in preparing for war and we can now have 100,000 warriors. They are all valiant warriors of Pareia. I am planning on heading out to war on the first month of next year.”

The other people in the paoe started to whisper to one another, but Runa did not falter as he continued on.

“Everything will be done according to the Glow’s will, but what does the Glow think about all of this?”

Yulian had been sitting with a majestic air the whole time, but finally started to speak as Runa respectfully asked him a question.

“If you have made a plan, we need to make it a reality.”

A calm demeanor and a response that showed absolutely certainty.

“Glow!”

“It will not be too late to grow our strength a little more before going to war.”

“I heard that Shuarei have reached 60-70,000 warriors like they used to have. We will need at least 70,000 warriors and 10,000 support team warriors to unify the Eastern Desert. Then what will we do about Pareia’s defense at that time?”

Many people started to shiver as they stated their opposition, as if Yulian’s answer had caused a cold wind to flow through the paoe. The one with the loudest opposition was Hikonicks, the chief of the Windy Oasis.

But looking around the room, it was visible that there were no Greatest Warriors who opposed Yulian’s decision. The only ones in opposition were the majority of the oasis chiefs.

“Who said we were going to take the North with 80,000 warriors?”

Runa’s eyes opened wide at Hikonicks’s response, as he retorted

back.

“Then.....”

As Hikonicks hesitated for a moment, Runa continued.

“In order to defend against the Shuarei’s Venersis, the only man our Glow has accepted as his equal, we will need at least 50,000 warriors. We also need 10,000 warriors in reserve for any emergencies.”

“Assistant Warrior, you don’t mean?”

“40,000. That is the maximum amount of warriors we can send for the Glow to attack the north and unify the Eastern Desert.”

“Absolutely impossible.”

The oasis chiefs started to whisper to each other again. There was no way you could take down 120,000 warriors with only 40,000.

“Quiet~! There should be a reason the Assistant Warrior has just said that. There should be a reason the Greatest Warriors who have experienced many wars have been quiet this whole time.”

Yarumaha was now full of white hair and ready to retire in the near future, but his voice was still loud enough to quickly get people’s attention. He calmed everyone down so that they could hear what the Greatest Warriors had to say.

“It is not as impossible as you may think it is. We can either select the desert route or the quicksand river route. That means that the enemy’s forces will have to be divided into two to defend against both, which means there should not be much differences in number of warriors either way.”

The moment everyone started to quiet down, Egane, who had a lot of respect, agreed with Runa’s words. The smart chiefs quickly realized that the Glow, Greatest Warriors, and even Yarumaha had all made up their minds.”

‘I’m sure they knew we would object to it and already made up

their minds before pushing it to us like this.'

With things turning like this, the conversation naturally switched to how they can prepare for the war, and how they will be taking warriors from each individual oasis.

The unification of the three tribes, as well as the joint leadership of the three Glows was progressing pretty smoothly. It might be because everybody was aware of the pending danger posed by Pareia, but it also helped that they were all similar in size in terms of number of oasis and population, as well as warriors.

"Pareia's warriors have started high intensity training."

"Mm~"

The two Glows let out a sigh at Kinicks's words.

"I'm sure you are aware who those blades forged by sweat will be aimed toward."

"We need to also increase the intensity of our warriors' training. We may have started later in the war preparations, but we are currently in the lead because of this unification. They should be able to handle it."

Nakatin was speaking as if he was trying to put some confidence in himself. Kupepa quickly opened his mouth as well.

"I personally cannot understand why we are feeling so uncertain. I feel like it is pertinent to ask whether we are feeling pressured way too much because of Pareia's fame."

There really was no reason for them to be worried. They had over 120,000 warriors, and the enemy had at max 70,000. Even if they had the quicksand river under control, they would not be able to bring 70,000 warriors and a supply brigade to support that many warriors.

"Pareia may have been one of the strongest tribes in the Eastern Desert for a long period of time, but we are also warriors of the

desert. It is embarrassing that we are so scared like this even before going into battle.”

The two other Glows’ expressions changed significantly after Kupepa’s words. He was not wrong. Before they were Glows, they also went through the tough coming-of-age ceremony and protected their tribe as a warrior. They may not have as much war experience as Pareia, but the pride of a warrior was all the same.

Kupepa had reminded them about it and thanks to that, the three men looked toward each other and drove up their confidence.

“You have said something very wise.”

“That one phrase was enough to make all my worries go away.”

As the two men praised Kupepa, Kupepa raised both of his hands and started to shake them.

“I am not someone who deserves to hear such praises from the two of you. All I am saying is that if we calm ourselves before responding to any issues caused by Pareia, our unification is something that people cannot ignore.”

“You are right. We need to calmly assess the situation. That is our best course of action. If there is something we can start, we need to start it, and if there is something we can do, it is better for us to do it.”

Kupepa nodded his head at Kinicks’s words.

“You are right. Don’t the say the moment you think you are late is the best time? The only question is how to calm the warriors down.”

Kinicks responded in shock.

“Why are the warriors so agitated?”

“I don’t know who spread this rumor, but there is a rumor that Pareia will soon invade us with 100,000 warriors.”

Nakatin and Kinicks were angry at Kupepa’s response.

Book 4-7.5

“It must be the moles that spread such rumors! They’re trying to rile us up to cause chaos!”

“After going through many wars, Pareia is starting to scheme a lot more.”

Kupepa wanted to say that he would do the same if it could lower the amount of damage to their warriors, but he could not speak well about the enemy. They were a unified team and had to show a unified front. Right now, that unity was the most important thing.

“We need to send some moles to Pareia as well. From what I have heard, there are a lot of people from the continent residing in Pareia; it should be easier for us to put more moles than they have.”

Everyone agreed with Kinicks’s suggestion to plant more moles into Pareia before starting to discuss what they could do right now to prepare.

“Glow!”

At that moment, the personal warriors of all three Glows called out to them at the same time.

“What is going on?”

As Nakatin shouted toward the outside, he could hear the warrior’s response.

“Some foreigner caravan was discovered by our patrol warriors and captured alive, but apparently they are all asking to meet with the Glow. They are also claiming that the cart full of items is actually offerings for the Glow.”

The three of them looked at each other with a confused expression at the warrior’s proclamation.

“Oowooooooooo~”

Warriors who stood in the front of a ton of other warriors and let out a shout that filled the hearts of the other warriors with strength.

The warriors in the front were all wearing red clothes, and their clothes fluttered in the wind as they quickly rode across on their pirmas.

These were of course the Red Storm warriors.

Originally, Yulian thought long and hard before thinking that it would be best to put a Red Storm warrior in the front of groups of 10,000 warriors. But the first person to oppose Yulian's decision was Runa.

The Red Storm needed to remain as the Red Storm.

Runa indicated that he wanted to plant the seed in Pareia's warriors about the undefeated record of the Red Storm Warriors. He thought that this was absolutely necessary to make the warriors believe that they could not lose a war in which the Red Storm was with them.

So then why were they in front of the groups of warriors right now? They were just standing there in place of the Greatest Warriors and Lead Warriors for this training. This allowed the Greatest Warriors and Lead Warriors to observe their brigade's formations and inspect the condition of all of the warriors in their brigade.

Pareia's battle formation revolved around each Greatest Warrior in charge of 10,000 warriors, with 10 Lead Warriors each in charge of 1,000 warriors, and 10 veteran warriors reporting to the lead warriors as squad leaders in charge of 100 warriors each.

These veteran warriors may each have 100 warriors they are responsible for, but if there were more than 10 veteran warriors in the Lead Warrior's team, they personally determined seniority amongst the veteran warriors.

Since the chain of command was set up in layers of 10, it was easy to be able to concentrate on how the formations were doing, rather than focusing on all 10,000 warriors at once.

Thanks to this, the leaders were able to easily remember the problem areas or personally go and fix the issue to make their formation inch closer toward perfection. The goal of these trainings that they were doing right now was to perfect the formation at the 100 warrior level.

“Forward!”

Once the flag warriors shouted loudly and started to signal with their flags, the four brigades made of 10,000 warriors started to increase their speed.

This was not just an ordinary forward march. They were paying attention to how long they could move while maintaining their formation. The difference between ‘forward’ and ‘charge’ was that during a ‘charge,’ it did not matter whether you remained in formation. That was just an all out charge to defeat as many enemies as possible.

Seeing as how they could maintain their formation even while 40,000 warriors were running at the same time, you could clearly tell how much the warriors had been training these last few months.

“Wow~ it’s really amazing. I’ve never seen so many warriors move together in formation like this.”

Shubeon maintained the proper distance to the warriors following behind him as he admired this amazing feat.

“What is even more amazing are the Greatest Warriors like Egane-nim who can maintain a good grasp of all of these warriors.”

Hearing one of the other Red Storm warriors comment, Shubeon nodded his head.

“That is why they are our Greatest Warriors. Their strength

alone is one thing, but this ability to maintain a good grasp of all of these warriors. I wonder if this broad perspective ability is actually their greatest strength. I'm glad our Red Storm only has one command: Charge. Hehehe."

As Shubeon mentioned, having this. Broad perspective was a requirement of becoming a Greatest Warrior. Although Shubeon had enough strength to rival the Greatest Warriors, when it came to leading a group of warriors like this, Shubeon would be like a pina in front of a wild animal.

"Just focus. They will issue another command soon."

Another Red Storm warrior eyed the flag warrior before warning Shubeon. The warriors in the front had an important role. They needed to be the first to respond to the flags.

"Change."

As the command finally came, the formation slowly started to change to a fast but safe formation. As they were changing formations and created a half circle formation, a new command was issued.

"Break."

The half circle formation instantly broke down into the four different groups and separated into north, south, east, and west.

"Cross."

The flag warriors waved their flags and the dispersed warriors ran toward each other before ending up in the original straight line formation. It really was extremely accurate.

Even though they were running at a fast speed, they managed to properly pass by each other and get into formation. This type of training was so amazing even in the eyes of people who did not know anything about war.

They needed to be extremely accurate in order to defeat 120,000

with just 40,000 warriors; that was the reason Pareia had committed to such difficult training for the warriors.

They had their Glow who was the War God of the Eastern Desert, as well as a special brigade that was able to handle over 10,000 enemies with just 50 people. They also had their Assistant Warrior who had made both their Glow and that special brigade become full of admiration. With all of these factors, Pareia's morale was piercing through the sky right now.

They knew the enemy had numbers that were multiples of their own, but none of them thought that they could lose. In fact, they had so much confidence that the lead warriors had to caution them to stay cautious.

"It is amazing."

Runa, who had been watching all of this on a high sand dune nearby, started to speak to Yulian who had been watching next to him.

"Didn't all of this come out of your head?"

"Even still, I never expected them to accomplish it so perfectly like this."

Runa shook his head before responding to Yulian's question.

"Training exercises like this have been the focal point of our Greatest Warriors for a long time. In order to fight against the Shuarei's Venersis, our third generation Greatest Warriors needed to be in full control of the situation. Since they have always trained like this in the past, they are able to adjust quickly even though it is a changed formation."

Runa nodded his head before continuing to watch the training with Yulian.

The training that started early in the morning was continuing into the night.

Pareia's warriors were used to these tough training sessions with no rest, small gulps of water, and barely any food.

All of the desert warriors had a lot of pride for the mission they had to protect their tribes, but there were not many tribes that had such intense training sessions like Pareia.

These were all traditions created because of the Shuarei's Venersis. Since all of the warriors knew that this type of training was there to have them spill even one drop less blood, there were no warriors who were grumbling even through this intense training session.

“How are the preparations going for the new weapon?”

Yulian, who had been watching the training session from multiple angles, suddenly remembered and asked Runa.

Book 4-7.6

Runa had been researching new weapons for war for a long time. Specifically, it was a weapon that would release around 10 arrows at once. Yulian had remembered Runa mentioning that after multiple failed attempts, he was finally ready to show it to everyone.

“It is complete, but I am still experimenting with it. Other than that weapon, there are some other weapons that I have been tinkering with as well. I should be able to finish all of them before we head out to war.”

“I have high expectations for whatever kind of crazy weapon you come up with for us.”

“Truthfully speaking, they were created to defend against the Shuarei’s Venersis or the Silence Empire’s potential invasion, but the capabilities are better than I expected it to be. I am certain it will be of great help in the war.”

“That is obvious since it is something you created.”

As Yulian put on a satisfied smile, Runa started to laugh as he responded.

“It is making my heart beat extremely loudly. I can’t believe it is finally starting.”

“This could be considered our official start of the unification of the Eastern Desert.”

Yulian’s heart was beating extremely loudly as well. This had been his dream for the last twenty years.

The unification of the desert. One desert nation.

His dream was finally slowly becoming a reality. If they were successful during this upcoming campaign, the foundation for it would be completed. It was a chance for them to get strong enough

for nobody to dare mess with them.

While the two men were getting extremely excited, the warriors' training came to an end and the lead warriors started to lead them back.

"We should head down now as well."

"Yes."

Since these trainings were so frequent, there was no need for a meeting after the training. The two men immediately headed back to the oasis.

"Have dinner with us tonight."

"Would that be okay? Both of the madams are with child."

Runa was concerned at Yulian's dinner invitation.

"They may be women, but these are Grace and Violet. They can easily handle your average warrior. Nobody has visited because they know the two of them are pregnant, so they have actually been urging me to invite people over. Grace was always an active person, and Violet is not the type to just sit at home either. They are both used to being around a lot of people."

"Even so..."

"It would be great if you can bring your wife over as well."

"I understand, Glow."

With Yulian continuing to urge him to come over, Runa had no choice but to nod his head before heading over to his paoe to get his wife.

Yulian started to hum seeing that everything went well and headed back to his paoe as well.

"Did something good happen today?"

Grace and Violet had been chatting outside the paoe when they saw Yulian heading over while humming and wanted to know

what was going on.

“Pareia’s warriors are strong and the lives of the citizens are continuing to get better. In addition.”

“In addition?”

“Both of my wives will soon give birth. As a father, how could I not be happy?”

“Pfft.”

Grace and Violet started to laugh at the same time. They had not been able to see Yulian like this because of all the responsibilities and training for a long time. So seeing him come home looking so happy like this made both of the women extremely happy as well.

“I invited Runa and his wife to dinner today.”

“Oh! Pere-nim and Orca-nim will be coming over tonight as well.”

Yulian thought for a moment about Grace’s statement before speaking.

“If I knew everyone was gathering, I would have invited Tuma Takaka-nim, the Greatest Warriors, and the Red Storm as well.”

Yulian must have been really happy as he walked into the paoe with the smile still on his face.

The two women followed in behind him and started to prepare the food for their upcoming visitors. It was normal for even the wives of the Glow to prepare the meal for their husband.

As for these two women, they actually enjoyed this task and with their anticipated delivery date still being about three months away, they were still able to prepare everything by themselves.

A bit later, the Runa couple, as well as Pere and Orca and their respective wives entered the paoe. The inside of the paoe was instantly full of people.

Everybody laughed merrily and enjoyed the time together with one another.

As the dinner time slowly came to an end, Yulian started to speak.

“I am happy that I will be able to see the birth of my two children before heading out to war. While I am away, please take care of your nephews for me.”

“Hahaha, hyung-nim, you are already worried about your children?”

As Pere let out a laugh before responding, Orca started to laugh as well before responding.

“Both little hyung-nim and the Assistant Warrior-nim will remain at Pareia in case of a potential invasion by the SHuarei. While you are away, my nephews will grow tall and strong. You do not have to worry.”

“It is the same for all children, but children are Pareia’s future. I want to show those children a glorified Pareia and a unified desert. Let’s all work hard and suffer just a little more until we can make that into our reality.”

“It is something we have to do. There is no reason to call it suffering.”

As Pere responded once more, Yulian shared some of the concerns he had.

“Things have been going well lately and only good things have been happening that I am a bit worried. Isn’t there a saying that says we need to be cautious when we are happy? It might just be saying always stay alert, but we need to maintain our vigilance regarding the Shuarei and the Silence Empire.”

“Hyung-nim, seeing you speak like that, you really must be very happy. However, you do not need to worry since we have an Assistant Warrior who says he can see the entire desert and the

continent while sitting right here next to us.”

Orca started to smile before looking toward Runa, and Runa slightly bowed his head to show his appreciation before starting to respond.

“We are putting a large portion of our funds toward keeping track of what both sides are doing, so there should be no instances of being completely stabbed in the back. I also understand the concern the Glow has, but I wish to tell the Glow that he does not have to worry.”

Yulian nodded his head to show that he understood. However, it would be a lie to say he was no longer worried at all.

Book 4-7.7

It was hard to believe at first.

The patrol warriors had captured foreigners from the continent, and that foreigner was claiming to be a diplomat from the Silence Empire with whom they had never traded with before. How could any of them believe what he was saying?

There was no way a diplomat of the Empire would only secretly bring a few people like this. They would have had many nobles, knights protecting those nobles, as well as soldiers who reported to those knights in order to show the strength of their empire.

Normally, the Silence Empire would send no less than 200 people.

But this man's amazing amount of knowledge, as well as the hand-written note from the Crown Prince and the material offerings he brought with them made it seem plausible.

The three Glows were all completely shocked, and started to pay more attention to what this diplomatic party had to say.

The Silence Empire had apparently selected this united tribe as their ally in the Eastern desert and wanted to work together to take care of Pareia, which was a danger to both the Empire and their allies.

The Glows were surprised about three things. They were surprised that Silence was worried about Pareia, they were surprised that Pareia had enough strength for this large Empire to acknowledge them, and most importantly, they were surprised that Silence had picked them as an ally.

The people of the desert despised using outside help in their battles.

Even if you looked at Pareia, the reason Pareia's oases chiefs backed Yulian during the revolt was because of the fact that the

Silence was involved in that rebellion.

That should have been enough reason to chase that diplomat away, but with fire on their heels from the danger with Pareia, the three Glows were paying careful attention to what the other two Glows might do.

“I guess you really don’t know whether Pareia’s blade will be pointed to the Western Desert or to your Empire after they unite the Eastern Desert.”

Seeing Kinicks give an answer that was neither an acceptance or decline, the fat man who called himself the Silence Empire’s diplomat was smiling internally. He was happy that it was not a rejection.

He was someone who studied and researched the desert more than anybody else in the continent. He knew what the pride of the desert warriors was about, he knew what they considered to be amazing, and he definitely knew that he was probably going to be able to achieve his goal of coming here based on their answer.

“I know that the three Glows are strong enough to overwhelm Pareia on your own, but wouldn’t it be better to reduce the damage as much as possible? We just want to develop a relationship with this united tribe that you have created and work together for both of our benefits.”

The man was smiling after successfully managing to keep up the Glows’ pride while getting his message across at the same time.

“Hmm hmm, but for the continent to interject in the desert’s war.....”

As Nakatin let out a fake cough and slowed down his words, the man quickly followed up.

“Of course the the esteemed Glows can take them on, and our Empire is similarly focused on fighting against a crawling kingdom who doesn’t know what mess they are getting themselves into.

That is why we will not do anything like send you soldiers. However, we do hope to relieve you of one of your concerns.”

“How would you know of our concerns?”

As Nakatin asked back, the man nodded his head before taking out a paper from his chest pocket and handing it out to the three Glows.

“I presume that all three of you are worried about the same thing. If you truly are worried about the same thing, I believe I have come with the solution to your problem. Of course we will keep it an absolute secret that we helped you. Something like this would be better for only the three esteemed Glows of the unified tribes to know about, and to be honest with you, we are making this offer after seeing the majestic nature of the three Glows.”

The man continued to suck up to the Glows as he offered his solution.

“Please write your biggest worry on that piece of paper. I will also write what I think it is on a different paper. If all of us agree on the same worry point, we will only offer you assistance regarding that aspect. Of course we will do it secretly. We will not benefit from anyone knowing we provided you with assistance.”

Nakatin and the other two Glows peeked at each other. However, there was not a single person who was against it. Didn't the man say that everything will be done in secret? The three Glows looked at each other before starting to write on the piece of paper in front of them. Seeing the three of them starting to write, the man was thinking that it was finally over. He had successfully completed this mission as well.

Scribble.

Letters started to appear on top of the paper. It was a really short moment, but there were tons of concerns that appeared in their minds.

The four men looked at each other before putting their papers at the center of the table.

The quicksand river.

These three words were written on all of their papers as if they had made a promise on what to write.

The three Glows looked around at everyone while the man started to smile. No matter what kind of war you were in, it was uncomfortable to have enemies potentially attacking on two sides.

“As I expected, everybody has the same concern. I presume that all heroes have the same thoughts. As for me, I just used my head to come up with this thought; I am no hero, hahaha.”

As the man started to laugh out loud, the three Glows started to think that this man must have a high position in the Silence Empire.

They were Glows who ruled over tens of thousands of tribe members; they had at least some discernment in recognizing powerful people.

‘I would always be worried if someone like this wanted to get revenge on me.’

‘The type of person who would smile as they stab you in the back.’

There were four people in the paoe, but all of their thoughts were different.

Kinicks decided to ask the question seeing that the other two Glows were looking at each other without saying anything.

“Alright then, what kind of help will you be giving us regarding the river?”

“Shouldn’t you float some as well?”

The impatient Nakatin urged the man on.

“What do you mean float some as well?”

“The quicksand river has been around forever, but the reason that it has become a concern is because of the fact that there are now ships full of people on the quicksand river. So then wouldn't the problem be solved if the three Glows also floated some ships as well?”

All of them had blank expressions at the man's response.

“You make it sound so easy. We do not have much time right now. How will we find time to build the ships and train our warriors?”

Kupepa calmed Nakatin down before calmly asking.

“I presume there is a reason you would say something like that.”

“Of course there is a method. If they have built something that nobody had thought about before, we just have to do the same thing and use something they would never expect to cause them damage. After that, the quicksand river will no longer belong to Pareia but to you three Glows.”

This man. The diplomat named Janet Le Borrea confidently responded as he started to smile.

End of chapter.

Book 4-8.1

Skirmish

An unexpected battle and defeat.

We will laugh it off since we can easily repay this debt.

Pareia's preparations for war were getting more complete day by day.

The better the preparations, the less injuries you will end up with during the war. That much was obvious. Each and every one of the warriors were precious right now; neither Yulian nor Runa wanted to lose those precious warriors because they did not plan adequately.

"Not much time is left."

"I believe everything will be ready in about half a month. If we can do that, we should have some extra time before heading out to war."

"It is probably best to give the warriors time to rest once everything is ready to go."

"Of course. They worked really hard to prepare; we need to give them time to recharge as well."

Honestly speaking, there were no nations that let their soldiers go home right before a war. People tend to not want to leave once they relax at home, and their senses that they have been sharpening become dull once more. Who would give them leave when their hearts may grow weak right before war? The usual course of action would be to show them a battle between wild animals or sparring sessions with one another as entertainment to get them excited.

But it was different for a desert warrior. It was okay for them to go home for a break to relax. There was no chance of a desert

warrior becoming weak or their senses becoming dull because of resting at home.

In fact, it actually strengthened their resolve because of the thought about how they could bring happiness and peace for their family by going to war. As for their senses, that was something that naturally came out when they were in the battlefield.

“We will have a Greatest Warrior meeting soon and can tell them about our plan at that time. Is there anything else we should tell them?”

“I have nothing special to say.”

A messenger warrior urgently ran toward Yulian while the two men were talking.

“Urgent message for the Glow.”

The messenger warrior must have really rushed over as his entire body was full of dust and he smelled pungent of sweat, even though he was a couple steps away.

“What is going on?”

“A message for the Glow. Greatest Warrior Thriger has been injured and 3 ships were heavily damaged.”

“What?”

Yulian and Runa both shouted out at the same time at the messenger warrior’s message. Captain Thriger and the ships were the most important pieces for this war.

They were planning on moving the main forces through the quicksand river instead of the desert. If they lost a couple ships right now, they would face some difficulties with their plan. Most importantly, it was extremely difficult to move a lot of ships at the same time without Captain Thriger.

“What caused such things to happen?”

“I was told that another tribe had appeared on the quicksand

river.”

This message shocked Yulian and Runa once more. Who else but their tribe could be on the quicksand river?

“Where is Greatest Warrior Thriger right now?”

“They have anchored at port and have created a defensive formation at that location.”

“The number of enemies?”

As Runa interjected from the side, the messenger warrior started to frown. He had not gotten that information.

“The next messenger will bring more specific details. The message that I was given was that the enemy has appeared on the quicksand river and that Greatest Warrior Thriger was injured.”

“Good work.”

Yulian sent the messenger warrior back before turning toward Runa.

Runa had lost to Pareia when he was with the Wikaly because of the quicksand river. Hearing unexpected news from the quicksand river had caused his head to be chaotic for a moment.

But even that was only for a moment. Runa quickly came back to his senses and urgently started to speak to Yulian.

“There are currently less than 10,000 warriors on the ships. If they could not handle the enemies, it was probably more than that. Can the Glow urgently lead the Red Storm over to the ships?”

“I understand.”

As Yulian started to move to prepare, Runa grabbed Yulian’s arm.

“If you believe they were unable to stop the enemy because they were outnumbered, please make them retreat right away. You must make them retreat if that is the case.”

“What would happen to the ships if we retreat?”

Runa shook his head at Yulian’s question.

“We cannot do anything even if they are destroyed. We can always rebuild the ships later, but we will need a long time to retrain someone who can perfectly maneuver those ships. If we lose Captain Thriger and the crew from the continent, we may have issues running the ships in the future.”

“I understand.”

“I will send the training warriors and Pere-nim as fast as I can as well.”

Yulian quickly gathered the Red Storm as Runa had requested and started to urgently ride to the quicksand river.

Pareia’s Greatest Warrior Thriger preferred the title Captain better than the title Greatest Warrior.

It was because his preferences from being a ship person in the past still remained. The sea was a rough environment and somewhere the crew had to completely obey the Captain’s command, but that only happened because the captain and the crew were very close to each other.

The difference between Greatest Warrior and Captain was probably just the fact that you didn’t need to add ‘nim’ to the end of Captain.

Rather than Greatest Warrior-nim, Captain was all that was needed.

That was why the team working for Thriger had always just called him Captain instead of Greatest Warrior.

“Captain. I see something coming toward us.”

One of the warriors who was looking around on top of the mast shouted loudly down below.

“Hmm? What else would be out here other than monsters? If it

can be seen from far away, it can only be a Sand Dragon. I guess we hit the jackpot today. Everyone prepare for battle.”

“Captain-nim, but based on the way they are moving or the fact that a lot of them are gathered together makes me believe it is not a Sand Dragon.”

“Hmm? It is moving in a group?”

As the monster on top of the pyramid, there was never a time when Sand Dragons moved as a group. The most you would see is a male and a female moving together.

“Let’s still prepare for battle. The only thing other than us on this damned river is going to be a monster.”

Thriger shouted instructions to his crew.

Thriger was no longer the type of Captain to just command one ship. He was now in charge of all twelve ships.

As the red flag signaling battle went up the post, the eleven other ships surrounding them all started to prepare for battle as well.

They were currently training in their defensive formations, so each ship had about 600 warriors each. About 300 of them were needed to actually move the ship.

The remaining three hundred warriors were quickly setting up Runa’s new weapon the Mult-Arrow (a weapon that can shoot ten arrows at once), as well as the Volley Stars.

“What is that?”

Thriger started to frown after seeing a bunch of small objects heading toward them in a group.

What Thriger had seen was a group of small boats.

They seemed very small to fit only about five people each, but they had an extremely large sail. This group of boats were quickly approaching them.

Thriger could not instantly determine whether they were friend or foe. He would have definitely taken care of them at a distance if it was a monster, but the opponent was also human.

Thriger could have never expected that this slight hesitation will end up causing such a large damage to the Desert Runners.

“Raise the blue flag.”

Captain Thriger’s order finally fell. He needed to first determine whether they were friend or foe. If they knew about the sailor’s code, they would stop after seeing this blue flag.

Unfortunately, the boats ignored the signal of the blue flag and continued to approach. The moment they reached into their firing range, Thriger urgently ordered an attack.

“Damn bastards! Whoever is prepared to fire shoot them down!”

What Thriger had seen was the five warriors on the small boats pulling back the bowstring with their flaming arrows.

Once Thriger gave his order, the Volley Star, which was capable of shooting long distances, was aimed up into the air. They did not have a restriction to the number of arrows like they used to have in the past, but they still did not have many arrows.

Maybe they would have had more if there was a chance of another tribe having ships that required them to battle. Monsters were easily taken care of by a single Volley Star arrow from each of the twelve ships. That was why they had no reason to carry a lot of them.

A total of around 30 large arrows floated up into the air, and the experienced Volley Star marksmen managed to sink around 20 ships with a single attack.

“No need to retrieve the arrows. Cut the line and load another one.”

Thriger urgently ordered his crew.

This was not the ocean. If the enemy came close and bombarded them with flaming arrows, there was no way for them to put out the fire with just the drinking water they had on board.

They loaded up once more and fired the second Volley Star. At the same time, the Mult-Arrow fired tens of arrows into the air as well.

Unfortunately, the aim of the Mult-Arrow was terrible compared to the Volley Star. They managed to land some damage just by the sheer number of arrows fired, but it was very minimal.

It was because the marksmen who trained in the Mult-Arrow were all back on land. The Mult-Arrow was actually a weapon to be used on land; it was only on the ships right now to be transported.

By the time they were preparing their third arrow, the Desert Runner was already in the range of the enemy attack.

Thousands of flaming arrows were flung into the air. Thankfully, they had to create a really high arc that many of the arrows did not manage to land on the ship. They were too afraid of the Mult-Arrow to get any closer.

“Retreat. All units retreat.”

Once Thriger gave the command to retreat, the Desert Runner brigade started to retreat.

Book 4-8.2

The Red Desert was set up to fight against monsters and transport people. It was not prepared to fight against human enemies both in equipment and more importantly, number of warriors.

They were caught off guard because they had never expected to fight against the enemy on the quicksand river. If they had known about the identity of those small boats in advance, they would have set up their shields to secure their defenses.

The brigade slowly started to move backwards as the enemy continued to chase after them and fling flaming arrows.

“Ugh!”

Thriger felt a burning pain in his shoulder as he fell backwards.

“Captain.”

The first mate quickly put out the fire in Thriger’s shoulder by patting it down with his own hands. That made Thriger feel more pain in his shoulder and groan in pain, but he clenched his teeth to bear the pain.

“Are you okay?”

“Send the signal. Full focus on retreat. Do not even look back.”

As Thriger frowned significantly and informed the first mate, the first mate nodded his head and delivered Thriger’s order.

The Desert Runner started to speed up. Although it was slow at first, the unique characteristic of these ships were that they quickly sped up as they received wind behind their sails.

Because they were able to achieve a speed that was impossible for the small boats to duplicate, the small boats caused small fires on multiple locations of the Desert Runner before quickly retreating backwards.

After they were safely away from the enemy, Thriger gave his command.

“Draw up some sand to put the fire out. Do not think about drinking any water for the next few days and just pour it all.”

The warriors started to use the sand to start putting out the fire. Unfortunately, one of the ships reached a point where they could not put out the fire and the crew had to escape to another unit.

Thriger maintained his consciousness and guided the crew every step of the way. He could finally relax and fainted backwards once he could see Pareia’s port with his own eyes.

“Just wait for me you bastards.”

Those were Captain Thriger’s last words as he fainted.

“Hahaha, a complete victory.”

Nakatin was extremely excited as the messenger warrior brought news of a victory.

“This is just the beginning. I’m sure that Pareia was caught off guard this time. In addition, we did not manage to completely sink even one of their ships.”

Kupepa felt like they were too excited for not having achieved much. Pareia was not an easy opponent. He even thought that they only reason they were able to get this victory was because Pareia was not prepared to fight against humans. If that was the case, it was obvious that they would definitely be prepared next time.

“Must you pour cold water on a happy moment like that? We need to enjoy this victory in order to raise the morale of the warriors so that they fight even more valiantly next time.”

“The reason we were successful in today’s battle was because the enemy was lacking information and we caught them by surprise. Most importantly, it is not sitting well with me that the battle is no longer fair because of our unification.”

“That is already in the past. What good will it do to regret it now?”

As Nakatin argued back, Kupepa responded as if he was trying to convince Nakatin.

“I just mean to say we should not get too drunk on one victory and get prepared for the next battle.”

“Gentlemen, it is not good for the two of you to fight on a happy day like this. Both of you are right. We will allow the warriors to enjoy the victory a bit while we prepare for the next battle.”

Both of them nodded at Kinick’s words.

“It is true that Pareia was not prepared for this attack. However, it does not change the fact that we can fight against Pareia’s ships with the magic boats that the Silence has prepared for us.”

The items that the Silence Empire had provided for them were these small boats with levitation magic imbued in them. Crown Prince Shione had gathered a lot of information about Pareia and realized that the reason they were able to grow so large was because of the quicksand river.

That was why he thought that giving this unified tribe a way to contend on the quicksand river would limit the amount of materials Pareia was getting from the continent, as well as restrict Pareia’s future movements in case their war against the Kingdom started.

There was no way they could build large ships like Pareia’s when they did not know where or when the war might break out.

That was the reason he thought of the small boats, as well as the fact that flaming arrows would be useful because this was not the ocean.

Even if they were not enough to destroy Pareia’s ships, Pareia still would not be able to move around as freely through the quicksand river. That was why the three Glows accepted the magic

and materials the Silence provided for them.

That was how they came to today's victory.

“We need to start now in training at least 30,000 warriors to reside on the quicksand river. This attack may have slowed down Pareia's invasion by a bit, so we need to utilize this time to the best of our abilities.”

The other two Glows agreed with Kinicks's suggestion. They had already planned on putting 50,000 of the 100,000 warriors by the quicksand river and the other 50,000 to the southern oasis. They were then going to observe Pareia's movements before making any adjustments to the numbers.

But if there was now a balance of power on the quicksand river, they could keep 20,000 warriors in reserve to move them in either direction much faster than before. There was no way any of them would be opposed to this decision.

“That is a good idea. We need to first raise the accuracy of our archers. It will also not be a bad idea to think about the future and start building a ship the size of Pareia's. We need a ship that size in order to continue our development.”

As Kupepa agreed and brought up another suggestion, the two Glows agreed with this as well.

“I am suddenly getting more confident. It might not be a bad idea to use this momentum for us to be the ones to invade Pareia.”

As Nakatin responded in an energetic voice, Kinicks and Kupepa shook their heads internally but smiled on the outside as they had no desire to destroy this good atmosphere.

Yulian rushed to the port before relaxing after seeing that the enemy was not chasing after the ships.

He had heard that one of the ships had burned down into the

bottom of the quicksand river, but he was just thankful and relieved that the injuries to the warriors was very minimal.

Honestly speaking, this was only because Yulian and Runa did not know much about ships. It was the case in the ocean and the quicksand river as well; there was no way for a small boat to catch up to the speed of a large ship.

Maybe the small boats might be faster in the beginning as they first start to catch the wind, but as time goes by, there was no way for them to catch up to a large ship's maximum speed with their multiple large sails.

Furthermore, Thriger was an individual who used to pretty much rule the ocean. He recognized that something was wrong and quickly ordered the retreat. Although they had been ambushed in a method they never saw coming, they were able to limit the damage to one lost ship.

“What about Greatest Captain Thriger?”

After listening to Thriger's first mate, Yulian asked about Thriger's condition.

“He received an injury from the enemy's arrow, but it is not enough to endanger his life.

“The heavens have helped us.”

Yulian was extremely relieved. As Runa had mentioned, they were worried about losing Thriger and the warriors who were adept at ship-related information. That was why they had rushed here without rest. They were extremely worried about what may have happened.

Both Yulian and the Red Storm had extremely red eyes after rushing forward for two days without any rest, but Yulian could feel all his fatigue going away knowing that there was not much damage.

Yulian felt like he was flying as he moved to the paoe that was

used as the control center. He then called out loudly as he entered the entrance of the paoe.

“Greatest Captain Thriger.”

When Yulian had arrived, Thriger had been laying on his bed thinking about the bastards that made him eat water and contemplating how to get his revenge.

“Glow! Ugh.”

Thriger turned his head to see Yulian calling out to him and tried to quickly get up before letting out a groan and frowning from the terrible pain in his shoulder.

“Do not get up. An injured warrior must relax.”

Yulian quickly approached Thriger to help him down.

“Glow, I have failed you.”

“What happened?”

Once the Glow asked what happened, Thriger started to grind his teeth as he answered.

“I thought that it was a monster at first, but it ended up being small boats.”

“Boats?”

Yulian was completely shocked. There was no way other boats existed on the quicksand river. There should be no other boats there.

“Yes. They were small but definitely boats. It was large enough to fit four or five people, and it had a small sail and key that anybody could easily maneuver it with a small amount of training. I hesitated for a moment as I could not determine whether they were friend or foe. That moment of hesitation led to the enemy’s flaming arrows.”

Thriger started to explain what happened to Yulian.

Book 4-8.3

“Glow, I apologize for the injuries to Pareia’s precious warriors and the damage to Pareia’s precious ships.”

Thriger bowed his head while lying down and Yulian shook his head.

“Mm, it will not be a problem. I am just thankful. I am disappointed at losing a ship, but it is amazing that we were able to take such an ambush and lose just one ship. There is no need to feel too bad about it, Greatest Warrior Thriger.”

“I will definitely destroy all of them. If I had known they were the enemy... I will definitely destroy those amateurs who barely know how to maneuver a ship.”

Thriger grinded his teeth once more as he started to speak. He was confident.

He was sure that those bastards did not know much about ships. They had the recklessness to rush forward against a giant ship. The stupidity to retreat because they were afraid of the Mult-Arrow when they had achieved certain victory.

All of that showed they did not know much about ships. If he was in their shoes, he would have stuck right next to the stopped large ship to be in the blind spot of the Mult-Arrow before lighting the ships on fire on all four sides to sink all twelve ships.

Yulian clenched his fist and pushed it forward in front of Thriger.

“Of course you will. Warriors must always get their revenge. Quickly recover so that you can return the favor.”

Even if it was an ambush, a part of the responsibility for this loss was on him. But Yulian did not fault him at all and just tried to encourage him. This made Thriger extremely upset.

If he had served such a king in the past...a king needs to act like a king, but his former king was not like a king.

Thriger's expression changed once more as he thought about the past.

Runa and Pere arrived at the port the next day with 20,000 warriors.

The two of them were finally able to relax after listening to Yulian's explanation of what happened. They had been worried the whole time on their way over.

Runa thought that they needed to put a number of warriors here at the port if the enemy also had a way to access the quicksand river, but Thriger shook his head.

"We just need to be prepared like the past with around 500 warriors. Assistant Warrior, I do have something to ask of you though. I need Mult-Arrow archers and construction workers. There will be a slight change to the exterior while we fix up the destroyed components."

Thriger was thinking that the sides of the deck were too low to defend against the enemy archers. It needed to come up at least to the chest level from the current hip level. This was not a problem since all they needed to do was put up moveable boards only on the sides with the enemy archers.

Unfortunately, the concern about the enemy's fire arrows still remained.

"As for the most important request, it has to do with defending against the enemy's fire arrows. The wood we used are very thick that it will not be easy to catch on fire, but once it does, it will almost instantly spread throughout the ship. We need to store water to put out any fires. We will also need to increase the warriors on the ships to a minimum of 20,000."

Runa turned pale at Thriger's requests. Warriors were one thing,

but it was extremely difficult to transport water all the way ehre.

‘To put water on all elven ships...and an extremely large amount at that.’

Runa was thinking really hard to try to find a solution.

Water was needed on a daily basis. If you did not drink enough water in this hot desert, you will definitely become injured. That was why everyone made sure to drink plenty of water unless they were in the middle of an intense training session. There was already carts after carts bringing water to the port for the six to seven thousand warriors whow ere on the Desert Runner.

But they needed a lot more water, not even to drink but to put out fires? This was what turned Runa extremely pale. This was not something that would be solved with your typical water pouches.

Thriger, who seemed to have figured out Runa’s concern, started to speak.

“Assistant Warrior, it will not take long. I have already come up with a plan to destroy all of them. No matter who the enemy may be, I will not lose to anybody when it comes to a ship to ship or brigade to brigade battle.”

Runa had no choice but to nod his head after seeing Thriger speak so confidently. He must have a solid plan to be speaking like this.

It did not seem like he needed to give any suggestions, and most importantly, Captain Thriger probably knew better than he did about this river. All Runa could do was trust Thriger and follow his request.

Yulian asked with concern.

“Greatest Warrior Thriger, will you be okay? Revenge is great, but I hope you do not push yourself too hard.”

“I will be fine. In fact, I would probably die faster from anger if I

do not get my revenge as soon as possible.

Yulian was relieved that Thriger was quickly recovering and asked with a satisfied expression.

“Is there anything else you need?”

“Nothing. However, there are a few things for me to experiment with for the real battle. It may take a lot of money.”

“If we lose the river, we cannot transport materials anymore. Do whatever you need to do. Greatest Warriors have the right to follow their plans.”

“Thank you, Glow.”

“Things have become quite annoying. Will this affect our plans?”

“Not at all.”

Yulian started to ask Runa about the impact this had on their plans as soon as they returned from Pareia. Surprisingly, Runa shook his head.

“Are you saying we should proceed as planned?”

“Yes. We have completed all of our preparations and have nothing else to prepare. The enemy will prepare more every extra day we give them. It will actually hurt us more to give them extra time.”

Yulian asked with a worried expression at Runa’s unexpected answer.

“But what about the quicksand river?”

“We need to cleanly destroy them. Captain Thriger will do a good job. We can only trust him as our main force will need to go up the quicksand river.”

“What about traveling through land?”

As Yulian asked once more, Runa shook his head and sternly answered.

“We cannot do that. In order to maximize the impact of our 40,000 warriors, we need to make sure to avoid being detected by the enemy patrol warriors.”

“I know about that too, but wouldn’t it be the same whether we go up the quicksand river or the Red Storm and I get rid of the enemy patrol warriors?”

“It will take too long to move the troops. The reason I am being stubborn about the quicksand river has to do with the speed of the Desert Runners. Even if the enemy patrol warriors manage to spot the Desert Runners, we can still change up our moving speed to trick them.”

“I guess we can only trust Captain Thriger.”

Runa started to smile at Yulian’s words.

“It will only be a matter of time as he is already grinding his teeth in anger. We may have lost a ship, but it is beneficial to us as now we can say that they have made the first move. In addition, if we cause some more dust on land, the united tribe will put more than half of their troops to defend against us on land.”

“That is the best thing I’ve heard in awhile.”

“Either way, we need to proceed as originally planned.”

Yulian motioned to say he understood as he tilted his head back to think.

‘I hope Greatest Warrior Thriger does a good job. Everything now rests in his hands.’

Book 4-8.4

Thriger was watching the team fix up the damages by the fire as he started to get angry all over again. The ships were in pristine condition prior to this attack.

How cool was it to see that slick body cut through the sand with the wind behind its sails? It angered Thriger to see the bulky patches on the slick body of his beloved ship.

Only ship people know just how much love a captain has for his ship.

“I will destroy those bastards.”

Thriger confirmed his thoughts once more before taking another look at the ships that were being fixed. He then guided the team about what needed to be done before riling up the crew.

By the time the pain in his shoulder started to fade away, the ships were pretty much done being fixed as well.

Thriger called the captains of the other ships to report to him before closing his eyes for a moment and processing everything he had been thinking about until now.

The arrows, Mult-Arrow, and the 20,000 warriors from the Large Oasis to use those weapons. Most importantly, the enemy was not knowledgeable about ships at all. They wouldn't know anything about the direction of the flowing sand or even about how to properly use the wind to their advantage.

If they did, they would not have retreated after sinking just one ship in the last battle.

‘How should I get my revenge?’

Thriger had full confidence that he would win. It was obvious. There was no way he could lose to a bunch of amateurs when he had a total of 11 ships under his command. Absolutely impossible.

It would be fine to use a direct attack or even to be sly and trick them. What he was thinking about was how he could snap the enemy's morale in half and make sure they would never step foot in this quicksand river ever again.

That was extremely important to Thriger.

‘The number of enemies from last time was around 20,000. Hmm...it would be difficult to get rid of them all at once.’

Thriger was thinking about the thousands of small ships from the last attack. He had determined that it would be impossible to sweep them all at once with his brigade's fire power.

With so many boats being spread out far and wide, using the Mult-Arrow and arrows would not be enough.

‘.....!’

It was at that moment that a thought rushed through Thriger's head.

“Right. The enemy is an extremely small boat. Yes, extremely small boats indeed.”

“Muhahahahahahaha.”

Thriger suddenly let out a loud laugh.

The other captains had been gathering after receiving Thriger's message to come over. All of them just sat there in confusion at Thriger's continued laughter. They could only stare at him and wait.

Once all of the captains had gathered, Thriger suddenly stopped laughing and looked toward the captains before starting to speak.

“Is everybody here?”

“Yes, captain.”

As one captain responded as the representative, Thriger looked around at all of them before asking a question.

“Are you angry?”

“.....”

“Hmm? You’re not angry?”

As the captains remained silent at his question, Thriger asked again in surprise.

Griiiiiind.

There still was no answer. Instead, all he could hear was the grinding of teeth. They seemed to be embarrassed that they were defeated without being able to do anything about it.

“Stop grinding your teeth and answer me.”

Even the eleven lead warriors were grinding their teeth. This was especially true about the warrior who had been the captain of the destroyed Ship 6. Just how much must he have been thinking about this since the attack? His face was no longer the same shape.

“I am angry and full of resentment. That was not a fight.”

The captain of Ship 6 answered with an expression that clearly seemed to indicate he was holding his anger back.

Snap.

Thriger snapped his finger before continuing on.

“You are right. That was not a fight. That is why we need to return the favor in the exact same way. All of you must remember how much interest the Glow has on this upcoming battle.”

“Yes, captain.”

Seeing the captains respond in a vigorous voice, Thriger pushed forward the arrow that he had been holding in his hand.

“You should know how much money the tribe is pouring into us. Precious steel is being used to make our arrows that we use once and do not retrieve. The Glow even mentioned that we can use everything we have in this upcoming battle.”

Thriger stopped for a moment before continuing on.

After being a commander for a very long time, he knew when to stop and when to continue. This was one of the things that made Thriger a great captain.

“There is no way for us to lose.”

Thriger shrugged both of his shoulders, opened up both of his palms and started to speak in a joking tone. This made the other captains confused for a moment.

He had been building up the suspense before suddenly making such a funny action. But that confusion was only for a moment. Thriger’s actions made the captains forget about the dark rain clouds that were filling their minds and automatically start to smile.

“Captain, you are correct.”

“The enemy has fed us water. If that’s the case, shouldn’t we capture the bastards that fed us water and make them choke on sand?”

“Absolutely, Captain!”

“Alright then. Let’s go make them choke on sand and even feed a couple arrows to the ones that have itchy assholes. If their asshole is full of shit so one arrow is not enough, then...well..., I guess an extra shot from the Volley Star should be enough to clear their ass.”

“We are ready to go, Captain.”

Thriger put on a satisfied smile before turning around to head to his ship.

“Then let’s go. We need to return the favor.”

TO BE CONTINUED

Author’s Note - As Book 4 comes to an end

After having a lot of trouble with the story not going right in the middle, Book 4 is finally finished. ^o^

‘I want to show something exhilarating this time!’ Rather than something like that, I was focused on the different individuals’ and their stories, as well as setting the scene for the story that would be shared in Book 5 as well as the ending. I think I managed to show a couple different scenes related to that in this book.

Personally, I am deeply troubled at the fact that it is not entertaining for me to see any of the side characters moving around other than Venersis.

It is for that reason that I have high expectations for Violet.

I wanted a stronger character in my mind, and with Yulian tied down by the title of Glow which prevents him from taking certain actions, I wanted another individual who was full of charisma.

I want to thank Yujung noo-nim who is always working hard to catch my typos and errors with character names. [2]

I also wanted to thank all of the readers who have read until the end of Book 4. I hope that you will continue with me on this journey for two more books.

I will work hard to become a better writer and to make Red Storm a bit better.

Sincerely,

Noh Cyungchan, August 2006~!

Translator Thoughts - As Book 4 Comes to an End

We are 2/3 of the way done with the Series! Just Book 5 and Book 6 left as we come to the end of Red Storm. Thank you all for sticking with me so far and I hope that you continue to join me on this adventure.

As of this moment when I write this, I have not read any of Book 5. As mentioned before, I personally do not like reading too far

ahead so that the story remains a suspense for me as well (although I ended up binging Book 4 once the action started to pick up ^.^')

Let's see what the author has in store for us for the upcoming two books!

Miraclerifle out!

Book 5

Book 5-1.1

Counterattack

Let's nicely return the favor.

The man's eyes were shining with bliss.

He had finally managed to complete the spell without stopping.

“Hahahahat!”

The man laughed out loud. He then reflected on the terribly long year that he spent trying to memorize this one spell.

“I need to test it out.”

The man stopped laughing and started to mumble to himself.

What it claimed to do was so hard to believe that he could not really believe it without seeing it with his own eyes. That was why he needed to test it out.

But in his current situation, there was not many places he could test it out. Since he was weak, he could not travel alone to a place to test it. At the same time, all of the warriors were currently extremely busy with training.

“What to do?”

The man started to scratch his head.

“Should I have just focused on incantations? But even teacher was extremely excited about this. He also said this was another way of studying since the methods were not very different.”

After debating it for a while, the man closed his book and made up his mind.

“Since we are thick in preparations, it might be better to practice incantations that can be used. I can test this out later.”

The man must have been used to mumbling to himself as he

continued to mumble and pack up his tools for chanting incantations.

“Are you scared?”

As Hanna, one of the Greatest Warriors who always put Venersis down, started to speak, Venersis’s eyebrows started to twitch. But he held back. If an internal struggle was to happen right now, it was certain that Pareia’s blade, which was currently pointed at the Eastern United tribe, would quickly turn toward their Shuarei.

Pareia was already finished preparing for war.

“You are going overboard.”

Hangry Elbotta, the Shuarei’s Glow, spoke toward Hanna as if he was scolding him, but Venersis was flabbergasted.

The person who called this Greatest Meeting today and brought up this situation was the Glow himself.

Of course Venersis was aware of the fact that he was isolated every time there was a Greatest Meeting. It was even worse right now because he was opposed to this war.

“Greatest Warrior Venersis.”

Elbotta called out to Venersis in a soft voice.

“Yes, Glow.”

Once Venersis responded, Elbotta slowly started to ask.

“Just why are you opposed to it? Wouldn’t we have a good chance of succeeding if we attack Pareia’s side while they are fighting against the united tribe? I think there could be no better opportunity.”

“Pareia might be headed out to war, but Pareia’s current number of warriors is extremely high. I don’t know how many of their warriors will be heading out for this campaign, but I’m certain that they would have put a lot of thought toward our possible actions.”

“It’s the same as saying you cannot hunt a wild animal because you are afraid of it.”

Even with Hanna mocking him on the side, Venersis pretended not to hear him as he continued on.

“This is not the right time. Our Shuarei has barely managed to return to our former strength. We need to wait for the right moment. If Pareia loses this campaign and receives a counterattack from the United Tribe, we can attack at an even more advantageous moment.”

“Wouldn’t it be more dangerous if they happen to win and unify the Eastern desert?”

“It will not be easy. Their forces are about the same and it is a defensive war for the United Tribe. There are also a lot of oasis to take over, so it is certain to take a long time. We need to wait. We need to wait until a more perfect opportunity comes our way.”

Even though Venersis was speaking sincerely, the meeting room was still full of chilly gazes. Everyone was feeling like something bad would happen if they did not attack Pareia right now.

Venersis admitted that much too. It would be hard to hold back. Pareia’s strength was getting stronger every day, while they just managed to recover from their losses. They might not want to believe it, but the Shuarei was currently afraid of Pareia.

Attacking right now might be for the best, but something did not sit well with Venersis no matter how much he thought about it. Even with Pareia knowing that the Shuarei had recovered their strength, Pareia’s blade was pointed at the United Tribe instead of their Shuarei.

That was why Venersis did not want to make an uneducated decision and wait around to get more information. Since the Shuarei were completed with their war preparations as well, it would not be too late to observe a bit more before heading out to

war.

“Glow. You do not need to listen to a coward. Please leave it to myself and the other Greatest Warriors. We will instantly pierce through Pareia before returning.”

Hanna spoke in a loud voice to Elbotta.

“You stupid idiot, why are you so rushed? If we wait a bit longer, an advantageous situation will come to us. Pareia will certainly have prepared for our arrival. It is basic strategy to avoid an enemy that is waiting for you while striking an enemy who has shown an opening.”

With Venersis loudly looking down on Hanna, Hanna did not step back. Instead, he responded right back.

“If the tribe’s best warrior claims we will lose even before we go to war, I don’t think we will be able to even win wars we are supposed to win.”

Seeing the two men glare at each other, Elbotta started to speak.

“Both of you Greatest Warriors, please stop. We do not need to fight with each other. Everybody here is praying for our Shuarei’s success.”

The two men turned their heads away at that moment. Elbotta looked toward Venersis who was burning up in anger.

Elbotta might not like Venersis, but he knew that this war would be extremely difficult to win without Venersis. He also knew that people were whispering about how they lost the last war because he did not send Venersis out. Even the Glows of other tribes looked toward him as if he was an idiot for having such an amazing warrior but not utilizing him.

But Elbotta had his reasons as well.

His father, the former Glow, had trusted Venersis way too much.

He agreed to anything and everything Venersis said, but his

father had a tendency to take anything that he, his own son, said as the mumblings of a child. That was why Elbotta wanted to show that he was a Glow who could surpass Venersis.

‘I know that it was wrong. But what can I do now after all of these years?’

Elbotta wanted to return everything back to the way it used to be. He wanted to go back to when he received Venersis’s contract of loyalty. If he could go back in time, he definitely would not act like he did in the past.

Elbotta continued to be conflicted.

But he knew that he really would be an idiot if he continued to hinder Venersis. He clenched his teeth tightly as if to firm his resolve before starting to speak.

“Greatest Warrior Venersis.”

“Yes, Glow.”

“I will give you 30,000 warriors. You can select a second-in-command as you wish. I do not hope for you to destroy Pareia. Just obtain enough oases that we will not be eaten up by Pareia een far into the future.”

“Glow!”

Many chiefs and Greatest Warriors stood up from their seats and called out to Elbotta.

It was an explosive proclamation.

Their Glow who had been working with them all this time to suppress Venersis had suddenly changed his attitude.

Even Venersis himself seemed to be quite surprised as he looked toward Elbotta with extremely large eyes.

“I accept that right now is not the time, but we cannot just wait forever. Just the fact that we are making a move should prevent Pareia from expanding their power as they wish, so that alone

might be sufficient. The current Pareia is a monster.”

“Glow.”

Venersis looked toward Elbotta with admiration. He felt like his Glow had returned to the wise young man from the past. Even Venersis knew why his Glow had suppressed him so much.

That man had finally taken his hand. No matter what anybody said, he was still the blood of the former Glow. Venersis could feel his heart beating excitedly at the fact that his Glow had finally approved of him.

“I will give Greatest Warrior Venersis full command when it comes to war-related items. When it comes to war, his order is my order. I hope for everyone to work together with one heart, one will, to assist him to the best of your abilities.”

Elbotta spoke sternly to show that he will not accept any opposition before immediately standing up and turning away.

Book 5-1.2

Let's row our boat forward~

Across the turbulent quicksand river to the other side~

Where the clear sand is great and the wind is cool, to the field of war~

Thriger's song that had the lyrics changed as he pleased lit the fire in everyone's hearts.

It was finally the day to get their revenge.

The enemy boats were so small that it was possible to hide them on land, but they were bound to find it as long as they continued to thoroughly comb the quicksand river like this.

Thriger had already been searching the quicksand river for an entire week, but they did not manage to find even the tip of the enemy's nose. His only complaint that the strong determination from the beginning was getting a bit weaker.

He still had the desire to destroy the enemy instantly if he met them, but this boring voyage just made him angry.

'I guess I would hide away if I saw a brigade like this coming for me too. I need some type of plan.'

If the enemy was not stupid, there was no way they would try to attack with those tiny ships again. Thriger had overlooked that.

'I'm sure they are focused on finding an opening to launch an ambush. I need a method to draw them out..... what to do.'

Thriger was thinking about how to lure the enemy out. The chances of them coming out were much higher if the brigade was divided up, but that might really make it easy for the enemy to sink them.

'A method to defeat them with a small amount of ships. I need to figure that out. That is the only way to eat them all up even if they

all attack a small group.'

Thriger took the map of the quicksand river out of his chest area and opened it up on the table. He must have been documenting things thoroughly, as the map showed even the slightly change in the sand's flow, as well as the location of all of the different monsters.

'Their base should be around here, so it will be difficult to launch an ambush.'

At first, he had planned on using one or two ships as bait before hiding the rest of them around to area to launch an ambush. However, the enemy's main forces were land troops.

Even if they sent ten squads of patrol warriors, they would be able to find the ships waiting to launch the ambush.

'Should we just block this area off and proceed with the war as planned? Wouldn't there be no problems if our warriors landed in this area at the scheduled time?'

Thriger shook his head. He had forgotten about the fact that the enemy boats could be moved on land.

'This is complicated. Even a barricade will be useless. I guess small boats have that kind of advantage. But what to do? If we just leave them be, it will be quite the problem when we are transporting warriors.'

If the enemy launched a kamikaze style of attack to take down at least one ship, that would be a significant hit to the number of Pareia's warriors. They could not launch the ships full of warriors right now.

'Small boats... really annoying. If this was the ocean, they would have been destroyed by the wild waves.'

Thinking about the fact that they were very small boats, Thriger determined that the scenario he jokingly came up with could really end up being the reality. The problem was that they needed the

numbers to make that happen.

‘Those bastards do not move as a flock.’

Thriger contemplated for a moment before starting to smile at a new thought in his head and shouted loudly to the helmsman.

“Immediately turn the ship toward land! I have a message to send to the large oasis.”

The brigade slowly started to turn toward land at Thriger’s command.

“Aigo, this is hard..”

Grace’s expression as she was saying it was hard to even walk was extremely bright, which was completely opposite of what she was saying. This pain was something she had been looking forward to for a very long time.

She received Yulian’s support as she grabbed her stomach and waddled around before sitting down. She was counting down the days as she started to speak.

“The expected date is only about 10 days away. Greatest Warrior Thriger needs to succeed.”

“He will not lose to anybody on the quicksand river. Do not worry too much. In fact, I am worried about this stomach more.”

Yulian cautiously drew a circle on Grace’s round stomach as he started to caress it. Grace started to blush as she pinched the hand that was on top of her stomach before starting to speak.

“Do not look so relaxed right before a war. The warriors will laugh at you.”

“Everyone likes it. In fact, there are many people who are saying it is a good sign that I am leaving after seeing the birth of two children.”

“Stop talking nonsense. Why are you not nervous at all?”

“What can I do? I’m just very happy. I can’t even sleep these days, knowing that my children are coming into this world.”

Yulian was still smiling as he said that. It made sense though; he had been waiting to have a child for quite a long time.

“Seeing you like this makes me feel like something is off.”

He really did seem to have a loose screw somewhere. As Grace asked with concern, Yulian tapped his head and chest before responding.

“War is war, reality is reality. Keep the head cooled while the heart hot. Do not worry too much as I will make sure to do well on both sides. Right now, I am just enjoying the joy I should feel as the father of a family.”

Grace just shook her head as if to say there was nothing she could do about this crazy man.

“Did you go see Violet?”

“Not yet. Now that I have stopped by to see you, I will go see her.”

“Please pay attention to her. She seems to be having a hard time these days paying attention to a couple different things.”

“Take care of yourself first.”

Grace pushed Yulian away as she answered.

“Please go see Violet now. I’ve had a long time with you already, but after leaving her hometown, you are the only person she has left.”

Yulian was thankful about Grace caring so much about Violet and kissed her on the cheek before starting to walk over to Violet’s paoe.

Violet did not even realize Yulian had walked in, as she was extremely focused on a book.

Yulian was worried Violet would be scared and let out a fake cough. That made Violet finally realize that Yulian was there and start to smile.

“When did you get here?”

“Right now.”

“Have you eaten?”

“Yes. I ate combat food with the warriors. Anyways, what are you looking at that you didn’t even realize someone came in?”

Violet lightly lifted up the book with red writing before answering.

“This is my incantation book. I felt like I needed to review it in order to follow you.”

“Follow me? Review?”

Yulian responded in confusion at Violet’s response.

“This war. I need to go with you.”

“Are you saying that you are thinking about going on the campaign with me?”

“The reason you came to the Shire was to use the strength of our Shire’s incantations as a method to achieve your dream. Wasn’t it?”

“Yes.”

Violet gave him a look of ‘I told you’ at Yulian’s answer.

“I am the one who followed you from the Shire. I am the strongest shaman in both the Shire and this desert.”

“I’m sure that is the case, but what will you do on the campaign?”

Violet sat Yulian down before having an expression that seemed to say ‘isn’t it obvious?’

“What do you mean what will I do. I will follow you to protect our warriors and fight against the enemy.”

“Snort. What do you mean? This is a warrior’s battle.”

“OF course it is. Warriors will fight the warriors battle and the shamans will fight the shamans battle.”

Yulian vigorously shook his head at Violet’s answer.

“What will the warriors say if my wife, and a woman, came to war with us? In addition, you are currently pregnant.”

“The shamans of the Shire do not care whether you are male or female. I also deducted the date and the baby should be born in the next few days. I should be fine about three days after that so you will not need to worry.”

“..., I am quite flabbergasted at hearing something I did not even expect to hear.”

Seeing Yulian’s surprised expression, Violet responded back in the same way.

Book 5-1.3

“I am the one who is anxious. Honestly speaking, I never expected to get pregnant this quickly, but I presumed I would go with you since the timing will be right.”

“Do not do that and just stay here. Grace has done well so far, but I think her work is starting to pile up with the addition of the extra oases. Stay here and help her.”

Violet stood up from her seat after hearing what Yulian had to say, before putting her arms on the side of her hips.

“Honey, I didn’t know you had such thoughts. Even the women of the desert live with fulfilling the responsibilities of their words. Unless Grace-nim asks me for help personally, I will not butt in. That would be like bringing shame to Grace-nim.”

“Why would it be shameful for family members to help each other?”

“Even if it is a family member, would you feel good if someone else took your work? Warriors are not the only ones with responsibilities.”

It must be because Violet used to be the head of a tribe, but her words definitely carried a lot of logic. Yulian could not figure out what to say for a while before finally opening his mouth.

“Either way, you cannot come with us. Why don’t you learn about Tuma Takaka-nim’s work since he is starting to age?”

“I have already memorized all of his work. In addition, I specialize in incantations to harm others.”

“No matter what you say, the answer is no.”

As Yulian continued to share his opposition, Violet put on an angry expression as she started to speak.

“You are not acting like a Glow.”

“What?”

“You are worried about your wife that you are letting go of a method that will easily bring victory to Pareia. You are not acting like a Glow.”

“Ha~!”

Yulian scoffed at this unbelievable response. His abilities as a Glow was being questioned by none other than his own wife.

“It is only right for me to take me with you. You must then use my strength to bring victory to Pareia. I am a woman who came to Pareia for that reason.”

Violet did not give Yulian any time to respond as she continued to stare at him with a firm gaze. Yulian could only internally shake his head.

Grace was a stubborn one, but Violet was almost just as stubborn. Especially in a situation like this where her words were full of logic, there was no way to convince her other than by blocking his ears and not saying anything.

“Glow!”

The moment Yulian was about to say something once more, he heard someone shouting for him from outside.

“Who is it?”

“A messenger warrior has arrived from Greatest Warrior Thriger.”

“From Thriger?”

Yulian quickly headed out and looked toward the messenger warrior who was waiting for him.

“What is the message?”

“Greatest Warrior Thriger has indicated that he urgently needs Shopping.”

“Shopping?”

As the messenger warrior said something unexpected, Yulian responded with a bit of surprise.

“Yes, he clearly said Shopping.”

“Only Grace and I are capable of handling him and Grace will need to give birth in the next few days.”

Yulian mumbled to himself before finally giving a response.

“I understand. Let him know that Shopping will arrive in a few days.”

“Yes, Glow.”

As the messenger warrior rushed away to deliver the response, Yulian thought things through before deciding to have an urgent meeting of Greatest Warriors.

Most of the Greatest Warriors were already at the Large Oasis because they were preparing to head out to war. Thanks to that, they all quickly gathered as soon as they heard Yulian was calling for them.

“The reason I have called this meeting today is because I will be leaving for a bit.”

Everyone started to whisper at Yulian’s statement. A lot of things could go wrong for the commanding officer to leave right before a war.

“Did something happen?”

Yulian nodded his head as Runa asked.

“Greatest Warrior Thriger has asked for Shopping, and currently, I am the only one who can control him.”

“Even so, a lot of things will have to be slowed down if the Glow is not here right now.”

Yulian responded to Runa’s concern.

“I hope that you are able to finish the preparations without delay even while I am not here. I leave it up to you. If Greatest Warrior Thriger is asking for Shopping, he would definitely be aware that I would be coming with him. I think we can take it that he has a method to instantly defeat the enemy to call me over right now.”

Yulian took another look at the Greatest Warriors.

“I will leave Greatest Warrior Egane as the temporary commanding officer while I am away. Runa will discuss with Greatest Warrior Egane to proceed with the preparations. Greatest Warrior Vibli will head out tomorrow as planned. I will not say anything else as nobody here needs me to guide them.”

Yulian’s majestic nature continued to rise each and every day. Although he personally respected Egane and Vibli, he was able to show the demeanor fitting a Glow in a public setting like this.

The three warriors who received orders all bowed their heads and responded.

“We will do as you wish, Glow.”

Grrrowwwwl!

Shopping started to growl as if he was annoyed.

The small monsters in the vicinity that heard Shopping’s growl could only shake in fear.

There may only be a few of them, but the Giant Sand Dragon was the monster that was on top of the food pyramid.

Hearing the voice of that monster made these monsters instinctively shake in fear.

Shopping quickly crawled through the Monster Desert and the quicksand river. It was annoying to do what his owner asked him to do, but he would get eat up significantly if he did not do it properly.

His owner had not given him many orders in the last few years,

but more importantly, he had not been hit even once in the last few years. Grace and Yulian were the only people who could hit Shopping, but that actually made him fear his owner more.

But most importantly, the reason he was able to evolve into a Giant Sand Dragon was because of the strength of his owners. Since Shopping definitely knew this was the case, he had no thoughts about seeking his freedom.

In fact, it was easier to stay by his owner's side. If he was hungry, he just needed to go find wild animals or monsters to eat. There was no point to eat humans since they were extremely tiny. Eating large animals or monsters was much better.

Was that it?

He didn't need to fight for territory with other tribes, and his owner was very happy and played with him when he brought a shiny stone every so often.

Sand Dragons are monsters that tend to live alone. That was their nature so it was hard for them to get along with other monsters, but after becoming domesticated, Shopping was feeling a connection with his female owner.

A shabby looking female Sand Dragon was working hard to chase after him, but Shopping himself was not very interested.

To clarify things once more, the reason he was able to evolve into a Giant was because of the magical powers of his female owner.

She had a vibrantly shining necklace around her neck, and everytime she caressed him, he could feel his Monster's Soul growing little by little.

Grrroooooowl~

Shopping felt good thinking about his female owner that he was starting to feel less annoyed.

He needed to move quickly. The male owner did not give him

much time.

Shopping was focused on properly doing his job.

Thriger's ships started to move in five squads of two, with Thriger's Ship o leaving last on its own as they divided into a total of six teams.

In addition to the Red Desert flag on Ship o, there was another flag on there right now. It was the Golden Flag that symbolized the Glow of Pareia. This flag meant that the Glow was on this ship right now.

The ships started to thoroughly search through the quicksand river once more.

Book 5-1.4

“Pareia’s ships have finally divided up.”

After receiving the patrol warrior’s report, Kupepa looked toward Nakatin and Kinicks.

“What are we waiting for? Let’s hurry up and attack.”

Kupepa looked toward Kinicks after Nakatin’s response and started to speak.

“I’m concerned that it took them this long to do this. If they were going to divide up to search for us, they would have done so from the beginning. But why divide after taking all this time moving together? Wouldn’t this mean that they have a method to defend against our attack?”

Nakatin felt like Kupepa was ignoring him and started to speak in a slightly angry voice.

“Are you just going to just sit around being cautious and watch the enemy invade? It will be more troublesome if they start to drop some warriors little by little around the quicksand river.”

Kinicks thought for a moment before finally speaking.

“Wouldn’t Pareia have split up because they were getting anxious at the fact that they could not find us? Either that, or they are at least confident that they can run away. Our small boats cannot keep up with them if that large ship starts to gain speed.”

“I also think that may be the case, but the enemy Greatest Warrior Thriger is someone who has ruled over this quicksand river for a very long time.....”

Seeing Kupepa hesitate like this, Nakatin started to speak.

“They said that the Golden Flag was raised. It was also raised on the ship that was separated on its own. If we can sink that one ship, Pareia will not dare to go to war. No matter what sacrifice we

need to make, let's catch at least that one ship."

"That is the more concerning part. If Pareia's Glow is on the ship, shouldn't that ship get more protection? It feels like they are advertising that 'We are here. Come get us.' There has to be some sort of scheme."

Kinicks started to respond to Kupepa's answer.

"We at least know that the fact that the Golden Flag has been raised means that Pareia's War Maniac is definitely on board. He has stood in the vanguard for all of their wars so it should be true this time as well. It could definitely be them mocking us to show up since they have not managed to find us."

"That is why we should just catch that one ship."

As Nakatin responded with frustration from the side, Kinicks agreed with his statement.

"It will not be good for the warriors' morale for us to just sit around like this after being provoked by the enemy. Even if we need to make some sacrifices, catching the enemy Glow or killing him will help us not have to worry about war for at least a while."

Kupepa wanted to move a bit more cautiously, but he could not give his suggestions with the two Glows coming at him like this.

"Then we will do as you wish."

Seeing Kupepa's unenthusiastic response, Kinicks added on to his statement.

"We have a lot of patrol officers around them, so there will be no chance of them surrounding us. If the situation does not seem good, we will disperse into multiple directions. We should not suffer much damage from this."

Only then did Kupepa's expression lighten up a bit as he nodded his head.

A single ship was slowly pushing through the desert sand. The

endless golden light on all sides may make you get tired of it pretty quickly, but there was no reason to get angry or tired at a sight that you have seen everyday and will continue to see everyday for the rest of your life.

Yulian was sitting in the front of the ship looking out in front of him. He always felt happy whenever he was at the quicksand river. It used to be a useless area in the past, but now, it had brought a lot of benefits to Pareia, and it was a thankful place that was bringing peace to them as well.

“It’s peaceful.”

As Yulian looked toward Thriger who was standing behind him and made a comment, Thriger looked in the same direction and responded.

“It is always like this unless we see a monster.”

“I think the only people who like monsters are people on ships.”

“It would be extremely boring patrolling the river if even those monsters did not pop up. It will also be very bland. Hehehe.”

Yulian started to smile as Thriger started to laugh.

“They are not making a move. I thought they would jump on the chance.”

“I can see the enemy warriors out there on land so they should be aware of our movements. This just shows that the enemy is being cautious as well.”

Yulian started to become a bit worried as he responded back.

“If we do not catch them quickly, it will delay our use of the quicksand river to strike the enemy at the side. The special team on land has already headed out.”

“It will take a while if the enemy does not move, but it would be safer to use only six ships to move the warriors. It will take a lot more time than using our full fleet, but the damage from a single

ship going down will be much less.”

“Hmm~”

Yulian let out a long sigh. It wasn't that he was afraid. He did not have any thoughts that they would lose the war. The problem was how to reduce the damage as much as possible in the process.

He needed to look forward to the future. He needed to look toward the future after the desert was unified.

The desert was always lacking in population. But if the population goes up, you also need more food. They needed to aim for the continent for that and that required a lot of warriors.

“There is something up ahead!”

It was at that moment that a patrol warrior who was on top of the mast shouted out loudly.

Yulian and Thriger looked at each other at the same time.

Thriger returned to his position and Yulian looked out forward. A bit later, he could see something covering the quicksand river completely black.

“They are finally here.”

Thriger's eyes started to sparkle as he shouted out.

“Everyone get ready! You know what to do, right?”

“Yes, Captain!”

The warriors on board shouted back vigorously from their positions.

“Volley Star, Mult-Arrow in position. Greaver, get ready.”

Greaver, who was serving as the First Mate, nodded his head and started to prepare to raise the sail with a couple of warriors.

It was a nightmare at first, but they were ready now.

Seeing many of the boats preparing to launch their fire arrows,

Thriger shouted at his crew.

“Launch the prepared Volley Stars and quickly raise the sail!”

The Desert Runner o shot out four large arrows. It instantly sank four of the enemy small boats and dragged them into the quicksand river. By the time another large arrow shot out from the Volley Star, the boats of the united tribe had come pretty close.

“Use the Mult-Arrow to blast those bastards as soon as they are within range. Sail, what are you doing! What are we going to do if you are still only half way up!”

Thriger was shouting left and right as he urged his crew on.

The arrows of the Mult-Arrow started to fill the sky. Since they were prepared this time with trained archers and had the Mult-Arrows ready to go, the nearby boats could not help but get a lot of damage.

“Glow!”

Once Thriger called out to Yulian, Yulian nodded his head, too a deep breath, and used his ki to shout in a loud voice.

“I am the Glow of Pareia! Today, I will clearly show you why they call me the War God of the Desert!”

Yulian’s voice was loud enough to make the ship feel like it was vibrating; it obviously was loud enough for the 20,000 enemy warriors to clearly hear as well.

There were some warriors who were shocked that a single person’s voice could reach all the way to them, as well as warriors who were afraid at seeing the rumored Yulian with their own eyes.

“Just one ship. Shoot everything we have as soon as we are within range!”

The lead warriors all shouted out in one voice from the back of the boats. If they could successfully win this battle, they could be safe from war. Thinking like this made the warriors bravely charge

forward even against the endless barrage of arrows flying their direction.

The desert runner's three square sails, two triangle sails, and the small assistant sail all opened widely at this moment and the Desert Runner started to move.

“Hmph, I was wondering how they were going to resist us with a single ship but they were just planning on doing a hit and run with such a large ship? Attack them before they gain speed!”

The Greatest Warrior of the united tribe saw the Desert Runner start to move and started to send a signal to the 2,500 small boats to his left.

“Chase after them. Team 3, do not shoot any arrows and pass them before waiting in front of them and firing.”

The Greatest Warrior who was responsible for the right side gave the same order as he urged the warriors forward.

“The enemy is trying to run away! Show them the strength of our united tribe!”

Around five hundred boats to the left and right stopped firing arrows as they rushed forward.

Book 5-1.5

“They seem to be trying to surround us. But will they be able to do so?”

Thriger started to speak to Yulian while smiling.

The reason Thriger was able to select this method was because the boats of the united tribe were too small to chase after the Desert Runner.

If this battle was out in the ocean, it would be a ‘come eat me~’ type of plan, but not here. If a small boat like that got in their way in the ocean, they would just crush them as they moved forward. The question was how to get the least amount of damage from the enemy fire arrows, and how quickly they could put out the fire on the ships.

“Archers, what are you doing! How can you prevent the enemy from approaching at that speed of firing?!”

The Mult-Arrow archers started to move their hands faster at Thriger’s urging.

But it was impossible to stop many boats from approaching using the Mult-Arrow from the beginning. They were really just there to prevent the enemy from being able to leisurely fire arrows at them.

A lot of the fire arrows managed to hit the Desert Runner, but over half of it was put out on its own, while the rest were put out by the extinguishers that were already prepared.

“We might get burnt alive like this. Helmsman, are we still not there?”

“We are riding on the current now.”

The warrior who was guiding the ship reported back to Thriger in a loud voice as Thriger put on a satisfied smile.

They might have been hit blind last time, but this time, they

were prepared to run.

The quicksand river did not flow at the same speed in one direction. There were some places with whirlpools and others where the sand blew violently. The current that Ship o was on right now was a quick moving area that flows in a straight line.

As the Desert Runner started to move even faster, they started to get further away from the range of the fire arrows. Once the boats that rushed past them started to shoot flying arrows from the side, the damage to the Desert Runner started to increase.

They had already prepared lots of bags of sand and extinguishers, but there was a limit.

It was a battle of time. Will they gain speed? Or will they be attacked to a point that they cannot put out the fire?

Once they got away from the boats behind them, the Mult-Arrow archers moved to the Mult-Arrows on the side and started to fire. The fire arrows finally started to slow time.

“We have gained speed.”

Even without the warriors shouting at him, Thriger could feel it with his body. The Desert Runner was getting close to its top speed.

“After increasing the distance a bit, take good care of the sail. Helmsman, do not move in a straight line and only ride the current enough for the enemy to chase after us. This plan is a failure if the enemy does not chase us.”

Everything was ready and they had even practiced beforehand, but Thriger continued to shout. Even one mistake could mean the end for them.

“I am worried the enemy will not be able to see this current. It should be easier than out in the ocean.”

Once there was no issues to the safety of the Desert Runner,

Thriger was now worried that the enemy would not be able to follow them.

“They are also Greatest Warriors, so they should be able to figure out how you were able to hit your top speed so quickly.”

Yulian looked back at the black swarm of boats chasing behind them, before shouting out in a loud voice that their goal, he, the Glow of Pareia, was right here.

Once the Desert Runner suddenly rushed forward at a fast speed, the two Greatest Warriors of the united tribe looked thoroughly at their surroundings. Even if the enemy helmsman was talented, they should not be able to gain such speed in such a short amount of time.

And then they managed to find it. The strong current that appeared on the quicksand river.

“All units, ride this current. Move in formation so that you do not end up running into each other.”

Once they received the order from their Greatest Warrior, the boats started to rely on the current that pushed the Desert Runner forward to chase after it.

After receiving focused training for the past few weeks, they were able to control their boats pretty well. It was only possible because the boats were small.

If it was a ship the size of the Desert Runner, it would take at least a year of studying and personal experience to even get a feel for how to move it. But for a small boat like this that uses the small sail to control the movement, it did not take much studying to figure it out.

“They are chasing after us.”

Thriger started to speak excitedly.

“I guess the Greatest Warrior is not an idiot. I hope they continue

not being idiots from here on.”

Yulian said that before looking around at the quicksand river and then continuing to speak.

“I guess we just need our little punk to show up at the right time.”

“Isn’t he a smart little punk? Hahaha.”

Thriger happily laughed. The main reason they were able to use this plan was because of Shopping. It was the method to catch 20,000 warriors with just one ship and 2,000 warriors.

Thriger ordered the helmsman once more to not speed up too much before waiting to arrive at one of the many no-wind zones of the quicksand river.

Groooooooooowl~

Shopping raised his head out of the quicksand river. He could feel his owner’s scent. He could also smell the scent of enough humans to fill his stomach.

“Shopping.”

A calm voice.

Shopping shot forward toward his owner’s voice before his owner jumped on his head.

It had been a while since the male owner had gotten on top of his head. That was why Shopping was happy. They were finally playing together for the first time in a long time.

Yulian felt his body spin to the left and right as he was covered in sand from Shopping twisting around in the sand, but he was not annoyed. He knew this was Shopping’s way of playing and his way of acting cute.

“I want to take you to the battlefield and show your strength, but even you might be in danger if the enemy focuses their attack on you. That is why we cannot do that.”

Yulian patted Shopping's head before looking around. He could see odd flows in multiple locations in the quicksand river.

"You did as I told you to do. Good job."

Shopping twisted his body in joy as Yulian continued to caress his head.

"Let's play later. Hold still for right now."

Once Yulian told him to stop, Shopping stopped moving and just kept his head out of the quicksand river.

Yulian could see that the Desert Runner had already completely entered the no-wind zone. They folded up their sails and used the oddly moving currents to push the ship forward.

As for the boats chasing after them? They were in the no-wind zone as well, and could not navigate like Thriger could. They were moving in odd directions and even running into each other.

The lead warriors were shouting at them to calm down, but it wasn't like there was anything they could do even if they were calm. The currents in this area were not something beginners could handle.

Even a veteran captain like Thriger required a lot of experience and research. Without all of his hard work, he would not be able to move forward like he was doing right now.

As boats crashed into other boats, they started to lose balance and some of them even started to sink. There were even some boats that were spinning in place because of a strong current before sinking in place. In a situation like this, the Desert Runner alone was enough to take them on even if it took a long time, but that was not Thriger's goal right now.

Thriger sent a signal to Yulian who was far away and Yulian patted Shopping's head as he started to speak.

"It is finally time to show your dignified appearance. Let's go."

Book 5-1.6

Shopping became excited as he started to push his body up and started to shout.

Groooooooooowl~ Raaaaaaaaaaaaaawr.

A Sand Dragon is extremely large. It is also a monster that is difficult for people to see. It is because they sit at the top of the food pyramid.

And a Giant Sand Dragon is even larger. Even if you looked throughout the desert, there were probably less than five of them. Of course this meant that the number of people that have seen there were extremely rare.

That large body and loud roar that easily made people shiver was enough to make people freeze in fear.

Especially when they were in the quicksand river with nowhere to run, this would be much much worse.

“Why are you getting scared? Is this your first time seeing that giant blob?”

It seems the united tribe was not the only ones to be affected by the roar. It was scary enough to make even the warriors on the Desert Runner plop down in fear. Their eyes may be used to Shopping, but their ears were not. The moment they heard the roar of a Giant Sand Dragon that would make all monsters in the desert shiver, it was like a magic was placed on their legs so that they had no strength.

Thriger flinched a bit as well, but he kept his cool and shouted at the warriors with a loud voice to get their heads back in the game.

Since Pareia was affected this much, the united tribe's warriors were in a state of complete chaos. In fact, there were even some warriors who voluntarily jumped into the quicksand river.

There were some that managed to luckily escape the no-wind zone, but they had no choice but to choose to head back into it. The monsters that were peeking their heads out around there were definitely Sand Dragons.

They could hear roars from multiple directions.

Thriger had coordinated this plan himself, but this overwhelming fear made him regret not making the enemy surrender with their own hands.

But once the united tribe's Greatest Warriors started to shout out in a loud voice the lead warriors started to come back to their senses, and the more courageous warriors of the united tribe started to grab their bows. This was the strong mental fortitude that only the desert warriors possessed.

But with their boats moving as it pleased, the arrows they shot toward Shopping and the Sand Dragons did not even get close to them.

Yulian had no plans on allowing Shopping or the Sand Dragons to eat the people. Although many of the enemy will end up falling into the quicksand river because of Shopping, eating them was a different issue. He would not allow such a sight as a fellow human. It was also because he was thinking about the future.

The short-term gain would be Shopping and the Sand Dragons swallowing up a couple of people, but Yulian had to avoid this at all cost. He was planning on making all of them their prisoners and turning them into Pareia's warriors.

Wouldn't it be obvious that people would not like him as much if they think about how their Glow let a monster eat people as they pleased?

Yulian wanted to be remembered as a more humane person. He wanted to be like his father, Baguna, the Benevolent Eye.

Yulian took out his greatsword. The sunlight reflected off of it to

send a glaring light. He then started to shout loudly.

“Listen. I am the Glow of Pareia, Yulian Provoke. Swear your surrender and I shall let you live.”

The warriors of the united tribe could not believe that Pareia’s Glow was casually standing on top of that scary monster. Shopping then started to push through the boats. The Sand Dragon was the fastest monster in the quicksand river. Even if they shot their arrows, it would only be headed toward a fellow warrior, so they could not even shoot their arrows at him.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

Well, it wasn’t really that loud of a noise. But they could start to hear a terrifying noise as Shopping crashed against and flipped over any and every boat in his way. They only heard short bursts of screams before the sounds completely disappeared. Nothing could be heard once you were sucked into the quicksand river.

“The Greatest Warriors of the united tribe. Is this the result you want? Do not be fools. Give the order to your warriors.”

Yulian stopped Shopping in front of the united tribe’s Greatest Warriors and looked down from above as he shouted at them.

The warriors of the united tribe all turned toward their Greatest Warrior. It was a warrior’s mission to put their tribe before their lives. But if they managed to avoid death because their Greatest Warrior surrendered, that would not be them throwing away their warrior’s mission.

The warriors of the desert were completely faithful to their order.

The Greatest Warrior of the united tribe looked toward Yulian with disbelief. He could not even imagine something like a Giant Sand Dragon Rider, but he was seeing it with his own two eyes.

He then looked toward the warriors of the united tribe. They were all looking at him. If he did not surrender, they would not

beg for their lives. But what purpose is there for these 20,000 warriors to sink into the quicksand river?

At that moment, one of the Sand Dragons could not hold back and picked up a couple of people into his mouth. He must not have been able to hold on because he was hungry in a place full of people.

“You bastard!”

As everyone was looking at the Sand Dragon in shock, Yulian angrily stomped his foot.

Grraaaaaaaaaaaaaar~!

Shopping shouted out in pain and started to twist his body. It was the first time he felt this kind of intense pain in a long time.

Shopping felt his owner's anger with his body and looked toward the Sand Dragon that caused him to feel this pain with angry eyes. He seemed to be saying ‘I warned you not to do it!’

Shopping was not very patient, and the owner on top of him did not show any signs of stopping him.

Shopping instantly bit down on the neck of the Sand Dragon that was trying to run away.

Squeal squeal~!

The Sand Dragon failed around trying to escape, but he could not fight off Shopping's strong jaw strength. It took less than a few seconds for a Sand Dragon, one of the strongest monsters in the Desert, to die.

The body of the Sand Dragon that swallowed two people instantly fell into the quicksand river and disappeared. This instilled fear in both the people who saw what happened, as well as the other Sand Dragons that were gathered by Shopping's calling.

As Yulian reached a level that he could not see without raising his head up, the Greatest Warrior of the united tribe could not think

about anything else. They had completely been defeated and they needed to surrender if they accepted their defeat.

“Everybody, drop your weapons.”

The warriors of the united tribe put their pretty useless weapons down on the bottom of the boat.

At this moment, the 20,000 warriors and 5,000ish small boats that the united tribe and the Silence Empire ambitiously and secretly prepared had easily come into Pareia's hands.

End of chapter.

Book 5-2.1

Charge

I will win again today.

Even the atmosphere in a place to perform rituals for the dead will not be as heavy as it is right here.

All of them were stuck in total despair that even a sigh would sound like a thunderstorm. All of them were completely shocked and could not easily speak. How could 20,000 warriors all end up as prisoners in a single battle?

In addition, because they considered the matter to be important, the two Greatest Warriors leading the quicksand brigade were two of the best Greatest Warriors the united tribe had. The three of them just could not understand how such esteemed warriors could surrender with 20,000 warriors that easily.

“I wish we at least knew what happened.”

As Nakatin heavily opened his mouth, Kupepa responded back.

“I’m sure there was something.”

Even Kinicks, who could not believe that his loyal Greatest Warrior surrendered without doing much, started to speak in a voice full of disbelief.

“It’ll be better for us to quickly forget about it.”

Kupepa felt the biggest shock as he had been the most careful in the planning process, but that was why he was also the fastest to adapt.

“There is too much to pay the ransom for the prisoners, and I doubt Pareia would agree to a ransom trade at the current situation. I think we need to discuss how to defend against Pareia with the warriors we have left.”

“It is all my fault. If I did not push us to go with this reckless plan.....”

As Nakatin admitted to his rashness, Kupapa quickly responded.

“I felt the same way as you. I just did not push it forward as I happen to have a lot of fear. If I did not feel the same way, I would have objected against it until the end. I would not have agreed with Nakatin-nim if I did not feel the same way.”

“What Kupepa-nim said is right. We still have 100,000 warriors while the enemy only has 40,000.”

As Kinicks said something to energize himself, the other two people finally released their stiff expressions.

“Reporting to the Glows.”

At that moment, they heard the urgent voice of a patrol warrior outside.

The three of them looked around at each other before standing up and heading out of the paoe. What they saw was a patrol officer almost completely covered in dust.

“What is going on?”

“Pareia’s warriors have appeared at the border.”

“Their numbers?”

As Kinicks urgently asked, the patrol warrior responded with a nervous expression.

“The enemy had too many patrol warriors that we had no way to approach them. However, we were able to confirm that there was a lot of dust being created.”

“Shit.”

The three Glows clicked their tongues at the fact that the most important component, the number of enemy warriors, was missing. However, it could be said that the patrol warrior

diligently completed his mission. If he had approached them, he would have lost his life for no reason.

“Can’t tell the number..... Was their vanguard separated from their main force? You should have been able to determine that much?”

“Yes. My other comrades and the other squad’s patrol warriors inspected the rear of the enemy warriors, but they could not see anyone other than the enemy patrol warriors. We presume that both the vanguard and the main force are at least a day’s distance behind them.”

“A day.....”

Kupepa fell into thought for a bit at the patrol warrior’s message before turning around to ask the two other Glows.

“If they have not divided up their vanguard and main force, wouldn’t that mean that there are less than 20,000 warriors? Wouldn’t it be more advantageous to divide up some of your troops to be the vanguard if you had at least 30,000 warriors?”

“On the other hand, they might have been aiming for that and strategized. They wanted it so that we could not accurately tell their numbers.”

Nakatin continued on after Kinicks’s response.

“It is possible. Our moles could not tell the numbers because of how secretive they have been when they left Pareia. I’m not sure about what we should do.

“In the end, they will total less than 100,000 warrior. We should send 30,000 warriors to the nearest oasis to defend, while putting the rest of the warriors toward the quicksand river. What do you think?”

“Wouldn’t it be better to give up on one side and fully defend the other before counterattacking to destroy the enemy and rescue the other side?”

Nakatin offered an alternative to Kupepa's words, but it was realistically impossible. They might be working well together as a united tribe, but if they went with this plan, Kinicks's oasis, which was the closest oasis to the land route, would be completely eaten up.

The three Glows discussed all night to figure out the best course of action.

Normally, the desert tribes participated in an exchange of prisoners or discussed a ransom for the prisoners with each other during times of war.

With it being normal to become absorbed into the other side when you surrender and become a prisoner, you may ask 'is there a reason to even negotiate?' but that is only when one side absorbed an entire oasis. Would it be easy to get along with the other side when your entire family is still back with your original tribe?

That was why everyone tended to fully cooperate in negotiations for freeing prisoners.

To be honest, when the united tribe offered up questions about the ransom for the 20,000 warriors from the quicksand river who ended up as prisoners, Pareia should have agreed to a number. However, Pareia rejected it. It was because Pareia had plans on absorbing all oases in the Eastern Desert with this war. Because of that, they did not agree to negotiations for the prisoners and just sent them to different oases to live with Pareia's warriors.

They will not become Pareia's warriors immediately, but as time goes by, they will end up becoming Pareia's warriors. If they manage to safely finish this war of unifying the Eastern Desert, they will officially become Pareia's warriors.

Second month of year 259 in the continental calendar.

As 10,000 warriors led by Egane arrived at the border of the united tribe, Yulian and 30,000 warriors also arrived on land

through the quicksand river.

It was the official start of the Eastern Desert wars.

“All units, attention!”

Buchord, the leader of the Desert Sword, as well as the Assistant Warrior to Venersis, the Shuarei's overall commanding officer, shouted out loud to the group. The 40ish Greatest Warriors and lead warriors who were in the area heard the order and started to stand at attention. Once they were ready, a shabby looking Venersis finally appeared.

Venersis didn't seem to be his usual self. He was looking shabby as if he had not been able to wash for a couple of days, but his two eyes were shining brighter than ever.

Venersis looked around at the Greatest Warriors and lead warriors who were standing at attention in front of him.

Around half of them were people who would listen to Venersis's every command, while the other half were warriors who looked up to him.

After receiving full control for all things related to war, his position was above any of the chiefs and even the Young Glow. His command was pretty much the will of the Glow as long as it was something relating to war. That was the type of power the Glow had given him.

All of the people gathered here were warriors that Venersis had personally selected. There were a lot of grumblings during his selection process, but there should be no problems. It was because the person who gave him the power to do so was none other than Elbotta, the Shuarei's Glow.

Venersis could feel his heart beating loudly. It was because it had been a long time since he fought for a Lord who trusted him. It had also been a long time since he went to war with subordinates who did not question any of his orders.

Of course he would take responsibility for all results good or bad, but Venersis was actually thankful for that. It was because it would be a war he could unleash everything he had.

Venersis's heart continued to beat quickly.

“To be honest with you, I was against this war.”

Everyone had a look of confusion at Venersis's choice of first words, but that was only for a moment. All of them knew what kind of war this was. They knew it was at minimum a war that they will not lose.

“But the Glow believed in me and gave me the order to lead. It was solely because of his faith in me. That was why I could no longer oppose the decision. It is a warrior's duty to respond to the Lord's faith.”

His voice was quiet yet firm and was vigorous even though he was not putting much strength into it.

“That was why I debated it for a long time. I debated about what I should do. I could not help but debate about it because I do not go into wars that I cannot win. I only go into wars I know I can win.”

Venersis took out his shamshir and pointed it in front of the warriors.

Book 5-2.2

“After debating for a long time, I came to a single conclusion. Who dares to get in our way? Who out there is able to block our path?!”

This instantly brought complete silence to the warriors in front of him.

Just two sentences. These two sentences were able to get the warriors' blood boiling and take over their hearts and minds.

“There's not much to it. We just have to go fight. That is my method and that is the method to win.”

“Ooooooooooooo~!”

There was no late voices. All of the warriors started to shout at the same time. They had to let this boiling sensation inside of them out even if it was just by shouting. They felt like they would burn alive if they could not even get it out that way.

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

That shout then turned into a cheer.

‘We will win. We have no choice but to win.’

They could not have any other thought and they should not have any other thought. They could only focus on winning, and let that thought control their mind.

“I am the Shuarei's greatest warrior, as well as the War God of the Desert who has a bloodied shamshir. That is who Venersis is.”

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

The already excited warriors started to cheer once again.

The warrior in front of them, the warrior leading them, was that Venersis.

“Let's go!”

Venersis, and the Shuarei, finally started to make their move.

“Now that it is right in front of us, I am starting to have some uncertainties.”

Vibli looked at the amount of enemy warriors that covered the desert in black before speaking to Yulian. Yulian looked toward Vibli as well.

With Runa remaining in Pareia, the very experienced Vibli was serving as Yulian’s assistant.

The thought that they were just going to fight without any plan did not sit well with neither Yulian nor Vibli.

In the desert, the number of warriors was extremely important. It was obvious that with the same set of circumstances, the side with more warriors had the advantage. Even still, Runa had mentioned that no strategy was required for this war. According to Runa, just a battle of strength was enough.

Since Runa was the one to say such a thing, they were going along with the plan even though they had some concerns about it.

The reason Runa said that was because he knew about Yulian’s amazing ability, as well as the fact that the ability shone brighter in chaotic battles.

The ability to see the entire battlefield as if it was on the palm of your hands. This unbelievable ability allowed a 360 degree view, as well as the details of the terrain, the difference between morale and the flow of the battle in every area of the battlefield.

At first, Yulian did not approve of this method no matter what Runa said. However, Runa just laughed as he responded.

“This is something I have personally witnessed with my own body. The Glow and Red Storm are something you cannot hold off unless you prepare your defenses at an oasis for a very long time. If you fight against them out in the desert in a battle of strength, you will win 100 out of 100 times.”

Yulian felt good about himself but thought it was too much as he responded back to Runa.

“Aren’t you over-evaluating me too much?”

“In a battle of strength between warriors, the only one who can fight against you is Venersis. When I fought against you as part of the Wikaly, I had an idea about the Glow’s ability. Even still, you surpassed my expectations and managed to defeat me. As for this rag-tag group of united tribes.....”

“Hmm...if that is the case, why did you only send Greatest Warrior Egane and 10,000 warriors by land? You said I would win no matter what in a battle of strength.”

Runa lightly smiled as he responded to Yulian’s question.

“There is a limit to the number of people that can battle in an area. Shouldn’t we reduce the injuries as much as possible? Furthermore, 30,000 is the right number for the Glow to cause the most damage. They say more is better, but in an efficiency point of view, any more than 30,000 is difficult. That is why I said 40,000 warriors were enough from the beginning.”

“Mm.....”

Seeing Yulian contemplating, Runa started to speak once more.

“Pareia’s warriors are like sharpened shamshirs right now. The moment it becomes difficult to tell friend or foe in a physical battle, the Glow needs to use his ability to quickly fix the formation to the most efficient one for the situation. Once you do that, the united forces will quickly start to crumble. Please remember that the majority of our training was focused on changing formations.”

Seeing Runa being so full of confidence, Yulian gave his approval. Once they landed on land, they just sent the patrol warriors forward with no plan in mind. They were just following behind the patrol warriors with the entire force as one.

After a couple of days, they finally heard that the united tribe's warriors were setting up their formation about half a day's distance away.

"I guess even Greatest Warrior Vibli gets nervous with the enemy in front of him."

"Even though I have fought in thousands of battles, I always get nervous. It is especially the case this time because Assistant Warrior Runa's plan is just too weird....."

It was not that Vibli did not believe in Yulian, the Red Storm, or even his own brandistock. Looking out, it really did seem like the enemy outnumbered them almost three to one. Other than when he was a young warrior, he had never charged out recklessly like this with no plan at all.

"Haha. We just need to trust him. Didn't we cut a lot of time getting this far thanks to Runa? In addition, there was nothing wrong among the things he said. This is a blessing the heavens have given to our Pareia."

"I am fully aware of the fact that Assistant Warrior Runa is very talented, but shouldn't we reconsider a plan like this?"

Vibli was the most courageous of the third generation warriors. For someone like him to be this worried showed that it was indeed kind of a reckless plan.

Yulian looked to the left and right to see the endless number of the united tribe's warriors. His heart was beating fast.

It suddenly gave him an odd thought. It was a childish thought of a child who had gained strength wanting to test his strength out against others.

"Let's try engaging them at least once. I also do not think we will be pushed back too much."

Once Yulian raised the captain flag to signal, the slightly tilted flags stood up straight and started to blow in the wind.

Boooooooooom. Boooooooooom.

The united tribe's side started to bang their drums as if to say they will not be pushed back even the slightest bit.

Boom. Boom.

A fast drumming started to echo across Pareia's formation as Yulian turned his pirma around and rushed out front. He then stood in the center of the two formations.

Yulian put on a smile that was overflowing with confidence as he looked toward the location of the united tribe's lead flag.

He then lifted up his greatsword high into the air before pointing it toward them. It was a clear provocation, but there was no response from the united tribe. Who would dare to fight against the main character of so many rumors, Pareia's Glow, the War God of the Eastern Desert?

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

Seeing their Glow confidently stepping forward by himself to point the sword at the enemy and then not getting any result, the morale of Pareia's warriors rose significantly. On the other hand, it was obvious that the united tribe's warriors were losing their morale seeing that none of their Greatest Warriors were willing to step forward.

“I.”

Seeing nobody stepping forward to fight him, Yulian started to shout in a loud voice.

“Am the Glow of Pareia! Seeing that none of you are willing to step forward to fight me, why don't you surrender and dream together about a changing nation?”

His voice was full of passion. Nobody could be free from Yulian's words. That was the other gift that the heavens had bestowed upon Yulian. This was what fired up all of the chiefs in the tribe

many many times until now.

Kinicks and Kupepa etc, just looked toward each other.

‘The more that Glow of Pareia continues to talk.....’

The warriors will start to resonate with his speech.

But there was no need to fight in the enemy’s preferred method. They just needed to use a method that was advantageous for them.

The sound of drums and trumpets started to blow from the side of the united tribe as flags started to move left and right.

Stomp. Stomp. Stomp.

The warriors of the united tribe started to stomp their feet as they started to step forward one step at a time.

Puuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu~

Not far behind was the sound of trumpets and drums from Pareia’s formation as they started to advance as well.

Both Pareia’s warriors as well as the united tribe’s warriors knew about the difference in the number of warriors. Even still, there was not a trace of fear in the eyes of Pareia’s warriors.

Instead, they seemed to have confident eyes that seemed certain of their victory.

“Let out the shout of victory. Show them the strength of Pareia’s warriors! Prove to them that the sweat you shed training for this day was enough to fill up an entire oasis!”

“Oowaaaaaaa~”

The warriors started to resonate to Yulian’s loud voice.

“Charge!”

The moment the two formations were about to reach each other, Yulian shouted in an extremely loud voice as he started to rush forward.

Do do do do dooooo!

The sound of the pirms pushing off the ground could be heard endlessly as Yulian suddenly jumped high into the air. Once he did, his greatsword seemed to shine under the bright desert sun.

Yulian had made up his mind a long time ago that he was going to attack at full strength from the beginning.

Arms and legs were flying in front of his eyes, and he made up his mind to not even blink of a head with both eyes still open flew by in front of him as well.

After slicing the warriors in his way into two, Yulian pushed into the enemy's formation. The Red Storm quickly followed behind him.

They faced no difficulties. Nobody was able to stop them. Yulian went east when he wanted to go east, and south if he wanted to go south.

Before he knew it, the two formations clashed with the goal of killing each other.

Book 5-2.3

Violet was staring at this mess from a far distance.

She had come here even against Yulian's opposition. Honestly speaking, if she had not showing him her strength, if she had not proved to him that her abilities could reduce the damage to Pareia by at least a little bit, Yulian would have opposed it until the end.

However, Yulian had no choice but to approve of her abilities. That was why Violet was here right now.

Her extremely clear eyes started to shine. At that moment, her two arms headed up to the sky from the altar she had prepared in front of her. Her long white sleeves fluttered in the wind as she closed her eyes.

In this place filled with screams and moans, she was the only one surrounded by silence.

The moment she opened her mouth, both heaven and earth started to resonate with her before an aura surrounded her.

A valiant force surrounds my two arms.

Push forward like wild animals.

The strength of wild animals shall flow through my arms.

If that is not enough, bestow the protection of the War God upon me.

Arrows flying our way will miss

While my weapons shall not miss at all.

I shall win again today.

The air started to compress around Violet.

What kind of commotion was this?

The only thing that they could be certain about was the fact that some of the more sensitive warriors could not help but turn their

heads toward Violet because of this oppressive force.

However, Violet's song had not ended just yet.

Go forth on your own.

It is natural for a warrior to go forth on your own.

Fear and nervousness has no place inside of you.

Focus on the enemy in front of you.

Only you and your enemies exist in the world.

Once again defeat the enemies in front of you.

Go forth on your own.

The Glory of Victory is with you.

The moment Violet's two eyes opened widely, the extremely compressed power started to change into an overwhelming force.

The force became the wind as it swept through Pareia's warriors.

The spell wasn't completely literal, giving the warriors overwhelming strength like wild animals and really making the arrows miss them.

However, this wind made Pareia's warriors become like warriors. It made them push forward without fear, and raise their intuition during war so that they moved even a bit more effectively against their enemies.

They may be outnumbered 3 to 1, but Pareia's warriors were full of certainty about their victory.

They will defeat the enemy as they have done before, and they will take the Glory of Victory with them. That was the thought going through their minds.

Pareia's warriors fiercely pierced through the enemies and pushed forward.

After releasing the strength that was gathered through the

Warrior's Song, Violet plopped down on the ground.

She really was not the same as before. Even until last year, it did not take much effort to finishing the Warrior's Song. But now, it was so taxing that the sky seemed to turn yellow.

It was because part of her strength went to her newborn son, as well as the fact that she was not at her full strength, having come to war pretty much right after giving birth.

Violet took a big breath before fixing her posture and rotating each arm before putting her two hands on her stomach and starting to recover her strength.

This was not a battle that would end easily. That meant that singing a curse toward the enemy when both sides were tired would have extremely great effect. She needed to recover enough strength to sing that song.

The air around Violet started to compress once more.

War...is something that drives people into a frenzy.

In the worst areas, there already was no distinguishing friend or foe. Since their murderous intent was only facing forward, there were many times that the people who pushed forward fell to their own side's shamshir by accident.

The only thing in their minds were to push forward.

If they were trained well and prepared well for war, there were more sights of such situations. However, the important part was that even though some allies might fall from friendly fire, there were a lot more enemies that fell down from those shamshirs.

Surprisingly, Pareia's 30,000 warriors were pushing back 50,000 warriors. Of course the impact of Yulian and the Red Storm that was creating paths and preventing the enemy formation from reforming played a significant role.

The golden flag with a picture of a bright sun fluttered

everywhere he went. The flag that was first placed on Yulian's back to use him as bait had somehow become the symbol that represented where he was.

How long must they have fought for?

Yulian could feel it. Now was the right time.

The moment he waved the golden flag, Vibli quickly noticed the signal and sent a signal to the drummers and flag warriors to quickly start fixing up the formation.

There were some warriors who could not hear because of the brutal battle, but thanks to their extremely focused training, they were soon able to quickly move as Vibli wished.

Pareia's warriors slowly started to move back as they fixed up their formation. Typically, such actions were difficult in a physical battle like this.

However, Yulian and Red Storm scurried here and there to overcome that difficulty. Thanks to them, the formation slowly but surely started to become fixed.

There was no other reason they practiced this so much before the war. It was just for this movement.

Once the formation was fixed up, the situation flipped almost instantly. They went from being pushed back to pushing the enemy back.

Nobody in the united tribe could even imagine in their dreams that Pareia's formation was starting to become fixed. Wasn't this a chaotic battle? It was the basic of basic that haphazardly fixing up a formation in a chaotic battle like this would put you on the wrong end of the battle.

In addition, there was an overwhelming difference in the number of warriors. Maybe that was the reason the Glows and Greatest Warriors of the united tribe were caught off guard.

Suddenly, the tide of battle started to turn toward Pareia.

The surprised Greatest Warriors of the united tribe tried to guide the warriors, but randomly pushing against Pareia's already perfect formation was pretty much suicide.

"We... should fix up our formation as well."

The united Glows who realized the situation started to shout loudly. They were extremely anxious now.

The ones to become surprised after hearing the Glows' order were the Greatest Warriors.

".....!"

All of them became pale as they looked toward the Glows, and one of the Greatest Warriors who came to his sense quickly started to rush his pirma toward the Glows and shouted at them to rescind the command, but the command had already fallen.

As mentioned before, trying to fix up your formation in a chaotic battle would lead to your side being pushed back. It was because you had to show your back to the enemies, and because it took time to go find your spot in the formation.

Pareia had practiced significantly for fixing up the formation in the middle of a chaotic battle, but that was not the case for the united tribe's warriors.

Some ran into each other, and the warriors who had worked with each other before were separating from the warriors they had not worked with before, until the situation became the worst possible situation for the united tribe.

The warriors who were fighting in the heat of battle without differentiating friend or foe could not hear the order while the warriors who had not reached that point moved back according to the command. This created an opening that Pareia's warriors used to push through.

There really was no chance for them to do anything about it. It would have been best to give the command for the warriors in the back to retreat. Holes were created in many spaces with Pareia's warriors pushing through all of them. The completely broken formation had no hope of survival now.

Vibli recognized what was going on and quickly changed the formation once more. An uncommon sight of surrounding a higher number of warriors with a lower number of warriors could be seen on the battlefield.

“Glow! You can still give the command to retreat.....!”

The Greatest Warriors of the united tribe looked toward their Glows and started to shout. Although the Glows of the united tribe may be great warriors, they did not have any war experiences. That was why they had made the worst decision out of nervousness.

The smart decision would be for an experienced Greatest Warrior to have the role of commanding officer. Yes, just like Vibli who was moving Pareia's formation right now.

The Three Glows of the united tribe looked toward each other anxiously, before they heard another shout from a Greatest Warrior that sounded more like a screech. They then all nodded their heads and gave the order to retreat.

A chaotic retreat would cause them a lot of damage as well, but it was better than becoming completely destroyed like this. They were just thankful that they had the numbers to lessen the impact of the damage from the retreat.

Once the warriors of the united tribe completely turned their backs and started to run, Yulian gave the order to chase after them.

At that moment, Vibli approached him and asked him to rescind the order to chase after them.

“It is our complete victory. However, thinking about the future,

it is better to stop and fix up our formation and get some rest. If the warriors give all of their strength into this battle, the next battle will become difficult.”

“But aren’t we missing out on a great opportunity?”

“Making the warriors not get too excited is also the job of a Greatest Warrior. In addition, this is the enemy’s territory. We do not know what they may have prepared on their escape route.”

Yulian thought for a moment before accepting Vibli’s suggestion and calling off the chase.

The extremely frenzied warriors who were excitedly chasing after the warriors of the united tribe had to click their tongues and turn their pirms around.

Book 5-2.4

After facing off against Venersis for the first time, Runa could feel the headache from his opponent in his bones.

“In the end, I guess he is a War God of the desert.”

Runa started to bite down on his lips.

It was a level of pressure he had never experienced before, strong enough to suffocate him. This pressure was certainly a level higher than even the pressure that his Lord caused against his enemies.

Runa accepted that fact. This was someone who had stood at the pinnacle of war for the last twenty years.

However, after experiencing it for himself, Runa found it amazing that Pareia was able to survive against such an enemy for so long.

50,000 warriors could not win against 30,000 warriors. Actually, after taking a look once the battle ended, he could see that he suffered more losses than the Shuarei did. This battle was totally his defeat.

He prepared everything he could, but it was certain that regular battle tactics would not be able to handle the might of Venersis.

Venersis's plan was simple. Just like Runa had told Yulian to do against the united tribe, he did not use any type of strategy. He just pushed forward and attacked.

Runa had prepared a lot of different traps as well as nets, ropes, and other things to trip their pirmas, but they were useless. Venersis did not even approach those areas.

Even the plethora of training they had done to prepare was futile. There was no way to surround or cut through Venersis and his warriors. Every method Runa tried out because of the numbers advantage became useless after Venersis moved around a couple

times.

Venersis also had the same intuition ability that Yulian had.

Actually, Venersis was much more experienced with that ability when it came to using it in battle.

‘How could the heavens allow two such monsters.....’

Runa could not believe it. He had stayed behind to fend off the Shuarei’s potential invasion.

In fact, Runa did not just prepare to defend against them. He had prepared to completely eat up the Shuarei warriors that attacked. He wanted to land a heavy blow to the Shuarei so that they could attack as soon as the Glow returned. He wanted to make it so that the Shuarei would not be able to even think about attacking for at least a short period of time.

But he could tell with today’s battle.

Venersis. He was also someone who could only be fought off with a defensive plan. You needed to wait for either Venersis to make a mistake, or the perfect opportunity to come your way.

‘For even me to be unable to do anything even with the greater number of warriors.’

Runa had a bitter smile on his face.

At that moment, Pere entered into Runa’s paoe.

“Are you okay, Runa-nim?”

“Ah! Pere-nim, good work today.”

“Good work...I was overpowered by his pressure today and did not manage to do anything right.”

As Pere also put on a bitter smile and responded, Runa shook his head.

“Other than the Glow, who would be able to fight against that Venersis for ten seconds? The reason we were able to safely retreat

today was because of Pere-nim's abilities."

Nobody could hold Venersis off. Vibli and Egane, as well as Trebol who left this world in the war against Runa in the past. It was like Venersis was proving that it really did take three of Pareia's Greatest Warriors working together to barely manage to defend against him in the past. Giant gaps were created in the formation wherever Venersis went by.

This would be the same no matter what kind of training the warriors did. The only reason they were able to reduce the damage once they finally realized they will lose and started to retreat was because Pere was able to work together with another Greatest Warrior to hinder Venersis.

"Are you sure you are trying to make me feel better? Hahaha."

Pere jokingly responded as he started to laugh.

"I will need to change my strategy for the next battle. Similar to the Glow, he is someone we definitely cannot face head-on."

"Venersis is the sole reason our Pareia has not been able to take the lead and attack the Shuarei since before I was born. The Greatest Warriors did everything they could to catch up to him, but it was not easy."

Seeing Pere speak with some disappointment, Runa started to speak.

"There is something I prepared for a situation like this. If we are unable to land any kind of blow against the Shuarei in this war, we will always need to live under constant worry about their attack."

"We were able to get away with only this much damage thanks to Runa-nim's lead. What do you plan to do from here on?"

"There is something I am worried about."

"What is it?"

Runa started to hesitate before finally answering.

“There is a method I have thought about, but it will require me to leave this post for a while. However, the question becomes whether we can fend off Venersis’s attack while I am gone. Neither Greatest Warrior Egane or Greatest Warrior Vibli are in Pareia right now.....”

This was the reason Runa was hesitating even though he had a method to counterattack. You needed to have confidence to launch a counterattack, and he was worried about whether there was a warrior who would be able to fend Venersis off if he was gone. Pere and a couple other Greatest Warriors were here, but even that made him a bit worried.

That was why he had said either Greatest Warrior Egane or Greatest Warrior Vibli should remain in Pareia as they headed off to fight the united tribe, but the Glow was also lacking in war experience. Because of that, an experienced warrior had to support him. That was why Vibli had gone as his Assistant Warrior.

As for Greatest Warrior Egane, a seasoned Greatest Warrior was needed to draw as many of the united tribe’s forces as possible to their decoy land troops. With things being that way, there was no choice.

The biggest reason though, was because of Runa’s confidence. The counterattack method was just something he prepared just in case it was needed. Runa had never considered the fact that he would not be able to win against Venersis when he had multiple times the number of warriors, especially warriors who had been trained exactly as he had wanted them to be trained.

However, Runa had a large headache knowing that there really was another warrior like Yulian.

Pound. Pound.

While Runa was thinking about all of that, Pere pounded his chest twice before starting to speak.

“I will successfully fend him off even if my body breaks in half. I know the other Greatest Warriors may be lacking in comparison to the third generation Greatest Warriors, but they are not lacking too much experience. If it is just defending against Venersis, it should be enough.”

“Let’s continue this discussion after we handle the next defensive battle. We may have lost this battle, but we just have to return the favor in the next battle.”

Pere nodded at Runa’s words.

The official first battle between Pareia and the united tribe was Pareia’s overwhelming victory.

40,000 against 100,000 warriors.

No matter who thought about it, it should have been a victory for the united tribe who was defending with 100,000 warriors. However, the results were the complete opposite.

Thanks to Egane who was leading 10,000 warriors by land, they needed to defend the land route with 30,000 warriors. They then placed 50,000 warriors toward the quicksand river side, with 20,000 remaining in the center area to reinforce either side as needed. This plan by the united tribe was not a bad plan.

They would have been able to do a bit better if they did not lose 20,000 warriors in the battle on the quicksand river, but it was not a bad idea to quickly forget about that and do the most with what they had left.

However, a lack of war experience and lack of information ended up playing a critical factor.

They needed to know more about Pareia, and should have further researched how the young Glow named Yulian had gained the title of ‘War God of the Eastern Desert.’

Continuing on from the first battle, in the ten battles they have had already, including ones where they were attacking and

defending at an oasis, the united tribe had not managed to win even one battle.

As a result, the united tribe ended up being pushed back until they merged with the 20,000 warriors in the middle area, and after losing a couple oases, they even called back half of the 30,000 warriors defending against Egane to raise their numbers once more.

Pareia pushed for the united tribe's surrender many times, but the united tribe did not accept it.

They too agreed that there was no way to stop Pareia's momentum, but they could not understand the current situation.

All of the united tribe's warriors were thinking that 'there must be some way to win.'

Yulian was angry with their thought process.

The ones to suffer under a useless Glow were the people of the tribe and the Greatest Warriors. He could not understand how the chiefs of the individual oases could sit back and just let this happen.

Yulian focused on maintaining the stability of the oases that they conquered, while endlessly chasing after the three Glows who were retreating to the East and to the South.

End of chapter.

The person who will not stop

His machine-like attack started to rampage through the oasis.

Nobody... nobody seemed to be able to stop him.

Book 5-3.1

The person who will not stop

His machine-like attack started to rampage through the oasis.

Nobody... nobody seemed to be able to stop him.

Around the time Yulian and his 40,000 warriors were continuing their wins and gaining control of the eastern oases, Pareia's southern territory had actually lost an oasis to the Shuarei's Venersis.

If it wasn't for the extremely alert and always prepared third generation Greatest Warriors of Pareia, they would have been easily decimated.

Venersis was always a difficult warrior to defend. However, that Venersis came back even stronger this time.

In the past, because of the opposition from the other Greatest Warriors, their lead warriors were the group that Venersis had to lead to war. However, he had full control of war-related issues this time. As such, he was able to bring the lead warriors who had been with him for a long time, the same lead warriors who accurately understood all of his commands.

That was an extremely important factor.

You cannot have a general without his troops. Venersis himself might be a War God, but there was not much that he could do on his one during a battle.

However, in this war, if there was a situation where Venersis could take one step forward on his own, he had a group of warriors who could help push him to take another half step forward supporting him from the back.

Unsurprisingly, the most important factor was that there was nobody here to talk back or cause issues about any of his actions.

Focusing all of his attention and giving it his all should be extremely obvious, but in reality, it was much easier to say than to do. As a warrior's command and fame goes up, the political opposition is bound to go up and make it harder to give it your all. But the Venersis here today was able to put his all into this war.

Nobody was able to stop him.

Even Runa who had been using amazing methods to defend against Venersis ended up giving up an oasis and retreating the warriors to a different oasis. It was because he felt that there was no way to defend against Venersis with his current preparations.

Other than the first battle, they were able to not lose too badly. There were the continuous small scale battles with Pareia defending the oasis, but Pareia was starting to lose their morale and momentum. Runa had no choice but to order the retreat.

He then started to prepare for the counterattack. If they retreat backwards once more without making any preparations, the same thing was just going to happen again at the next oasis. Because of that, he needed to prepare the counterattack even though there was the potential for danger.

Determining that it was possible to lose everything with a single mistake, Runa started to hurry as well.

The night sky was full of stars that night.

Leaving in the night was something most people chose not to do, but Runa picked practical benefits over saving face.

"I leave it to you, Pere-nim."

Before leaving, Runa was speaking to Pere who would be the commanding officer for the 40,000 warriors once he left.

"The day we lose this oasis will be the day this Pere dies. Do not worry too much, Runa-nim."

Runa turned pale at Pere's response before answering back.

“You cannot do that. You cannot win against that Venersis without the Glow. We might have a method if Yulian-nim comes back, but right now, we just have to defend.”

“.....”

“I am just saying defend well but do not put your life on the line. Pere-nim is an important person for the future of Pareia. This is a war we will win in the end so do not be shaken.”

Pere nodded his head at Runa’s stern words before responding.

“I understand.”

Runa finally stopped frowning and jokingly retorted back.

“I can’t decide whether I am worried there would be another warrior like Venersis in the Shuarei or relaxed knowing there is no way in the world there would be someone else like him.”

Pere laughed with him as he responded.

“No way. As long as he is here, there should be no one in the Shuarei who can fight Runa-nim off.”

“I can only pray that is the case.”

“Then please have a good trip.”

Seeing Pere watching him leave, Runa said it once more because he was worried.

“I will say it once more but do not go engage Venersis. You must only use the wooden fences and traps around the oasis to do a defensive battle. Please don’t forget that I am only able to fight without worry because Pere-nim is here.”

“Do not worry. I will resist until Runa-nim comes pushing from the back of the enemy.”

“The reason I am this worried is because if we lose this oasis, the Thick Bushed oasis will be attacked. You do know what kind of oasis the Thick Bushed oasis is to us, right?”

“Of course.”

Runa was feeling a bit better at Pere’s casual response.

At that time, a lightning flashed in the sky without making any noise.

Runa and Pere both reflexively looked up.

“They say that it can thunder on a clear day, but I never expected to see it for myself. It is hard to see lightning when it is not the rainy season.”

Pere was looking at the night sky with disbelief while Runa was thinking more deeply into it.

‘This is unsettling. Even at this moment when I am about to leave to start the counterattack, the Ureba star (the heavenly weapon said to be used by Pareia’s guardian Neo Latin) is being threatened. Just what is the heavens trying to tell me?’

Runa looked up toward the heavens once more and started to listen.

The heavens can see everything that happens down on earth and adjusts itself accordingly. Astronomy is the study of deciphering this adjustment of the heavens.

‘I am still worried. Just what else is left that the Ureba star is shaking this much?’

Runa did not know that Pere was watching him with an odd expression as he continued to gaze into the heavens.

‘This won’t do. The united tribe is pretty much finished and there should be no more danger up there. We need to call the Glow back. The northern territory should be fine with Greatest Warriors Egane and Vibli still up there.’

Runa made up his mind as he called his worried heart.

“This is too easy. It was actually more difficult facing the Wikaly alone.”

As Yulian turned his head from left to right to look at the battlefield again before chatting with Vibli next to him, Vibli responded back.

“Didn’t the Wikaly have Runa-nim?”

“Yes. Their Glow was also not an idiot.”

Yulian had to suppress his extremely angry voice.

“I feel sorry for the warriors.”

Vibli knew very well about why Yulian was angry and shook his head, feeling sorry for the fallen warriors of the united tribe.

This war was already Pareia’s overwhelming victory. They had taken seven of the oases in the northern territory, and the united tribe had less than 20,000 warriors left.

The moment they moved half of the southern troops defending the land route to support the quicksand river side, the rest ended up being eaten up by Egane’s 10,000 warriors.

At this point, it would be normal for the enemy Glow to surrender. A proper Glow should not make their warriors shed their blood for a hopeless war. However, the current Glows of the united tribe did not feel that way.

Yulian didn’t know what they were thinking, but they were just endlessly running away. After each battle, hundreds of warriors remained as corpses like this.

“This is making me angry. Why are they making all of these pointless sacrifices?”

Vibli lined up his shoulder with Yulian before responding back.

“It is possible that it is because it is a united tribe?”

“Because they are united?”

“Yes. If they fought on their own, they may have surrendered early on, but with three tribes united together, it might be difficult

for any of them to be the first to suggest a surrender.”

“Hmm~!”

Yulian let out a short sigh. What Vibli said was indeed possible.

“It might be better to send a warrior with the surrender document once more. They should have no choice but to accept now.”

“This is already too late. I feel like we have sacrificed people who would become our future warriors for no reason.”

“That is why we need to push for their surrender once more before we lose even more of our warriors.”

Yulian was so angry when the united tribe ignored his last surrender request that he had planned on killing all of the Glows of the united tribe once he caught them. In Yulian’s eyes, they were the greatest of sinners.

That was the reason he continued to pursue them even though he felt sorry for the sacrifices of the warriors of the united tribe. That was why Vibli was encouraging him to ask them to surrender once more.

Although Yulian was grinding his teeth, he changed his mind after seeing the corpses around him.

“The next time we catch them, we will push them to surrender first. Greatest Warrior Vibli, please warn the lead warriors in advance.”

“I understand, Glow.”

Vibli was relieved to see Yulian’s anger die down even just a little bit.

Book 5-3.2

“In addition, Egane seems to have finally conquered the first oasis and has started to proceed north.”

“You definitely have to give Greatest Warrior Egane credit. I’m sure it wasn’t easy.”

“Our Pareia should have unified the Eastern Desert a long time ago. We would have done so if it wasn’t for the fact that the Shuarei had someone like Venersis.”

Vibli thought about Venersis, his greatest enemy, as he started to speak. They would have been unable to defend against Venersis without himself and another Greatest Warrior.

Going against Venersis was the only time his name of Angry Brandistock could change to the Shriveled Brandistock. But now, Pareia also had a great War God named Yulian, and they were just a few steps away from unifying the Eastern Desert. This would be a new chapter for Pareia.

“Anyways, I am more worried about Pareia.”

“What problems can arise while Runa-nim is there?”

“Runa may be there, but Venersis is there as well. I didn’t think he would dare to invade, but as Runa anticipated, the Shuarei have drawn their swords.”

“If you think about it, it is kind of obvious since the Glow is not there. Even they know that the difference in our strength will continue to grow as time goes on.”

Yulian nodded his head at Vibli’s response and agreed.

“We need to quickly resolve the situation here and head back. It looks like Vibli-nim and Egane-nim will need to remain here afterwards until everything settles.”

“We will do what is needed. Please go inside and rest. I have not

seen you even sleep properly for the last few days.”

“The warriors have suffered just the same.”

At that moment, one warrior informed the two of them that Runa’s messenger warrior had arrived.

“Warrior Riquid greets Yulian Provoke-nim, the War God of the Desert and Pareia’s Glorious Glow.”

As the messenger warrior respectfully greeted Yulian, Yulian nodded lightly before asking.

“What news do you bring?”

“Commanding Warrior Runa seeks the Glow to return as soon as possible if the situation in the Northern territory has been settled.”

He had heard that they gave up the first oasis and retreated back, as well as the fact that they were safely defending the second oasis. So seeing Runa asking for him like this surprised Yulian.

“Did something happen? Why is he urgently looking for me?”

“Commanding Warrior Runa has left the oasis to start the counterattack. Runa-nim made his move right around the time I left, so the oasis should be moving under Pere-nim’s command right now.”

“No!”

Yulian’s shout surprised even himself. It was not that he did not believe in Pere. It was just that his opponent was too strong. Venersis was someone who ate you up before you had a moment to realize you made a mistake.

Pere has been increasing his abilities since receiving Greatest Warrior training after the war against the Wikaly, but there was no way he was already stronger than three Greatest Warriors at Vibli’s level working together.

Even he knows this to be the case, so why would Runa do something so dangerous? Yulian could not understand.

“I’m sure he had a reason for doing that.”

Vibli started to speak to Yulian, even though he was shocked as well. Vibli was someone who had fought against Venersis for the last twenty years. The discomfort in his mind was probably no less, if not greater than what Yulian was feeling, but he was still able to calmly settle Yulian down.

“I should head back.”

“I’m sure I am worrying for no reason, but please be careful on your way back and do not engage Venersis in a 1 on 1 confrontation. To be honest with you, the Glow’s blade is still slower than Venersis right now. Your morale as well.”

Vibli’s words could have upset Yulian, but rather than doing that, he took a thankful approach for Vibli’s concern and worry. This was the difference between him and the other conquerors.

“I understand. Then I leave this place in your hands. If the enemy ignores our request for them to surrender once more, please make sure to kill those idiotic Glows. It might not even be a bad idea to completely skin them and have a ceremony to console the souls of the dead warriors.”

Seeing Yulian say such harsh words that showed his anger was still now subdued, Vibli just smiled as he answered.

“I will do as you say.”

Yulian returned to the formation after listening to Vibli’s answer. The Red Storm was then summoned and they started to prepare to return to Pareia.

‘Mm~.’

Pere let out a moan as he blankly stared into the map.

“Do not be too anxious. This is not a war that will end in a day or two.”

Seeing Pere being so tense these past few days, one of the

Greatest Warriors warned him to calm his heart.

“I know that but.....”

The end of Pere’s sentence faded away.

He also knew that he needed to be calmer. But he could not do anything about the fact that he could not be any calmer than how he was right now.

The truth was that once you start getting pushed back, you will continue to get pushed back. That reality, as well as the fact that Venersis being the enemy brought a lot of pressure, made PEre like this.

In fact, it made Pere become amazed at the fact that Runa was able to handle all of this with such calm at his age when Pere could not even sleep properly because of his beating heart.

What Pere was not aware of was the fact that this was the reason Runa left Pere in charge over the other Greatest Warriors.

Currently, Pareia’s Greatest Warriors were all old. It was about time for them to have a changing of the guards, and in order for that changing of the guards to go well, they needed to take some risks.

The reason Pareia was able to become the strongest in the Eastern Desert even while fending off the Shuarei’s Venersis was because of Pareia’s current Greatest Warriors. That was why this was such a big issue for the changing of the guards to go well.

‘Pere might feel the pressure but he will not crumble. This is because there are Greatest Warriors next to him who are used to this type of pressure.’

This was the reason Runa had decided Pere will be the commanding warrior.

“I will go for a round of patrol.”

Pere abruptly stood up from his seat and quickly started to walk.

The aged Greatest Warriors understood Pere's current situation and silently cheered for Pere to be able to overcome this tribulation. All they could do externally though, was to watch as he walked away.

“Good.”

As Pere slowly rode on his pirma around the oasis, the cold night air on his face helped him recover his senses a bit.

‘Does hyung-nim carry this type of heavy burden every day?’

The pressure and responsibility that Pere was feeling as the Commanding Warrior made him think about Yulian. He might be in charge of 30,000 warriors, but his brother was in charge of the entire Pareia tribe which was now easily over 100,000 people.

‘I pushed and pushed to catch up to him, but now the distance is so far I don't even have the desire to chase.’

Pere thought about his old self that considered his brother to be a rival and started to smile.

After feeling a bit better, Pere chatted with the warriors standing guard and looked around the desert as he thought about a couple different things. He tried to anticipate the path Venersis would use to attack, as well as how to defend here and how to fend them off there, etc. These thoughts filled Pere's head.

Before he was a Greatest Warrior, he had worked with the Red Storm warriors to stand at the vanguard and fight against the enemy. That was why Pere was able to tell whether the ideas in his head were really possible or if they were just possible in his mind.

As he sincerely looked around here and there, Pere's two eyes suddenly lit up.

He could see an image of sort. This line in his mind was twisting up and down, moving across small hills and valleys.

‘What am I supposed to do?’

It was a line he should not forget about, but right now, Pere was worried about what he was supposed to do. He felt like this was something very important, but he couldn't tell just why it was important.

‘Shit, whatever.’

Pere just did his best to memorize the direction of the line. It would not be too late to think about it after memorizing it first.

Pere was strong. If you talked about just pure strength, there was nobody in Pareia who could win against Pere. Yulian was no exception.

If Pere had another unique trait, it would be his tenacious personality. If he decides on something, he would always see it through until the end. Since Pere was pretty smart as well, he was able to memorize this line in the end.

After racking his brain for a while thinking about it, Pere suddenly let out a shout.

“I got it! I got it!”

Pere's voice was so loud that it made the warriors on guard rush over.

“Hahaha. Hahahahaha!”

The guard warriors could only tilt their heads in confusion as they could not tell what was making Pere so happy to laugh like this.

Once morning arrived, the Greatest Warriors were dragged over to the outskirts of the base even before they had a chance to eat breakfast.

At first, they had expressions that seemed to be asking what this young warrior was up to, but as Pere continued to point and explain, their expressions started to slowly change.

In the end, they all had expressions similar to what Pere had the

night before, as they started to let out noises.

“Hohoho. Hohohoho.”

Noises of laughter that is.

Book 5-3.3

“They are resisting pretty well.”

Seeing that he was unable to take the oasis again today, Venersis nodded his head and made a gesture that showed that he was approving of his opponent’s strength.

“However, it does not seem to be as calculated as the last battle. It just feels like they are supplementing that lack of tactics with strength.”

Venersis’s Assistant Warrior Buchord cautiously gave his observation.

“You are right. That well-coordinated system seems to be at a much lower level. Should I call it more brutal? The past battles seemed like they would throw away what they needed to throw away and take what they can.”

Seeing his commander agreeing with his opinion, Buchord started to speak again.

“Which is easier to fight against?”

“You’re asking some interesting questions.”

Venersis smiled at this easy question from Buchord who has been following him for many years.

“I’ve served Venersis-nim for many years, but I am embarrassed that I still cannot even anticipate any of Venersis-nim’s moves.”

“What is there to be embarrassed about? Even I do not know how I will move each time so how could you know? However, if I was to answer your question, a battle like today is more beneficial for me. The ones where they fight back with strength.”

Venersis looked toward the oasis that he failed to conquer and continued to speak.

“I’m certain it was not the Commanding Warrior named Runa.

He is, in negative terms, a calculator, and in positive terms, an extremely cold-hearted warrior. He gives the exact feeling like ‘I’ll give you this so just eat this and leave.’

After barely managing to figure out the meaning behind Venersis’s words, Buchord nodded his head. He also realized that Venersis has accepted Runa as one of his enemies.

“Then the chance will come?”

The important thing was that Runa, someone that even Venersis was considering to be difficult, was not the Commanding Warrior.

“No. We should not think that a chance will come. We should be thinking about two different situations. First, the enemy’s Commanding Warrior is even smarter than that warrior called Runa. If not, that warrior called Runa has moved elsewhere to launch a counterattack.”

‘Wow.’ Buchord had a look of admiration in his eye as Venersis continued on.

“Strengthen our back and increase the number of patrol warriors.”

“Yes sir.”

As Buchord started to run to deliver Venersis’s command, Venersis turned his gaze back to Pareia as he started to mumble to himself.

“It does not matter whether it is the former or the latter. We will not easily fall as long as we are not surrounded.”

Venersis was a warrior who knew about his own strength and limitations.

A few days later, Venersis got some good news as he was about to attack Pareia one more time. Pareia had come to challenge them first. In addition, it was in the middle of the desert that they had been avoiding this whole time.

“Just what are they doing? Did that young Glow return? Or is that warrior named Runa plotting something else?”

Venersis's subordinates were having that type of discussion. Venersis sat there listening to everything before just saying one sentence to determine their actions.

“We will know once we fight them.”

It could seem like a stupid answer, but it was the answer from someone that had everyone's full loyalty. He was also multiple times better than all of the other warriors. Seeing someone like that give that answer, the other warriors all started to run to their posts to prepare. The fact that it was a stupid answer never even crossed their minds.

“Buchord!”

While everybody was moving to prepare, Venersis called Buchord over to give him a command. Buchord had a surprised expression as he looked toward Venersis before nodding his head and starting to run once more.

“It must be hard.”

“Greatest Warrior Thriger is probably having it harder continuing to move back and forth on the quicksand river like this these days.”

“Hahaha. A ship person is most comfortable on a ship. To be honest with you, I probably spend more time stepping on this wooden floor than the real ground.”

Thriger started to laugh although he was still looking at Runa with concern. Runa seemed to be very worn out.

‘I'm sure he has a lot to worry about since he is the Commanding Warrior for everybody left in Pareia.’

Seeing Thriger continuing to stare at him, Runa started to ask with a smiling expression.

“Why do you keep looking at me like that?”

“I was just curious to know where in that small build all of your energy comes from.”

“Hahaha, thank you for the compliment.”

Runa started to laugh as he looked back out into the horizon.

“How much further is it?”

“We should arrive by the time two suns are up in the sky. Around two or three hours more?”

“This is something that just came to my mind, but is there no way to effectively use the small boats we took from the united tribe?”

“I’m not sure. Other than using them to land ... well I don’t even think that would be very useful.”

Runa thought for a moment before asking again.

“Is there a way to safely move across the quicksand river using the small boats?”

“It should be possible in the areas where the current is not terrible and monsters do not appear often.”

“I am asking if there is an available route.”

Thriger tilted his head as he asked.

“If we wanted to find one, I’m sure there would be at least one or two. But why do you ask?”

“We need to communicate with the Glow and Pere-nim, but I don’t think it is the most efficient use to move this large ship for that.”

“Ah! Unfortunately, we cannot have the messenger warriors use the small boats.”

This time, it was Runa who tilted his head in confusion and asked.

“Why not?”

“It is the difference in speed. On the battlefield, every minute and every second is important. If we use the small boats because it is more efficient, wouldn’t the message be delayed?”

“Is there that much difference?”

“A significant difference. If we gain speed properly, the small boats would never be able to catch up to the Desert Runner even if they were five times faster than they are now. It is because the sails are different, the amount of wind that it can get.”

Runa nodded his head and started to speak.

“It’s disappointing to just let the small boats sit there to rot.”

“When did someone whose mind is full of war-related issues have time to even think about that?”

“It is my job.”

Thriger shook his head internally at Runa’s answer.

“You do not need to worry about it now. Once our Pareia unifies the entire desert, we can use them to cross between the east and the west. We won’t need a special route for it.”

“Ah! That’s true.”

Runa nodded his head once more at Thriger’s words and turned his gaze.

‘He really is an amazing person.’

Seeing Runa fall into another thought, Thriger could only be in awe.

Around the time the first sun arrived at the middle of the sky, a new sun started to rise. This was the time that it started to really heat up, and once the third sun goes up in the sky as well, well, that was the time the murderous heat would rain down.

This was a thought Thriger often had, but he was really thankful

for his boat life. He watched the other Greatest Warriors training warriors under this intense heat and shuddered.

Thriger took out his map and ruler to start determining their location before ordering the ship to stop nearby.

“It should be around here. There shouldn’t be that much of an error, so you do not have to worry.”

Runa nodded his head at Thriger’s words and ordered the warriors to land.

Book 5-3.4

Pere started to get nervous. His enemy was slowly approaching him step by step.

Most importantly, the green flag with a white shamshir that represented Venersis, caught his eye.

For the longest time, they needed to run away to the oasis as soon as they saw that flag. There has never been a time that this green flag was broken by Pareia.

Since that was what he was attempting to do for the first time, and knowing that failure meant the sacrifices of the warriors who were involved in this plan would have been for naught, Pere had to calm his beating heart to coldly lead his warriors.

- Do not fight him head on. Also, do not put your life on the line.

That was what Runa had said before he left, and Pere had no thoughts about going against it. Even though he knew he himself had gotten stronger, there was still a large gap between him and his brother. Knowing that, there was no way he could fight against Venersis who was his brother's equal.

However, that single line that Pere saw a few days ago made him change his mind.

That was a single perfect escape route, and a way that could completely destroy the enemy. Suddenly being able to see that line was really the heavens helping Pareia. At least that is what Pere firmly believed.

Furthermore, the remaining Greatest Warriors agreed with Pere's opinion. Pere's line was perfect even in the eyes of the experienced and wise Greatest Warriors.

If they used this line properly, Pere believed they could destroy

that Venersis. Everyone truly believed that this was the birth of another Greatest Warrior with great instincts while looking at Pere who discovered this line. Even if it was a coincidence, it would be hard to see such a line without any special abilities.

The question now was how to utilize it properly without the enemy recognizing their plan. They had finished their preparations to make that happen.

“I will commend you for your courage to dare to stand in front of us after always hiding away and avoiding the Shuarei’s blade.”

Once both formations were prepared, one of the Shuarei’s Greatest Warriors rushed forward and mocked Pareia.

“Whether it is an attack on an oasis, defending an oasis, or even fighting it out on the field like this, it is all part of war. Who dares to speak nonsense when we all know this to be the case!”

Pere rushed forward as well and shouted back.

“I am Umbrella Yanada, the Shuarei’s Sharp Gaze buried in the Shamshir. Who are you that dares to come fight me?”

“I am Pere Provoke, Pareia’s Strong Power, the one with Two Hands strength in One. I wish to do a battle of Greatest Warriors with you. Do you dare have a taste of the strength of my shamshir?”

“Umbrella does not avoid a battle.”

The two men glared at each other before rushing forward toward each other with their shamshirs at the same time.

Prrrrrrrrrr~!

The rough breathing of the piramas filled their ears.

“Hayaaa~yaaaaa~yaaaaaaa~!”

“Haaaaaaaaaaaaat~!”

With a loud shout, the two warriors fiercely swung their

shamshirs at each other.

Clang!

After the loud sound of metal clashing against metal rang out, the two shamshirs were pressing against each other with the desire to slash the other in half.

When it came to strength, nobody in Pareia could beat Pere, and that seemed to be the case for the Shuarei as well. Ombrella's shamshir started to get pushed back little by little.

“Yaaaaaaaah!”

Pere shouted out once more before putting even more strength into the shamshir. Almost instantly, Pere's shamshir broke through Ombrella's defense and swung toward his chest, but Ombrella leaned toward the side of the pirma to avoid it.

After taking the advantage, Pere continued to attack Ombrella. This led to the Pareia's formation cheering out loudly.

‘He is that young warrior I saw last time.’

Venersis looked toward Pere and remembered that he was the younger of the two brothers he saved last time.

Yulian was one thing, but seeing even the younger brother having grown up to be a great warrior like this, Venersis was feeling a bit bitter.

Putting aside the fact that he let them go, there were currently no Greatest Warriors in his Shuarei that could fend off these two brothers. Even in his personal brigade the Desert Sword, there were probably less than five warriors who could fight against that young warrior.

While Venersis was shortly deep in his thought, Pere used his overwhelming strength to put Ombrella in danger.

Venersis rushed his pirma forward. He could not lose Ombrella right now.

“Since you are the enemy’s overall Commanding Officer, it is only right that I take you on.”

Venersis approached them and saved Ombrella from danger with a single swing, before saying that in a monotone voice.

Pere subconsciously flinched.

After exchanging blows with Venersis in the first battle, he was very clear about the difference in their strength.

“I will decline a Greatest Warrior battle with you! Our Glow will personally take you on!”

Pere turned his pirma around as he shouted like that and Venersis did not chase after the young warrior who had shown his back. He had already won this Greatest Warrior battle.

“All units charge!”

“Oowaaaaaaa~!”

Once Venersis pointed his shamshir and shouted loudly, the Shuarei’s forces let out a shout as they rushed forward.

Seeing the Shuarei’s warriors pushing forward, Pere looked at the lead warriors who nodded their heads. They had already discussed how they will move in today’s battle, and that exchange was to just confirm their plan.

Pareia and Shuarei’s warriors quickly approached each other and engaged each other.

It was always the same method, but knowing it did not do much good. Venersis and the Desert Sword’s line of attack was unstoppable. It was similar to the current line of attack used by Yulian and the Red Storm.

For a while, Pareia’s warriors fought valiantly against the Shuarei’s warriors, but their formation was slowly breaking apart through Venersis’s movement. They started to get pushed back and the formation started to break down even faster.

Pere realized that waiting any longer would result in all of them dying and shouted out loudly.

“All units retreat!”

After receiving Pere’s order, the warriors gathered with their lead warrior before starting their retreat.

The three thousand warriors and lead warriors who had already made up their mind to give their lives up to buy the rest time to retreat waited in the rear before shouting out loudly and rushing toward the Shuarei once the main forces rushed by them.

Their mission was to defend until the main forces were able to increase their speed of retreat. By the time Pareia’s main forces were able to get their pirms at full speed, there was less than 1,000 of these warriors left.

“Retreat.”

The only one of three lead warriors who was still alive gave the order to retreat, but these warriors were already surrounded by the 20,000 Shuarei warriors and had no escape path.

The remaining warriors were instantly captured or killed, and Pere clenched his teeth watching it happen. He had pushed 3,000 warriors to death for a single opportunity.

‘I will definitely pay them right back.’

Pere firmed his resolve toward the dead warriors as he started to control the speed of their retreat. If they retreated too quickly and the enemy did not arrive at the line, all of this would have been for no reason.

On the other hand, seeing Pareia’s warriors continue to fight without giving up until the end, he felt that he was pretty accurate about this Greatest Warrior.

‘His leadership skills are still weak. I don’t know what they are planning, but if you have been defending all this time and

suddenly attack with an attack that didn't amount to much, who would not suspect something? I do not think that Pareia's Commanding Warrior would be that stupid.'

Venersis looked toward the retreating warriors and continued to think.

'You seemed to want to draw us in, but if you wanted to do that, you should have had some head-on battles with us earlier on. Retreating is definitely a strategy. A tactical retreat...fine. I will follow you to make up for your warriors who have died for your stupid plan. Show me what you have prepared.'

At first, Venersis had no desire to chase after them and had Buchord prepared in the rear just in case, but he changed his mind after witnessing Pareia's warriors who stayed true to their mission until the end. Furthermore, he was confident that normal traps and ambushes would not shake him.

"All units, let's chase after Pareia and mock their stupid Greatest Warriors."

Once they received Venersis's command, the Shuarei warriors, who now had the momentum, pushed forward as Venersis ordered the lead warriors to not get too excited and fix up their formation as they chased after Pareia.

The chase between the Shuarei and Pareia had started.

Book 5-3.5

The three thousand warriors had already allowed Pareia to create the distance and mend their formation. It would not be easy to catch up to them and disrupt their movement. A thick sand breeze was created in the 450 meter distance between the two groups.

After chasing Pareia for a while, Venersis felt an unexplainable shock in his forehead. The reason he was able to be called a War God was because he was able to see the entire battlefield at once, and because he had this monstrous intuition that helped him recognize dangers before they happened.

Venersis looked around. There did not seem to be anything out of the ordinary other than the enemy's oasis up ahead.

In fact, there was just a straight line toward the oasis. It even seemed possible to follow that line to charge right into the oasis.

‘What are they thinking? Are they just idiots?’

Venersis could not figure out the source of his discomfort, but his intuition was continuing to send him warnings.

“All units, slow down.”

The lead warriors looked at him with confusion once he gave that order. It was because even they felt like they could push straight forward and take the oasis at once.

However, Venersis trusted this intuition that had been with him for twenty years.

“All units, slow down.”

The lead warriors thought it was weird, but they chose to follow Venersis's order.

The Shuarei's unit started to slow down, and when Pareia turned their piramas around to change from a retreat to an attack, the warriors in the front of the Shuarei unit suddenly disappeared

underground.

The warriors behind them saw the group falling into the ground, but they could not stop the momentum of the pirmas and fell into the ground as well.

Your view is limited on top of a running pirma. In addition, it was worse when there was a lot of warriors in front of you. That was why the Shuarei warriors were falling into the trap one after another.

By the time Venersis and the lead warriors caught on to the trap, a lot of warriors had already been injured.

“How?”

One of the Shuarei’s lead warriors let out a shocked question.

It was terrible. There were fallen pirmas all over the place and other pirmas had stepped over them. There seemed to be more warriors killed from being stepped on by their own allies than the trap itself.

“Unbelievable.”

One of the Greatest Warriors let out a shocked statement. How did this suddenly happen?

This was the exact route that Pareia had used to retreat. It was not possible to create a trap in just a couple seconds. It was possible that they had created multiple traps in advance, but Pareia’s main force was a large group as well. It would not be that easy to change direction.

It was a type of magic, and after taking a look at the terrain, Venersis was able to figure out the secret of this magic.

Pareia had used the height of the area and the sand hill to create an optical illusion.

When Pere first found this line, he had discussed it in great lengths with the other Greatest Warriors and even tested it out

himself. The results were very successful.

If you leave some distance and follow this line, it creates a blind spot that the person in the back is unable to see. Even if the person in the front changes directions by a little bit, it still looks like they are moving in a straight line.

That was why Pere had created a trap in that blind spot in advance, and the results were a success. Unfortunately, the Shuarei slowed down their movement so they were unable to deliver the type of damage they thought they would be able to deliver.

Either way, the Shuarei were in a state of chaos, and their formation was breaking apart. Pere was in the lead of the Pareia warriors to use this opening to seemingly want to pay back for their earlier retreat.

They split into two sides as they approached the Shuarei.

There seemed to be a trap prepared in the central area.

‘I made a mistake.’

Venersis could not help but accept the fact that he made a mistake. He decided to chase after the enemy even though he knew the enemy had some type of plan, and he didn’t stop to verify the danger when his intuition clearly told him something was wrong.

The silver lining was that he had ordered the unit to slow down.

“Greatest warriors and lead warriors quickly gather the warriors. Umbrella will follow behind me with the gathered warriors while Butaka will gather the other warriors and solidify the central area and fix up the formation before retreating.”

Venersis quickly gave orders before looking toward the Desert Sword behind him.

“It was my mistake. We will need to defend against the enemy with our lives.”

The Desert Sword warriors did not even blink at Venersis's request for their lives. They just picked up their shamshirs.

Venersis and less than one hundred Desert Sword warriors charged toward Pareia's unit. Their goal was to buy time for the warriors who had fallen into a state of chaos so that they can fix up the formation.

On first glance, it seemed impossible, but Venersis knew that he and the Desert Sword had the strength to do such a reckless maneuver.

They started to cut through the charging Pareia's formation in a straight line. Although they may be lacking in number compared to Pareia, this charge was strong enough to create an obstacle for over half of Pareia's warriors.

Pere ordered another Greatest Warrior to continue to chase after the Shuarei. It was true that they had successfully managed to pull the Shuarei into a trap, but the damage was minimal. They needed to use this chaos to cause a lot of damage. They must do this.

They had lost a lot of warriors in this chase. If they could not cause a lot of damage right now, they would be the ones with the disadvantage as time went on.

They would not have to feel rushed if the Shuarei charged after them at full speed, but since they lowered their speed, they could not even use half of the traps they had planned in advance.

Pere personally led three thousand warriors to clash head on with Venersis and the Desert Sword. He needed to buy time for Pareia's warriors to attack the Shuarei's warriors who had not had time to fix up their formation.

“Yiyaaaaaaaaaaaaa~!”

Pere let out a shout as he clashed with Venersis.

While Pere and his warriors were barely managing to fend off this War God and his subordinates, Pareia's main forces made

contact with the Shuarei who were still in a state of chaos.

The yellow sand started to become painted red once again. This red sand was fitting the name of the Crimson Desert.

As Pareia was giving the Shuarei a lot of damage, the number of warriors under Pere's command was starting to shrink. These Desert Sword warriors really were shockingly scary. Their numbers did not dwindle much at all.

At the same time, there was another change. They could hear a shout coming from the oasis.

Pere and Venersis both looked toward the oasis at the same time.

Whose flag is it?

Venersis started to smile. It was Buchord and the Shuarei's 5,000 warriors.

Venersis did not know what kind of scheme Pareia was planning, so he had ordered Buchord to take 5,000 warriors and go around to the left to attack the oasis.

Once this happened, the one to feel a sense of urgency was Pere. Since all of the warriors were out here, there were only a couple hundred warriors left in the oasis.

Pere was hesitating whether he should stop attacking the Shuarei and return to the oasis or continue to push forward and defeat the group in front of him before trying to take back the taken oasis.

"It's one thing for me to not pay attention, but can you really afford to be distracted right now?"

Venersis's monotone voice could be heard as the sound of the air being cut appeared.

Pere realized where he was and lifted up his shamshir with one hand to defend against this shining shamshir in front of him, but he could not get into proper form and his shamshir was flung into the sky.

“I cannot kill a warrior without his weapon. It was a great plan, but it had too many openings.”

Venersis spoke as if he was scolding his son or a subordinate warrior, before turning his pirma around to return to the Shuarei unit that was being overwhelmed.

“Pere-nim.”

Pere was in a short state of fear and only snapped out of it when one of his subordinate warriors shouted toward him.

He then quickly received the shamshir and rushed toward the battlefield once more.

“Ah!”

Pere let out a groan after seeing the battlefield.

‘Is Venersis some type of God? How did this formation become alive the moment he returned? Was I out of it for that long?’

The battlefield where Pareia had been overwhelming the Shuarei had somehow turned even.

The oasis side was quiet as well, which probably meant that it was already taken.

‘If this continues, I don’t know what will happen if we are attacked from both sides.’

The moment Pere was thinking about that, Greatest Warrior Hamkipia approached him.

“We need to retreat now. If we are attacked from behind, we will not be able to do anything. We may have lost the oasis, but we were pretty even in the fight itself. We need to swallow our disappointment and retreat.”

Pere shook his head at Hamkipia’s words. They may have fought an even battle, but the results was that it was their complete defeat. But there was nothing he could do about it.

Pere looked around. They may have been fighting evenly, but their formation was still solid and the warriors' morales were high, so they should be able to retreat without taking much damage.

“All units, retreat!”

Once Pere ordered in a loud voice, Pareia's warriors immediately started to back away. Venersis also did not give the order to push Pareia further. They had also received damage, and he had successfully taken the oasis which was their goal.

Pere clenched his teeth looking at Venersis who was leisurely commanding over the battlefield.

He had thought this would be an overwhelming victory, but they had just ended up losing the oasis. It suddenly made him remember Runa's words about only launching a defensive attack.

‘I have lost all face.’

Pere put his head down in shame.

‘I guess it makes sense. It wasn't like Runa was worse than me that he could not defeat Venersis.’

Pere suddenly realized that Runa had been unable to defeat Venersis no matter what type of strategy he implemented, even with the terrain and numbers advantage.

Still, Pere could not give up.

‘For sure, I will win next time.’

While Pere was filled with despair, Venersis was already thinking about the next battle.

‘Just one more. If we can take the Thick Bushed oasis, we will take the advantage in both the offense and defense.’

The Thick Bushed oasis was crossroad for the quicksand river. The Shuarei and Pareia were on either sides of the quicksand river. The tribe that held control of this oasis was able to take the advantage when it came to strategies and supplies. This was the

reason Venersis had spent a lot of effort and shed a lot of blood to recklessly take this oasis in the past.

In addition, Pareia's esteemed Desert Runner port was located in the Thick Bushed oasis. If they managed to take this oasis, Pareia would not be able to freely use the quicksand river for a while.

Venersis was planning to take this oasis at all costs.

End of chapter.

Book 5-4.1

The Unification of the Eastern Desert

The battle that will go down as a legend.

The blood became a river and the moans rang through the heavens.

Pareia's warriors quickly took over the Shuarei's oasis that was defended by 5,000 warriors.

But what Runa wanted to do was not to take an oasis, but to pressure Venersis. That was why Runa did not leave many warriors at the oasis before heading on to the next oasis.

By the time the messenger warrior arrived, Runa was outside the second oasis. To be specific, he was ready to attack an oasis that was not far away from the first oasis they lost to the Shuarei in this war.

“What did you say?”

Runa doubted his ears and asked the messenger warrior once more, but the response was the same.

“Currently, Pere-nim has retreated to the Thick Bushed oasis and is preparing his defenses.”

Runa almost fell over. He had come here because he wanted to make sure they did not get pushed back to the Thick Bushed oasis. He had come here to pressure Venersis before it got to that point.

“What happened? How did he end up being pushed back? Did the enemy increase in number or something?”

Once the messenger warrior explained the recent battle, Runa jumped up and down while shouting in anger.

“I had told him multiple times to make sure to not fight him head on and just defend!”

They had been pushed back somewhere that they should never have been pushed back until. The Thick Bushed oasis needed to remain in Pareia's hands.

It mattered that it was the strategic crossroad between the two tribes, but most importantly, it was the port for the Desert Runner.

It wasn't that it would be impossible to transport warriors without a port, but the necessary tasks that needed to happen to transport warriors needed a port to take place. That was why the use of the quicksand river will diminish significantly if they lost the oasis.

The absolutely necessary and only possible to do at port task was of course the maintenance of the Desert Runner.

Sandstorms blew across the quicksand river whenever and wherever. These sandstorms did not consist only of sand; they also had small rocks mixed in with it. Furthermore, the strong force of the wind caused extra damage to the ship, requiring routine maintenance.

But if they lost the port to do their maintenance, they needed to use the small port up at the end of the north of the quicksand river that the Desert Runner used to use in the past. If that happened, things would slow down significantly.

Seeing Runa continuing to jump up and down in anger, the messenger warrior took out a roll of lamb skin before handing it to Runa.

"This is the information Pere-nim wanted to send to Runa-nim."

Most messages were verbal to prevent interception if the messenger warrior was captured, but Pere's desire to thoroughly explain the situation and the fact that the quicksand river was completely dominated by Pareia allowed Pareia to describe the details of the battle and the current situation for Runa to read.

“Mm.....”

Runa let out a long moan after reading the content. Described on the lamb skin was the information about the terrain of the battlefield drawn out, as well as how they moved throughout the battle. It also included information about the current situation.

‘There was a terrain like this?’

Runa stared intensely at the image drawn on the lamb skin before falling deep into thought. It was a line that he had not discovered. That was why he was disappointed. If Pere had discovered that line when he was there, he felt like he could have perfectly captured Venersis.

‘I guess a War God really does get the help of the heavens.’

Runa knew that the battle was already over but could not stop staring at the lamb skin with disappointment. After that, he stopped blaming Pere for what happened. He did go against his order, but with a method like this, it was definitely worth a try.

However, regardless of all of that, Runa could not help but worry. He could not decide whether to return to the Thick Bushed oasis to lead the defense or continue to push forward and pressure Venersis.

There were only about 30 to 40,000 warriors left in the Shuarei, so if he really wanted to, he could focus on the defense of the oasis by the quicksand river and hold off until Yulian returned. However, that was only possible if the Thick Bushed oasis remained firmly under Pareia’s control.

Right now, he needed to decide whether to return or charge forward.

If he could take that oasis in front of him, and then take back the oasis that was lost in the first oasis, he could cut off the supply route for Venersis and attack Venersis from both sides.

At the same time, it would also cut his supply route off and it was

possible for him to be attacked by the remaining Shuarei warriors and Venersis at the same time.

‘If the Glow was here, we could just charge forward the the Shuarei’s largest oasis and capture the enemy Glow.’

Runa was filled with disappointment once more, but he needed to focus on the matter at hand right now.

Return or charge.

After debating it for a long time, Runa decided on charging forward. The amount of time it would take for him to return to the Thick Bushed oasis would be similar to the amount of time it would take him to take over two oasis. In addition, he believed that Yulian would soon return to Pareia after receiving his earlier message.

Runa informed the messenger warrior to tell Pere to not fight Venersis head on this time even if the heavens crashed down, as well as to gather all of the reserver warriors in the center to focus on defense. He then started to sharply glare at the oasis in front of him.

There was so much blood soaked into the ground by the Thick Bushed oasis that they were worried it might seep into the oasis. The Shuarei was doing everything they could to take it over, while Pareia was doing everything it could to protect it. Every single skirmish was extremely severe.

Pere did not respond to any of the Shuarei’s taunts, and continued to develop traps and set up wooden fences to wait until the Shuarei tried to invade to fight.

You had to give credit to Pere and the remaining Greatest Warriors. They were doing well defending against that Venersis.

The Shuarei could not get through Pareia that was only defending, and the only method Pareia had to push the enemy back

was the flow of time. Because of that, there were only a lot of small skirmishes and the amount of spilled blood just continued to grow.

In addition, hearing that Runa was attacking the Sunlit oasis made them feel more rushed.

5,000 warriors had arrived as reinforcement not too long ago. Where else would these 5,000 warriors have come from? They came from the nearby oases. That meant that it would be even easier for Pareia to take the other oases behind them.

That was why Venersis started to rush a bit more.

‘We don’t have any more time. We need to somehow take over this oasis and develop our defenses before we pincer that warrior named Runa and capture him. If we can do that, we will win this war.’

Venersis made up his mind to definitely take over the oasis this time and called over his Greatest Warriors and lead warriors.

Venersis remained silent even after all of them had gathered in his paoe as he took a good look at all of them.

“Everybody has gathered.”

Once Buchord announced that everyone had gathered, Venersis stood up from his seat and looked around at the gathered warriors.

Venersis took a long time to look around without saying anything. The moment everybody had looks of confusion, Venersis finally started to speak.

“We do not have time.”

“.....?”

The silence continued once more.

Everyone who gathered here were lead warriors and Greatest Warriors. They were well-informed about how this war was going. That was why they were able to guess what Venersis meant when he said there was no time. However, what was the meaning of this

silence?

“We will attack once more in three days. In that battle, we will not retreat even if we are completely obliterated.

The warriors felt their bodies shake at Venersis’s continued words. This was the reason their great Commanding Warrior had remained silent. He had remained silent because he needed to ask for their lives.

In the middle of this complete silence where even the sound of breathing could not be heard, only Venersis’s voice filled the void.

“It was difficult to get here, and we do not know if we will get another opportunity like this in the future. We will head out in the morning in three days, so give the warriors plenty of food and rest during this time. Lead warriors, let the veteran warriors under your command know about the plan.”

‘The warriors might revolt.’

That is what one of the warriors might have wanted to say. Where would they find a war with only the option to push forward? Wasn’t this War God in front of them the person who was best at balancing charging forward and strategically retreating?

However, all of them got rid of such idea at Venersis’s continued words.

“I do not believe that our Shuarei warriors are cowards.”

“Gasp.”

Someone let out a gasp.

“Trust me. We will be victorious.”

All of them knew it was impossible, but they they accepted it.

The War God always kept the things he said. If he said they were going to be victorious, they were going to be victorious.

An odd intensity filled the paoe.

“We will definitely be victorious.”

All of them clenched their fists at Venersis’s one more confirmation.

‘We will be victorious in the next battle and take over the oasis.’

That was the only thought in all of their minds as if they had been brainwashed.

Book 5-4.2

“Are you okay?”

Yulian asked with concern seeing the expression on Violet’s face.

“I’m sorry for showing you such a sight. But you do not need to slow down for me.”

Seeing Violet clench her teeth as she responded, Yulian shook his head internally.

She really was stubborn like Grace and would not change her mind about something she was determined to do. She was also a woman with strong abilities that people could only admire.

After moving along a while longer, Yulian ordered everyone to rest as he got off the pirma and headed over to her.

“I told you you could stay back and slowly return. Is there a reason for you to burden yourself like this?”

Yulian had fully realized after seeing her abilities during this war that she was an even more amazing woman than he had thought her to be, but in the end, her stamina was lacking compared to the trained warriors.

In addition, she had not been able to get any rest after giving birth. She was his wife whom he needed to protect. That was why Yulian continued to worry about her.

Violet staggered once she got off the pirma.

Yulian quickly approached her and supported her up as he started to speak while massaging her arms and legs.

“Look at this. Your body is already screaming in pain. If you want to go out on a campaign with us next time, let’s get you some practice riding a pirma.”

“I’m sorry. We did not have much pirma riding in the Shire.”

“I’m sure. Tsk. Your muscles are too tight and you even have a big bruise. Can you go with us? Just listen to me. Even now, I can stick one of the Red Storm warriors with you to take you back.”

She shook her head at Yulian’s concern.

“I am just not used to physical pain. Once I get used to it, I will not show a sight like this.”

“So stubborn....it will not take just a day or two to get used to riding a pirma. You need to ride for multiple years to get used to it.”

Violet caressed the face of her worried husband before responding.

“I’m okay. I can take it. Looking at the signs in the heavens, something does not feel right. I feel like something is going to happen. I am more confident about it after seeing Runa-nim ask you to urgently return. I know that I must go back. You already know right? I have the strength to save hundreds of warriors.”

Since he had no reason to doubt her abilities even a little bit, Yulian could not say anything else. As long as she was the wife of the Glow and had the responsibilities that came with the role, maybe sacrifice was just a natural part of it.

“Then do as you like. From here on, I will carry you. You have so many bruises on your thighs that if you just continue riding a pirma, your skin will start to rip.”

“No. We are not by ourselves. It will cause a dent in your majestic air as Glow.”

“The Red Storm and I already know everything about each other. Their lips are heavy as well. It really won’t matter if it gets out either. We are husband and wife.”

Both of Violet’s cheeks turned red at Yulian’s words and she nodded her head. To be honest, it was already very difficult for her to even stand up; her butt, thigh, and even arms were hurting so

much.

Yulian continued to massage her arm and legs for the ten minutes they rested, sending warm energy into her body.

“Just hold on a little more. We will be able to arrive at the ship by night time. Make sure you get plenty of rest on the ship.”

“Yes.”

“Then let’s go.”

Yulian ordered the group to start moving once more and they restarted their journey toward where the Desert Runner will be waiting for them.

They continued to ride the pirma without stopping, filling their stomachs with dried rations while continuing to ride. By the time the moon was decently up in the sky, Yulian and the Red Storm were able to arrive at the Desert Runner.

And Yulian received surprising news as soon as he got on board.

“Even the second oasis was taken over.”

Yulian became extremely shocked and asked the messenger warrior.

“And now?”

“By now, I presume they will be doing a defensive battle at the Thick Bushed oasis.”

Bang.

Yulian stomped so hard that it might have even damaged the deck.

“What is the number of remaining warriors?”

“The reserve warriors are meeting up with them, but they should have less than 5,000 warriors. Commanding Warrior Runa took 15,000 warriors with him to head to the northern Shuarei territory.”

“What about the Shuarei’s numbers?”

“I do not know the exact number, but it should be about the same.”

“My lord.”

Yulian felt a significant shock in his head.

‘Who is left in Pareia to defend against him? I am not there, Runa is not there, and even Pareia’s third generation Greatest Warriors are not there.’

Yulian was thinking that Pere alone was not enough to defend against Venersis.

There were other Greatest Warriors with him, but they were lacking in strategy and skills compared to Vibli or Egane.

At that time, the warrior who was taking the role of captain on the ship interjected.

“Greatest Warrior Thriger said he needed to protect the port and headed back right away as well. The enemy’s main forces might not show up, but he mentioned something about defending against their special teams.”

Yulian nodded his head. It was a wise decision.

“Let’s hurry up and head out.”

Once they received Yulian’s command, the warrior ordered the ship to depart.

‘Younger brother, hold on just a little bit longer.’

Yulian was desperately pleading for Pere’s safety.

The situation was pretty bleak.

Both sides were in a situation where they might end up being pincered, so the question at hand was who can take the oasis in front of them.

Grace had also sent an envoy to the Rivolde to pressure Venersis as well, but the Rivolde's Glow Dejaine was not able to immediately move the Rivolde due to old age.

Runa took over the empty oasis and chased behind Venersis, while the Shuarei's Glow took on the risk to send another 15,000 warrior to chase behind Runa and pressure him. The moment Runa finally took over the oasis right behind Venersis, Venersis was getting ready to attack the Thick Bushed oasis one more time.

“All units, forward march!”

The warriors started to slowly move forward at Venersis's command.

The warriors in the front kept a good amount of distance with each other as they slowly moved forward with a large wooden shield in front of them, searching for traps and defending against arrows flying their way.

As the sky in front of them became filled with numerous numbers of arrows, the Shuarei warriors in the front started to fall down, as the warriors behind them started to fill in those gaps.

In a battle for an oasis, the attacking side was always at an advantage. The question was more about how they could minimize the damage they received.

The warriors in the front were settled with the thought that they were going to die. They only pushed forward thinking that their death could help bring victory for their tribe.

Over 2,000 warriors must have been sacrificed for this. But thanks to them, the majority of the traps, ropes, and wooden fences were able to be cleared. Their sacrifice had created a path for the Shuarei to safely charge through.

“All units, charge!”

Venersis finally gave the order to charge forward, and the Shuarei warriors rushed forward as if they were crazy. There were

some that fell for the traps that the vanguard warriors did not find, but that was only a small group of them.

Finally, Pareia's warriors who were ready started to fight with the Shuarei warriors.

“Slash them! Slash them for the glory of the Shuarei!”

The lead warriors were pushing their subordinate warriors forward until they lost their voice, while Pareia's warriors were fighting back with everything they had, knowing that it was the end if they were pushed back from this oasis.

“Hold on. Our Glow is on his way. We will not greet our Glow with our death!”

Pareia's lead warriors were also shouting to raise the morale of the warriors, and it was the truth as well. They would not have anything to worry about once Yulian arrived either today or tomorrow.

If the Shuarei had Venersis, the War God of the Western Desert, they had their Glow, the War God of the Eastern Desert.

The war was brutal.

Blood splattered between people trying to push forward and the people trying to hold them back. Some of them were fighting without even realizing that a part of their body had been cut off.

The shamans on both sides were mumbling something nonstop toward each other, chanting curses and blessings and asking for victory in this battle.

Neither side had any thoughts about retreating. They were all ready to die here. They would not be giving this oasis to the enemy. It was to the point that even the Greatest Warriors who had been involved in many wars were getting intoxicated by the smell of blood.

The clash that had been even was slowly starting to change as

time went on...

Book 5-4.3

The numbers on both sides, courage, training, morale, everything was pretty similar. However, the Shuarei had Venersis and the Desert Sword. Once you take away Pareia's original preemptive attack and their terrain advantage, the battle was slowly starting to tip in the Shuarei's favor.

It was not a big difference. Since everyone was fighting with everything they had, it just looked like the Shuarei was moving forward and Pareia was getting pushed back.

But that speed was slowly starting to speed up. Courage to put their lives on the line was not enough to defend against Venersis. The hole in the formation started to become created faster and faster.

Nonetheless, Pareia's warriors pushed aside their fear and charged toward him.

However, as time went by, Pareia's formation started to break.

'Heavens! Neo Latin-nim!'

Pere was looking to the heavens and searching for his guardian. He could not lose like this. Only if he had not fought against them head on like he had done.....

Regret was filling Pere's mind.

"Aaaaaah!"

Pere shouted out loudly as he started to slash the Shuarei warriors in front of him. He didn't know how long he had swung his shamshir for, but he could no longer feel his arm. He probably would now know even if the shamshir fell from his hand. He just continued to swing on instinct, and seeing the enemy fall in front of him let him know that he still had some strength left.

He could not open his eyes because of the sweat from his

forehead, and barely managed to open them a little bit to look around the battlefield. Pareia was starting to fall apart. There did not seem to be a way to recover. He had thought they had fought well until now and had held on very well. But even with all of their preparation, why did they have to break apart like this?

It made Pere start to cry.

‘Why?’

Pere could not accept it. Did all of their hard work and sweat to prepare mean nothing? Will it all just disappear like bubbles?

A Greatest Warrior whose body was covered in blood approached Pere. Pere already knew what he was going to say. They had approached the battle with no retreat in mind, but there really was no other option at this point. Since the enemy had taken damage as well, they would not dare to chase after them.

They needed to order the retreat in order to save at least the remaining warriors.

“All...units.....”

The moment Pere was about to order the retreat, a miracle-like event happened.

Ruuuuuumble. Ruuuuuuumble!

A large noise shook across the battlefield. They were sure that the ground had shook.

‘What?’

A piece of ground the size of a paoe in their base rolled through in front of them. The Shuarei warriors who were in the line of that dirtball were decimated. That dirtball which started with a yellow and golden color was quickly turning red with the blood it absorbed.

The Shuarei warriors instantly fell into chaos.

There was not just one of these dirtballs. They continued to fall

from the air. Three more of these same dirtballs were falling down as they watched.

“Dodge!”

Since it was falling from such a high height, the Shuarei warriors all felt like it was going to fall on them even though they were far away from it.

They would have never broken their formation if they were going against a person. However, their opponent was a large dirtball flying from an unknown location. Wouldn't it be a terrible death if they were killed not by an enemy shamshir but by being squashed by a dirtball?

The Shuarei that pushed forward like a storm started to hesitate. At the same time, Pareia started to push back against them. The rear of the Shuarei formation was already a complete mess.

‘What is it?’

Venersis was looking at it. A strong power was coming from one side of Pareia. At the source of that power was a warrior who was completely drenched in sweat as well as another large dirtball.

‘Orca!’

Pere realized that power as well, and seeing that his youngest brother was standing there, he shouted toward him.

“Gasp~ Gaaaasp~!”

Orca was breathing very heavily. His whole body was in so much pain that it was hard to even move his finger. He wanted to just fall down like that and go to sleep. However, seeing the thing floating in front of him, he needed to at least send this flying before falling over.

Orca's hand drew multiple circles and formation in the sky. He then continued to mumble to draw out the magic strength of the ancient language.

The dirtball the size of a paoe started to rise up into the sky.

“Go.”

Once it rose to the height of a person, Orca sent it flying toward the Shuarei’s formation.

‘It’s done.’

Seeing it flying away, Orca immediately fell down and started to think to himself.

‘It’s a good thing I didn’t get to test it out. Shit, my bone feels like it is melting away.’

Orca may have been grumbling internally, but he was actually surprised as well.

He was surprised at the strength of this magic that he happened to get his hands on and worked so hard to memorize. Orca was satisfied that Pareia’s warriors were able to get back to their senses and take the advantage thanks to this magic.

He finally had a skill that he could proudly show in front of his older brothers and the rest of the tribe. He could proudly claim to be part of the Provoke family.

‘I should watch this until the end.....’

Orca was mumbling internally to himself before finally fainting.

Pere saw Orca falling over and wanted to run over to him, but he did not want to lose this momentum. They had gathered the strength to hold on, no, to push the Shuarei back.

“Charge!”

Pere shouted loudly as he pushed forward.

“Everyone, fix up your formation.”

“Do you want to destroy this battle that we had within our grasp!”

The Shuarei lead warriors were shouting loudly as they fixed up

the warriors' formation. However, the formation was destroyed so much that it was not possible to fix up very quickly.

You could even hear a lead warrior shout out in anger.

“If something comes flying at you, just die! Don't be a hindrance to your fellow warriors by messing up the formation. Just die! If we get taken over, we will all die anyways!”

Were their words heard? Another of those dirtballs came flying in the air.

The moment everyone's eyes were filled once more with fear and despair, Venersis shouted out loudly.

“Move!”

The warriors quickly made way for Venersis who was rushing forward on his pirma. He then jumped up from the moving pirma.

“Ha~!”

Venersis looked like he was flying as he charged toward the dirtball that was flying toward them at a fast speed.

There was no noise. All they saw was Venersis landing once more on his pirma, and the dirtball losing its velocity and falling down in two pieces.

Everybody just stared blankly at this amazing scene.

“We will definitely win!”

Venersis pointed his shamshir forward and shouted out loudly. The Shuarei warriors responded back with an extremely loud shout.

The two formations of warriors started to clash once more.

Venersis withstood the extreme pain in his wrist and started to pierce through Pareia's formation with the Desert Sword.

Both sides had run out of energy a long time ago. They were barely managing to hold on with their mental fortitude alone.

Pareia's warriors were starting to fall one after another because of the monstrous Venersis and the Desert Sword.

Was there no point to Orca's miracle?

They did not even have the strength to retreat at this point. They could only run forward and die with the enemy.

Pere could only fall into despair after looking around the battlefield as well. There were no other options. He could only accept death with the other warriors. The revenge will be up to the others.

The war seemed to end with the Shuarei's victory like that.

Stand up warrior.

Stand and push forward.

The enemy weapons will miss your body

And your weapon will pierce the enemy.

Forget your fear and push forward.

A voice started to ring out in the warriors' heads.

The warriors were thinking that they were going crazy as their death was imminent. However, the voice did not disappear. That voice got rid of the despair in their hearts, and helped bring back the courage that they had already lost.

Warrior, do you not have the strength to stand?

Do not lose to your body.

Your fiery passion

And your storm-like courage

Still resides in your heart.

Why are you thinking about losing?

Stand up warrior.

Stand and push forward.

All of them had gone crazy.

The warriors who found it difficult to even lift up their shamshirs started to swing their shamshirs, and the warriors who found it difficult to even breath started to vigorously shout as they started to push forward.

“Pareia’s warriors. I have arrived!”

Book 5-4.4

The person responsible for the voice in the ears of each and every one of Pareia's warriors was none other than their hero and leader who will not lose, the Pareia's Glow Yulian Provoke.

After revealing themselves on the battlefield, Yulian and the Red Storm instantly jumped into the Shuarei's formation. Pareia's warriors watched them jump in and started to shout even louder as they pushed forward.

Their Glow was getting revenge for all of the times they were on the losing end during this war. The almost dead battlefield started to burn passionately once more.

It was burning so hot as if it wanted to burn up the few remaining warriors on both sides.

Venersis saw Yulian and cursed the heavens. If Yulian had arrived just a few hours later, the Shuarei would have won this war, not Pareia.

"I guess the heavens are finally pushing our Shuarei away."

You could hear the lament in the voice of Venersis, the man who does not know the definition of giving up.

He wanted to fight against that young War God, but the feeling in his hand was not normal after the shock from earlier. They would lose if they could not defend against Yulian, and right now, he had no methods to defend against him.

It was not that he was afraid of death. However, he could not fend off that young War God's greatsword right now, and if he died, that would really be the end of the Shuarei.

"All units, retreat!"

Venersis held back his tears and could only order the retreat. His rear was blocked by that Greatest Warrior named Runa, but Runa

was also pincerred on both sides so it should not be a big issue.

The Shuarei's warriors slowly started to retreat. After seeing the condition of his warriors, Yulian did not order Pareia's warriors to chase after them.

He had raised their strength with the power of Violet's incantation, but chasing was still too much. Yulian verified that the Shuarei were retreating before running across Pareia's formation with the Red Storm.

"It is Pareia's victory!"

"Oowaaaaaa~."

Pareia let out a cheerful shout. This nightmarish battle was finally over.

Once Yulian settled the battlefield and started the transport of the injured warriors, he gathered the remaining Greatest Warrior and lead warriors.

There were just nine people including Yulian. In a battle with two Greatest Warriors and twenty-ish lead warriors, not even half managed to survive. None of the gathered warriors were without injuries either. All of them were covered in blood and injuries.

"All of you fought valiantly. I sincerely thank you for working so hard and for staying alive."

Listening to what Yulian had to say, all of them lowered their heads. If the Glow had not arrived right on time, all of them would have died, Pareia would have lost, and they would have lost the oasis.

Yulian understood the feelings of everyone who was gathered in that paoe. That is why he started to speak once more.

"Lift up your heads and stand proudly. No matter what anybody says, today's battle was Pareia's victory. Do not be embarrassed about the bloody battle. This battle will truly go down in Pareia's

history as the oasis that was protected with blood.”

“.....”

“Let’s Sing the song of victory. Let’s celebrate. Let’s have fun ... enough fun for the dead warriors as well.”

Everyone lifted up their heads and looked toward Yulian. Yulian’s voice was slightly trembling. Would they know?

Would they know the truth about how he was blaming himself for not being able to arrive even a bit earlier?

25,000 warriors fought against 20,000 warriors and less than 10,000 total warriors were left between the two tribes. This battle will be known as the miracle of the Thick Bushed oasis in the future.

Seventh month of the year 259 in the continental calendar.

The Eastern Desert returned to peace after half a year of battle. And for the first time in the history of the desert, it might be just half of the whole desert, but a tribe was able to unify the entire Eastern Desert.

Population 2,000,000. 220,000 warriors. A strong nation known as Pareia.

Pareia made a deal with the Shuarei to create a safe escape path for both Runa and Venersis, and started to exchange prisoners.

Looking at the results, the Shuarei had gained one oasis from this war, but they suffered so much damage that they needed to be afraid of Pareia’s invasion.

However, Pareia also had a lot of things to do.

War after war had caused a significant difference in their ratio of men to women, and there was a mountain load of things to do to settle the northern territory. Yulian and Runa were obviously busy, but many other people had to be extremely busy as well.

“You worked hard.”

Yulian patted the shoulder of Orca, the person responsible for having the Thick Bushed oasis survive until he arrived, as well as the one who forced Venersis to retreat without facing off against him.

Orca was in intensive care as he could not put any strength in his body since that day. Violet had determined that his body was damaged by the backflow of the energy and indicated Orca will need to remain in bed for at least half a year.

“Hyung-nim. Hahaha. This Orca can now play his part as well.”

Orca smiled brightly while still lying on the bed and joyfully accepted his oldest brother’s praise.

“I heard it was amazing, but isn’t it burdensome for you if you have to lay in bed for half a year after using it once?”

“Tsk. Even I did not know that would be the case. It was really hard to learn compared to normal incantations, and I could have never expected that the effect would hurt me as well. I really needed to test it out.”

“If you tested it out and knew this would happen, would you have dared to use it again?”

“Now that I think about it, if I thought of it as a test run, I would have failed probably eight or nine times out of ten. The amount of concentration would have been significantly different.”

Yulian patted his youngest brother’s shoulder once more.

“There should be no reason to use that ever again. Nobody will be able to touch our Pareia.”

“That is true. Hahaha.”

Yulian was feeling sorry and continued to touch Orca’s face and pat his shoulder. They can easily talk about it being half a year, but how difficult must it be to stay in bed like this?

Orca seemed to have understood Yulian’s thought as he did not

lose his bright smile and instead started to console his brother as well.

“I am satisfied. I can now be accepted as a warrior of Pareia. I will continue to train hard so that I will gain enough strength to use my abilities without creating such a burden on my body.”

“Sounds like my younger brother.”

“The same Provoke blood flows through me. Hahaha.”

“Yes, I believe in you.”

Yulian patted Orca’s shoulder once more before heading out of the paoe.

“Huuuuuuuuuu~!”

Yulian looked up to the sky and let out a big breath. He had achieved half of his dream of unifying the desert. They had gained a lot, but also lost a lot in the process.

‘I cannot become weak right now.’

He prevented himself from getting sentimental and clenched his fists tightly.

‘I am the Glow. Sometimes I need to exist on my own.’

Pareia was starting to get stronger.

“Warrior Venersis seeks the Glow’s punishment for his defeat.”

Shuarei’s Greatest Warrior Venersis knelt in front of his Glow Elbotta and bowed his head.

“Huuuuuuuuuu~!”

Elbotta let out a deep sigh. Who could blame who right now? He had taken just 30,000 warriors and 5,000 reinforcement warriors to fight against 70,000 warriors and almost decimated all of them.

‘Why couldn’t I trust him? Why was I jealous of a warrior as the Glow?’

Elbotta became full of regret as he stared at Venersis.

“Stad.”

If he had trusted Venersis early on, he might be the one who had the same glory that Pareia was currently enjoying.

“What is a warrior who fought valiantly doing? Stand up.”

Why was he so focused on bringing Venersis down?

“The fault lies with me.”

Elbotta admitted his own sins, and Venersis doubted his ears as he quickly lifted up his head.

“It is my fault. I cut down the Shuarei’s strength. You should be more aware than I am that it was not your fault so please stop tormenting me and stand up.”

“Glow.....”

“I am being filled with regret right now. Why couldn’t I have my current mindset a long time ago..... Humans really are interesting creatures. Very interesting.”

“Glow!”

Venersis was worried that this still decently young Glow would break down.

The years had been filled with stubbornness and egotism.

Venersis knew very well the source of that stubbornness and egotism.

It was because the former Glow had valued him so much. He had valued him more than his own son. At first, you could see it as a Glow doting on his warrior, but as time went by, the Glow had compared himself and Elbotta over and over. Seeing that continue for a long time, Elbotta had started to change.

Venersis remembered the reason that the wise Elbotta started to go awry. That was the reason he never turned his back and

remained by Elbotta's side no matter how much suppression and insults he had received.

And after waiting for so long, Elbotta's stubbornness and egotism was slowly starting to untangle itself. However, the problem was that he himself was about to breakdown with it.

Venersis started to speak to Elbotta as if he was trying to shout.

"We still have an opportunity. Please make up your mind and encourage the warriors. No matter what anybody says, the Shuarei is a strong tribe of the Western Desert, and that Pareia will not dare to easily invade us."

Bang. Bang.

Venersis pounded his chest.

"Do not allow frustration or regret to approach even one step closer to you. You are the Glow."

"Vener...sis....."

Elbotta lifted up his lowered head.

"Before you order me to stand, the Glow needs to stand first. And then please vigorously give an order. Please remember that this Venersis is the Shuarei's Glow, Elbotta's warrior."

"Right. I am your Glow, and the Shuarei's Glow."

"You are a strong Glow."

"Yes, I am strong. No, I will become strong."

"I do not doubt it."

"Then I should give an order."

"Please give the order with strength that cannot be rejected."

"Stand, Venersis."

"Venersis has received the Glow's order."

Venersis quickly jumped up from the spot.

“The Shuarei will not disappear. Am I right?”

“We will get even stronger.”

“Bring that strength to me.”

It was certain that the Shuarei will get even stronger from here.

As we reach the halfway point of Book 5

I feel like I ran crazily with the Red Storm. To be honest with you, after finishing Book 4, I decided I was going to take a three day break, but that ended up becoming a week...hmm hmm...yes, yes it did...(I got out of my flow and am currently suffering ^^;)

I am working hard to not make the wars too long (although the right answer might be that I am lacking the ability to make them realistic if I make them too long ^^;) I have tried my best to create the right atmosphere for it. However, I feel like trying to create the right atmosphere is making it kind of predictable.

Even though I am writing it as a fantasy, I feel like a fantasy should still be somewhat realistic. I tried to find a good balance of the two, but I do not know how you will see it.

<<Red Storm>> is quickly reaching the latter parts. Since the war is over, we will rest for a bit before he meets a new enemy, greets a friend, and we will once again travel to a fantasy world.

I plan to show you why I could only make Yulian such a strong character.

He is the Desert Conqueror and a War God.

Thank you to the readers for sticking with a terrible writer like myself and please join me in this soon to end race to the finish.

Sincerely,

Noh Cyungchan

End of chapter

Book 5-5.1

Stability

Now is the time to grow our strength.

As usual, the end of the war was decorated by sorrow.

There were more deaths from the warriors protecting the tribe than the warriors who went away to war this time, but none of that mattered to the families of the warriors. The only thing that mattered was whether they lived or died.

Since Pareia encouraged warriors to take wives and have children, the remuneration to the families of the dead warriors was the most important issue.

There was also a different problem if you probed deeper into this issue, and that is of course the ratio between men and women.

That was a problem in the entire desert, but it was significantly worse for Pareia which had now unified the entire Eastern Desert.

Population 2,000,000. The 18 to early 40 year old men who needed to serve in active duty was less than 300,000. This was causing a serious issue now that they had gathered all of the families of the tribes that were involved in this past war.

Approximately 60,000 warrior were killed in the last two wars with the united tribe and the Shuarei. Out of the 60,000, around 20,000 of them were the breadwinners. The tribes protected the warriors and the warriors' families, and since the dead warriors died for the tribe, it was natural that their remaining family members will be cared for by the tribe.

But that number was pretty large.

With 20,000 warriors dead, there would be at least 100,000 family members at minimum. This was why they could not start the private property distribution in the conquered areas like they

had done in Pareia right away. They did not even have enough to even provide for the families of the dead warriors right now.

The thankful aspect was that because their population grew due to the unification of the Eastern Desert, they could rely on more people to do manual labor, and to do it more effectively. Most importantly, with the reduction of paths that had to be avoided, Pareia's treasure chest Edwin, could now be more aggressive with his trades without worrying about theft.

"Sigh~ you are asking for such a difficult request."

Seeing Edwin let out a long sigh and lower his head, Runa felt a bit apologetic. He knew it was an extremely difficult request, but he had no other choice.

"If we cannot ask such thing to Edwin-nim, who could we ask? Please help us. This is not a deal of any kind, but a request from Pareia."

"Unfortunately, it is impossible right now. Whether it is wheat or really any type of food, the market prices are rising significantly. I understand the Eastern continent getting nervous, but these royal bastards of the Western continent are about to go to war over a woman's handkerchief. Just how stupid can they be?"

"The Western continent going to war?"

Employing spies takes quite a lot of money. They were focusing all of their information in the Eastern continent right now that they were clueless to what was going on in the Western continent. That was why Runa was surprised and asked Edwin.

"Yes. And it is for an extremely stupid reason."

"I am curious."

"Sigh... it is to regain their honor that even a dog would not care about. You will laugh once you hear the story."

Edwin wanted to provide Runa with the wheat that he was asking for even if he needed to take on extra burden. That way, he would be able to take an advantageous position in a deal with Pareia in the future. Unfortunately, the cost of wheat in the entire continent was flying up right now. In addition to wheat, the market price of edible animals, iron, etc, were all at least three times higher than the past month.

It was because the Western continent was getting ready for a potential war as well. However, the flames of war were burning extremely hot at such an early stage that Edwin was this angry right now.

“Sigh~!”

Edwin let out another long sigh before starting his story.

There is a small kingdom called Stalina in the center of the Western continent.

This Stalina Kingdom has been ruled by a queen through the generations, and sits between the three strong nations of the Western continent: the Inama Kingdom, the Narrate Empire, and the Litmus Kingdom. Stalina has played a shrewd diplomatic tug-o-war with all three nations to have its independence and neutrality approved by all parties.

The true reason this Stalina has managed to maintain its independence in the midst of these three large nations was because it was serving as the buffer zone between the borders of all three nations.

In addition, there were diplomats from all three nations who resided in Stalina, that this could always be used as the final line for negotiations.

But the most important factor was the fact that the Stalina Kingdom and the three strong nations were all family.

A good portion of the three strong nations' royal families had

been a part of arranged marriages with the Stalina royalty; so the current emperor's and the royal blood had at least a bit of the Stalina blood mixed in with it.

Of course these nations had arranged marriages as if they were eating dinner, but they had been through multiple arranged marriages throughout the years that there was a decent level of familiarity. Most importantly, the Queen of Stalina, as well as her daughter the princess, were both stunningly beautiful.

Stalina's royal princess Eropei Lot Lucia became the famed beauty of the Western continent from the moment she showed herself at a ballroom when she was fourteen years old, and naturally, this news had spread to the three nations as well.

All three nations had princes who were quickly reaching the age to be married, and all three of them had fallen for Eropei at first sight. That meant that there was only one solution. As they had done in the past, they would send an envoy on Eropei's 18th birthday to respectfully ask for her hand in marriage.

The Queen of Stalina could not help but be put in an awkward position. She only had one daughter, but three nations came to ask to marry her. If she had it her way, she did not want to give her daughter away to any of them, but she could not do anything about it as all three were the strong nations that could easily suppress her kingdom.

Accepting any of the three wedding proposals would immediately start a war.

A wedding proposal from a prince was not an easy problem to resolve, and this situation was probably as terrible as it could get.

If not, would the Queen even have blamed her own daughter Eropei for it?

After contemplating what to do for a long time, the Queen decided to invite the princes of the strong nations to Stalina. The

princes who firmly believed the Queen of Stalina was their future mother-in-law naturally showed up, and the Queen made them all gather together.

One everyone had gathered, she tried to push the problem off to the princes by saying ‘I only have one daughter and three suitors, so please come to a decision between the three of you. You are all men and proud knights, please make it so there will be no issues in the future.’

Since all three of them had identities that could not be ignored, the Queen thought that they would have to cleanly give up if they lost, no matter what the competition may be.

Unfortunately, the problem only got bigger from there.

None of them wanted to give up. They did not even try to find a competition to compete with. Eropei had to become their wife no matter what.

She was more beautiful than a flower and brighter than the sun. How could anybody give up on such a woman?

The three princes were sharing some thorny words with each other before they ended up taking out their swords in the end. Seeing the princes take out their swords, their security details took out their swords as well.

One of the princes were killed while the other two princes became crippled.

With the three nations that controlled approximately two thirds of the entire Western continent about to go to war, it was natural that pretty much the entire Western continent would be affected by it.

Edwin seemed to be frustrated after sharing this long story and quickly gulped down the water on the table.

“Does that make any sense? An entire continent going to war over a single woman?”

Runa could only shake his head in disbelief internally.

“Do you know what the funniest part is? The flower of the war, the princess named Eropei who has been given the name ‘Flower of Blood and Death’ has disappeared with her guardian knight.”

“What do you mean?”

Edwin made an angry expression that was directed at the root of the potential war and responded.

“What else could it mean? Princess Eropei already had a man she had given her heart to. These idiotic princes had fought over a woman who already had a man she loved.”

“What an amazing princess.”

“More like what a shithead of a princess. Tens of thousands of people may die because of her. According to my sources, the Stalina, as well as the three nations who still have not given up, have all sent teams to track her down. Just what they can still do even if they find her now.....”

As someone who was urging warriors to have multiple wives, Runa could not understand. As Edwin mentioned, why would they go to war over a single woman?

It led to a short duration of silence between the two. The conversation had flowed in an odd direction, but that was not the important thing right now.

Book 5-5.2

“For that reason, what Runa-nim is asking for is realistically almost impossible.”

Seeing Edwin lead the conversation, Runa lightly smiled before responding.

“Almost impossible means that it is not impossible.”

“Unless we pull the pillars of our merchant guild and then go far into debt, it is not possible.”

“That debt, is it something our Pareia can take on instead? It is a special request from the Glow.”

“Sigh~!”

Edwin let out another long sigh. He then started to think. The shortening of the trade route from the unification of the Eastern Desert was something to welcome and something that would bring him more profits, but there really was so much risk with this.

“Half!”

Edwin shouted out loudly as if he had made up his mind. It meant that he was willing to fill half of Runa’s request.

“We cannot reward the warriors with just that much. The warriors do not protect the tribe to get a reward, but the Glow wants to keep the morale up as much as possible.

“If you give me years of time, I can definitely fulfill it. But at this moment, even half is going to be pushing it a bit.”

“I will give you something that will return double the amount in one year.”

Seeing Runa continue on, Edwin lowered his head and started to scratch his head.

“It really is going to be impossible.”

“Then at least two thirds. Please. This is the most important time for Pareia. You know that we cannot call in a different merchant guild because of the Glow’s promise with you.”

Edwin abruptly lifted up his head and looked toward Runa.

“Runa-nim’s words sound like a threat. Are you saying that you may break the promise of our monopoly?”

“You know very well that is not my intention. I have not forgotten about how much Edwin-nim has helped Pareia until now. The people of the desert do not forget their benefactors.”

“Ah! This is really driving me crazy.”

Edwin shook his head as he answered.

“I feel like you only request the difficult things. Now I am worried about what Runa-nim will request right before a war and right after a war. I really am doing the best that I can right now.”

Runa quickly grabbed onto both of Edwin’s hands.

“We can only ask Edwin-nim because it is so difficult. It is not something we can do on our own. I will promise you this. Within one year, we will repay you twice the amount of trouble this will cause you. Pareia does not lie.”

“Do you have something in mind?”

“I will let you know because Edwin-nim is on the same boat with our Pareia. In a few years, we will attack the Silence Empire and fully occupy their land.”

“What?”

Edwin was completely shocked. He knew that Pareia did not have a good relationship with Silence and that there would be a battle of strength in the near future. However, he had always expected Pareia to be on the defense.

Silence would try to invade while Pareia defended against them. That was the type of war Edwin was expecting. However, Runa

was talking about completely destroying them and taking their land. He was trying to be in possession of land that will allow Pareia to grow food.

Runa started to say the things he had planned on saying earlier, but didn't get to do so because the conversation took an odd turn.

“Of course I am fully aware that Pareia alone will not be enough to make that happen. However, if you think about the fact that the enemy of your enemy is your friend, we have a very good chance of success.”

“Are you talking about the Rojini Kingdom?”

Runa nodded his head.

“They will absolutely not decline our offer. Our Pareia now has over 200,000 warriors. Of course this has its own issues as they make up the majority of Pareia's men. Nonetheless, we at least have 200,000 strong warriors under our command.”

“It is definitely believable. The Rojini would not be able to let you go.”

Seeing Edwin agree, Runa started to smile. It seemed like they had solved their issue of material goods. Now all that was left to do was completely convince Edwin.

“In addition, the Glow has a very strong network of influence. Among them is someone who can directly speak with even the king of the Rojini Kingdom. The alliance is just a question of time, and once the war starts after the alliance is created, the Silence will definitely not be able to last between our Pareia and the Rojini.”

“Who is that person?”

“I was told that it is a sage who is underground. He is someone who happened to create a friendship with the Glow. That is why we plan to develop Pareia until the war starts.”

Edwin thought hard about what Runa just said.

‘If I could trade with the Rojini Kingdom? If we could provide even a small amount of war materials, our merchant guild can instantly have enough strength that people will not be able to ignore us in the Western continent.’

“That is why I need to ask for your help there as well. Please serve as the guide for our Pareia’s diplomatic envoy.”

“Me?”

“Yes. None of our desert warriors have really traversed the continent yet. We ask for your help.”

Runa said that before seeming to have thought of something, as he started to smile while looking toward Edwin.

“Ah! Even if it is just nominally, why doesn’t Edwin-nim hold of Pareia’s diplomat positions? Wouldn’t it make it easier for you to move in the kingdom?”

Seeing Runa scratch the itchy spots on his back, Edwin started to smile as well, but he was getting a headache thinking about the materials he would need to provide right away.

That was how Edwin and Runa started to come to an understanding with each other.

All of Pareia’s citizens praised their Glow Yulian until their lips became dry. This was especially true about the chiefs of the northern oases who were a new addition to Pareia. They sincerely swore their loyalty to Yulian.

It was because Yulian was not treating their original oases differently than these newly acquired oases.

They may have fought as enemies, but now they were all under the name of Pareia. The remunerations for dead warriors were the same regardless of which side they fought on, and there was no stripping of seniority or positions either.

After using the large amount of materials that Edwin brought to

win people's hearts over, there was still a lot for Yulian to do to successfully make Pareia feel like one tribe. But he had made up his mind to take care of all of these issues and started to work without stop.

“We’re going to fly.”

Yulian hugged a child in each arm as he jumped up high into the sky.

“Kyaaaaaaaaaaa~!”

The two babies started to laugh while in their father's arms.

Grace and Violet were watching Yulian and the children, before looking at each other and silently starting to smile.

It had been a long time since they were able to have family time like this. It was obvious for Yulian, but Grace and Violet both had their roles and responsibilities as well. They were all busy taking care of their duties that they sometimes even forgot to go to sleep at night.

Today, Yulian had pushed aside all work and made up his mind to spend time with his two wives and his children that he could watch forever without getting tired.

Yulian had not been able to see their faces that much because of work. Since he had been longing for children for so long, Yulian's emotions were floating in the air right now.

“Kyaaaaaaaa~!”

The babies continued to laugh and Yulian's smile started to get wider and wider as well.

“When will they grow up?”

Yulian jumped up and approached his wives as he mischievously asked, and Grace responded back.

“Why do you want them to grow up?”

“Of course it is to teach them martial arts. Then help make them into strong warriors. As for our beautiful Kiness, we will turn her into a beautiful woman like the two of you.”

Grace and Violet started to smile at the same time. Yulian seemed like a complete child right now.

“It is too early. Verikan and Kiness, you should just be hoping that they both grow up healthily right now.”

Grace took Verikan away from Yulian while Violet took Kiness away and held her close. Yulian had a really sad expression as he looked toward the two of them.

Grace had given birth to a daughter named Kiness, while Violet gave birth to a son named Verikan. They may not have realized it, but both of them had protected the other's child before their own.

It was true that Yulian was hoping for Grace to have a son, but both women were extraordinary individuals, that there did not seem to be any reason to worry.

“Glow!”

At that moment, Runa appeared behind them and Yulian started to frown as he turned around.

“Didn't I say I was going to rest today?”

Yulian was a bit sorry to Runa internally, but he really just wanted to rest today.

“I am not here for work but to just talk to you about something. It is also something that the Mother of Pareia and the Chief Shaman of the tribe Violet-nim can hear as well.”

“Just what is it?”

“It is about changing the political structure of the tribe.”

Yulian had an expression that seemed to say that Runa was

speaking nonsense as he asked.

“What kind of structure?”

“I am talking about reforming the current Pareia. Instead of a tribe, we will develop a nation, Instead of having the chiefs pick the Glow, we will develop a king like in the continent.”

Yulian, as well as the two women were all shocked as they looked toward Runa.

Book 5-5.3

Pareia's Meeting of Greatest Warriors gathered together once again.

With their territory expanding and number of oases increasing, they determined that it would be impossible for everyone to gather together for a meeting. As a result, they grouped the oases into groups of three, and picked a representative chief of each group. That was the reason about 30 people were gathered together for this meeting.

Runa was the one to call for this meeting, and was the one to guide the discussion as well.

Runa handed the lambskin that was prepared in advance to all of the chiefs before starting to speak.

“This is a list of what I consider to be the large issues for Pareia right now.”

Ratio between men and women

The fortification of the Castle of Storm that is under construction

The stability of the quicksand river and the trade routes in the unified Eastern Desert

A method to recover our currently empty finances

Succession of the Glow

Conflict management between areas

“Mm.”

Many deep sighs could be heard around the room. Some of the items on the list were not as serious, but they had no method of dealing with some of the issues.

“It is something we need to make sure to discuss; that is why we

have called all of the chiefs and Greatest Warriors over.”

“It is a good idea. There is a need to discuss all of these issues.”

Everyone called down after Yarumaha, who was someone that Yulian trusted deeply and also had the respect of many of the chiefs, responded. It was time for them to settle these issues.

“In terms of our consistent issue of male to female ratio, I do not believe we can do anything about it immediately. However, we must continue to work on it. It is good news that the number of male children are starting to increase, but the basics of a nation are its people, and the basics of the desert are our warriors.”

Runa shared his thoughts and potential solutions for each of the problem areas, and the chiefs shared their concerns for the potential solutions as well.

As they discussed the topics one by one, Runa suddenly dropped a bombshell once they reached the succession of the Glow.

“I wish to change our tribe’s method of selecting a Glow to that of an absolute monarchy.”

The inside of the paoe fell into chaos at Runa’s words, with whispers starting to appear all around the room.

“In order for Pareia to develop, we need an absolutely strong driving force with no hindrances at all. In addition, with our current system, we are not able to stand up against other nations. With this current system, if something was to happen to Yulian-nim, Pareia may end up falling back down to how it used to be.”

“Runa, do not try to force this issue. I have not agreed with your idea yet. Having a center to rally around and the fact that it will bring stability is great. However, it is still possible with our current system. You cannot change tradition overnight. It is also not a tradition that should be easily thrown away.”

The person to state their opposition to Runa was actually Yulian himself.

“I am not saying we should be having the Glow become a king like in the continent with the chiefs serving as nobles or calling the warriors as knights. We can take our current titles and keep our desert’s unique traditions alive. We can even share opinions in meeting of Greatest Warriors like we are doing right now. If there is anything that is changing, it is just stability regarding the Glow’s bloodline. The only title that would really be changing is that we would be calling our tribe a nation.”

“Do you mean that we will need to forever keep the Provoke family as the Glow?”

At one of the chief’s question, Runa nodded his head, as if to say that was obvious.

“Yes. Please do not react negatively at the fact that the titles or system will change. Our Pareia is not just a small country fighting over a few oases anymore. We need to establish a system that fits our status as a nation, as well as create a base that can stand up against the continent.”

Runa looked toward Yulian before continuing on.

“I am saying this because I believe that is the first step to reach the Glow’s dream. The same dream that initially stirred my desire to serve you. I am talking about a strong nation that is self sufficient.”

Silence filled the room once more. Everybody was looking around at one another. Originally, the selection of the Glow was determined by the recommendation of many of the chiefs. Of course it had become hereditary as long as the household of the Glow did not commit any critical mistakes or ended up dying.

However, it was still different than having a king and letting the position be determined by the bloodline. They felt like it would make them miss out on potential future opportunities.

You could see the conflicted expressions in everyone’s eyes. If

they could continue to have Glows like their current Glow, it would be possible to get all of them to agree. However, how could that be the case? If there are wise Glows, there are bound to be stupid Glows as well.

The current system allowed them to select a wise Glow while preventing a stupid person from becoming the Glow.

There were a lot of things people wanted to say, but nobody dared to say any of their thoughts out loud. They did not want to be the ones to say it, because it would come out as if they were saying a stupid person will be born in the Provoke bloodline. Just as Runa just mentioned, if this hero named Yulian was to disappear, it basically meant the end of the current Pareia. That was how influencing Yulian was to Pareia right now.

“I understand what the Glow and may of the chief-nims are worried about. To say it one more time, what I am suggesting is being reborn as a nation. In order to be a nation, a lot of preparations are needed. That is why it is important that we have a strong Glow to control that, as well as making sure the education is in place for the Glow of the next generation.”

Yarumaha responded on behalf of everyone as expected.

“We understand what Assistant Warrior Runa is trying to do. There are many people who agree. However, it is just difficult for us to destroy a tradition that has continued for so long. Nobody knows what will happen in the future. There is nothing to complain about our current Glow. However, there is no way to know that it will be the same story with even his descendants.”

Yarumaha looked back and forth between Yulian and Pere before continuing on.

“As Assistant Warrior Runa mentioned, our Pareia is no longer a small tribe but a strong nation that has unified the Eastern Desert. This Yarumaha agrees with you that we need to stabilize our territory and develop a new system. However, and I apologize to

the Glow for saying this, but we need to keep an escape route in case the worst possible scenario happens.”

“What Yarumaha-nim says is correct. I have studied the history of the continent before, and some nations have something called a senate, where they can show their opposition for the King’s suggestion if all of them agree. It might be good to have a similar system with our chiefs meeting together like a senate.”

Runa sighed internally at Yulian’s selfless words.

‘Without a strong system for succession of power, it will be difficult to create stability in a short amount of time. Even if it is difficult to get an unanimous vote to oppose the king, if there is the possibility for a king to be opposed, that can end up as a source of weakness.’

Yulian seemed to know what Runa was thinking, as he looked toward Runa and asked with his eyes.

‘What are you so worried about? Do I look that weak?’

‘The Glow is not weak, but’

Yulian may not have a problem, but it frustrated Runa as he thought about the next generation. Yulian may be the War God of the Eastern Desert, but he was a Glow that frequently was in the frontlines of war. The Glow was still human. A human who could end up dead by a stray arrow.

If he falls, his child will need to take power. At that time, this system will definitely end up a weakness. Subordinates under a weak leader are bound to work together to antagonize the leader. That was what Runa was worried about.

‘Amazing. Just how far in the future are you thinking about?’

‘Shouldn’t I at least plan up to the moment I die? The Glow’s dream is my dream as well.’

While Yulian and Runa were discussing with their eyes, the

chiefs seemed to have made up their minds as well. They agreed with all of Runa's words before leaving.

Fourth month in the year 260 of the continental calendar.

This was the end of the unified tribe of the Eastern Desert called Pareia. After a long time of preparation, this was the birth of the unified nation of Pareia.

Book 5-5.4

With the birth of the nation of Pareia, the distribution of power changed as well.

The nation now had a domestic affairs and warrior divisions, with the chiefs and chieftains taking charge of the internal affairs of their individual oasis. About three people were sent to the largest oasis that Yulian was at to help institute the reorganization plan as well.

This was very complicated and large scale that it took quite a lot of time.

They needed to determine the rotation for sending warriors out to collect Monster's Souls and Black Water. Taking care of monsters or wild animals to keep the oases safe were left to each individual oasis.

Not only that, they also needed people who could come up with a way to utilize the women for different production-related tasks as well so that the nation could become self-sufficient.

Other than the production-related tasks, they started to prepare individuals who could fill necessary positions in the future by training them on the history and culture of the continent, music, and agriculture.

The reorganization was even larger on the warrior side, however, the Greatest Warriors were already very experienced and extremely literate. They were able to finish the reorganization by clearly labeling the different positions of status.

If there was anything that changed, there was now a training center to train general warriors to veteran warriors, and a training center to train veteran warriors to lead warriors. Although experience was needed, this would help support their knowledge base for the positions.

There were quite a lot of chaotic issues at first, but as time went on, people started to move to the positions they were suited for. Once they started to get used to the positions that fit their strengths, Pareia quickly started to return to stability.

Twelfth month in the year 260 in the continental calendar.

A lot of people started to gather at this location that had changed its name from the Watery Oasis to Frost.

The majority were chiefs and chieftains who were representing a portion of Pareia, the Greatest Warriors, and the lead warriors.

The reason all these people who were so busy they could barely blink were gathered here was because today was the day they were celebrating the completion of the first stage of the Castle of Storm.

Yulian, as well as the many people gathered, were extremely satisfied with the large castle in front of their eyes.

The construction was extremely large and had taken over five years; and this was the result of monopolizing twenty percent of Pareia's population for the past five years. However, even with all of that effort and all of the money spent, it was just the end of the initial stage of construction.

It still needed years of construction and repair before drawing in citizens. There also needed to build defenses around the castle as well. This castle still had a lot of remaining construction, and was still lacking quite a bit.

However, the important factor was that they could now use this castle as the focal point to clash against the Silence Empire.

Everyone started to take a look around the inside of the castle.

"We plan to dig a large trench around the castle in the near future. The continent uses water to prevent enemies from approaching the castle, but we will fill it with Black Water. In times of emergency, we will have an extra layer of defense once we light it on fire. It will be difficult to douse it with water because of

the heat. We will have an extra method for castle defense.”

The chiefs and chieftains in charge of the internal affairs were interested in the offices and meeting rooms they were going to be using, while the Greatest Warriors were interested in the layout of the entire castle.

It was because there was something else for them to study. Castle defense was something that even the experienced Greatest Warriors were not used to doing in the desert. After listening to Runa briefly explain the configuration of the castle, they went around looking at each area of the castle.

Yulian walked with Grace and Violet to the rooms dedicated for them.

“Your offices are already finished. Since both of you are moving around so much to take care of stuff, we need to make it a little more comfortable for the two of you to work. And Violet, I also ordered them to create a separate prayer room for you.”

“Thank you.”

Violet headed to the prayer room first.

The door opened silently without making any noises. After entering the room, Violet almost started to cry.

The interior of the prayer room looked exactly like the one back at the Shire. It wasn't like a good prayer room made it easier to determine fortunes or strengthen an incantation, but it was always easier to focus and chant somewhere you felt at peace.

Violet had left her homeland alone as a woman to come to Pareia where she knew absolutely nobody. She then confidently filled her position as the Glow's wife. At the same time, it was true that she had been lonely.

Seeing the sights from her homeland like this made her extremely emotional.

“Even if you are busy, go visit the Shire once with her. Even if you or I am taking care of her, I’m sure she is still lonely. Everybody has been finding it hard to approach her since she replaced Tuma Takaka-nim as the Chief Shaman so she has had a hard time getting close to people.”

Grace was whispering to Yulian while watching Violet who was in front of her.

“I should do that. Since we are on the topic, we should take the children and visit Dejaine-nim as well.”

Grace’s expression became much brighter as she happily responded.

“That sounds great. I’ve been worried because I have heard that father is not in the past as well.”

Seeing Grace’s expression and hearing what she had to say, Yulian could easily tell how worried she must have been for a while. Even if her father was ill, she could not take a couple days off to go visit him because of her position and responsibilities as the Mother of Pareia.

Yulian’s respect for his two wives shot up significantly at this time.

Booooooooooong.

The wind was cut with a loud noise as a large greatsword was flying toward its target.

“Ack!”

Shubeon flung his body to the side to avoid this greatsword that had suddenly started to fly toward him and had to roll on the ground a couple times before finally getting up and starting to shout.

“What the hell are you doing?! Are you trying to kill someone?!”

Shubeon was shouting at Thrint, the owner of the sword. Thrint

just stoically stared down at his greatsword before shaking his head.

“Still a far way to go.”

Seeing Thrint say that before starting to walk away, Shubeon took out his sword and asked.

“Hey hey hey, just what do you mean? If it is not far, would I be dead?”

As Shubeon pointed his sword at Thrint in disbelief, Thrint responded.

“Who knows.”

“Then let me test it out as well. Let’s see if it is still far or close.”

Shubeon said that to Thrint before starting to attack as if it was a life-or-death battle.

A battle between two people who reached the level of a low-tier master as the continent would call it was really a fierce battle that shook the earth and caused a storm. Many people started to gather together to watch their battle.

“Ah~!”

People would shout out whenever one of the two ended up in a dangerous situation, while the children were cheering on their preferred warrior.

There was nobody in Pareia that did not know about the Red Storm, and naturally, they had turned into the idol and the goal for the children and the young warriors.

While Shubeon and Thrint were continuing to battle without being able to determine a victor, one of the Red Storm warriors who was quickly running somewhere before seeing the two of them fighting shook his head and yelled out to them.

“All members have been called to gather. Stop fighting and start running.”

Once they heard the shout, Shubeon and Thrint immediately stopped as if they had never been fighting in the first place, and followed behind their fellow member.

“What is going on? Weren’t we supposed to be on break for a while?”

As Shubeon asked while running, Thrint shook his head.

By the time Thrint and Shubeon arrived at the training area, the rest of the Red Storm warriors had already gathered. Haisha, who had officially been given the title of the leader of the Red Storm, was standing in front of the group.

“Boss, what is up?”

Shubeon looked toward Haisha while asking.

Haisha may have the title of leader, but other than during times of war, he really didn’t have many responsibilities other than being the messenger between Yulian and the Red Storm. In addition, the Red Storm had always been treating each member as hyung or ah-oo, so they all spoke informally with one another.

After verifying that all of the warriors had gathered, Haisha started to speak.

“Here is the message from the Glow-nim. You are all ordered to develop one or two members for the second generation of the Red Storm.”

Book 5-5.5

“Second Red Storm?”

“He mentioned, he will create one every ten years.”

“Hmm... this should be fun.”

Seeing all of the warriors having something to say, Haisha continued to speak.

“Based on the order of the senior, Yulian-nim is not allowed to teach anything to the second generation of the Red Storm. As a result, we will need to teach them each and every step of the way. He has asked that we take this seriously.”

“They will be lucky to be taught by us. Just how much sorrow and pain did we have to experience?”

Shubeon followed up with the other warrior’s statement.

“It was at least a bit better when the Glow taught us. That terror when we were taught by the senior...”

All of them started to shake at Shubeon’s words. This was a subconscious fear that automatically filled their hearts.

“Alright, just remember that and make sure to find your disciples before the Glow comes to take a look.”

“Are we supposed to teach young warriors? Or are we to find warriors who have completed their coming-of-age ceremony like we had been in the beginning?”

As one of the other warriors asked the question, Haisha responded.

“He has asked us to take on warriors who have completed their coming-of-age ceremony. That way, there will not be a long gap between us and them. In addition, when we have the time, we are to advise the young warriors in their martial arts.”

“I’m lost as to how to convince them. It will not be easy to let go of the shamshir they had been using all this time. I don’t think we will be able to convince them as well as the Glow did with us.”

As one of the warriors started to speak with concern, Shubeon started to speak.

“The situation is different than with us. Right now, there will be plenty of people who want to join because of the Red Storm name. Make sure to pay attention to who you select. They will be our successors.”

Everyone nodded their heads at Shubeon’s words.

“The Glow mentioned he will come take a look in about a month, so let’s make sure to prepare before he comes. That is the end of the message.”

Once Haisha dismissed them, all of the Red Storm warriors started to think about the young warriors they had been observing until now or opening their eyes to find the young warriors they will start to teach.

There was a total of seventy-six members of the second generation of Red Storm. Close to half of the first generation Red Storm had decided to teach two warriors.

As he had instructed them to select one or two warriors, Yulian had no objections. Pareia would only get stronger if their martial arts were taught to more warriors.

The young warriors were extremely happy being able to personally meet the Glow and made up their mind to train diligently.

Starting from the next day, an endless amount of groans started to ring from both the training ground inside the castle, as well as the training ground outside the castle.

Edwin had entered the Rojini Kingdom with the identity of the diplomat of Pareia. While setting down his belongings in the

residence the kingdom had provided for him and taking care of business for his merchant guild, he was waiting for a meeting with the king.

The king would have already received Yulian's message through a messenger, but after not being able to meet with the king after a couple of days, Edwin started to think that something was off.

If he had come just as a merchant, it would be up to the king to decide whether or not to meet with him. However, he had come this time as a diplomat of Pareia.

‘Hmm...I’m sure they are ignoring me because Pareia is a desert tribe. If not, why would I have heard nothing after waiting for four days?’

It may just be a nominal position of diplomat from Pareia, but as long as he had the title, Edwin felt like he needed to protect the name of diplomat.

As Edwin made an official complaint to the foreign affairs office of the Rojini Kingdom, the person in charge of reception started to speak.

“I have already made my report, so a response should come. Please wait.”

Seeing as how he had no other options, Edwin decided to wait a few more days.

As a couple more days passed by without any information, Edwin felt like a mistake must have happened somewhere. If not, there was no way they would ignore a diplomat of a nation like this.

Edwin started to walk over to ask once more.

“Is there a mistake somewhere? It has already been close to ten days. We are not that free to just sit here for no reason.”

The receptionist bowed his head and responded.

“I’m sorry. It is being pushed back over and over. I am extremely

sorry for all of this.”

At first, Edwin thought that the receptionist wanted money.

There were things like this. A desire to look down and feel superior to someone else. It was difficult for citizens of a weak nation to even make it past the border without paying a bribe. The people in power had no problem pretending a merchant or visitor was a refugee and make things difficult for them.

But after seeing the demeanor of the receptionist, Edwin felt like this wasn't the case. If the receptionist had wanted money, he would not be treating Edwin like this.

“Just what seems to be the problem?”

As Edwin asked with frustration, the receptionist could not respond and just continued to apologize over and over while asking Edwin to wait a bit more.

“I will definitely let our King know and we will make sure to have you pay back this embarrassment.”

Honestly, Edwin had no reason to be nice. No matter what anybody had to say, Pareia was hard to invade now. All they were lacking right now was materials.

At that moment, a man came out from behind the receptionist and whispered something in his ear. The receptionist turned pale as he started to speak.

“We have received contact. You should be able to meet this afternoon. It seems to have been delayed because someone insisted they needed to come up from a province quite a bit away when he heard that respected guests have arrived from Pareia. We ask for your deep understanding.”

Seeing the receptionist coming at him so respectfully, Edwin no longer had any desire to act out.

“May I ask who that person is?”

“He is a sword master of the Rojini Kingdom.”

After hearing the receptionist’s answer, Edwin could finally completely get rid of the idea that he had been ignored. The fact that two out of ten sword masters of the Rojini Kingdom had to see him showed how important Pareia was, and just how important of an individual his Glow Yulian was to the Rojini Kingdom.

A servant came over in the afternoon to inform Edwin that the time had arrived. Edwin looked over his outfit once more and followed the servant.

After passing through a long hallway, they arrived at a large door. Two servants by the door opened the door and greeted Edwin in.

Edwin walked across the long yellow carpet and made eye contact with the person sitting on the chair before kneeling on one knee.

“Under the order of the Desert Conqueror, Pareia’s Glow Yulian Provoke-nim, Edwin Papent is honored to meet with his highness of the Rojini Kingdom.”

Rojini III, the king of the Rojini Kingdom was shocked that a diplomat of Pareia did not seem to be a person of the desert and started to speak.

“I am also happy to meet with you, diplomat of Pareia. However, are you a member of Pareia?”

“I am a person of the Inama Kingdom, however, I have a longstanding relationship with Pareia that the Glow of Pareia thought highly of my low experience and gave me this honorable opportunity to meet with your royal highness. It is because the citizens of Pareia are not yet aware of the customs or etiquette of the continent, so I dare to ask your highness for his deep understanding”

“Kekeke. I am not the stuck up type to be offended by such things.”

“Thank you very much.”

“Kekeke. You mentioned you are a person of the Inama Kingdom, but you seem to be pretty well aware of the castle etiquette. I had expected a person of Pareia to be extremely rough. Please stand.”

Edwin cautiously started to stand up at Rojini III’s words.

“I read over the information that the king of Pareia has sent over. To be honest with you, our diplomats threw quite a fit when you arrived that we needed to have a meeting. There were some masters who insisted they needed to meet with you as well. I don’t think any other diplomat would have been able to get this type of reception that you will be getting.”

Edwin bowed as he responded.

“This little diplomat is honored.”

“Kekeke. I have already finished the response to send to your king, so you will return differently than the quiet entrance you had when you arrived.”

Edwin started to smile internally at Rojini III’s words. That response pretty much meant that he has already approved of the alliance with Pareia.

“Then I will get up first as I have other things to attend to.”

Edwin urgently kneeled once more as Rojini III leisurely stood up and left.

The fact that the king personally met with Edwin was showing quite the respect to Pareia. The actual discussions about the alliance was something that needed to be discussed with the diplomats of the Rojini Kingdom.

Not long after the king left, a receptionist led Edwin to another room. The Rojini Kingdom’s Secretary of Foreign Affairs, Pumetrin, was in the room.

Once Edwin entered, Pumetrin got up from the seat and greeted

Edwin.

“Welcome. My name is Pumetrin Ro Shattersi.”

“Edwin Papent.”

As soon as the two men sat down after their greeting, Pumetrin started to smile as he spoke.

“His highness is extremely happy right now. For the valiant Pareia to be the first to reach out to us about an alliance. Our Rojini Kingdom had been planning on sending an envoy to Pareia in the near future.”

“I represent all of Pareia when I thank you for treating Pareia so highly.”

“The situation is not good right now, so let’s both yield a bit to each other. The sooner this alliance can happen, the more options we will have in the future.”

Edwin nodded his head, pretending to agree.

‘I agree. No matter what it is, we need to do it in moderation. However, the real question is who it is slightly more advantageous for.’

Runa had already told Edwin about a few things that they could not yield. Runa had even told him that it would be good for everyone if the Rojini Kingdom could become responsible for some of the materials that Edwin needed to gather.

“Of course. Let us not miss out on the big fish because we are focused on getting a couple more small fish.”

The two quickly started to share the conditions of their nation.

End of chapter.

Book 5-6.1

Establishment of the Alliance

The alliance between Pareia and the Rojini Kingdom.

That was the prelude to the war on the continent.

The Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom, the two strong nations of the Eastern continent, had never had a good relationship with each other, but that relationship really started to turn bad during the last ten or so years.

Both nations knew very well that them going into war was the equivalent of the entire Eastern continent going into war. Knowing that the damage would be significant, both nations just turned a blind eye to the other.

The problem was that the Rojini Kingdom turned their civil war, the worst possible situation, into an opportunity to reform.

The Rojini Kingdom did not reform too many items, but it was enough to shake the existing societal structure.

If you were to organize and explain those

The lords who owned land can only force labor upon the people who live on their land.

The lords may not tax their people more than twenty percent.

Nobles may not kill the civilians unless one of the following situation occurs.

3-1. The civilians put their hands on a noble

... (Rest omitted)

If a civilian has their skills recognized and holds a government position, they must not be killed even if any of the conditions in 3 apply.

Just these four things.

The other nations of the continent all scoffed at the Rojini Reform.

If you could not force people to work and could not put your hands on them as you pleased, who would choose to work hard? In addition, if the tax can only be twenty percent, how will they earn the money to maintain their mercenaries and elegance? They all assumed it would fail.

However, once they saw what was going on, they realized that the opposite of what they were expecting had happened.

The civilians whom everyone thought would not work very hard were working very hard. With a lowly twenty percent - and sometimes even lower if they met a generous Lord - tax rate, it gave them the hope that they would be rewarded for working harder - different than when they were struggling to pay fifty or sometimes even higher percentage.

With efficiency exponentially rising up and production increasing, that twenty percent tax ended up becoming more money for the lords than the higher percentages in the past.

That result led to the country drawing in an unexpected number of refugees, which made the population of the Rojini Kingdom increase too quickly. Their new problem was how to handle this large increase in population.

As time flowed on like that, the Rojini Kingdom started to get stronger and stronger, and they were about to become the leader in almost all aspects over their rivals the Silence. It was no wonder the Silence, as well as the other nations, went into a state of alert.

Since they could not do anything about the internal situation of the Rojini Kingdom, the Silence could only slowly start to enforce an even stronger reform for themselves. In order to fend off the Rojini, they also found a method called heightened tension on the

borders.

However, the Rojini Kingdom did not respond as the Silence expected. They had expected the Rojini Kingdom to adequately respond, but the Rojini started to respond in force. There were not many times that they had put this much strength in the border area in the history of the two nations.

This led to the alliances and provinces of the two nations getting involved, and the two nations could only watch with heightened tension as time went by.

They were both waiting until they were certain they would be the victor.

“This is beyond what I was expecting. My belief about the village tribes have been shattered.”

One of the knights let out his admiration for the majestic castle in front of his eyes.

“It is a well-designed castle. It will be very difficult to siege it.”

“We are knights who have come to escort the envoy to create an alliance. We are not here to go into war, so make sure not to say offensive things like that even if it is just hypothetical.”

Everybody shut up once the young knight in charge of the brigade gave a stern warning. This young knight was usually quiet, but continued to come at you if you did something wrong. They wanted to prevent such situation from being targeted at themselves.

The young knight was looking at the scene in front of him.

‘The Castle of Storm ... they must have put in quite a lot of work to build this. Are they planning on going against the Silence Empire?’

While the young knight was deep in thought, the Rojini envoy was slowly approaching the Castle of Storm.

“Wow!”

“So cool!”

“It’s a different feel than our warrior-nims.”

The children were shouting with amazement as the knights went by.

Seeing the children look at them with gazes of respect, some of the nobles and knights felt a chip on their shoulder. Receiving this type of admiration in a foreign nation felt a little special.

As some of them started to take out small pouches of coins and silver to hand out, some of the leaders quickly stopped them.

“That type of action can touch on Pareia’s pride, so please be cautious of your actions.”

The nobles and knights stopped their action at the leaders’ words.

The Rojini Kingdom was used to the tradition of handing out coins and silvers when the nobles, especially young nobles with high potential, were walking by.

It probably originated from the nobles wanting to feel superior to the poor people rushing to pick up the coins, but realistically, it was a means of survival for some of the poor.

With that being the case, it naturally became the tradition as the nobles who handed out money started to get a good reputation. This was especially the case for young ladies who were of marriageable age, as such reputation raised their value in society.

Of course now a lot of the poor were doing much better in the Rojini Kingdom, but this tradition had still continued on. That was why some of the young people were about to do the same in Pareia out of habit.

The envoy safely made it into the castle, and two people entered as representatives to meet with Yulian.

“Welcome esteemed guests of Pareia.”

Yulian stood up from his seat and opened his arms to welcome them.

The person in charge of the envoy, the Secretary of Foreign Affairs, Count Pumetrin, respectfully bowed his head.

“It is my honor to meet with the great Glow of Pareia.”

“You have worked hard coming such a far way.”

Yulian happily greeted him and looked toward the knight standing next to Pumetrin.

White hair. Familiar face. Yulian wanted to greet him right away, but held back because he thought it would not be respectful to Pumetrin, who was in charge of the envoy.

“Aizen!”

After finishing his greetings with Pumetrin, Yulian finally called his name.

“Aizen Pon Deviang, Knight of the Rojini Kingdom, greets Pareia’s Glow Yulian-nim. Have you been well?”

“Hahaha. To see you again like this~ I never expected it. I have heard a lot from Edwin.”

Yulian recalled the memory of going to the Magic Tower with Aizen and headed over to give Aizen a hug.

“I was extremely shocked and happy to hear that an envoy had arrived from Pareia. That was why I came along with the envoy.”

Aizen Pon Deviang. The tenth master of the Rojini Kingdom.

He was also the Deputy Chief of the Rojini Kingdom’s pride and joy, the Red Eagle Knight Brigade.

The reason someone like Aizen who should not be leaving the border area took the risk to do so like this was to see Yulian, who had shared life and death with him.

At first, he had no idea what the Glow of Pareia symbolized. It was only much later that Aizen learned that the man he called Hyung on their travels was the king of a desert tribe.

Aizen had a lot of affection for Yulian after everything they had been through with each other on their journey. There was no way he could ever forget about it. That was why he quickly rushed back from the border when he heard that an envoy had arrived from Pareia so that he could come along.

Yulian looked around before starting to speak.

“Runa, please lead our guests to their quarters and make sure they have no discomfort while they are here.”

“Yes, Glow.”

Runa ordered a couple of people to lead the Rojini envoy to their quarters while Yulian was speaking with Aizen.

“Did Hwai-nim come with you as well?”

Once Yulian brought up Hwai, Aizen’s expression quickly turned dark.

“She is no longer here. She may be alive, or

Yulian realized something must have happened at Aizen’s answer and did not ask anything else. There was no reason to bring up the remaining scars.

Aizen soon recovered and started to speak toward Yulian.

“My wife has come with me this time. I wanted to show her the mysterious sights of the desert.”

“She must have been bored on the way here. The only thing you can see on the trip is sand.”

“Let me introduce her to you.”

“Of course.”

Yulian followed Aizen out.

“Honey, this is the hyung-nim I was talking about. He is now the king of Pareia.”

Aizen opened the door to the stagecoach and carefully escorted a woman out.

“Hwai-nim?”

Book 5-6.2

Yulian watched an extremely beautiful woman come out of the stagecoach and questioned his eyes.

‘Aizen clearly said Hwai was not here. So who is this woman getting off right now?’

However, Yulian quickly determined that this woman was not Hwai. Hwai had white hair similar to Aizen, but the woman getting off had golden hair. Most importantly, Hwai had an air of indifference while this woman seemed to resonate joy with her every movement.

“It is my pleasure to meet the Pareia’s Glow. My name is Adelina.”

“Nice to meet you. It must have been a difficult trip to come here. Please get your rest in our Pareia. We will let you see a lot of the desert’s unique environment.”

‘Her voice is different as well.’

Yulian thought that way as he started to smile toward Adelina. Adelina bowed her head in response.

“Aizen, your residence is next to my paoe. I would have put more attention to it if I knew your wife was coming with you.”

“Thank you for your generosity. I would like to feel the typical desert life while I am here.”

This woman was clearly used to speaking with people, and her status would probably be high as well. The aura that was resonating from that thin body was similar to Grace.

Yulian personally guided the Aizen couple to their paoe and introduced them to Grace and Violet.

It may have been their first time meeting, but all of the women were getting along very well. Seeing them getting along so well,

Yulian and Aizen were able to head out of the paoe on their own.

“A lot seems to have happened.”

“Yes.”

“Will you tell me about it?”

“It is a very long story. I would need to start from when I was a young child.”

Did that mean Aizen did not want to share? Yulian was debating how to follow up after Aizen’s ambiguous answer.

“More importantly, hyung-nim, when did you leave the Magic Tower? I was surprise to hear that you had left already.”

“I’m sorry I had to leave without even saying goodbye. The old hag said you would be very busy.”

Aizen nodded his head. He really was busy at that time. He had no time to relax and was extremely anxious back then.

“You heard about it right?”

“You mean that decision we need to make and such?”

Aizen nodded his head.

“I heard it, but I really don’t know what use it has for me. Something similar happened out here as well.”

“Something similar?”

“Something our ancestor told me. Well, it seems similar to what the old hag had to say, but as a person of the desert, I can only try to understand it using the desert’s method. That is why I am starting to prepare.”

Aizen nodded his head at Yulian’s answer before looking toward him.

‘So this is a king.’

Aizen had such a thought. Someone who knew the road he

needed to travel down, and the will to accomplish their goals.

“What are you looking at?”

“I was thinking that hyung-nim was an amazing person.”

“Me? Why are you saying that all of a sudden?”

As Yulian asked with confusion, Aizen turned his head away before responding.

“I am still debating about it. It really does not seem like a realistic story, but we’ve already seen that the Magic Tower and the ancient continent both exists for real.”

“Do what your heart tells you to do. They say you need to make a decision to be one of the chosen, but wouldn’t one of the potential decisions be one where you do not make any decisions at all?”

“I feel like something is becoming twisted. I cannot be satisfied with it. I had something I really needed to do at that time, and now that everything has been resolved, I feel like there is an empty spot in my heart.”

He wanted to clench a part of his chest, but Aizen just smiled with embarrassment seeing his han slip off his armor.

“Is it because of Hwai-nim? That emptiness?”

“.....”

“I guess it is.”

“I am not sure.....”

Yulian lifted his hand and started to pat Aizen’s shoulder.

“I cannot say much because I do not know the situation, but if I was to say just one thing, I would say focus on your life and the present.”

“I am working on it.”

“If I was to say one more thing, it would be to live fiercely. Doesn’t the current you feel like something is missing? What is the

problem? If there is something you want to do, do it. And if not, don't do it."

Aizen had to think about Yulian's response in silence before finally responding.

"I want to do that very much, but I cannot get myself to do so after thinking about the people who raised me and the people who accepted me."

"Is that not an excuse?"

Aizen turned his head back to look at Yulian after that comment.

"I can't do it because of something. This prevents me from doing that. Isn't that the current you? Live fiercely. If there is something you want to do, shouldn't you do it regardless of what people around you will think?"

"....."

"I know that you are very important to the Rojini Kingdom. However, although it might be difficult, that nation will not have any issues even if you were not around. You may be stuck in the past, but the present continues to move on without you."

Aizen lowered his head. Yulian was thinking that the nation was his biggest obstacle, but in Aizen's opinion, Adelina was the one that lingered on his mind. She was the one that he had made a Guardian's Pact with, the woman he loved and needed to protect.

"Well, a third party cannot tell you what to do or what not to do. You need to decide your own actions so that you have no regrets in the end. It is enough to make a decision that you will not regret later on. I'm sure you are not the type to be greedy and think that everything will work out."

"Hyung-nim, you may be right when you say it might be my greed... the greed to not lose anything...that type of greed....."

Aizen's mind cleared up once he started to think that way. He

had not made his mind up yet, but he figured out how to make it.

“Hyung-nim, thank you very much.”

“Don’t make such a sad expression. I have prepared a large celebration for the envoy, so at least for today, eat and drink all you want.”

“Yes.”

The two men started to smile while looking at each other.

The extravagant celebration ended extremely late into the night but Runa and Pumetrin were up very early to start their negotiations.

Pumetrin and Edwin had already done the first round of negotiations and confirmed the alliance between Pareia and Rojini. Once Yulian gave his permission to today’s round of negotiations, the alliance would be solidified.

Edwin had done well in the first round and with both sides wanting the alliance to succeed, Yulian and Pumetrin both worked hard to agree to the requests of the other party. The results started to appear almost instantly.

The thing that both sides were lacking.

For Pareia, they were lacking food and materials, while the Rojini Kingdom was lacking military might.

The Silence Empire had been sitting as the strongest nation in the Eastern continent from a long time ago, and even though the Rojini Kingdom might not lack much compared to them, it was still true that they were behind. They may be maintaining the balance with quality, but when it came to the number of soldiers, they were definitely lacking.

If it was a direct confrontation, they could definitely make up for the difference of 300 or 400,000 soldiers, but the Rojini Kingdom had to divide up their soldiers to many different areas they needed

to protect. That was where the danger came from.

“We will use our warriors to put significant pressure on our border with the Silence Empire. It will be significant enough that they will need to be serious in their defense. If they look down on us, we just need to sweep a couple border towns to set the tone.”

Seeing a solution come out so easily from Runa’s mouth, Pumetrin wanted to jump up and down in joy. He did not think that the Rojini would lose to the Silence, but he couldn’t help the fact that he was a bit nervous.

But if Pareia was pressuring the Silence properly, the number of soldiers should even out on both sides. Most importantly, Pumetrin was extremely satisfied to see that Pareia showed a strong amount of hatred for Silence.

“However, in order for us to do that, we need a significant amount of materials. A minimum of 30,000 warriors will need to live in the border area, and such an expedition is pretty difficult for Pareia right now.”

Of course Runa’s statement had a degree of lie in it.

“Since they are moving for our alliance, I think it is natural that our Rojini will take on that burden. If you will allow us to, we want to continue to send enough support for 50,000 warriors to move.

Both were very aware of each other’s situations right now. They just needed to help each side save some face in the process. The basics were already determined with Edwin and Pumetrin met, the only thing left was to make the final decisions.

The conditions for alliance between the two nations were completed that night, and the alliance between Pareia and Rojini was announced.

End of chapter

Book 5-7.1

The Two Runaways

Fate

“It is amazing and feels wonderful. Thank you to Yulian-nim and the crew for giving me such an opportunity.”

Adelina moved her flowing hair back as she gave her thanks to Yulian.

“There is no need for thanks.”

Yulian smiled as he answered and then started to shout toward Captain Thriger.

“Greatest Warrior Thriger! The lady wants to thank you!”

“Muhahahaha. I will raise the speed a little more since she seems to be having fun. This type of speed cannot be found anywhere else in the world.”

Thriger was excited and shouted toward the crew to increase the speed.

With the situation being pretty tense with the Silence Empire, Aizen did not have a lot of time to stay in Pareia. Aizen wanted to let Adelina have as much fun as possible in the few days they had.

During that time, they had heard about the ship that moves across the sand, and asked Yulian to let them get on board.

Yulian had pushed his tasks aside for a couple of days to entertain the people who will not be able to visit so easily in the future. He brought Grace, Violet, and his two children along as they boarded the Desert Runner.

They all needed a break anyways.

As Thriger mentioned, the Desert Runner slowly started to increase its speed until it reached its maximum speed. Adelina

could feel her head spinning. She was not used to such speed and rocking of the boat.

“Are you okay?”

Aizen gasped and hugged the woozy Adelina.

“It is like a beautiful painting.”

As Grace numbled next to him, Yulian started to smile and speak.

“Should we do that too?”

“Honey!”

Grace turned away while holding Kiness.

“Violet, what do you think?”

Yulian then asked Violet, who was sitting down playing with Verikan.

“Don’t even dream of it. Do you know how many eyes are watching?”

The Crimson Desert was not very amusing for Violet. Even the first time she was on the Desert Runner was not fun because she got seasick.

Seeing Violet respond similarly to Yulian, Yulian just laid down using Violet’s lap as a pillow and looked up to the sky.

‘It is so blue and so bright. This desert sky of ours.’

Even though he felt and saw the sky every day, it looked a bit new today.

Grrrrrrawrl!

Kyaaaaaaaaaa!”

Shhhhhhhhhhhhh~

Everything happened in an instant.

Shopping’s playful roar, Adelina’s scream, and Aizen unsheathing a red blade.

“Aizen!”

Yulian urgently shouted toward Aizen, and Shopping almost lost his life without even knowing why.

“Come here.”

At Yulian’s shout, Shopping’s head went back into the sand before appearing on the other side.

“I hope you weren’t too surprised.”

Grace urgently walked over to Adelina and asked.

“Ah! I am okay. But what is that?”

The still shocked Adelina looked toward Aizen’s sword that was still out. Grace called Shopping over and answered.

“He is my pet.”

“You have quite an amazing looking pet.”

Since she did not know about the monsters of the desert, she thought Shopping was just really a pet. Seeing Adelina’s innocence, Grace decided to tell her about Shopping’s identity.

“If you want to take a ride, please let me know. He won’t be as fast as the Desert Runner, but Shopping is the best to move at a height with nothing around you.”

“It seems dangerous.”

Aizen wanted to decline, but Adelina was already laughing and nodding her head.

“Is it really safe?”

As Aizen urgently asked Yulian, Yulian started to smile and nodded his head.

She may look weak, but Adelina must be a strong person. She had a slightly scared expression as she climbed onto Shopping, but the look of curiosity was much stronger.

“Her body is very weak. That is why I am more worried.”

“Do not worry. Shopping is smart. He is also the king of the monsters in the desert. You really don’t have to worry since Grace is with her as well.”

As Yulian casually responded to Aizen’s concern, Aizen finally started to feel relieved. Of course he still could not remove his eyes from Adelina.

Feeling that he would get to play with Grace for the first time in a long time, Shopping lifted his large body into the air and quickly started to move. It was because Yulian and Grace were both too busy to play with Shopping for a while.

“Uhh.....”

Aizen’s subconscious sound of concern was drowned out by Adelina’s cheer.

“This is so cool.”

“I don’t think any other animal in the world can give you this type of feeling.”

Grace continued to pat Shopping’s head as she looked toward Adelina who was enjoying it like a child.

“He listens well to Grace-nim.”

“It has been over seven years.”

“Amazing. How were you able to tame such an animal?”

“Shopping is not an animal. He is the strongest monster in the desert.”

“What?”

Adelina asked with disbelief.

“Shopping is a Giant Sand Dragon, the strongest monster in the desert. Also, please be cautious as he understands human language.”

“Ah.”

Seeing Shopping nod his head, Adelina sat down in shock.

“Bad boy. You need to move carefully today.”

Feeling Shopping start to move again, Adelina could tell that Grace was telling the truth.

Adelina started to pat Shopping’s head like Grace and started to speak.

“I wish I had a friend like you too.”

“Adelina-nim is more amazing than you seem. Even many of the men get scared while looking at Shopping.”

“Grace-nim is here and Aizen is here as well.”

Grace started to smile knowing that the level of trust this couple had was very deep.

“Aizen-nim is amazing. He is a knight who can represent the Rojini Kingdom at his age.”

“Yulian-nim is the one who is an amazing hero. Aizen told me a couple of the stories. He says Yulian-nim is much stronger than him.”

The two women were lifting each other up as they continued to chat.

Adelina was the only heir to Duke Diperu’s household. Because of this identity, it was not easy for her to make friends. Even back in the kingdom, there were only a handful of people who could chat with her, so she had always been lacking people to chat and have fun with her.

But today, she started to pour out all of the things she was not able to tell anybody to Grace.

She may have Aizen who only had eyes for her, but it was impossible for Aizen to fully understand a woman’s heart. Only

another woman could do that.

“I feel like Grace-nim and I have been friends for a very long time. Please excuse me.”

Grace smiled once more at Adelina’s words. She really liked this beautiful yet weak woman.

“I am enjoying myself as well. If you don’t mind me asking, could I ask your age?”

“I was born in year 230 of the continental calendar.”

‘.....?’

Grace instantly started to question it. Adelina looked very young, and based on the way Aizen called Yulian hyung-nim, Adelina should be younger than her as well.

“Ah!”

Adelina must have realized what Grace was thinking about after seeing Grace’s expression.

“I am four years older than Aizen. I’m a bit embarrassed to tell you.”

“Ah! So that is the case. It is nothing to be embarrassed about. Our desert’s young warriors even take women with a larger age gap as their wives. But Adelina-nim doesn’t seem that old at all.”

“What about Grace-nim?”

“I was also born in year 230. Yulian-nim as well.”

Finding out that they were the same age, the two women felt even closer with each other.

“There seems to be something over there?”

While chatting for a while, Adelina pointed to something in the desert.

“There should not be anybody who dares to approach the quicksand river.”

Grace thought it was odd and looked out to see two people riding horses as fast as they could, with a large group of people on horses chasing after them.

Book 5-7.2

“Shit!”

The young man who was drenched in desert sand and sweat shouted out after looking at the quicksand river blocking his way.

Although he did not know much about the desert, he still had a good foundation. This may be his first time seeing the quicksand river, but he could easily tell that falling into this place would mean his immediate death.

“Petri-nim.”

The man turned his head around at the disappointed voice behind him.

“What should we do?”

Petri was scolding himself while looking at the woman who did not lose her elegance even in the face of danger.

‘It’s because I’m so stupid ... because I am not strong enough.....’

It made him think about how he should not have listened to her in the beginning. The men surrounding her were people who had power that he could never even dream about. They were also obsessed with her to the point that they would go to war for her, so there was no way they would have put her in a difficult situation.

“Petri-nim!”

Petri came back to his senses after hearing the lady call out his name one more time.

“Princess-nim.”

Petri called out to her, but they were at the worst possible situation. However, he still made up his mind to do everything he could.

‘As long as it is what she wants me to do.....’

Petri confirmed his resolve.

‘I cannot decide what will make her happy. I just followed her will because that is what she wanted to do.’

Petri pushed his remorse away and turned toward the south as he once again started to ride along the edge of the quicksand river. Unfortunately, their chasers had reached right behind them.

Pssssssssh~

A couple of arrows cut through the sky and started to land around Petri. The owners of these arrows seemed to be extremely talented, as the arrows all landed around Petri even though they were shooting while riding.

‘I have no choice.’

Petri was worried that a stray arrow will cause her harm and started to speak toward the woman.

“Princess-nim, this seems to be as far as I can serve you. If you do not want to go back, please continue riding forward. I will hold them back.”

“No!”

The woman responded almost immediately after Petri finished his sentence.

“You absolutely cannot leave me alone. Did you forget who I am to you?”

“Princess-nim, but

“You cannot get away from me even if it means we will die together.”

‘Sigh~’

Petri let out a sigh internally at her stern command. He did not know what to do. No, there was only one possible decision.

‘I need to fulfill my duty ... I will fight to the death.’

Petri took the sword out of his side and turned his horse around.

“Petri.”

Please forgive this terrible guardian knight of yours. This seems to be all I can do now.”

“Petri.....”

As the two people stopped and were looking at each other, their chasers stopped in front of them as well.

“Princess-nim, why are you running away from us?”

One of the chasers who was wearing an eloquent chainmail stepped forward and asked the woman.

“I should be asking you the questions. Why do you continue to chase us when I asked you to stop? Do you not care about the Knight’s Code?”

The head of the chasers was a man named Shimax, the leader of the Narrate Empire’s Royal Knights. Shimax shook his head at the woman’s retort and responded.

“We have received an order to escort princess-nim safely back to the country. We ask for your understanding.”

“I have already told you that I do not want to go.”

The woman turned to face Shimax.

“Princess-nim, you should know how important you are right now. Are you not aware that many young men are dying because of you?”

“Is that my fault? Or is it the fault of your prince?”

“Princess-nim!”

“Please return and deliver this message. I, Erope, have not made any type of preparations yet.”

Shimax lightly bit down on his lips. He did not like this task from the beginning. Why did he, the leader of the Royal Knights, have to

chase a woman all the way out here into the desert?

‘My prince, why would someone as wise as you do such thing.....’

Shimax sighed internally. Yes, Princess Erope who was standing in front of him right now was definitely a beauty that could make you fall in love with her at first sight. But that was it.

Men needed to know when to step back too. They also needed to be smart in order to make the woman of their dreams become their woman, but their princes failed to do that.

They might have been nervous because there were some serious competition around them. However, Shimax still could not understand a war breaking out over a single woman.

“Princess-nim, I hope that you will quietly follow us after putting your citizens and the citizens of the continent in consideration. If you listen, I will pretend that I did not see that knight next to you.”

Petri stepped in front of the princess and started to speak to Shimax, the Sword Master of the Narrate Empire.

“Master Shimax, I am the princess’s Guardian Knight. You should know better than anybody what being a Guardian Knight means. The things you just said to the princess is a threat, and a severe insult to me. I believe it would be better for you to discuss everything after I am dead.”

“Master Petri. Do you really not know that the path you have chosen is the worst possible path? While you have been running away with the princess for a year, many people have already died. If it continues any longer, that number might pass the thousands into over ten thousand people that have died.”

“I am a knight who must according to the will of the princess-nim, even if it causes the destruction of the world. You should know that.”

Shimax nodded his head.

“Yes. It makes sense because you are the Guardian Knight for the princess-nim. Then I guess there is nothing left to say. Even if you are dead, we will safely escort the princess-nim back.”

“Please make sure that the princess-nim suffers no harm because of your fighting. I ask that you pay close attention to her.”

“Do not worry.”

Petri looked up to the sky for a moment.

There were a total of four teams chasing after the princess and himself. Their home country of Stalina, The Narrate Empire, and the Inama and Litmus Kingdom’s Royal Knights or National Knights.

Petri was still just worrying about the princess’s safety even with his death potentially in front of him. He was worried that the person he was supposed to protect may be harmed because of their battle.

“No.”

Princess Elope pulled the arm of her Guardian Knight and shouted toward Shimax.

“I have no desire to fight with a knight who is just fulfilling his duty. If princess-nim wants her Guardian Knight to live, please order him to back away. Everything will be resolved if princess-nim comes with us.”

“Master Shimax!”

Petri shouted out loud.

“Petri... I’m sorry. It seems you lost everything because of me.”

Elope quietly whispered as she hugged Petri’s back.

“P...rincess-nim.....”

“Please forgive this terrible woman’s greed. Even in this moment, I do not want to leave your side ... you ... please forgive

me for pushing you to your death.....”

“P...rincess-nim.....”

Petri was anxious. The princess had just confessed her love for him.

A gust of sand blew across. However, nobody even blinked an eye. They may be on opposite sides of this chase, but they were all knights. They would do the same if they were in Petri’s shoes.

As nobody moved an inch, Petri turned his head and looked toward Erope.

He knew. He knew ever since she asked him to be her Guardian Knight. However, he could never show it.

A lord with no background like himself who only had a small plot of land in Stalina could not do it. It was something he should never even dream about.

“I love you.”

In the end, Erope hugged Petri tightly and said the words that have been tightly hidden in her heart all this time.

“What about you? Petri, do you not love me?”

“.....”

Stalina was a small nation and did not care about a person’s background as much as other nations do, but the two of their backgrounds were too far apart. However, Petri decided not to hide it anymore.

She had gathered her courage to tell him she loved him. There was no way he could still hide his feelings.

“Princess-nim, I love you as someone I need to protect, and as a woman.”

The man who stood with the enemy in front of him, and the woman who hugged that man’s back shared their confession of

love with each other.

Book 5-7.3

The chasers let them have their moment.

As fellow knights ... and because no matter what happened, the princess needed to return today.

After a long time had passed, Petri slowly remove Erope's hand, one finger at a time. Erope put more strength in her hand to prevent it, but she could feel her heart ache every time Petri's fingers touched hers, and ended up letting go.

"Thank you very much for waiting."

Petri bowed toward Shimax and the knights who silently waited for them, and put his sword in front of him.

"Thanks to you, I was able to earn a love I do not deserve. I have no regrets. Please make sure to protect her."

"Petri!"

The moment Erope shouted, Petri and his steed jumped up into the air.

"Yaaaaaap!"

"Hayaaaaaat!"

Shimax shouted out loudly and received Petri's first attack, and Stalina's greatest knight and Erope Lot Lucia's Guardian Knight Petri shouted back as he swung his sword fiercely toward Shimax.

Petri had avoided the chasers from the four nations for the past year, but he could not continue anymore. It was the Royal Commander and the Royal Knights that were after them.

Not a long time passed before Petri's stance started to turn ugly. To be honest, it was because Shimax had gone easy on him because of the tragic situation facing Petri that he was able to last this thing on the first place.

“Give up. If you move aside

“Master Shimax!”

Petri shouted loudly at Shimax’s words, and Shimax thought he had no choice.

‘It’s still too bad. A master knight like him would be welcomed no matter where he went ... Princess Erope, you have killed tens of thousands of lives and now you will take the life of an outstanding knight as well.’

Shimax decided to go all out and started to aim for Petri’s vital points.

“Shouldn’t we help them?”

Aizen whispered to Yulian, but Yulian shook his head.

“If they were people of the desert, the fact that they came all the way here would mean that they had committed a severe sin. However, looking at their outfit, they are not people of the desert. I want to help, but I cannot intervene without knowing what the situation may be.”

Aizen started to smile as he answered.

“But hyung-nim, you helped me out back then even though you didn’t know who I was, didn’t you?”

“That was because you were protecting the fallen Hwai-nim without caring for your own life. I didn’t have any time to consider things before deciding to help.”

“One of them is a woman as well.”

“Indeed. Should I help them?”

“Based on their outfits, they seem to be knights from the continent.”

The other could only blankly look to see what those tiny dots were doing, but Yulian, Aizen, and a couple of the Red Storm

warriors were able to even tell some of the people's facial features out.

“If they were people of unknown origin it may be one thing, but is it okay for us to intervene in a matter of foreign knights?”

Both Yulian and Aizen had important identities, and this was not a situation they could just randomly intervene.

“Let's just watch for a moment.”

Yulian nodded his head and ordered Captain Thriger to bring the ship close to shore.

The two runaways seemed to have given up, as they stopped their horses and started to chat with the chasers.

Grace and Adelina had chosen to get off of Shopping's head and stood next to their men and got a breakdown of what they were saying.

They did not know the situation very well, but they were able to figure things out after hearing the conversation. Something that seemed to come out of a novel was happening in front of their eyes. And there were two people who were not able to get out of that novel.

“We need to help them.”

Adelina nodded her head at Aizen's words.

“Please do so.”

“Aizen!”

Yulian was slightly shocked at the conversation and called Aizen over.

“Regardless of the situation, it is only proper for a Guardian Knight to protect his lady and to do what she wishes. Making a pact to be a Guardian Knight is sacred and not to be taken lightly. It would be good for someone who understands that to help.”

Captain Thriger let out a sigh and started to speak.

“The Narrate Empire is a strong nation in the Western continent. It may be far away from our Pareia, but it would not be good for us to have a conflict with them. Also, from the sounds of it, the other two nations are also pretty strong nations, aren't they?”

“The Guardian's Pact stands in front of any and all promises, and the first order on the Knight's Creed is to protect the women, so there will be no issues with my action.”

“Your Knight's Creed is so complicated. Why don't all of you follow it?”

“It sure is. I also want to help out as a fellow maiden's Guardian Knight.”

Aizen answered while smiling and kissed Adelina's hand before continuing.

“Adelina, I'll be back.”

“Please be careful.”

Aizen smiled once Adelina took a handkerchief out of her pocket and tied it on his wrist.

It was a very cheesy sight, but the two of them seemed so natural. Other people may be jealous of such a relationship, but the desert warriors did not feel that way, as they were required to take on at least three wives.

Seeing Aizen jump off the large ship, Yulian had no choice but to move as well. He knew he didn't have to worry about Aizen because Aizen was strong, but there were a lot of chasers and one of them had at least Shubeon's level of strength.

The Red Storm warriors tried to jump off as well, but Yulian stopped them. It would feel like a threat if too many of them stepped forward, and as Thriger mentioned, it would most definitely cause a diplomatic issue.

When Yulian and Aizen arrived, the knight called Petri had injuries on at least ten different location and was having a hard time defending against the Royal Commander's sword.

“Who are you?”

Some of the Narrate Empire's Royal Knights shouted toward the two approaching men, but Aizen instantly jumped into the battle and was blocking Shimax's sword in Petri's place.

“Nice to meet you.”

As Yulian casually walked over to Princess Erope whom Grace had called immature, Erope subconsciously bowed her head and greeted him back.

“Yes...nice to meet you.”

“The desert is really hot, isn't it?”

“Yes.”

“It will be finished soon. Will you escape first?”

“May I ask who you are?”

“My name is Yulian.”

Erope hesitated for a moment before responding.

“I will wait.”

“Whatever works better for you.”

Yulian casually smiled and prepared to jump in if needed, while watching Aizen and Shimax fight against each other.

Book 5-7.4

At that moment, Shimax was being extremely shocked by Aizen's sword art. Aizen's white hair was odd, but Shimax could clearly tell that this man was extremely young. But this young looking man was definitely a master.

‘How could such a person be in the desert.....’

Shimax exchanged blows with Aizen a couple of times before moving back and asking.

“My name is Shimax Ti Drams, the Commander of the Narrate Empire's Royal Knights. May I ask who you are?”

“It is my pleasure to meet with the famed Commander Shimax of the Narrate Empire's Royal Knights. My name is Aizen Pon Deviang, a member of the Rojini Kingdom's Red Eagle Knight Brigade.”

Shimax was surprised at Aizen's introduction. Even Shimax had heard the rumors about the tenth master of the Rojini Kingdom who reached that level at twenty years of age.

He also heard that this young man had become the Deputy Chief of the Red Eagle Knight Brigade, one of the famed third generation knight brigades of the Rojini Kingdom.

“We are currently moving under the orders of his highness, king of the Narrate Empire. If Sir Aizen is to step in, there may be issues between our empire and the Rojini Kingdom.”

“I was not planning on eavesdropping, but I have already heard about the entire situation. We must put the Knight's Mission before the issues of the two nations. As a fellow Guardian Knight, I could not just sit back and watch.”

Aizen's other name, her Guardian Knight.

His story was known by many travelers and had already spread

across the entire continent. His white hair proved it to be true.

“I have received an order from my lord, while Aizen-nim needs to put his mission first. I guess there is no point in discussing this any further.”

Shimax calmly pointed his sword at Aizen. Deep in his heart, Shimax was filled with curiosity.

Petri, who had just fought against him, was the strongest knight of the Stalina Kingdom, but was no match for Shimax. Their level of experience was different. However, this young man in front of him right now could easily be his match.

Aizen looked toward Petri and started to speak.

“Please take your lady to safety. The person standing next to her will help you.”

“The Stalina Kingdom’s ... no, I guess now I am just a wandering knight. I thank you from the bottom of my heart for Aizen-nim’s assistance. However, this battle is my mission. I cannot do that.”

Seeing Petri declining his assistance, Aizen slightly raised his voice and responded back.

“You seem to have a misunderstanding about your mission. The first mission of a Guardian Knight is to protect their liege. If you are not there, who will protect her? I am just helping you, I will not protect her.”

“But Aizen-nim on your own.....”

“I am not alone, so please go ahead.”

Petri hesitated before realizing that Aizen was correct, and turned his horse toward her.

Aizen watched Petri move before turning his head and pointing his sword at Shimax.

Shimax started to speak.

“It is an honor to exchange blows with a Guardian’s Blade. However, that is that and an order is an order. The other knights and soldiers of the Narrate Empire will capture her.”

“It is my honor to face off against the Royal Blade of the Narrate Empire. I believe that I have done my duty by preventing Shimax-nim from chasing after them.”

“Then, please.”

While Aizen and Shimax clashed, the Narrate Empire’s Royal Knights rushed toward Petri and Princess Erobe.

Yulian urgently started to speak to the two of them after seeing the Royal Knights charging toward them.

“Please rush toward the ship over there.”

“Sir, you are

“Did you not take Aizen’s word to heart? Do not worry and go.”

Yulian shouted like that before grabbing both of the greatswords from his side and rushing forward toward the Narrate Empire’s Royal Knights.

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

Yulian’s loud shout echoed across the desert.

The Narrate Empire’s Royal Knights hesitated for a moment while watching Yulian who was running toward them, but they continued to charge as they had an order to accomplish.

Slaaaaaaaaaaaaash~!

There was a loud wail of a blade before the Narrate Empire’s Royal Knights’ charge was stopped in an instant. Yulian’s two greatswords had made the four knights in the front fall off their horses.

It happened in an instant, but these knights were representatives of their nation. The knights in the rear rushed forward to attack

Yulian, but Yulian used the strength of the greatswords to easily defend against them.

Yulian had no desire to kill them. They were all knights and warriors focused on their duty. Yulian was planning on respecting the fact that they were abiding their orders and just broke their swords or pressured them to the point that they no longer attacked.

“May I ask who you are?”

One of the knights shouted out to Yulian.

“Pareia’s Glow, Yulian Provoke. I respect the fact that you are abiding by your orders, but you are no match for me. I believe it would be wise for you to step back.”

The Royal Knights bit down on their lips after hearing Yulian’s words. They were very strong and had no equal other than the Empire’s masters and their respective knights. That was how they were able to become the Empire’s Royal Knights.

The reason they bit down on their lips was because they knew that Yulian was not lying. They were all skilled enough to know that Yulian was holding back after clashing against him a couple times.

“We thank you for your understanding, however, a knight with an order cannot retreat.”

One knight answered and clenched his teeth as he picked up his sword and rushed toward Yulian.

Yulian admired their will but still made sure not to hurt them. He just defended and made them fall off their horses to push away their desire for battle.

At that time, Aizen was pushing Shimax back quite a bit.

“Haaaht!”

Aizen let out a short shout before using his sword to land a strong

blow on Shimax's steel gauntlets, and Shimax ended up dropping his sword from the impact.

“Kill me.”

Shimax shouted out with shame and shock, but Aizen put his sword away as he answered back.

“We are not enemies. It was not a fair battle as neither of us fought with murderous intent. All I ask is that Shimax-nim returns at this moment.”

Shimax's body started to shake at Aizen's words. He had heard that the Guardian's Blade was strong, but he never expected that he would lose so miserably like this.

‘I guess the rumor that the Rojini Kingdom is the strongest in the Eastern Continent is not just because of their reform. Their knights are also extremely talented.’

Shimax was shocked. His knights were also being completely dominated by a single individual. That young man was extremely talented as well.

Shimax, who thought that Yulian must be a knight of the Rojini Kingdom as well, started to think that it was probably not possible to retrieve Princess Erope today, no, maybe even ever, to take her back to their nation.

However, another change happened at that time.

End of Chapter

Book 5-8.1

State of Affairs

I don't know, if that thing did not happen.....

Ah! Now that I think about it, I really hate the phrase 'what if.'

Isn't it more important to focus on the present?

They couldn't be accurate because of the dust clouds, but based on their experiences with war, that much dust usually meant about a hundred people were rushing in their direction.

And based on the fact that they were wearing metal armor that was rare to find in the desert, it was easy to tell that they were not from a desert tribe.

They seemed to be well-trained as they were rushing forward in proper formation, with the sun reflecting off of their armors.

They instantly arrived and started to surround the individuals.

'Damn.....'

Yulian saw that Petri and Erope, whom he had instructed to head to the boat, were surrounded and clicked his tongue toward the two of them.

'Why were they still in the same spot? Tsk.'

To be honest, the blame should not completely fall on Petri.

Petri was a knight as well, in fact, an amazing knight who had reached the beginner master level. After seeing Aizen easily handle Shimax and Yulian easily stop the charging of the Royal Knights, Petri could not move his feet.

No, to be more specific, Petri could not even think about moving. He was completely shocked after seeing such a warrior who transcended all imagination.

Yulian, who could have no way of knowing about that, grumbled

internally before moving his pirma and approaching Petri and Erope.

“Didn’t I tell you to head to the ship? Why are you still here?”

“I, I’m sorry.”

Seeing Petri quickly apologize, Yulian sighed internally as he clicked his tongue once more and asked.

“Tsk. Are they chasing after you as well?”

Two men stepped forward from the encirclement before Petri or Erope had a chance to respond.

“My name is Paizeh La Ropongde, a Royal Knight of the Litmus Kingdom.”

“Galero Pon Wanax, knight of the Inama Kingdom’s Winged Knight Brigade.”

Seeing the two men respectfully greet him, Yulian bowed his head as well and introduced himself before asking.

“I am Pareia’s Glow Yulian Provoke. May I ask why you are surrounding us?”

The Inama Kingdom’s knight, Galero, looked toward Petri and Erope before responding.

“We are here to escort one of those two individuals back. May I ask if Yulian-nim has any relationships with the two of them?”

“I do not.”

Galero and Paizeh’s faces lit up at Yulian’s answer, while Petri and Erope’s expression did the opposite and turned dark.

“In that case, we will open up a path for Yulian-nim to exit.”

The reason that Galero and Paizeh, these two famed knights, were being so respectful and cautious around Yulian was because they had witnessed the majority of what happened here on their ride over.

Neither Galero or Paizeh could block the charge of the Narrate Empire's Royal Knights like Yulian had done.

“That will be a bit difficult.”

“What reason is there? Didn't you say you do not know the two of them?”

“I indeed do not know them and do not wish to stay here for a long time as it is not my territory, but there is nothing else I can do in this situation.”

At Yulian's answer, Galero and Paizeh naturally turned their heads toward Aizen and Shimax.

Galero and Paizeh started to contemplate their actions once Aizen ran over to them and revealed his identity. They knew Aizen and Yulian were strong, but they would not be able to lift up their faces if they came all the way to the desert and returned empty handed. Especially because they were currently completing a mission.

“We are all knights who are completing an order from our liege. We have seen the two of your strength with our own eyes, but please understand that we have no choice but to exchange blows with you. I also need to inform you that the relationships between our nations and yours will definitely turn negative as a result of this as well.”

Aizen shook his head and responded.

“The Knight's Creed is the same throughout the continent. I do not believe that the relationship between the nations will suffer because a knight is adhering to the Knight's Creed and fulfilling his mission.”

Paizeh stared at Aizen before moving his gaze over to Princess Erope and enunciating every word of his response.

“That mission is about to take the lives of tens of thousands of people. It will definitely be the case if the princess-nim does not return.”

“Based on what I have heard, shouldn’t you blame the stupid men before blaming that princess-nim? It’s natural that something like this would happen when you try to forcefully capture someone who does not want to go.”

At Yulian’s interruption and statement, the two masters shouted at the same time.

“Watch your words!”

This time, Aizen started to speak instead.

“The conclusion is the same regardless. I need to help them and the two of you must take the princess-nim back.”

“I heard that the Rojini Kingdom is a strong nation of the Eastern Continent, but will any good come out of ruining its relationship with the three nations of the Western Continent?”

“To repeat what I have said earlier, the thing that matters the most to me is the Guardian’s Pact.”

“I guess we have no choice. We saw how you fought against the Narrate Kingdom’s Royal Knights earlier. We ask for your forgiveness at the fact that we cannot fight you fairly one on one because we are following our liege’s orders.”

“I also ask for your understanding at the fact that I have no choice but to hinder your objectives.”

“Knights, defense formation.”

At the two master’s words, the approximately one hundred knights instantly started to form a defensive formation with their respective group of knights.

“It is not going to be easy.”

As Yulian said that to Aizen, Aizen started to try to remember what he knew about the Narrate Empire.

Aizen was the Deperu family’s future successor, as well as one of the kingdom’s masters. As he was one of the main forces of the

nation, it was natural that he had learned a lot about the forces the Eastern continent's strong nations should be wary about.

The Narrate Empire did not have a lot of knights. Instead, their strength came from their Arch Magicians, priests, and their Navy.

That was the reason that the Royal Knights were a bit weaker, making it possible for Yulian to easily fight them off with his status as an extremely talented warrior. However, that was not the same for these two knight brigades.

These two nations were both focused on their armies, so it was natural that the level of their knights would be higher than those of the Narrate Empire.

“It might be better to protect the two of them as we retreat backwards.”

As Aizen whispered to Yulian, Yulian looked at the knights who were forming the defensive formation and started to think to himself.

‘They seem to be similar in level with our lead warriors.’

While Yulian was contemplating about what to do, the approximately hundred knights had successfully completed their perfect defensive formation.

“Can you really not just return to your nations?”

As Yulian asked Galero and Paizeh one more time, the two people looked at each other before shaking their heads at Yulian with certainty in their eyes.

“Now that things have turned like this, I do not think we can nicely end this. Now that our Pareia has completed our alliance with the Rojini Kingdom, I cannot just sit back and watch while Aizen falls into danger.”

“We have to apologize for our actions once more.”

Yulian seemed to have made up his mind after hearing Galero's

words and started to speak to Aizen.

“Protect the two of them and head toward the ship.”

Aizen asked in shock.

“What are you planning to do?”

“Fight them of course.”

“It is too much.”

“Do not worry as I will not be fighting alone.”

Yulian smiled as he answered and shouted loudly.

“Oowoooo~oooooooo~!”

Galero and Paizeh took Yulian’s shout to be the signal for battle and ordered the knights to charge.

“Do not worry and protect the two of them!”

Yulian shouted once more before swinging his greatswords and heading toward the knights.

Aizen hesitated for a moment, but believed that Yulian must have had a reason for saying what he did, and quickly rushed his pirma toward Erope and Petri.

Book 5-8.2

“Oowoooo.”

Yulian let out a long shout as he charged through the knights' formation. Nobody was able to prevent him from pushing through.

In addition, the knights had no other choice but to lose all courage, as Yulian was able to overpower them without killing a single one of them. All he did was push and make them fall down, or hit them with the side of the sword.

“All of the knights will go escort the princess-nim.”

Once Galero ordered the knights and started to engage Yulian, Paizeh quickly started to swing his sword at Yulian as well.

It would be shameful if someone found out that someone interfered while a master was fighting one on one, but Galero did not seem to mind as he focused on attacking Yulian.

He believed that he would not be able to defeat this desert warrior on his own, and Paizeh was feeling the same way.

The knights rushed over to Aizen while their leaders were holding Yulian back, and Aizen and Petri started to fight against the knights who were now surrounding them.

The knights used their well practiced teamwork to cover each other's weaknesses, and tried to overwhelm Aizen and Petri with their numbers. However, Aizen parried each and every one of their attacks with his amazing skills, while purposely only injuring the knights a little bit at a time. Unfortunately, Petri's situation was not good.

“Huff~ huff~!”

Petri let out some rough breaths.

He was also a master, but he had used up a lot of stamina while running away this whole time, and was not yet at a level to

overwhelm these Royal Knights.

He would easily defeat any of them one on one, but this was a battle where he didn't even have time to think. He just had to slash and stab almost instinctively. If Aizen had not helped him, he may have already fallen off his horse and ended up captured. Petri's sword seemed to be losing its strength and his body looked weak. It was at that moment.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

A group of people arrived while shouting out loudly.

Each of them had large greatswords in both hands, and rushed into the battlefield with enough force that made it seem like they wanted to crush everything in their way.

“Hold back while you attack!”

Yulian fended off the two master's swords while shouting without even looking back.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

The Red Storm responded to Yulian's words and followed Yulian's example of controlling their strength and using their skills to make the knights fall off their horses one by one.

“This makes no sense.....”

Paizeh watched his subordinates falling off their horses without being able to do anything and started to mumble with disbelief.

The Royal Knights of the Inama and Litmus Kingdoms were the best of the best even in the Western Continent. The fact that they could not fend off a group of desert warriors who were half their number was a large shock to all of them.

“Ack!”

Paizeh then was punished for losing focus and breaking his rhythm.

He could feel an intense pain pierce through his chainmail from the side.

Paizeh soon felt his body lift up in this air, before Yulian assisted him and ended up sliding down Yulian's greatsword to lightly fall onto the sand.

"Masters of the continent. Isn't this enough? We are not enemies who need to kill each other."

As Yulian started to speak toward Galero, Galero bit down on his lips.

It was their complete defeat.

There were two masters and a hundred knights, but they were defeated by less than fifty individuals.

"Did you say... you were Yulian Provoke-nim ... of Pareia?"

Yulian nodded his head at Galero's shaky question.

"This Galero will remember Yulian-nim going easy on us. However....."

Galero put strength into the hand holding the sword.

"There will be significant repercussions on a national level. For both the Rojini Kingdom and Yulian-nim's Pareia."

"I understand. However, there is nothing I can do as Pareia is an ally of the Rojini Kingdom. As the Glow of Pareia, I will not avoid it. However, I wonder if we will have to shed blood for no reason."

Galero stared intensely at Yulian's response, before getting off his horse and supporting Paizeh up before shouting toward the knights.

"Knights! Stop battling and return!"

The knights all let out a sigh at Galero's command before retreating toward their masters. Even the Narrate Empire's Shimax, who had been watching all of this from the side, let out a

sigh before moving with them.

None of them would hold a grudge as they lost due to their lack of strength in a fair battle, but it was true that they were all extremely angry.

This incident will definitely affect the Western continent, but will also end up affecting the state of affairs in both the desert and the Eastern Continent as well.

‘I don’t know whether to say they are amazing, or extremely immature.....’

Yulian scratched his right cheek while watching Princess Erope and Petri quickly eating while maintaining their proper posture and dining etiquettes.

If he was in that situation, he would never throw away his nation for his own happiness.

‘If you were born as a princess and lived in happiness your whole life, you naturally have to take responsibility for that happiness.’

Although both Yulian and Grace could not understand, Aizen and Adelina thought a bit differently.

While it was true that their action was a bit irresponsible, they showed a lot of courage to do what they had done.

It was slightly different, but Aizen and Adelina could see a bit of their past selves reflected in Petri and Erope, that was why their gaze was full of concern.

“So what do you plan on doing from here on?”

Yulian finally asked once they were done with their meal and were sitting around drinking a cup of a tea.

“That...well... not yet.”

Petri answered like that and looked toward Erope, but there was no way Erope had any type of plan either. They were barely able to successfully escape their chasers; when would there have been any

time to think?

“If you don’t have a plan in mind, come with us to our kingdom.”

Erope cautiously asked at Aizen’s response.

“If we go to the Rojini Kingdom, there will be a lot of diplomatic issues for you. You’ve already done so much for us.....”

“Do not worry. If you just stay at our place, nobody will know.”

Erope and Petri’s expressions turned brighter at Adelina’s retort. The two of them were both tired from running away for so long.

“Anyways, I have to apologize to you, hyung-nim. I feel like Pareia will end up receiving the blunt of the issues.”

“It’s not like I could just sit back and watch. In addition, our Pareia no longer needs to fear the continent.”

Yulian knew that things will become difficult, but as he just said, Yulian made up his mind that they will no longer be afraid of any other nation.

“I am leaving with these wonderful memories and the beauty of the desert etched in my heart.”

“You are welcome to come back at any time.”

“Hyung-nim should visit our kingdom as well. It will feel very different compared to the desert.”

“I’m sure it is.”

Yulian and Aizen seemed to be disappointed to say goodbye as they continued on talking about all sorts of random topics. It was the same for Grace and Adelina as well.

“You must visit!”

“You can’t turn me away if I do come to see you.”

The two women were already talking very informally with each other and tightly held onto each other’s hands while saying goodbye. They were trying to console each other from the sorrows

of their farewell.

Once it was time for them to leave, Aizen started to speak in a serious tone.

“If that day truly comes, I will rush over and do my part as well.”

Yulian put his hand on Aizen’s shoulder after hearing his sincere words and answered mischievously. It was much better to say goodbye on a happy note.

“It will definitely be of great assistance to me, but will the kingdom let you go? Hahaha.”

“I will come even if I need to run away. Also, I look forward to a competition between the Red Storm and my Red Eagle Knight Brigade next time as well.”

“Hahaha. I don’t mean to boast, but there is no other brigade that can defeat the Red Storm.”

As Yulian shrugged his shoulders and answered, Aizen started to smile as he responded.

“I also thought that my brigade was the strongest before meeting the Red Storm. Well, that thought hasn’t really changed though. Hahaha.”

“I look forward to it. I presume we will meet again soon.”

Aizen’s two eyes started to sparkle as he nodded his head.

“Then please be well until that day.”

“You be careful as well. I presume you’ll be fine with your level of skill, but you never know what may happen.”

“I have already faced many life or death situations.”

Yulian hugged Aizen before speaking.

“It really is difficult to say goodbye.”

The two of them hugged each other before saying goodbye, knowing that they will meet again in the future.

Book 5-8.3

The sixth month in the year 260 of the Continental Calendar.

The official announcement of the alliance between Pareia and the Rojini Kingdom finally came, and this quickly changed the state of affairs of the continent. The desert nations that all of the continent's nation had considered to be barbarians living in barren land had started to affect the state of affairs in the continent.

For these nations on the continent that had considered the desert tribes to be their provinces where they could trade small amounts of steel for large amounts of war materials, this was a significant turn of events.

They also had nothing to say as the first nation to acknowledge a desert tribe was the Rojini Kingdom, the strongest nation in the Eastern Continent.

This led to the larger forces of the Eastern Continent visiting Pareia to get a sense of strength of this Pareia that had managed to unify the Eastern Desert, and this only led to them becoming surprised even more.

They had over ten master level warriors, as well as thousands of warriors who would be accepted as talented knights no matter which nation they would go to. Once they figured this out, this fact alone was enough to make Pareia one of the strong nations of the continent.

Some of the nations tried to use Pareia's critical weaknesses of population and lack of materials for their benefit, but there was no way the Rojini Kingdom would just watch and let that happen.

The Rojini Kingdom believed that they had gained a strong ally and large amounts of materials were frequently delivered to Pareia, while Pareia moved their warriors as promised.

They left 70,000 warriors to defend against any potential attacks

from the Western Desert and 70,000 warriors to protect all of their oases, while the rest of their warriors were all moved to the borders of the Silence Kingdom and their allied forces.

Just this alone was enough to hold back a significant number of the Silence Empire's army, allowing the Rojini Kingdom to prepare their strategies in a much more advantageous position.

Narrate Empire's Emperor's office.

Marquis Norton of the Narrate Empire started to speak to Emperor Cline I with a smile on his face.

"This might actually be an opportunity for us."

"What do you mean by that?"

Marquis Norton had an even greater smile on his face as he answered Cline I.

"To be honest, wasn't this a war nobody wanted in the first place? It was a war that was started just for the crown prince's pride."

"But it isn't like we can just back away."

"If you think about it, it is a pride that does not matter if our Empire does not have a significant amount of strength compared to the Inama Kingdom or the Litmus Kingdom. I'm sure the Inama and Litmus kingdoms feel the same way."

Cline I seemed to be interested, as he leaned forward from his seat and asked.

"Put it into simple terms for me."

"Didn't you just say it, your majesty? We have no choice but to be in war. I'm sure the two other kingdoms do not want this war either. The problem was that we had nothing that could put an end to it while saving face, but now we have something we can use."

"What?"

Marquis Norton's eyes started to sparkle.

"Don't we now have a common enemy?"

"You mean?"

"Yes. We need to turn our empire's blade elsewhere. There will be much less damage than now, and in fact, it may even bring us large gains in the long run."

Cline I started to smile at Marquis Norton's answer.

It was quite burdensome going against a nation with a similar level of strength, let alone going up against two of them at the same time. However, if things go as Marquis Norton just mentioned, it should lessen the headaches he has been having lately.

"It shouldn't be that hard to wipe out those barbarians of the desert. As the Marquis mentioned, it may bring us gains in the long run. The desert tribe that receives our help will not be able to go against us in the future."

Cline I's expression changed as he asked Marquis Norton once more.

"If we are the first to bring up this issue, won't we look like the losers?"

Marquis Norton approached Cline I and whispered quietly.

"You leave that to the workers like me. There will be no damage to your fame, your majesty. All three countries will come to the same decision at the same time."

Cline I's expression turned brighter once more.

"But which desert tribe will we be helping?"

"It is a famous tribe in the desert. It is also the only tribe in the Western Desert that can fight against them. I have been investigating the desert these days because of the Inama Kingdom's large tax gain and have started to gain some interest.

Please trust me.”

Cline I’s expression started to turn even brighter.

“I wish to hear Greatest Warrior Venersis’s opinion.”

The Shuarei’s Glow Hangry Elbotta pushed aside the others around him and calmly asked Venersis.

“Mm~!”

Venersis let out a long moan. It was not a problem that could be decided upon easily.

After contemplating it for a long time, Venersis decided to ask.

“For what reason did they suddenly decide to assist us?”

“They did not want to say why they wanted to help us. All they said was that they had a reason they needed to do so.”

Venersis started to contemplate once more at Hangry’s response.

‘It is too sweet of an offer. However, it is difficult to accept without knowing their reason.’

Hangry started to speak again while Venersis was thinking.

“Based on the information I was able to gather, they took a hit to their pride. In fact, all three nations took a hit on their pride.”

“What do you mean by pride?”

“I have no way of knowing the details. However, it must have been big enough for them to make such an offer. I have thought about it, but the fact that it was three nations and not one that came to us with the same offer shows that they have already internally struck a deal with each other as well.”

Venersis could not come up with the reason no matter how long he thought about it.

Just what must have happened to them that they wish to assist the Shuarei? The deal was that they knew the Shuarei were bitter enemies with Pareia and wanted to help them take Pareia down.

‘Pareia is not located in the Western Desert. With them being in the Eastern Desert, it is difficult for something to happen between them.’

“Say something.”

Hangry seemed to be frustrated seeing Venersis just silently think, and urged Venersis to respond.

“And you mentioned that the Inama Kingdom wanted us to keep it a secret that they were involved?”

“Yes. One of their merchant guilds have a monopoly on the Eastern Desert trade route. They have a deal with Pareia. Thanks to that, the Inama Kingdom is able to collect a significant amount of taxes, so they could only ask us to keep it a secret.”

“I really wish I clearly knew why they want to recruit us to pressure Pareia.”

Hangry thought about it for a moment before responding.

“In my opinion, is it possible that they want us to defeat Pareia and take control of the trade route that Pareia currently controls? I feel like they might want to increase their gains by taking control of that route. If they assist us, it will be difficult for us to deny their requests.”

“I feel like it is a problem we need to think over very carefully. If people know that an outsider got involved in a fight between desert tribes, all of the other tribes will point their fingers at us.”

“That is why I am asking for your opinion.”

Venersis seemed to have made up his mind as he answered.

“Let’s meet with them once more. That way, we can figure out their reason. In addition, if we do get assistance, we need to make sure it is in materials such as steel and food, not soldiers.”

Venersis said that before realizing that materials alone were not enough for the current Shuarei to move. Their number of warriors

were extremely low right now. They needed at least five years to have enough warriors to go back to war.

Venersis urgently started to speak.

“No, even if we were to get reinforcement of soldiers from them, we need to get reinforcements similar to how Pareia has made an alliance with the Eastern Continent’s Rojini Kingdom. That is the only way for us to have an excuse to get reinforcements from them. In addition, even if we are to get reinforcements from them, our first target will not be Pareia.”

“Then?”

“I think it will be best if we met with them once more first.”

“Let’s do that.”

Hangry answered before quickly sending a messenger to call the envoys of the three nations.

Second month of year 262 in the continental calendar.

The Rojini Kingdom and the Silence Empire finally started to clash after preparing for such a long time.

The small scale border battles had finally tugged the lines of war.

The two large nations who had been preparing quite a bit for the war brought everything they had to face off against each other, and the Eastern continent was swept up in the fires of war almost instantly.

End of chapter

Book 5-9.1

The burning flames of war

A devastating flame started to rise into the air.

“Load!”

One thousand warriors cocked their bows at the lead warrior’s command.

“Fire!”

Swiiiiiiiiish.

It was a feat to launch one thousand arrows almost instantly, but the lead warrior who had given the command started to frown. They did not manage to reach the distance he was aiming for.

The lead warrior turned his head to look toward the Glow and Assistant Warrior who were watching. They had already tried over ten times; he was waiting to see if they would have him try once more.

Yulian raised his hand to the commander to order the warriors to rest, before turning to Runa who was standing next to him and speaking.

“It does not go as far as we expected it to go.”

“I suppose there is a limit to human strength.”

“But be satisfied with this. It is already going about twenty meters further than with the old bows.”

Runa shook his head.

“We need to change our methods in order to fight on the continent. The Silence has a unit called the Heavy Armored Infantry unit that wears heavy armor and uses long spears as weapons. If we charge at them without any preparations, our warriors will take a significant amount of damage.”

The training for Pareia's warriors started to slowly change since they moved to the Castle of Storm. In the past, they focused on formations and basic weapon mastery, but things needed to change to go up against the continent.

The variety of warriors was the biggest issue. Compared to the desert where all of the warriors fought on pirmas, the continent had cavalry and infantry, and even the infantry was divided into different types.

Armored Cavalry and Light Cavalry, Heavy Armored Infantry and Light Infantry, as well as archers and while rare, some magic brigades as well.

To take on all of these types of soldiers with only what the continent would consider to be Light Cavalry and Light infantry would definitely lead to a lot of damages for Pareia.

But it was not possible to divide the warriors into different types of warriors like the continent. No matter what, desert warriors needed to put the needs of fighting in the desert first.

That was why Runa had created longbows that could shoot further than regular bows, as well as siege crossbows.

"The arrows that our warriors shoot are the best. I think that we would be able to get quite a lot of success if they do not attack them head on and attack them from the side while riding the pirmas. What do you think?"

"I think we will need to be satisfied with just that level for now."

Seeing Runa still looking like he was not satisfied, Yulian tried to console Runa.

"You made it so that they could shoot twenty meters further than what they used to be able to do. Twenty meters with a bow is not something that can be ignored."

"It is not much better though since the accuracy falls quite a bit."

“Man, you sure are greedy.”

Runa could not help but worry at Yulian’s words. Pareia may have a lot of warriors, but warriors were men, and Pareia’s number of men was extremely disproportionate.

They needed to maintain as many warriors as possible in order to maintain their status as a nation and help it grow.

“We will have no issues if the Silence Empire face us with their Light Cavalry, but we also need to consider the situation that they do not. The armor and spears of the Heavy Armor Infantry are the worst possible opponents for our warriors.”

“We need to guide them to the type of battle that is advantageous for us. It is also not easy to move the Heavy Armor Infantry, so we just need to use our agility to avoid them. If they decide to focus on agility and send out their infantry, there is no way for our warriors to lose.”

“I will do my best.”

“You are not the only one who is nervous. I am nervous, as well as many of the other Greatest Warriors. It is a new battle for everyone. We will just follow your strategy. Aren’t you our Pareia’s secret weapon?”

Runa could not help but be filled with admiration for this Glow of his who trusted him with full sincerity. Isn’t there a saying that men will put their lives on the line for those who understand them?

“This Runa, no matter what happens, will bring a plan for complete victory to you.”

“I trust that you will.”

Yulian patted Runa’s shoulders to console him before starting to head to a different training ground.

In the other training ground, they were currently training to

become used to horses instead of pirmas.

“Glow!”

Haisha saw Yulian and headed over.

“How is it going?”

As Yulian looked toward the training warriors and asked, Haisha confidently answered.

“I do not think there will be much issues. If pirmas are rough and extremely strong, the horses of the continent are swift and sophisticated. You do not need to worry about us getting used to them.”

“The Rojini Kingdom has a lot of expectations for us. I didn’t expect them to treat us so well even with our alliance. I heard that these war horses were extremely expensive in the continent unlike our pirmas, but they gave us 5,000 horses to use.”

“To be honest, I do not think pirmas will be a problem either. They are just not as mobile as the horses.”

Yulian shook his head at Haisha’s response.

“No. In order to reduce our casualties as much as possible, mobility is very important. That is why we are creating a cavalry unit with just the Red Storm and some veteran warriors.

“I do not believe that the soldiers of the continent will be stronger than our warriors.”

“I love the confidence, but we must stay alert. It will be a different type of battle than we have faced in the desert.”

“I understand.”

Yulian looked around the area before asking.

“Where are the second generation Red Storm warriors?”

“They are being trained separately. I do not think they are ready to go to war just yet.”

“I agree. If they are going to be part of the Red Storm and not just an average warrior, they must never lose, so let them out when you feel very confident about it.”

“All of them seem to want to go to war though.”

Yulian started to smile at Haisha’s words.

“They are warriors after all. I’m sure they want to go to war. Did you manage to convince them to stay?”

“They were quiet once Thrint beat them all up. Hahaha.”

“They sure seem to be suffering.”

“If it is compared to the Glow or even us ... hehehe.”

Yulian started to laugh along with Haisha’s uncharacteristic snicker and looked out toward the warriors who were training.

They were strong warriors whom he thought would not lose anymore no matter what type of war they were involved in.

“Hyung-nim.”

Yulian had been watching the warriors train late into the night, until he heard a voice behind him and turned around. Orca was looking at him with flushed cheeks.

“What might you need so late at night?”

As Yulian asked with confusion, Orca started to answer.

“I have something to tell hyung-nim.”

“Hmm? Go ahead, tell me.”

“Please take me with you on this campaign.”

Yulian tilted his head at Orca’s words. His younger brother had never been interested in wars before.

“After thinking about it, I feel like there will be something for me to do in this continent war. Not with incantations, but with the continent’s magic that I have learned.”

“Tell me more details. I was thinking that it would be beneficial for you to stay behind with Pere and the Greatest Warriors to help defend like you did in the last defensive battle with the Shuarei, but I’m sure there is a reason for your request.”

“Yes.”

Orca’s eyes started to sparkle as he continued to speak.

“No matter what anybody says, our Pareia’s strength is based on the charging impact of our pirma riding warriors.”

“I agree.”

“However, those so called castles in the continent will be a strong defense net, and it will be difficult to break through them with just our warriors.”

“Isn’t that why Runa developed the siege weapons and we are training the warriors separately for archery and infantry?”

Yulian was even more confused, as he knew that there was no way Orca had not seen all of the training that was going on around them.

“However, wouldn’t there be a lot of injuries? At least until we can break down a castle door or castle wall and enter the castle itself.”

“You are correct. I am getting more curious. Just what is at the core of your request?”

“I believe I will be able to instantly break down a castle wall or a castle door.”

“What?!”

Book 5-9.2

Yulian was completely shocked. If things went as Orca just described, they could significantly reduce the number of deaths to the warriors.

“I thought about the magic I learned, and I think it would be very useful for this type of siege battle with a castle. You heard about it right? The magic I learned is one where it lifts up a large piece of the earth and strikes it down.”

Yulian’s mind started to clear up with Orca’s words. He was surprised that he did not think about this earlier.

Yulian quickly tried to verify his thoughts.

“You mean to say that you plan on sending that piece of earth toward a castle wall or a castle door?”

“Yes. Wouldn’t that be more useful than being here for a defensive battle? The only problem is that in order to use it, I need to get decently close to a castle wall and will require protection from the other warriors.”

“If you can do that, I will personally protect you since protecting you would mean more of our warriors can live. We still haven’t trained any Shield Bearers to defend against archers.”

Orca then asked in a voice full of expectations.

“Does that mean I can come with you on this campaign?”

“It would be one thing if I didn’t know about it, but now that I do, there is really no reason for me to prevent you from going. But to be sure, I will need to see the strength of that magic of yours.”

“I know it will work. If you consider the size or weight of the lifted object, there is probably nothing that can remain without damage once it is hit.”

Orca answered with a happy voice. He could finally observe his

oldest brother's might with his own eyes after having only heard stories about it.

For Orca who could never go to war because of his weak body, that was really important.

Orca was in the end a man with a warrior's blood. Who wouldn't have the desire to go to war and show off their skills? Until now, he had not been able to do so because his body remained weak no matter how hard he trained.

Yulian excitedly patted his younger brother's shoulder as he answered.

"I guess we need to significantly change our strategy thanks to you. However, Runa will need to confirm it with his own eyes, so you will need to show it to us."

"Hahaha. My body feels really weird every time I use it, so I just did not want to use it other than in battle. I can show it to you tomorrow."

"You did well, Orca."

Orca started to get even more excited at Yulian's praise.

Fourth month of Year 262 of the Continental calendar.

An urgent envoy from the Rojini Kingdom visited Pareia.

Based on the fact that Aizen could not come, they were certain that Aizen was out in the battlefield as well. If not, the Rojini Kingdom would have definitely sent Aizen as the representative of the envoy because of his friendship with Yulian.

The diplomat of the Rojini Kingdom explained the current situation before starting to explain to them the need for Pareia to put pressure on the Silence Empire.

They had already discussed this in advance and the Rojini Kingdom had previously sent a lot of materials, but this was done to remove their uncertainty, as well as save Pareia's face.

Yulian ordered the envoy to rest before gathering everyone for an urgent Meeting of Greatests.

“The request for us to move has finally come.”

“However, it has come earlier than I expected. I was hoping for more of the Silence Empire’s soldiers to move away from the Southern area.”

“Who knows. But in my opinion, they would never lower the amount of soldiers located at the South since that devious Borrea knows about the strength of our warriors.”

After Yulian and Runa talked back and forth, Egane confirmed the information they had previously discussed for this situation.

“Then the people to leave on this campaign are the Glow and Runa-nim, two Greatest Warriors Metro and Gubaham, as well as Orca-nim and Violet-nim while the rest of us defend against the Shuarei tribe and other tribes in the West?”

“It is because we trust Greatest Warriors Egane and Vibli that we can send such a large group to attack the continent. I leave it to you two Greatest Warriors.”

As Yulian looked toward the old Greatest Warrior and showed sincere trust, Egane started to smile as he answered.

“Even if it is Venersis, it should no longer be possible for him to invade Pareia. At least until he has a minimum of 100,000 warriors for sure. Do not worry about us and please take care of yourself. You cannot forget that the center of our Pareia is you, Glow.”

Yulian smiled at the wise warrior’s concern and nodded his head before speaking to the people gathered together.

“Runa, check our strategy one more time. Greatest Warriors Metro and Gubaham, check the status of our warriors one more time. As for you Haisha, check on the status of the Red Storm and the 5,000 cavalry soldiers and make sure they are prepared.”

All of them showed sharp gazes at Yulian's command, before they all headed out to complete their respective tasks.

Once everybody left, Yulian closed his eyes and leaned his body back. They will need to move around crazily from here on, so you could call this the last moment of calm for Yulian.

‘Finally...is it finally time?’

Yulian kept his eyes closed as he clenched his fists.

“Quickly enter and quickly win. We do not have much time.”

Venersis gathered the Greatest Warriors as he seemed to be confirming it for himself.

“We need to take over the majority of the Western Desert before Pareia's forces that are heading out to the Eastern Continent return. This is especially true of the Rivilde tribe, since they are certain to be an ally of Pareia. We cannot give Pareia a foothold in the West anymore.”

All of the Greatest Warriors started to focus on each and every one of Venersis's words.

The situation was so terrible that they could not even feel anger or jealousy toward Venersis. Seeing Pareia unify the Eastern desert and start to become stronger was enough to automatically draw out their survival instincts.

They may have been able to achieve victory over Pareia in the last war against Pareia, but when Venersis called it his defeat and shed tears in front of their Glow asking for punishment, the rest of the Shuarei warriors all cried as well. Venersis was that type of warrior, and things became much easier for Venersis after that.

“This is our last chance. I hope all of you give it everything you have, as if we miss this opportunity, the Shuarei can be said to have no future.”

Venersis's last words riled up the courage in all of the warriors

and their eyes started to sparkle with anticipation.

Sixth month in Year 262 of the Continental calendar. A large change started to appear.

The Shuarei's War for the unification of the Western Desert. Many tribes had expected the Shuarei to use the opening once Pareia's forces headed toward the Eastern continent to strike, and Pareia had expected the same. That was why Greatest Warriors Egane and Vibli were left behind in the tribe to defend against that potential attack. Surprisingly, the Shuarei's decision was not to attack Pareia, but the other tribes of the Western continent.

Nobody could tell the reason behind or even the conditions of the Shuarei's alliance with the strong nations of the Western continent, but after receiving weapons and soldiers as reinforcement, the Shuarei confidently started to move up north.

The first tribe that had to fight against the Shuarei was the Rivolde tribe.

Pareia's Commanding Warrior Egane was gathering the reserve warriors to deploy some reinforcement, as he urgently sent a messenger to the Eastern continent to inform Yulian of the situation and ask for them to return.

However, the 50,000 warriors at the border could not return because of their promise with the Rojini Kingdom. If they retreated because of the Shuarei, the Rojini Kingdom that was moving in tandem with Pareia would end up receiving a lot of damage.

After discussing it with Runa, Yulian had Egane strengthen the defense on the crossroad between Pareia and Shuarei, before sending the remaining warriors to the Rivolde. They also started to rush the invasion of the Silence Empire's territory a little more as well.

Seventh month in Year 262 of the Continental Calendar.

The fierce battle that seemed to be at a stalemate between the Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom finally started to change. The reason for this was of course the fact that the Crimson Desert's Pareia stopped simply pressuring the Silence Empire and started to actually get involved in the war.

At this point, the continent could not help but become amazed once more at Pareia's strength.

They used the Castle of Storm that many others thought was good for nothing as the base to secure a steady supply route, and that supply route allowed for 50,000 strong warriors to be stationed at the border.

They then surprised everyone by taking over the Silence Empire's Fedore region within just one week.

It was not that the defense of the Fedore region was sloppy.

The Silence Empire's crown prince Shaone had ordered them to prepare for an attack from the desert a long time ago, and they had been making their preparations all this time.

Although they did not send out masters and extra brigades like they would if they were going against a really strong opponent, they at least had enough soldiers to defend the castle walls. They also had enough supplies stationed there so that they could train the soldiers to be prepared for Pareia's attack.

Castles would normally survive siege battles even if the strength of the defense was one third of the strength of the offense, as long as the castle was sturdy. In addition, there was no way to say that Pareia, which had always gone to war on pirmas, would be talented at siege battles.

Yet they managed to defy everyone's exceptions and take down the Fedore Castle which was being defended by 30,000 soldiers.

Both the Silence Empire as well as the rest of the nations were amazed by Pareia's siege strategy. They also wanted to know just

what kind of strategy was used. Unless the commander in the castle was a complete idiot, there was no way for a castle to be taken over so quickly.

They were only able to find out the secret to this magical siege when the commander of the southern territory, Count Teros the lord of Fedore, reported his defeat.

Book 5-9.3

The Silence Empire's headquarters was swept up by disappointment.

They had lost a war they should not have lost, and had a territory they couldn't lose taken away. Furthermore, it was to a stupid barbarian from the desert.

At the same time, they were not even able to cause significant damage to the enemy. Count Terros claimed they injured at least 20,000 of Pareia's warriors, but there were no commanders who would be gullible enough to believe that.

People had a tendency to exaggerate the amount of damage they managed to inflict to the enemy, and it was more likely to happen when they lost. People tended to exaggerate the most when they faced an overwhelming defeat.

Slam~!

The commanding officer of this war, the Silence Empire's crown prince Shaone, struck the table so hard that the table almost broke before he started to shout.

"Do you really expect me to believe that, Count Terros!"

Count Terros of the Fedore region did not even flinch at Shaone's fury. What he had told them was the truth, and he was not the only one who did not know about this prior to the battle.

"Your highness, but it is the truth. The barbarians of Pareia have someone who is able to use a ninth class magic called Meteor. And I do not know if it is the same person, but there is also a magician who can cause our soldiers to fall into a trance and start to see illusions."

"Like I said, how does that make any sense!"

"But it is the truth."

Shaone closed his extremely angry eyes after seeing Count Terros's calm answer. His entire body was full of anger, but Shaone was holding himself back. This was still just the beginning half of the war, and Count Terros was a well-versed noble who was talented enough to lead the southern region.

He could not mock a noble that he could not afford to lose right now, and even if he didn't mind losing him, right now was not the time.

“Ugh~”

Shaone let out a moan while trying to hold back his anger.

This really complicated things.

Losing the Fedore region was a significant loss for the Silence Empire. Those barbarians of the desert would have gained a significant resource to pressure the Silence Empire. In addition, if they really had such a high leveled magician as Count Terros explained, it would be difficult to even take the castle back.

“Towell, in the entire continent, how many people can use a magic like the one Count Terros explained?”

The Silence Empire's Magist (Royal Magician) Towell had already been thinking about that prior to Shaone's question.

Meteor, also known as a planet summoning spell, was really too grand of a name for it. In reality, it just lifted up a piece of earth or a giant boulder and shot it toward the enemy.

However, it drained a significant amount of mana, and if you did it wrong, you could even face mana backflow, which was an extremely dangerous situation for a magician. That was why it was not something that just anybody could use.

Even if they attempted it knowing the potential dangers, there were less than ten magicians who could even pretend to show a similar level of strength.

“Of the people I know about, there are about five of them. Myself, the Rojini Kingdom’s Magist Winnie, the one who burns with anger, one of the emperor’s bodyguards, the cruel Serena, the Western continent’s Magic Kingdom of Kellory’s Magis Zeras, and the roaming magician Teia. There may be more people, but these five are the only ones that I am certain about.”

Shaone asked after hearing Towell’s answer.

“Does that mean either Serena or the Rojini Kingdom’s Magist was deployed to Pareia?”

“I do not think that would be the case. Serena is known to never leave the Rojini emperor’s side, and Winnie will not get involved unless I step in. With that being the case, it is most likely that Teia is with them, but the Teia I know would never let themselves get tied down to a nation.”

“Then just who do they have that is capable of such high level magic?”

The room became silent at Shaone’s question. The desert tribe that they had ignored as stupid barbarians had pressured them so hard. This was something none of them could have ever expected.

Only the few individuals who knew a bit about the desert expected their empire to be lightly pressed. But not like this.

Shaone asked Towell.

“Do we have a way to fight against them if they really do have such a magician?”

“If they really have a magician who can use meteor, all we can do is use one of the magic brigades to defend against the meteor or seal it from the beginning of the battle.”

“Mm.”

There were many moans from the audience after Towell’s answer.

The magic brigade was a special team that was created with 100 magicians. They were extremely precious on the battlefield. Even a strong nation like the Silence Empire only had seven of these magic brigades.”

Marquis Spotch, what is the number of soldiers we can send to the south right now?”

Marquis Spotch was extremely surprised at Shaone’s question and quickly answered.

“We have about 30,000 infantry and 5,000 cavalry that is available from our reserve unit, as well as two brigades of knights.”

“If you personally command them, do you think you can take back the Fedore region? No, at minimum, would you be able to defend the Henkel plains?”

Marquis Spotch was feeling iffy about Shaone’s question.

He was an esteemed knight of the empire, and one of the nine masters of the Silence Empire. Yet the crown prince was talking about taking back the Fedore region would be impossible for him. However, Spotch decided to be understanding. The fact that the Fedore region fell was a significant shock for the Empire.

“If you leave it to this lowly one, I will even take back to Fedore region.”

“No, there isn’t a need to really take it back. I just want the Marquis to help make me not have to think about Pareia.”

“I, Spotch Rin Cullery, one of the Empire’s masters, as well as the leader of the Sword of Justice knight brigade. Ask that your highness not cut down my confidence as even his royal highness the king approves of my abilities.”

Marquis Spotch was really upset. If there was no desire to take back the Fedore region, there really wasn’t a reason to send him there.

The Henkel Plains were between the Fedore region and the Mobile territory which could be considered the entrance to the center of the Silence Empire, and in the middle of the Henkel Plains was the Henkel Gate. The Henkel Gate was a naturally developed fortress.

Shaone lifted up his hand to calm him down before starting to speak.

“I am not trying to upset you, Marquis. However, I know the desert tribes. I know just how tenacious they are. I also know that they are stronger than we expect them to be. That is why I am looking at you, Marquis Spotch. The Henkel Plains is responsible for cultivating over half of the Empire’s food. That is why I am sending you Marquis Spotch, one of the Empire’s pride and joy.

“Your highness, the Henkel Gate is a natural fortress. Even if it is not myself, the Henkel Gate is a fortress that could fend off any enemy, even if they came with 100,000 soldiers. As long as they focus on defense, it is not penetrable. So if it is not to take back the Fefore region, does it really make sense to send me for a defensive battle? Am I really that useless of a knight?”

Marquis Spotch was a knight who had the right to speak so bluntly to the crown prince, and Shaone also felt the need to make Marquis Spotch feel better. As Spotch mentioned, he was a talented knight of the empire, and one of the empire’s masters. He even felt like his order could be seen as shameful to Marquis Spotch.

“Marquis Spotch. Do i really need to tell you each and everything? As long as you obey my basic instructions, you can use your discretion for everything else.”

“I will give my all to meet your highness’s expectations.”

Marquis Spotch finally anticipated Shaone’s will and kneeled in front of Shaone. Shaone could finally relax as he continued to speak.

“I leave it to you, Marquis Spotch. I will send a magic brigade with your team. Until we win this war against the Rojini, make it so that the word Pareia does not reach my ear.”

“You do not have to worry about that, your highness.”

“Good, good. Then prepare everything you need before you head out. I will leave it to you.”

Marquis Spotch nodded his head and stood up before heading out. Once Marquis Spotch left, Shaone called in a few other commanders to discuss their future strategies.

End of chapter.

Book 5-10.1

Henkel Gate

This was not a gate you could pass with just strength.

However, they needed to get past here no matter what happened.

There was enough value to this place to put their lives on the line to take it.

“Hmm, is that it?”

Runa was muttering to himself as he looked out to the fortress in front of him.

There was only one path across the dangerous Henkel Mountain Range that cut through the middle of the Henkel Plains. The Henkel Gate was placed on top of that path.

The Henkel Gate added on to the natural protections of the Henkel Mountain range, with tall cliffs and mountains on both sides of the single path, making it impossible to cross the Henkel Plains without going through this single path. That was why the Henkel Gate was called a natural fortress, even with the manual construction of the gate itself.

There was only a single door into the gate. If they could pierce through that one door, they would get the opportunity to perfectly capture something that Pareia has longed to have for such a long time. They would be able to have a region of their own that could grow food.

‘It is fitting of its name as a natural fortress. Without taking control of that gate, we will need to constantly be on guard about the Silence Empire invading us in this side of the plains. In addition, with us not being able to do anything to the enemy who is right in front of us, this would end up a useless region.’

Runa thought about that as he slowly stepped forward. He

wanted to take a closer look.

“Runa-nim, it is dangerous if you go any further.”

Runa stopped his movement as one of the guard warriors cautioned him. This path with mountains and cliffs decorating the side and the gate cutting off the only path across really was a path of victory for the defenders, and a path of despair for the attackers.

The arrows from the fortress reached all the way to the beginning area of that path of despair, and the path was pretty narrow that less than ten battering rams or siege weapons could make it through. Furthermore, that path became even more narrow as you continued forward to the point that it was impossible to properly attack the castle.

It also did not help that the gate was completely made of steel, making it difficult to tell how long they would need to ram at the door for it to break.

Runa continued to think.

‘Even if we use Orca-nim’s magic to break the castle wall next to the gate instead, it would still be impossible to evade the rain of arrows that can cover the sky completely back. No, even if the castle gate is destroyed, how many of our warriors can really make it through at once’

The warriors could charge forward putting their lives on the line, but the pile of corpses will start to grow quickly, and even if the others climbed over the corpses to continue moving forward, it would quickly become a mountain of corpses. That damn gate was configured that way.

Runa naturally turned his gaze toward the mountains and cliffs on either side. He then slowly shook his head. That was impossible. Even if a small team somehow managed to successfully climb it, the gate had wickedly build watchtowers around the mountain ranges in the off chance that they managed to find a

path up the cliffs. This prevented them from even considering climbing the cliffs.

The defense of Henkel Gate was pretty much perfect. With that being the case, there really was not anything Runa could do.

He even wanted to cry to the heavens and ask how such a rough mountain range that is difficult for people to cross could exist in the middle of a plain.

Their only choice was to wait for the enemy to give up the gate and come out to battle.

But what kind of idiotic commander would give up the gate that guarantees their victory and come out to fight?

But even if they were confident in their own abilities and came out, as long as they left about 5,000 soldiers to protect the gate, it would be almost impossible to break through it even with 100,000 warriors.

‘Who knows, maybe they don’t have enough arrows or rocks

Runa thought about that before starting to laugh. Their enemy was extremely prepared to the point that they built watchtowers in the mountains, so how would they forget to prepare such basic necessities as arrows or rocks? It was a laugh to scoff at himself for even considering that might happen.

They had the Glow whose martial arts transcended everyone’s imaginations, as well as a strong group of warriors called the Red Storm. They even had tens of thousands of warriors who were stronger than the soldiers of the continent. Finally, they had him, someone that even the Glow, who was the overall commander, trusted with all of his heart. But for them to face a battle they could still not win.

‘No! No! There has to be a way.’

Runa vigorously shook his head as he got rid of the negative

thoughts and tried to calm himself down.

There had to be a method somewhere. A method to at least make this half of the plains perfectly under Pareia's control.

Runa had to do everything he could to come up with that method.

Tenth month in the year 262 of the Continental calendar.

An year had already passed since the fires of the continental war started to burn.

The Silence Empire and the Rojini Kingdom. The war between these two powerhouses drew in all of the nations of the Eastern continent. That was how strong the influences of the two nations were in the Eastern continent.

There was no way there would be any neutral nations as both sides found it easier to consider anyone who wasn't an ally to be an enemy.

The situation slowly started to turn in the Rojini Kingdom's favor.

The reason for that was of course the impact of Pareia. Nobody had expected this desert tribe to completely pressure the Silence Empire. But after seeing it happen, they had to believe it.

For example, Master Spotch, one of the strongest cards of the Silence Empire, was not sent to battle with the Rojini Kingdom. Seeing that he was instead sent to take care of Pareia, people could see the level of impact Pareia was having on the Silence Empire.

But the Silence Empire was not being completely oppressed by the Rojini Kingdom because of their large number of soldiers and talented individuals.

Pareia's unit was covered in silence that it was difficult to tell they had just achieved a victory. No, everyone had happy expressions on their faces, but it was not as rowdy as usual?

Normally, Pareia showered the warriors with food and alcohol after winning a large battle, but for some reason, that was not the case this time.

‘We will reward the warriors for the sweat and blood that was shed after we take control of the plains.’

While the cheer of victory was ringing across the battlefield, the lead warriors shared the Glow’s words with the veteran warriors and the warriors under their command.

None of them had any issues with it. They all believed that the Glow must have his reasons for acting this way.

With all of the warriors completely believing that ‘our Glow is a Glow who always puts the warriors first,’ they did not find any issues with this odd response from their Glow.

“I still feel like it is too much to not do any type of celebration. We did achieve a large victory.”

As Yulian looked around at the warriors before sharing his thoughts, Runa quickly responded.

“The Empire will not sit still. In their point of view, the fact that they lost this region to us is a shock in itself. If they leave it like this, the morale of their soldiers will take a hit. That is why I am certain that they will make a move. We cannot be careless.”

“That is why I felt like we should be raising the warriors’ morales even more.”

“We would do that if this was the desert, but this is still a foreign land for us. Their morale may go up, but they will lower their guards. It will not be too late to celebrate after we take our goal of the Henkel Plains. The Henkel Plains is right in front of us, Glow.”

“You are right, but

Yulian knew what Runa was saying was right, but he was feeling iffy about it because he knew what the warriors liked and enjoyed

the most.

“Our first priority is to defend against the Empire’s attack that will come. We need to strengthen the defenses around the Fedore region and make sure we do not lose the trust of the people living here. Thankfully, Count Terros who was the lord of this region does not seem to have been an outstanding lord. At least that is what I think since all of the citizens are so quiet since we took over.”

“According to Edwin, other than the Rojini Kingdom and a few other smaller kingdoms, the rest of the nations have a significant wealth gap between the general population and the nobility. But it really is too calm.”

“We let the citizens and merchants move freely, and ordered the lead warriors to make sure the warriors don’t cause any issues. The citizens might actually feel more uncomfortable because it is different than other wars.”

When the enemy took over a region during war, the commander of the winning side usually turned a blind eye to the actions of the soldiers to a degree. They probably did that to give the soldiers the joys of victory and keep their morale up, but Pareia’s warriors did not act like that in the first place.

For the warriors, war was a necessary even for the protection of the tribe, not to fill their own personal greed. In addition, the lead warriors had already reminded them multiple times to stay in their respective areas, so they shouldn’t lose the trust of the people in the Fedore region because of that.

“It wouldn’t be bad to pick a representative of each village and speak with them. They will have a representative in the future like ouf chiefs or chieftains after all.”

“I have already commanded them to gather the representatives. You should be able to meet with them in a few days.”

Yulian nodded his head with satisfaction after hearing that Runa had already made the preparations.

Book 5-10.2

Haisha entered the room at that moment and respectfully greeted Yulian. Yulian asked Haisha about the situation.

“So, how does it look?”

“Yes. As expected, the infantry took the most damage. Two thousand have died while three thousand others are wounded. The pirma riding warriors similarly had approximately one thousand dead and fifteen hundred wounded. The warriors with significant injuries were sent to the shamans and the people of this area called the priests to be healed, while the ones with small injuries were just given emergency treatment and ordered to rest.”

“Hmm~.”

Yulian let out a long sigh at Haisha’s report. The warriors were the life of Pareia. However, they had already lost three thousand and had close to five thousand warriors injured after the first battle.

Although it was a complete victory where less than three thousand of the enemy’s thirty thousand soldiers made it back, he could not take it lightly.

The people of the continent would give birth to thousands of new babies overnight, and half of them will be male. However, that was not the case for Pareia. The lives of each of Pareia’s warriors was worth more than even fifty of the soldiers here.

“What about the Red Storm and the cavalry?”

“Pansy got a small injury to his thigh and the cavalry had approximately five hundred dead and wounded.”

“The cavalry’s damage was less than the pirma brigade.”

Haisha nodded his head and explained the reason.

“In this flat plain, there was a significant amount of difference in

the speed of the pirmas and the cavalry. In addition, they seemed to have taken less damage as the Red Storm was in front of them.”

Yulian took a deep breath to calm himself and forced himself to smile as he spoke.

“Mm, Pansy must not have trained enough. How could he be injured fighting the general infantry?”

“He is currently being ridiculed by everyone.”

Seeing Haisha also laugh and respond lessened the heavy atmosphere in the room a bit.

“Do not worry too much. The next battle should not have as many casualties as this one.”

As Runa confidently answered from the side, Haisha looked toward Runa and started to speak.

“Runa-nim, isn’t this your first war with our Red Storm?”

“Yes it is.”

“I am looking forward to seeing Runa-nim’s amazing strategies.”

“I have already thought about what to do.”

They had spent a lot of time together, but Runa’s relationship with the Red Storm was still rocky.

The feelings died down as time went on, and Haisha knew very well that they would have lost at least five times the amount of warriors without Runa’s timely orders and new inventions to attack the continent, but it wasn’t easy to release a deep grudge so easily.

‘I need to make sure Runa and the Red Storm completely trust each other with this opportunity. If we can do that, that would be an absolutely wonderful blessing for our Pareia. If it continues like this, the Red Storm and Runa will clash some point in the future.’

Yulian thought that way internally, but this was the one problem

Yulian was not confident he could solve.

It was because he understood both of them so well. They were both just devoted to their mission.

“Yes Runa, is there something you have thought about it?”

“The core of this battle will be the Red Storm.”

Runa gave a short answer to Yulian’s question before opening up a large map on the table. There were large marks on the map that made it possible to know the location of the different landmarks.

“I took out the parts that I had even the slightly doubts about. I will need to scope out the terrain a little more as we have some time, but here is the basic breakdown of my plan.”

Runa pointed at the different marks with his finger as he shared his thoughts one by one with the two individuals.

“Hold on.”

Yulian made Runa stop talking at one point, and Haisha started to frown significantly at the same time.

“Runa.... if it is like this

Yulian hoped that he interpreted it wrong and started to speak, but Runa helped confirm that Yulian had it right.

“Yes. The Red Storm will be the bait.”

“Runa!”

As Yulian shouted out loudly, Runa looked toward Yulian with confusion.

“Yes, please speak, Glow.”

“You claim you want to use the Red Storm as bait, but isn’t this just putting the Red Storm in danger?”

“Glow, please do not treat me as such a petty fellow.”

“But this!”

“The Glow has a different role to play, so I will ask Haisha-nim who is the leader of the Red Storm. Haisha-nim, is this impossible? I created this plan because I believe that the Red Storm is capable of doing this. If you say it is impossible, I will make changes to the plan.”

Seeing Runa talking to him with a calm expression, Haisha could feel himself start to twitch.

And then that damn smirk and the words that continued to rile him up even more.

“I believe it was Thrint-nim who said to bring out a plan that was fitting for the Red Storm. What do you think? Should I make changes? If we get rid of some of our greed, it is possible.”

Haisha subconsciously shouted out loud.

“Just do as Runa-nim wishes to do. We will make it happen.”

“That is not good enough. If you do not have the confidence that you can certainly accomplish this, I need to make changes.”

“Runa!”

Yulian shouted from the side, but Haisha’s response was fast as well.

“Of course it is possible. If it is not the Red Storm, who else could successfully complete this task?”

‘We need to do it. No matter who was here talking to Runa right now, they would all answer the same way.’

Haisha took both of his hands and slapped himself. It was to stop the twitch in his face.

“Then I will put my trust in you. We still have a couple of days. Please go plan out with the rest of the Red Storm about how you can raise the chances that you can succeed.”

“I plan to do so.”

Haisha bowed to Yulian before quickly walking out of the paoe.

“Runa, just what are you thinking?”

As soon as Haisha left, Yulian asked in a slightly shaking voice. Runa started to smile toward Yulian.

“Wouldn’t it be more safer with my riling them up a bit like this?”

“But this is too much. I would understand if it was a location where the Red Storm can move freely, but even if it is the Red Storm, they cannot last that long while they are surrounded. No, it may be possible if all of them were there, but you want to cut that in half and only send thirty? This is impossible.”

“However, this is our only method if we want to completely take control of it. This is still not too late. Pareia will not have any issues with just this half of the plain.”

Runa’s inner thoughts were in turmoil right now as well. If Greatest Warriors Egane or Vibli were here, they wouldn’t need to do such a reckless move. No, he would at least not think about splitting up the Red Storm.

However, they needed warriors who would pierce through the enemy soldiers in order to draw out the enemy’s main unit.

The Red Storm warriors may all be extremely strong warriors, but none of them had the leadership that Vibli or Egane had to pierce through the enemies. That was why at least ten Red Storm warriors needed to stand in the vanguard. That was why he needed to split up the Red Storm.

“Is that the only way?”

“Yes. The gate is an amazing fortress. We have no way of taking it without taking any risks. In fact, something like this is only possible because the enemy commander is a knight named Spotch who is one of the Silence Empire’s masters. If it was just an average commander, we really would not have any method to take the

gate.”

Yulian started to contemplate things after hearing Runa’s words.

“What is the other method?”

“It is not really a strategy, but it is just building our own fortress in front of the gate. The enemy’s advantage will end up becoming our advantage. The Silence Empire needs to cross the gate in order to come to this side as well.”

“Runa, you mean?”

“If we manage to take control of the gate, not only will we be able to successfully pressure the Silence Empire, the Henkel Plains will completely become Pareia’s territory.”

“Mm~!”

Yulian let out a long moan before falling deep into thought. It was not an easy decision to make. A plain that could safely grow food, and a large number of people for the tribe. It might take them a while to get adjusted to the desert’s way of life, but it was only a matter of time. The people will be able to get out of the oppression of the nobles and be given more freedom in a better and safer environment, so it really shouldn’t be a problem.

Taking control of the entire Henkel Plains, and then continuing to take control of the mountainous Purez region if possible was the original agreement with the Rojini Kingdom.

“What are you thinking about so hard?”

“You’re here madam?”

Runa bowed toward the owner of the voice before offering her a seat. She was a woman, but she had earned his respect.

“Violet, are you done praying?”

“Yes, but what are you so worried about?”

As Runa explained everything that had happened, Violet seemed

to be thinking about something.

“Do you have any good ideas?”

Yulian saw that Violet was not frowning and quickly asked, knowing that she had some type of plan.

“Do not worry too much. Runa-nim’s plan will not have any issues.”

“How so?”

Violet put on a slight smile on her stoic expression as she answered.

“I will go with the Red Storm.”

Book 5-10.3

“I need only thirty of you who wants to die with me.”

The Red Storm warriors looked around at each other at Haisha's unexpected statement before asking why Haisha was acting so weird.

“Ah! I said it wrong. I need thirty of you who are confident you won't die.”

“Be more specific! What the hell does that mean? Why are you speaking nonsense in the middle of the night?”

Shubeon was the one to ask what everyone was thinking.

“Runa... Assistant Warrior's order and test for us. We will take over the gate with just thirty of us.”

“He's crazy!”

Shubeon's face turned pale as he shouted out loud. The first thing the Glow, Runa, the Greatest Warriors, and the Red Storm did after taking the Fedore region was to verify the infamous gate of the Henkel Plains with their own eyes.

All of their heads dropped at that time after looking at the small but mighty gate.

The Red Storm warriors had approached the gate both individually and as a group multiple times to try to find a way to take it.

However, none of them could come up with a method. The only thing they figured out was that the Red Storm was able to safely reach the wall of the Gate.

Shubeon shouted once more.

“Runa, that bastard has finally gone crazy. How dare he talk such nonsense like this.”

Thrint quieted everyone down before looking toward Haisha and asking a question.

“Haisha, explain in detail. Just what is going on?”

“Sigh.”

Haisha let out a short sigh before explaining everything that just happened with Yulian and Runa. All of the Red Storm warriors' expressions changed.

They also understood why Haisha said they were able to do it.

“If that is the only method, who else but the Red Storm would be able to do that?”

“Good job. There is no need to worry about it.”

All of them took Haisha's side before stepping forward to say they will take part in this mission.

“But isn't that expression about having confidence to not die too much? I don't think it fits us, Haisha. Hahaha.”

All of them started to laugh at one of the warrior's comment. After that, all of the warriors almost simultaneously stepped forward.

“Twenty of you will not take part. You will need to create the charge line with the other warriors.”

Seeing all of the Red Storm warriors stepping forward, Haisha reminded them about only needing thirty of them. This did not seem to do anything as none of them stepped back.

None of them wanted their comrades to go into danger.

In fact, they were all looking around, hoping that their friend would step back.

“Hey hey, don't worry. We won't die. So you step back.”

“That's what I wanted to say. So Shubeon, you step back.”

Another warrior responded to Shubeon's words, but Shubeon

shook his head as he answered.

“Isn’t it still a bit better for me to do it? I’ve always had great endurance.”

“You’re also just as good with charging through a formation, so step back. We need to reduce the burden on the Glow since Viblinim and Egane-nim are not here with us.”

“Is that the case? But isn’t it still better for me to go? Hahaha.”

Shubeon looked around before laughing once more.

Shubeon continued to laugh. The rest of them didn’t know what was funny, but laughter was contagious. All of the other warriors started to laugh as well.

“What is so funny, everyone?”

The owner of the voice that cut through the rough laughter of the men was none other than Violet.

“We greet Violet-nim.”

All of the Red Storm warriors bowed their heads and showed their respects to Violet.

She was someone who joined them in war as a woman. At the same time, she did not try to use her identity as a woman or as the Glow’s wife for any special treatment. She sweated with the warriors and raised their strength and morale with her incantations. Because of that, all of the warriors respected her as a warrior. That woman who earned their respect to have almost as much influence as the Mother of Pareia had shown up.

“All of you were laughing. Is there something funny going on?”

Haisha answered Violet’s question.

“It is nothing much. We were just letting out the jitters before heading out to battle. What brings you to visit us, Violet-nim?”

Violet started to smile as she answered.

“Did I come somewhere I should not have come?”

Haisha had a nervous gaze as he quickly shook his head and answered.

“No. Of course not. All warriors welcome Violet-nim’s visit.”

The news had already spread to all of the warriors that Violet helped remove the nervousness from the warriors before a battle, as well as the fact that she could bless them to feel stronger. In addition, although it was not perfect, she was also able to protect them against the enemy’s curses and magics that may fly at them from just about anywhere.

Haisha and the Red Storm thought Violet had come to visit them to bless them before the battle.

“Have you decided who will be going?”

However, her words made them feel like that was not the only reason she had come to visit them.

“We are discussing it right now.”

That was the only answer Haisha could give.

“Then may I watch from the side?”

“What?”

“I will be going with all of you.”

“You cannot do that!”

All of the warriors shouted at Violet’s response.

Once Marquis Spotch Rin Cullery arrived at the gate, he started to inspect the soldiers while also sending out a lot of scouts to keep tabs on the enemy’s movement.

Marquis Spotch was a master and had studied a lot of different strategies, and after having been involved with even the small scale battles for the empire and the allied nations, he truly could be considered a wise leader.

‘It prevents a lot of enemies from entering, but it also does not allow us to have a lot of defenders.’

That was Marquis Spotch’s first thoughts after taking a look around the Henkel Gate, this natural fortress that he had heard so much about.

The narrow width of the gate made it impossible for them to station a large number of soldiers around it.

Thankfully, the three tiered construction of the gate with higher and higher heights made it possible to station more troops than the enemy, as well as giving them the opportunity to station even more troops behind them. They would always have more troops than the attacking side.

Marquis Spotch looked out to the Henkel Plains that missed its opportunity to harvest the wheat and clicked his tongue. He was certain that the price of wheat would rise significantly next year. That was because this was not a war that will end in just a few days.

Although it did not matter to Marquis Spotch whether the price of wheat went up or not, as the commander during a war, he needed to pay attention to all of these small details. Rations were one of the most important necessities of war.

‘I am just glad that there are a significant amount of wheat that was purchased this year still remaining in the gate.’

Marquis Spotch thought about that before gathering a few knights and starting to inspect the area between the fortress and the start of the road of victory.

“You can start.”

Marquis Spotch gave the order and a knight signaled the flag bearers. Once they received the signal, the flag bearers quickly started to waive their flags in the air.

As the flags started to waive, tens of arrows started to fly from

the gate.

Ting. Ting. Ting.

As a couple of the knights knocked down some of the falling arrows, Marquis Spotch started to frown.

“The momentum behind the arrows is too weak. Have the archers not been trained properly?”

Viscount Stearthur, who was the defensive leader of Henkel Gate, had a look of disbelief as he answered.

“Not at all. The distance of our arrows is fifty meters. The distance between the fortress and this area is around seventy meters. Our current archers are all veteran archers. That is the only reason they are able to send their arrows this far. To be honest, at this distance, the arrows are just an obstacle. If the enemy gets a bit closer to the gate, they will be able to do significant damage.”

Marquis Spotch was not annoyed at the fact that Viscount Stearthur, someone many ranks lower than him, made toward him. It was because he was a Marquis who knew that a knight like Stearthur was the type of knight you needed in war.

“I like it. Please let me know if there is anything else I need to know.”

“Just in case the enemy sends small detachments to climb through the mountain and hit the side of the fortress, we have put watchtowers on the mountain ranges on either side of the fortress.”

“It is a good amount of preparation.”

“We prepared it just in case it was needed. There are not many archers in the watchtowers, but it should be enough as the enemy will need to send a small detachment in order to invade through the mountains. It should be able to completely seal off the line that could be used to attack through the mountains”

“Anything else?”

“Originally, we planned on putting a watchtower in the middle of the road of victory to fend off the front area as well, but

Book 5-10.4

Marquis Spotch finished Stearthur's sentence.

"But if you do that, the enemy could use their numbers of siege weapons to destroy the watchtower. Or, even worse, the watchtower may be taken by the enemy, giving you an even bigger headache."

"Yes. You are right. That was why we only installed it around the fortress."

"That was the right decision."

"We also took into consideration about the situation where a siege weapon manages to make its way in and have created small traps across the road. They are easily visible, but they will end up taking a lot of damage from our archers if they try to fill the traps."

Marquis Spotch nodded his head.

"That is also very good. You prepared quite a bit."

"Shouldn't a knight who is not in the front lines at least make this type of preparations properly? Although this area has now become the front lines."

Marquis Spotch had a pretty satisfied expression on his face as he started to speak.

"We will use the gate to give those barbarians a significant hit. After that, I will give you the position of vanguard when we go over to reclaim the Fedore region. If we also manage to take back Fedore, come with me to the front lines. I will help you."

Viscount Stearthur was very happy.

He had managed to take charge of the Henkel Gate because his abilities were respected, but Stearthur thought he did not deserve to be stuck somewhere like this. His battlefield was beyond this gate in his eyes.

If Marquis Spotch, the most respected master of the Empire recommended him and took him to the front lines with him, he would be able to show everything he has had to suppress until now.

“Thank you very much, Marquis Spotch-nim.”

“Good. Now we just have to wait for those barbarians to attack. If we break their morale and counterattack, it is an easy trek to Fedore.”

Spotch Rin Cullery had a look of confidence on his face as he turned to look toward the plains where the enemy was located.

Tom, who was shooting arrows from the first wall of the famous three-walls of Henkel Gate, was thinking that his luck was extremely terrible.

If he was lucky, he would be stationed at the impregnable third wall.

“What the hell are they doing?”

Tom looked out at what was going on in the plains before mumbling in confusion.

At first, he thought they were installing a siege weapon. It was, after all, the most effective weapon to attack the gate that he was defending.

However, believing that the weapon will be destroyed long before it arrived at the gate, and also believing that his luck was not so bad that he would be killed by an unexpected boulder flung toward the gate, Tom was not too worried.

Maybe they were trying to make fun of Tom’s speculation, but it was not a siege weapon. It was not high, but slowly, a wall was being built in front of Henkel Gate.

“I just can’t figure out what those barbarians are thinking.”

Count Shaibong, who had followed to assist Marquis Spotch,

started to mumble to himself while watching the wall starting to be built on the other side. Viscount Stearthur answered his question.

“Isn’t it obvious? They don’t dare to hit our gate so they are trying to restrict our movement.”

“So they are building a castle wall in the middle of a war?”

“It is because they know the few situations that would make us open the gate and head out.”

One of the disadvantages and potential weakness of Henkel Gate was that each of the three iron gates of the fortress were tall and heavy beyond comparison. Their size and weight made it take over an hour to close it back once they opened the gate.

Although it was true that they would still be able to defend a good amount of the enemy’s attack even if the gate was opened, it was not a good idea once you thought about the potential crisis that may arise.

“We will need to secure the entrance region.”

As Marquis Spotch coldly answered after looking around, Count Shaibong agreed with him.

“Yes. However, I am worried that we are unable to anticipate any of the enemy’s movement.”

Even if our formation is broken because of the enemy’s counterattack, we just have to come back. We should not need to worry about that.”

Marquis Spotch turned his head to glare at Viscount Stearthur.

“You think I will fall to those barbarians’ attack?”

It was only then that Viscount Stearthur realized his mistake. He could not say something like that as long as Marquis Spotch was the commander.

“Of course not. I am just trying to prepare for all potential

situations.”

“Something like that will never happen.”

“Of course not.”

Viscount Stearthur reminded himself to watch his words from now on as he answered. Marquis Spotch gave his order at this time.

“Prepare the knights and the cavalry for battle. Once the two groups start to take control of the area, Count Shaibong will immediately head out and start to surround the area and create a defensive formation. Do not forget that the enemy is very mobile.”

“I will do as you commanded.”

Knowing that the enemy had a cavalry and rode pirkas which were 0.5 times larger than horses, Marquis Spotch decided to forego the infantry and just only the knights and cavalry to secure the area.

“What will you do about the gate defense?”

Spotch thought for a moment after Stearthur’s question.

‘We will not need troops stationed here if we take the area in front of us. Once we secure that area, we will need a lot of heavy armored soldiers to counter their mobility. However, if we can defeat them and push them back to the Fedore region quickly, they might launch a surprise attack on the gate.’

Marquis Spotch weighed the options before finally answering.

“With 5,000 soldiers, you should be able to defend against any surprise attacks even if I am not here. At least until I return that is.”

“That should be enough.”

Marquis Spotch had a satisfied expression after Stearthur’s response and ordered Stearthur to continue to defend the gate as he prepared for his campaign.

‘We will instantly secure this front area and prepare for the enemy’s detached forces.’

Marquis Spotch believed that the barbarians would not be able to hold off an attack of a well-trained knights brigade and cavalry. He was confident. Especially since he, a master of the Empire, was going to be in the front leading them.

“They are coming out.”

Yulian started to mumble after seeing dust start to appear by the gate.

“They need to come out.”

Runa started to smile as he answered.

“Didn’t they choose to walk out with their own two feet? Everything will go naturally. And with the enemy commander being a master, he must be full of confidence.”

“I hope the gate’s defense is a small amount of soldiers.....”

“If a lot do not come out, we just need to eat up the ones that came out first.”

Yulian had a worried expression on his face after Runa spoke.

He was confident about battling, but in order to take control of the gate’s door and distract the enemy archers, Violet and the Red Storm were going to charge through the gate that had thousands of soldiers with just thirty people. He was worried about Violet and the Red Storm.

“Do not worry too much, Glow. Each of the Red Storm are at the level of the enemy’s masters. Plus, isn’t Violet-nim with them? It is pretty much already decided.”

“True, but it does not change the fact that I am worried.”

“It will go as planned.”

Runa was answering confidently, but secretly, he too was worried.

This one battle would decide whether they take the gate or receive a significant damage to the Red Storm and Violet. They might even lose all of them.

Just one battle.

The curtain started to lift in the battle for the Henkel Gate.

CONTINUED TO THE END

Book 6

Book 6-1.1

The Decisive Battle of Henkel

The battle of Henkel Plains.

It became a war of legend.

“Charge.”

Marquis Spotch ordered the troops to charge as soon as the door of the gate opened. Based on what he knew of the enemy, he thought that their infantry will be pretty awkward, and he could now be sure that his hypothesis was correct.

What he needed to be wary of was not the enemy infantry but the approximately three thousand cavalry.

“Knight Asus.”

“Yes, sir.”

As the knight answered from the right of Spotch, Spotch didn’t even turn his head as he gave the command.

“As soon as we get out of the Road of Victory, take thirty cavalry and move out to the left. The enemy cavalry and pirms are not visible. Find them.”

“I understand, Marquis-nim.”

“Knight Pront.”

“Yessir.”

“Same thing as Knight Asus. Move out to scout the right side once we get out of the Road of Victory.”

“It shall be done as you commanded.”

Marquis Spotch gave orders to his subordinate knights to cover the sides as they rode forward at full speed.

“The enemy’s formation is not that great. We will charge

through instantly and make room for the infantry to set up.”

Once the leaders heard their commander’s orders, they urged their sections to move even faster.

Around 100 knights and 5,000 cavalry had their first clash with Pareia’s warriors less than five minutes after the entrance to Henkel Gate was opened.

The charge really was like lightning.

Neither the knights nor the cavalry of the knight’s brigade did not even dream that those barbarians would manage to stop their charge.

The one leading them was a master like Spotch, and the knights following right behind him were the Blue Blooded Knights and Marquis Spotch’s personal subordinates, both groups said to be some of the best in the entire Empire.

In addition, there was nothing that 5,000 cavalry could not charge through. They might be worried a bit if the enemy was the Rojini Kingdom, but their enemy was just the barbarians from the desert.

As expected, no, the enemy did manage to hold on longer than they expected, but the barbarians’ formation started to quickly break down.

“Send the signal.”

Spotch and the knights completely broke down Pareia’s formation before ordering a signal to be sent to the Gate.

The magician who had stuck right behind Spotch and had chanted all sorts of defensive magic started to send the signal to his fellow magician at the gate.

Even though a conversation was impossible at this distance, it was not difficult to exchange preset signals. The magician accurately delivered Spotch’s message, and 30,000 infantry

soldiers poured out of the gate to verify the message was received.

The infantry quickly set up fences and traps in the area that their ally cavalry had cleared for them. At the same time, the remaining warriors from Pareia started to retreat as they were worried for their lives.

A bit later, a large number of pirma riding warriors appeared in the rear.

‘As expected.’

Marquis Spotch was thinking that it was as he had expected.

“I’m sure they were thinking about surrounding us while we were charging through the formation here. Their numbers seem to be over 20,000 while we are barely over 5,000.”

Spotch leisurely looked toward them while explaining to his subordinate knights. One of the tasks of a leader was to explain a bit of strategy and tactics during calm moments of a war.

“But they seem to have looked down on us too much. The cavalry and infantry here did hold on for a decent amount of time, but we managed to set up our defense before the rest of their troops were able to surround us.”

Spotch nodded his head and answered.

“I’m sure they are getting anxious right now.”

“How could Count Terros have lost the Fedore region to those barbarians?”

“The Lord of Fedore, Count Terros and his knights are not terrible, but they have lived too peacefully in the rear. In the end, they were not able to fend off those barbarians and lost their castle.”

“But it is also true that we are much stronger than Count Terros and his knights.”

One of the knights proudly answered.

You should not be egotistical, but he felt like it was okay to say that much. They had gone through this monster-like Master Spotch's difficult trainings.

"You are right. All of you are different."

Marquis Spotch did not scold the knight either, and agreed. His long war experience let him know that even that type of excessive confidence was required at a time like this.

"The enemy is starting to set up their formation once again."

"Where are our Heavy Armor Infantry?"

"All of them are ready. The enemy will not be able to charge through and just end up dying by our spears."

"Everyone to your locations! The important thing for us is HOW we win. Do not forget that our real enemy is not those barbarians. We need to return with as many soldiers as possible in order to cut the life out of those damn Rojini bastards."

All of the knights had confident expressions after hearing Marquis Spotch's words. They all headed back to their locations.

Phew phew phew phew.

The moment he thought the enemy cavalry was going to move, Spotch started to frown at the numerous arrows flying their way instead.

"For being barbarians, their archers have been trained well. They can shoot quite far."

Arrows endlessly continued to fly at them, however, Spotch did not give any special orders. Arrows will run out eventually, and the Heavy Armor Infantry's shields and armor prevented serious damage from happening. As expected, the enemy's arrows started to dwindle as time went on, and they started to fix up their formation.

"Oowoooooooo~"

They then heard a odd shout before a straight line of cavalry with infantry behind them started to rush out from Pareia's side.

“Those idiots. They are trying to pierce through an area that has already set up its defensive formation ... Kight Lust, Kaios.”

Spotch clicked his tongue at Pareia's stupidity before calling a few knights over to take some cavalry to go around to the left and right to attack from the side. Spotch would personally lead the Heavy Armor Infantry and 500 cavalry to defend against the enemy's charge.

‘The moment the enemy's formation starts to break down and Knight Pront and Asus confirm there are no hidden enemies on the sides, we will move forward.’

Spotch started to smile as if he had already won.

As a veteran of one hundred battles, he was suspicious at the fact that things were going so well, but he didn't think he was being conceited.

The enemy held off better than he had expected, and other than this useless charge line in front of them right now, the way the enemy used their archers was quite advanced as well. But it was clearly visible to him that the enemy had never gone against Heavy Armor Infantry before.

“Since they said that the castle walls and gate at Fedore were destroyed by the enemy's magic, they were unable to prevent the enemy's cavalry and pirma warriors from charging through. So this should be the first time the enemy has fought against Heavy Armor infantry.’

Spotch started to smile once more.

He reaffirmed his belief that it was just a matter of time to send those barbarians back to their lands.

“I hope they fall for it. If not, I will not be able to forgive myself, Runa.”

Runa did not move his eyes from the battle as he responded to Yulian's extremely heavy voice.

"There is no way they will not fall for it if the enemy is brave and smart. I do not believe that a master of the Empire will be dumb."

The straight line of cavalry that led Pareia's charge was instantly broken down, and the warriors started to fight against the spear soldiers. The warriors must have been able to show their strength in this physical battle, as the Empire's front lines started to break down.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

The sound of drums could be heard from the Empire's formation before their cavalry moved to the front and started to kill the warriors.

"All units, charge."

Yulian bit down on his lips before ordering the prepared warriors to charge once more. He really wanted to stand in the front and destroy the enemy's formation.

"You must hold back. In order to make it better for us in the future, you need to hold back now so that we can reduce the amount of sacrificed warriors in the future."

Runa also had a pale expression as he urged Yulian to hold back.

They could see the blood pour out from every fallen warrior. They would be able to instantly destroy that defensive line if Yulian and the remaining twenty Red Storm warriors made their move.

However, the war would return to a stalemate if the enemy returned to the gate. They needed to hold back and hold back some more, in order to take the gate.

Suddenly, the enemy's cavalry started to attack from both sides, leading Pareia's formation to start to crumble. Pareia was being

completely overwhelmed right now.

“Glow, it is time.”

Yulian started to run toward the battlefield almost instantly. He had been waiting for this moment. He needed to run as fast as possible and kill at least one more enemy soldier to save as many of his warriors as possible.

The moment Yulian and the Greatest Warriors joined the battle, Pareia’s formation started to quickly recover.

“I am the Glow of Pareia!”

Book 6-1.2

Yulian shouted out loud like a wild animal as he endlessly swung the two greatswords in his hands. Each time he swung his sword, two to three of the enemy soldiers were killed, automatically opening up a path in front of him.

At the end of that path was Master Spotch.

Spotch could intuitively feel it as well. He could tell that the enemy's formation was going through a big change.

"I will kill you and obliterate everyone who came with you."

Yulian lifted up the greatsword in his left hand as he pointed toward Spotch and shouted.

"Hmph, apparently even barbarians can speak the language of the continent."

Spotch snorted as he started to walk over as well.

The two men's auras started to shoot toward each other.

Both of them clenched their fists strongly as they stood up straight to not give each other any openings.

"Oowooooooooo~!"

"Yaaaaaaaaaap~!"

The two commanders shouted once they felt like they were close enough to each other and started to quickly run toward each other.

Yulian's ki and Spotch's mana were wrapped around their individual weapons as they clashed.

"I will kill you to console the souls of the dead warriors!"

"I will teach you that you should just play with the sand in your puny desert."

Spotch was a sword master. In addition, he was a knight among knights.

He had a mental fortitude as high as his strength, and normally, he was a knight who was focused on being respectful to everyone. However, for some reason, he could not be that way right now.

He clashed his sword against someone else without even revealing his identity.

But Spotch's mind was only full of the thought of defeating Yulian that he could not pay attention to anything else.

Booooooooooom!

Another loud thunderous noise rang out as the two men's battle became more intense. Both Pareia's warriors and the Empire's soldiers could not even turn to look toward the two men's battle.

The two men's battle would be what you would call fierce.

Spotch wildly swung his sword to pressure Yulian back, but Yulian was able to defend well against Spotch's attack.

- You must not kill him.

Yulian thought about parrying Spotch's attack and slicing his neck off. Spotch was only at about Thrint's level of skill. However, he remembered Runa's words and just barely managed to make this sword miss.

‘What was that?’

Spotch felt a sudden fear before it suddenly disappeared. He stopped his attack for a moment and looked toward Yulian.

“Huff ... huff...”

Yulian was sweating a lot and having a hard time breathing. Yulian was having quite the trouble forcing himself to sweat.

Spotch felt like something was weird, but he would have found the thought of losing to that barbarian to be even weirder. He then started to attack Yulian once more.

Yulian slowly weakened his attack like someone who was

running out of stamina, before retreating as if he could not take anymore. He then shouted toward his warriors.

“Retreat! All units retreat!”

The lead warriors who had already made up their resolves led their warriors to retreat, making their formation look a bit weak as they moved.

Spotch started to think while looking at the retreating Pareia’s warriors.

‘What an amazing bastard. If we cannot catch him this time ...I may not be able to move to the front lines.’

Spotch believed that he was right. For someone to fight him, one of the continent’s highest ranking masters, almost evenly, the enemy’s level was definitely at the master level. As long as a master has shown up, there would be too much damage if another master did not face off against him.

He could finally start to figure out why the Fedore region fell so easily. The enemy, no, at least the enemy commander, had enough abilities to make that happen.

“Marquis-nim.”

At that moment, Knight Pront and Knight Asus who had gone to scout the sides returned.

“How did it go?”

Spotch quickly asked.

“We ran quite a bit to the left but did not see any hidden enemies.”

“We did the same to the right but there were no signs of the enemy either.”

Spotch thought for a moment about the two knights’ reports before calling over the knights and leaders to give his command.

“Infantry move in the center while the cavalry spreads out to the left and right. We will chase after the enemy. I do not mind if we move slower; make sure that your formation stays tight as we move.”

The Silence Empire’s army started to move forward at Spotch’s command.

I don’t know whether it is because they kept winning or it is because they are not trained properly, but the enemy has no order as retreat. That means that we cannot miss this opportunity.’

Marquis Spotch’s eyes started to sparkle as he watched the backs of the retreating Pareia warriors.

“I’m relieved.”

“The enemy has enough abilities to do that.”

Yulian gave his command once Runa responded.

“All units, retreat without even looking back. Lead warriors, pay special attention to your formations.”

A chase on the wide plains started with Pareia’s warriors being chased by the Silence Empire’s military.

It was not that difficult to remain hiding in the middle of the plains. It was possible because they were not a large army; there were only thirty of them.

“The scouts have returned to the main unit.”

As one of the Red Storm members with the greatest eyesight notified them, Haisha turned his head toward the enemy’s main unit before quietly answering.

“Not yet. We need to at least wait until the main unit gets far away from here. Let’s plan on starting in four hours.”

The Red STorm warriors nodded their heads as they leisurely laid back down.

“Make sure to save your stamina. Today will be a long and even longer day.”

Even without Shubeon mentioning it, everyone had already taken out their dried meat and started to eat. They were starting to prepare for the upcoming events of the day.

“Violet-nim, please eat some of this.”

As Haisha offered Violet some meat, Violet started to smile as she responded.

“Thank you. Unfortunately, I am not allowed to eat anything right now.”

“Ah! Yes.”

Haisha retrieved his outstretched hand with an embarrassed expression before sitting back down. Violet looked toward the warriors and started to speak.

“All of you truly are amazing warriors. This Violet, will trust all of you and do everything I can to help.”

“There is no need to do that. We will quickly crush all of the enemies. Violet-nim can just sit back and watch.”

As Shubeon smiled and answered, Violet started to smile as well.

“Hohoho, fine then. I will sing the song of courage for everyone except Shubeon-nim.”

“Uh uh ... that was not what I meant

“Pfft.”

“Hahaha.”

The warriors and Violet all started to laugh to lessen their anxiety. Even though the speech was dull and boring.

“Anyways, I really wonder how the counts who are knights of the continent could fight wearing these heavy armors.”

One of the warriors lifted up their arms while starting to speak.

The sunlight that bounced off the iron plates made the armor look cool. They had gathered these after the last battle. Originally, they were planning on melting it all to make weapons, but they had brought it from the rear just for this strategy.

All of them were the highest quality because they were originally worn by the Fedore region's knights. But to the Red Storm warriors, it was just too much and too heavy.

"In return, it is pretty useful when you think about a charging cavalry. It should be able to handle a stray arrow or a weak attack."

"That is not our fighting style. The enemy will not be able to even get near us."

Haisha interjected into the warriors' conversation.

"You can individually decide how to best use the armor once we enter the gate. But in my opinion, it would probably be better to have it on because we will have arrows pouring on us this time. It might be straining, but it will help us not have to pay attention to the trivial things."

"But do we even need to worry about the arrows with Violet-nim here?"

The reason Violet was involved with this battle was so that she could use her incantations to block off the arrows and increase the chances of the Red Storm warriors' survival and their success.

She won't be able to obstruct the archers too much from a far distance, but once they enter the gate, she should be able to easily destroy the archers' bows.

"It might feel weird, but put it on. This time, it is not a battle where we are charging forward on our pirms or horses. Even we cannot defend against all of these arrows. In addition, must Violet-nim use her power to kill people? It is better if we can do all the killing if possible."

As Thrint stoically answered from the side, none of the warriors

could say anything else.

“I wish to reduce the burdens on your shoulder in any way I can, so please fight in your most confident form. Just remember that I should be able to buy you some time to at least catch your breath.”

All of the warriors decided to put the armor on after hearing Violet’s words. To be honest, this much weight did not put much strain on them anyways.

It was just that their movement was a bit restricted while wearing it, but the goal of this mission was destroying the device that moves the gate’s entrance and holding on until the Glow arrived. They didn’t need any specific strategy for it.

Silence filled the area. Even these warriors who were said to not have any fear did have some fear deep inside their hearts.

They knew that it really would be a long, long day.....

They all had the fear that all of them really may die today.

But they still had to do it. They were the only ones who could do it.

While everyone was preparing to do their best, the sun started to set over the plains. Around three hours must have passed from earlier.

“It is time to move.”

Once Haisha got up and informed them, all of them got up and got on their horses.

“I believe all of you do not have any doubts either. As long as we persist, the Glow will come.”

All of them had confident expressions on their faces after Haisha’s words.

“We are the Red Storm. Let’s show our strength to that arrogant bastard Runa!”

“Oowooooo!”

The Red Storm ignited their courage, even forgetting that Violet was beside them.

“Time to go!”

“Oowooooo!”

“We will persist!”

“Oowooooo!”

“Let’s go! Let’s show them who we are!”

The Red Storm warriors all started to move their horses forward.

Book 6-1.3

“What is that?”

As tens of cavalry rushed in through the Road of Victory, Sentane, who had been stationed as an archer at Henkel Gate for the past fifteen years, started to get nervous. Based on their outfits, they were their allies, not the barbarians.

“There’s no way they were all killed and those are the only survivors?”

Sentane mumbled to himself in disbelief as he started to shake his head.

“This damned mouth of mine.”

Sentane tried to focus on the approaching cavalry.

‘That much equipment should meant they are at the knight level. Why are they rushing forward in such a large group?’

Sentane thought like that, and the other archers thought like that as well. Even the person responsible for the castle wall and the person responsible for the castle gate all thought the same thing.

That was why the cavalry was able to safely kill the tens of soldiers around the castle gate and destroy the pulley system that controls the entrance to the gate.

“It’s the enemy!”

Sentane turned pale as he shouted out loud.

“I can see a dust cloud.”

A Red Storm warrior named Melruta saw the dust cloud in the distance and started to shiver.

Behind him were his Red Storm peers, along with 2,000 warriors who were also looking in the same direction with stiff expressions. On the other side were ten members of the Red Storm as well as

another 2,000 warriors looking at the same location.

“Everyone prepare to charge.”

The warriors instantly moved to the charging formation.

If they cannot wipe out the enemy, the rest of their Red Storm peers who were attacking the gate would be in danger. Melruta and the other Red Storm warriors opened their eyes wider than ever before, and could feel the strength throughout their body.

“Charge!”

“Oowooooo~!”

“Waaaaaaaah~!”

The cries of the warriors and the Red Storm echoed throughout the plains as they rushed forward at full speed.

“As expected, there was an ambush waiting for us in the middle.”

Spotch had a look of confirmation on his face as he heard the enemy shouting from the left and right.

He was thinking that this was too easy based on the strength of the enemy commander.

Spotch looked to the left and right before leisurely giving an order.

“Knights will lead the cavalry and defend against the enemy ambush to the left and the right. Archers support the cavalry, and the infantry First Brigade will slow down the chase and try to go around and surround the ambushers. Second and Third brigade set up defensive formations to prevent the enemy’s counterattack.”

The formation already had infantry in the front, archers in the back, and cavalry to both sides, and since they focused on maintaining the formation instead of trying to move as fast as possible, the empire’s soldiers quickly and efficiently switched their formation.

“Archers, fire when ready. Cavalry, charge! You cannot be pushed back until the infantry can take care of the sides and the rear.”

Spotch used mana to make sure his men could hear the command, before taking a look at both sides and turning his horse to the left where the battle seemed to be fiercer. He was planning on instantly taking down the enemy.

“All units, halt! Fix your formation!”

Yulian shouted urgently as soon as they left the ambush area. Although there was no way they would fail the charge with the Red Storm in the vanguard, you never knew what might happen. In addition, if you consider the fact that the enemy commander was at Thrint’s level of strength, you had to prepare for the just in case situations.

The lead warriors started to shout to get their subordinate warriors in formation.

Pareia’s extremely disheveled appearance was really just a formation that would allow them to quickly change to a charging formation. Pareia’s warriors almost instantly changed formations and started their counterattack.

Until Yulian arrived back at the battlefield, neither the left nor the right group of Pareia’s warriors had managed to take down the enemy. The enemy knights were pretty strong, and the west side seemed to even be getting pushed back because the enemy commander was personally handling that side.

“All units, charge.”

In order to go against the Silence Empire’s Heavy Armor Infantry, the archers approached the enemy and started to fire their arrows. With their cavalry already engaged with Pareia to the left and right, there was no way to stop the archers with just the Heavy Armor Infantry alone.

Pssh. Pssh. Pssh.

The Heavy Armor Infantry started to fall one by one to the arrows. It was hard for the archers to show their might in the first battle because of the far distance, but that was not the case this time.

At least one of three arrows were getting lodged into an enemy soldier.

The moment the Heavy Armor Infantry's firm and dense formation started to break down, the warriors that were trained to take on the Heavy Armor Infantry ran forward, while the rest of the pirma riding warriors spread out to the sides to flank them.

"The enemy is starting to falter. Kill them all."

As the lead warriors recognized that they were taking the advantage and started to shout, the pirma riding warriors started to attack the Heavy Armor Infantry from a diagonal.

Their armor might be strong, but a trained shamshir on top of a pirma basically ignored the armor as they took the Heavy Armor Infantry down one by one, before stomping them with their pirmas.

Once the 5,000 warriors from the flanks completely pierced through the Heavy Armor Infantry line, it was pretty one sided from there.

"We will go reinforce the center. Leave the battle here to the infantry. Pirma riding warriors, get into formation."

10,000 warriors got into formation at Yulian's command.

Based on Yulian's observation, there were not many enemy infantry soldiers left on this side, so the remaining warriors should be able to hold down this side without any issue. That was why he left a Greatest Warrior in charge before personally taking the 10,000 warriors and heading to the chaotic central area.

“I am here!”

Yulian shouted out loudly as he tried to boost the morale of the warriors who were having trouble in the center.

The right part of the center had a slight advantage while the left part was definitely being pushed back. Yulian's shout made the right side start to push forward even faster, while the left side started to stop being pushed back and held their position.

Based on Yulian's observation, the enemy's knights and cavalry were in charge of the majority of the battle. The infantry were next to them, slowly increasing the pressure to support the knights and the cavalry.

“Hit the center and then merge to both sides. Go~ warriors of Pareia.”

As Yulian lifted up his greatsword high into the air and gave the command, the warriors shouted out in response and started to charge.

Yulian split apart from the formation on his own and rushed toward the warriors who were having trouble.

The Silence Empire's infantry tried to block him after seeing him split off on his own, but three to four of them started to fall with each swing of his blade, creating path for Yulian.

“Uma, what is your shamshir that is stained in sweat doing? Sharu, why are you hesitating when you are the most vicious of the Red Storm? What are you all doing? I commanded you to charge through the enemy formation!”

Yulian finally got to the front and started to call out each of the Red Storm warriors' names and shouted at them. The Red Storm warriors started to bite down on their lips until they started to bleed, as they started to crazily swing their greatswords.

With Yulian also joining in and instantly slashing one of the enemy knights, the warriors' morale shot right back up.

While the situation did not instantly change, Pareia's warriors were now slowly starting to push forward.

Spotch started to become anxious.

He could see the enemy start their counterattack, but the battle was fierce everywhere that he could not move any troops to reinforce the Heavy Armor Infantry in the front. That was a mistake.

The Heavy Armor Infantry fell almost instantly, and now the infantry was in danger as well.

Spotch could tell that the enemy's change was because of Yulian.

Spotch valiantly approached Yulian and blocked his attack before shouting out.

“Chief of the barbarians, let's finish our battle from earlier. My name is Spotch Rin Cullery, a Marquis of the Great Silence Empire, and the Commander of the Sunset Knight Brigade.”

Yulian smirked while responding.

“Why do we need to talk in a battle? Warriors only speak through their strength. However, I will let you know as well. My name is Yulian Provoke, the Desert Conqueror and War God, and the Glow of Pareia. This time, I will really show you the strength of the desert.”

The two men both let out a lot of fierce aura as they clashed once more.

Book 6-1.4

Since coming back from the Hero's Land, Yulian was confident that he could defeat anyone other than his master in a 1 on 1 clash. He was confident that even that Venersis would not be his match anymore.

Earlier one, he had to hide his strength for the sake of their strategy, but right now, he just needed to kill the enemy as soon as possible. That was the only way to save the thirty members of Red Storm and his wife Violet, who were most likely shedding a lot of blood to take the gate right now. He needed to get there to save them and take the gate.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

Yulian shouted out loudly and started to swing his greatsword toward Spotch. It wasn't as accurate because his mind was in a rush, but instead, his strength was amplified even further.

Clang.

A loud noise of metal clashing could be heard before Spotch flinched. This was not the same opponent he faced a couple hours ago. His strength seemed to be multiple times stronger than before.

“You were hiding your strength.”

Spotch shouted sharply and tried to strategize, but Yulian's other greatsword was already aiming for Spotch's side.

Claaaaaaaaa~aaang. Clang Clang.

The sound of metal clashing could be heard over and over as Spotch fervently blocked Yulian's greatswords, and Yulian was getting angry that he could not defeat Spotch quickly and continued to use even more strength to attack.

As Spotch was continuing to get pushed back and tried to catch

himself from falling down, Yulian's pirma, which was angry from running into the enemy horse over and over, lifted up its large body and flung its front two legs. Those front legs landed on the calf of Spotch's horse.

"Ugh."

Spotch let out a moan from the strong shock he felt from falling off the horse, and the moment he came back to his senses, he saw something flashing in front of his eyes.

Plop.

Spotch's body-less head flew up into the sky and let out a blood fountain before falling back down.

"I'm sorry, warrior of the continent. I do not have any time."

Yulian showed quick respect to Spotch's head that was rolling on the floor before taking a deep breath, gathering his ki, and shouting out.

"I have cut the neck of your commander. There is no reason to fight any further. All knights and soldiers of the continent, drop your weapons!"

The battle of Henkel Plains was coming to a close.

The battle that was happening at the entrance of Henkel Gate was definitely a Land of Death.

There was so much blood on the ground that it became an obstacle every time they moved, and there was almost no open land as the entire area was covered densely in corpses.

"Huuuuuuuff~ Huuu~huuuuuuff."

All of the Red Storm warriors were extremely short of breath. Other than that past battle where they lost their friends, there had been no other battle where they ended up so winded like this battle.

Was everybody thinking about that battle? They were almost

subconsciously swinging their blades, thinking that one of their friends may die if they stopped moving.

“Ahhhh~”

The infantry soldiers in front of them were so afraid that they were getting killed even by such swings.

They wanted to run away from this terror, but three or four soldiers who tried to retreat were instantly killed by Henkel Gate's commander Viscount Stearthur and the archers waiting for his command. Death in the front and death in the back, they had no place to go.

“Charge. Those barbarians are only lasting this long because all of you are so scared.”

Viscount Stearthur continued to shout and tried to push the soldiers forward, but it was no use. Instead, you could see what the soldiers who were looking at him wanted to say.

‘Then you try going there.’

Viscount Stearthur was not a noble who grew up peacefully in a fancy house, and he was no coward. That was why he was able to land an important position for a soldier as the commander of Henkel Gate.

But Viscount Stearthur could not step forward right now. He was the only high ranking officer left at the gate. If he died, the soldiers were sure to get scared and run away.

Close to 7,000 soldiers would run away because of barely thirty barbarians and a woman.

Viscount Stearthur continued to shout as he urged the soldiers forward.

“Have courage! If they take the gate, they will kill all of your families!”

That finally brought the soldiers back to their senses. Although

they did not have enough to live a luxurious life, there were quite a lot of soldiers who were able to start a family with the salary they received from the gate.

If the barbarians got past Henkel Gate, there was nothing preventing them from getting all the way across the rest of the plains. And at the end of the plains was their homeland, the Mobile region.

None of the people there would expect that Henkel Gate could be breached, so there would be a lot of damage if the enemies ambushed the area. Based on the rumors, these barbarians of the desert killed as they pleased while kidnapping the women.

“Die~ you damn barbarians!”

The soldiers were still scared, but they were just instinctively swinging their blades now. At least their spears and swords started to carry some murderous intent.

The Red Storm warriors had already killed close to 2,000 enemy soldiers. As the enemy started to charge toward them with murderous intent, the injuries on their bodies started to grow one by one.

Violet, who had been singing a song of courage and defending the warriors from the enemy magic brigade’s attacks while standing directly under the castle gate, the safest area of the battlefield, quickly started to sing a new song.

She started to sing a Warrior’s song to help tired warriors feel strong once again.

Stand up, warrior.

Stand up and move forward.

The enemy blades miss my body,

And my blades will pierce the enemy.

Forget your fear and move forward.

Warrior, do you lack the strength to stand?

Do not lose to your body.

Your fiery passion,

And your storm-like courage

Sits deep inside of you.

Why are you trying to lose?

Stand up, warrior.

Stand up and move forward.

If a song of courage was used to raise the strength of the warriors, the Warrior's song was a song to restore their tired stamina.

The Red Storm warriors who had originally felt like they had used everything they had inside of them, could feel their strength returning to them. But even that did not last long.

It is said that the Warrior's song helps recover a warrior's stamina, but in reality, it just helped to draw out the warrior's remaining potential. But for the Red Storm warriors who had already possessed multiple times the strength of an average warrior after going through arduous amounts of training, their stamina quickly started to visibly deteriorate.

Violet took out a sosoonto from her clothes after seeing that.

It was time to use her strength that she had been saving until now. The Warrior's song was not enough to get them out of this situation.

She didn't know how much longer they would be able to last with her strength, but she knew that Yulian and his warriors needed to quickly defeat Marquis Spotch and hurry over.

Violet closed her eyes to calm herself and confirm her resolve.

If she had the time and luxury, she would have brought some

incantation tools to help her quickly perform incantations, but the situation did not allow for that. That was why she could only rely on her own strength to make it happen. She knew the dangers before coming out here, but it would be a lie to say she was still not scared.

But she needed to do it.

Book 6-1.5

The sosoonta cut across her white arm.

“Spread, my strength. My incantation.”

As she started to chant her incantation in a quiet voice, her flowing blood spurted out like a bomb and started to create a fog of blood around her.

“Violet-nim!”

Some of the Red Storm warriors were shocked at what was happening and called out to her.

At that moment, her staff was lifted up from the ground while her other hand was raised up in the air.

Wake up.

The power that comes forth from blood.

Show your strength through my blood.

What I desire is darkness.

The chaos that stems from darkness.

The fear that rises from chaos.

Violet's expression started to turn odd.

Her hair started to rise up into the air, and her eyes that suddenly opened were completely bloodshot.

Most importantly, an eerie sensation that even the average soldiers could feel started to come out of her.

Using my blood that leads the souls to the afterlife as sacrifice,

I call forward the strength that roams the earth.

Show yourself through my blood this moment,

Show your true body and strength in front of me right now.

Nobody could move at that moment. The sensation that was coming out of Violet enveloped the entire Henkel Gate.

Violet had covered her entire body with the blood coming out of her arm.

The blood that was red, as well as the fog of blood that was in the air, started to turn black. It was starting to turn so black that it was almost impossible to describe.

Come forth, the power that brings forth chaos.

As Violet suddenly shouted out, that pitch black fog of blood instantly started to surround the black gate, and the gate was now filled with darkness. Neither the light of the currently setting sun, nor the light of the now rising moon, could pierce through that darkness.

Nobody could see anything.

Everybody started to become afraid. This fear was so strong that it could even make some of the Red Storm warriors flinch. A feeling of being pressured by something surrounded all of the soldiers at the gate.

“Aaaaaah~.”

“Save...me.”

“What happened to my eyes? I can’t even see...my own hand.”

The soldiers started to scream in fear. They started to shake in fear. And fear, tends to spread easily.

“Ack~ I don’t want to die.”

“O, lord~ please save us.”

The soldiers started to fall into the chaos.

There were some soldiers who curled up on the ground while covering their heads with both of their hands, as well as some who were lifting up prayers to the gods they believed in. There were

even some soldiers who dropped their weapons and started to run, without even knowing where they were running. In fact, there were even some soldiers who were committing suicide because they were overwhelmed by the fear.

The scariest thing was that they started to kill and die by the swords and spears of their own comrades.

“Ack~.”

Screams suddenly shot up in the air from multiple locations. All of the soldiers started to swing their weapons in all directions. If they stood still, they were going to die. The smart thing to do was to swing their weapon so that nobody could get close to them.

That sight was even scarier than the sight of war.

The entire gate was now full of screams and cries.

It literally looked like the definition of complete and utter despair. It looked like a scene straight out of the depths of hell.

The only ones to not fall into chaos within that darkness was Violet herself, the Red Storm warriors, and the highly skilled magicians of the magic brigade, Viscount Stearthur, and a couple of the soldiers who had strong wills.

“Please use this moment to take a short break.”

The Red Storm warriors flinched at Violet’s voice which had also changed.

Plop.

“Violet-nim.”

Haisha shouted out and rushed toward her, and the rest of the Red Storm also gathered with Violet in the middle, killing any soldiers who approached them like crazy lunatics.

“Are you okay?”

Violet barely managed to open her eyes and speak.

“Five minutes ... just five minutes. I don’t think I can make it last more than that. I wish I could give you more time, but I am lacking too much strength.”

The warriors looked at each other. They had never even heard about an incantation like this. But they could all recognize that this incantation was not an easy one.

“Violet-nim?”

Haisha called out to Violet, but Violet had already lost her consciousness.

“Violet-nim did everything to buy us this time. Everyone, recover as much stamina as possible.”

Everyone nodded at Haisha’s words and started to control their breath. The situation was still not good, which was making all of them nervous. But they knew that such nervousness did them no good, and forced themselves to calm down and take as many breaths as possible to recover their staminas.

But that only lasted an instant. The five minutes Violet mentioned had not gone by, but strands of light started to appear in the darkness, weakening the effect slowly.

It was the enemy’s magic brigade.

“Burning pillar!”

“Push light.”

The magicians of the magic brigade were each using their own spells to add some light into the darkness.

Thanks to that, the five minutes Violet mentioned quickly shrank to a little over two minutes.

The moment Violet’s incantation was broken, Viscount Stearthur started to shout.

“They are not humans. They are the devil. Our gods will surely protect us. Do not be afraid and push forward. Prevent those devils

from approaching our cities.”

There were not many soldiers who were in their right state of mind after being scared by the darkness. Fear, terror, and the sadness that followed had paralyzed them.

That was why they were like dolls and just started to listen to the voice that told them to move forward. They could not think for themselves right now.

End of chapter.

Book 6-2.1

The Changing Continent

The continent was starting to change.

And Pareia was at the center of it.

If there was a definition of pitch black and eerie, it would be this place.

It was a place where even the tiniest speck of light could enter from outside. The only sources of light were from some shining ores that were providing just barely enough light for humans to see.

Shine.

The odd red symbol on the ground could not spread out. It was just roaming around the height of a person's knee. It was red enough to look like fire, but was just light.

“Damn it.”

The man standing in front of it started to curse as he stretched out both of his arms. A blue light started to pour out of his two hands and started to suppress the red strand of light.

“Please ... please.....”

The man continued to mumble as if he was chanting a spell, and his forehead started to become filled with sweat.

“Luff!”

He then suddenly shouted out loudly, and another man approached him and stood by his side.

“Yes, Mai.”

These two men were exactly Mai and Luff, the two who were under the Monster's Desert.

As usual, they were working very hard to seal this annoying seal underneath the Monster's Desert.

"Please."

"It's actually fun for me."

Luff smiled at Mai's words and lifted up his sword.

Rumble. Rumble.

The ground started to shake. The red light disappeared with a shout, but something had already managed to come out of the seal.

"Balrog?"

Mai was extremely shocked as he looked toward the demon from another world that had shown up.

Maybe it was because the ceiling was low, but Balrog held its head low as it looked toward Mai and Luff.

It's a human. A quite annoying one.

Mai's body started to shake at that growling voice. He could not do anything about this fear that did not care for his will.

The one to stand in front of Mai at this time was Luff.

"It's a big one this time. But this one isn't strong enough to fight me. I already beat one up last time. Right, Mai?"

Seeing Luff smile while talking to him, Mai nodded his head. What Mai was worried about wasn't the Balrog in front of him. It was the fact that a Balrog managed to come out of the seal. A Balrog was a demon among demons.

The fact that such a demon like Balrog managed to push through the seal meant that the seal had become that much weaker.

"Bring it."

Mai looked toward Luff who was fighting against even that Balrog with a smile and consoled himself.

‘At least a couple years more

“Congratulations on your victory.”

“Congratulations on your victory.”

The lead warriors nearby also bowed and congratulated their commanding warrior once the Greatest Warriors congratulated him first.

“There is not much that I did. All I did was stand in the front. Today’s victory is a result of everyone working hard.”

The warriors’ hearts started to shake at Venersis’s stoic response.

“But this is just the beginning. All of the desert tribes have started to look down on our Shuarei. It is probably because we have brought in outsiders. But everyone needs to become deaf for this war. Only focus on victory. We will deal with the rest after the war.”

“Yes, sir.”

“It will become difficult if the other tribes start to unite like in the Eastern Desert. I urge you to remember that we need to move very efficiently to prevent that from happening.”

“Please do not worry. It will happen as you said.”

Venersis looked out toward the Greatest Warriors and lead warriors who finished well with him today and was pleased at what he said.

“Great. For today, relax and drink all you want.”

“Waaaaaah~!”

The Greatest Warriors and lead warriors started to cheer.

It was okay to do that today. It was the day they managed to completely take over the Rivolde, the largest tribe in the Western Desert.

The bloody battle at the gate had already continued for many

hours. Their stamina really surpassed the limits of humankind.

But the situation was not favorable for the Red Storm. The Empire's soldiers were tired and the Red Storm were tired as well, but the Empire still had many more people than the Red Storm.

“Hey~ bastard, hurry up and get up!”

Shubeon shouted loudly as he approached his comrade who had fallen and started to slash the spear-wielders who were trying to pierce the fallen Red Storm warrior.

“Shubeon.....”

The warrior's body started to shake as he called out Shubeon's name and looked toward him.

“Bastard, hurry up and get up.”

Shubeon continued to shout while slashing the continuously approaching soldiers of the Empire, but Shubeon was aware of it as well. It was difficult for a completely exhausted body to get back up.

More than that, there was too much blood flowing from the arrows that managed to get through the cracks in the armor. This warrior could not live much longer.

“I'm sorry.”

“Bastard, if you're going to say something like that, just go ahead and die. If you don't want to just die, then get up. You're going to let your kids be fatherless ugh... fatherless children? You want to put that sadness in the hearts of your friends once again?”

Shubeon really didn't even have any strength to shout. But that dam bastard was irritating him so much.

“I'm sorry.”

The fallen warrior looked toward Shubeon who was burdening himself to defend against the enemy and protect him. He could see that Shubeon's injuries were growing and put on an apologetic

smile for Shubeon.

“Stop saying the same thing and hurry up and get your ass up. What is that expression of yours? Fix your face and hurry up and get up!”

Shubeon suddenly felt uncomfortable and started to take more peeks toward his fallen comrade.

Every one of them was in a line with Violet behind them. All of them were worried. The two warriors next to them moved forward to take some burden off of Shubeon. They wanted to give Shubeon some time.

But the fallen warrior did not think that way. The entire Red Storm was being burdened because of him. For someone who probably did not even have any strength left. In the end, they would all end up dying because of him. And it would happen quickly.

“Damn it. I’m sorry everyone. Please don’t die. And ... I leave it to you.”

The warrior slashed his own throat.

“Hey...you fucking bastard!”

Shubeon gasped and shouted, and the other warriors around him were shocked as well.

“Thi...this.....”

Shubeon was trying to say something, but he felt like something was stuck in his throat. He then became extremely angry.

“Oowoooooooo~!”

Shubeon was someone who always had something sarcastic to say to irritate his comrades, but the reason he did that was to hide the fact that he was a very affectionate man. Everybody knew about his stupid attempt to cover his kind nature.

Shubeon was the one who was the most upset the last time they

lost some members. That was the reason he was the one who hated Runa the most. But after losing another member today, nobody knew how it would be after this battle.

“Shubeon, no!”

Thrint gasped after seeing Shubeon trying to move forward and shouted toward him.

Shubeon stepped forward. Nobody could explain how he was breathing, but he continued to push forward without stopping.

“Damn it. Everyone, get aligned with Shubeon. Are you going to let him die like this?!”

Thrint questioned whether anyone could hear him and started to flail his arms, as he started to move forward while continuing to shout.

“Damn it!”

The other warriors all started to swear as they moved forward. Everybody, other than Haisha and two other warriors who moved backwards to protect Violet.

“I will kill them all. Every single one of them!”

The extremely tough Shubeon of the Red Storm was about to lose his sanity.

His mumbling started to become less and less coherent, but his strength seemed to sore up as he seemed to recover his energy to swing his sword.

The other Red Storm warriors started to turn pale after seeing Shubeon becoming like that.

The subconscious state of losing their sanity.

This was something Yulian had warned them about since the beginning.

“That stupid bastard.”

Thrint wanted to run forward and pull Shubeon back, but Thrint did not have much strength left right now.

“You damn son of a bitch.....”

It was at the moment that Thrint started to swear and had made up his mind to move forward while allowing small injuries that will not kill him.

“Thrint, step back.”

The familiar voice coming from behind him. It definitely was a very welcomed voice for sure, but in his current situation, his anger was even greater.

“Why couldn’t you come just a bit faster!”

The moment Thrint turned his head, someone flew right over him.

“I’m sorry.”

That was the short response from the person who lowered his head to look at Thrint.

Thrint stabbed his greatsword into the ground and leaned on it. Once the tension disappeared, he no longer had any strength left to even stay standing up.

“Shubeon!”

Book 6-2.2

Yulian called out Shubeon's name as Shubeon continued to walk forward, before grabbing Shubeon's collar.

Booooooong.

Yulian quickly realized that Shubeon was not in the right state of mind.

“Wake up, Shubeon!”

Yulian stood face to face with Shubeon and shouted directly at him. Shubeon just blankly stared at Yulian.

“Late...I think you are late, Glow.”

“Yes, damn it ... I have no excuse. I am sorry.”

Plop.

Shubeon fell down at that spot and Yulian started to swing his greatsword widely and shout.

“Your commander has already lost his life to my blade. Resistance is now futile. Drop your weapons and surrender.”

The desert warriors were starting to appear one by one behind Yulian.

All of the soldiers of Henkel Gate were focused on the thirty Red Storm warriors. As a result, the other Pareia's warriors were able to enter the gate without a single casualty. They then started to attack the soldiers who were running toward them.

Viscount Stearthur knew that Henkel Gate was lost and started to run with a few ranked officers. They needed to report the results of this battle as soon as possible.

The night was getting deeper.

The celebration of the victory of Henkel Gate.

Both the victory at the plains and the victory at the gate could be

called an overwhelming victory.

Yulian brought out food and alcohol to console the warriors. First of all, they got control of the gate and achieved their goal. Furthermore, it was a difficult war until now and there was a need to console the warriors and let them rest.

Everybody was enjoying themselves, smiling, and chatty, but there was an area that wasn't like that as well.

It was the residence of the Red Storm that was covered in silence.

Even though the battle was over, the Red Storm had not been able to get up and just flopped right where they were sitting. They had all used so much energy that they had reached their limit.

Even Thrint, Haisha, and Shubeon, the strongest of the Red Storm, were no exception to this. All of them were laying down in a residence inside the gate and could not move.

All of the shamans were gathered together to restore their staminas, but maybe it was because they not only used up their stamina but their hidden potential as well, but they needed to rely on natural healing to recover.

“Gro~an.”

With a quiet moan, Thrint suddenly sat up.

Only the small light in the corner of the room was flickering to brighten Thrint's view.

“Grooan~!”

Thrint let out another moan and lifted his upper body. He could feel the emptiness in his body and his head was aching.

Click.

He heard the door open and one person walked in.

“Glow!”

Thrint quickly tried to straighten his body, but Yulian quickly

stopped him and held him there.

“It’s okay. Stay there.”

“I am embarrassed.”

“The person who should be embarrassed is me, Thrint, not you.”

Thrint started to frown. He remembered the battle now. The battle that they had once again lost a friend.

“You are right. Glow, you were a bit late.”

Thrint did not hide his grudge. His voice and his gaze were both cold.

“You are right. I was late. I was very late.”

“.....”

Yulian thought it would be difficult if they fell into silence and continued to speak.

“How is your body?”

“It is okay. But based on how empty I feel, I probably need to recover for a while. Where are the rest of the group?”

“You are the first to wake up.”

“I see.”

“Then get some rest.”

As the conversation continued to be awkward, Yulian told Thrint to rest before turning around. There were a lot of things he wanted to say, but it was difficult for him to say anything right now.

“Epori’s death. That damn bastard felt like he was going to cause us harm and killed himself. He disobeyed your order by dying, but I hope you can forgive him.”

Was he able to say it because they weren’t looking at each other face to face?

Yulian’s heart was breaking, listening to Thrint’s voice that was

hiding his deep sorrow and pushing back his tears.

He really did not know what to say at all.

“Wanana did not wake up either.”

However, the thing he ended up saying in the end made Thrint go blank for a moment.

“When all of you fainted and we moved you inside, Wanana’s life ... was already gone.”

“Did Wanana?”

“There was an arrow in his chest. I presume.....”

“He must have pushed forward even stronger so that we would not notice.”

Seeing Yulian not being able to say anything, Thrint turned away from looking at Yulian’s back.

“I’m sorry. It is my fault.”

Yulian could not turn his head around and just walked toward the door. He felt like he would blow up from frustration if he stayed any longer.

“It is our fault for going against your order.”

Thrint’s words stabbed Yulian’s back like an arrow as he walked out.

“You seem to be having a hard time.”

Seeing Yulian walking out so weakly from the residence, Runa asked Yulian about how he was doing.

You could not find the joy of victory anywhere in Runa’s expression either.

Although less of them died compared to what he had expected, it was still true that he had no confidence to deal with the aftermath of it.

“If I moved a little bit faster, they didn’t have to die.”

Yulian did not make eye contact with Runa. He knew that his expression would not be good right now.

“They would not have died if the Red Storm would have held on a little bit longer.”

“Runa!”

“It is always the same story. We managed an overwhelming victory, and have now overcome a significant obstacle. We are supposed to be happy.”

“However.....”

Runa sternly continued.

“If the Glow and the Greatest Warriors all look down like this, the regular warriors will quickly notice it. They will find out that another two Red Storm warriors were killed in battle. The invincible Red Storm.”

“Runa, you.....”

Yulian wanted to say something before he stopped. There was nothing that would get better or change even if he said it.

“I will meet with the Red Storm. I never had a good relationship with them to start, so there is no issue if it gets any worse.”

“That is my biggest concern. You know very well that no good will come from making your relationship worse.”

Runa made direct eye contact Yulian before speaking.

“Glow, not everything can be great. If this is good, that will be bad. Things do not go as we wish. And the fact that there are opposing powers is a natural phenomenon.”

“Runa! What is that supposed to mean?!”

As Yulian became angry and raised his voice, Runa did not seem to show any changes as he answered.

“The Glow seems to forget quite often that you are a ruler. It is difficult to be a ruler.”

“If I cannot trust you or the Red Storm, who am I supposed to trust?”

“I am talking about the degree of trust. In fact, the Glow should be using the difficult relationship between myself and the Red Storm to your advantage. Either side getting too strong will become a critical weakness for you, Glow.”

“I don’t know why you are suddenly bringing up these useless things.”

“Glow. Our Pareia is no longer a small tribe of the desert. We have unified the Eastern Continent and have control of one of the most sought after plains in the continent. The Glow needs to be a little less invested now. You can no longer pay attention to each individual warrior is what I am trying to say.”

“.....”

“It is something I’ve wanted to tell you for a while. I apologize for it coming in a situation like this. The Glow is courageous and valiant, but you are moved too much by your emotions. It is a critical weakness for an emperor. That is all I want to tell you.”

Runa bowed to Yulian to show his respect before turning around.

Yulian just blankly stared at where Runa had stood before leaving.

The morning of victory started to finally arrive.

The overall atmosphere was bright, but Yulian, as well as some high ranked warriors did not seem so happy.

It was normal for people to die during war, but the presence of the Red Storm was so big that those who knew about what happened could not be happy. Thousands of warriors were able to live because of the death of two Red Storm warriors.

The Red Storm warriors started to wake one or two at a time, but they were filled with sorrow at the unexpected passing of another one of their peers.

Click.

The door to the hall where the Red Storm warriors were gathered together opened and two people walked in. The Red Storm warriors looked toward them with odd expressions.

It was Yulian and Runa.

Book 6-2.3

“We greet the Glow.”

Haisha got up from his seat and represented the Red Storm to greet Yulian. Once he did, Yulian nodded his head in response and looked toward them.

Silence.

Yulian did not like this type of atmosphere. The Red Storm were the ones who had been with the longest out of anyone. They had shared blood and sweat with him. However, just what was this awkward atmosphere?

“I believe you have a lot of things you want to say. I am here to listen to it. I’m sure all of you did not suddenly become mute.”

“.....”

“Do you have nothing to say?”

“.....”

Seeing none of the warriors open their mouths, Yulian once again looked around at each of the warriors.

“Do you really have nothing to say?”

Yulian’s tone was odd.

It seemed to be like he was holding back ... his tone sounded like there was something he was holding in.

Whether that is sadness, anger, or even the joy of victory, they could not tell what the tone embodied.

“What is there for us to say?”

Shubeon jumped up out of his seat and retorted back.

“I told you I came here to listen. And I hate this type of atmosphere. In addition, I hate the type of atmosphere that makes it feel like we lost even though we won much more.”

The warriors all picked up their heads at Yulian's response and looked toward him. Yulian continued to speak.

"War is somewhere that we take the lives of others. However, it is somewhere we may lose our own lives as well. Was my judgment wrong?"

"You are right. That is what war is about. We sweat and we bleed so that we can prevent ourselves from dying. So what is there for us to say?"

Shubeon's voice definitely held some anger. However, he did not dare to show that anger in front of Yulian. He was their leader and Glow, and Yulian was also one of the warriors who put his life on the line to fight.

It was a problem everyone was aware of. They knew that to go to war meant to take someone else's life. However, they did not know how to deal with this situation and atmosphere in front of them. They were not used to losing one of their own; they were not used to losing a friend whose life was just as important as their own life.

"All of you are amazing. I expected there to be some more sacrifices, but more of you survived than I expected."

The one to speak was of course Runa. All of the warriors turned to glare at him. Their expressions turned to surprise once they did.

Runa was over there bowing to them.

"I will accept it. In the current continent, there are no other brigades that have the attack strength of the Red Storm. In addition, thank you for giving this Runa the approval to use that strength for our Pareia."

Yulian was also looking at Runa with shock. Runa's eyes were starting to turn red.

"I know that it was extremely difficult. I knew that there would be a lot of sacrifices even if we succeeded."

Shubeon clenched his fists and was about to rush forward but Thrint grabbed onto his clothes to prevent him. Once Shubeon turned his head to look at Thrint, Thrint shook his head.

Runa continued to speak.

“But you must know this much. We definitely needed to take control of this gate for Pareia, and thousands of warriors would have had to shed their blood if we tried to take it using the normal strategies. That is why ... I can stand tall as I look at you. That is why I do not regret my decision.”

Runa stopped speaking and looked around at the warriors before continuing.

“No matter how many hundreds of times I ran through it in my head, that strategy was something the Red Storm could successfully complete. Didn't you tell me in the past? If it is for our dream, you would gladly be my pawns. And that if I do not use you properly, that you would kill me. I will ask you this. Do you ... wish that I act like a sinner in front of you?”

Shubeon's fist slowly started to open. All of the warriors who were glaring at him turned away. Wasn't this something all of them knew? They all knew it was something only they could successfully accomplish. They may be sad, but there was no need to be angry.

Their sacrifice saved their nation and the lives of thousands of warriors. They knew about it even before the mission started.

After a long moment of silence, Thrint finally started to speak.

“Assistant Warrior Runa, what you said is correct. You just used our strength and fame for a job that was fitting. Yes ... it is better than being used for something that is not fitting for our strength. Please continue to use us properly.”

“Everyone, get rid of your frowns. We have won. In order to show our respects for our friends that have gone before us, let us

not blame ourselves.”

Everyone nodded at Haisha’s words and look around at each other and started to smile. Although it was a forced smile, this was the time to smile.

“Glow, we apologize for causing you so much headache.”

As Haisha approached and bowed, Yulian shook his head.

Right now, Yulian was feeling overwhelmed by Runa’s words and the warriors’ words. These amazing warriors were his subordinates.

“Shubeon, it’s all your fault. I couldn’t say anything because it might cause you to go off again.”

As one of the warriors jokingly answered, Shubeon started to smile as he responded.

“Damn it, I know, I know, but i just couldn’t say anything because i felt sorry for the bastards that left before us.”

‘Is this enough to resolve things for now?’

Shubeon thought that to himself while looking at the now smiling Glow and Red Storm warriors.

‘This is why I like all of them.’

Runa wanted to be involved in the conversation as well for a moment, but in the end, shook his head and sneaked out of them.

The Silence Empire was obvious, but even the Rojini Kingdom started go wild at the fact that Pareia had conquered Henkel Gate.

First of all, the Silence Empire became completely shocked at this surprising news. The Henkel Gate that they had considered to be completely safe had fallen, which meant that the other half of Henkel Plains was no longer safe either.

Most importantly, the death of Master Spotch was really unexpected.

Spotch had ranked in the upper echelon of the Empire's masters, yet he was unable to defend against a single barbarian tribe and died.

The Silence Empire quickly entered a state of emergency. They quickly sent reinforcements to the Mobile region, while gathering people for strategy meetings that lasted for days.

During the meeting, there were many discussions internally among the Silence Empire that they needed to send an envoy to Pareia to call for an armistice. Of course they were careful about bringing it up to not anger their royal highness. The reason they were pushing for an armistice was because they did not have many units to move to the back as they were in a fierce battle with the Rojini Kingdom.

Crown Prince Shaone had no choice but to send a diplomatic envoy to Pareia, while putting their plan for the Mobile region at the forefront of their discussions.

On the other hand, the Rojini Kingdom was extremely excited. Although they did not originally expect much from Pareia, Pareia had taken victory after victory to significantly oppress the Silence Empire. To be honest, the Rojini Kingdom never expected Pareia to be this great of an ally.

Some of the nobles had even complained about what kind of help the barbarians could give them, indicating that they didn't need Pareia's help to start. Surprisingly, Master Aizen and Master Winnie had pushed them to create the alliance with Pareia.

It was because of the two of their level of respect that they had given such a significant amount of materials to Pareia. But now, the situation had turned 180 degrees. They wanted to create an embassy in Pareia, and create an embassy for Pareia in the Rojini Kingdom as well. That way, they could always share opinions with each other and create a path of communication.

They also needed to create a diplomat who would focus all of

their time on Pareia, while making sure to increase the level of support for Pareia. Basically, they needed to do whatever they could to keep this alliance strong.

The Rojini Kingdom's emperor Finn Rojini III agreed with all of these suggestions and ordered an envoy to be sent to Pareia to discuss everything.

Book 6-2.4

“Anything more than that is impossible.”

Runa shared his thoughts in a stern voice in front of Yulian, the Greatest Warriors, and the Rojini Kingdom’s diplomatic envoy.

“The amount we have right now is enough to pressure the Silence Empire, and I believe we have shown our sincerity to the Rojini as allies. The Henkel Plains have become ours and we are holding back a significant amount of the Silence Empire’s forces in the rear as a result. Am I wrong?”

“But Runa-nim, right now.....”

The moment that Pumetrin, the diplomat who was named to be in charge of the Rojini Kingdom’s envoy, tried to say something, Runa cut him short.

“Are you aware that we have an envoy from the Silence Empire here right now?”

Pumetrin flinched. Why would the Silence Empire send an envoy to Pareia? No, Pumetrin quickly realize that there would be only one reason for the Silence to send an envoy.

“Is Runa-nim perhaps trying to use that to threaten me?”

Pumetrin, who felt like he couldn’t back down, pushed a little strongly, and the moment Runa was about to respond, Yulian interjected.

“Enough. Runa, Pumetrin, both of you need to take a step back.”

Runa closed his mouth and Pumetrin also bowed his head. No matter what, the decision was in Yulian’s hands.

“I am aware of Mr. Pumetrin’s reason for the request, as well as what Runa and the Greatest Warriors’ concerns are. Mr. Pumetrin.”

“Please speak, Glow Yulian.”

“We have already decided to send back the envoy from the Silence Empire, so you do not have to worry too much about it. We return sincerity with sincerity, and betrayal with betrayal. That is the type of people we are. Since the Rojini Kingdom has shown its sincerity to us, we will also respond in kind.”

Pumetrin’s expression became brighter.

“There will be no armistice with the Silence Empire. We will continue to pressure them and hold their forces here. However, as Greatest Warrior Runa just mentioned, we are in need of maintenance. Doing something like Mr. Pumetrin is asking for and pushing forward is not possible for a while.”

“But Glow, in order to return to stability, it is best to quickly finish this war. Rojini and Pareia, our two nations have enough strength to put this war to an end. I just want to let you know of that.”

Runa retorted back from the side.

“I do not believe that the Rojini Kingdom cannot defeat the Silence Empire that has lost the Henkel Plains and a master that they were so proud to flaunt. In addition, the fact that we will be pressuring the Silence Empire from here will not change. We also have the desire to continue to push forward and increase our territory, but our main base, the desert, is not stable right now. Mr. Pumetrin needs to keep that in mind as well.”

Pumetrin realized that no good would come from continuing to push for his agenda. Didn’t he at least hear straight from the Glow that there will be no armistice with the Silence Empire and that they will continue to pressure the Silence Empire from the side?

“I understand. I will let his majesty know that you have sent back the envoy from the Silence Empire and will continue to maintain the alliance between our two nations.”

Runa added on to Pumetrin’s words.

“Of course. Pareia has not forgotten the sincerity that the Rojini Kingdom has shown us. We also believe that the Rojini Kingdom will absorb the Silence Empire quickly like a storm.”

As Pumetrin nodded his head with a satisfied smile, Runa continued to speak.

“There is also something we would like to request from Pumetrin-nim.”

“Please speak.”

“We heard that the reformation of the Eastern Continent started from the Rojini Kingdom, and that the reform has become stable in Rojini.”

“That is true. It is the reason for the strength of our Kingdom. Thanks to the hard work of his majesty, all citizens of the Rojini Kingdom are loyal to his highness and seek to better the Kingdom.”

As Pumetrin proudly answered, Runa sent him an amazed expression as he continued on.

“That is why we were wondering if you could dispatch some high ranked internal affairs personnel to our Pareia for a while. The culture of the people in the Fedore and this plain is too different from our Pareia’s way of living. I know that issues may arise.”

“Ah!”

Pumetrin understood Runa’s concern and confidently responded.

Pareia may not be causing any harm to the citizens of the conquered areas, but there were still many people living in fear. There were so many negative rumors, including one that said that the barbarians of the desert resorted to cannibalism, so it was just a matter of time before problems would start to arise.

“That is not a problem at all. Do not worry about it.”

“Some of our warriors will learn from them. Please feel free to be

stern with them.”

Pumetrin thought this would be a way for Pareia to owe him a favor while he did something that was easy to do, and decided to send not just a few, but tens of internal affairs personnel to Pareia. They had plenty of personnel in the Rojini Kingdom.

Once Pumetrin left the meeting after determining they would discuss the specifics of the issue later, Yulian and the Greatest Warriors started to discuss the next issue on hand.

“The Shuarei’s progression speed is no joke. We received news that the Rivolde was completely overtaken.”

Everyone started to whisper to each other at Runa’s announcement.

If they were being honest, the Shuarei were a much more concerning enemy than the Empire in front of them.

And hearing that this difficult enemy was getting stronger caused nervousness in all of them.

“I won’t be able to look Grace in the eye. We should have been there to save them.”

As Yulian started to mumble to himself after receiving the report, Runa responded.

“Pere-nim personally crossed the quicksand river to back the Rivolde up, but it was not enough. But thankfully, the Rivolde’s Glow Dejaine-nim, as well as many of their citizens were able to escape to Pareia while Pere-nim held the Shuarei back. Our Pareia has extra oases and just lack the people to fill them, so there should be no issues.”

“How many of them made it over?”

Runa answered one of the Greatest Warrior’s question.

“Other than the regions that were the first to fall, the majority of the rest can be considered to now be in Pareia. It was thanks to

Dejaine-nim's quick decision-making.”

“Just what would make the Shuarei feel like they could fight against the Rivolde? The Rivolde has a lot of very talented warriors. In addition, doesn't the Shuarei not have enough warriors?”

“That, it seems that they have received mercenaries and soldiers are reinforcement from the Western Continent. A significant amount at that.”

The meeting room started to become filled with whispers once more at Runa's answer. To receive the help of outsiders in a desert war was shameful. Especially to receive reinforcement through soldiers to make up their numbers.

“It was said that the Shuarei has created an alliance with the three large nations of the Western Continent.”

“Such unbelievable thing ... but why would the Western nations create an alliance with the Shuarei?”

“I'm sure it was to end the war in the Western Continent.”

Yulian and Runa had discussed the answer to that question for a long time. The decision they came to was that it was to end the current war in the Western Continent. They would suffer a lot less to catch the weakings than fighting amongst their equals.

‘I wonder if Aizen knows about this. Thanks to it, things have become complicated.’

Yulian suddenly recalled Aizen, who had protected the young couple. But it was not that Yulian was regretting his actions from that time. Who would be able to look down on Pareia right now?

Runa continued to speak.

“That is why we need to made a decision as to whether or not we will retreat. We need to determine whether we will stay here and continue to push forward into the Silence Empire's territory, or go

back and fight off the Shuarei.”

Discussion filled the room for a while. Pareia had control of the quicksand river, and Greatest Warriors Vibli and Egane were thoroughly defending. That was why some people were saying they should stay here and try to get even more of the Silence Empire’s fertile land. At the same time, there were people who believed they should head back to fend off the Shuarei.

Yulian quietly listened to both sides. Seeing that there was no agreement, he decided to ask Runa a question.

“Runa, what is your opinion?”

“Seeing as how the Silence Empire sent us an envoy, I do not think they will attack us if we do not attack them. I believe the smart decision would be to leave the necessary amount of warriors to defend the gate and the Fedore region, while sending the rest back to the desert.”

“Your reason for that?”

“The more they take, the stronger they will become. We cannot give that man that much strength. It will be very difficult for us in the future if we do.”

Everybody knew very well who Runa was talking about. And once they thought about that man, the voices supporting their return to the desert grew significantly.

They needed to do so to get rid of this fear that resided deep in their hearts.

Yulian thought about it for a moment before starting to speak.

“Alright. Greatest Warriors Aruta and Timua will remain here with 20,000 warriors. One of you will defend this gate while the other will patrol the Fedore region.”

Yulian then started to speak to Runa.

“Runa. You will determine the warriors who will learn from the

internal affairs personnel from the Rojini Kingdom.”

“I understand, Glow.”

In the end, Yulian decided not to attack the Empire anymore and to return to the desert.

End of chapter

Book 6-3.1

Truce

The water that seeped into the sand started to evaporate.

After returning to Pareia, Yulian ordered the warriors to rest as he gathered the oasis chiefs and Greatest Warriors for a meeting. These busy days continued for a while.

There was just too much to do. While Yulian was gone, a mountain load of items requiring Yulian's approval had built up. However, he did not have the time to thoroughly go through them right now. He delegated most of it to different Greatest Warriors before preparing to go back to war. There was no time.

"I'm sorry for your loss."

Yulian bowed to his father-in-law, Dejaine.

"Sigh~ he sure lived up to his name as the War God of the desert. He definitely deserves it. There was nothing we could do."

Although his age was close to 60 now, Dejaine had enough vitality to rival a young warrior for a long time. However, this old warrior in front of Yulian was no longer that energetic warrior. The deep wrinkles on his forehead, the extremely thin cheeks. All of this showed just how much worry and concerns Dejaine had suffered until now.

"I'm sorry, Glow. I should have helped you"

Dejaine was someone who had taken care of Yulian for a long time. He was a trusted friend of his father, and once his father passed away, Dejaine had been a father figure for Yulian.

Seeing someone who cherished him so worn out looking like this made Yulian extremely sad.

"I seem to be causing sorrow for someone who came back after achieving something big. Furthermore, I am no longer a Glow.

Although the Shuarei may have used the strength of the continent, the battle was fair. I was cleanly defeated and need to accept the reality.”

“I will personally head over. We will take back the Rivolde.”

Dejaine shook his head at Yulian’s statement.

“No, my time has already passed. I would have hope if my son was even half the man that you are...but it is now your time. Do not worry about me. The warriors must be tired as well.”

“I cannot do that. If it was not for Glow’s help back then, would there even be a me of today? I will definitely take the Rivolde back and return everything back to normal.”

Dejaine smiled back at Yulian. Although he did not have any luck with his son, he did have luck with his daughter and his son-in-law. He believed Yulian would become a great individual from the first time he saw him; that was why he had no issues with giving his daughter to Yulian for marriage.

“Do not make me look so bad. A Glow who could not protect his tribe does not deserve to be the Glow. Instead of recovering the Rivolde, take over the land and turn it into a part of your tribe. That is the correct course of action. Don’t worry about this old man and go take control.”

“We need to fight them before the Shuarei has time to gain more oases and warriors anyways. That is the reason I came back as well. We have already started to prepare the warriors to head back out, so we should be heading to the Western Desert soon.”

As Yulian had mentioned, the Shuarei was taking control of the Western Desert very quickly right now without stopping.

After taking control of the Rivolde, there were no more obstacles in their way. There were only three tribes that were still safe from the Shuarei’s invasion.

Yulian was planning on taking control of at least two of those

tribes before the Shuarei could get there. Since they are going to battle, they would need a base on the Western Desert. They needed to take control of these oases to even think about fighting the Shuarei.

“It should be possible because the Shuarei are exhausted from their restless march forward. But you must absolutely not overdo it for this old man. As you already know as well, Venersis is a scary person.”

“I know. Do not worry too much.”

“I know that as well. Now stop worrying about me and go do what you need to do. I’m sure there are many people who need you right now.”

“Then Glow, I will head out first.”

“No need to stop by again. I’ll be fine until you unify the entire desert and bring stability back to the desert.”

Yulian bowed once more at Dejaine’s words before heading out of the paoe.

The moons in the night sky were very bright tonight. Was it because he had rushed back as quickly as possible?

Yulian was staring at the moons as if he was overwheled with emotion.

“Yulian-nim?”

When Yulian turned his head, he saw Grace looking at him with confusion.

“Why are you still not asleep at this time?”

As Yulian asked in shock, Grace approached him and gently grabbed his arm as she responded with a smile.

“I have a ton of things to do as well. You don’t know how busy I have been without you here. Plus, we haven’t had a chance to have a night date like this in a long time. There was no way I would miss

this opportunity.”

Yulian held Grace’s hand with both of his hands as he answered.

“The only thing I can tell you is that I am sorry.”

“About what?”

“The situation with your father, as well as the fact that you have to work without even being able to sleep.”

Grace leaned her head on Yulian’s arm.

“Everyone was prepared for it. Father’s situation was out of all of our control as well. Pere-nim tried very hard. I was so worried that something like happen to Pere-nim while you were not even here.”

Yulian’s excited heart calmed down after hearing Grace’s words.

He was thinking that his other half was extremely wonderful.

“I should be able to rest once this war is over. I will reward you for everything at that point.”

“I have everything I need just standing next to you like this. I’m sure things are hectic right now.”

Yulian nodded his head and answered.

“I need to prepare the warriors to head to the Western Desert. The warriors who came back from the continent will have to be moved to defend our tribe, and we also need to include the Heavy Armor Infantry as Runa suggested. There are a lot of things to figure out.”

“But you need to take care of yourself as well. You know you look much tinner, right?”

“But I am still making sure to eat every meal so don’t worry. You think I would starve myself while I work?”

“I wish you could come home at least once a day to eat with us and see the children, but I guess it is still too soon for that?”

“Sorry.”

Grace quickly shook her head.

“I didn’t mean it like that.”

“Let’s go home. I should rest a bit tonight.”

Only the moonlight remained once the two of them left.

The fourteen Desert Runners, three more had been built in the last few years, started to ride the quicksand river up to the north.

The first trip would transport 30,000 warriors. After three trips, a total of 70,000 would head to the northern area.

They seemed to have been training the crew as the speed of the Desert Runner was much faster than before. The morale of the warriors were also so high that it did not even feel like they were heading to war.

“I’m sure they received it by now, right?”

Runa, who had been looking down at the quicksand river, turned his head to answer Yulian’s question.

“We should be able to hear a response by the time we land.”

“Runa, what do you think about it? Do you think they will become a part of our tribe?”

“I would say eight or nine out of ten times, they will. We are offering to accept them as the chiefs of their respective oases even after the war. Rather than fighting against the Shuarei and losing everything, I would think they would choose to become absorbed into the nation of Pareia.”

Before starting their conquest of the Western Desert, Yulian had sent a messenger to the three remaining tribes of the Western Desert. The message indicated that they will allow the current oasis chiefs and Greatest Warriors to retain their positions if they become a part of Pareia. Yulian was offering the three tribes who were facing significant pressure from the Shuarei a different option.

They could either fight against the Shuarei and perish, or become loyal to Pareia who would allow them to retain all of their positions.

“They must accept. I really hate shedding blood for no reason. Who could go against our strength at this point?”

There was a lot of pride in Yulian’s voice.

Pareia had already become so strong that nobody else in the desert could compare to them. Although they were still low in population and had a significantly skewed ratio of men to women, there was a significant amount of people who came over from the Rivolde recently, and their number of warriors had increased significantly as well.

This would be the case even if they did not include the citizens and soldiers they gained from the continent in this past battle.

“The image of 70,000 warriors moving in will be overwhelming. Even if they do not surrender right now, I’m sure they will change their mind once they see that.”

“I guess the question is whether the Heavy Armor Infantry can adjust to the heat of the desert.”

Yulian only had one concern; he didn’t know whether the newly engaged Heavy Armor Infantry could stand the desert heat.

Book 6-3.2

The Heavy Armor Infantry that were taken prisoner from the war with the Silence Empire were immediately drafted into Pareia's army. They had even considered training warriors as Heavy Armor Infantry, but Heavy Armor Infantry required a significant amount of training.

But after knowing the impact they could have, they could not just let them go to waste. That was why they just had to use the soldiers of the continent.

"They will need to get used to it as they are now citizens of our Pareia. All of them are high in spirits so there should not be many issues."

The tax rate in the Fedore region and Henkel Plains fell to under twenty percent, similar to the Rojini Kingdom. But most importantly, the fact that Pareia does not separate nobles and peasants made the citizens of Fedore and Henkel Plains welcome them with open arms.

The Silence Empire, like any other nation, had a significant gap between the nobles and peasants. Even the tax rate which had recently gotten better was still close to fifty percent.

In addition, Pareia gave their warriors significant payments, so it was easy to see why the soldiers were high in spirit.

"Then I am relieved."

Yulian had a satisfied expression on his face as he called Thriger over.

"Captain Thriger."

"Yes, Glow."

Thriger, who had been chatting with the First Mate, quickly lifted up his head and responded. Yulian started to smile and

shouted toward him.

“I want to hear that energetic song of yours. You told me you would prepare new lyrics. Is that not ready yet?”

“Hahaha. As I expected, the Glow knows the charm of my song. Should I sing a verse for you right now?”

“If you are going to do it, do it in a loud vigorous voice so that everyone can hear.”

“Hahaha. Of course.”

Thriger let out a laugh as he prepared my voice. They had full control of the quicksand river, and there was not much that Thriger could do in war, but at least his heart burned like the other warriors.

Let's row our boat forward~

Across the turbulent quicksand to the other side~

A place with bright sand and breezy winds.

To the land of courage.

Row the oars~

Catch the blowing storm,

Let's cross through the sand and continue to push forward~

Captain Thriger's deep voice echoed across the quicksand river. Everyone started to sing along with Captain Thriger's song.

“All units, in formation!”

Once the Greatest Warrior gave the command, the warriors who had gotten off first set the tone as the rest of the warriors got in formation behind them. 30,000 warriors in formation really looked powerful.

“Forward!”

The warriors started to move forward in formation.

In the front with the red flag was Yulian and the Red Storm.

They could see the first oasis of the Kiriping Tribe, the most northern tribe in the Western Desert, after less than a day of moving. By the time the Greatest Warriors prepared the troop to attack, three individuals rushed toward them on pirmas.

The three men who quickly stood in front of Yulian and the Greatest Warriors looked around before approaching Yulian and giving him the Warrior's gesture of respect.

He intuitively had determined who the Glow and overall commander was after looking around.

“Warrior Shisai greets the Pareia's Great Glow Yulian Provoke-nim under orders of the Kriping's wise Glow Edona Moninetz.”

“Warrior Kutao greets the Desert Conqueror, Desert War God, Yulian Provoke-nim under orders of the Gutita's Glow Allai Schultz.”

Warrior Shiapa greets Pareia's Great Glow, Yulian Provoke-nim under orders of the Idera's Glow Motatat Kurichi.”

“Speak.”

Once Yulian gave them permission to speak, the Kiriping's Shisai started to speak.

“Glow Allai Schultz has indicated that he wishes for Gutita to become loyal to Yulian-nim.”

Once Shisai went, the other two men shared similar messages. After hearing their messages, Yulian had a bright smile on his face. The thing he was most worried about had disappeared.

If they were to receive an opposition from the Kiriping while they were here, the Shuarei would be able to completely take control of the Idera tribe and start to attack the Gutita tribe.

But Yulian was happy seeing all three tribes accepting Pareia's condition for their surrender.

To be honest, this decision was a calculated one by the three Glows.

If they were going to have to surrender in the end anyways, they would have to pick either Pareia or Shuarei. Picking Pareia was hands down a much better decision for them.

The different reforms that Pareia attempted had gone past Pareia and resonated with the other tribe's warriors and women. In addition, Pareia was safer than other tribes, especially with their recent campaign into the continent where they gained the plains and no longer had to worry about food. No matter what, the scale tilted in Pareia's favor over the Shuarei.

Pareia quickly started moving south, gathering each of the three tribe's warriors along the way to increase their numbers.

"What did you just say?!"

Venersis shouted in shock after hearing the messenger warrior's report. He could not come up with an answer. Just how fast can they move on the quicksand river that Pareia managed to get to the north before they did? Venersis just could not understand.

And for them to be heading south now, their speed moving south was sure to be even faster than their speed moving north.

"All units increase their speed as much as possible. We need to take as many oases before Pareia makes their way down."

Venersis called the Greatest Warriors over to give that command before deciding to personally rush to the north first.

Although Pareia moved south as fast as possible, the Shuarei's speed moving north was almost at a similar pace. In the end, the two powers clashed around the middle of the Idera territory.

The first battle was won by Pareia with their overwhelming numbers and difference in momentum. However, thanks to Venersis's efficient decision-making and order to retreat, they did not manage to get enough progress to really call it a victory. The

two War Gods moved according to their intuition, but did not manage to run each other at all.

Maybe it was because their respective intuitions recognized the other as their greatest danger.

The two powers clashed a couple times, but the two men did not meet either time. It was already an established fact that one of them would surely die if the two of them met in battle.

However, the two men had to meet again because of the sense of upcoming crisis.

Both Pareia and Shuarei have remained on either side of the Eagle Seeking Oasis for close to one month.

The last battle had been a week ago, so both Yulian and Venersis were heading to battle with the mindset that they would achieve definite victory in this next battle.

Pareia's forces totaled 50,000. Of them, 40,000 were warriors while the remaining 10,000 were Heavy Armor Infantry. The Shuarei army was similar in size, with 35,000 warriors and 20,000 crossbowmen and Heavy Armor Infantry they received as reinforcement from the Southern continent.

There were multiple locations throughout the desert with small scale battles, but this next battle should be the battle to determine who will be the standing power in the Western Desert.

“All units, charge!”

Yulian shouted loudly to increase the morale as he headed out in the front. Seeing Yulian move, the Shuarei moved their crossbowmen forward to start shooting arrows.

Crossbows shot further than bows and were known for their piercing abilities, but in return, they took at least twice as long to fire. As a result, they would only manage to shoot a few arrows before they were attacked by Pareia's warriors.

“All units charge!”

Venersis seemed to know that as well as he ordered the warriors to charge forward after shooting just two rounds of crossbows.

You could not really say who had the advantage.

The Shuarei’s decision to not charge at the same time as Pareia and instead attack with the crossbows did injure Pareia’s vanguard and lower the strength of the charge, but Pareia’s warriors who had gained speed were rushing toward them at scary speeds.

The reason Yulian shouted and ordered a charge even when he knew the enemy had crossbowmen was to gather the speed from charging first. If they were the same strength, the shamshir coming from a faster running pirma would always be stronger.

Pareia’s warriors instantly pierced through the Shuarei’s vanguard.

“We cannot let them take even an inch!”

Venersis shouted loudly as he urged his warriors forward, before personally stepping in to start breaking apart the formation of the charging warriors from Pareia.

However, Venersis has to debate about his action as Yulian was rushing toward the Shuarei’s main forces at the same time.

It would be difficult if his main force’s formation became a mess. Many of the other units were moving with the main force as a focal point.

Yulian also had to be concerned once Pareia’s vanguard was about to be broken apart by Venersis. They didn’t even have a strategy from the beginning.

According to Runa, since both Yulian and Venersis had abilities that transcended human limitations, if both of them were at the same level, Pareia should win in a battle of strength between the warriors. Believing that to be true, Runa asked Yulian to just push

forward in a battle of strength.

Runa believed that if they tried to strategize against Venersis, the warriors would not be able to show off all of their strengths.

Yulian made up his mind to break apart the Shuarei's main force first and chaotically started to run through the enemy formation, while Venersis started to do the same for Pareia's formation.

Thanks to the two of them, the two formations became intertwined and started to fiercely attack one another.

A bloody battle.

As a disgusting amount of blood was being spilled in the battle, Yulian and Venersis finally came face to face.

Neither of them said anything. They just glared at each other to try to look an opening.

“Huuuuff ... Hooooooooo.....”

The noise of the two men's rough breathing was the only thing showing their wills to one another. It was their way of saying that they were right here.

In the end, the battle was first started by the Red Storm and the Desert Sword. Both warrior brigades desired to create an advantageous environment for their leader. Furthermore, this would be the battle right before the two individuals started to fight. If they won, wouldn't it give their side a sense of relief?

Claaaaaaaang~!

A loud noise of weapons clashing echoed through the desert as the Red Storm started to exchange blows with the Desert Sword. Both sides were fighting harder than they had ever fought before. They were both the groups that represented their individual formations.

Although the Red Storm had less members than the Desert Sword, the Red Storm warriors' skills were superior to the Desert

Sword warriors. The Red Storm started to slowly push back the Desert Sword.

“Shall we start?”

Venersis focused all of his attention on Yulian and opened his mouth.

“Our unfinished battle. Let us finish it today. You will not bode well to think I am the same as the me of the past. I hope you do not have a reason to lose your focus.”

Yulian was burning with courage as he answered back. The last time he battled against Venersis, Venersis was one step higher than him and could leisurely inspect the Shuarei’s formation even in the middle of their battle. That difference in power had always been on Yulian’s mind.

But he believed that such a situation would not happen again today. He could tell that he became stronger after returning from the Hero’s Land, and his inner ki was getting stronger and stronger as time went by. He was no longer that twenty year old fresh chick of a warrior.

Venersis seemed to understand that as well. Venersis stopped paying attention to his surroundings and only focused his attention on Yulian.

“Yaaaaaaaap~!”

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

The two men’s shout echoed across the battlefield.

Claaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaang~!

Book 6-3.3

The two of their clash sounded like thunder, and their swings caused rough sword winds to appear. Each of their movement seemed to be strong enough that no one else would be able to block it, and feeling each other's strength made both of their bloods start to boil.

Boooooooooooooong~!

The greatsword started to cut through the wind.

Yulian ignored putting up any defense, as if this was an all-or-nothing battle. He just swung his greatsword to the left and to the right, showing his desire to cut Venersis in half. Venersis clenched his teeth tightly before crouching his body close to the pirma in order to dodge one of Yulian's greatswords. The strength of the sword made Venersis feel the chills. Yulian was fighting as if he did not care if he died together with Venersis.

"Fine then."

Venersis shouted loudly as he swung his shamshir from top to bottom. He needed to show Yulian his will as well.

Yulian took turns parrying Venersis's strong and fast attack with his two greatswords.

Claaaaaaaaaaaaang~!

A pain that made him feel like his wrist was going to fall off pierced through his wrist. The weight of the greatsword only added on to intensify the pain.

Drop.

One of Yulian's greatswords fell down.

However, Yulian did not even flinch as he grabbed the remaining greatsword with both hands and pushed forward.

What was the result?

At that instant, the two weapons missed each other and headed for the other person's body.

A life for a life.

From top to bottom, from bottom to top, both of them were slashed by the other's weapon.

"Glow!"

"Leader!"

The Red Storm and Desert Sword were both carefully watching Yulian and Venersis's battle, before turning pale after seeing both men fall off their pirms at the same time. Both sides tried to rush toward their leader, but the opposition was intense.

They both knew that if the other brigade reached their leader first, their leader's life would be in danger.

The battle between the two brigades intensified for a bit, but it could not last long.

They both used their gazes to come to a temporary truce.

Both brigades slowed down their attacks as they approached their respective leaders and retrieved them to safety. Neither side looked back as they rushed toward their main forces with their leader in tow.

"Grroooooooooan....."

Yulian opened his eyes with a small moan.

"Hmm?"

He could feel some weight on his legs. Yulian lifted his body up a bit and looked down, only to find Grace and Violet on either side of the bed, leaning their heads on his legs and dozing off.

'What is going on?'

Yulian looked at his two wives and felt the pain throughout his body as he started to think about what happened to him.

“Ah!”

Yulian finally remembered what had happened to him. He had felt pain in his chest after taking Venersis’s blow and had lost consciousness.

“I lived.”

Yulian found it odd that he was still alive. If Venersis did not allow him to leave alive, there was no way he would still be sitting here like this.

‘Now that I think about it, did I feel some impact on my sword as well?’

Yulian thought about that moment as he opened and closed his right hand and just sat there blinking. He then started to smile.

He was certain that if his blow did not manage to land, Venersis would have definitely taken his life.

“These girls.”

Yulian bent his waist to caress his wives’ heads.

“Ugh.”

He felt an intense pain running through his chest.

As soon as Yulian let out a groan, Grace and Violet both raised their heads as if they had made a promise to get up at the same time.

“Yulian-nim.”

The two women jumped up and put their hands on Yulian’s chest and back, before carefully laying him back down.

“You have a very serious injury. I really thought you were going to die, honey.”

Yulian lightly smiled at Grace’s words.

“Would I die and leave you and Violet behind? Do not worry too much.”

“Do not take your injury lightly. Yulian-nim, you have been laying here unconscious for over half a month already.”

“That long?”

Yulian was completely shocked at Violet’s words.

“Yes. Your injuries were so severe that no one could guarantee your survival. You don’t know how worried everyone has been.”

“What about the war? What happened to Venersis?”

There would be a significant impact on the war with him being out of action for half a month. If Venersis’s injury was not severe, Pareia would have faced a lot of issues. Yulian quickly asked once he came to that realization.

“We have called a truce. We needed Yulian-nim’s approval, but since Yulian-nim remained unconscious, I made the decision.”

If something happens to Yulian, all authority to make decision went to Grace. That was how important the role of the Mother of Pareia was to the tribe.

“The Shuarei accepted the truce? What were the conditions?”

Grace lightly shook her head and responded.

“It was actually the Shuarei who suggested the truce first. I just agreed to their request.”

“The Shuarei requested it first? Then Venersis?”

“We suspect that he must have received a significant injury as well. That was what the Red Storm warriors indicated they saw, and if Venersis was not heavily injured, there would be no reason for the Shuarei to suggest a truce first.”

“Huu~ that is a relief.”

Yulian let out a sigh of relief.

Violet started to speak.

“You need to first put all your energy into your recovery. The

Greatest Warriors are taking care of the warriors right now, and Runa-nim is serving as the commander right now so there should not be much issues.”

“Please call Runa, Greatest Warrior Egane, and Haisha. We need to prepare our defenses. We cannot trust the Shuarei’s Glow.”

Yulian recalled his past memories and started to speak. He recalled how they were caught off guard from a truce and how that led to his mother’s death.

“Of course we have already set up our defenses. Pareia’s warriors are ready to go at any moment. We are just not marching forward to attack. That is the same for the Shuarei as well.”

Yulian nodded his head at Grace’s response and answered.

“Mm, but still please call those three over. I need to at least hear what is going on right now.”

“Yes.”

Yulian finally let out a sigh of relief before speaking to his two wives once more.

“I’m sorry for causing both of you to worry. It looks like neither of you got any rest. Please don’t worry about me and get some rest.”

The two women were exhausted, having taken turns without sleeping to nurse Yulian. They both had thick dark circles under their eyes and their skin was extremely rough. The only things that were neat was their hair and outfits, as they needed to take care of business on Yulian’s behalf during the day. They needed to look put together to deal with the tribe.

Now that they confirmed that Yulian was okay, the two women did not decline and headed back to their paoes to get some rest.

A bit later, Runa, Egane, and Haisha all entered Yulian’s paoe at the same time.

“Glow, are you okay?”

“We worried a lot.”

As the three men each said something to Yulian, Yulian ignored the pain and lifted up his arm and clenched his fist.

“Your Glow is this healthy.”

“We’re glad you are okay. There are a lot of items that require your approval. Grace-nim has been taking care of nursing you back to health while taking care of the necessities, so we could not dare to ask her about them.”

Egane and Haisha both frowned after hearing what Runa just said, but Runa did not seem to care.

“Haha...ha.....”

Yulian was starting to laugh before frowning from pain.

“Runa, you are talking like your usual self. However, I am more interested in the current situation. Grace told me a bit about it, but what is going on?”

“There is nothing special about it. The Shuarei called for a truce and Grace-nim accepted it. Although we thought it was a great opportunity since Venersis was significantly injured, Grace-nim indicated that it would be fine to attack once the Glow woke back up. As a result, I could not go against her order.”

“Ha...ha...alright. It is a bit disappointing as it was a good opportunity, but do not hold a grudge for Grace choosing not to attack.”

“I would not dare to do so. I just wanted to let you know about the situation. We have also tried our best to figure out whether Venersis is still alive, but the security around Venersis’s palace is so tight that it is extremely difficult to infiltrate. However, we can at least be certain that he has received significant injuries. If not, they would not have missed this opportunity when you were

missing to attack us.”

Yulian grabbed Runa’s hand and answered back.

“You’ve worked hard. Greatest Warrior Egane.”

“Yes, Glow.”

Egane, who had really become an old man now, responded with concern in his eyes. Yulian straightened his back a bit to make eye contact with Egane before continuing to speak.

“How is the defense going? I believe you know what the Shuarei has done in the past when they called for a truce.”

“How could I forget about it? It was this Egane’s stupidest moment.”

This veteran warrior had never forgotten the fact that they lost Yulian’s birth mother, the Mother of Pareia, because of his and two other Greatest Warriors’ being caught off guard. It probably pained Egane just as much as it pained Yulian.

“Although it may be called a truce, there are still small scale battles of around one hundred per side continuing to happen. We are also not preventing them from happening. We thought it would be best to let them continue to fight in order to prevent the Shuarei from suddenly attacking us and catching us off guard. In addition, the warriors are all still prepared to go into battle. We are able to launch an attack at any time.”

Yulian put on a satisfied smile at this veteran warrior’s stern response. Egane’s actions were fitting of one of Pareia’s proud Greatest Warriors.

“Haisha!”

“Yes, Glow.”

“You fought against the Desert Sword. How did it go?”

“If the Desert Sword did not have so many people, we would have been able to kill at least half of them. However, we were not able to

deal much damage as they had at least ten or so more people than we have.”

“I was asking about any injured Red Storm warriors, Haisha.”

Haisha raised up his palms to create an X after hearing Yulian’s statement and proudly answered.

“There are no deaths in the Red Storm. However, Baraba and three others did receive decently significant injuries. The rest only received minor injuries that we do not need to be concerned about.”

Yulian smiled with satisfaction once again. If he could just completely overpower Venersis, Pareia would be able to be stronger than the Shuarei in every aspect.

“Good, good.”

Yulian said good many times over and over before telling all of them to properly carry out their orders. He then sent them away and laid back down on the bed.

With his body being so tired, he quickly fell back asleep.

End of Chapter

Book 6-4.1

Advancement

Internal Affairs, Diplomacy, Military. Pareia did not want to miss out on any of these.

“I am extremely disappointed.”

Yulian, who was starting to slowly recover and could now move his body a little bit, mumbled while coming out of his paoe and staring at the Shuarei warriors in the distance. Runa smiled and answered as if he was trying to console Yulian.

“Do not feel anxious, Glow. There is no way for the Shuarei to defeat Pareia now. As time goes on, Pareia will be able to take control of everything without putting in much effort.”

“Shouldn’t we still be a bit wary? I wish for the unification of the desert.”

“I know. But your injury is not something that will get better in a month or two. Even if Venersis received a similar degree of injury as you, it is more dangerous in my opinion to go into battle and potentially end up fighting against Venersis without you. Just in case he is able to fight.”

Yulian nodded his head.

“He really is an amazing individual. Just by his mere existence alone he can cause so much pressure.”

“It is the same for you, Glow. In a way, you and Venersis are very similar.”

To be honest, Yulian was happy with Runa’s comparison. Although Venersis was his enemy, Venersis was still regarded as the strongest warrior in the desert. He was the greatest man in the desert.

Of course he himself will become wiser and gain more experience

once he reached that age. Although Yulian had the confidence to be on par with Venersis in all aspects in the future, the current him was not there just yet.

‘Yes, not... not yet.’

Although Venersis did something cowardly and broke a truce to ambush Pareia in the past, Yulian knew that Venersis was acting under the Shuarei’s Glow, Hangry Elbotta’s command. He also learned that his mother’s death was an accident as well. One of the Desert Sword warriors who was captured in the last battle informed Yulian of everything.

In addition, Venersis had saved his life once and Pere’s life twice. Venersis may be his sworn enemy, but he was also his lifesaver at the same time. Yulian had a hard time trying to balance the two in his mind.

It did not make Yulian very happy.

‘If he was not my enemy, no, if he was not a Greatest Warrior of our bitter enemy the Shuarei, we could probably share a drink with each other

“Glow, what are you thinking so hard about?”

Seeing Yulian deep in his thoughts, Runa decided to ask.

“I’m just thinking about how disappointing it is.”

Runa, who took that as Yulian feeling disappointed that his injury prevented them from taking an opportunity for victory, continued with a bright expression.

“Ah! Do not worry about it too much. The Shuarei will soon become chaotic due to discord within the tribe.”

“Internal discord?”

Runa answered after seeing Yulian being so shocked.

“I heard that the Shuarei’s Glow, Hangry Elbotta, will not be able to live much longer. His successor has not had his coming-of-age

ceremony yet, so if he dies, they will need to select a new Glow.”

“Unless it is a sudden death, they would already have planned for it. What is the problem there?”

“The problem is the fact that Venersis and the other Greatest Warriors do not have a good relationship. No matter who succeeds Glow Elbotta as the new Glow, there will be issues. We also gave some orders to our moles to help rile things up as well.”

“I do not wish to use the sorrows of others as a strategy. In addition, in the end, they will all become part of our Pareia. I do not wish to rile things up during their time of chaos.”

“If that is the Glow’s will, I will do as you wish.”

Runa must have felt things would be enough as is, as he did not say anything else before agreeing with Yulian’s wishes.

“Then what should we do now?”

“It is time for us to grow our strength. The warriors are tired after a long war, and the families are longing for their fathers. We also have a lot of things to take care of, so let us maintain the truce with the Shuarei and just sit back and watch what happens with them. The war will be best if we wait until their internal discord to start again.”

“Mm...I’ll think a bit more about that.”

Yulian said that before slowly starting to move his body.

“I should go take a look around.”

Runa responded cautiously at Yulian’s words.

“You have already been out in this cold wind for a long time. Please get some rest.”

“How can you call the desert wind cold? In fact, this hot breeze is helping me heal, so do not worry too much. If I don’t show myself every so often, there might be rumors that I am dead.”

“Please do not say something like that even if it is just a joke.”

Seeing Runa turn pale as he said that, Yulian smiled before starting to walk once more.

Many warriors showed their respects with worried expressions on their faces after seeing their Glow push his injured body to move around.

“They seem to be worried about me as well.”

“Everybody cares about your health Glow. Your swift recovery is better than any other words of encouragement. They might even think that the Glow needs to patrol like this because he does not trust them.”

“No way

Yulian became extremely nervous at Runa’s words.

“I do not say anything that is not true. I just listen to the truth and speak it. That is my way of life.”

“Hmph. Fine. I will return. It will be best to call everyone tomorrow to hear their opinions as well.”

“I understand. I will prepare for it.”

The Greatest Warriors started to gather at Yulian’s paoe starting very early the next morning. When it came to war-related discussions, the Greatest Warriors’ suggestions held more sway than the oasis chiefs.

If they said war is doable, it was doable, while if they said it was not, it was not.

Even though Yulian was the Glow, this big issue of either continuing the war or maintaining the truce was something he needed to listen to the Greatest Warriors’ opinions.

“Now that we have confirmed that there is no danger to the Glow’s life, we need to announce our desire to go back to war. If Venersis cannot take part because of his injuries from his battle

with the Glow, we are confident about our chances of victory.”

The people who pushed the strongest for continuing the war were Greatest Warriors Egane and Vibli. These two veteran warriors of hundreds of battles were saying that the Shuarei without Venersis was like a wild animal without its teeth and claws. They thought this was the opportunity to completely defeat the Shuarei.

Egane and Vibli had already aged past fifty and could feel that their energy was not what it used to be. Although their sword and strength still remained the same, it was different than their energy, which was required for their vitality

Nobody could stop the changes that occurred with time, so the two veteran warriors really wanted to see Pareia unify the desert while they were still alive.

They were also concerned that the pressure on Yulian might increase once they died as well.

“But our warriors are exhausted right now. Furthermore, even without shedding any blood, in about two years time, the plans I have set into motion in our Pareia will allow us to have an overwhelming difference in strength with the Shuarei. At that point, we will be able to take down the Shuarei with much less damage. We need to maintain the truce right now.”

And the one to strongly push for maintaining the truce was Runa.

From the moment they had agreed to a truce with the Shuarei, Runa had thought a lot about Pareia’s internal affairs as well. He then came to the conclusion that they only needed two years to have enough strength to easily oppress the Shuarei.

“No matter how much strength we may gain, by that time, Venersis will be back at full strength and return to battle. The numbers advantage does not matter when you are fighting against

Venersis. Greatest Warrior Runa, I know that fact way too well.”

Once Vibli challenged Runa’s words, Runa bowed his head toward the old warrior who was surprisingly passionate for his age.

“This Runa knows very well that Greatest Warrior Vibli is a warrior who our Pareia cannot do without, as well as someone who has the greatest strength, strategy, and field vision in battle. I also want to thank you because your presence allows me to create many strategies that I normally would not be able to use.”

Vibli became a bit nervous seeing Runa suddenly praise him like this, before lightly nodding his head and responding.

“I also know very well that Greatest Warrior Runa is a vital part of our Pareia.”

“Then please trust me. If there is something Greatest Warrior Vibli does not know about, it is the fact that there may be internal discord within the Shuarei.”

Everyone looked toward Runa with shocked expressions as if they were hearing this for the first time.

“Of course it does not change the fact that Venersis will remain alive. However, at that time, even that Venersis will not be able to defend against our Pareia’s warriors. That is the reason I am pushing so hard for maintaining the truce.”

Runa’s explanation made many people change their minds.

“In addition, even if that internal discord does not happen, I ask you to think about Pareia that will become much stronger in two years time. If we lose our young warriors now, achieving that level of strength will be delayed by a few years.”

Everybody started to whisper to each other loudly. Even Vibli and Egane seemed to be contemplating things after hearing Runa’s explanation.

The meeting that began early in the morning finally ended after the sun reached its apex in the sky.

Pareia decided to maintain its truce with the Shuarei.

Many people were extremely happy to see the end of the war. It really was true that the warriors were having a difficult time with the extended war.

The people who had originally pushed for continuing the war were relieved after looking at the people's reactions as well. If it was so difficult for them to show this type of reaction, it would have been difficult for them to perform at their best if the war had continued.

Yulian decided that he would rest a bit after returning to the Castle of Storm as well. It had been so long that he might forget his children's faces. It was also time to teach his children the foundation for martial arts.

‘How should I start their training?’

Yulian was happy with this concern he faced. He couldn't believe that he already had a son and that it was time to teach his son martial arts.

Although Verikan and Kiness were only four years old, learning the foundation was something you could do from a young age.

“You're going to teach Kiness as well?”

Grace cautiously asked. Back in the days, she had trained with Yulian and the Red Storm herself.

It was because she knew very well about Yulian's training method that she was worried. Furthermore, it was natural for Grace to worry. With Verikan and Kiness being his own children, he might be even stricter with them.

“It is because she is our child. Based on what I have heard, Kiness has joined Verikan in chasing after the second generation Red

Storm.”

Grace started to frown after hearing Yulian’s answer.

“That is only because her older brother is doing it. She’s just doing what her brother does. I cannot allow it.”

“What’s going on with you? I thought you would be the one pushing for her to be trained.”

“No matter what, you cannot train Kiness. It would be better to leave her to Violet.”

Yulian found Grace’s expression to be funny and started to laugh as he responded.

“Hahaha. As you wish. But Verikan needs to start training now in order to not suffer later. I also want to train him to a decent level before master gets back. Do you think master will not help Verikan to grow even stronger?”

“Ah! Now that you mention it, there hasn’t been any contact with your master, has there?”

Yulian nodded his head as his expression darkened.

“That is one of my concerns these days. He’s extremely strong so he has no concerns about his own safety, but he is getting older in age. I can’t help but be worried. I tried to get any information about him using different methods, but there is still nothing.”

“Do not worry too much. This is the only place he calls home in this world.”

“I am trying not to, but I know he must have heard at least a couple things about me by now. But he still has not come back to visit even once.”

Yulian really started to worry now that Chun Myung Hoon was brought up. Although he didn’t know his master’s exact age, he did know that his master was old enough that something could happen at any moment.

“I need to send out some more people. I will be relieved as long as I can verify that he is still alive.”

“That sounds like a good idea. Now that Edwin-nim can traverse through both the Eastern and Western continents, it might be a good idea to ask him for help.”

“Yes, that is good. I should do it now before I forget.”

Yulian and Grace were able to relax and chat like this for the first time in a long time.

“Glow!”

“What is going on?”

Yulian frowned as the shout from the outside seemed to ruin this long overdue moment with Grace.

“A guest has come to visit.”

“A guest?”

“He said you would know if we mentioned that his name is Mai-nim.”

Yulian jumped up from his seat and headed out of the paoe.

“Did you just say Mai-nim?”

“Yes, Glow.”

“Where is he now?”

“We escorted him into the guest room.”

Yulian turned to look at Grace at the servant’s report and started to speak.

“Grace, come with me. I have someone to introduce to you.”

Grace quickly got up and started to walk next to Yulian once she heard it was Mai-nim. She had already heard everything about this guest from Yulian.

Book 6-4.2

Once they entered the guest room, a weak and skinny looking Mai turned his head and started to smile, and Luff, who gave off an aura of ‘I am a strong person,’ quickly started to approach Yulian.

“Mai-nim, Luff-nim.”

Yulian hugged Luff tightly as he welcomed them.

“Yulian, why didn’t you come visit? I wanted to see you.”

“That is the same for me as well, Luff-nim.”

“Hmm? Who is this woman?”

Luff’s eyes turned wide while still hugging Yulian as he looked toward Grace and asked.

“She is my wife. Her name is Grace Nellisi.”

After Yulian’s introduction, Luff let go of Yulian and approached Grace.

“Luff!”

“Kya!”

The moment Mai urgently called out, Luff had hugged Grace.

“Grace, you’re pretty.”

As Luff lifted Grace high into the air, Mai had an embarrassed look on his face as he started to speak.

“I completely forgot about this. Grace-nim, please do not be offended at this. Luff, quickly let her go.”

Luff was disappointed at Mai’s command, but he let her go and just started to smile toward Grace.

“This is not the first time he’s caused me trouble because of this. Please understand.”

As Mai started to explain to Yulian, Yulian started to laugh and

respond to Luff.

“Luff hyung-nim, isn’t our Grace beautiful?”

“Yes. Beautiful. Very beautiful. As beautiful as the princess-nim.”

Mai bitterly smiled at Luff’s response as he explained.

“Luff is talking about the Rojini Kingdom’s Bella princess-nim.”

Yulian had heard a long time ago that Mai and Luff had relations with the Rojini Kingdom.

“Did you eat already?”

“Did not eat. Am hungry.”

Grace smiled brightly at Luff’s response and quickly left the room. Yulian offered both Mai and Luff a seat.

“I was surprised when they said it was you. I did not expect you to suddenly come visit me like this. I was planning on going back to visit you once things settled down a bit.”

“You are amazing. We heard the stories on our way over. Did your dream become a reality now?”

“Not just yet. I still have a strong rival left to defeat.”

“That is a problem.”

Yulian was confused at Mai’s response and asked.

“What do you mean?”

“I was hoping that you would have completely unified the desert. Or at least control the entire desert.”

“Does that mean

Yulian seemed to understand and started to ask as Mai nodded his head.

“Correct. The seal has been broken. I cannot say for sure, but a large number of monsters will start to pour out of it. It will return to the ages of old.”

“The ages of old

Yulian mumbled what Mai had just said.

“The age of old. Monsters will start to rise all over the continent. Then the hidden forces may start to once again appear in the world in order to protect their race as well.”

Yulian nodded his head at Mai’s words.

Although it was not recorded in great detail, the previous era was one where there were significantly more monsters living in the world. Incantations were more developed than present day, and they also had a lot more warriors. At least until the fight for power in the continent began.

“What do we have to do now?”

Mai let out a small sigh at Yulian’s question before slowly starting to speak.

“We need to prepare. As I mentioned before, the person that will receive the most pressure is you, Yulian. The center of it all is right here in the desert. Only a small number of monsters will spawn in the continents, the majority will spawn right here.”

“I do not think I will not be able to handle them. Our warriors are strong.”

“Of course humans will not lose to monsters. But what I am worried about is the humans. I cannot say with certainty because I have not figured everything out yet, but how will you be able to handle a horde of monsters in the middle of a war? It really will become dark times if you cannot put your strength together to fend them off.”

Yulian tightly closed his lips for a moment. It was like he was meeting a hidden enemy. He had completely forgotten about it, but after hearing Mai’s words just now, he could see the seriousness of the situation. He had enough experience in the Monster’s Desert; they would not have any time to think about war

if the entire desert became like the Monster's Desert.

After a long duration of silence, Yulian finally started to speak.

“We will prepare. We will make sure to prepare enough.”

Mai's eyes started to shine at Yulian's responses.

‘I guess it is his Mandate from Heaven.’

Even in the desert, a hero, one of the chosen ones, was starting to shine.

“I need to let the continent know. I need to send the message to many kingdoms and Empires. The time of Chaos is quickly approaching. It is not time for humans to be fighting with each other right now. You have the biggest burden in all of this.”

“The desert is my home. I am just protecting the things I need to protect. I am the Glow.”

“Many heroes will come to you. Looking past their identity and nationality, they will all come find you to prevent the time of Chaos.”

Yulian seemed to feel less pressure after hearing Mai's words and lightly smiled as he answered.

“Warriors respect and enjoy the company of other warriors.”

“Nobody knows when it will be. The time will ambush us like a thief.”

“I will make sure to be ready for anything.”

“Yulian, I trust you. Let's push through this together.”

“Let's win together.”

As Luff smiled and repeated what they said, Yulian grabbed Luff's hand as he continued.

“Let's go eat now.”

“Huu~ it could have been really bad.”

He could see a shabby looking man sighing in relief when he barely managed to open his eyes.

“Glow!”

“Do you know how many days you have been laying here for?”

His heart wanted to cry after realizing that this person had been by his side the whole time.

“What happened to the war?”

“We called a truce.”

“What?”

“A truce. Thankfully, it looks like Pareia’s young Glow received significant injuries as well.”

He lightly bit down on his lips to come back to his senses.

“So disappointing. It was a great opportunity.....”

He knew these words were not necessary. However, he felt like he needed to say something.

“Do you think war would be possible without you? Who in the Shuarei can handle Pareia right now other than you?”

“Glow ... our Shuarei warriors are strong. Please do not look down on them too much.”

“The enemy warriors are just as strong. Especially the enemy’s Greatest Warriors. They are very very strong.”

He was angry that he could not give a rebuttal to that statement. The Shuarei needed to get stronger right now when Pareia was getting stronger. Their internal discord prevented them from growing their strength in the past, and that moment of difference was responsible for the growing gap between Pareia and Shuarei. In fact, it was so late now that they could not even do anything about it.

“There is still an opportunity. It starts now. We shortened the

gap, and can take them on. Please set your resolve firmly. I am still here, Glow. Please do not forget that I am here for you.”

There was an oddly bitter smile.

“I really hope that is the case. Please. That is the only way for my terrible self to be able to face my father.”

“Glow!”

He could not help but become extremely shocked at the GLOW’s words. How strong did this Glow of his look while they were expanding their territory? He seemed to have been full of vitality. So why... why would he say something like this all of a sudden?”

“Segunira has told me. The Lord is calling me.”

“.....?”

“It is the same illness as my father. It is hereditary. This stupid unknown illness that runs in my family.”

“Glow. Please forget about that. Glow, your age is only

“Prepare yourself. I will push you forward with everything I have. If it is not you, who else can lead our Shuarei into the future?”

“Glow!”

“You do not have to be surprised. I was already aware of it long before we went into war. I just pushed myself a bit more in order to prevent the warriors from finding out my condition. I was afraid that their morales would drop if they found out.”

He could feel a headache starting to set in. Just what was his Glow saying right now? This was just the beginning for their Shuarei. He was going to make this just the beginning. The Shuarei was going to prosper from here on out.”

“There should be something we can do. We can call in the doctors or priests who can supposedly perform healing incantations. There are many of them in the continent. It is too

soon for us to give up. It is too soon for YOU to give up on your life.”

The Glow shook his head. He seemed to have already resigned himself to his upcoming fate.

“Do not pay attention to things like that. It is not the time. My time is already up. If I had trusted you just ten years earlier ... no even five years earlier ...if I had trusted you back then ... then we

“Please do not say such weak words in front of me, Glow. I will be angry if you say something like that even once more.”

“That is why I am saying this to you. Please do not prevent this stupid Glow of yours from doing something for our Shuarei before I die.”

“Glow.....”

“Prepare yourself. Prepare yourself so that the Shuarei can become yours.”

He could feel his heart becoming full of frustration.

End of chapter.

Next up:

The Second Takeoff

Pareia was already an extremely strong nation.

Book 6-5.1

The Second Takeoff

Pareia was already an extremely strong nation.

“It was even greater than we expected it to be.”

Runa started to speak in an excited voice, which was not normal for him.

He was currently in the middle of reporting about the harvest from Fedore and the Henkel Plains. Because they did not allow any harm to come to the citizens when they were taking control of the regions, there were no losses when it came to the amount of grains harvested.

“Our biggest issue of food is pretty much resolved. Now we just have to think about increasing our population.”

“Congratulations.”

Edwin looked back and forth between Yulian and Runa as he congratulated both of them on this achievement. Yulian did not hide his grin as he started to speak.

“Edwin, it is thanks to you. Everything you have done until now for our Pareia has allowed us to achieve the things we have achieved today.”

“Hahaha. Please do not praise me too much as I have received just as much gains as well.”

Edwin could not hide his joy either. He felt like he could use a word he did not use very often. Jackpot. He felt like he really hit the jackpot this time. He was finally starting to see the results of reinvesting all of the guild’s profits back into Pareia.

Furthermore, unlike the nobles of the continent, Pareia was not two-faced. Edwin liked that he did not have to worry about Pareia going back on its promises to him.

“I guess it is time for us to slowly pay Edwin-nim back for everything we have borrowed. The northern area of the Western Desert is also under our control now, so we can open a complete desert path for you. Your trip should be much faster as you no longer have to go around in circles.”

Maybe Runa was finally giving Edwin a reward for all the times he had bugged him, but Runa was only saying things that Edwin found good to hear.

“I am actually kind of scared because things are going so well.”

As Edwin acted a bit modest, Yulian and Runa both started to laugh and respond.

“We have now arrived at a point to renegotiate our contract.”

‘As I expected!’

As Edwin started to scratch his head, Runa seemed to understand what Edwin was thinking and added on.

“The Glow still wishes for Edwin-nim to be in charge of our desert trade route.”

It made Edwin’s ears open wide. Didn’t this mean that he would continue to monopolize this trade route? Although there was a limit on the amount of materials he could personally trade, he could collect a usage fee for any other merchant guild that wishes to use this trade route. If he could continue to monopolize this route, he could use that to gain some extra profits.

Edwin started to smile widely as he answered.

“Of course we need to renegotiate the contract. It is time we get down to the tiny details. Hahahaha.”

“Aside from that, we have another condition, no a request for Edwin-nim.”

“You are making me scared once more. Every time the two of you have come to me like this, you have always made my heart drop.”

Runa shrugged both of his shoulders as if he accepted what Edwin had said to be true.

“It is kind of a different type of request this time.”

“Please speak. I am after all a foreign diplomat of Pareia. Hahaha. Plus, with the Glow and Runa-nim both relying on me like this, if this small merchant can do something to help, I should help.”

“There are a couple things that make me hesitate, but I do not think it will be difficult.”

“Please stop beating around the bush and explain the situation to me.”

Edwin urged Runa on after seeing Runa beating around the bush.

“I will say it. Runa is just worried about a couple things that might get in the way.”

Yulian started to speak in Runa’s stead.

“Now that the Silence Empire has sent an envoy to the Rojini Kingdom to call for a truce, the war should end in the near future. What do you think is the aftereffect of a war?”

“Aftereffect?”

“Indeed.”

“Of course it would be drafting new personnel to make up for the lost knights and soldiers, then the storage will become completely empty as they have to feed them.....”

Yulian cut Edwin off and explained further.

“I mean in regards to the citizens of the continent.”

“As for them, they will lack workers because the man of their family may have died in battle, and in serious situations, they would become homeless and not be able to farm even if they wanted to do so. That would then lead to starvation ...ah!”

Edwin realized what Yulian and Runa were aiming for as he

thought things out loud.

“I will not explain in detail as you seem to have figured it out. Do you think there is a way to do it?”

Edwin started to think. What Pareia wanted was not more land or even materials. People. They wanted more people.

“There are a lot of refugees after the war so it should not be impossible. The problem lies in safely getting them out of the continent to Pareia

“Based on what I have heard, the majority of the refugees from the Silence Empire tend to jump over to the Rojini Kingdom, and although the Rojini Kingdom has prepared for it for a long time, they are not able to take in more than a set number of refugees. Edwin-nim knows very well about that as well, right?”

Edwin responded to Runa’s question.

“Yes. That is indeed the case. A mass migration is currently happening. It is because the Rojini Kingdom is the best kingdom to live in for the citizens of the continent.”

“I wish to move that mass migration to our Pareia, to be more specific, to the Henkel Plains and Fedore region. We are receiving lessons on internal affairs from politicians of the Rojini Kingdom, and are actually better than the Rojini Empire in some aspects. Because of that, it should be better for them to live in Fedore or Henkel than the Rojini.”

“You mean?”

Runa nodded his head and responded.

“Yes. We hope for Edwin-nim’s merchant guild and other large merchant guilds to spread this news far and wide. We want them to know that Pareia is prepared to take in any and all refugees, and that we will provide food to be paid back without interest for those who are unable to feed themselves. Please also let them know that the safety of the region is even better now than before the war as

well.”

Edwin’s expression turned grim but Runa continued to speak.

“Furthermore, we wish to use branches of Edwin-nim’s merchant guild to guide any refugees here. Of course our Pareia will pay for any and all fees resulting from this endeavor. That is probably good for you to share with your guild.”

“That.....”

Edwin seemed worried. It was not difficult to spread the news. However, the problem was that no nation liked to see their people leave to go to another nation. If peace is returned and things become settled, Edwin’s guild would probably be banished for their help.

Edwin finally started to speak.

“Since you have decided to leave the trade route to me, it would not be a problem if we are banished from a couple large nations. I also have no desire for the Eastern Continent as there is already a large merchant guild that my guild cannot even touch that has a firm grasp on commerce in the continent.”

Edwin had a slightly cautious expression as he rubbed his two hands together before continuing to speak.

“However, do you think the nations would just sit back and watch their citizens migrate? They cannot do anything about mass migration from multiple locations, but my guild which is in a set location will end up being pushed out. They may also take our goods away and blame it on the fact that we are taking away their citizens.”

Runa seemed to understand Edwin’s concern as he started to think as well. He then put his hands on the desk before leaning his body toward Edwin and asking.

“I debated quite a bit about that issue already. What if we did something like this? If Edwin-nim wishes, our warriors can escort

you to different locations in the continent. How many branches of our guild are there?”

“If you are talking only about the Eastern continent, there are two each in the Rojini Kingdom and Silence Empire, and one in five different nations with decently active trading posts.”

Ha!

Once Edwin responded, Runa clapped his hands and replied.

“It will not be a problem if there are only nine of them. We will deploy our warriors.”

Edwin’s jaws dropped at Runa’s extremely simple response. Who would open up their borders if they are surrounded by warriors? Especially when the warriors with them will be Pareia’s warriors who are as famous as the Red Eagle Knights of the Rojini Kingdom.

“That might be

“It is not a problem if the number of warriors is not very high.”

“And what if they still choose to attack when we are being protected by the warriors?”

Yulian’s eyes opened wide at Edwin’s question.

Book 6-5.2

“Who would dare to attack our Pareia’s warriors?! Is there a nation that does not know about the strength of the desert’s shamshirs? Edwin, you can relax. If something like that happens, we will compensate you for your losses and pay back the debt of that blood even if we have to go to war with that nation.”

Edwin’s jaws dropped once more at Yulian’s stern words. These two people in front of him had really made up their minds. Even if it meant taking a risk, they were set on increasing Pareia’s population. Of course with Pareia’s current strength, it was something that was within their powers.

Even the Silence Empire had asked Pareia for a truce because they were afraid. WHO else would dare to step forward and attack Pareia? Right now, Pareia was the fastest growing and one of the strongest nations in the entire continent.

“Okay. I will work with you. However, please do not forget your promise that you will protect my merchants.”

“Have you ever seen our Glow go back on his words? We will definitely protect them.”

Runa responded in Yulian’s stead and continued to speak.

“If it is Edwin-nim’s merchants, we have no issues with them moving under Pareia’s flag. Then there really should be no issues.”

Edwin responded with joy. It was because he knew very well about the meaning of a flag for Pareia. The different chiefs, the Glow, the Greatest Warriors, each of Pareia’s flag meant authority within the tribe.

From the moment Edwin left toward the Eastern Continent with a large caravan once more, the rumor that Yulian and Runa hoped for started to spread like wildfire. The people who were homeless and the refugees who could not farm to feed themselves started to

migrate to Pareia in large numbers.

How could anybody resist when it was said to be even better conditions than the Rojini Kingdom?

In fact, some of the people who were living under oppressive and terrible lords were also using the chaos from the war to throw away their homes and lands to participate in this migration. There were so many people that even Runa, who was confident that they would be able to accept any number of refugees, was starting to get a bit nervous.

But thanks to that, Pareia's greatest issue of the male to female ratio finally started to get better little by little.

Pareia started to prepare for their transformation one step at a time.

"Are all of the preparations completed?"

"Yes, Glow. But will it really okay for me to be gone for a while?"

"It'll be fine. Relax and treat it like you are going on a vacation. Take good care of your wife while you are at it. Grace mentioned that your wife lives like a single mom."

Runa started to laugh as if he was embarrassed after hearing Yulian's words.

"Hahaha. It is true that I have not treated her very well."

"That is why treat this like you are going on a trip to a foreign nation. Do not worry about the tribe too much. There are a lot of things we need to do, but we have enough hands to get it done."

The Rojini Kingdom that had just completed their victory over the Silence Empire started to treat Pareia as a reliable ally after the significant amount of assistance that Pareia provided for them during the war. That was why the Rojini Kingdom's king had invited important members of Pareia to visit them, and after thinking things over, Yulian decided to send the Red Storm and

Runa.

It was a way to give all of them a short break as they were busier than anyone else in the tribe, but Runa had other reasons for agreeing to go.

The Rojini Kingdom, which has now pretty much become the strongest nation on the continent, had developed cultures, administrative offices, and methods of running a nation. By going on this visit, Runa would be able to see it all with his own eyes. Runa started to speak in a disappointed expression.

“I thought it would be great for all of us to visit together after we unify the desert.”

“There is nothing we can do about it right now. Just relax and don’t worry about anything while you are there.”

Yulian wished he could go as well, but he decided to stay back as he was still worried about the truce with the Shuarei.

“Haisha.”

“Yes, Glow.”

“Give Aizen my regards. I’m sure he will welcome all of you with open arms once he hears that you have arrived. Well, there should also be some entertainment as well?”

“Huh?”

Seeing that Haisha was confused, Yulian started to laugh.

“After seeing all of you last time, he was quite excited. He wanted to see how you would fare against hsi knight brigade. He mentioned that his knight brigade was touted as the strongest in the Rojini Kingdom, so there might be some sparring involved.”

“We will not embarrass you, Glow. The Red Storm is strong.”

As Haisha responded in disbelief, Yulian shook his head.

“No, I am worried about the opposite. I leave it to you to handle

things in moderation. Do not attack them like you are attacking me. It will become complicated if you embarrass them too much.”

Haisha started to smile after realizing what Yulian was trying to say.

The Glow was telling him to make sure the Red Storm did not destroy the knights and cause a rift in the relationship.

“Do not worry, Glow. I will respond accordingly to the situation.”

“Make sure you emphasize it thoroughly with the warriors. Most importantly, make sure that nobody gets hurt.”

“As you wish, Glow.”

Yulian nodded his head and continued.

“Alright. And I am saying this just to be safe, but Runa and the Red Storm. At least for this trip, do not fight with each other. I will be very angry if I hear about any conflict once you return.”

“There will be no such issues when we are in a foreign nation.”

“You are worrying too much. Please rest assured that we will be responsible.”

Yulian seemed to have said everything on his mind as he had a satisfied smile on his face.

“Then go ahead and go.”

“We shall be on our way then, Glow.”

Pareia’s caravan to respond to the Rojini Kingdom’s friendly invitation started to head out. Because it was an invitation from the king, the size had to be large in order to give face to the king.

The important individuals were Runa, Orca, and all of the Red Storm.

Yulian had originally wanted to send Pere, Egane, Vibli, to represent the Greatest Warriors, but Pere gave his education as an

excuse, and the other Greatest Warriors just said they did not wish to leave their homeland at their advanced age and declined.

As for Grace and Violet, they naturally did not want to go after knowing Yulian will be remaining in the tribe.

But there was someone just as important as Yulian and his wives included in the delegation. That person was none other than Yulian's son, Verikan.

At first, Yulian was not going to send Verikan because of his young age and Grace and Violet's opposition, but as it was a personal invitation from the king, they needed to give him face. Furthermore, Runa also suggested that this trip could benefit the Young Glow's future.

In the end, since the Rojini Kingdom had Aizen and both Runa and all of the Red Storm warriors were going as well, Yulian finally managed to convince his two wives to have Verikan join the delegation.

Since Yulian only had one son, this was showing a significant amount of respect to the Rojini Kingdom's king.

Verikan, who was now seven years old, was a bit nervous at the fact that he was leaving the desert for the first time. He held onto Runa's hand and asked about anything and everything he could see, and Runa did not seem to be annoyed even a little bit as he even thoroughly explained the things that Verikan did not specifically point out.

"Runa ahjussi, is it true that once we get out of the desert there are lands that are green?"

Although Verikan was the only son of the king and the Young Glow, warriors were existences that always needed to be respected in the desert. There was no way anyone, including the Young Glow, who had not had his coming-of-age ceremony could talk down to the warriors.

Furthermore, with Yulian's teachings being extremely harsh as they all knew, Runa and the Red Storm were always trying their best to raise this Young Glow's spirits.

"Yes, Young Glow. Once it becomes fall, that green land will become a golden land. The fields can then be harvested to become the food that we eat."

Verikan thought for a moment about Runa's response before asking another question.

"Then why is there only sand in the desert?"

"Each area has their own specialties. Just like how there are men and women, the different lands are divided as well. There are fertile lands you can harvest crops, forests with a lot of trees, and far far away, there are even lands that are entirely made of ice. Our Pareia just happens to be on top of the sand."

"So that's how it is."

As Verikan nodded his small head in understanding, everybody around him started to smile.

Once the delegation crossed the Henkel Plains and arrived at the entrance of the Henkel Gate, Verikan started to speak once more.

"My mother told me about this. She said that a lot of warriors shed their tears and blood to give us the Henkel Gate and the Henkel Plains. That is why we must make sure to never lose it."

Everyone's expressions changed. They had recalled the events of that battle.

Yulian had warned Orca before they left. Yulian explained that Runa and the Red Storm had some issues because of the Henkel Gate, but that they all let it go because they agreed it was the best method to achieve their goal. However, Yulian warned Orca to not touch on that painful memory.

"Verikan."

“Yes, uncle.”

“It is very important to remember history. However, let’s talk about something else right now. Is there anything else you are curious about?”

Verikan smiled at Orca’s question and asked.

“I heard that the continent is very different than our Pareia. So I’m really looking forward to seeing it.”

“Good. You must be tired. Let’s go in and get some rest so we can continue our trip and show you the continent.”

Haisha, who figured out what Orca was trying to do, quickly smiled and started to speak.

“Nobody knows what will happen in the future. It is possible that we will lose this place to the enemy. However, we just need to get it back then. Young Glow, the important thing is that our warriors not lose their courage.”

“I would prefer to learn the ways to prevent losing this place at all. My father has said that I will be allowed to train with the Red Storm ahjussis once I turn fourteen. I will learn diligently so that I can make sure we do not lose this land that the warriors have sacrificed so much to gain for us.”

Runa and the Red Storm smiled once more at Verikan’s cute words.

Once they entered the gate, Runa gathered the administrators to get a report on how things have been running. While Runa was delivering Yulian’s message as well as his own message to the administrators, Orca was discussing their travel route with Haisha.

Book 6-5.3

Although it took them longer, they chose to go through a neutral third nation to enter the Rjoini Kingdom rather than going through the Silence Empire. They then met up with the Rojini Kingdom's knights who were waiting for them at the border of the Rojini Kingdom.

Surprisingly, the commander of the knights was Aizen.

"It is great to see you again, Aizen-nim."

Orca and the Red Storm who were awed by Aizen's strength and personality during his visit to the desert greeted him, and Aizen also joyfully greeted the delegation back.

"His royal highness was concerned about all of your safety, so I have scouted the entire path all the way up here."

The fact that it was not a general knights brigade but the strongest knights brigade led by a master that came to greet them at the border was important. Of course, Aizen probably volunteered, but the important thing was that by allowing Aizen to do so, the Rojini Kingdom was giving Pareia face. Runa was extremely satisfied with this and responded back.

"Thank you very much. We can relax now thanks to your assistance. We were originally supposed to have someone with us who was familiar with the roads of the continent, but he had to take care of some issues and could not join us. We were worried that we would get lost."

"Hahaha. Once we enter the city, there is a straight path to the capital so you will not need to worry about getting lost."

Runa asked back in surprise.

"Are all cities like that?"

"Yes. All cities have a path leading directly to the capital."

Runa could not help but be shocked at the strength of the Rojini Empire after hearing Aizen's answer. It may sound easy, but it would take a lot of construction and maintenance to upkeep a path to the capital from all of their cities.

'They are indeed the strongest nation in the continent.'

Runa thought to himself internally and confirmed the original plan of taking back as much information back with him as possible. Even he could not learn all of this just by reading books.

"Verikan greets you, Uncle Aizen."

Verikan had heard a lot of stories about Aizen from Yulian. If his father considers this man his younger brother, then it was only right for him to call him uncle.

Verikan bowed while looking at the shiny red armor. He was extremely happy to see that such a cool looking knight was his uncle that he had heard so much about.

Aizen was shocked for a moment at the fact that Verikan called him uncle, before smiling brightly and greeting him back.

"You must be Verikan. I've managed to hear some stories about you through the messengers every so often. You have grown so much since the last time I saw you."

Aizen approached Verikan and lifted him high up into the air.

Although Verikan may have called Aizen uncle, Verikan was not Aizen's blood nephew. In addition, Verikan was Pareia's Young Glow. So for Aizen to do something like this, especially out in public in front of others and not in private, might seem like it was being disrespectful, none of the warriors seemed to care.

It was because they all knew that Yulian completely trusted Aizen.

"Uncle, is that shiny outfit what they call an armor?"

"Is this your first time seeing armor?"

“Yes. Our warriors do not wear anything other than clothes made of leather. Right, Haisha ahjussi?”

Haisha nodded his head as Verikan looked toward him and asked.

“Yes. However, that is just in the desert. There are times that the warriors of the Fedore region or the Henkel region wear armor.”

Verikan looked back and forth between Haisha and Aizen before asking.

“Then who is stronger?”

“Huh?”

Haisha and the other warriors flinched, while Aizen also let out a fake cough before responding.

“Verikan, that can change based on the time and location. Who is weak and who is strong cannot be determined just by whether they are wearing armor or not.”

Both the Red Storm and the knights that Aizen brought with him felt a sense of nervousness after hearing Aizen’s answer.

One side was the undefeated Red Storm, while the other side was the Red Eagle Knight Brigade, the strongest in the Rojini Kingdom.

In addition, the fact that both groups had the color red in their title made them competitive with each other for no reason.

Runa quickly looked toward Verikan and started to speak.

“Young Glow. If Haisha-nim and Shubeon-nim over there or Thrint-nim battled, who do you think will win?”

Verikan looked toward the three warriors Runa asked about and shook his head.

“Haisha ahjussi, Shubeon ahjussi, and Thrint ahjussi are all the best in the Red Storm. How could I tell who would win and who would lose?”

Clap.

Runa clapped his hand as soon as Verikan finished answering and responded back.

“Exactly. All of them are great warriors that it is hard to rank them.”

“Hahaha. But what we are sure of is that this uncle of yours is no match for your father.”

As Aizen laughed out loud and put Verikan back on top of the horse, Verikan started to happily laugh.

“My father is the best.”

“You are right. Hahaha.”

The delegation started to move again after meeting up with Aizen. But there was already an odd atmosphere between the Red Storm and the Red Eagle Knight Brigade.

The delegation that traveled up to the capital like they were on a tour was surprised as soon as they entered the capital.

A lot of people were on the sides of the street welcoming the delegation from a foreign nation. They could not tell whether the administrators specifically gathered people for this purpose or if they were doing it on their own accord, but the group who never expected to be greeted like this tried to look calm to maintain their elegance while internally they were completely confused.

Truthfully speaking, Pareia's fame was already so high that all of the citizens of the capital were aware of their accomplishments. It was not because Pareia was allies with the Rojini Kingdom; it was because they all knew that Pareia was the reason this past war ended so quickly.

Of course, some people were gathered by the administrators and the children were more interested in the coins that the foreign diplomats would shower upon them, but it was true that so many people were gathered here and made it feel like a festival.

Aizen handed out the coin pouches they had prepared in advance and informed the group.

“Please toss the coins.”

As the delegation showed confused expressions, Aizen explained it to them.

“You can consider this a tradition of sort. Although it was started in the past because there were a lot of poor citizens, it is not very bad so we have not made it forbidden.”

The delegation did not really understand it.

It would help if you gave a coin to each and every person, but just randomly tossing it like this was even lower than helping the homeless. If someone did something like this in the desert, it would hurt the other’s pride and would most likely lead to a battle.

But you are supposed to follow the laws of the land when you visit a foreign country, so Runa, as well as the other warriors, started to toss the coins as Aizen mentioned. Although they felt like it wasn’t right, the children excited started to pick up the coins.

“Uncle Aizen.”

“Hmm? Verikan, what is it?”

Verikan looked toward the children with a sad expression as he continued.

“Are all of these children homeless?”

Aizen started to think about how to explain it after seeing Verikan not understand, but he could not really come up with a good explanation.

“Young Glow, these children are not homeless.”

Seeing Aizen struggling, Runa, who was next to Verikan, stepped in to help.

“Then?”

“You know how our desert has the custom of the coming-of-age ceremony?”

“Yes.”

“This is also a custom of sort. So it would be rude to ignore it or to feel bad for the children.”

“Ah!”

Verikan finally seemed to understand as he started to nod his head.

The delegation entered the castle under that passionate welcome, and Orca, Verikan, Runa, and Haisha went as representatives to meet with King Finn Rojini III.

“Orca Provoke greets his royal highness in place of the Pareia’s Glow.”

“Welcome, friends from Pareia.”

Rojini III lightly nodded his head at Orca’s greeting. After that, Verikan stepped forward and respectfully bowed.

“Verikan Provoke pays his respect to his royal highness. i prayeth thy strength and health hast been well all this timeth?”

Everyone in the throne room was shocked to hear Verikan’s cute greeting. The way he spoke was not something that had been used for a long time, especially not by children.

Runa was smiling bitterly internally, but kept a calm demeanor as he looked toward Verikan and started to think.

‘I presume Violet-nim taught that to him. She knows a lot of the old sayings and customs.’

This barely seven year old using such old phrase with incorrect pronunciation due to it being a foreign language must have been really cute, as Rojini III stood up from his seat and smiled brightly

as he responded.

“You are a respectful young king. I am very comfortable thanks to you, young king. I wish to give a gift to the young king for worrying about my health. If there is something I can do for you, I will give one thing to you, no matter what it may be. If there is something the young king wishes for, share it with this king.”

Book 6-5.4

The man's proclamation, especially because he was in a high position as the king of the Rojini Kingdom, was extremely important. It was the words of the person with absolute authority in the strongest nation on the continent. It was a situation where he would have to agree even if Verikan had asked for an entire region of the Rojini Kingdom.

It was definitely an once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for Verikan to ask for anything he wanted.

Orca quickly started to speak.

"Your highness, Verikan's words were not said with an intent to ask for anything. Please do not feel compelled to do so."

"Hahaha. Esteemed guest from Pareia, do you wish to make me a lord who goes back on his word? I too know that the young king did not say it with the desire to ask for something, so do not worry too much."

It was too big of a proclamation for them to not worry. Orca, as well as Runa, were both extremely concerned. If Verikan ended up really asking for something he should not ask for, it could cause significant issues between the two nations.

"Your highness, then I shall tell you my wish."

Silence filled the room the moment Verikan started to speak.

Rojini III, the only one with a smile still on his face, asked.

"Have you thought about it?"

"Yes."

"Go ahead, tell me."

"Based on what my father has told me, the Rojini Kingdom is the strongest nation on the continent and has a very well established culture. He told me to learn a lot on my trip here."

Finn Rojini III's face became even brighter. With the Silence Empire's strength decreased from the previous war, Pareia was probably the only nation left that could go up against the Rojini Kingdom.

And the king of that nation accepted their nation, the Rojini Kingdom, as the strongest nation in the continent. It was no wonder that he was pleased. In addition, Yulian would probably not lie to his son, and Verikan was too young to think about politics before giving his answer, so it must be what he truly believed.

"That is why I am bringing this up to your highness, but I wish to return with a lot of knowledge of the Rojini Kingdom's ways."

"And what would you like to learn?"

"I cannot give you an answer because I do not know anything yet, may I answer your question when I leave?"

Rojini III started to laugh out loud as Verikan answered while blinking his two eyes and responded.

"Hahaha. Of course. If there is ever anything the young king wishes to learn from us, this king will give you my full support."

"Thank you very much, your highness."

As Verikan bowed deeply to thank him, Rojini III could not stop smiling.

All of the other people were letting out sighs of relief at Verikan's answer. It was only Runa whose eyes were shining at this time.

He would be able to return with an unexpected gain thanks to Verikan.

Some of the skills that are considered national secrets will be worth quite a bit. The problem now was to figure out what those secret skills were.

A smile started to form on Runa's lips.

The banquet to welcome the delegation from Pareia continued for many days.

The most popular of Pareia's group was of course Verikan.

Verikan's appearance, which looked like the perfect blend of Yulian and Violet, caught everyone's attention. It might have been even more eye-catching because of the charm that only young children have, but many nobles were always surrounding Verikan.

It was true that the fact that he was the only prince of a strong nation and the fact that Aizen, the heir to the Diperu household, one of the five most influential families in the Rojini Kingdom, considered him a nephew added to his allure, but Verikan's charm played the biggest role.

Verikan was so popular that some of the nobles who had daughters around Verikan's age could not help but think about whether they should 'appeal their daughters to this young prince starting now.'

The Red Storm warriors were popular as well, but for a very different reason. The young nobles who were interested in military science were their company.

They were like young maidens being attached to the men they liked, sticking to the warriors and asking about how they managed to take down that infamous Henkel Gate with just around thirty people.

Runa and Orca claimed they were tired and only remained in their rooms after the first banquet, but they seemed to have something to do as they were in each other's room throughout the day.

The banquet ended late at night, and everyone was grateful that this was the last banquet.

There was no way a party full of dancing and useless chatter would be fun for the warriors. They were forced to attend because

with Runa and Orca already out, the warriors could not also miss these banquets personally hosted by the king, but now it was finally over.

But they were wrong. As soon as the banquet ended, many of the nobles wanted to invite the warriors to their own residences.

As the warriors stood there with complicated expressions, Aizen was the one to come to their rescue. Once Aizen invited the entire delegation to his residence, all of them agreed to his invitation as if they had all been waiting for it, and the other nobles could only click their tongues and move away.

You needed to be at least a Marquis to try to compete with the Diperu household. Furthermore, the invited guests were all extremely happy to accept the invitation.

That was how the delegation was able to escape to Aizen's residence and earn a couple days of freedom.

“Huuuuuuuuuu~!”

Shubeon took a deep breath as soon as he woke up. Shubeon was not envious of the Rojini Kingdom's culture at all. If there was something he was envious about, it was this air.

This breathing he started along with some simple morning exercises filled his lungs with clean and refreshing air. It was definitely different than the hot air they woke up to in the desert.

“Hmm?”

At that moment, Shubeon could hear loud shouts coming from a distance. Shubeon started to look around with curiosity.

After he approached the source of the noise, he could see Aizen swinging his sword in a round stone training area.

Although Shubeon cautiously moved as to not interrupt Aizen, Aizen who felt that someone was there put his sword back into the scabbard and looked toward Shubeon.

“You are up.”

“I’m sorry if I interrupted Aizen-nim’s training.”

“Not at all.”

Aizen wiped the sweat off his forehead as he continued speaking.

“You must have been bored?”

“Excuse me?”

“You did not seem to be enjoying yourself at the banquet!”

“Ah, no, not at all! I was very happy to be welcomed in such a grand fashion.”

Shubeon was internally shocked at Aizen’s observation skills as he anxiously answered back. Aizen started to laugh and responded.

“You do not need to do that around me. Even I get bored being stuck in the capital like this. To be honest, there are not many knights who enjoy parties. We would all prefer to swing our swords an extra time instead.”

But the knights who felt the way Aizen described were only a few in number. It was because the knights did not have many opportunities to meet women outside of those banquets or parties.

It was just that the knights around Aizen were all part of the Red Eagle Knight Brigade.

As the number one brigade in the nation, their skill had to be top notch, and the fact that their skills were top notch meant that a lot of effort went into their training. Because of that, all of the knights around Aizen did not care much for parties.

But there was no way Shubeon would know about such a thing.

Thanks to Aizen’s statements, Shubeon shared his true feelings with him.

“It actually was a bit boring. Unlike my peers, I actually enjoy having fun as well. I was planning on not rejecting offers to have

fun here as well, but the dance in the throne room was quite complicated. Hahaha.”

Shubeon seemed to be embarrassed by his own words as he let out a fake laugh. Aizen thought for a moment before starting to speak.

“If it is okay with you, would you like to come with me to see the training of our Knight Brigade? I heard that Yulian hyung-nim’s training methods were very harsh; please let me know if there are things for Shubeon-nim or the other warrior-nims to point out in our training.”

“We are not qualified to do that.”

“Wouldn’t it still help? I was planning on asking hyung-nim for assistance anyways.”

Shubeon looked shocked as he asked.

“Help with what?”

“The knights’ training has been sluggish lately, so I was trying to get some help from hyung-nim.”

Seeing Aizen casually give Shubeon and the Red Storm warriors an excuse to watch the knights’ training, Shubeon started to get curious.

He remembered something the Glow had said in the past.

- Aizen may be the Rojini Kingdom’s tenth master, but based on my experiences fighting against the masters of the continent, Aizen is probably one of the top ten strongest warriors in the entire continent. He is strong enough to fight me 1 on 1.

Based on Shubeon’s observation, Aizen seemed to be a very average man. In fact, based on Aizen’s appearance or demeanor, he seemed more like a scholar who was far from the way of the sword. If Shubeon did not see Aizen’s hands, he would never figure this man to be a warrior.

Aizen's hands had plenty of calluses from training thoroughly with his sword.

“I understand. We will make sure to visit.”

“Then let us head back in. My wife should have prepared quite a feast for us after hearing guests have visited us from the desert.”

Aizen led Shubeon back in to the house in a very friendly manner, as if they had known each other for a very long time.

Book 6-5.5

The size of the Red Eagle Knight Brigade's training ground was quite large.

Even if they were the knights that represented the kingdom, it was so large that it was hard to imagine it was just the duke's family's training ground.

Their numbers were the largest in the kingdom other than the Royal Knights and some nobles' personal guards, with the official members of the Red Knights being fifty members in their twenties and thirties. Aside from the fifty official members, there were 110 knights in training as well.

There were also the former generation Red Knights who were over the age of forty, who took on the role of training the current Red Knights as their instructors. Putting all of them together, there were close to two hundred men using this training ground.

“Formation.”

At Aizen's command, the knights and the knights in training all got into two lines, while the former generation Red Knights watched them from the side.

“Everyone, show your respects to the Red Storm warriors, the warriors among warriors in the desert.”

Once Aizen introduced the Red Storm to the knights, the knights lifted their swords in front of their faces and lightly bowed to greet them. The warriors responded back in the same way.

“They are all amazing warriors and strong enough to fight against me. That means that they have gone through harsher training than we have, and that they have the qualifications to watch our training and point out any flaws. All of you should try your best to show them our training.”

Both the Red Knights and the former generation Red Knights

started to frown after hearing Aizen's words. Although it was respectful to lower yourself and raise up the guest, they felt like Aizen's words just now were too much. It was true that even the Red Storm warriors were feeling uncomfortable with Aizen's comparison. Although they believed that they were stronger than the knights in front of them, they never expected Aizen to be so blunt about it.

Furthermore, the warriors who knew about Aizen's strength were suddenly suspicious. To be honest, none of them could take on Aizen 1 on 1. Maybe Thrint, the avatar of courage, may be able to last a little bit against him.

As the whispers started to get louder, Aizen smiled brightly as he turned to ward Haisha and started to speak.

"Everybody seems to be thinking about different things, so shall we have a friendly sparring match? I want to broaden the horizons of our knights. As for me, I know the strength of all of you gentlemen from last time, so I will be the referee."

Haisha finally figured it out after hearing Aizen's words.

The reason Aizen dragged them here was to broaden the horizons of his knights and to help them understand that they should never get too cocky.

It was similar to how Yulian had defeated all of them by himself when they were starting to get cocky in the past.

Haisha respectfully responded.

In this friendly sparring match that started early in the morning, none of the Red Knights were able to defeat the Red Storm warriors.

This explained the angry red faces and glares the knights were giving the warriors. The Red Storm warriors may have been feeling sorry as they tried to avoid eye contact, but they could not give it their all.

The fact that they used all of their strength itself was a sign of respect for their opponent, and Haisha, who figured out Aizen's intent, told the rest of them to not go easy at all.

The former generation Red Knights who got tired of watching the current Red Knights being pushed back over and over stepped in as well, and only then was there some more of a balance between the two sides.

After the sparring was completed, Aizen gave his thanks to the Red Storm warriors as they headed back to his house.

There were not many opponents for the Red Knights in the kingdom, and the current Red Knights were cocky because of the overwhelming strength of the former generation knights. Aizen was thanking them for helping his knights come back down to reality. He then apologized for not informing them about it in advance.

To be honest, Haisha would have rejected it right away if they were asked such a favor in advance. The Red Storm would have learned something as well, but they did not want to earn the grudge of someone who was not their enemy.

As Aizen wanted, the Red Knights were training extremely hard after suffering an overwhelming defeat at the hands of the Red Storm.

The next morning, Haisha let out a small sigh at Aizen's announcement.

"I will take them with me the next time I go to the desert. They are training hard with all of you as their goal right now. I ask you to teach them a good lesson the next time you meet as well."

He was really putting the Red Storm warriors in an awkward spot.

After having fun(?) in the Rojini Kingdom for half a month, the delegation finished their preparations to head back to Pareia and

headed to the castle to meet with Rojini III.

Many nobles were present in the throne room similar to when they arrived, and this showed how big of an influence Pareia had on the Rojini Kingdom.

After all sorts of goodbyes, Rojini III looked toward Verikan and started to speak.

“So, Pareia’s young king. Have you thought about what you would like from this king?”

Verikan bowed to greet Rojini III before starting to speak.

“Your highness, I am filled with concern.”

“What does the young king have to worry about?”

Verikan rubbed his chin and tried to look like he was thinking after Rojini III’s question, but everybody just laughed internally, thinking that he was mimicking what he saw the adults do.

“The Rojini Kingdom is not just the greatest nation in the Eastern continent, but also the greatest when including the Western continent, is it not?”

Both Rojini III and the surrounding nobles started to smile at Verikan’s words.

“Because of that, I will not learn anything before I return.”

The smiles disappeared in an instant.

Rojini III asked nervously.

“I will ask your reason for that, Pareia’s young king.”

“Your highness, there are so many things I need to learn from your kingdom, but your highness has promised me just one. If I learn one, I will probably be dying to learn another one, so I will not learn anything in advance.”

“Hohoho.”

Rojini III started to laugh at this cute prince’s words. He was sure

Verikan did not come up with that response.

‘That man standing next to him probably told him to answer like that.’

Rojini III thought like that and looked toward Runa who was standing next to Verikan. It was hard to believe all the amazing rumors about Runa, but he started to believe it after seeing Runa trying to take this opportunity to steal some of their secrets through Verikan.

Runa noticed Rojini III looking at him and quickly bowed.

Even Runa knew that Rojini III would definitely know the answer came from him. He was just trying to see how much help his highness would give, knowing Pareia was trying to take away all of the Rojini Kingdom’s skills through Verikan.

To save face, he would not just let Verikan return without anything, and he would not just stop at one thing as he originally promised Verikan.

‘He is a wise man.’

That is what Rojini III was thinking as he looked toward Runa.

Although there would be diplomatic problems if Verikan’s wish was for all of the Rojini Kingdom’s culture and technology, but there would not be such an issue putting it in a roundabout way like this. Furthermore, he would need to think about their alliance and his own face and end up needing to give up a decent amount of knowledge.

‘Alright. I will pretend to be tricked. Technology becomes out of date and secrets are hard to keep anyways.’

Rojini III started to smile as he answered.

“Alright then. This king will lessen the young king’s worries. This king will find you a teacher in any and all aspects that the young king wishes to learn. They will stay to teach you until you

understand everything. Will this satisfy you, young king of Pareia?”

Verikan smiled brightly and bowed once more.

“I will not forget his highness’s grace.”

“Hohoho.”

Rojini III started to laugh again as he called over some of the dukes and head administrators and ordered them to give Verikan everything he wanted.

Runa started to smile as well.

After returning to Pareia, Runa had a meeting with Yulian and the chiefs every week. This made the chiefs unable to return to their oases, but things were able to be implemented much faster, leading Pareia to an era of change.

Personal property was now completely implemented, and they were also able to start letting many people learn how to read and write.

They were also able to learn a lot of new technology thanks to the research files and technicians who came over from the Rojini Kingdom.

They started to use threads to make cloth for clothes, and made a lot of improvements to their weapons.

Of course there were voices of opposition and issues with implementing a new culture, but they all took it as a learning opportunity and recorded everything that happened.

Pareia had reached their second take off.

In a paoe surrounded by silence.

There were only two individuals inside the paoe. A man laying down, and a man standing next to him with a worried expression.

The two men had been staring at each other without being able

to say anything for quite a while now. It was not because they had nothing to say. In fact, they had too many things they wanted to say. They wanted to say something, but they just did not know where to start.

The one to break the prolonged silence was the man who was laying down.

“I am sorry.”

“What are you apologizing for?”

As the standing man asked in response, the man laying down closed his mouth once more. He then closed his eyes that had been open about half way until now.

A single drop of water followed the shape of the man's skinny cheeks down. The man laying down continued once the drop fell off his face.

“For every.....”

His voice was so weak, almost as if it was announcing that the man did not have much longer to live. Based on the man's expression, it also sounded like he had accepted this fact already.

“Must I say it once more? I say this to you every time, but please do not say such weak things like that. It was not long ago that you jumped up and ordered me a round.”

The standing man shook his head and responded in a gentle yet stern way.

“Glow, you are even younger than I am...how, how can you leave without achieving anything more when you have me, the warrior named Venersis, as your subordinate?”

The standing man, the one named Venersis, the one known as the War God of the Desert, and now the man who will be the only hope for the Shuarei, pointed his hand to the outside.

“Take a look. The Shuarei has only taken its first step now. We

have taken over the Rivolde who has been a thorn on our side for as long as we can remember, and over half of the Western Desert is under our control. Our difference with Pareia? I accept that they are much stronger than us. However, now ... how can you give your body to something as trivial as death when this is just the beginning?”

“Me ... me

The man laying down, Hangry Elbotta, struggled to get out his words.

“Don’t ... bother me ... too ... much. They say that you are the fastest when you are regretting something ... but even when I am regretting my actions, I am unable to do anything. I wish to be dead tens of times a day.”

“Glow!”

Venersis shouted out. He then wanted to say something, but after what Hangry Elbotta had just said, he could not bother him anymore. He just stood there and clenched his two fists.

Hangry clenched Venersis’s fist as best as he could.

“I told you last time, didn’t I? I trust that you prepared.”

A light smile.

“Glow

“.....”

“Glow?”

The moment Venersis cautiously called out to the Glow once more, the two hands that were holding his fist lost all strength and fell.

“Glow!”

Venersis started to cry. Although the two of them did not get along in the beginning, Hangry had eventually come around.

Lately, they trusted each other more than anybody else.

“In the end, you do not help me at all!”

Venersis lifted his head up to the sky and started to shout. The heavens were not on his side in the end. The former Glow who trusted him and understood him, and now, the current Glow. All of them had left without being able to achieve their dream.

“Fine. I do not care! I knew that it would be like this!”

Venersis started to shout as if he was angry.

End of Chapter

Next up:

The Hero's Land

An overwhelming darkness stared out to me.

I did not avoid it. It didn't matter what may be inside.

Book 6-6.1

The Hero's Land

An overwhelming darkness stared out to me.

I did not avoid it. It didn't matter what may be inside.

Rumble! Crackle!

Thunder and lightning started to pour down to the ground.

Strong winds and heavy rain followed right behind it.

Oooooooooooooooooo—

This noise could be heard from one end of the Shire to the other.

It sounded like a child who had left his house, or maybe a mother who had to send her son to the battlefield. One thing was for sure; it was a noise that made people sad.

“Shouldn't we go ask Violet-nim for help? The Hero's Land has never shone so brightly or let out a strong scent like this.”

The Shire's Sands of Flowing Time shaman, Mekunda cautiously started to speak.

Even Shambuna, who became the chief of the Shire after Violet, looked forward with concern.

In front of their eyes was the purple line over the Hero's Land that was thicker than ever before, and a strong scent of blood shot into their noses.

“I heard that in the past, there were many times like this, but it had decreased for the last twenty years ... I am not sure why it is doing this again. But what I can be sure about is the fact that it is dangerous. The stronger the scent of blood gets, it means that the heroes are having a harder time.”

Mekunda asked once more after hearing Shambuna's words.

“Isn’t that why we should escort Violet-nim back for help?”

Shambuna quietly started to think as he started to look out toward the Hero’s Land.

“Shambuna-nim.”

As Mekunda cautiously called out to him again, Shambuna started to speak.

“It’s fine to call her, but I feel like ... if we call her ... that her happiness will crumble into pieces. You were there as well. You saw how hard of a life she had while she was here.”

Mekunda could not say anything back to Shambuna. Violet was selected to become the chief of the Shire from the moment she was born; she had to give up all human emotions.

The two individuals looked toward each other and thought things over. However, they had no other choice. This situation was too much for the two of them to handle.

An envoy left the Shire to head for the Castle of Storm.

It did not take long for the death of the Shuarei’s Glow, Hangry Elbotta, to reach Yulian’s ears.

It was because there was only the Shuarei and Pareia left in the desert. Their spies could focus on each other with no issues.

“Do you think there will be internal discord?”

Runa shook his head at Yulian’s question.

“It seems like Venersis has made up his mind. Based on what I have heard, as if he had been expecting it, Venersis has been using his fame and influence to prepare to take over the Shuarei’s Glow position. The deceased Shuarei’s Glow also named Venersis as his successor, so I presume they will find stability quickly.”

“Then is it finally time?”

Runa answered Yulian’s question with a grumbled expression.

“If Glow was not against it, we could have prevented Venersis from becoming the Shuarei’s Glow this easily. I am just disappointed that we did not attack them enough so that they could not even think about going to war with us when we had the opportunity.”

Yulian smiled toward Runa as he answered.

“Runa, you cannot be happy about the misfortunes of others. In addition, he is definitely a famed character in the desert. It would eat away at me forever if I did not use a fair method to defeat him. He is a warrior with that much abilities.”

“I believe that the end justifies the means in order for us to achieve our dream.”

“What is the point of achieving your dream like that? A dream is something you pursue with all of your heart. So if you use underhanded methods like cheating or betrayal, that is not a dream. It is also something you can never get out of once you start either.”

“It sounds like you are scolding me.”

Yulian shook his head at Runa’s opposition.

“Would I do that? I am just saying that we do not need to resort to such underhanded methods.”

Although Yulian respected and trusted Runa’s suggestions for all things, he could not avoid an argument whenever this topic came up.

Runa respected Yulian as a warrior, liked him as a person, and was loyal to him as his Glow, but he could not understand Yulian in this aspect at all.

The results dictated all things in the world. Isn’t there such a saying? Loyalty if you win, rebellion if you lose. But his Glow was not like that.

His Glow preferred to compare strength and wisdom in a fair battle. To be honest, using this personality to start an internal discord was a strategy as well.

“Runa, I understand what you are trying to say. If I was backed into a corner, I may have agreed to your suggestion. I am a weak human as well. However, that is not the case right now. We are in a good situation where we can confidently proclaim that we are strong. Throw that thought away.”

“It is because I have some regrets. But will you wait until they settle their internal discord?”

“Would it be better to wait? If we wait, it might actually help them band together.”

Runa bowed his head at Yulian’s question and answered.

“Please think hard about it, Glow.”

“Are you saying that is not the case?”

Runa lifted his head up at Yulian’s retort.

“To be honest, the chances of the Glow’s situation happening is slim to none. There is only one situation that would lead a tribe going through internal discord to band together. That is only when the powers going against each other are of similar strength.”

“Then you are saying you want us to attack first?”

“I also do not think that would be a good idea either. To be the first to attack when both sides are well prepared for the other will most likely lead to a lot of injuries on the attacking side as well.”

“Then what are you trying to say?”

As Yulian seemed to be getting frustrated at Runa’s response, Runa put on a calm smile as he answered back.

“Didn’t I tell you already? My role is to share with you the options and the Glow is the one to make the final decision.”

“This

“To tell you once more, we are not in a rush. It is fine if we attack, it is fine if we wait. The Shuarei are the ones in an urgent situation, not us.”

“Mm~!”

Yulian started to debate whether to attack or wait after hearing Runa’s explanation. It shouldn’t be bad either way because Runa mentioned either is fine, but his decision would influence the citizens as well as Pareia’s future. That was why he needed to be cautious.

“Let’s wait and see for now.”

After Yulian finally came to a decision, Runa bowed his head and responded.

“You’ve worked hard Glow. Then I will order the warriors to be on alert.”

“No, maintain the current situation as is. If we raise the alert now without knowing when the enemy will attack, it will only increase the fatigue on our warriors.”

“But we do not know when the Shuarei will attack.”

Yulian shook his head at Runa’s warning.

“But it is better than the entire army being fatigued. Instead, increase the number of patrol warriors so that we can figure out their movement as fast as possible. That way we will still be able to prepare for an ambush.”

“I understand, Glow.”

“And shouldn’t we move our residence?”

“Is there a problem here, Glow?”

“The Castle of Storm is great, but isn’t it too far from the battlefield? It is too far toward the continent. How could we

respond quickly like this?”

Runa, who understood what Yulian was trying to say, blinked both eyes before speaking.

“Glow, we are a large nation now. It does not make sense to change the capital for a single war. Furthermore, isn’t the Glow’s dream to go beyond the desert and into the continent? You might say that I am close minded, but a nation’s capital, and the nation’s leader, does not move around so easily.”

As Yulian watched Runa turn pale as he responded, Yulian thought about it thoroughly before nodding his head.

“Runa, you are right. Then what shall we do from here?”

“We can just do as we have been doing. Please do not be shaken by external issues.”

“That.....”

“Then I shall make my leave as there are still multiple things to take care of.”

“Huh? Ah! Go ahead.”

Once Runa left, Yulian lifted up his hand and wiped his forehead. He felt like his strong will had disappeared lately.

Is it because it was almost in his hands Or is it because he just ran forward without looking back until now?

Yulian didn’t like the fact that he didn’t seem to be enjoying life as much right now. What Runa just said was weighing on his mind.

‘Do not be shaken by external issues?’

It was not that he was shaken, but that he was being carefree. There were a lot of things to do, but it did not match his personality.

Even the final approval was not much as he just needed to verify that Runa and the politicians under him were doing a good job.

Maybe that was what made him feel so bored even more.

He even thought about giving away the final approval to someone else.

It was because Runa knew that moving the capital was the wrong answer that he gave such a response of not being shaken by external issues. He knew that Yulian wanted to move so that he could feel some tension by being around the battlefield.

Yulian wanted to feel alive by being even a bit closer to the battlefield.

“It would be great if someone invaded

Yulian became shocked at his own mumbling and vigorously shook his head. What kind of sinful words was he saying? Yulian quickly started to quickly walk over to the training ground.

“It would be great if I had someone to spar with tsk.”

Yulian was feeling bad for no reason as he walked over.

Book 6-6.2

“Is that all you can do?”

That tone had a way of making a person annoyed. Even his normal tone sounded like he was looking down on them, so was there even a need to discuss how it was when he purposefully mocked them?

Tokena still just clenched his teeth and held himself back.

Even though he was speaking this way, Tokena knew that this sunbae warrior paid more attention to them than any other sunbae warriors.

“Even a warrior who just completed his coming-of-age ceremony would be better than you.”

‘Shit. But this mocking words are really hard to endure.’

“If I trained this easily, I may have some fat on my bones. I didn’t have the time to get fat because I was training hard in the past, and now, even though I have the time, I have useless men like you training like this. I can’t get fat because I’m so annoyed at how terrible all of you are.”

Tokena was cursing internally as he tried to hold back his anger, but in the end, this continued mockery was too much and he let loose.

“How can anything be harder than this? We only sleep four hours a day, and get only four hours of free time. The remaining sixteen hours a day is spent training.”

To eyes of the warrior standing in front of Tokena suddenly started to sparkle. The corner of his lips slowly started to rise.

‘Shit.’

Tokena realized his mistake, but it was already too late. The warrior in front of him had an expression that seemed to say that

he had been waiting for this.

“Oh yeah? You want to experience what it can be like?”

“Shubeon! What is going on?”

As everyone was holding a weird position known as the horse position, all of their gazes headed toward that side once they heard Tokena’s voice.

“Nothing. These punks were just saying the training was too easy and asked for us to train them like we were trained in the past. I was just asking them if they really meant it.”

As Shubeon explained it to Thrint with a smile on his face, all of their expressions quickly changed.

They then looked toward Tokena and started to grudgingly glare at him.

He had fallen for it again even after knowing that the sunbae warriors were trying their best to annoy(?) them. Just how much did they suffer every time the phrase ‘like the old days’ came up?

“What kind of gazes are those?”

Seeing Shubeon look around and ask, the second generation Red Storm, the young warriors who would make up Red Storm II, subconsciously flinched. They had all made mistakes as well.

“You’re supposed to be able to put your life in each other’s hands, but you start frowning because the intensity of the training is going up? Can you still put your life in each other’s hands like that?”

Shubeon scolded them once before continuing.

“Just pretend that you all died today.”

The faces of the Red Storm II warriors started to turn pale.

“What is going on?”

Haisha was leisurely watching all of this from the back before

asking the messenger warrior who quickly approached.

“The Glow has summoned all of you.”

“A sudden summon? Do you know what the cause may be?”

The messenger warrior responded.

“I do not know. I just know that you will be heading out of the tribe.”

All of their gazes quickly turned to the messenger warrior.

“Outside?”

One of the warriors happily responded. They were feeling frustrated being cooped up like this inside the castle. So they were happy to hear they would be heading out.

“Go inform the ones that have the day off and quickly prepare.”

Once Haisha gave the order, the warrior started to quickly disperse.

“Haisha-nim?”

“What is it?”

The moment Haisha was about to head out, the young warrior who was in charge of Red Storm II called out to him.

Haisha turned around to ask what was going on.

“Should we prepare as well?”

“Hmm? All of you?”

“Yes.”

“Are you trying to throw away the fame that your sunbaes built with their blood in one go? The fact that the Glow plans on heading out with just the Red Storm means that we do not know who we will clash against. But you want to go with us?”

The young warrior responded in a confident voice at Haisha’s question.

“We are confident.”

“Even if the enemy is at our level of skill?”

“.....”

“The term Red Storm plays an important role in our Pareia. All of you may be stronger than the other warriors, but you must get stronger in order to live up to the name.”

Nobody could say anything in response. Haisha did not say anything as he watched the young warrior bite down on his lips as he headed toward the gathering location as well.

Yulian, the Red Storm, and Violet got on their pirmas and started to run across the desert. Although Violet may not have been good at riding pirmas in the past, she must have worked hard on it, as she could be seen not just riding well, but riding as fast as possible.

“Glow, where are we heading?”

One of the Red Storm warriors peeked at Violet as he asked.

“The Shire.”

As Yulian gave a short answer, the warrior cautiously asked once more.

“Did something happen? Violet-nim does not look well.”

“We are going just in the case the worst happened, so no need to worry.”

Although Yulian was saying that it was not much, he did not have a good feeling the whole ride over. He had seen it with his eyes before. Yulian had seen that brutal battle between the heroes and the endless number of monsters.

He was worried that the battle would happen in the real world as well.

Furthermore, he had already received Mai’s warning about it. The message he received from the Shire a few hours ago made him

feel like what Mai mentioned was finally going to happen.

Yulian and the group arrived at the Shire the next night. The reason they were able to travel three days distance in two days was because they ran without resting and because Captain Thriger had researched the flow of the quicksand river.

“You’ve arrived.”

As Shambuna greeted the group, Violet urgently asked before Yulian even had a chance to say anything.

“What is the current situation?”

“It is still the same. To be honest, we debated whether we should ask for the Glow and Violet-nim to come over, but the scent of blood and the thick color of the magic circle convinced us to report to you just in case.”

“You would have regretted it if you did not report it to us.”

Violet answered coldly as she quickly headed out to head for the Hero’s Land. Yulian and the Red Storm followed behind her.

Once they arrived at the Hero’s Land, all shamans of the Shire, both men and women, were surrounding the Hero’s Land and continuous chanting incantations and singing.

“For it to look like this even when everyone has gathered to help ... something must have happened.”

Yulian nodded his head at Violet’s statement and replied.

“The ancestors must be in the middle of a brutal battle right now. Is there anything we can do?”

“We need to figure out the reason.”

Violet contemplated for a moment before looking toward the Red Storm and speaking to them.

“I apologize for this, but I have a short song I can teach to the warriors. I hope that they can sing along with the shamans.”

“Not a problem.”

Once Yulian gathered the warriors together, Violet started to speak.

“All of you are amazing warriors. Since your souls are strong, I believe that your assistance will be a big help in this urgent situation. I will teach you a short song with only a few verses, so please sing it with all of your strength, as if you were facing a very strong enemy.”

The Red Storm warriors hesitated because they did not understand what was going on, but they nodded their heads and started to memorize and practice the song Violet taught them as best as they could.

Thankfully, there were not too many verses to her song. They all quickly memorized it and could sing it without issue within the hour.

I am a strong warrior.

A wise sage who knows the enemies outside and the enemies within.

Someone who knows the back of the light and the front of the darkness.

Someone who can fight against the world's coin.

I will walk the line and head forward.

I am a strong warrior.

It was a song with unique tone and strong vigor.

The warriors' vigorous voice started to echo across the area. Their voice was so strong that it could overwhelm the incantations and songs of the thousand shamans who were gathered together.

In response, the color of the line on the Hero's Land started to become a little lighter.

“Let us enter.”

Violet grabbed Yulian’s sleeve and urged him forward. Yulian nodded his head and held Violet’s hand as they headed toward the Hero’s Land.

“The ancestors called Yulian-nim over last time, but this time, they will not be able to help us.”

Yulian asked in response to Violet’s answer.

“Then?”

“Even if it is dangerous, we must enter to find them. There is something to be cautious about.”

“Tell me.”

Violet had a serious expression as she slowly enunciated each word.

“There are many dimensions between this world and the afterlife. It is my first time heading over, so I cannot guarantee your safety. Please do not let go of my hand.”

Yulian clenched Violet’s hand tightly.

“Do not worry. I will never let this hand go.”

“Then let’s go.”

Book 6-6.3

Violet hugged Yulian and started to speak.

“I make a request to my ancestors. The Shire’s descendant seeks to go to you. Please open up a gap. Please open up a door to all of you.”

The surroundings started to turn feint as Violet continued to speak.

It was completely different than the last time Yulian entered into the Hero’s Land. Last time, he was in the Hero’s Land in an instant, but this time, that was not the case.

He felt an odd sensation. The surroundings started to change colors, and after it felt like he was falling down from somewhere high, what greeted him was a land that seemed to be destroyed more than ever before.

It really made a person think of hell, with the world completely covered in blood.

The ground was that way and the sky was that way. The entire world was covered in red, sending out that cruel atmosphere and fragrance.

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

Yulian gathered his energy and shouted as soon as he entered. He was trying to protect Violet from the murderous intent rushing toward them, as well as the thick stench of death.

Even with his shout, the surrounding air started to pressure them to the point that it was difficult to remain standing up. There was definitely something there that they could not see. And whatever that was, it was starting to rile up Yulian’s murderous intent.

Yulian gathered up his internal ki and asked Violet.

“Are you okay?”

Violet was a strong woman. If she was not, she would not have been able to sing in the middle of a battle between tens of thousands of warriors to push up their courage.

Violet nodded her head. But she could not do anything about the fear that was starting to creep up from a corner of her mind.

Yulian was feeling the evil sensation with his ki, but Violet was seeing it with her eyes.

At that moment, a nectarous voice whispered in her ear.

Look! Look at all this darkness and evil.

The moment Violet responded to the voice and looked up, she saw the source of evil. It was an unexplainable sight.

She felt chills throughout her body and all of her strength started to shake from the roots.

You think you can handle it?

Her body started to shake. This unknown voice had instantly made her full of fear.

Leave your mind to me. Take a rest. I will give you peace.

All of the strength in her legs gave out. She really wanted to run. She wanted to run away from that unknown being.

Yulian quickly supported the swaying Violet.

“Uh...ah ... uh...”

As Violet mumbled while severely shaking, Yulian could not understand anything she was saying.

“Violet!”

Yulian called out to her in shock. Yulian’s voice, which was already filled with his gathered ki, brought Violet slightly back to normal, as she immediately hugged Yulian and buried her face up in his chest.

“Violet?”

Yulian, who felt like something was definitely wrong, hugged Violet with one hand while taking out a greatsword with the other.

It is not there. Come over here. I will rescue you from the fire.

It was definitely not her ancestors. She was sure that it was definitely not even human. That was the devil. The devil was trying to swallow her. Violet hugged Yulian because she realized the devil's intentions and wanted Yulian's protection. Yulian was already a completed person; this level of strength could not hurt him.

"Violet, what is it? Is something there? There must be. Right?"

Yulian finally realized that Violet must have seen something and ran away into his arms. Violet was someone who had more guts than even most warriors. For her to suddenly do something like this, it must mean that there was something here that he could not see.

And there was no way that this sticky and ominous feeling trying to suffocate him was something good.

"Violet, snap out of it! Show it to me!"

Yulian called out to Violet in a loud voice, but all Violet could do was shiver in Yulian's arms.

Seeing Violet so scared, Yulian hugged Violet even tighter as he started to take some deep breaths.

As his body filled up with ki, he gathered it up and shouted out loud as he swung his greatsword.

"Oowoooooooooooooooooooo~!"

Both the shout and the noise from Yulian's sword were extremely loud.

Shiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing~

The sound of his greatsword cutting through the air was extremely odd. It sounded like it was cutting through something.

“Violet, snap out of it and show it to me. Show me what you saw.”

Did she manage to snap out of the pressure for a moment? Violet did not lift her head from Yulian’s chest, but she temporarily let go of the arms clenching onto Yulian to use both hands to hit Yulian with some type of energy.

Come to me.

“You damn bastard. Who are you to tell my wife to come or go!”

Swear words came out of Yulian’s mouth as he started to swing his sword. Yulian could now see it as well. He could see the darkness that was wiggling its black tongue in front of him.

Yulian’s sword continued to swing out in front of him. The darkness tried to retreat with the fog, but Yulian lifted Violet up with one arm as he started to chase after the darkness.

After swinging his sword a few times, Yulian finally managed to land a hit on the darkness.

Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa~!

The sharp shriek landed in Yulian’s ear. After that, other darknesses started to reveal themselves one by one.

Violet started to shake even more. She was a talented shaman who had the strength to defeat this darkness, but right now, she was just a woman who was defeated by fear.

In the end, Yulian had to take all of them on alone, but he felt no pressure. To him, even a single shamshir swinging warrior was more dangerous than these ethereal existences.

The martial arts he learned from Chun Myung Hoon was strong, but actually, Chun Myung Hoon’s martial arts was extremely suited for handling ethereal existences.

“Oowooooooooo~!”

The strength of this overwhelming shout started to echo through

the Hero's Land.

The devils and darkness hiding around the area started to cause a ruckus. They were trying to run away from Yulian, causing a hurricane in the process.

“Oowoooooooooooo~!”

And the Red Storm responded to Yulian's shout.

The Red Storm warriors suddenly heard Yulian's shout from the outside and were responding back.

The darkness that was getting attacked from both sides finally started to reveal its true nature. These were devils with three wings on each side and two long horns on their heads.

They had determined that they could not fight Yulian off with just the darkness and had taken material form to be able to use physical force. The blades of these reapers of death started to approach Yulian.

It was a type of strength that humans did not possess.

The devils were very strong, but they could not easily do anything to Yulian. But it was true that Yulian was being pressured by them.

Because Yulian had given up one arm for Violet who could not come to her senses, he could not use his famed double greatsword style. Yulian started to get pushed back bit by bit.

“Violet! Do not lose that something like this. Snap out of it.”

Yulian blocked one of the reaper's attack and continued to talk to Violet as he moved back and forth, but Violet could not easily come back to her senses. This woman who was more confident than any warrior on the battlefield was actually afraid of fighting those non-human existences.

The moment Yulian was starting to feel overwhelmed about taking on these devils, a sudden change occurred.

Boom. Boom. Boom. Boom.

Yulian heard the drums of war as a thick scent of blood filled the air. Someone was heading their way.

My left hand is strength, my right hand is justice.

With his coarse black hair flowing in the wind, it was someone as tall as the sky. He was so tall that his every step made it sound like a drum. That individual was enunciating every word as he approached Yulian.

My outstretched hand is the hand that defeats the devil. The path that I walk is a path of justice. No one can stop me.

A gust of wind surrounded Yulian and Violet.

Once the reapers' blades were hindered by the wind, Yulian's movement started to come back alive.

The devils started to retreat. They were wrong to think that he would be an easy prey.

In an instant, the strong wind died down and the murderous intent and odd sensation that Yulian had been feeling had disappeared.

Once Yulian realized that all of the devils had retreated, he lifted his head and looked toward the black haired giant standing in front of him. He then bowed to the giant.

"The descendant of the desert, Yulian Provoke, pays his respect to the great ancestor, Madland Endo-nim."

Yulian was very familiar with the giant man standing in front of him. This was the Hero of the Desert, Madland Endo, whose image was drawn in many wall art and books.

This ancestor, who passed away long before Yulian's time, was standing in front of him.

I was lamenting the fact that I was unable to meet you last time, my dear descendant.

Yulian respectfully responded to his comment.

“Please forgive this descendant for being unable to visit.”

I know that you have a dream, and that you also have a Heaven’s Mandate. Move forward according to your will. However, the time has come, so make the necessary preparations.

“This descendant does not now anything. Please give me the wisdom to know, and the strength to make it into reality.”

The heaven and earth may remember, but the people inside do not. The twisted strength that was brought on by the haughtiness of humans and the Heaven’s Mandates that are not resolved properly lead to the destruction of the world.

Madland Endo put his palm out in front of Yulian and Violet.

Yulian hesitated for a moment before taking his shoes off and jumping on to his palm.

Boooooooooooooong.

After a moment of feeling numb, Yulian was already up at Madland’s eye level. But Yulian was not scared looking into the black pupils that were the size of his entire body. Instead, he felt an odd sense of excitement.

Huuuuuuuu~!

MIDland blew some air toward them, and they could feel a warm wind blow by them.

“Ah!”

As soon as the warm wind hit her, Violet came back to her senses and let out a yelp in surprise, but she was not afraid.

Descendant of the Shire. If you cannot firm your resolve, you will not be able to help when the time comes. You can stop training to strengthen your ability to bring forth power from the other worlds. Instead, you must train your heart.

“I will do as the ancestor instructed.”

Even while Violet was respectfully responding, Yulian was looking down at a spot in the Hero’s Land.

“What are you looking at?”

Seeing Yulian silently looking at a single location, Violet also lifted up her head.

“Kyaaaaaaaa~!”

Violet instantly lost strength in her legs and plopped down. Her entire body was sweating, and her breathing became extremely rough.

You are not completed yet. Keep your eyes closed.

As Madland blew the warm air once more and informed her, Violet quickly closed her eyes and nodded her head.

This is what Violet had seen.

The thing that made her whole body sweat and shocked her heart to the point of making her breathing rough in that short instant was absolute strength.

Whether that was good or evil was up to each person to decide.

Yulian stared at that strength and bit down on his lip. If he was even slightly evil, he would not even have the strength to dare to stare at it.

Yulian’s internal ki that was countering that absolute strength was causing his clothes to swell up, making it look like it would blow up if it was poked with a needle.

“What is that?”

Madland could not hide his shock at Yulian’s posture and question. It was almost impossible for a human to face that strength, but Yulian was facing it without any issue.

Madland started to smile.

That is the beginning and the end. That is chaos. The majority cannot even oppose it. They can only manage to defend against the strength that is derived from it.

“Is that perhaps what is creating the monsters?”

It has now started. Many humans will shed their blood and heroes will be born. However, only twelve individuals have the strength to defend against that.

“Am I one of those twelve?”

Yulian could feel his Heaven’s Mandate as he asked.

He had continued to hear this after first hearing it in the Magic Tower. He was now feeling like everything was to prepare him for this.

Your dream is not simply to grow your territory and preventing the forces of the continent from taking advantage of your desert. You may not have realized it yet, but I know you must feel it in your heart.

Yulian could feel his heart jump. He did not know what was making his heart jump. However, he could definitely feel his heart jump.

His Heaven’s Mandate. Something he had always treated as something vague.

This Heaven’s Mandate that told him that he would be used in this war for humanity.

All you have to do is do your best in the things that are within your control. There is nothing more important than this. I am looking forward to your help as you give all of your heart and all of your strength. In that instant, you will gain the qualifications to come here.

After looking toward that strength once more, Madland lowered Yulian and Violet back down to the ground and started to speak.

Return. The two of you cannot help the battle in this place just yet. Instead, I ask for even more cheers and singing to give us strength. You may leave.

The moment Yulian and Violet's feet touched the ground, the two of them had already transported out of the Hero's Land.

While Yulian and Violet were looking confused at the sudden change in scenery, Haisha quickly approached them.

"You are late again this time."

"Hmm?"

Yulian was nervous because he did not know what Haisha meant, before remembering the last time he traveled to the Hero's Land. He asked Haisha for clarification.

"Was I gone a long time again?"

"Yes. It has already been one month and fifteen days."

"What?"

Yulian questioned his ears after listening to Haisha's answer.

"It has already been that long?"

"Yes. But more importantly, we need to hurry up and return. The Shuarei have invaded."

Yulian questioned his ears once more.

End of chapter

Book 6-7.1

War

I pray that this is the last war with other humans

Yulian urgently returned to the Castle of Storm and called for a Meeting of Greatest.

“What is the current situation?”

Once everyone gathered together, Yulian quickly asked.

“Although we were prepared, we have already lost one oasis.”

“What did we do in response?”

“Pere-nim is prepared at the location Venersis is in the vanguard. He should be able to last if he focuses on defending.”

Yulian thought for a moment at Runa’s report before responding.

“I will head out. Runa, when you are distributing troops, you will put me in front of Venersis. Then use the warriors on the other side to take over the other Shuarei locations.”

“Yes, Glow.”

Once Runa responded, Yulian slightly nodded his head and looked back toward the warriors and continued to speak.

“Let’s use this opportunity to unify the entire desire. Everyone will need to be completely focused.”

“Yes, Glow.”

“Move all available forces to quickly take the Shuarei down. That is my opinion, Runa.”

“It will go as the Glow wills.”

Two days later, 120,000 warriors left the Castle of Storm to head to war.

When Yulian and the 120,000 warriors arrived, the front line was being heavily pushed back. And based on Venersis's movement, he was surrounding Pareia's troops like he was trying to completely eat them up.

'Venersis, you made a mistake. You should have done whatever you can to take at least one more oasis before I arrived. But I will not give away any oasis so easily now that I am here.'

Yulian said that to himself as he started to prepare the warriors.

And then the battle started.

A brutal battle with this oasis in the middle.

They were biting at each other's tail, and Pareia and Shuarei started a time of give and take over and over.

Death seemed like the natural conclusion for all warriors involved.

Both Pareia and Shuarei didn't seem to get tired as they spent three months continuously fighting each other. The situation was more favorable to Pareia, but that was only the slightest advantage.

All the war was doing was taking lives and time from both sides.

The doors that were hidden around the continent were starting to open. They flicked their burning tongues and exploded the suppressed energy to open these doors.

"I have returned."

The monsters of the other world started to appear around the continent.

The masters of the other world who were loyal to the order of the father instinctively started to show their strengths.

This power controlled all of the monsters, even bringing forth the chaos that was hidden around the world.

“You have been sleeping for too long. Wake up. Children of the father. Creatures of light and creatures of darkness. All of you, it is time to wake up and receive the Promise of Creation. It is now time for us to move.”

The other world masters used their strengths to wake the darkness and destroy the light.

“It is time to show our strength to those who suppressed us until now. Death to those who have ignored the issues of the past.”

Their anger started to be directed toward the humans.

Raaawr.

Shopping, who was a Giant Sand Dragon, the desert’s greatest monster, lifted up his large body to the sky and let out a roar. He then dropped his body back and started to squirm.

Thankfully, he was out in the desert to look for food. If he did this at the Castle of Storm, he would have destroyed a portion of the castle with his movement.

Shopping looked around the desert with bloodshot eyes. Something was clearly here. Something that dared to pressure him was currently in this Monster’s Desert.

That was something extremely annoying for Shopping, and it made him squirm to protect his territory.

As he started to move, he noticed amazing things that he had never seen before. Shopping let out another roar before charging toward these new existences that continued to appear.

This large desert worm’s charge started to cause chaos for the monsters who had just made their way to the desert.

Although they were just born, these monsters naturally prided themselves for their violent nature. However, none of these violent monsters could defend against this giant desert worm’s charge.

Shopping did not feel any better after destroying these monsters. The force that made him feel danger had not disappeared.

Shopping continued to destroy the monsters that were shaking after hearing his roar as he continued to look for that dangerous force.

And then Shopping saw it. Far in the distance was a human-like existence that was sitting down.

Shopping hesitated for a moment. His owner had forbidden him from harming humans. After hesitating for a bit longer, Shopping slowly started to approach that individual. The response will come as long as he got closer.

The majority of humans were completely scared by just looking at him. Shopping wanted to verify that was true with this individual as well.

Even though he got closer, this human-like individual did not move an inch. Shopping continued to get closer. Once Shopping was about an arm's distance away, that individual stretched out his hand.

Craaaaaaaaawr~

Shopping thrust his large body backwards as he let out a roar of pain.

“You, a creature of the father, has been domesticated by a human. You won't be any help at all.”

After flailing in pain for a moment, Shopping let out a roar of anger as he opened his body back up. He did not know how he was attacked, but he was not going to lose like this.

Raaaaaawr~

Shopping raised his body before bringing it back down and opening his mouth. His teeth were the size of a human's arm and sharper than any monster in the desert. He rushed toward the

individual, trying to chomp down with his sharp teeth. Even if he will end up getting beaten up by his owner for harming a human, he wanted to get rid of this annoying feeling.

“Hmph.”

The human snorted at Shopping’s charge before opening up his fingers. In that instant, his body suddenly became larger, as he started to run toward Shopping as well.

Boom~!

With a loud noise, a large hand was on top of Shopping’s head.

“I guess it is true that the dumb are extremely strong, but you are still not there.”

A fist flew toward Shopping once the man finished speaking.

Shopping felt intense pain around his neck and flew backwards.

Rooooooooar~

Shopping did his best to come back to his senses and raised his body.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

Shopping’s eyes started to fill with fear while looking at this existence that was smaller than him, but still decently large. It was a feeling he had not felt before, other than from his two owners.

“What a funny creature.”

This individual that was just born, Demon King Asmodeus, laughed while looking at the large worm moving away from him. He then thought about something as he urgently started to run.

Roooar!

Shopping felt immense fear seeing the Demon King charging toward him, and used all of his strength to dig underground. He then started to run.

Creatures that feel fear will naturally rush to their safe place, and

Shopping was no different.

Shopping started to rush forward, and Asmodeus chased after him.

Croooooooooooooar~

Shopping urgently shouted as soon as he saw the gates to the Castle of Storm, and prayed that his owner could save him.

The warriors guarding the gate saw Shopping returning and opened the door for him. As soon as Shopping passed through the gate, he shouted once more toward the location of his owner's residence.

"Is it here?"

Asmodeus looked toward the Castle of Storm in the desert with curious eyes as he mumbled to himself.

"I guess it wouldn't be bad to make this place my castle. I do need somewhere to live."

The warriors who were guarding the gate saw an unknown foreigner approaching and called out to him.

"Welcome guest. May we ask who you are?"

"Me? Asmodeus. The Demon King of the desert who will be your master."

The desert people enjoyed treating guests. However, Asmodeus just introduced himself in a way that went against Glow Yulian. The warriors looked at each other and nodded before blocking his way.

"Please state your full identity as well as the reason for your visit. You seem to be someone from the continent."

"Didn't I tell you already? I am the Demon King who will be your master."

Even the Glow only governed them, he was not their master. The

warriors showed anger at this guest's mocking words.

“Ho~ you plan on going against me?”

The lead warrior who was responsible for the gate could not hold back anymore and gave the command.

“First, catch this foreigner. We must figure out the reason for his visit.”

The warriors received their commands and approached Asmodeus. Asmodeus just started to smile. His smile was extremely charming, even to these fellow male warriors. However, his action was not so charming.

“In the end, humans are creatures who do not believe anything unless they see it with their own eyes.”

Once Asmodeus let out a bit of his strength, sharp and murderous winds rushed the warriors.

“He is strong.”

The lead warrior who had been through many wars instantly felt a sense of danger. He felt that although there was only one foreigner, there was a chance that they would all end up dead.

The lead warrior trusted his instinct that had saved his life many times. That was why he decisively blew into the warning whistle.

Beeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeep~.

Book 6-7.2

Although the Greatest Warriors and many warriors were not at the castle, the Castle of Storm was Pareia's capital. There were at least 5,000 warriors protecting this castle.

Beeeeeeep~

The lead warrior wanted the other warriors to quickly come reinforce them and blew the whistle once more. At that moment, Asmodeus had an annoyed expression as he started to move.

“Aaaah~.”

Asmodeus instantly arrived in front of a warrior and stabbed his hand through the warrior's chest.

The arm pierced through the back of the screaming warrior, and in Asmodeus's hand was a still beating heart.

“Everybody, attack.”

Since he blew the whistle, the inside of the castle should already be on alert. In order to buy time for the warriors inside to prepare, the lead warrior ordered an attack on the foreigner.

The warriors were more angry at how viciously their comrade was killed than scared, as they tightly clenched their shamshirs and started to attack the foreigner.

“Yeeeeeyaaaaaaaaaaaaaap~!”

The warriors showed the teamwork of a squad that has been together for a long time. Half othem attacked while half of them moved to fill the gaps left in the defense once the attackers moved.

But Asmodeus too easily blocked those warriors' attack. He continued to pierce his hand through the warriors' chests and enjoyed the flowing blood and beating hearts.

That image really did fit the name of a Demon King.

While the warriors were getting murdered one by one like that, there was movement from inside the castle. The warriors inside had responded to the lead warrior's whistle.

The warriors who were grouped in tens and sometimes hundreds came out of the castle gate and became shocked at the sight in front of them. They saw the warriors dead on the ground with giant holes in their chests. They also saw the other warriors who were now filled with fear.

Three thousand warriors started to fight against Asmodeus. Asmodeus was extremely annoyed. This attack from the humans was not as easy to handle. He thought that they would be filled with fear and either kill themselves or run away without ever looking back after he took care of a couple of them. But these humans were different.

They were acting very differently compared to the humans he remembered dealing with in the past.

Even though a numerous amount continued to get their hearts pierced out by him, these humans continued to aggressively attack. As time went on, Asmodeus started to feel uncomfortable as well.

He didn't know whether it was magic or divine power, but those humans mumbling in the distance were extremely annoying to his ear, and these warriors in front of him were not managing to pierce through his skin, but they were still causing quite terrible pains.

He probably would be able to get rid of all of these humans eventually, but Asmodeus found that to be extremely annoying. In addition, if he somehow made a big mistake, he might even end up actually losing a limb.

'Humans have a leader and they will fall into chaos when you kill the leader.'

Once Asmodeus came to that conclusion, he stopped dealing with

the warriors and started to run forward.

There were castles like this in the past as well. The location of the leader was bound to be different. Asmodeus immediately started to run toward the inside of the castle where Grace was resting.

“Block him!”

The lead warrior who was close to becoming a Greatest Warrior and left in charge of the Castle of Storm urgently shouted toward the warriors.

If something were to happen to the Mother of Pareia’s safety, that issue will escalate endlessly. Even if all of them were to die today, they needed to make sure nothing happened to Grace.

The warriors all chased after Asmodeus, but they could not catch up to him.

Roooooar~!

Asmodeus heard the giant worm that he had chased back to the castle as he ran forward and started to smile. A normal human would not have been able to tame that type of monster. That meant that the humans here had to be the leader.

Well, based on the strength of that giant worm, that person should be decently strong as well, but in the end, weren’t they just a puny human?

Humans were weak existences that could get their chests pierced by his bare hand. Other than the extremely rare monster-like humans, all humans were pretty much the same. And based on his memories, he never saw a human leader who was monster-like and extremely strong.

Asmodeus arrived where the giant worm was located and started to smile at the sight in front of him.

Surprisingly, the human leader seemed to be a woman. This really was going to be as easy as taking candy from a baby.

“A woman!”

Asmodeus saw Grace who was consoling the shocked Shopping and started to speak in a gentle voice. Asmodeus’s other name was the Demon King of Lust.

In human terms, a lecherous Demon King. As Asmodeus used his natural charm to speak, Grace could feel her heart shake.

Roooooar~!

Shopping was calming down at Grace’s consoling, but started to flail around once more after Asmodeus appeared once again.

“Shopping!”

Grace patted Shopping’s nose to calm him down before looking toward Asmodeus and starting to speak.

“May I ask who you are?”

Grace looked toward Asmodeus and started to think. For a man to get all the way here without anybody telling her, she felt that this guest must not have good intentions. In addition, she was able to figure out that the reason Shopping was scared was because of this man in front of her. That was why Grace’s voice was filled with hostility.

“You are quite a talented woman.”

Listening to Asmodeus’s voice that was filled with extreme allurements, Grace subconsciously started to think of Yulian.

Asmodeus called out to her and motioned with his hand.

“Come over here.”

Grace started to lose consciousness after hearing this voice and motion that felt like a father who was calling his daughter over.

“Come over here.”

As Asmodeus called her over once more, Grace’s hand lifted off of Shopping’s nose and she started to walk.

Gruuuunt~!

Shopping let out a noise and bit down on the hem of Grace's clothes to pull her and prevent her from going over, but the corner of her shirt just ripped off as Grace continued to move toward Asmodeus one step at a time.

"Good girl. I like humans, especially women, who listen to me. Come over here."

Grace's eyes seemed blank as she slowly approached Asmodeus.

Roooooooooooooooooooooar~!

At that moment, Shopping charged toward Asmodeus. His feelings for Grace had helped him overcome his fear.

Asmodeus had a faint smile as he started to reach out, but Grace's blank eyes blinked before starting to glow.

"Haaaaaaah!"

And then she charged toward him. In her hand were two sosoontas that were not there before.

Asmodeus was shocked for a moment, but calmed himself down and first reached his hand out to defend against Shopping's charge.

A human's sword will not be an issue, but even he would get hurt crashing against that large worm.

But at that moment, something unbelievable happened.

Grace's sosoonta cut deep into Asmodeus's forearm, and dark red blood started to shoot out of the injured location.

The one who was most surprised at this was none other than Asmodeus. A puny human, and a woman at that, had managed to injure his body.

Boom.

And then he felt a strong shock throughout his body.

He had forgotten about Shopping's charge.

His body started to fly and crashed into a castle wall.

Boom~!

This other noise was the sound of that wall falling down on Asmodeus.

Grace had an extremely nervous expression on her face as she continued to clench onto the sosoontas in her hand as she slowly approached the fallen Asmodeus. The red plate on her neck started to shine brightly as smoke started to rise out of it.

That plate was the gift Chun Myung Hoon had given her when he first dragged Shopping over. It was a magic plate that was imbued with a protection magic spell that provided ultimate protection against monsters and evil forces. That was how Grace was initially able to safely tame Shopping, and the reason she was able to resist against Asmodeus's temptation just now.

That plate was slowly disappearing, using up its energy to respond to Asmodeus's ultimate evil energy.

Thanks to that, Grace stopped walking and moved back away in the other direction.

At that moment, all of the warriors who had chased after Asmodeus let out a sigh of relief after seeing that Grace was safe. They then looked toward the fallen Asmodeus and were all extremely shocked.

But that only lasted an instant. Asmodeus let out a shout of anger as he stood back up and the battle started up once more.

Grace's magic plate had lowered Asmodeus's evil aura, and Shopping's charge prevented the warriors from being decimated like earlier, but in the end, the warriors were on the losing end.

As time went on, the number of corpses started to grow, and even the plate on Grace's neck was now only the size of a fingernail. As the plate got smaller, Asmodeus's evil aura started to rise once more.

“Grace-nim, please run away!”

Book 6-7.3

The lead warrior shouted toward Grace. Even if everyone in the Castle of Storm died, Grace had to live, and it was better to run while they still had the strength to fight.

Grace was breathing heavily as she looked toward the warriors and shook her head.

“How could I run away and leave all of you behind?”

“Grace-nim, please do not forget about your identity. Grace-nim is the Mother of Pareia. A Pareia without its mother will fall into chaos.”

“I have never heard about a mother who runs away and leaves her child behind. That monster-like human seems to be tired as well so please persevere a little longer.”

At Grace’s decision, the warriors clenched their teeth and pulled forth all of their strength to attack Asmodeus.

The remaining warriors at the castle gathered after hearing the commotion in the center, and even the shamans showed up to help support the warriors and pressure Asmodeus. They were finally starting to feel like they would be able to defeat Asmodeus, before that hope turned into despair very quickly.

“I use my power to open the gate. Come forth!”

Asmodeus made a gesturing motion and some things started to crawl out from next to him.

Skeleton.

They were not holding weapons because he had to call them out so quickly, but the warriors hesitated at the number of skeletons Asmodeus was calling forth.

The warriors started to fall one by one.

Grace got on Shopping to flatten and whip the skeletons away,

but Asmodeus's dark force only continued to get stronger.

If it continued like this, they would need to give the order to retreat.

“Grace-nim, now ... please escape!”

The lead warrior shouted toward Grace. He could only give the order to retreat once Grace safely ran away. Grace seemed to know that as well as she bit down on her lower lip.

“Shopping.”

The moment Grace called Shopping over and was about to retreat, another change occurred in the battlefield.

There was a person who was making his way through the numerous warriors and skeletons. He immediately headed toward Asmodeus, and the skeletons were unable to prevent him from doing so.

“Ah~!”

Grace looked toward the familiar man who was easily defeating the skeletons and let out a sigh of relief. She was extremely happy to see him. He was someone she could trust as much as her husband.

“Senior.”

Grace let out a joyful shout as she looked at the person.

This existence that was like no other existence.

He had returned.

“Every time I go away and return, some unexplainable things seem to happen. I will receive your greeting later.”

Chun Myung Hoon leisurely waved toward Grace as he continued to move forward.

Asmodeus summoned a reaper's scythe after watching the person quickly approach him. He then swung it toward the person.

Boooooooooong.

“Senior!”

Grace shouted out in shock as the reaper’s scythe seemed to land on Chun Myung Hoon. But Chun Myung Hoon was perfectly fine. In fact, he split into two once he was sliced by the scythe.

Asmodeus seemed to be shocked as well at this unexpected development.

“A human magician? Sadly, magic does not work on me.”

“A monster like you taking on a human appearance while letting out a murderous aura and a terrible stench. Return to where you came from. It is boring dealing with someone like you.”

Chun Myung Hoon sped up as he approached Asmodeus, and Asmodeus swung the reaper’s scythe over and over to slash Chun Myung Hoon. However, the only thing that happened was that the number of Chun Myung Hoons increased with each swing.

“There’s always stupid idiots like this. They claim that there is no one that can be their match, blabbing on about how this martial arts doesn’t work on me, yadda yadda yadda. In the end, they end up on their knees and begging for their life. Guess they like to act like humans.”

“You stupid human!”

Asmodeus was flabbergasted as he shouted at Chun Myung Hoon, who had now been split to a total of eight. The eight Chun Myung Hoons flanked the gun, gam, gan, jin, son, yi, gon, tae, the eight cardinal directions, as they approached Asmodeus.

“Using something so trivial as Mirror Image

Asmodeus scoffed at Chun Myung Hoon’s Mirror Images as he stopped summoning the reaper’s scythe and focused his dark force to try to get rid of all eight Chun Myung Hoons at once.

Asmodeus started to spin, and tens of black spheres formed from

the focused dark force started to revolve around the eight Chun Myung Hoons.

Just how did he move?

The moment it seemed like the Chun Myung Hoons turned faint, all of the black spheres surrounding him disappeared instantly. The moment the shocked Asmodeus tried to release more dark force, Chun Myung Hoon ran toward Asmodeus in a speed that transcended human limits.

Stab.

Chun Myung Hoon, who surrounded Asmodeus on all sides, stabbed a sword into Asmodeus's body.

“What.....”

Asmodeus could not believe what was going on. How did a human's blade manage to pierce through his body?

And the blades that stabbed him all over the body had stabbed into his Monster Core from all sides.

‘He is able to destroy my core while using the blades of Mirror Image clones?’

Asmodeus started to bloat up, as if he was trying to make his final stance.

“Still trying to do something? You are worthless. Go back to where you came from.”

Chun Myung Hoon put some strength into his hand as he started to hack away at Asmodeus. The surroundings quickly became covered in dark red blood, but not a single drop landed on Chun Myung Hoon's clothes.

.....

There was not even a scream. Asmodeus just died like that.

Once Asmodeus died like that, the skeletons he summoned

started to disappear as well. All of the warriors became shocked and could only stand there with their jaws open at what they just witnessed.

“Senior.”

Grace was the first to come back to her senses. She quickly ran toward Chun Myung Hoon to greet him.

“You must have suffered a lot. Where is this punk that he does not even know how much trouble his wife is facing?”

Chun Myung Hoon patted Grace’s hand that was holding onto his hand as he started to smile.

“Senior, just ... where were you gone all this time? Both my husband and I have been worried about you.”

“I just went to have some fun. I heard a lot about what was going on through rumors.”

“There were a lot of things that happened.”

“It seems to be the case. By the way

As Chun Myung Hoon did not finish the sentence, Grace decided to ask.

“Senior, is something wrong?”

“Hmm hmm. I seem to be very hungry. You already know how the continent’s food doesn’t taste very good to me.”

Seeing Chun Myung Hoon let out some fake coughs as he said that, Grace started to smile brightly as she responded.

“I will make a lot of Dongpo Pork for you tonight.”

Chun Myung Hoon’s face lit up after hearing Grace’s words.

Yulian was starting to get anxious as the war continued to drag on.

He had determined that Pareia would hold an overwhelming advantage if they could handle Venersis, and while this was true, it

was not very easy to handle Venersis.

Yulian wanted to fight against Venersis one on one again, but Runa and the other Greatest Warriors solemnly opposed his decision and he could not do so.

- The Glow and Venersis are at different levels of importance right now. If something was to happen to you right now, it really would be the end for Pareia. Unless you are absolutely certain of your victory, please do not fight one on one against Venersis.

Runa and the other Greatest Warriors were concerned because of the severity of the injuries he received the last time he fought Venersis one on one.

Honestly speaking, there was only about a piece of paper's thickness of a difference between Yulian and Venersis in terms of abilities. Because of this, nobody could tell who would win in a one on one battle. That was why even though Yulian wanted to fight, he himself knew it was not a wise decision. That was why the war just continued to drag on, like a never-ending game of tug-o-war.

‘Although Pareia may hold the advantage, if we continue like this, all there will be left after the war will be scars. There is no reason to lose so many warriors like this to unify the desert.’

That was what Yulian was thinking ever since he returned from the Hero's Land.

‘Our enemies right now should be those monsters, not other humans. What decision do I need to make right now?’

Yulian couldn't help but be anxious over and over. If he did not know about the monsters, he could probably focus on the war, but the situation was not like that.

He had been more anxious ever since the monsters from the Monster's Desert invaded the Castle of Storm and threatened Grace.

‘We need a solution.’

Yulian made up his mind and gathered the Greatest Warriors for a meeting.

Once Runa and the Greatest Warriors all gathered together, Yulian started to speak.

“I plan on withdrawing our warriors.”

Yulian’s statement came like a bomb for the gathered Greatest Warriors.

Book 6-7.4

All of the Greatest Warriors could not hide their shock. Even if it was pretty much at a stalemate, Runa's strategies were allowing them to slowly pressure the Shuarei, and in the end, it would be Pareia's victory.

In less than two to three years, they would completely defeat the Shuarei and finally unify the desert. They would be able to achieve their dream in just two to three years! But withdrawing the troops at this point? That was the same as saying Yulian was giving up on this Western Desert completely.

"Glow! What are you saying?"

Runa became anxious as he urgently asked.

"We do not have time. Monsters are pouring out of the Monster's Desert, and I'm sure all of you have heard about how the Castle of Storm was invaded not too long ago."

"But the Glow's master is currently at the Castle of Storm. Didn't you say there were no issues with safety while he was there?"

"The Castle of Storm will be safe. But what about the other oases?"

Order instantly came back to the group of Greatest Warriors who were whispering to each other inside the paoe. If there were monsters invading the Castle of Storm which was extremely far away from the Monster's Desert, they did not even need to ask whether the monsters were invading the other oases.

"Do you think they can fend off all of the monsters with the warriors we left behind at each oasis? Even when there is at least ten times the normal amount of monsters pouring out of the Monster's Desert?"

"....."

Everybody knew that it was not possible. But the reason they could not easily withdraw the troops was because of disappointment. Extremely large sense of disappointment.

Runa gathered up the courage to speak.

“But we can completely destroy the Shuarei in the next three years for sure. How long have we looked forward to this? You want to give all up that up once we made it this far?”

“I am not giving it up. Our focus is just changing for a bit. If the monsters are causing us more harm than other humans right now, isn't it only normal for us to take care of the monsters instead of waging war against other humans?”

“But there is value in destroying the Shuarei and unifying the desert, even if we need to make some significant sacrifices along the way.”

“We may feel that way but the people who die because we choose not to withdraw will not think that way.”

“Even if it something we are doing for Pareia?”

“We cannot put Pareia first. We must put our citizens of Pareia first. That is the only way for our nation, our Pareia, to become even better. My decision has been made.”

Runa did not say anything after Yulian's proclamation. If Yulian did not back away even after debating with him and confirmed his resolve like this, it was only right for him to back away as the subordinate.

“I must meet with Venersis. Send a messenger to the Shuarei camp.”

Yulian's order continued to shock the warriors.

“Glow, you plan on personally meeting with Venersis?”

As Ruan cautiously asked, Yulian nodded his head.

“I must meet with him. I'm sure the Shuarei are having

headaches because of the monsters as well, so he will not decline this meeting.”

“Why do you want to meet with him?”

Yulian did not answer Egane’s question. He was sure that they would oppose if he told them what was on his mind.

“Glow!”

Runa’s veins in his neck were popping out as he called out toward Yulian, but Yulian waved his hand to say nothing else was needed to be said as he got up from his seat. There were many things to prepare before he met with Venersis.

“Sigh~!”

Runa let out a sigh before ending the meeting and looking toward the departing Yulian. He then let out another sigh.

But there was nothing he could do about it. Yulian was someone who did not change his mind once he made up his mind.

The two heroes gazed at each other as they started to walk toward each other. Behind them were their respective brigade of warriors, just standing there, eyeing each other as well. But they were ready to jump in the moment even the slightest danger came to their liege.

The two heroes both stopped about five meters away from each other and started to talk.

“It feels odd seeing you up close like this after always seeing you from far away.”

The first to speak was the War God of the Western Desert, Venersis.

“I am also curious why Pareia’s Glow asked to see me.”

Yulian’s lips were shaking. There was a lot of things he wanted to say, but he could not figure out what to say first.

Yulian took a deep breath. He then calmed his emotions as he slowly started to speak.

“I loathe the you who is responsible for killing my mother, but I am grateful to the you who saved my life and my brothers life on multiple occasions. Am I supposed to treat you as my mother’s killer or my savior?”

“.....”

Venersis closed his mouth after slightly opening it. If there was something that would eternally be the source of shame for him, that was going against the past truce and ambushing Pareia. That was when he had ended up killing the Mother of Pareia.

Well, he did not personally kill the Mother of Pareia, but she had committed suicide because of his actions, so it was pretty much the same as him killing her.

For her son to come here and ask him like this, Venersis could only respond with confused emotions.

“You came all this way to ask that?”

“There are many reasons for this meeting, but that was the one that weighed on me the most. You are my sworn enemy yet my savior at the same time.”

“If it is weighing on you that much, it would be better to just follow your heart.”

Complicated emotions could be seen in Yulian’s eyes.

‘Let’s do as I planned. Just as I planned ... forget about the past and put all of my strength for what we need to do now.’

Yulian made up his mind and started to speak.

“I want this war to be the last war with other humans. Venersis, the reason I came to speak to you today was to ask this. Are there no monsters invading the Shuarei?”

Venersis slowly nodded his head. The Shuarei had already been

invaded as well. The monsters that were generated in large numbers from the center of the desert were putting a lot of pressure on the Shuarei's northern border.

“So are you trying to say that you will withdraw your troops to the rear?”

“Yes. I do not want to watch the monsters kill my people.”

“So you want me to withdraw my troops as well?”

Yulian coldly answered back.

“You are trying to make me say the same thing twice even though you know exactly what I want.”

“I just wanted to verify it once more as this is a very big issue. But what would you do if I say that I will not withdraw my troops?”

Yulian glared at Venersis before finally answering.

“Pareia will still withdraw our troops.”

“Even though I cannot do anything about the quicksand river, do you think I will just sit back and not do anything about this Western Desert?”

“I guess I read you wrong. Do whatever you want. I already have plans to move all of the people from the Western Desert to the Eastern Desert. If you are fine with empty oases, take as many as you want.”

Listening to Yulian's angry response, Venersis could tell that Yulian was not lying or trying to mock him.

‘Pff.’

He then bitterly smiled after looking at how he was conducting himself.

He could fight without thinking if he was just a Greatest Warrior, but he was now the Glow. The Glow was someone who had to work hard to provide a better environment for his people, even if that

meant doing things that he personally did not want to do.

Venersis started to speak.

“I understand where you are coming from. Then are you saying we should withdraw our troops and put an end to the war? At least until the monsters disappear?”

Venersis continued to speak after seeing Yulian nod his head.

“Alright. I will accept your proposal. As you mentioned, it does not make sense to fight amongst each other when the monsters are ambushing our people.....fine. Let’s call a truce. The Shuarei will not attack Pareia until the monsters disappear.”

Yulian was actually surprised at how easily the answer came. The Red Storm warriors standing behind him were just as shocked.

‘Indeed.’

Yulian thought that as he took out both of his greatswords.

“And one more thing.”

“.....?”

Venersis started to feel excited, watching Yulian standing there holding his greatswords. Other than that young Glow, there was nobody who could stop him when he went all out.

Venersis had longed for a rival worthy of him fighting at full strength, and with that rival standing there with his weapons in his hand, there was no way he could prevent himself from getting excited.

“Let’s put an end to the past relationships between the two of us. No matter who lives and who dies, everything between us ends now.”

“Exactly what I wanted.”

Venersis took out his shamshir as well.

“Oowooooooooo!”

“Yiyaaaaaaaaap!”

The two men charged toward each other.

End of chapter.

Book 6-8.1

Monsters

They were gathering together like human nations and doing their best to cause harm to the humans.

“Master!”

Yulian looked for Chun Myung Hoon as soon as he returned to the Castle of Storm.

“You’ve grown quite a bit.”

Chun Myung Hoon, who was leisurely walking around the garden that was created for the visitors of the castle, started to smile as he looked toward Yulian. Yulian now had such a majestic air to himself that even Chun Myung Hoon felt like he couldn’t abuse him in public.

“Couldn’t you have sent a message or something? I was worried about you the whole time.”

“Why do you need to worry about me? Do you think I am weaker than you?”

Yulian started to squint as he started to speak in a tone that was full of doubt.

“Who knows. With master now being the age that you are, your strength may start to decline and this disciple hmm hmm.....”

“Hmm hmm... what?”

“Well, you know, just hmm hmm.”

Seeing Yulian being childish like that, Chun Myung Hoon had a smirk on his face as he started to speak.

“Sounds to me like you want to try to fight me.”

“Since master never says the wrong thing, I suppose master may be right.”

“Ho~!”

Chun Myung Hoon’s two eyes were sparkling as he let out that noise.

This disciple of his, the same young kid who would get scared just from a single glare, was now full of desire to challenge him.

Chun Myung Hoon thought that Yulian must really have a lot of confidence, since Yulian should be well aware of Chun Myung Hoon’s strength. Minimally, it should mean that Yulian had reached the level that he had shown him prior to his departure.

“Why are we just talking then? Come at me.”

Yulian took out his greatswords as if he had been waiting for this moment. Once Yulian got into position to attack, Chun Myung Hoon gathered his energy in his eyes before he started to speak.

“You’ve had a good amount of development.”

“Master has been gone for over ten years, shouldn’t I at least be at this level to be able to call myself your disciple?”

“What level is your Heavenly Demon Arts at?”

“I feel like I learned everything I needed to learn, but I still cannot put forth master’s level of strength.”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head at Yulian’s answer. Yulian was facing a large wall right now. It was a wall he could not pass without giving it his all. But it was not something that he could help Yulian overcome.

“It’ll take at least another 100 years for you to get to my level. Hurry up and attack.”

Yulian started to gather his ki.

‘Based on master’s personality, he will start easily to goad me in. I need to finish it quickly.’

That was Yulian’s plan. Throw everything he had at Chun

Myung Hoon in a short amount of time. Yulian was not worried at all about hurting Chun Myung Hoon. Even though he was extremely strong, there was not an ounce of confidence in his mind that he could severely harm Chun Myung Hoon.

He was just thinking hard about Chun Myung Hoon who could counter and react to any moves. There were not many people in the world who knew as much about Chun Myung Hoon's abilities like Yulian.

'If that still doesn't work ... well... I guess I can only take a beating.'

Did he already forget that one hit from Chun Myung Hoon would make his mind go blank from pain? Yulian really did become much more confident.

Chun Myung Hoon smiled with satisfaction after seeing the amount of energy coming out of Yulian. At that level, it would be difficult for Yulian to find a rival even in China.

“Oowoooo~”

Yulian lowered his waist and moved one foot forward. He then let out the shout as he started to move like he was falling and started to swing his greatsword.

Even Chun Myung Hoon seemed to be slightly shocked at Yulian's unexpected action and quickly jumped backwards to dodge.

“Oowoooo~!”

Yulian did not miss this opportunity and chased after Chun Myung Hoon at a similar speed, continuing his vicious assault before Chun Myung Hoon had a chance to recover.

Chun Myung Hoon's face started to fill with nervousness. He had completely lost the lead and given Yulian an opening. Even if he had his guard down, Chun Myung Hoon never expected it to be like this.

Chun Myung Hoon looked at Yulian who was attacking endlessly as he nodded his head.

Screeech.

Chun Myung Hoon unsheathed the sword on his back. He had only taken his sword out three times since he arrived here from China.

Swish.

He then lightly swung the sword just once.

That small movement parried Yulian's greatsword and pushed Yulian back five steps.

"Oh! Master, it is cheating for you to take out your sword."

"There is no such thing as cheating in a battle with swords. The one who lives in the end is the winner and the strong one."

"You've never said anything like that to me before."

"That is why I am telling you now. Since it looks like you have transformed and made it difficult for me to teach you a lesson with my bare hands, shouldn't I transform as well?"

Yulian started to smile because he was certain that his master was praising him right now. It was rare for his master to give him any type of praise.

While the master and disciple were sweating it out while battling each other, the Red Storm warriors were just watching their battle with blank expressions.

Because they had all learned under Chun Myung Hoon for a bit, they were all aware of how strong Chun Myung Hoon was. Even Yulian was not as strong as him, but no matter what, Yulian was the desert's strongest warrior. They did not want to miss a moment of a rare battle like this one.

Chun Myung Hoon started to spin his sword around as he started to speak.

“I guess it is time for you to learn something new.”

Yulian did not take his eyes off of Chun Myung Hoon’s sword as he asked.

“Something new?”

“Yes. Your martial arts right now is effective when fighting against multiple people, but there are many disadvantages when fighting one on one. The weakness of the greatsword is that it becomes difficult to use when you are in close proximity of your enemy.”

Chun Myung Hoon suddenly swung his sword down. Yulian anxiously started to swing his greatsword and darted backwards. All Chun Myung Hoon did was swing down with the sword, but Yulian could feel a strong force behind that swing.

“You really have improved a lot to be able to notice that.”

“Just what level is your strength at, master? I really thought that I was now at a level where I could last at least 100 seconds against you.”

Seeing Yulian being unable to hide his shock and asking, Chun Myung Hoon started to smile as he answered.

“I was someone who would have died if I did not study martial arts. If you train for another twenty years, you could probably imitate me just a little bit.”

“If I am learning a new martial arts, does that mean I need to change my weapon again?”

“There is a saying that says that everything comes back together in the end. However, it is true that the weapon determines your style of battle. You must change weapons if the need presents itself.”

“Mm.....”

Yulian did not sound too happy. He had been using this weapon

for over twenty years already.

“Do not be disappointed, Yulian. Your martial arts may make you one of the top individuals in this world, but there are still people who can defeat you. Although the overall level of strength in this world is lower compared to my world, there are actually more extremely strong individuals in this world.”

Chun Myung Hoon wanted to help Yulian break past that wall. It would be great if the new martial arts could allow his disciple to easily break through the wall.

‘But first, I need to take care of his elevated ego.’

Chun Myung Hoon made up his mind and approached Yulian.

The Red Storm warriors slowly started to turn away a moment later. It was not respectful to watch their liege get beat up.

Once Chun Myung Hoon finished his “training” to lower Yulian’s ego, he suddenly remembered and asked.

“Did the war with the Shuarei finish?”

“Yes. We could not continue to be at war when monsters were attacking our territory. That should be the same for the Shuarei as well.”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head at Yulian’s answer. He knew that it must not have been easy to come to that decision. Chun Myung Hoon was very much aware of what kind of existence the Shuarei’s Venersis was to Yulian.

“You made the right decision. It does not make sense to fight against each other when there are monsters killing people. But I’m sure you are very disappointed.”

Yulian put away his sword and answered.

“We had a final battle to resolve everything that happened in our past. Surprisingly, neither Venersis nor I seemed to fight with any murderous intent. I still don’t know why though

Seeing Yulian being unable to finish his thought, Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head as if he understood.

“Both of you accepted each other as a fitting rival. And that is something to be thankful about. The darkness in this world is too deep and thick. Heroes are born in times of trouble. Right now is the time for there to be a lot of heroes. If not ... I worry that humankind will meet their destruction in this world.”

Yulian looked toward Chun Myung Hoon with shock. The weight of his words were too heavy.

“Is it that bad?”

“Based on what I have heard, felt, and seen with my own eyes, there is a good chance of it. Right now is the time to come together. That is why you need to get even stronger. That is the fate of those who are born with the Heaven’s Mandate.”

Chun Myung Hoon’s voice made Yulian quickly understand what he needed to do.

‘Yes, it is better to be proactive about it rather than reactive.’

Yulian decided not to just defend the oases but to take the offensive and charge toward the Monster’s Desert.

Book 6-8.2

“This ... is not as easy as I thought it would be.”

Runa looked at the map and traced their path as he clicked his tongue.

Yulian looked toward it with a concerned expression as well. As Runa mentioned, they were moving too slowly.

They left with 50,000 warriors to subdue the Monster's Desert ten days ago.

But Pareia's warriors had not even reached the vicinity of the Monster's Desert. The number of monsters increased and their spawn rate became faster as they approached closer to the Monster's Desert. These monsters were preventing them from moving forward.

“At this rate, our path back to the oasis may get cut off.”

“Hmm~!”

Yulian let out a small groan. If something like that happened, it would become extremely troublesome.

“We need to immediately let Edwin know. There should be no issues moving through the north, but there is no harm in being cautious.”

“Now that I think about it, we will need to send a large amount of warriors to the caravan as well.”

“I will tell him to lessen the size for a while.”

“Good. And shouldn't we increase the number of warriors for this subjugation?”

Seeing Yulian speak after thinking things over, Runa shook his head.

“We cannot move anymore warriors right now. We need

warriors protecting the oases just in case, and we cannot remove any of the warriors we have in place for the essential tasks. I am already worried enough about these 50,000 warriors. You know how we cannot destroy the ratio between men and women.”

“Hasn’t it gotten much better?”

“Just in numbers. But it only seems that way because of the citizens who have come from the continent. Pareia is a warrior nation and will continue to treat our warriors in high regard. In order to do that, we need warriors who have received our desert’s bloodline.”

Yulian started to shake his head at Runa’s stern tone as if it gave him a headache.

“But at this rate, the warriors will be exhausted even before we arrive at the Monster’s Desert.”

“There is nothing we can do. All we can do is strengthen our defenses at the oases and have the warriors outside take care of the monsters while waiting for time to pass. Pareia will only get stronger as time goes on.”

“Is that our only method?”

Runa thought for a moment before answering.

“To be honest, it happened so suddenly that even I do not have anything prepared. In order to create a plan, you need to have information about the enemy, but while I know a bit about the average monsters, a monster strong enough for Shopping to run away from is out of my expectations.....”

“I understand. My heart dropped when I heard Grace’s story. It would have been extremely terrible if master had not been there.”

Runa also nodded his head and responded.

“Monsters are strong and we do not know anything about them. The warriors will naturally get faster at handling the monsters as

they continue to fight against them. After a while, we won't have such slow progression like this one. You can be at ease, Glow."

Yulian patted Runa's shoulder to say he understood before looking forward. He could see another large group of monsters coming toward them.

"Prepare for battle."

Yulian instantly shouted and moved his pirma forward to take the vanguard.

"What kind of monster is it this time, Glow?"

Once Shubeon asked from behind Yulian, Yulian did not even turn to look at him as he responded.

"It looks like a pirma but the body is about twice as large. The face is that of a wild animal and the tail is a scorpion's tail."

"Ugh, we're getting some really odd monsters as we get closer and closer to the Monster's Desert."

As Shubeon complained, Yulian started to smile.

"In the end, it is just a monster. There are quite a lot of them and they are large, so a lot of warriors may get injured if we do not divide them up properly. We will take the lead this time. Take good care of your hoobaes."

"I question whether those punks will do well. I feel like they are being put into battle too soon."

Haisha asked with concern after being told to take care of the second generation Red Storm warriors.

"No, it is safe to say that there will not be any wars from here on. Now that our enemy has changed to the monsters, this type of real-life experiences will be better than simulations. The monsters we are facing are still not as dangerous as the monsters of the old Monster's Desert."

Haisha still seemed to be concerned after Yulian's answer and

looked around at the Red Storm II warriors. There were one or two Red Storm II warriors partnered with each Red Storm warrior. This was their first real battle.

The 50,000 warriors that were part of this subjugation were all veteran warriors. They all had at least three war experiences under their belt, so Haisha thought they might be just as good as these Red Storm II warriors.

It was a problem of abilities, as well as the courage to face death. He recalled how they all felt chills because they were scared and anxious in their first battle. All he remembered from their first battle was how they just stared at the Glow's back and chased after him without thinking about anything else.

"Make sure to sternly warn them. If they randomly start to run in the middle of battle, even I cannot guarantee I will be able to save them."

Haisha nodded his head at Yulian's concern and gathered the Red Storm II warriors to give them their order. He told them to just chase after the Glow and their sunbae warriors' back.

The formation for their attack was starting to be created.

With Yulian in the lead, the Red Storm warriors lined up in two rows behind him. Once everybody was in position, Yulian gave the order to charge.

"We don't know how tough their hides are, so strike with all of your strength at first and then control your strength based on the impact of your strongest strike. We will charge through at least three times to divide up the monsters so save up your stamina accordingly."

Once Yulian and the Red Storm started to charge forward, Runa started to change the formation of the warriors with the Greatest Warriors.

They may not know what kind of monster it may be, but it

should not be able to charge toward them as strongly now that Yulian and the Red Storm charged forward.

The main unit got into a fan-shaped formation and waited for the monsters to arrive.

“What the hell are you doing?!”

Thrint’s shout echoed through the desert.

“Can you still call yourself the Red Storm? Hed back right away! Our Red Storm does not need cowards like you!”

What they had worried about happened during the first charge. Although Yulian and the Red Storm warriors defeated some monsters and created a wide path, one of the Red Storm II warriors hesitated for a moment and ended up falling off his pirma.

Thrint who was protecting the hoobae warriors from the back had swung his greatsword to kill a monster before starting to shout at the fallen warrior.

Once the pirmas stopped moving, hundreds of large monsters saw them and started to rush toward them. Seeing such a large herd of monsters chasing after them had made many other Red Storm II warriors afraid.

They might not have become so scared if they were fighting against humans, but their opponent were monsters, not humans.

Their loud roars and terrible smell.

“What are the rest of you doing? Hurry up and follow them!”

Once Thrint shouted again, the hoobae warriors started to chase behind the others while the ten Red Storm warriors in the rear were holding off the monsters that were approaching once more.

The warriors up front who had lost their speed were starting to find themselves in trouble.

Thrint’s decision in that urgent situation was to get off their pirmas. In such terrain, a pirma that lost speed was more of a

hindrance than help. It was better to fight on your feet in a situation like this.

The situation became better once the other warriors got off their steeds following Thrint's lead, but it did not change the fact that they were still in a dangerous situation.

"Damn bastards, I told you not to come if you're going to get scared like this. You're all dead when we get back."

One of the warriors started to shout before swinging his greatsword with all of his strength.

It might be possible for Yulian, but it would be suicide for their fellow Red Storm warriors to come back to them while fighting these monsters. It might be possible if there were a lower amount of monsters, but for a monster herd this size, it was better to go all the way through and come back with a second charge at full speed.

While the warriors that were stranded were struggling, Yulian and the other Red Storm warriors came back. And then, they all had no choice but to get off their pirmas and fight the monsters.

They needed to slow down their pirmas to save their stranded friends, and that was guaranteed to stop their charge. Knowing that was going to be the case, it was better to just get off the pirmas and fight the monsters. Thankfully, the two charges had caused significant amount of damage to the monsters, and with the monsters hesitating in fear of Yulian and the warriors, they felt like they just needed to do a bit more for the monsters to retreat.

"Defensive formation."

Yulian ordered the defensive formation and called Thrint over.

"You and I will act independently away from the formation. Monsters are bound to run away if they meet someone stronger than them. Make it as fast as possible and as cruel as possible."

"Yes, Glow."

The majority of the monsters were being handled by the Red Storm warriors in the defensive formation while Yulian and Thrint started to charge through one side. The reason Yulian selected Thrint was because Thrint's sword art was based on power.

In comparison, Haisha chose a defensive sword art while Shubeon choice one focused on timing and strategy. But Thrint's sword art was one where he would push forward to kill the enemy even if he got injured in the process.

The warriors' sword art style were changing based on their personalities.

The monsters' green blood poured out to the ground and pieces of monster body parts could be seen all over the area.

As the sweet taste of blood started to fill up Thrint's mouth, they heard a shout behind them.

Runa had brought the main unit forward after seeing the ownerless pirmas.

The monsters had not managed to kill anybody at this point, and seeing the large number of humans showing up from the rear, they started to retreat one by one.

The Red Storm warriors who were internally worried finally started to show signs of relief while Yulian was concerned about the path to the Monster's Desert that was getting harsher and harsher as they moved forward.

Book 6-8.3

The continent was struggling with the suddenly expanded number of monsters.

Other than the occasional war, the continent was peaceful. They had not dealt with monsters for a long time that the damage caused by these monsters continued to grow day by day, and all nations had no choice but to struggle with how to respond to this issue.

Although they were certain they could reduce the damage if they increased the number of soldiers stationed in each city and town, they could not easily move soldiers who were stationed at the border.

All of their soldiers except the minimum amounts to ensure the safety of the cities were stationed at the border, making it difficult to move them without being wary of what the other nations may do.

But a sudden change occurred that nobody expected. The Rojini Kingdom was the first to withdraw their troops from the borders.

Nobody cared about the other borders, but the fact that they even removed the soldiers stationed on their border with the Silence Empire was a big issue. The Rojini Kingdom may have won their war against the Silence Empire, but the Silence Empire was a strong enough force that would not disappear that easily.

But even more shocking was the Silence Empire's movement.

Even the Silence Empire withdrew the soldiers who were stationed at the border with the Rojini Kingdom.

Nobody knew whether there were any secret agreements between the two large nations, but it was true that the damage from the monsters decreased once the border soldiers were moved to the cities and villages.

Thanks to that, all of the other nations in the Eastern Continent slowly started to withdraw their troops at the borders as well, and this change caused a similar change in the Western Continent as well.

The small scale battles between nations at the border started to disappear. Right now, they all had their hands full trying to defend against the increased number of monsters.

A rumor started to spread at that time that the location where the most monsters were generated was the desert and that the number of monsters in the continent was nothing compared to the desert.

The surprising part of the rumor was that the desert's strong forces, the Pareia Kingdom and their sworn enemies the Shuarei tribe, were successfully fighting back against the monsters.

It meant that all of the desert warriors were being utilized to defend against the monsters.

The nations of the continent were praying that the desert does not get destroyed. If this defensive line on the desert was destroyed, then the chaos they were facing right now would multiply by quite a bit.

Another new change occurred during this time, it was a temporary alliance between all of the nations.

All of the nations suffered a lot of damage every time they met against a new monster. The goal of the alliance was to share informations about monsters with each other to reduce the damage to all of them.

They could not just sit back and let the monsters destroy them.

Pareia held an important role in this continental alliance. It was because the Monster's Desert was the spawn location for all sorts of monsters.

That was why many of the nations created a special forces team

that was sent over to Pareia and Shuarei.

There were also some free adventurers, mercenaries, and sages not associated with any nations who chose to head to the desert on their own accord to help keep the monsters at bay.

Crack. Crack.

The dry branch was burning well and warming up the inside of the paoe. On top of the bonfire was a pot of boiling drier (a type of desert tea), with Yulian sitting next to it trying to figure things out under the light of the lamp.

‘Would it be better for me to take a trip on my own?’

Yulian was concerned about the growing opposition from the monsters. It might be better for him to head to the Monster’s Desert on his own to experience a lot of the different monsters before coming back to train the other warriors.

‘No. We need to also figure out what is generating these monsters and destroy that as well.’

Even he could not take care of everything on his own.

Honestly speaking, he thought about heading there with just his master, but for some reason, Chun Myung Hoon shook his head and objected. His reason for the objection was that it was not something he should be involved in as he was not from this world.

Yulian could not fall asleep as he thought about all sorts of things as the night grew deep.

Swiiiiish~

Yulian snapped out of his thoughts after hearing the paoe flapping from the wind.

Seeing both the lamp and the bonfire shaking vigorously, Yulian looked around with curious eyes. There was nowhere for the wind to enter the paoe.

But the flame continued to shake and the noise of the paoe

flapping did not stop. Yulian slowly got up from his seat.

Shiiiiiiiiing.

Yulian slowly pulled out his greatsword and held it in his hand. Although it was not an evil aura, an existence that was resonating a strong sense of grief was heading his way.

As time went on, that sense of grief continued to get stronger. Yulian pulled up his ki to fight against that feeling.

It was an oppressive aura that made it difficult to breathe. He had not felt such a feeling in a long time.

Yulian flipped his greatsword upside down to protect his chest.

Hooooooooooooong~

A violent wind rushed into the paoe and blew out the lamp and the bonfire. Yulian's body also moved back and to the sides as he stabbed his sword forward.

Flash.

He then saw two red lights in front of him.

As he took a closer look, he could tell that they were pupils. Although it was red, there was a clear distinction between the pupil and the sclera. It was definitely a set of red eyes.

“You must be a monster.”

The moment Yulian let out his aura and tried to stab one of the eyes, his surroundings became dark before starting to glow red once again.

The red eyes had blinked.

“I did not come here to fight.”

It was an unbelievably gentle and serene voice. However, Yulian did not lower his sword as he glared at the red eyes.

The eyes blinked once again.

“Please do not be tricked by my outer appearance. The difference between light and dark is the brightness of light, and the difference between good and evil can be a single step away.”

The moment it felt like the red eyes were going to blink once more, the surroundings became bright.

This time, it was a white light instead of a red light. And what Yulian saw this time was not the monstrous red eyes.

This time, it was a woman with red hair rolled up in a bun, a beauty that made it difficult to approach, and clothes as white as snow, standing in front of Yulian.

The woman held her long hem that could reach the ground up to her chest as she bowed.

“Will this be enough for you to lower your sword? Yulian-nim’s sword will cause severe injuries to even someone like me.”

Yulian glared at the woman for a while before starting to speak.

“Who are you?”

“Greetings. The maiden who walks the path of chaos, Origin Renaria, greets the Desert Conqueror, Yulian Provoke-nim.”

Yulian did not lower his guard as he asked.

“Which is your true appearance?”

“Just like a coin has two different sides that are part of the same coin, both of the appearances I have shown you are my true appearances.”

“I do not like to joke around. Is it magic?”

The woman let out a sigh as she answered.

“Sigh~ I was hoping you would be different, but Yulian-nim is just the same I suppose.”

“I do not like to beat around the bush. Are you human? A monster?”

The woman opened up her arms and a light that was not too bright but bright enough shone into the paoe, as if she was an angel that came down from heaven.

“I asked you to not be tricked by my outer appearance. If I appeared in front of Yulian-nim like this, would Yulian-nim be treating me like he is treating me now?”

“.....”

“I don’t think that would be the case. You would have at least given me enough respect to listen until the end of my story.”

Yulian slowly nodded his head and put his sword away.

“Please take as eat over here.”

The woman smiled at Yulian’s respectful tone and sat down on the chair that Yulian offered her.

“Alright then, please tell me. Who are you and why have you come to find me?”

“Will you not offer me a cup of tea?”

Yulian lightly frowned before pouring a cup of the tea that had been boiling over the bonfire and placed it in front of her.

“Thank you very much.”

The woman grabbed the cup and did not hesitate as she took a gulp of the tea that was still steaming hot.

“Uh...it is very hot.”

The moment Yulian tried to take the cup from her, she had already finished drinking the whole cup of tea.

“It’s really good. Really good. Compared to the slightly sweet, bitter, bland, or randomly assorted taste of the continent’s tea, it is much better. May I have another cup?”

Yulian was flabbergasted as he looked toward her and picked up the cup. She just smiled and peeked toward the pot of tea.

Yulian poured another cup and placed it in front of her as he started to ask.

“Alright, now, please tell me. Who are you?”

Book 6-8.4

“I already mentioned who I was earlier. I am the maiden who walks the path of chaos, my name is Origin Renaria.”

Seeing the woman open her eyes widely as she sassily answered, Yulian stiffened his expression as he asked.

“I will keep that in mind. But what is the reason for your visit? You’re not going to tell me you came to drink some tea, are you?”

“Of course not. I came because I had an important message for the Glow.”

“What is the message?”

Origin quickly drank the tea in front of her and started to speak.

“Please stop your army’s progression.”

“What do you mean?”

Origin slowly started to enunciate each word as she repeated her request.

“Please. Stop. Your. Army’s Progression.”

Yulian just blankly stared at Origin. His expression seemed to be asking how she could make such crazy request. But at the same time, he started to try to figure out her reason for coming to visit him with every ounce of brain power he could muster up.

“Completely stop our progression? You make it sound like you know where we are headed.”

“Yes. I do know. Aren’t you heading to the Monster’s Desert?”

“You are correct. I have the responsibility of clearing out our desert that the monsters have taken over.”

Origin stood face to face with Yulian before responding.

“Does that mean that you will retreat if I can guarantee there will be no damage to the desert tribes?”

Yulian hesitated for a moment. Origin's calm demeanor as she asked that question surprised him. She made it sound like she was confident that she could make that happen if that was what Yulian wanted.

"Based on your expression, I'd say it could happen that way if you gave a single order."

"A single order? Of course not. Hohoho. But I will only need three days to make it happen."

Origin let out an irritating laugh, but she was gazing at Yulian with a silent allure at the same time.

"I heard that monsters are being endlessly generated. Are you telling me all those monsters will just disappear?"

"There is no way for monsters that have already been created to just naturally disappear, Pareia's Glow."

Yulian contemplated for a moment. If it did not harm the desert, there was no reason for him to head to the Monster's Desert. He didn't need to put his warriors in harm's way for no reason. But what would happen to the monsters if they do not just disappear into thin air? To the sky? Underground?

Yulian finally realized where the monsters were currently headed to, as well as the reason for Origin's visit.

"What you are aiming at is for the continent to fall into chaos."

Origin's gaze dimmed a bit. Honestly speaking, she thought he would immediately accept as soon as she made the offer.

But she only realized that it would not be that easy after her seduction was rebuffed by Yulian's ability to ward off evil. After also seeing that Yulian was a quick thinking, she felt like she would regret it if she turned this man into an enemy.

"I have finally seen for myself why they call you the Desert Conqueror. You are correct. I am hoping for the monsters to make

it to the continent. And initially, there were no issues with the plan. However

Origin lifted her head up to look up into the air before looking back toward Yulian and continuing to speak.

“I learned that the majority of those monsters were getting destroyed. As someone responsible for the monsters, I had no choice but to investigate the cause of their demise. In the end, I found out that the two great Glows of Pareia and Shuarei were destroying the majority of the monsters.”

“And?”

“Is there another reason for my visit? My only choice was to come ask Yulian-nim to open up a path for the monsters.”

“Open up a path and the desert will not be harmed even a bit?”

Origin started to smile.

“Exactly that. If somehow the monsters harm either the property or people of the desert in any way, we will compensate you back four times as much.”

“We?”

After listening to Origin’s story, Yulian felt like she was part of some group. It made sense. If it wasn’t a group, how could anybody control such large groups of monsters? Yulian started to become more curious about all of it. Just who was able to control the monsters as they wished?

“Glow. It is not easy to speak of the things that are very deep. It is the same as the Glow not being able to answer if I was to ask about the Glow’s weakness.”

In other words, know when to stop if you do not want to lie.

“I will just ask this then. What is your goal by having the monsters cause chaos in the continent?”

Origin smiled brightly as she answered.

“The cooperation of humans.”

“Cooperation? You are saying leaving the monsters to run amok is so that humans will cooperate with each other?”

“Human history continues to tell us that the internal affairs becomes stronger when there is a strong external enemy.”

Yulian asked in disbelief.

“Just who would benefit from that?”

Origin immediately answered as if that was obvious.

“Naturally, it is for the humans.”

“I feel like I am becoming an idiot for some reason.”

Origin lightly smiled and answered.

“If I am being honest with you, we do not call monsters monsters. They are also living beings that inhabit our world. They each have their own lives and goals. The only reason they started being called monsters was because they attack the humans. Humans gave them the name monster.”

“I accept that much. However, humans also act that way for their survival. Before we say who is right and wrong, it is a natural reaction as their lives were on the line.”

“What the Glow says is correct. However, the thing you cannot brush aside is the fact that once a large number of monsters disappeared from this world, humans started to wage a lot of wars against each other.”

Yulian thought for a moment before responding.

“Then you believe that monsters are necessary for humans to stop having war with each other.”

Origin shook her head.

“Humans killing humans, especially not for their survival but for their greed. That is the worst sin of all.”

Origin's answer gave Yulian something to think about.

'Is my war out of greed?'

Yulian noticed his mind becoming a bit chaotic and vigorously shook his head.

'I have never thought that it was for my own greed. I went to war in order to prevent my nation from being oppressed by anybody else. I did my best to make sure that the least number of lives possible had to be lost.'

Yulian looked toward Origin and answered.

"While I agree with some of the things you have to say, that alone is not enough for me to just sit back and watch the monsters attack the continent."

"I just want to bring awareness to the humans. No, I want them to be able to thank the lord for each and every day without being able to even think about committing such terrible sin."

"Based on what you are saying, it sounds like you are not human."

Origin made eye contact with Yulian before nodding her head.

"Didn't you see my original appearance? I am not human. I am part of the demon race that humans fear."

"Demon!"

Yulian became extremely shocked as he subconsciously clenched the hilt of his sword.

Origin had a bitter smile on her face as she started to speak.

"Will the Glow be like the other humans and try to kill me even before hearing my story?"

Yulian glared at her as he responded.

"Before that, this current crisis. The reason the monsters are pouring out of the Monster's Desert. Are you responsible for it?"

“I recall that I told you I was responsible earlier. Of course it is not just me alone.”

“That is why you were able to promise that the monsters will not damage the desert.”

Origin nodded her head.

“Do not just think of it as bad and please take the time to calmly think it through. Humans cannot sin any longer. The end of the world is a punishment from God that we cannot prevent. In order to stop the destruction from happening, humans must stop committing sins and turn to the Lord. However.”

Origin stopped speaking for a moment before continuing to speak.

“How is the world right now? Not long into the era of humans, they sealed off many of the world’s powers and the monsters. After that, humans only had each other as enemies. The voices seeking out the Lord dwindled down while the voice of greed continues to increase. If humans do not obey the ten commandments given by the Lord, the end of the world will approach even faster.”

Origin bowed to Yulian.

“That is what we want to prevent. Please trust us.”

Yulian finally figured it out. He knew who they were.

“You must be the Chaos.”

Origin did not flinch as she answered.

“I am aware that the Glow has met the Master of the Magic Tower. I’m sure she didn’t insist either. We will not insist as well. The selected individuals will all follow their own will. However, we will not stop in explaining the situation to you to broaden your horizon and help you make a decision.”

“A decision.....”

Yulian quietly mumbled to himself. He finally felt like all of the

riddles were solved and his head had cleared.

- And I don't know when, but the people of the Chaos will come find you. It will be easier in the last moments if they convince you in advance.

He remembered the words of the odd old hag at the Magic Tower.

'Did she say that the Magic Tower follows the laws of causality while the Chaos Island believes changes need to be made by human will?'

"She said the crack was created by the Chaos in order to prevent the flow of the world."

"That lady said something odd once again. Although we were trying to defend against the crack, they were the ones to counter-seal it. They being the people who have selected the Magic Tower. That was why the crack continued as planned."

'She's talking about Mai-nim.'

Yulian finally realized just what Mai had been counter-sealing this whole time.

"I feel like the pieces of a puzzle are finally coming together. Then you are the person who has come to convince me."

"Yes. But I will not say anything like telling you to select the Chaos. The decision is for the Glow to make on his own."

End of chapter

Book 6-9.1

Decision

Who is the decision for?

“Release the monsters to call forth human awareness and make sure they do not commit any sins. That definitely may be a method, but what do you think about the possibility of innocent people living properly being killed by the monsters?”

“All big events in history required sacrifices.”

“I heard a story like this. Was the reason the forgotten continent perished because there were no righteous people left?”

Origin looked toward Yulian with a surprised expression. Yulian knew about something she did not expect someone from the desert to know.

“It is something I have known from the past, and something I was even more interested in after coming back from the Magic Tower.”

Yulian started to speak as if he knew what Origin was thinking, and Origin nodded her head before responding.

“You are correct. However, as humans come together, the number of righteous people will only increase. One of the unique traits of humans is the ability to get stronger and stronger as they come together for the same cause.”

Yulian thought that she was not wrong as he asked.

“So, am I the first?”

He was asking while thinking about Venersis.

Origin shook her head.

“I first met with the Shuarei’s Glow. Just like the Glow was destined to meet first with the Magic Tower, the Shuarei’s Glow

was destined to meet with us first.”

“And his response?”

“The Shuarei’s Glow has fortified the defense around the oases while withdrawing all warriors stationed around the Monster’s Desert.”

Origin did not specify that Venersis said he would need to think about it.

Yulian started to worry after hearing that Venersis did as Origin asked. It was true that it was quite difficult to defend against these monsters. They were having a hard time just leading a group to the Monster’s Desert in the first place. Origin’s people were willing to lessen the burden on them. It would be the same as signing a non-aggression treaty. Furthermore, if they chose to do that, Pareia can safely get stronger.

The people of the continent weighed on him, but he was not their Glow. He would have absolutely rejected the offer if he was their Glow, but he was the Pareia’s Glow, not the Shuarei’s Glow or the continent’s Glow. The reason he could not immediately agree with Origin’s offer was probably because of compassion for his fellow humans.

Yulian thought it over multiple times before finally starting to speak.

“I will temporarily stop the progression. However, do not take it as my accepting your offer. I just need time to think.”

Origin’s expression brightened up as she responded.

“Of course. Nobody will be able to go against the Glow’s decision. I just ask that you think hard about the reason for our movement and make a wise decision. I will visit you again once you have made your decision.”

Once Origin bowed to Yulian, he just gave a short reply as he was still full of concerns.

“Goodbye.”

Origin smiled as she disappeared into the fire as she had originally arrived, and Yulian could only blankly stare at the bonfire that was still burning brightly.

“Yulian!”

Yulian came back to his senses after hearing someone calling for him and looked behind him.

“Master.”

“Tsk tsk tsk. Look at you just blankly sitting there like an idiot. I feel sorry for your warriors.”

As Chun Myung Hoon clicked his tongue on his way over, Yulian asked with confusion.

“Master, what are you doing here?”

His master had not been willing to come with them even when he asked.

“Did they come?”

Yulian did not understand his master’s question for a moment and just stared at Chun Myung Hoon before his eyes turned wide.

Chun Myung Hoon knew about it.

“Master, how do you know?”

“Didn’t I tell you I didn’t just go around sightseeing while I was gone? I heard and learned a lot.”

“Ah!”

Yulian shouted out in understanding at Chun Myung Hoon’s response.

‘I really must be an idiot. The master at the Magic Tower said that my master was someone who knows and helps. Does that mean that master already knows about everything and came to help me?’

Chun Myung Hoon saw Yulian's expression and started to speak.

"Based on your expression, you must have heard from that old hag that I am someone who helps. It's funny. Although the meaning may be a bit different, I, Chun Myung Hoon, received the Heaven's Mandate to help others before I ended up in this world."

"Then master ... you ...?"

'You knew about everything when you approached me as a foreigner?'

"Oh, what is that expression for?"

"No...nothing."

Seeing Yulian looking depressed as he lowered his head, Chun Myung Hoon started to pat Yulian's shoulder as if he already knew and answered.

"Didn't I tell you in the past? I am originally not from this world. It has not been very long that I learned that I was someone who is supposed to help you and someone else. I know that may not be enough for you to stop thinking that I strategically approached you."

"No, I know. I definitely heard it."

Seeing Yulian urgently respond, Chun Myung Hoon smiled brightly as he started to joke with Yulian.

"You are a king of a nation and close to forty years old. You cannot act like that. Even if the world is crumbling down, you must stand confidently."

Yulian had too many things to think about that he did not respond back to Chun Myung Hoon's joke and instead asked a question.

"Master, what am I supposed to do?"

"That is something for you to decide."

Yulian fervently shook his head as he answered.

“It is too complicated. Am I supposed to feign ignorance for everything and everyone else and just think about our Pareia?”

“That is good in its own way. You are the Pareia’s Glow.”

“But then all of the monsters will flow to the continent, and many innocent people will lose their lives. I also worry about who the continent has to defend against that large amount of monsters.”

Chun Myung Hoon nodded his head and answered.

“Why are you so worried? You are the leader of hundreds of thousands of warriors. You have enough strength to fight off these monsters. There will definitely be some losses, but you will only lose one while others may lose ten to defeat the same amount of monsters. You cannot compare the difference of the two.”

“Master!”

Yulian was glaring at Chun Myung Hoon.

“Yulian, what are you so worried about? Do what your heart tells you to do. The words of others cannot do anything to help your decision. What you are doing right now is grumbling. Figure out who you are. Remember what your name is.”

Seeing Chun Myung Hoon sternly answer, Yulian closed his mouth. His master’s words were right. The thing he could rely on most right now was the fact that he could grumble to his master.

“Master, I think I need to think it over a bit longer.”

“Of course. Walk down the path you think is right. I will watch over you.”

Yulian felt the weight lessen at that single sentence from his master and nodded his head.

The next day, Yulian gave the order for all troops to withdraw.

The Castle of Storm was becoming rowdy.

A large number of knight brigades, mercenaries, and free adventurers stepped into Pareia one by one.

But they were all confused. The Castle of Storm was extremely peaceful, and none of the nearby oases showed any signs of monster attacks. On the other hand, the continent was receiving significant damage from the monsters' attacks.

The quick thinking people figured it out. The desert warriors of Pareia and Shuarei were not fighting against the monsters.

Many of these people sought out meetings with Yulian. These requests were even more numerous from the knight brigades that were sent from nations.

However, Yulian did not meet with anyone.

His subordinates would have helped appease the requesters if they knew his thoughts, but Yulian did not say anything even to his closest people. Neither Runa, Pere, nor even Grace knew what Yulian was thinking, so they were having a hard time dealing with all of these requests.

"Honey, I'm getting so worried seeing you like this. I'm already worried enough because Violet has been getting weaker these days."

Grace started to whine to Yulian, which was not like her normal self. Even she noticed it. She could tell that something important was happening. No, the thing that worried her the most was Yulian and Violet's health.

Both of them were getting weaker as the days went by. It started once the monsters started to appear.

"I'm sorry."

Yulian held her hand and started to caress it as he started to speak.

“Is it a concern that I should not know about?”

Yulian just blankly gazed at Grace after hearing her question. He had not told a single person yet.

Runa was also finding Yulian's actions to be odd, but it was something he had not even told Runa.

‘Runa would agree to it with no hesitation. He puts Pareia first.’

Yulian had a bitter smile on his face as he responded.

“Not yet ... please hold on a little longer, Grace.”

Grace closed her mouth and quietly left the room after seeing Yulian's expression. It was an expression she had not seen before in their entire marriage. Her husband had never looked so down regardless of what was weighing on his mind.

After quietly watching Grace leave, Yulian stood up from his seat. He was feeling extremely frustrated.

“Mm.....”

Yulian started to frown as he let out a moan. He was not used to the strong sunlight after not coming out of the room for a couple of days.

“Hyung-nim.”

Yulian turned around after hearing a familiar voice. Once he turned around, he saw Aizen standing behind him.

“Aizen!”

Book 6-9.2

After seeing Yulian being so surprised as he called out to him, Aizen realized that Yulian did not know he had arrived. The complaints that he heard must really be true.

“When did you get here?”

Aizen responded to Yulian’s question.

“I officially reported that I had arrived, but I guess you did not receive the report.”

Yulian finally realized the impact of his isolating himself in the room without receiving any reports.

“I’m sorry. I have not been receiving any reports these days. I guess they didn’t even tell me about your arrival because I ordered them not to report anything to me.”

“Is something wrong? You look much thinner. There are a lot of negative stories as well.”

Yulian had a bitter smile as he answered.

“I’m sure there are. I haven’t even met with the diplomats from foreign nations. But I am extremely happy to see you. Did you come for the monsters as well?”

“Yes. The kingdom is struggling quite a bit with the monsters.”

Yulian’s eyes started to shine as he asked.

“And who came with you?”

“It was myself and the Red Eagle Knight Brigade.”

Yulian had a slightly shocked expression.

“The entire unit?”

“Yes. The former generation knights had to remain in the kingdom, but all of the current ones were brought with me. Even the knights in training were brought to get some experience.”

Yulian nodded his head and started to smile.

“Hyung-nim, why are you smiling?”

Yulian put his arm around Aizen’s shoulder as he answered.

“I was just relieved. If even you acted that way, I would have been extremely disappointed.”

Aizen looked toward Yulian with confusion, and Yulian started to walk as he answered.

“You want to see?”

“See what?”

“The reinforcements sent by the other nations.”

Aizen could not understand why Yulian was like this, but he nodded his head and followed behind Yulian.

Once Yulian and Aizen came out of the castle, they could see many paoes in the area. It was because they could not house everyone inside the Castle of Storm.

“Many people have come.”

“Yes, a lot has come. The monsters really must be causing a headache. Even without us asking for it, they’re sending us reinforcements in the fear that we would fall.”

Aizen, who could feel some thorns in Yulian’s words, looked toward Yulian. He could see the unhappy gaze and slight frown on Yulian’s face.

“You don’t seem to be happy.”

“Let’s first head outside the castle walls.”

Once Aizen followed Yulian’s wide steps out to the other side of the castle wall, he could see many paoes that were set up there as well, as well as a lot of people moving about.

Yulian started to speak.

“We did not have enough space so the official forces from other nations were placed inside the castle wall while the others were forced to set up camp outside.”

“You had no choice since so many people showed up.”

“Yes, I am extremely thankful. At least for the people over here.”

Aizen could tell that Yulian’s words were odd and peeked toward Yulian before asking.

“Hyung-nim, I don’t understand what you are trying to say. Based on what I heard, hyung-nim has not been meeting with anybody. Is there a reason for that?”

Yulian looked toward Aizen.

“Sigh~.”

Yulian let out a short sigh as he reached his hand out and pointed to the paoes.

“I respect the people residing over there. Even without someone ordering them to go, they chose to come to this dangerous area.”

“They seem to be full of life.”

“Yes. Each of them have the strong will to defeat the monsters. Some of them have really strong abilities as well. Although I have not met with them.”

Aizen agreed with Yulian’s words and responded.

“There are many hidden experts on the continent. I’m sure there are extremely strong groups of adventurers and mercenaries as well. They will be a big help to fight the monsters.”

“Yes. They definitely will. I am thankful for all of these people who came here on their own free will.”

“The problem is not with the people here, then.”

After hearing Aizen’s response, Yulian started to walk back to the inside of the castle.

“Do you know the strength of all of the nations of the continent?”

“I have a pretty good idea.”

After hearing Aizen’s answer, Yulian continued in a frustrated voice.

“Then take a good look.”

After hearing Yulian’s answer, Aizen moved around for a while to observe the groups.

Aizen’s expression started to darken. He started to see why Yulian was so frustrated.

The majority of the units and knights were not even at the level of his kingdom’s infantry soldiers.

“What do you think?”

Aizen could not respond to Yulian’s question.

“These are the reinforcements they sent to us. Do you think they will be able to help? Is that the knights of the continent?”

“Hyung-nim, I understand what you are trying to tell me. But there are some knight brigades that are decently strong.”

Seeing Aizen trying to make excuses, Yulian started to shout.

“If everyone was at that level and it was not just those adventurers and mercenaries outside, I would not be so torn right now.”

“Hyung-nim.....”

Yulian was huffing as if he could not let go of his anger and asked Aizen.

“Are you with the Magic Tower or the Chaos Island?”

“Hyung-nim!”

Aizen called out to Yulian in shock. He was curious about how

Yulian knew about that.

“I heard that you were also a chosen one. That is the same for me.”

“Ah! So that is the case. I should have realized it when the old granny of the Magic Tower took you with her.”

“It is a damned fate for sure. So, which side are you?”

Aizen immediately responded.

“To be honest with you, I do not like either sides. However, my saviors are on the side of the Magic Tower.”

“So you are saying you want to stand on the side of the Magic Tower.”

“If I was forced to make a decision, then that is probably the case. But why are you suddenly asking that? Perhaps?”

Yulian silently nodded his head.

“The Chaos must have visited you. And they must have offered you something, am I right?”

Aizen seemed to have figured something out after asking the question and shouted out in shock.

“Dear lord. Hyung-nim, they asked you not to take care of the monsters, didn't they. In return, they promised that the monsters will not come to Pareia's territory.”

“You got it exactly right as if it was your own story.”

Aizen urgently asked at Yulian's answer.

“So how did you answer? Hyung-nim, have you already joined forces with their side?”

“No, all I told them was that I would think about it. And I have thought a lot about it, about what decision I need to make.”

Aizen was about to say something before stopping himself. Yulian was Pareia's King. The Yulian he knew was a leader with a

strong sense of responsibility.

“I heard that the old world was destroyed because of a lack of righteous people.”

Aizen just quietly waited for Yulian to continue speaking as this first sentence confused him. He knew that the decision was Yulian's, no matter what he said right now.

“It made me wonder if the world really perished because there were no righteous people. I don't know if it is a crack in the world or a destruction of it, but I feel like if that was the requirement for the end of the world, it would not be destroyed now.”

Yulian turned his head and looked toward the castle gate.

“Didn't all those people out there push aside their own plans to come all the way here? Do you think they will be easily defeated by the monsters at their level of strength? I doubt it. That means that they came here for the sake of other humans.”

Aizen felt like he could understand. Yulian was extremely disappointed right now. He was disappointed at the many nations that only thought about their own nation's safety and did not send strong reinforcements.

That was also the reason Yulian smiled at the fact that he brought the Red Knights with him.

‘I'm glad I brought the Red Knights even against all of the opposition.’

Aizen internally let out a sigh of relief. When he was trying to head to the desert with the Red Knights, many of the nobles opposed his decision. In fact, they were against even his going to the desert on his own.

It was because Aizen and the Red Knights alone could handle a single region and ensure its safety. But Aizen disagreed. If the monsters' spawn location was in the desert, they should be able to more efficiently take care of the monsters once they took over the

spawn point. That was why he firmly believed that he should head over to the desert with a strong group of soldiers.

“What do you think? Do you think I need to shed the blood of our warriors of Pareia for them? Especially when we can be fine without shedding any blood at all?”

Aizen did not know how to respond. He would be seriously debating it if he was Yulian as well.

“I have nothing to tell you. However, what I am sure about is the fact that many innocent people will die if hyung-nim does not defeat the monsters.”

“That is why I am still contemplating it. But I question whether I need to shed the blood of my nation’s warriors to save the lives of a foreign nation’s citizens.”

“It is something for you to decide, however, more blood will be shed if you do not defend against them. My honest request is that you defend against the monsters not for the terrible nobles, but for the innocent citizens.”

Yulian let out a small sigh as he answered.

“Sigh~ A person must do that. But that decision is not that easy to make it seems.”

“I can understand. All I can tell you right now is to think about the large number of innocent people. And if hyung-nim chooses to fight the monsters, I will be right there beside you to help.”

Yulian looked toward Aizen and started to lightly smile.

“Yes, it is now time to make a decision. Please pray to your god and ask that I make a wise decision.”

Watching Yulian returning to the castle to make his decision, Aizen did as Yulian asked and prayed for Yulian to make a wise decision.

Pareia’s Meeting of Greatest Warriors.

Nobody could hide their shock at Yulian's words and immediately started to debate with each other about the right course of action.

As Yulian expected, Runa and the oasis chiefs were on the side that thought there was no reason to defend against the monsters, while the shamans and Greatest Warriors thought it was only right for them to defend against the monsters.

Seeing the two sides continue to argue, Yulian became even more torn. This meeting he called to find a resolution was not helping him at all.

As Yulian's expression started to turn worse, Violet, whose expression was just as bad as Yulian's spoke up.

"Glow, please do not forget about the Hero's Land."

Yulian's heart started to shake almost instantly.

"The respected ancestors there have not found their peace even after death and are still continuing their fight. Well, it is not that they have not found their peace, it is more that they have chosen not to take it."

Violet looked directly at Yulian as she continued to speak.

"Please set an example for Pareia's children. Show them how they should grow up. Please don't go down as the coward who chose to avoid a necessary battle for personal gains."

The entire room turned silent. All of them knew that the desert was something they needed to protect. It was not for anybody else but for themselves. However, it was not easy to not fall for this extremely sweet temptation.

Violet's final words.

"The Glow's current worry does not seem any different than those of the cowardly kings of the continent."

That was how the meeting came to an end.

End of chapter.

Book 6-10.1

The Castle of Heroes

It was a location where neither nationality or identity mattered.

It was a location where people gathered for the sole purpose of defeating the monsters.

Yulian, who had not been meeting with the foreign diplomats for a long time, called for all leaders of the knights brigades and infantry brigades to gather together.

The meeting room was packed because of the number of nations present, and the sound of whispers filled echoed through the room.

But that only lasted a bit. All of the whispers stopped once Yulian and Runa entered the meeting room. It was because Yulian displayed his ki in order to pressure them when he entered.

The gazes of everyone turned toward Yulian, but Yulian did not care as he started to speak.

“I apologize for ignoring our esteemed guests who have come to assist our Pareia. I am Yulian.”

The room became completely silent as they all started to stare at Yulian. It was not often that they had the opportunity to meet one of the generation’s strongest warriors.

“I will cut right to the chase. Right now is not the time to deal with the fluff.”

Yulian said that as he took a look around at everyone who had gathered together. Other than a couple of people, the rest of them really didn’t even seem to be as strong as Pareia’s veteran warriors.

‘I do not expect Greatest Warrior level. However, for the leaders of the brigades sent from the nations ...shouldn’t they at least be at the lead warrior level.....the foreigners outside number less than

half of those gathered here, but they are at least multiple times stronger than all of them here.'

Yulian had decided not to pay attention to that problem, however, he could only sigh internally at the fact that other than the Rojini Kingdom's Aizen, no other nation had sent their elite, or even someone at the level of a lead warrior.

"I plan to gather all of you together as a group to utilize you. Please hand over full command of your forces to our side."

Many of the leaders started to look at each other after hearing Yulian's words. Giving away full command meant that they would just be chess pieces.

"That does not make any sense. Our knights and I have come under his highness's order to provide assistance. The knights have enough strength to complete missions on their own, and all of them have received advanced leadership education. But if we hand over the command, all of that knowledge will become useless. Why don't you send some warriors to me and give a command. I will make sure to fulfill it with all of my strength."

The person speaking so much to share his opinion was the leader of the Silence Empire's Vintage Knight Brigade. The Silence Empire must have considered its face, as other than the Rojini Kingdom, this Vintage Knight Brigade was the most useful of all brigades.

Yulian nodded his head once before starting to speak.

"I understand what you are trying to say. However, the command needs to be given to our Pareia, and everyone must move exactly as commanded."

"That does not make any sense at all."

Multiple voices started to whisper around the room.

Slam.

Crack.

With a loud noise, the desk in front of Yulian was destroyed.

Everyone shut up as if they had the hiccups and looked toward Yulian.

“All of you seem to have forgotten who I am. I am the Pareia’s Glow. The Ruler of this desert. Based on the tones you are speaking to me with, I can tell just how much all of you look down on me and our Pareia.”

Silence flowed through the room and everyone started to become anxious. There were only a few nations that dared to fight one on one with Pareia right now, but there was a part of them that was indeed looking down on Pareia as a nation of barbarians.

Runa started to speak as if he was trying to calm Yulian down.

“Glow, please calm down. These guests have all come to assist us. They are not very aware of our Pareia’s etiquettes, so please show them your grace and forgive them.”

“Hmm.”

Yulian let out a short grunt and looked around. Nobody was able to make eye contact with Yulian.

“If my words were too forceful, I ask for your understand. I’m sure everybody would be frantic if monsters were being spawned in your nations.”

Seeing Yulian’s voice calm down a level, everybody in the room could finally internally sigh in relief.

Things were easy from then on. Things became organized and a hierarchy of command was created.

“To make it easy, the team will be called either continent team or foreign team.”

‘Not like it matters, since the majority of the attack strength will come from our warriors.’

Yulian thought about saying that before thinking about their pride and holding back. One of the knight brigade leaders started to speak.

“Aren’t you treating us differently than Pareia’s warriors?”

Yulian quickly turned his head and glared at the knight leader that asked the question.

“Uh.....”

The man who received the full impact of Yulian’s murderous intent started to vomit blood as he fell on the spot.

“Glow!”

“Hyung-nim!”

The moment Runa and Aizen shouted in shock, Yulian’s cold voice rang through the meeting room.

“If I do it my way, you will all die. You will not be able to keep up with my methods. If you have that much complaints, return to your nations. I don’t think you will be much help anyways.”

Yulian did not even look back as he turned around and walked out of the meeting room. Everyone in the room could only blankly stare at each other. As Runa called the shamans over to take care of the injured individual and worked hard to keep the rest of the individuals calm, Aizen chased behind Yulian.

“Hyung-nim, please restrain yourself.”

“They are making me angry. Is that all they are capable of thinking about?”

“They are people who do not know anything. Please restrain yourself. Right now is a time to gather strength.”

Yulian snorted as he responded.

“Hmph, tell them all to go back. I will think of it as learning about the blood and sweat that my ancestors shed and give it my

best.”

Aizen could tell that Yulian was extremely angry. He understood. He knew how difficult the decision was for Yulian.

‘I need to contact the kingdom and have them increase the number of reinforcements. I also need to contact the other nations. If hyung-nim goes even slightly astray and gathers all of the monsters in a single direction, that ... will not be good.’

Aizen made up his mind to contact them as soon as he calmed Yulian down. Everyone really had the wrong idea. They did not know about the dangerous results their mistaken actions would bring.

The Island where darkness never arrives.

“Has he made his decision in the end?”

The man who was sitting deep in the glaring light mumbled to Origin.

“Not yet. The humans and their penchant for self-interest is making it difficult for him to decide. Actually, to be specific, if it was not for those in Valhalla, he would have selected us.”

“Where did it go wrong? Things are getting complicated now.”

Origin smiled brightly at the man’s words and answered.

“I’m sure that is the same for the Magic Tower right now.”

“There are too many decisions we are uncertain about. It might not be the right time yet.”

“It has been said that only those who prepares for the right time can get there. Please do not let your mind lead astray.”

“Hohoo.”

The man let out a short laugh.

“Every so often, I cannot be sure which side is right. We may all be deciphering it to however it suits us best.”

“Please do not let your belief waver. It is not an easy test for a human to endure. Please firm your resolve and have faith.”

The man had a bitter smile as he nodded his head. He needed to continue fighting, at least for now.

“It is disappointing. If he selects us, the chances of that old man helping us would go up.”

“Are you talking about the senior that came from another world?”

“Yes. If the prophecy is not wrong, he should be the strongest on the continent.”

Origin cautiously asked.

“How would that be possible when you are around, my liege?”

“No, we have already exchanged blows. He uses an interesting force that is neither magic or mana. If that old man did not hold back, it would have been a crushing defeat.”

“Is he that amazing?”

The man looked toward Origin with a disappointed expression.

“That is why I am even more disappointed. No matter what, if his disciple selected us, he would at least not get in our way.”

“I see. Should I go make another visit?”

The man shook his head at Origin’s question.

“No, it would only be detrimental. I know about the desert tribes. They are the type to push forward if they come to a decision. Unless something special happens, he will continue to defend against the monsters.”

The man caressed his chin as he continued to speak.

“Give up on activating the gate in the Monster’s Desert.”

Origin was shocked. Even if they were fighting against the monsters, it would be difficult for humans to fend off the stronger

monsters that would pour out of the gates once the seals were activated.

“But the Monster’s Desert is where the strongest monsters reside. I don’t know about the other monsters, but the highest ranked monsters must be summoned there. So to give up on that location

“How many people do you think are on the continent? Our goal is to bring chaos. Hundreds of regular monsters will be more effective for achieving our goal than a single strong monster.”

“But

As Origin could not throw away her ambitions, the man started to smile.

“Throw away your ambitions of the strongest monsters and activate the other gates. If the desert tribes have made up their minds to defend against the monsters, the weaker ones will never make it to the continent. The desert tribes have always been strong. That was why the former liege divided them up in fear of their strength. It seems they have recovered their strength now.”

“Wouldn’t it be possible for us to personally make a move?”

The man’s smile became even bigger at Origin’s question.

“I do not want to touch an awake lion. Regardless, they may be smaller in size, but activate the gates around the continent. Isn’t it great that the desert warriors will not dare to come out of the desert because of the existence of the Monster’s Desert?”

Origin bowed her head.

Book 6-10.2

“I’m getting so tired of this.”

Haisha opened his mouth wide and shook his head.

“It definitely has to be an extremely talented being. How many monsters does it give birth to everyday for them to pour out like this?”

As Shubeon responded in jest, the warriors around them started to laugh. There was a large green monster stomping as it rushed toward them, but the warriors did not seem to mind much.

There were only? around 100 of them.

“What were those called again?”

“Ogres.”

“Right. Thick skin and extremely strong.”

Shubeon mumbled as if he remembered.

The soldiers from the continent may not have been the strongest, but they did bring information with them. That was why each brigade was able to learn all sorts of information about different monsters. The fact that they were cooperating with each other was a very important ordeal, so they were doing their best to remember all of the information.

“What about the foreigners brigade?”

Yulian asked at that moment without taking his eyes away from the front.

“They should be arriving by now.”

Yulian slowly started to move his pirma forward at Runa’s answer and responded.

“Then I guess it is time for us to go.”

Once Yulian started to move forward, the Red Storm and lead

warrior level warriors followed behind him.

They did not include the regular warriors in this subjugation. This was Yulian's way of showing his anger. Yulian declared that although they were at the vanguard, the main unit will be made up entirely of foreigner brigades. Many people had complaints about it, but did not dare to express it to Yulian. It was because they all knew that they were not the strongest soldiers their nations could offer to send. The quick-witted knight brigades had already sent a messenger back to their home nation to send extra reinforcements.

If Yulian decided on a nation and corralled all of the monsters toward that nation, a terrible destruction that would shake the foundation of a nation was certain to occur.

"Runa, the strategy meeting for the people who showed up on their own accord should have finished now right?"

"Yes. They should have started their training by now."

Yulian also treated the adventurers and mercenaries who came on their own accord differently than the knight brigades of foreign nations. It was night and day; he was pretty much feeding the knight brigades cold rice while giving the adventurers and mercenaries Pareia's VIP treatment. This was also a point of opposition, but Yulian ended the debate with a single phrase saying that it was only natural. It was his way of telling them to show a respectable amount of strength if they felt it was unfair.

Yulian said some things that could draw the ire of the other nations, but nobody tried to stop Yulian. Yulian's mental state was very shaky right now. None of them would manage to get through to him anyways.

"Make sure that there are no issues with how we treat them. They have all chosen to come help us on their own accord. And do not think about inserting them into battle until their training is complete."

Yulian once again seriously reminded Runa. Although there were some strong individuals or groups that came, they were now in a war as a large group.

They soon arrived at the vicinity of the ogres.

“Oowoo~”

Yulian let out a short shout as he slashed the waist of the Ogre running toward him. Yulian had already moved on to the next ogre before the green blood could spurt out like a fountain from the first ogre.

Yulian instantly slashed the waists of three ogres before retreating back with Runa to watch the battle.

The warriors were split in a 3-3-5-5 group, with each group attacking a single ogre. They have already experienced this monster enough times that they were not afraid and did not find it to be difficult.

Yulian was planning on including the regular warriors once the lead warrior level warriors became very experienced with the monsters and could lead the warriors. By then, they should not have to worry about any injuries caused by the monsters.

Yulian flung his greatsword at the last remaining ogre.

The time to enter into the Monster’s Desert was less than they expected.

Yulian was very confused about this issue.

It might be natural because there were significantly less monsters compared to when he brought a large number of warriors over the first time, but the question was ‘Why did the number decrease?’ He was even worried that all of the monsters were gathered in the Western Desert and contacted Venersis, but Venersis was just as confused. It didn’t make sense for them to just suddenly decrease in number, so Yulian urgently sent some warriors to the Shire. The monsters were spawning at the Monster’s Desert and the Shire’s

Hero's Land. It probably would not happen, but he was worried that the Hero's Land might be destroyed.

The nations of the continent that received the message from the original knight brigades sent their strongest brigades to the desert, and Pareia also inserted their regular warriors as they started to investigate the Monster's Desert.

"It feels like the number of monsters are going down day by day."

Haisha was wiping away the green blood on his greatsword as he spoke to Yulian.

"I feel the same way. It definitely has gone down. But we have already been investigating for a whole month. I am worried that we still haven't located the spawn point."

Thrint thought for a while before finally speaking.

"Glow, although the number of monsters may be going down, their strength is getting stronger by the day. Now we do not even see the smaller monsters at all."

That really was the case. Even medium-sized monsters were pretty rare now. They could only see large monsters now. These monsters were difficult for even veteran warriors to handle.

"Send the message for everyone to gather together. It will probably be beneficial to talk it over. And make sure to send the information to the continent as soon as we gather them."

Runa, who was standing next to Yulian, nodded his head and responded.

"I understand, Glow. By the way, doesn't it feel like it became dark all of a sudden?"

"Is it already that late? It's not the rainy season so it can't be rain."

Crackle~

At that instant, they heard a faint sound of thunder in the sky.

Everybody looked up out of reflex. There were dark clouds because it was starting to get late, but it was not the type of weather for it to start raining. The moment they felt like the sky flashed, a large empty area started to form in the middle of the warriors. The warriors had moved away in a circular formation for some reason.

Once Yulian and the Red Storm warriors arrived, there was a red image being drawn on the ground.

“All warriors move back!”

Yulian felt an odd murderous aura and urgently ordered the warriors to move back

Watching the blood colored image being drawn on the sandy ground, Yulian could tell that it was a magic circle. He had heard about it in the past from Mai. Magic circles can transport you somewhere, and an image on the ground alone can be enough to make people fall into hallucinations. The story that Yulian found most interesting was the fact that they could be used to summon monsters. And in a situation like right now where a lot of monsters were being summoned from the other world, this blood colored magic circle had to be a summoning circle. There was no way something good would pop out of it.

‘They said Shopping was afraid for his life and ran away. It would have been very dangerous at that time if master was not there. Based on the aura coming off of this magic circle, this monster is probably on the same level as that monster.’

Yulian grabbed his greatsword and ordered the Red Storm to prepare for battle. He was planning on attacking the monster as soon as it was summoned, not even giving it time to realize it was out. In a situation like this where they had no idea what the monster being summoned was, that seemed to be the best course of action.

The summoning finished in an instant. It did not fall down from the sky or shoot up from underground, it just suddenly appeared as

if it had been there the whole time. On first glance, it was as tall as those giants that they heard about in fairy tales. It was wearing a large grey robe fitting its height, and was holding a large scythe. They could not verify its face. The only thing they could see were black lights pouring out of where they expected its eyes to be.

“The reaper of souls.....”

Aizen must have felt the ominous aura and hurried over, as Aizen quickly approached and mumbled as he looked toward this oddly dressed giant with shock.

“Do you know anything about it?”

Aizen responded to Yulian’s question as if he was reading it out of a book.

“A devil that was born from the darkness of Chronos, son of Uranus (sky) and Gaia (earth). The envoy of death. They call it the Grim Reaper. It is said to harvest human souls by slashing them with its scythe.”

“Any weaknesses?”

Aizen looked toward Yulian and answered.

“It is a devil that comes out in mythology. We will need to fight it to see. However, please do not get any injuries from that scythe. Based on what I have heard, it will be impossible to recover if you are hit by that scythe because your soul will start to seep out through the injured area.”

As if it was trying to prove Aizen right, the reaper lifted its scythe and started to glide over.

“Aizen, the two of us will try it. Red Storm, retreat.”

It was not that Yulian thought the Red Storm warriors could not take it on, but Aizen just mentioned that it would be a serious issue if they were injured. That was why Yulian decided to tackle it with just Aizen. Aizen nodded at Yulian’s words and put his hand on his

sword as he shouted.

“Holy Weapon.”

Aizen’s sword started to glow yellow with Aizen’s magic, and Aizen put the same magic on Yulian’s greatswords.

“You also use magic?”

“Some knights learn magic to fortify their weapons. This magic right now is used when we fight things that are not human. However, I do not know how effective it will be.”

Aizen glared at the reaper as he answered.

“Good. I should learn it too.”

Yulian started to mumble as if he was satisfied with the light coming off his sword.

Swiiiiiiiish~

The scythe that was coming as fast as the wind was aimed for Yulian’s neck.

“Hut!”

Yulian ducked in shock after seeing the scythe suddenly fly toward him without any movement. He felt chills on his neck as the wind blew away his cut hair.

Aizen used that opening to charge toward the reaper.

“Haaaaaat!”

With a loud shout, Aizen charged toward the reaper’s chest. The reaper leaked out thick black light as it took two steps back and swung its scythe again. The moment Aizen blocked the scythe, Yulian moved so fast that it did not seem humanly possible to charge toward the reaper, stab it in the side with his greatsword and twist it.

-Creeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee—

With an odd scream, the reaper fought against Aizen with the

hand holding the scythe and reached toward Yulian's neck with its other hand.

“Hyung-nim, please avoid making contact with it.”

Yulian, who was planning on leaving the sword in the reaper's side to grab the reaper's hand and twist it off, heard Aizen's voice and put away his hands as he rolled on the ground.

Pop.

At that instant, the sand suddenly spurted up and there was a small puddle on the ground.

“What? This thing uses wind magic too.”

Yulian looked toward the reaper with a shocked expression. If he tried to grab the reaper's hand without listening to Aizen's words, this invisible force would have hit his neck before he could even grab the reaper's hand.

Yulian face started to fill with excitement.

Book 6-10.3

It was hard for him to find such excitement other than when fighting against his master or Venersis.

“Haaaaaap!”

Aizen continued to shout as he charged at the reaper. Since the reaper was only using one hand to wield his scythe, he was continuously pushed back by Aizen.

Yulian used that opening to jump back up and once again grabbed onto the two greatswords dangling on the side of the reaper's waist.

“It'll be complicated if even this cannot kill you.”

Yulian shouted like that as he unleashed his ki and pushed it into the sword. The moment it looked like there was so much ki in the swords that even normal people would be able to see it, Yulian twisted his swords and pushed them further into the reaper's waist.

The reaper's black light disappeared after Yulian's attack and chunks of darkness started to spurt out of the reaper's entire body.

Once Yulian and Aizen quickly retreated, the reaper started to blow up like a person who was spurting blood.

Did about three seconds pass? After about that much time, there was nothing in front of them anymore.

“It doesn't even leave behind a corpse.”

Yulian frowned as he mumbled in disbelief.

While everyone was watching with shocked expressions, Yulian was about to pick up his swords from the ground before frowning once again. His greatswords were glowing black and red. Yulian did not dare to touch it because he did not know what might be on it, and looked toward Aizen and the Red Storm as he started to

speak.

“This is not good. If it costs two greatswords per reaper, we’ll end up using too much steel.....”

Seeing Yulian so casually shrug his shoulder when he could have easily lost his life, everybody started to laugh.

It felt as if there was a set duration of time for monsters to spawn as the people who did not manage to find a single spawn point for an entire month managed to find eight monster spawn points after the battle with the reaper.

However, there were no monsters at the level of the grim reaper that were being summoned anymore, and since the location the reaper was summoned was also the location where Asmodeus was summoned, that first location seemed to be the location where the strongest monsters were summoned.

By the time another month went by, they had managed to find a total of twelve monster spawn points, and based on the fact that they did not find monsters in any other locations, these twelve seemed to be all of the spawn points in the desert. The warriors and foreigners brigade immediately took care of any summoned monsters, and continued to gain experience dealing with monsters in the process. People started to relax after thinking the Monster’s Desert was completely subjugated, and some of the adventurers and mercenaries started to withdraw, thinking that there was no longer any reason to stay. This was when the situation happened.

A large number of monsters being summoned at once. Although they had blockades set up at every magic circle, other than the locations that Yulian and Aizen were defending, the teams were unable to handle the large number of monsters. This led to the blockades being run over by the monsters.

Some areas with the Silence Empire’s knights or strong adventurer groups managed to hold on, but they needed to watch their backs because other areas were no longer safe. Thanks to

that, they were unable to put their full strength to subjugate the monsters in front of them and ended up being broken through as well.

That day, the Red Storm and Red Knights had to continuously move around. They did manage to take care of all of the monsters after gathering the warriors and the foreigners brigade in the rear, but hundreds of people were laid to rest in the desert that day.

The number of soldiers increased once more because of that incident, and the warriors and foreigners brigade could not help but be stuck in this Monster's Desert even if no monsters were spawning.

With the warriors and foreigners brigade complaining because there was nothing to do in the area and no monsters were spawning, each nation's representatives started to worry. This was also the case for Yulian, who had the highest number of warriors designated to the area.

They would not be thinking about it if they were continuously fighting, but it really was too boring right now. But it wasn't like they could bring their families to a dangerous location like this.

One day, Runa urgently came to look for Yulian and started to speak.

"Glow, I have a method."

Yulian's ears perked up. Even he was feeling like it was a waste of time to the point that he was hoping for a monster to show up.

"What is it?"

"Didn't you mention that the ancestors and blocking the monsters underground in the Hero's Land?"

"Yes."

Runa continued to speak once Yulian nodded his head.

"You also mentioned that there is a magic circle drawn on the

Hero's Land to seal the monsters from coming out, right?"

"It is only possible because the ancestors' souls and many hero's souls are there. A magic circle alone is not enough to seal them."

Runa started to laugh at Yulian's answer and responded.

"Then what reason is there for the magic circle? Isn't it so that it can prevent the monsters from escaping before the ancestors have time to take care of the monsters?"

"Yes."

"Then wouldn't it be fine if we did the same thing?"

Yulian shook his head and responded with negativity.

"That was created with the ancestors' souls and the strength of the desert that has existed from ancient times. The spiritual strength of our ancestors were extremely strong. That was the reason it was able to last this long, but we cannot guarantee safety even if we drew some magic circles. It might get washed away with a single rain."

Runa also shook his head and answered back.

"I am not suggesting that we draw magic circles."

Yulian's eyes started to sparkle as he looked toward Runa. This intelligent warrior had figured out a method. Runa continued to speak.

"We need to build a castle using steel and stone. We then need to invite a lot of magicians from the continent to work with our shamans to draw monster repelling magic circles in every empty area and castle wall. They will also need to make it possible to use spells in the castle."

"You want to build a castle?"

"Yes. Isn't the important thing to prevent the monsters from getting out without our knowledge?"

Yulian finally seemed to understand Runa's plan as he clapped his hands.

"If we do that, 700,000 people will not have to be stuck here. It is a good method. In short, you want to create a cage for the monsters."

"Yes. That is it. We will build a castle here with a single entrance. We will use the fact that the monsters rely on their natural instincts to have the shamans install different things that monsters will not like. That way, it will lead them to the single entrance point."

"Then there will be no issues as long as we can properly seal off that single entrance."

Seeing Yulian say the rest of the plan with a smile, Runa also replied back with a smile.

"Then there will be no reason for so many people to be stuck guarding this location."

"That is a good idea. But we will need a lot of money and time to build another castle. Do we have enough for that?"

Runa shook his finger and made a O with his fingers.

"Then how can you suggest building a castle?"

"Why do we have to build it?"

Runa shrugged his shoulders and started to whisper to Yulian. It seemed to be something that would make them lose face if others heard what they had to say.

Merchants are scary. People who do everything they can to earn money are also scary. It was funny to see that a marketplace was starting to take shape near the Monster's Desert. There were large numbers of warriors and soldiers, knights who were willing to spend a lot of money, as well as a large number of citizens.

The construction of the castle in the Monster's Desert had

started. Of course there was not a single cent that Pareia paid for the construction of this castle. In fact, they even received a stipend for 50,000 warriors.

Runa was very confident about that issue. He was just as confident when he brought up the discussion of building a castle.

- To be honest with you, it possesses no threat for our Pareia to not seal off that area. The only reason we are doing this is for our alliance nations, as well as all of your citizens who will shed their innocent blood if we do not do something about it.

Runa clenched his fists and continued to speak.

- That is why we have decided to build a large cage in order to prevent any potential ambush by the monsters. It is not for our Pareia but for all of your nations.

People started to whisper amongst each other and Runa quickly passed the pile of paper in front of him around to everyone as he continued to speak.

- This is the blueprint for the castle that we plan to build in the Monster's Desert. We will need a lot of workers, steel, stone, and magicians. We are not forcing any of you to contribute. However, I'm sure all of you are aware that the weaker the castle is, the easier it will be for the monsters to run wild.

It really may have been more of a threat than Runa being confident. However, there was nobody who was upset about it in the room. They knew what Runa was saying was true, as well as the fact that Pareia had sent the largest number of warriors to the Monster's Desert. Furthermore, the most dangerous role was still on Pareia, so even though the materials for construction might be too much for any single nation to handle on their own, they could have thought that it would not be much of a burden with the entire continent coming together to contribute to this castle. That was how everyone in the room agreed to building a castle at the Monster's Desert and sent messages to their home nations for

materials and workers.

That happened three months ago. Now, the construction was slowly starting and the marketplace was drawing people over.

Runa started to smile with satisfaction while looking at the construction of the castle, as well as the quickly developing village around it.

The important thing was that there was nobody in that meeting that was knowledgeable about economy. They all believed that a large number of people, stones, and steel was necessary to build a castle. They just accepted it as everyone sharing the financial burden of building a castle, and sat in on the meeting as the representative of their nations.

That line of thinking was a big mistake.

This construction was at least twenty times the size of the construction of the Castle of Storm. It naturally required that much more workers, and many specialists were required to create the necessary components for the castle. It was too far of a distance to transport all of the materials over.

And would they transport food every day to feed those people? There would naturally be people who would bring a large amount of food over and open restaurants, and since people need more than just food to live, different types of entertainment such as bars would also be created.

Runa accepted all of these people. He just made sure to send out a lot of warriors to ensure their safety and collect taxes.

And if a day comes in the far future where all of the monsters are defeated and no more monsters continue to spawn, this enormous Castle of Heroes that is currently being built will naturally belong to Pareia. People weren't going to break down this castle and take parts back to their nations.

In Runa's eyes, this literally was eating the pheasant and also the

egg. This made Runa smile even more.

“It will be an amazing place.”

“Indeed. You will not find a castle of this size anywhere on the continent.”

Seeing Aizen respond to him, Yulian shook his head and answered back.

“That is not what I meant. I am talking about the goal of this castle. I hope that many heroes will take the time to visit this castle. That is why I plan on naming it the Castle of Heroes once it is completed.”

“The Castle of Heroes?”

“Yes. Once things settle down a bit, I have something to show you. It is the location where many of our ancestors are continuing the fight even after their death. That place is called the Hero’s Land. Although we are nothing compared to them, I am calling it the Castle of Heroes to show that we are doing what we can to help them.”

“I am looking forward to seeing it.”

“If it is you, they may be willing to meet with you.”

Yulian stood shoulder to shoulder with Aizen as they started to walk.

The Red Storm and Red Knights who have become as close to each other as Yulian and Aizen continued to chat with each other as they followed behind them.

THE END

Epilogue

A red devil with two large wings at least ten meters in length, a burning sword in its left hand, and a whip as thick as an adult's body that looked like it could wipe away thirty people at once in its right hand, was flying toward them in the air.

It was a Balrog, one of the devils that was so strong that it was considered on the same level as the demon race.

“Shit, it's another Balrog.”

Shubeon had an expression that showed his disgust of the devil and picked up his greatsword.

Shubeon was currently standing in the most central location of the Monster's Desert.

The regular warriors or soldiers ended up with severe injuries or death when dealing with the highest caliber monsters being summoned in the central area, so Yulian took the danger upon themselves and ordered the Red Storm to personally guard that area.

The Red Storm gladly accepted the order. It tired them out and they had to be away from their homes for at least half of the year, but nobody had any complaints.

It was because they were the Red Storm.

“Hurry up and break up into your squads. We had some bloodshed last time because we were trying to figure out its pattern.”

Seeing Haisha run over and shout, the other warriors quickly headed toward the area they were responsible for protecting.

The Balrog swung its large whip toward the Red Storm warriors who were approaching in a semi-circle formation to try to sweep them all away at once, but the Red Storm seemed to be used to it.

They almost too easily avoided that whip.

The Balrog seemed to be upset as it started to glare at the warriors and started to speak.

- You dare

Even that short phrase had a loud screech with it, making the warriors start to frown.

It's voice was extremely annoying to the ear.

"It always says the same thing. Do you think monsters have no creativity?"

Thrint answered Shubeon's question.

"What do you expect from monsters? We need to figure out how to kill them before they can even say that."

"Stop chatting and let's kill this thing already. Apparently the money sent to our families from killing that thing is pretty good."

"You whipped bastard. You're going to end up being treated as a cash cow like that."

"Is there anybody here who hates earning money by killing that thing? It's different than the past now."

Haisha casually responded back to Shubeon's words as he smiled. Everybody else smiled as well.

"Begin!"

Once Haisha shouted, the warriors started to run forward as if they had been waiting for his order to start.

- Roooooooooar.

The Balrog let out another roar as it flicked its whip once more. But it suddenly had an odd expression as soon as it flicked its whip. The speed of these humans was too fast.

The moment the Balrog tried to flap its wings and fly up to attack in shock, it felt a piercing pain in its wing.

“Always the same pattern.”

There were two Red Storm warriors behind the Balrog holding long spears. They shook their heads in dismay as they started to speak.

-Ooraaaaaaaaaaaaaar!

The Balrog shouted in anger and tried to rage around and sweep away the humans. It suddenly saw its Monster's Core in front of its eyes.

‘What is this?’

That was the Balrog's last thought.

“And the end.”

Shubeon smiled as he ran toward the Balrog's corpse and pocketed the Monster's Core.

“Won't they please come in a pair?”

“Do you think this is just playing around? Don't let down your guard. The damage will be severe if this thing manages to escape from here.”

Shubeon nodded his head at Haisha's scolding.

He remembered how one of the continent's nations lost a city because of this thing. It had completely destroyed the entire city.

Although it didn't happen to Pareia, the fact that monsters were killing humans affected them all.

“It's just really boring.”

Seeing Shubeon trying to act cool as he responded, Haisha started to scratch his head. Shubeon was not wrong.

“I guess it makes sense. It has already been three years.”

They could see a group of pirmas in the distance as they chatted.

“Huh? Is it already the day to switch?”

As Shubeon asked while looking at the dust cloud off in the distance, everyone turned their head toward the dust cloud.

“Glow!”

Haisha was the first to recognize Yulian and shout to greet him. Yulian was at the front of the group heading their way.

“You’ve all worked hard.”

Yulian quickly approached them and thanked them for their work. Following behind him were the young warriors of the second generation Red Storm warriors.

“But why did you bring those punks with you?”

Yulian smiled and responded as Shubeon looked toward the young warriors with nervous expressions standing behind him and asked.

“It is time for them to slowly get some battle experience.”

“Isn’t it too early?”

“They’ve been training a lot with the medium sized monsters so it should be fine if half of you stay here to guide them.”

“That is a good idea, but

Sensing the doubt in Haisha’s voice, one of the young warriors stepped forward and answered.

“We are not the same as we were in the past.”

“Ho~ is that so?”

Seeing the sparkle in Shubeon’s eyes as he asked, all of the young warriors flinched.

All of the warriors standing in front of them were monsters.

Their natural instincts told them to be more afraid of their sunbae Red Storm warriors than even their Glow.

“Do not shake their confidence too much. They will really get

cold feet.”

“Glow!”

Seeing the young warriors get angry at Yulian’s words, Yulian started to smile as he responded back.

“If you have a complaint, all of you can come at me together. I will accept you if you defeat me.”

The Red Storm II warriors looked around at each other after hearing Yulian’s proclamation.

They did not think that they would lose. Their Glow was a single person while there were a significant number of them.

“Fine.”

The young warrior who was taking Haisha’s role with the Red Storm II warriors confidently answered.

“You’re so mean, Glow.”

At that moment, Thrint stoically said a single phrase.

He had recalled how they had all lost to the Glow in the past.

In addition, based on Yulian’s current abilities, there was probably no chance of victory even if the original Red Storm warriors all joined together with the Red Storm II warriors. But for them to try it on their own.....

“Hahaha.”

Yulian laughed out loud as he answered.

“They’re the ones who want to give it a go.”

The young warriors could not understand why the Red Storm warriors were clicking their tongues and shaking their heads.

As Yulian’s story comes to an end

It really is bittersweet as this series come to an end, even if the latter half made me struggle a lot.

I could have ... written it a bit better ... I could have written it to be more entertaining

There were some parts where I did get greedy, but what hurts me the most is that I was unable to properly portray that greed to all of you.

Many characters were complaining to me. 'Why didn't you let me appear?' I consoled them and apologized as I sent them back.

I didn't have the abilities to put them in the story. I apologized them for my lack of abilities.

The other thing that I was disappointed about is the story.

<<Red Storm>>'s synopsis was really just volume 1, 2, and this final volume. To be honest with you, this final volume's arc about the Rojini Kingdom was an arc I made while relaxing, and the arc after that moved following my original synopsis for the series.

I did contemplate the ending of this final chapter a lot; the thing that I really wanted to add was more about Yulian and Venersis's final battle.

I truly wanted to draw out a conclusion between the two of them, but Pareia and Shuarei's situation, as well as the desert warriors and their Glows' natural intuition made it very difficult to figure out.

I was personally fifty percent satisfied and fifty percent disappointed with this final volume.

I apologize to the readers who are reading this note right now and also thank you from the bottom of my heart. You persisted through the grumblings of a couple characters and accepted some of my greed as it played out through the series.

If there is something that keeps me confident even through all of the regret as I read it from start to finish, it is the readers who stayed with the series until the end.

I'm sure I do not need to say much. The author writes a story and cautiously pushes it out to the readers, and the readers read the story and give their praise and complaints about it.

Yulian, Red Storm.

I'm planning on forgetting about them from my mind now. Only because I have the belief that <<Red Storm>> has helped my writing improve at least a little bit.

[Author thanks a bunch of people in this next paragraph that really doesn't need translating.]

The author named Cyungchan Noh will return to you with the story about a knight named Aizen.

Thank you once again with all of my heart to the readers who read this series until the end.

Sincerely,

Author, Cyungchan Noh

P.S. - All of my fantasy novels work to create a single large story. I hope that some of the parts you are disappointed about are resolved in the future.

Table of Contents

[Red Storm](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Book 1](#)

[Book 1 – 1.1 Meeting the Old Man](#)

[Book 1-1.2 Master and Disciple](#)

[Book 1-1.3 How to breathe, how to not breathe.](#)

[Book 1-1.4 The Mindset to be a warrior](#)

[Book 1-1.5 Wielding the Greatsword](#)

[Book 1-1.6 Such a terrible disciple!](#)

[Book 1-1.7 Why are you smiling?](#)

[Book 1-1.8 Path of becoming a Glow](#)

[Book 1-2.1 The Crimson Desert](#)

[Book 1-2.2 The Fatty's Demands](#)

[Book 1-2.3 Heading Off](#)

[Book 1-2.4 Looking for the Sand Dragon](#)

[Book 1-2.5 The Red Dragon](#)

[Book 1-2.6 Master vs Dragon](#)

[Book 1-3.1 The Messenger](#)

[Book 1-3.2 Causing a ruckus](#)

[Book 1-3.3 Recruitment](#)

[Book 1-3.4 Red Storm Starts to Train](#)

[Book 1-4.1 Grace Nellisi](#)

[Book 1-4.2 I came to test my future husband!](#)

[Book 1-4.3 The First Night](#)

[Book 1-4.4 The Iron Princess](#)

[Book 1-5.1 Let Us Fight You](#)

[Book 1-5.2 Fighting the Red Storm Warriors](#)

[Book 1-5.3 The Four Horsemen and their Squads](#)

[Book 1-5.4 Punishment](#)

[Book 1-5.5 The Golden Turtle \(I\)](#)

[Book 1-5.6 The Golden Turtle \(2\)](#)

[Book 1-5.7 The Strange Young Man](#)

[Book 1-5.8 The Current World](#)

[Book 1-5.9 Prepare for Trouble](#)

[Book 1-6.1 Discussions with the Empire \(I\)](#)

[Book 1-6.2 Discussions with the Empire \(II\)](#)

[Book 1-6.3 Incident with the Prince \(I\)](#)

[Book 1-6.4 Incident with the Prince \(II\)](#)

[Book 1-6.5 Incident with the Prince \(III\)](#)

[Book 1-6.6 We Must Get Rid of Him](#)

[Book 1-7.1 Discussion with the Chiefs \(I\)](#)

[Book 1-7.2 The Plot \(I\)](#)

[Book 1-7.3 The Plot \(II\)](#)

[Book 1-7.4 The Plot \(III\)](#)

[Book 1-7.5 The Plot \(IV\)](#)

[Book 2-1.1 Venersis](#)

[Book 2-1.2 Flashback \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-1.3 Flashback \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-1.4 Taking Control of the Tribe \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-1.5 Taking Control of the Tribe \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-1.6 Next Steps](#)

[Book 2-1.7 The Master Returns \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-1.8 The Master Returns \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-1.9 The Master Returns \(III\)](#)

[Book 2-1.10 The Master Returns \(IV\)](#)

[Book 2-2.1 The State of Pareia](#)

[Book 2-2.2 Yulian's Course of Action \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-2.3 Yulian's Course of Action \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-2.4 Visiting the Oasis \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-2.5 Visiting the Oasis \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-2.6 Visiting the Oasis \(III\)](#)

[Book 2-3.1 The Shuarei's Plan](#)

[Book 2-3.2 Heading Back \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-3.3 Heading Back \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-3.4 Librie \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-3.5 Librie \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-4.1 Before the War \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-4.2 Before the War \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-4.3 First Campaign](#)

[Book 2-4.4 Yulian Steps In \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-4.5 Yulian Steps In \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-5.1 After the First Battle](#)

[Book 2-5.2 Venersis Moves \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-5.3 Venersis Moves \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-5.4 Venersis Moves \(III\)](#)

[Book 2-5.5 First Battle Against Venersis \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-5.6 First Battle Against Venersis \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-5.7 End of the First Campaign](#)

[Book 2-6.1 The Provoke Family \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-6.2 The Provoke Family \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-6.3 The Provoke Family \(III\)](#)

[Book 2-6.4 Pet Animal](#)

[Book 2-6.5 Shopping](#)

[Book 2-7.1 A Mirage](#)

[Book 2-7.2 Captain Thriger \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-7.3 Captain Thriger \(II\)](#)

[Book 2-7.4 The Desert Runner \(I\)](#)

[Book 2-7.5 The Desert Runner \(II\)](#)

[Book 3](#)

[Book 3-1.1 Funding the Ships \(I\)](#)

[Book 3-1.2 Funding the Ships \(II\)](#)

[Book 3-1.3 Funding the Ships \(III\)](#)

[Book 3-1.4 Funding the Ships \(IV\)](#)

[Book 3-2.1 Pareia's Move](#)

[Book 3-2.2 The Wikaly's Plan](#)

[Book 3-2.3 First Battle against the Wikaly](#)

[Book 3-2.4 End of the First Battle](#)

[Book 3-3.1 After the Battle](#)

[Book 3-3.2 The Wikaly Make a Move \(I\)](#)

[Book 3-3.3 The Wikaly Make a Move \(II\)](#)

[Book 3-4.1 Negotiations](#)

[Book 3-4.2 Yulian's Plan \(I\)](#)

[Book 3-4.3 Yulian's Plan \(II\)](#)

[Book 3-4.4 Yulian's Plan \(III\)](#)

[Book 3-5.1 Metro Arrives](#)

[Book 3-5.2 Metro makes his move](#)

[Book 3-5.3 Raising the Morale \(I\)](#)

[Book 3-5.4 Raising the Morale \(II\)](#)

[Book 3-5.5 The Battle](#)

[Book 3-6.1 Grief](#)

[Book 3-6.2 Fighting 20,000 with 3,000](#)

[Book 3-6.3 End of the War](#)

[Book 3-7.1 The Return](#)

[Book 3-7.2](#)

[Book 3-7.3](#)

[Book 3-7.4](#)

[Book 3-8.1](#)

[Book 3-8.2](#)

[Book 3-8.3](#)

[Book 3-9.1](#)

[Book 3-9.2](#)

[Book 3-9.3](#)

[Book 4](#)

[Book 4-1.1](#)

[Book 4-1.2](#)

[Book 4-1.3](#)

[Book 4-1.4](#)

[Book 4-1.5](#)

[Book 4-2.1](#)

[Book 4-2.2](#)

[Book 4-2.3](#)

[Book 4-2.4](#)

[Book 4-3.1](#)

[Book 4-3.2](#)

[Book 4-3.3](#)

[Book 4-3.4](#)

[Book 4-3.5](#)

[Book 4-3.6](#)

[Book 4-4.1](#)

[Book 4-4.2](#)

[Book 4-4.3](#)

[Book 4-4.4](#)

[Book 4-4.5](#)

[Book 4-4.6](#)

[Book 4-4.7](#)

[Book 4-5.1](#)

[Book 4-5.2](#)

[Book 4-5.3](#)

[Book 4-5.4](#)

[Book 4-6.1](#)

[Book 4-6.2](#)

[Book 4-6.3](#)

[Book 4-6.4](#)

[Book 4-7.1](#)

[Book 4-7.2](#)

[Book 4-7.3](#)

[Book 4-7.4](#)

[Book 4-7.5](#)

[Book 4-7.6](#)

[Book 4-7.7](#)

[Book 4-8.1](#)

[Book 4-8.2](#)

[Book 4-8.3](#)

[Book 4-8.4](#)

[Book 5](#)

[Book 5-1.1](#)

[Book 5-1.2](#)

[Book 5-1.3](#)

[Book 5-1.4](#)

[Book 5-1.5](#)

[Book 5-1.6](#)

[Book 5-2.1](#)

[Book 5-2.2](#)

[Book 5-2.3](#)

[Book 5-2.4](#)

[Book 5-3.1](#)

[Book 5-3.2](#)

[Book 5-3.3](#)

[Book 5-3.4](#)

[Book 5-3.5](#)

[Book 5-4.1](#)

[Book 5-4.2](#)

[Book 5-4.3](#)

[Book 5-4.4](#)

[Book 5-5.1](#)

[Book 5-5.2](#)

[Book 5-5.3](#)

[Book 5-5.4](#)

[Book 5-5.5](#)

[Book 5-6.1](#)

[Book 5-6.2](#)

[Book 5-7.1](#)

[Book 5-7.2](#)

[Book 5-7.3](#)

[Book 5-7.4](#)

[Book 5-8.1](#)

[Book 5-8.2](#)

[Book 5-8.3](#)

[Book 5-9.1](#)

[Book 5-9.2](#)

[Book 5-9.3](#)

[Book 5-10.1](#)

[Book 5-10.2](#)

[Book 5-10.3](#)

[Book 5-10.4](#)

[Book 6](#)

[Book 6-1.1](#)

[Book 6-1.2](#)

[Book 6-1.3](#)

[Book 6-1.4](#)

[Book 6-1.5](#)

[Book 6-2.1](#)

[Book 6-2.2](#)

[Book 6-2.3](#)

[Book 6-2.4](#)

[Book 6-3.1](#)

[Book 6-3.2](#)

[Book 6-3.3](#)

[Book 6-4.1](#)

[Book 6-4.2](#)

[Book 6-5.1](#)

[Book 6-5.2](#)

[Book 6-5.3](#)

[Book 6-5.4](#)

[Book 6-5.5](#)

[Book 6-6.1](#)

[Book 6-6.2](#)

[Book 6-6.3](#)

[Book 6-7.1](#)

[Book 6-7.2](#)

[Book 6-7.3](#)

[Book 6-7.4](#)

[Book 6-8.1](#)

[Book 6-8.2](#)

[Book 6-8.3](#)

[Book 6-8.4](#)

[Book 6-9.1](#)

[Book 6-9.2](#)

[Book 6-10.1](#)

[Book 6-10.2](#)

[Book 6-10.3](#)

[Epilogue](#)